





*George Washington Flowers  
Memorial Collection*

DUKE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

ESTABLISHED BY THE  
FAMILY OF  
COLONEL FLOWERS





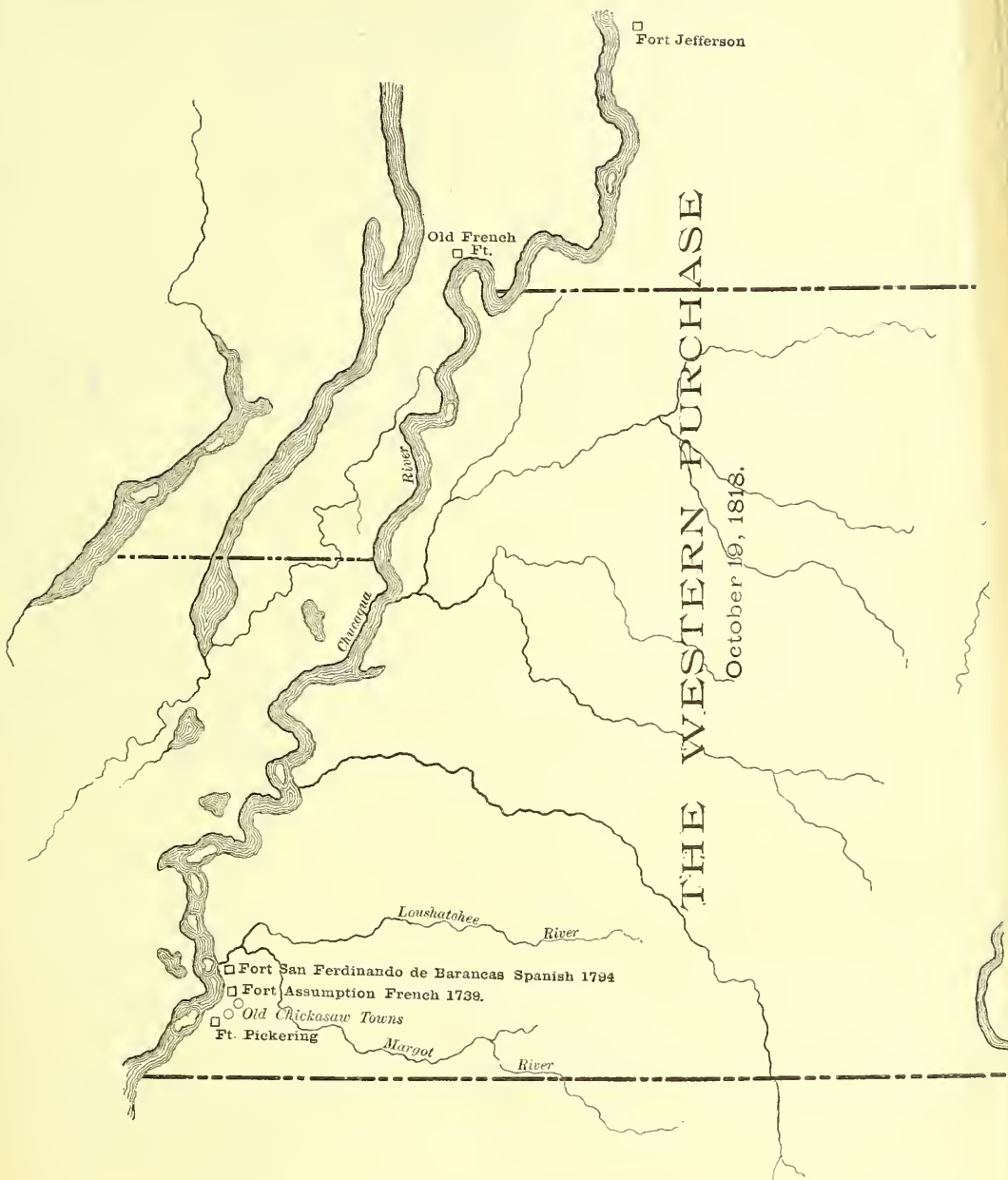
Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2015













# HISTORY

OF

# TENNESSEE

---

FROM THE EARLIEST TIME TO THE PRESENT; TOGETHER WITH AN HISTORICAL  
AND A BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF THE COUNTY OF KNOX AND THE  
CITY OF KNOXVILLE, BESIDES A VALUABLE FUND OF  
NOTES, ORIGINAL OBSERVATIONS, REM-  
INISCENCES, ETC., ETC.

---

ILLUSTRATED.

---

NASHVILLE:  
THE GOODSPEED PUBLISHING CO.,  
1887.

---

The State History, only, has been

Entered according to Act of Congress in the year 1886, by

THE GOODSPEED PUBLISHING COMPANY

In the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington, D. C.

---



## PREFACE.

THIS volume has been prepared in response to the prevailing and popular demand for the preservation of local history and biography. The method of preparation followed is the most successful and the most satisfactory yet devised—the most successful in the enormous number of volumes circulated, and the most satisfactory in the general preservation of personal biography and family record conjointly with local history. The number of volumes now being distributed appears fabulous. Within the last four years not less than 20,000 volumes of this class of works have been distributed in Kentucky, and the demand is not half satisfied. Careful estimates place the number circulated in Ohio at 50,000; Pennsylvania, 60,000; New York, 75,000; Indiana, 35,000; Illinois, 40,000; Iowa, 35,000, and every other Northern State at the same proportionate rate. The Southern States, with the exception of Kentucky, Virginia and Georgia, owing mainly to the disorganization succeeding the civil war, yet retain, ready for the publisher, their stories of history and biography. Within the next five years the vast and valuable fund of perishing event in all the Southern States will be rescued from decay, and be recorded and preserved—to be reviewed, studied and compared by future generations. The design of the present extensive historical and biographical research is more to gather and preserve in attractive form while fresh with the evidences of truth, the enormous fund of perishing occurrence, than to abstract from insufficient contemporaneous data remote, doubtful or incorrect conclusions. The true perspective of the landscape of life can only be seen from the distance that lends enchantment to the view. It is asserted that no person is competent to write a philosophical history of his own time—that, owing to conflicting circumstantial evidence that yet conceals the truth, he can not take that luminous, correct, comprehensive, logical and unprejudiced view of passing events that will enable him to draw accurate and enduring conclusions. The duty, then, of a historian of his own time is to collect, classify and preserve the material for the final historian of the future. The present historian deals in fact, the future historian, in conclusion; the work of the former is statistical, of the latter, philosophical.

To him who has not attempted the collection of historical data, the obstacles to be surmounted are unknown. Doubtful traditions, conflicting statements, imperfect records, inaccurate private correspondence, the bias or untruthfulness of informers, and the general obscurity which envelops all events combine to bewilder and mislead. On the contrary, the preparation of statis-

tical history by experienced, unprejudiced and competent workers in specialties; the accomplishment by a union of labor of a vast result that would cost one person the best years of his life and transfer the collection of perishing event beyond the hope of research; the judicious selection of important matter from the general rubbish; and the careful and intelligent revision of all final manuscript by an editor-in-chief, yield a degree of celerity, system, accuracy, comprehensiveness and value unattainable by any other method. The publishers of this volume, fully aware of their inability to furnish a perfect history, an accomplishment vouchsafed only to the dreamer or the theorist, make no pretension of having prepared a work devoid of blemish. They feel assured that all thoughtful people, at present and in future, will recognize and appreciate the importance of their undertaking and the great public benefit that has been accomplished.

In the preparation of this volume the publishers have met with nothing but courtesy and assistance. They acknowledge their indebtedness for valuable favors to the Governor, the State Librarian, the Secretary of the State Historical Society and to more than a hundred of other prominent citizens of Nashville, Memphis, Knoxville, Chattanooga, Jackson, Clarksville and the smaller cities of the State. It is the design of the publishers to compile and issue, in connection with the State history, a brief yet comprehensive historical account of every county in the State, copies of which will be placed in the State Library. In the prosecution of this work they hope to meet with the same cordial assistance extended to them during the compilation of this volume.

THE PUBLISHERS.

NASHVILLE, July, 1887.

# CONTENTS.

## HISTORY OF TENNESSEE.

### CHAPTER I.

	PAGE.
GEOLOGY OF TENNESSEE.....	13
Area and Boundary of the State.....	13
Ages, The Geologic.....	15
Canadian Period, The.....	17
Coals, The.....	27
Carboniferous Age, The.....	22
Crab Orchard Section, The.....	31
Cretaceous Period, The.....	22
Cross Mountain Section, The.....	33
Champlain Period, The.....	23
Coal of Raccoon District.....	30
Divisions, The Eight Natural.....	15
Eastern Iron Region, The.....	34
Elevations, The Principal.....	40
Fossils, The Characteristic.....	36
Glacial Period, The.....	23
Hamilton Age, The.....	21
Iron Ore, The.....	34
Lower Helderberg Period, The.....	21
Lignitic Period, The.....	22
Marble Beds, The.....	39
Metals, The Principal.....	37
Niagara Period, The.....	20
Primordial Period, The.....	16
Recent Period, The.....	23
Subcarboniferous Period, The.....	21
Soils, The Various.....	23
Temperature of the State, The.....	20
Trenton Period, The.....	18
Thirteen Tennessee Periods, The.....	16
Western Iron Region, The.....	35

### CHAPTER II.

THE MOUND-BUILDERS.....	42
Age of the Mounds.....	56
Arguments of Judge Haywood.....	45
Classification of Earthworks.....	50
Contents of the Mounds, The.....	53
Carthage Cave, The.....	54
Evidences of Prehistoric Occupation.....	42
Fortifications, Etc.....	51
Location of the Earthworks.....	57
Mounds of Tennessee, The.....	51 to
Natchez, The.....	48
Opinion of Bancroft, The.....	42
Peruvians, The.....	45
"Stone Fort," The Old.....	55
Sun Worshipers, The.....	47
Trihal Resemblances.....	46
View of Hildreth.....	44

### CHAPTER III.

THE INDIAN TRIBES.....	57
Avery Treaty, The.....	77
Battle of Chickasaw Old Field.....	69
Beloved Town, The.....	69
Battle of Long Island Flats.....	73
Battle of Boyd Creek.....	82
Boundary Established, A New.....	89
Battle of French Lick.....	76
Christian's Expedition.....	79
Chickamaugas, The.....	85
Chickasaw Treaty of 1786, The.....	90
Coldwater Expedition, The.....	95 to
Cession Treaties, Numerous.....	108
Cherokees, The.....	57
Campaign of Williamson.....	75
Chickasaws, The.....	59
Destruction of Indian Towns.....	65
Expeditions of Sevier.....	86
Encounter of Untoola and Hubbard.....	83
Expeditions of Rains.....	91
English Supremacy and Intrigue.....	64
Expedition of Col. Grant.....	63
Earliest Indian Occupation.....	57
French Trading Stations.....	62

	PAGE.
"Great Grant" and "Path Deed".....	70
Holston Treaty, The.....	93
Incidents and Anecdotes.....	74
Killing of the Cavetts, The.....	94
Massacre of Fort Loudon.....	63, 66
Massacres upon the Cumberland.....	89
Nickajack Expedition, The.....	97
Point Pleasant, Battle of.....	70
"Pocahontas of the West," The.....	73
Rutherford's Campaign.....	75
Shawanees, The.....	58
Shelby's Campaign against the Lower Towns.....	80
Sevier's Destructive Campaigns.....	81
Spanish Influence.....	90
Traditions of a Former Race.....	58
Tennessee Soil, First Cession of.....	61
Treaty of Hopewell, The.....	84

### CHAPTER IV.

SETTLEMENT OF TENNESSEE.....	108
Brown's Settlement.....	124
Chisca, The Indian Village.....	110
Charleville's Trading Station.....	112
Carter's Valley, Settlement of.....	124
Daniel Boone.....	116
Donelson's Journal.....	129 to 134
Expedition of De Soto.....	108
French and English Designs.....	112
Fort Assumption.....	113
Findley's Excursion.....	117
French Lick, First Appearance of.....	123
Fort Loudon, Construction of.....	114
Henderson's Treaty.....	124
Hunting Parties, Sundry.....	116, 117
"Long Hunters," The.....	121
La Salle and Marquette.....	111
Results of the Treaty of 1763.....	118
Regulators and the Scovilles, The.....	122
Stations on the Cumberland, The.....	127
Spotswood's Expedition.....	112
Traders, The French.....	115
Wood's Tour of Discovery.....	111
Walker's Expedition.....	115
Watauga Settlement, The.....	121
Washington District, Watauga Settlement.....	125
Washington County, N. C.....	126

### CHAPTER V.

SETTLEMENT CONCLUDED.....	135
Affairs on the Cumberland.....	141
Brown's Disastrous Voyage.....	144, 145
Continental Land Warrants.....	139
Clinch-Cumberland Road, The.....	142, 143
Catalogue of Land Grants.....	151
Chickasaw Bluffs, The.....	152
Greene's Reservation.....	139
Land Companies, The.....	147 to 150
Military Reservations, The.....	140
Nashborough.....	137
Perils on the Cumberland.....	136
Provisions, How Obtained.....	143
Settlers of West Tennessee.....	154 to 163
Territorial Government, The.....	146
Transylvania.....	136
West Tennessee, Settlement of.....	151
Western Purchase, The.....	153

### CHAPTER VI.

ORGANIZATION.....	164
Cumberland Compact, The.....	184 to 188
European Charters, The.....	164 to 167
Eastern Boundary, The.....	182
Government of the Notables, The.....	183
Northern Boundary Question, The.....	168 to 180
State of Franklin, The.....	189 to 198
Southern Boundary Question, The.....	181 to 182
Watauga Association, The.....	183



## CHAPTER VII.

	PAGE.
ORGANIZATION CONCLUDED.....	199
Administration of Gov. Blount.....	205
Acts of the Convention of 1796.....	213
Acceptance of the Tennessee Cession.....	202
Census of Tennessee, The First.....	211
Constitutional Provisions.....	224 to 228
Constitutional Convention of 1834, The.....	223
Cession Act of North Carolina, The.....	199
Constitutional Convention of 1796, The.....	212
Cession Deed, The.....	202
Constitutional Convention of 1870, The.....	227, 228
General Assembly of the State, The First.....	219
Legislature of the Territory, The.....	207 to 210
Pioneer Legislation.....	221
State Governor, The First.....	220
State Constitution, The First.....	214 to 218
Tennessee Admitted to the Union.....	218
Territorial Government Established, The.....	203
Territorial Officers, The.....	203

## CHAPTER VIII.

GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT.....	229
Agricultural Methods, The Early.....	229
Census Reports, The.....	252
Corn Crop, The.....	233
Cotton Gin, The Purchase of.....	240
Cotton Culture.....	239
Fruit Crops, The.....	233, 251
Fertilizers, The Use of.....	245
Farmers of Middle Tennessee, The.....	232
Farmers of East Tennessee, The.....	230
Hay and the Grasses.....	242
Hemp, Flax, Sorghum, Etc.....	244
Live Stock.....	246
Maple Sugar.....	245
"Money Crops," The.....	236
Methods of Agriculture Compared.....	230
Poultry, Butter, Cheese, Honey, Etc.....	243
Peanuts, The Growth of.....	241
Potatoes, Sweet and Irish.....	235
Rye, Barley, Oats, Buckwheat, Etc.....	235
Tobacco Crop, The.....	237
Wheat Crop, The.....	234

## CHAPTER IX.

GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT CONCLUDED.....	253
Bureau of Agriculture, Etc.....	279
Coal Productions, The.....	265 to 267
Copper Ore, The Mining of.....	270
Cotton Seed Oil.....	278
Cotton Goods, The Manufacture of.....	273
Flour-Milling Industry, The.....	271
Gunpowder.....	275
Iron Industries, The.....	260 to 264
Industrial Development.....	272
Leather, Boots and Shoes, Etc.....	276
Lumber Productions and Traffic, The.....	259
Marble Quarries, The.....	267 to 270
Paper, The Production of.....	275
Timber of the State, The.....	253 to 258
Whisky Products, The Enormous.....	277, 278
Woolen Goods, The Manufacture of.....	274

## CHAPTER X.

STATE INSTITUTIONS.....	280
Ancient Order of United Workmen.....	320
Bureau of Agriculture, Mines, Etc.....	308
East Tennessee Insane Asylum.....	293
Grand Army of the Republic.....	322
Institutions for the Blind.....	289
Insane Hospital at Nashville, The.....	291
Jackson's Equestrian Statue.....	284
Knights of Honor, Grand Lodge.....	315
Knights of Pythias, Grand Lodge.....	318
Knights and Ladies of Honor.....	316
Legion of Honor, Grand Council.....	320
Masonic Grand Lodge, The.....	309
Odd Fellows Grand Lodge, The.....	314
Royal Arcanum, Grand Council.....	321
State Capitol Located, The.....	280
State Library, The.....	286
State House, Construction of the.....	281 to 284
State Penitentiary, The.....	294
State Historical Society, The.....	293
State Medical Society, The.....	302

	PAGE.
State Board of Health, The.....	305
Tennessee Deaf and Dumb School, The.....	287
Tennessee Agricultural and Horticultural Society.....	307
West Tennessee Insane Asylum.....	294

## CHAPTER XI.

STATE INSTITUTIONS CONCLUDED.....	323
Counties, The Formation of.....	361, 362
Commercial Highways.....	335
Funding of the Debt, The.....	328 to 330
Gubernatorial Election Returns.....	356
Internal Improvement Systems, The.....	337
Presidential Election Returns.....	358, 359
Population of the State, Aggregate.....	360, 361
Receipts and Expenditures, The Early.....	323
Railroads, The Sale of.....	339
Receipts and Expenses, Catalogue of.....	340
Repudiation, The Question of.....	329
Railway Enterprises.....	340 to 348
Railway Commission, The.....	348
State Indebtedness, The First.....	326
Steam-boat Navigation.....	348
State Bonds, Total Issue of.....	357
State Officers, Catalogue of.....	350 to 356
State Banks, The.....	331 to 335
State Debt Proper, The.....	327 to 329
Treasury of the State, The.....	324

## CHAPTER XII.

BENCH AND BAR OF TENNESSEE.....	363
Courts of the Watauga Settlement.....	363
Courts on the Cumberland.....	367
Circuit Courts, The.....	376
Courts of the Constitution of 1796.....	368
Courts of the Constitution of 1834.....	375
Courts of the Constitution of 1870.....	378
Impeachment, Cases of.....	372
Professional Character of Distinguished Members of the Bench and Bar of Tennessee.....	382 to 412
Territorial Courts, The.....	368
United States Courts, The.....	380
Washington and Sullivan County Courts.....	364

## CHAPTER XIII.

EDUCATIONAL HISTORY.....	413
Colleges Chartered.....	416
County Academies, The.....	420
Constitutional Educational Provisions.....	426
Common School Convention, The.....	428
Colored Education.....	434
Common Schools, The.....	435
Cumberland College.....	412
Endowment Funds, The.....	415
Educational Systems Compared.....	410
East Tennessee College.....	417
Educational Tax, The First.....	422
Educational Statistics.....	441
Graded Schools, The.....	430
Gigantic Problem of 1865, The.....	451
Provincial Schools, The.....	413
Public Schools Established.....	426
Peabody Fund, The.....	435
State Colleges Founded.....	413
School Lands, Disposal of the.....	423
Superintendents of Public Instruction.....	423
School Officers, Duties of.....	433
State Normal School, The.....	439
Special School Funds.....	439
State Board of Education.....	447
School Funds, Creation of the.....	424
Schools in Tennessee, The First.....	415
Tennessee Industrial College.....	451
West Tennessee College.....	453

## CHAPTER XIV.

THE EARLY WARS.....	454
British, Battles with the.....	456
Charleston, The Capture of.....	460
Creeks, The War with the.....	461
Entochopeo, Battle of.....	464
Jackson's First Battle.....	462
Jackson, Activity of.....	470
King's Mountain, Battle of.....	458
Mexican War, The.....	473



	PAGE.		PAGE.
New Orleans, The Movement upon.....	467	Crockett.....	623
New Orleans, Jackson's Victory at.....	468	Carr.....	625
Seminole War, The.....	469	Cross.....	629
Tories of East Tennessee, The.....	464	Fitzgerald.....	625
Talladega, Battle of.....	463	French.....	627
Tohopeka, Battle of.....	465	Geological Authors.....	623
Texas-Mexican War, The.....	472	Guild.....	624
Tennessee Troops Sent to Mexico.....	474 to	Graves (Joseph C.).....	624
War of 1812, The.....	461	Graves (Adelia C.).....	627
Wahoo Swamp, Battle of.....	472	Gilchrist.....	629
		Harrison.....	624
CHAPTER XV.		Haywood.....	618
FEDERAL MILITARY HISTORY.....	477	Journalism.....	629
Burnside's Occupation of East Tennessee.....	490	Ketchum.....	627
Bridge Burners Ordered Hanged.....	488	Knoxville Press, The.....	629
Campbell's Station, Battle of.....	491	Law.....	628
Confederate Movements.....	486	Lindsley (Phillip).....	624
Fishing Creek, Battle of.....	488	Lindsley (J. Berrien).....	619
Federal Troops Furnished, Total.....	497	Legal Authors.....	626
General Movements.....	489	Murfree.....	626
Greenville Union Convention, The.....	481	Memphis Press, The.....	637
Issue Joined, The.....	483	McAdoo.....	629
Knoxville Union Convention, The.....	479	McAnally.....	621
Knoxville, Siege of.....	492	McFerrin.....	621
Longstreet vs. Burnside.....	491	Martin.....	622
Loyalty of East Tennessee.....	477	McTyre.....	622
Morgan, The Killing of.....	495	Medical Authors.....	622
Regimental Sketches.....	497 to	Maury.....	623
Skirmishes, The Concluding.....	496	Nelson.....	621, 623
Union Leaders, The.....	478	Nashville Press, The.....	632
Union Regiments Organized.....	484	Putnam.....	619
		Pearson.....	621
CHAPTER XVI.		Ramsey.....	618
CONFEDERATE MILITARY HISTORY.....	513	Redford.....	624
Army Bill, The.....	522	Ryan.....	622
Arms, Condition and Quantity.....	515	Rivers.....	622
Aid Societies.....	539	Summers.....	625
Advance to Columbus, The.....	543	Tannehill.....	620
Army Rolls.....	595 to		
Belmont, Battle of.....	545	CHAPTER XVIII.	
Burnside in East Tennessee.....	538	RELIGIOUS HISTORY.....	638
Call to Arms, The.....	518	Arminianism, The Creed of.....	648
Confederate Government, The.....	535	Buildings Erected, The first.....	646
Chickamauga, Battle of.....	536	Baptist Church, The.....	687
Confederate Line, Danger to the.....	547	Church and State, Union of.....	640
Confederate Forces, Aggregate.....	546	Camp-Meeting, The first.....	650
Defensive Measures, Extent of.....	536 to	Creed, Formation of the.....	658
Election Returns of June 8.....	532 to	Cumberland Presbyterian Church, The.....	658
Evacuation of Middle Tennessee.....	550	Christian Church, The.....	700
February Convention, The.....	614	Catholic Church, The.....	704
Fishing Creek, Battle of.....	547	Colored Churches, The.....	708
Fort Henry, Fall of.....	548	Episcopal Church, The.....	694
Franklin, Battle of.....	560	Irreligion Punished.....	641
Fort Donelson, Fall of.....	548	Jerks, The.....	651 to
Georgia Campaign, The.....	559	Jerks, The Cause of the.....	657
Legislature Convened, The.....	518	Jewish Church, The.....	706
Militia, Reorganization of the.....	515	Lutheran Church, The.....	705
Military League, The.....	528	Methodist Church, The.....	662
Militia Transferred to the Confederacy.....	540	Methodist Church South.....	676
Memphis, Surrender of.....	553	Methodist Statistics.....	676 to
Military Appointments.....	530	Methodist Book Concern, The.....	679
Murfreesboro, Battle of.....	555	Preaching in Tennessee, The first.....	645
Missionary Ridge, Battle of.....	557	Presbyterian Church, The.....	680
Neutrality Question, The.....	544	Revival, The Great.....	649 to
Nashville, Federal Occupation of.....	549	Religious Intolerance.....	639
Nashville, Battle of.....	560	Separation of Church and State.....	644
Ordinance of Secession, The.....	520	Slavery Divides the Church.....	667 to
Ordinance, The Manufacture of.....	541	University of the South, The.....	699
Perryville, Battle of.....	554		
Position of the General Assembly.....	516	CHAPTER XIX.	
Reserve Corps, The.....	542	BIOGRAPHICAL CHAPTER.....	708
Rock Castle Hills, Battle of.....	544	Blount, Gov. William.....	716
Regimental Sketches.....	561 to	Bell, Hon. John.....	733
State Sovereignty and Secession.....	513	Brownlow, Gov. William G.....	740
Shiloh, Battle of.....	550	Carroll, Gov. William.....	719
Secession Overwhelmingly Favored.....	517	Crockett, Col. David.....	728
Tennessee Admitted to the Confederacy.....	535	Forrest, Gen. N. B.....	742
Troops, Call for and Refusal to Furnish.....	517	Grundy, Hon. Felix.....	729
		Haywood, Judge John.....	714
CHAPTER XVII.		Houston, Gov. Sam.....	724
TENNESSEE LITERATURE.....	617	Jackson, President Andrew.....	720
Brownlow.....	622	Johnson, President Andrew.....	745
Bright.....	628	Johnson, Hon. Cave.....	735
Brunner.....	625	Polk, President James K.....	738
Baskerville.....	625	Robertson, Gen. James.....	712
Baldwin.....	625	Sevier, Gov. John.....	708
Brown.....	628	White, Hon. Hugh L.....	732
Chattanooga Press, The.....	621	Zollicoffer, Gen. Felix K.....	747

## CHAPTER XX.

	PAGE.
POLITICAL HISTORY.....	749
Administrations of Gov. Sevier.....	751
Abolitionism, Growth of.....	758
Abolishment of Imprisonment for Debt.....	764
"Arnell Bill," The.....	780
Bill of 1831.....	756
"Brownlow's Legislature".....	780
Campaigns of 1844 and 1848.....	771-772
Campaigns of 1872 and 1876.....	789-791
Dresser's Arrest and Punishment.....	757
Elections.....	765-767
Free Negroes.....	755
Franchise Measures.....	782-786
Free Negro Bill of 1859-60.....	758
Houston's Governorship.....	761
Impeachment of Senator Blount.....	750, 751
Industrial Depression and Revival.....	753
Important Political Events.....	769-771
"Instructing Resolutions," The.....	768
Jackson's Official Career.....	760
Ku Klux Klans.....	785
Later Political Events.....	789-796
Nullification.....	762-763
New Constitution, The.....	787
Politics of the "Fifties".....	773
Pro-Slavery Movements.....	757
Public Polity, Questions of.....	759
Restoration of Senators Foster and White.....	781
Resumption of Federal Authority.....	777
Resignation of Senators Foster and White.....	768
Spanish Controversy, The.....	749-750
Slavery Question, The.....	754
Slave Legislation, Early.....	755
Secession.....	773-777
State Debt, The.....	793
War of 1812, The.....	752

## KNOX COUNTY.

KNOX COUNTY.....	797
Attorneys, List of.....	819
Business at Knoxville, Early.....	841-844
Banking.....	866-867
Business Houses, Later.....	851-855
Boundary, etc.....	797
Cavett Massacre, The.....	804
Commerce, Early.....	807
County Officers.....	814
Casteel Massacre, The.....	805
Courts, The.....	815
Commerce, Extent of.....	851
Education.....	875-883
Finances, etc.....	813
Indians, Dealings with the.....	800-806
Industries, Early.....	846-849
Insurance.....	867
Incorporation.....	873-874
Knox County Organized.....	808-809
Knoxville.....	839

Knoxville Since the War.....	PAGE. 849
Lodges.....	868-870
Military Record.....	825-839
Massacres by the Indians.....	806
Minerals, etc.....	797-798
Manufacturers.....	856-866
Medical Society, The.....	870-871
Mayors, Catalogue of.....	874-875
Public Buildings.....	809-813
Poor Farm, The.....	811-812
Press of Knoxville, The.....	871-873
Postoffice Building.....	875
Railroads.....	808
Retail Trade at Present.....	855
Religion.....	883-908
Soil, Fertility of the.....	797
Streams, Drainage, etc.....	798
Settlement, etc.....	799-806

## BIOGRAPHICAL APPENDIX.

KNOX COUNTY.....	909
------------------	-----

## PORTRAITS, MAPS AND VIEWS.

Aboriginal Map.....	Frontispiece
Beaman, F. C.....	between 844, 845
Bell, John.....	732, 733
Blind Asylum.....	124, 125
Blount, William.....	716, 717
Brownlow, W. G.....	508, 509
Chapel, University of the South.....	348, 349
Chickamunga.....	559, 557
Crockett, David.....	156, 157
Deaf and Dumb Asylum.....	268, 269
Donelson.....	476, 477
Franklin.....	588, 589
Grundy, Felix.....	350, 351
Insane Asylum, West Tenn.....	140, 141
Insane Asylum, East Tenn.....	92, 93
Jackson's Statue.....	284, 285
Jackson, Andrew.....	460, 461
Johnson, Andrew.....	636, 637
Johnson Cave.....	668, 669
Murfreesboro.....	572, 573
Missionary Ridge.....	492, 493
Nashville.....	604, 605
Normal School.....	428, 429
Polk, James K.....	396, 397
Robertson, James.....	76, 77
Rodgers, James.....	892, 893
Sevier, John.....	220, 221
Shiloh.....	540, 541
State Capital.....	28, 29
Thompson Hall, University of the South.....	316, 317
Tennessee University.....	444, 445
University of the South.....	700, 701
View on Emory River.....	44, 45
View on Falls Creek.....	188, 189

# HISTORY OF TENNESSEE.

## CHAPTER I.\*

GEOLOGY OF THE STATE—BOUNDARY AND AREA—DRAINAGE AND MEAN ELEVATION—GENERAL TOPOGRAPHICAL FEATURES—NATURAL GEOLOGICAL DIVISIONS—CLASSIFICATION AND DESCRIPTION OF STRATA—TENNESSEE GEOLOGICAL PERIODS—LOCAL DETAILS—VARIETIES OF SOIL—THE COAL INTERESTS—LOCAL STRATIFICATION—ANALYSIS AND COMPARISON OF COALS—IRON DEPOSITS AND VARIETIES—PALEONTOLOGY—COPPER AND GALENITE—OTHER METALS—THE MARBLE BEDS—HYGROMETRY AND TEMPERATURE—PRINCIPAL ELEVATIONS OF THE STATE.

THE southern boundary of the State of Tennessee coincides mainly with the thirty-fifth parallel of north latitude, while the northern boundary is a broken line lying between the parallels thirty-six degrees and twenty-nine minutes and thirty-six degrees and forty-one minutes north latitude. The mean breadth is slightly more than 109 miles, and the mean length about 385 miles, the general outline forming a long trapezoid. The State comprises an area of about 42,000 square miles. The general elevation above the sea, excepting the leading highest and lowest localities, is about 900 feet. The entire surface of the State, excepting a small tract on the southeast, the waters of which find their way into Georgia, is drained by the tributaries of the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers, the most important being Tennessee, Cumberland, Forked Deer, Obion and Hatchie.

On the eastern boundary of the State, with numerous outliers and projections, are the Appalachian Mountains,† consisting of high ranges more or less parallel, with isolated peaks and domes, all interspersed with numerous ravines, creeks and coves, and the entire region presenting the most picturesque and romantic scenery of the State. Westward of this mountainous system to just beyond the Tennessee River spreads a broad valley with most distinguishing features. The general surface is uniform, but is cut up with numerous long, high ridges extending northeast and southwest, surmounted with occasional mountainous elevations, and

\*Adapted to this volume from the report of the State Geologist.

†Named by the Spaniards under De Soto, who derived the term from the Indians.—*Am. Cyc.*



broken here and there by gaps, or is dotted with innumerable knobs, often mountainous, all of which are encircled with valleys, linear or curving, to correspond with the elevation. The general surface, excluding the extremes, is about 900 feet above the level of the sea. The entire valley with all its coves and extensions has an area of about 9,200 square miles. Westward of this valley lies the Cumberland Table-land, the eastern boundary of which is high and almost unbroken from Kentucky to Alabama, while the western boundary is very irregular, with less elevation and with numerous valley and stream indentations. Though the table-land contains many streams and small valleys, it is, in the main, of uniform surface, but broken with mountainous ridges and knobs, particularly in the northeastern portion. The mean elevation is about 2,000 feet, and the extent is about 5,100 square miles. West of the table-land is the Central Basin, having the general outline of an ellipse, with a length (nearly north and south) of about 121 miles, and a width of from fifty-five to sixty miles. It comprises about 5,451 square miles, and has a mean elevation of from 500 to 600 feet. The surface is knobby or billowy, with numerous large and very fertile tracts. Outside of the basin, entirely encircling it, is the Highland Rim, an extremely hilly portion of the State. It is over 1,000 feet above the sea. The hills on each side of the western valley of the Tennessee are from 800 to 1,000 feet above the sea, while the elevation of the valley at Hamburg is only 392 feet. The Mississippi slope of West Tennessee, though in the main level, is veined with peculiar stream valleys, is about eighty-four miles wide, stretches north and south across the State and terminates abruptly on the west with the bluff deposits which skirt the valley of the Mississippi. The bluffs reach the river at Memphis, at the lower part of Tipton County, at Randolph and at Fulton. The mean elevation is about 450 feet, and the extent about 8,850 square miles. The Mississippi Valley is low, swampy and level. Reelfoot Lake, lying in this valley, was formed during the volcanic convulsions of 1811-12, when Reelfoot Creek, which then emptied into the Mississippi, was dammed up and its water spread out over a tract of country from three-fourths to three miles wide and eighteen miles long, forming the present lake, which finally forced an outlet through Obion River. The elevation of the valley is about 215 feet at Memphis and 295 feet on the northern boundary of the State.

The geological features of Tennessee are so marked and have been so minutely and critically examined by competent State authorities, that but little if any improvement can be made to what has already been made public. The State presents to the geologist eight localities having dis-



tinnet characteristics as follows: 1. The Unaka region. 2. The valley of East Tennessee. 3. The Cumberland Table-land. 4. The Highland Rim. 5. The Central Basin. 6. The Western Valley of the Tennessee River. 7. The Plateau slope of West Tennessee. 8. The Mississippi Bottom region. The characteristics of each division will be described somewhat in detail, leaving the more minute particulars to the province of local history. To prepare the reader for a clearer knowledge of the subject, an outline of the science of geology in general is presented. For convenience, students of geology have divided the strata of the earth into clearly defined groups, having uniform distinctions, to which names implying the leading characteristics have been given, as follows:

1. Archæan Period, Archæan Age, Azoic Time.
2. Primordial Period, Lower Silurian Age, Paleozoic Time.
3. Cauadian Period, Lower Silurian Age, Paleozoic Time.
4. Trenton Period, Lower Silurian Age, Paleozoic Time.
5. Niagara Period, Upper Silurian Age, Paleozoic Time.
6. Salina Period, Upper Silurian Age, Paleozoic Time.
7. Helderberg Period, Upper Silurian Age, Paleozoic Time.
8. Oriskany Period, Upper Silurian Age, Paleozoic Time.
9. Corniferous Period, Devonian Age, Paleozoic Time.
10. Hamilton Period, Devonian Age, Paleozoic Time.
11. Chemung Period, Devonian Age, Paleozoic Time.
12. Catskill Period, Devonian Age, Paleozoic Time.
13. Subcarboniferous Period, Carboniferous Age, Paleozoic Time.
14. Carboniferous Period, Carboniferous Age, Paleozoic Time.
15. Permian Period, Carboniferous Age, Paleozoic Time.
16. Triassic Period, Reptilian Age, Mesozoic Time.
17. Jurassic Period, Reptilian Age, Mesozoic Time.
18. Cretaceous Period, Reptilian Age, Mesozoic Time.
19. Lignitic Period, Mammalian Age, Cenozoic Time.
20. Alabama Period, Mammalian Age, Cenozoic Time.
21. Miocene Period, Mammalian Age, Cenozoic Time.
22. Pliocene Period, Mammalian Age, Cenozoic Time.
23. Glacial Period, Mammalian Age, Cenozoic Time.
24. Champlain Period, Mammalian Age, Cenozoic Time.
25. Recent Period, Mammalian Age, Cenozoic Time.
26. Human Period, Mammalian Age, Cenozoic Time.

Azoic is so called because it is destitute of evidences of the remains of animal, and possibly vegetable, life; Paleozoic because of the appearance of both animal and vegetable life; Mesozoic because of its situation between the earlier and present times, and Cenozoic because of the presence of mammals. Of the ages, Silurian represents that when the simpler form of both animal and vegetable life appeared; Devonian when fishes and kindred animal life and a more advanced vegetable life appeared; Carboniferous when a gigantic vegetation enveloped the earth; Reptilian when the swampy surface of the earth became filled with reptiles, some of gigantic size; Mammalian when animals which suckle their

young flourished. The latter age comprises human beings. The periods are superimposed upon each other in the order given above, the Archæan being the lowest and oldest, and the others being formed in succession since through the lapse of an indeterminate though very long period of years. A stratum is a more or less homogeneous layer of earth, the term earth being used to designate any portion of what is commonly called ground. All strata, whether stone, sand, clay, gravel or other inorganic material, were originally rocks, which are either yet in that state or have been more or less powdered, mainly by the action of the climatic elements, and have become associated with more or less organic matter, thus forming the numerous varieties of soil. As the fertility of soil depends upon its degree of disintegration, the quantity and quality of organic and inorganic matter combined, and the extent and character of chemical union between the constituents, it becomes a question of great value to the husbandman to be able to determine the properties of his soil, its strength under certain continued vegetation, the proper time for a change of crops, for the work of the plow and for the use of manures, and many other important particulars. Each period given above represents a long, indefinite lapse of time, extending into the tens and probably the hundreds of thousands of years, and comprising various strata of different kinds of soil, each of which was formed under the surface of water or by its action, and has been definitely defined and ascertained.

Of the above periods only thirteen are represented in Tennessee, as follows: Primordial.—The metamorphic rocks, the Ocoee slates and conglomerates, and the Chilhowee sandstone. Canadian.—The Knox group of magnesian limestones and shales, and the Lenoir limestone. Trenton.—The Lebanon and Nashville limestones. Niagara.—Clinch Mountain sandstone, the Dyestone or Red Iron ore formation, and the Clifton limestones. Helderberg.—The Linden limestone, Hamilton.—The Black Shale. Subcarboniferous.—The Barren Group, the St. Louis limestone and the Mountain limestone. Coal Measures.—The coal formation. Cretaceous.—The Coffee sand, the Rotten limestone, and the Ripley Group. Lignitic.—The Flatwood clays and sands, and the La-Grange sand. Glacial.—The Orange sand. Champlain.—The Bluff Loam. Recent.—Alluvium.

The Primordial Period includes the Metamorphic rocks, the Ocoee slates and conglomerates, and the Chilhowee sandstones. These are very thick and massive formations, and embrace the rocks of the great Unaka range. Their strata are hard and pre-eminently mountain-making, and are not found outside of the Unaka mountain area. The

lands can never be brought into successful cultivation on account of the ruggedness of the country. Magnetic iron ore, copper ore, roofing slate, building material, and some gold are found in these formations. The metamorphic formation is composed of thick and thin-bedded granite-like rocks called gneiss, talcose slate and mica slate, the constituents of which are quartz, mica, feldspar, talc and similar minerals. They were originally common sandstones, conglomerates, shales, etc., which have lost their original character and have become crystalized through the agency of heat or other means. The soils of this locality are generally thin and poor, with here and there a spot of singular fertility. Wild grasses grow fairly well, and fine walnut, cherry, poplar, beech and oak abound. Buckwheat grows luxuriantly in a few spots. The copper mines of Polk County and the magnetic iron ore of Carter County are in this formation. The Ocoee group is a series of changeable rocks having an estimated thickness of 10,000 feet, and composing the greater part of the Unakas. There are heavy beds of conglomerates, sandstones, clay slates, semi-talcose and roofing slates, and dolomite or magnesian limestone. Occasional veins of quartz are gold-bearing. The beds of roofing slates are especially valuable. The soil is similar to that of the metamorphic formation. The Chilhowee sandstone has an estimated maximum thickness of not less than 2,000 feet, and extends to Chilhowee and similar mountains which form the most northwesterly interrupted range of the Unakas. The stone is usually heavy-bedded and grayish white when weathered, but is sometimes whitish quartose and sometimes includes sandy shales.

The Canadian Period includes the Knox group of magnesian limestones and shales and the Lenoir limestone. The Knox sandstone of this period forms ridges which present a sort of transition between the mountain and valley formations. It comprises variegated sandstones, shales and occasional dolomites, having an aggregate thickness of 800 to 1,000 feet. The formation is of little agricultural importance, but presents marked topographical features, such as sharp roof-like or comby ridges. Webb's, Rosebury's, Bay Mountain, Beaver, Bull Run and Pine Ridges are of this formation. The Knox shale is a brown, reddish, buff or green calcareous shale 2,000 or more feet thick. Occasionally it contains thin layers of oolitic limestone, and as it approaches the Unakas becomes more calcareous, even to a slaty limestone or dolomite. Upon this formation of the Knox group are the principal valleys, especially in the northwestern, western and southern portions of the valley of East Tennessee. It contains many long, beautiful and generally rich valleys. Fossil shells and trilobites, about the oldest specimens of animal life found in Tennes-



see, occur in the limestone layers of this group. The entire valley of East Tennessee was, doubtless, once much higher than at present, but has been denuded by the action of water principally, leaving the strata in variable inclinations. The Knox dolomite outcrops over a large portion of East Tennessee Valley, and is the most massive formation in the State. It is estimated to be nearly a mile in thickness, and consists of heavy-bedded strata of blue and gray limestones and dolomites, being often oolitic at the base and crystalline or sparry above, with more or less chert or flint occurring sparsely in thin layers and nodules. It is composed of the carbonates of lime and magnesia containing more or less sand, argillaceous and ferruginous matter, with fossils in the lower oolitic strata; and its outcrops are confined to this valley, with the single exception of an exposure in the curious Well's Creek Basin, in Houston County. In several places in the Central Basin it is not far from the surface. Generally the disintegration of the dolomite furnishes rich plant food, and nearly all grains grow well in the better localities.

The Trenton Period, comprising the Lebanon and Nashville limestones, is, in general, a great series of blue limestone, rich in fossils and plant food. They are the principal rocks of the Central Basin, lying approximately in a horizontal position, and constitute the surface rocks of many long valley-ranges of East Tennessee, of which the soils are distinguished for their fertility and the ranges for their symmetry and beauty. They are also uncovered in the western valley of the Tennessee. Under denuding and eroding agencies these rocks present the richest valley and lowland depressions. The maximum thickness of the period in East Tennessee is between 2,500 and 3,000 feet. It has two members—the lower blue limestone on both sides of the valley and the upper calcareous though sandy stone in the southeast half of the valley. The lower member varies in thickness from 200 to 600 feet. Further north it is thin and poor. It is more or less argillaceous, and with the Knox dolomite forms many rich valleys. It often dips at right angles. The upper member is, in the southeast, a great mass of sky-blue calcareous shale more or less sandy. It often contains thin layers of limestone and sandstone and has a maximum thickness of about 2,000 feet. The two great belts where this stone outcrops, called the Gray Knobs and the Red Knobs, present distinguishing and important characteristics. In the tract of the Gray Knobs bold, pointed and steep hills, with vales of great strength and fertility winding among them, stand crowded together. Their existence is due to the different erosive effects of water agencies upon rocks of varying and widely opposite degrees of hardness, the softer being washed or worn away and the harder slowly left high and

dry above the subsiding glacial sea. Upon the tract of the Red Knobs are remarkable lines of red hills whose origin is primarily due to a few interpolated plates of a hard ferruginous sandy limestone, which, aided by the strata dip, have partially saved the adjacent softer rocks from erosion and have deeply colored the soil with the liberated red iron oxide. The slopes of the red hills are often very rich. In this tract a few gray knobs appear. Another interpolated rock is the variegated red and white, or grayish-white, marble which occurs in heavy strata and outcrops in long lines and in inexhaustible quantity, and in other localities than the red tract. In the northwest half of the valley the upper member loses much of its sandy, shaly character, becomes thin-bedded and blue, is loaded with fossils and yields an excellent soil. The interpolated beds gradually disappear and the mass loses its thickness and the marble is reduced to a minimum. Beaver Creek, Raccoon, Hickory, Big, Powell's, Tennessee, Lookout and Savannah Valleys rest upon these limestones. The Sequatchie Valley is an outlier, very similar in structure, of the Eastern Tennessee Valley. Outcroppings of the Knox dolomites and the blue Trenton limestones occur. There is more or less dip to all the strata in these valleys. In the Central Basin, however, they become practically horizontal. The Trenton and Nashville divisions are easily distinguished and constitute the bottom and much of the sides of the basin. The Trenton are more argillaceous and the Nashville more silicious, with a darker blue color. Each division is about 500 feet in thickness. The Trenton is subdivided into Central, Pierce, Ridley, Glade and Carter's Creek limestones. The Central is a dove-colored, thick-bedded limestone, containing much chert or flint, is the lowest stratum of the basin and exposes a thickness of about 100 feet. It outcrops over a circular area whose diameter is about thirteen miles, Murfreesboro being within the area. The soil here is rich, containing considerable iron from the decomposing chert, the red color being due to the oxide of iron. Around this area in a circular belt with a thickness of about twenty-seven feet outcrop the beds of the flaggy, Pierce limestone. Around this belt is another called the Ridley stone, consisting of heavy-bedded dove-colored limestone, having a thickness of ninety-five feet and furnishing a fine soil. Still another belt encircles the last mentioned and is called Glade limestone, consisting of light blue, flaggy stone with an aggregate thickness of 120 feet. Upon this belt grow the red cedar forests, from which alone could the outcrops be traced. This stone constitutes the surface of large portions of Rutherford, Wilson, Bedford and Marshall, and occurs in less extent in Maury, Williamson and Davidson. Lebanon, Shelbyville and Columbia, rest partly upon this belt. Above the Glade stratum appears Car-

ter's Creek limestone with a thickness of 50 to 100 feet. It is heavy-bedded and dove-colored and is used for lime on Carter's Creek, being much whiter. The Nashville formation, as a whole, is fairly homogeneous, though about seventy feet near the base contains considerable sand. This stone furnishes the surface-rock of several of the best farming regions of the basin, the country between Columbia and Mount Pleasant being one. In the Well's Creek Basin, Houston County, the Trenton and Nashville rocks outcrop around the Knox dolomite and also appear in the Western Valley of the Tennessee, mainly as a hydraulic limestone. These formations furnish the marbles of East Tennessee, the hydraulic limestones of the Eastern and Western Valleys and the basin, the flagstones, lime-rock and building materials so valuable to the State, and much of the most fertile soil.

The Niagara Period includes the Clinch Mountain sandstones, the dyestone or red iron ore formation and the Clifton limestone, with thin subdivisions. Between the Trenton and Nashville rocks and the Clinch sandstone is a stratum of red calcareous shale, which in Hawkins County is 400 feet thick. Resting upon this is the Clinch Mountain Rock, which is a grayish-white, thick-bedded sandstone about 400 feet thick. It forms the southern slope of Clinch Mountain, and below it always appears the red shale. Neither this stone nor the red shale is found outside of the Eastern Valley or south of Knox County. It is associated with high ridges, such as Clinch Mountain, Stone Mountain, Devil's Nose, House Mountain, Bay's Mountain, Newman's Ridge, Powell's and Lone Mountains. The sandstone yields a poor soil; the shale a better one. The White Oak Mountain sandstone is a reddish-brown, greenish, buff or other colored rock accompanied with shales, and occurs on White Oak Mountain's eastern slope and summit, and on the eastern slopes of Powell's and Lone Mountains. It is a mountain formation and is about 500 feet thick. The Dyestone group, enclosing the red iron ore, appears on the northwestern side of the Eastern Valley and comprises a series of variegated shales and thin sandstones from 100 to 300 feet thick, which contain from one to three or more layers of fossiliferous iron ore, much of the mass being quite calcareous with occasional beds of thin limestone. This formation is found in numerous small but long ridges, one of which extends along the eastern base of the Cumberland Table-land from Virginia to Georgia, representing everywhere more or less iron ore. The Niagara limestone occurs mainly in the Western Valley and is a thick-bedded fossiliferous stone, somewhat argillaceous and often crystalline, and frequently weathers into shale-forming glades. At its greatest development this formation is about 200 feet thick and is divided into two members,



the lower consisting of red and variegated strata, several being fair marble, and the upper of gray rocks. This formation outcrops over the greater portion of the Western Valley. It extends eastward and appears on Duck and Buffalo Rivers, and on the western edge of the basin. On the eastern base of Powell's Mountain and at the base of Newman's Ridge it also outcrops.

The Lower Helderberg limestone has its greatest development in the Western Valley, and is a series of blue, thin-bedded fossiliferous rocks, containing cherty layers, and has a maximum thickness of about seventy feet. It furnishes an excellent soil and outcrops on Duck and Buffalo Rivers and on the northwestern slope of the basin.

The Hamilton Period is represented by the black shale, a nearly black, bituminous, rather tough shale or slate which outcrops in East Tennessee, the Central Basin and the Western Valley of the Tennessee. Its average thickness is less than fifty feet, though in the eastern valley it reaches 100 feet, and the outcrops are linear on the slopes of ridges or in narrow straight valleys at the base of ridges. It contains iron pyrites and enough hydrocarbonic oil to support brief combustion, but is not likely to become a source of coal oil, though often mistaken for coal by novices.

The Subcarboniferous Period is represented by the Barren group, the St. Louis limestone and the Mountain limestone. The former consists of heavy strata of flint or chert, interstratified with more or less limestone, and sometimes becomes a blue calcareous shale and includes heavy beds of crinoidal limestone. In the eastern valley it rests upon the black shale and outcrops on the Dyestone ridges in linear lines, and in the Central Basin appears on the edge and interior portion of the Highland Rim. Its thickness is from 250 to 300 feet, becoming less in the southern part of the State. The coral limestone of this formation is a bluish-gray stone, containing nodules of chert, is fossiliferous, sometimes siliceous and argillaceous, and is characterized by the presence of the fossil *Lithostrotion Canadense*. This stratum has a maximum thickness of 250 feet and outcrops in the eastern valley with the Barren group, and is the chief rock of the higher and greater part of the Highland Rim. The iron of the chert colors the soil red. This stone is usually called St. Louis limestone, and is celebrated in this State and elsewhere for its sink-holes and caves. Just above it is the mountain limestone, which outcrops on the eastern and western slopes of the Cumberland Table-land, and consists of a heavy group of limestones and shales. It forms the base of the table-land, and is thickest in the southern part of the State, decreasing northward to the Kentucky line, where it is 400 feet thick. About one-fourth of the mass, mostly near the top, is shale, and a part is marly. Usually the

strata are highly fossiliferous, rich in plant food, furnishing a strong soil and abundant building material. A heavy sandstone stratum forty to fifty thick occurs in the middle of the group in White and Overton Counties, and gives origin to a terrace around the table-land, and furnishes caps for neighboring "small mountains" and ridges.

The Carboniferous Period comprises the strata containing the coal of the State. The formation caps the table-land, with which it is co-extensive, having an area of 5,100 square miles. It is a series of conglomerates, shales and sandstones, containing beds of coal, and has an average depth of 500 to 600 feet, though in Morgan, Anderson, Scott, Campbell and Claiborne Counties, it reaches 2,000 feet, and contains no less than sixteen beds of coal, one of which, near the base, is from four to seven feet thick. Sandstone lies next under the surface of the table-land, and shale outcrops on the sides of the ridges.

The Cretaceous Period, comprising the Coffee sand, the Rotten limestone and the Ripley group, outcrops in Hardin and Decatur Counties and consists of a group of stratified sands usually containing mica, with which are often associated strata of dark clay, often very thin but sometimes predominating. Laminated or slaty clay from one to twenty feet thick is occasionally found, and numerous woody fragments and leaves occur, mainly in the form of lignite. The thickness is probably about 200 feet. In Hardin County the river washes the Coffee sand, as at Coffee, Crump's and Pittsburgh Landing. Above and lapping over the Coffee sand is the Rotten limestone or green sand, consisting of fine quartzose sand mixed with clay, with which there is much calcareous matter and green grains of glauconite. This formation contains many fossil shells, some of which are very large, conspicuous among them being fossil oyster shells, which, in some localities, have been burned for lime. Its greatest thickness is in McNairy County—350 feet. When dry it is greenish gray; when wet, darker. The Ripley group is mainly stratified sands, often laminated, with strata of clay and an occasional bed of slaty clay. In Hardeman County a bed of limestone two to six feet thick and a bed of green sand containing shells occur. This group is from 400 to 500 feet thick.

The Lignitic Period comprises the Flatwood clays and sand and the LaGrange sand. The Flatwood group is 200 to 300 feet thick and is much similar to the Ripley and the Coffee sands, but contains more laminated or slaty clay. This is called the Porter's Creek group, as a bed of laminated clay of the group, 100 feet thick, outcrops on that creek. The LaGrange group is a broad belt about forty miles wide, extending north and south over the central part of West Tennessee and is a stratified mass of



sands, more or less argillaceous, which, when weathered, are yellow, red and orange. The sands are similar to those above and contain leaves and lignitic beds, and masses of white and colored clays occur. This group is, perhaps, 600 feet thick.

The Glacial Period gives the State the Orange sand or drift. After the formation of the groups above described the entire western portion of the State appears to have been covered with water, which deposited over the surface an irregular layer of unstratified sand and gravel, and to this the term "Orange sand" has been applied. The formation is variegated in color, though mainly orange and red, is of great extent, is of variable thickness, disclosing here and there the underlying formations. The beds of gravel of the western valley, of the highlands and of the iron strata, belong to this group.

The Champlain Period furnishes the Bluff deposit, loam or loess, which caps the uplands of Shelby, Tipton, Lauderdale, Dyer and Obion Counties, and is a stratum of fine siliceous loam, more or less calcareous, and usually colored ashen, yellowish or buff, and contains land and fresh-water shells and numerous calcareous nodules. The group ranges in thickness from a few feet to 100 feet; and the eastern boundary is only partially established, owing to the gradual disappearance of the loam. The various formations above it outcrop on the slopes of the bluffs along the Mississippi—on top the loam, below it the Orange sand and still lower the LaGrange group.

The Recent Period includes the alluvial bottoms of all the larger streams, and consists of inorganic washings from the neighboring highlands, associated with more or less decomposing organic matter, furnishing the richest and most productive soil of the State. The Mississippi bottom is the largest and most important.

*The Soils.*—The soils owe their characteristics to the underlying rocks, and are best when derived from limestone, dolomites and calcareous shales. Sand gives strength to the stocks of plants, renders the soil porous and suitable for the penetration of air and vital plant gases, permits surplus water and deleterious substances to escape either upward or downward, and, as a base for the union with acid or alkaline salts, furnishes important food for the growth of plants. Clay gives tenacity to the soil, prevents the escape either upward or downward of important gases, retains from rain-water ammonia, nitrogen, carbonic acid and other similar plant foods, and combined with other elements furnishes direct food for the plants. The calcareous or limy soils present many varieties, depending upon the impurities of the rocks, the disintegration of which furnishes the soil. The soil is more or less arenaceous or

sandy and argillaceous, or clayey, with varying quantities of ferric or iron compounds. The soil from the Knox dolomite is calcareous, has a red clay subsoil with chert masses, which is underlaid with rocks of carbonate of lime and magnesia. The soil is very rich but should be rotated with clover to insure almost infinite durability. The Trenton or Lebanon soil rests on blue fossiliferous limestone and covers about half of the Central Basin and is the soil of many valleys of East Tennessee and of the red knobs around Knoxville. It is more friable and fertile but less durable than the soil of the Knox dolomite, and grows all cereals to great perfection, wheat often weighing seventy pounds to the bushel. Cotton grows luxuriantly, as in Rutherford, Giles, Maury and Williamson Counties. The Nashville limestone soil contains a greater quantity of siliceous or sandy matter, is mellow, porous, highly productive, and well adapted to the cereals and all kinds of vegetables. Marvelous melons are grown. This soil is not so tenacious as those containing less sand or more clay and is more easily handled. It constitutes nearly half of the Central Basin and many small valleys of East Tennessee. The subsoil is yellower than that of the Trenton Period. These soils have made their locations famous, and for general excellence are not exceeded by those of any other portion of the State. Their locality is called "the blue-grass region." The Niagara soil is found mainly in the Western Valley of the Tennessee, along Buffalo River, rests upon gray and red limestone, is moderately productive, but not so good for wheat and cotton as those last described, though corn and some of the grasses grow well. This soil must not be confounded with the alluvial soil of those valleys. The Lower Helderberg furnishes a dark gray or chocolate-colored calcareous soil which is mellow than that of the Niagara, but less so than that of the Trenton and the Nashville, and occurs mainly in Benton, Henry, Decatur and Hardin Counties.

The Lower Carboniferous has two soils; the first being characterized by a large fossil coral, *Lithostrotion Canadense*, and is composed of silica, alumina, carbonate of lime, oxide of iron, organic matter, etc., furnishing a distinctly marly soil. It is the best tobacco soil of the State and is as good for wheat as any portion of the Central Basin. Grapes grow to great perfection, and corn, oats, hay and potatoes do well. It is strong, durable, reliable, and is stiffer than many other calcareous soils and less likely to wash. Under the chert bed is a stratum of tenacious clay, which in periods of drouth, supplies the roots of plants with the retained moisture, while the chert bed, in wet seasons, carries off the surplus water, so that the soil is good in either wet or dry seasons. This soil occupies a large portion of the Highland Rim where sink-holes abound. Crops are

certain, and on this soil are many of the best farms of the State. The soil of the Central Basin is more fertile, but, as the underlying limestone is nearer the surface, is more easily affected by drouth, so that, in the end, it is not more productive than the Lower Carboniferous soil. The latter will not admit of tramping, owing to the clay it contains; while the Nashville soil does better with packing, owing to its porous state caused by the presence of considerable sand. Blue-grass does not thrive so well on the clayey soil. The largest orchards of the State are grown on the Lower Carboniferous soil, though many other portions are as valuable in this respect. The second soil of the Lower Carboniferous Period, on the slopes of the tableland, contains less chert, but is highly productive. It is not so red, resembling more the alluvial bottoms, and contains less clay and more sand than the first soil of this period, and is, therefore, more fertile though less durable than the Nashville soil. Heavy forests cover its principal tracts in Overton, White, Warren and Fentress Counties. The green sand soil is a siliceous loam, resting upon mixed sand and clay, containing carbonate of lime and numerous green pebbles of glauconite. Lime is obtained from the numerous shell heaps contained. This constituent renders the soil much more fertile, friable and productive. Cotton and corn, and often wheat, grow well. The green sand giving name to this group, contains gypsum, soluble silica, oxide of iron and carbonate of lime, all fertile ingredients, and may, in the end, as the deposit is eight miles wide and fifty miles long and quite thick, be used extensively as a fertilizer.

The shaly soils of the State are usually cold, clayey, unimportant and unproductive except for grasses. The alluvial soils, in the aggregate, occupy a larger area than any other. Nine hundred square miles lie in one body in the valley of the Mississippi, and to this must be added the immense aggregate of all the creek and river bottoms of the State, a vast though indeterminate expanse. The alluvial soils differ much in character, some containing much lime, some much sand, some a noticeable lack of both, depending on the constituents of the surrounding highlands from which the rich washings come. These alluvial soils are the richest, most durable and productive of the State—most durable because of the constant renewal of their fertile elements drained from the adjacent hills. They are especially adapted for wheat—forty bushels not infrequently being raised upon one acre. A sandy soil is usually warm, a clayey one cold; some are light, heavy, loamy, marly, leachy, limy, sour, sweet, marshy, compact, tenacious, porous, fine, coarse, gravelly or rocky, and their productiveness not only depends upon the fertile elements such as soluble silica, lime, carbon, potash, magnesia, oxide of iron and their compounds and



other fertile matter such as nitrogen, ammonia, carbonic acid, sulphuric acid, etc., but upon climatic and other allied conditions, such as heat, cold, drouths, drainage, rains, subsoils, manures, pulverization, etc. The best condition of a soil for production is a thorough pulverization, with a subsoil of sufficient tenacity to hold fertilizers and moisture, and yet well drained of its surplus waters. The decomposing vegetable matter called humus, gives wonderful richness to the soil and furnishes carbonic acid, nitrogen and ammonia, the life-blood of plants.

The sandy soils are found mainly in West Tennessee. They contain a greater or less quantity of iron compounds, clay and calcareous matter, which, in some localities, give them great vigor, but where these elements are lacking leave them comparatively sterile. Level lands, or those approximately so, if well drained, do best, as they are not washed of their plant food elements so readily. The soil of the Orange sand is the most important, and is spread over the greater portion of West Tennessee. The soils of the Ripley and Flatwood groups embrace some fine farming land, and some too much broken into hills and ridges to be convenient to work. In some localities the Flatwood group contains layers of laminated clay, which furnish a stiff soil. The sandy soils, if properly fertilized and cared for, repay the husbandman with a fair harvest.

The bluff loam, or loess, covering all other formations in the belt of high lands extending from the Kentucky line to Memphis, is a fine calcareo-siliceous earth, often ash colored, sometimes reddish or chocolate colored, and occasionally black. It contains more calcareous matter than the others, except the green sand. Carbonate of lime is sometimes found in concretions in heaps. This soil is among the best in the State, owing its valuable qualities to the lime, sand, iron, clay, etc., it contains, and to the excellent pulverulent qualities it possesses. Tobacco, cotton, wheat, oats, clover, and the grasses grow luxuriantly, while the forests are very extensive and some of the trees of enormous size.

The siliceous or flinty soils are found in greatest abundance over the counties of Lawrence, Wayne, Lewis, Stewart, Montgomery, DeKalb, Cannon, Coffee, Moore, Hickman, Humphreys, Dickson and Franklin, and are thin and poor. They have a bluish, or pale yellow subsoil so porous that manures are lost after a few years. The natural vegetation of all kinds is scrubby and coarse, though a rank grass which grows in open woods supplies large herds of stock. Fruit trees do well. These are the "barrens," which are destitute of calcareous matter and have a porous subsoil and a leachy surface soil. Similar lands containing lime and iron and having a tenacious red subsoil are much better.

The soils of the Unaka region are generally thin and unproductive,

though wild grasses grow well, and here and there a spot of surprising fertility appears. The mountain slopes are often covered with heavy timber. The soil of the Chilhowee sandstone occupies mountainous locations, is limited in extent, but in small spots furnishes gardens and vegetable fields. Blue-grass may be grown on this soil. The soil of the Clinch Mountain sandstone is thin, but potatoes and other vegetables, and grass and timber do well. The Dyestone and White Oak Mountain soils are good, though limited in area. The soil of the Cumberland Table-land, which covers over 5,000 square miles of the State, is sandy and thin, though there are areas of moderate fertility at the foot of knobs and ridges, where fertile washings from the slopes are gathered. All the valleys are fertile, and accordingly productive. No lime appears, all being sand, and compost soon sinks below plant roots. The yellowish red subsoil, with a thin coating of humus, is more valuable than that with less iron and little or no humus. The former, with care and proper composts, may be made highly productive; not so the latter, which is too porous and tender, and, when uncultivated, produces nothing but shrubby trees, hardy, coarse weeds and grass, lichens and mosses. The glades and wet lands along the streams may be made valuable by drainage and by the use of alkalies to neutralize the abundant acid liberated by the decomposition of a superabundance of vegetable remains.

*The Coals.*—The area of the coal-bearing strata amounts to 5,100 square miles, and over this vast extent of country from one to sixteen seams occur. The coal fields include the counties of Scott, Morgan and Cumberland, the greater portions of Pickett, Fentress, Van Buren, Bledsoe, Grundy, Sequatchie and Marion; considerable portions of Claiborne, Campbell, Anderson, Rhea, Roane, Overton, Hamilton, Putnam, White and Franklin, and small portions of Warren and Coffee. About 1,000 square miles of the northeastern portion of this tract consists of a series of short irregular mountain chains, breaking away from the main Cumberland Mountain ridge, and casting heavenward numerous peaks of great height. The remainder of the coal tract, except certain portions in the southern part, is the true Cumberland Table-land or plateau. The upper coal measures embrace one or two principal sandstones (one of which may be a conglomerate) and an equal number of coal horizons in which one or more beds of coal may be expected. These and their accompanying strata compose the upper plateau, and have a thickness of from 200 to 300 feet, but are not typical of the tract of 1,000 square miles, to which reference was made above. The conglomerate sandstone, upon which the upper coal measures rest, usually contains numerous small white quartz pebbles, and is sometimes a double seam, embracing

an important coal horizon. The lower coal measures consist of a series of sandstones and shales with from one to three or four coal veins, and constitute the most important division of the carboniferous period in the State and over a considerable area the only one available as a source of coal. Excluding the Cliff rock the thickness of this division ranges from a few feet to 300. These characteristics are, in general, typical only of the southern, western and northwestern portions of the table-land, as the northeastern portion and a strip along the eastern side, in the counties of Claiborne, Scott, Campbell, Anderson and Morgan, have a thickness of the upper coal measures, in some places of over 2,000 feet. The coal measures above the conglomerate have been much denuded, particularly on the western side of the table-land, and at points where the formations are much elevated, the reverse being true where the elevations are low. Where the coal measures are thickest the conglomerate is depressed and the waste by denudation is measurably compensated by the superior development, at many points, of the lower coal measures.

In the Sewanee District, embracing parts of the counties of Franklin, Marion, Sequatchie, Grundy, Warren, Bledsoe and Van Buren, the coal measures are approximately horizontal. The following section, the lowest strata of which are taken from the gulf of Little Gizzard Creek, about two miles south of Tracy City, and the higher in succession in ascending the stream to the plateau or top of the conglomerate, exhibits well the general character of the formations of the coal measures in the Sewanee District:

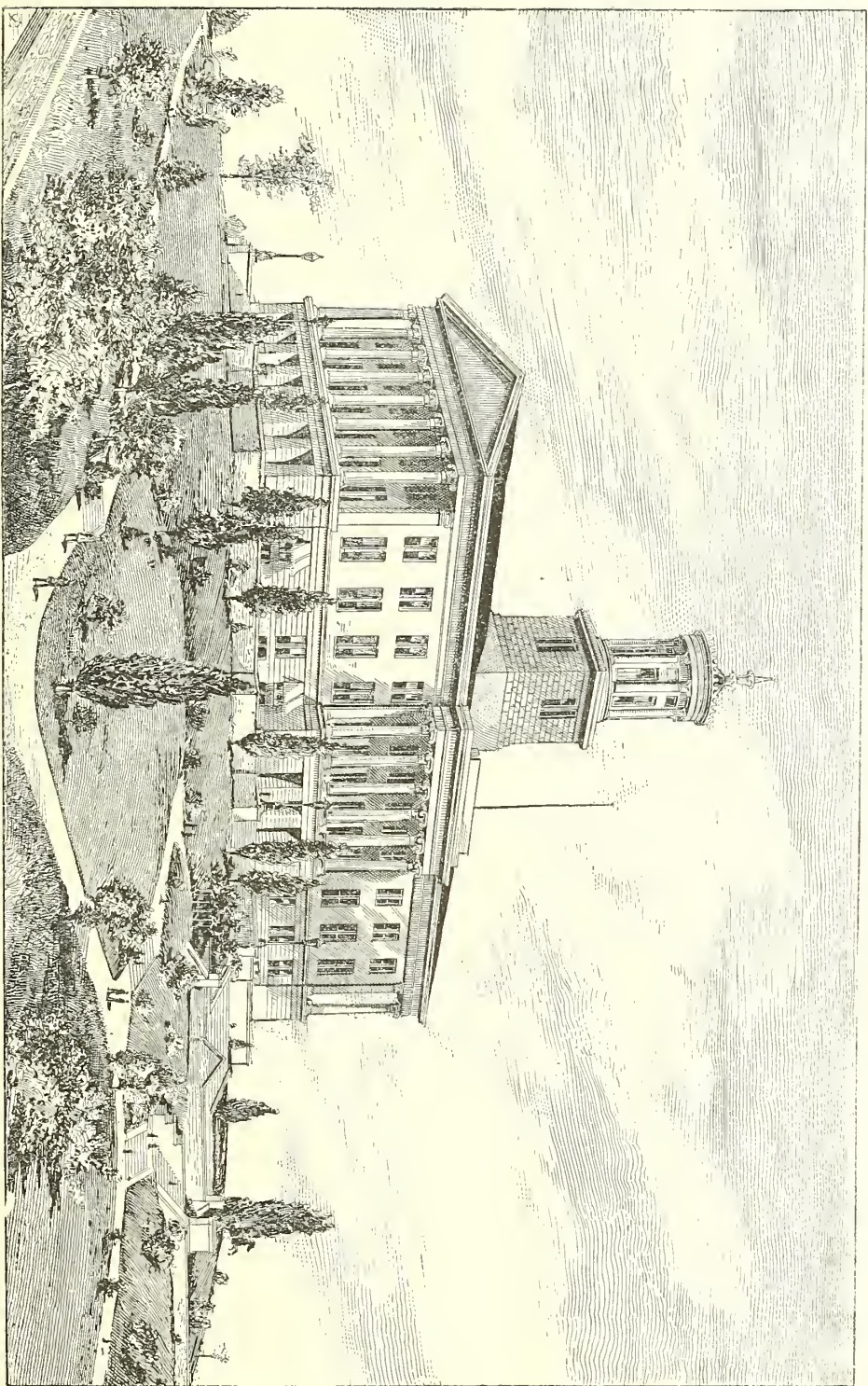
## UPPER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Sandstone, the conglomerate or cap rock of the upper plateau and the uppermost stratum in this region.....	50
Coal.....(a few inches)	
Shale.....	23
Coal, outcrop.....	$\frac{1}{2}$
Shale, dark and clayey.....	1
Shale, sandy.....	25
Sandstone.....	86
Shale, more or less sandy.....	45
Coal, main Sewanee seam.....	3 to 7
Shale, some of it sandy.....	33
Coal, outcrop.....	1
Shale.....	3
Sandstone.....	17
Conglomerate.....	70

## LOWER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Coal, outcrop.....	$\frac{1}{2}$ to 1
Shale, overlaid with clay.....	10
Sandstone, cliff rock.....	65





STATE CAPITOL, NASHVILLE

Photo by Thuss, Keelina & Giers.





	Feet.
Coal, outcrop.....	$\frac{1}{2}$ to $1\frac{1}{2}$
Shale, with clay at top.....	8
Sandy shale.....	22
Sandstone, hard.....	78
Coal, with occasional shale.....	1 to 3
Sandstone, hard, local.....	20
Shale, including a thin sandstone.....	20
Mountain limestone with <i>archimedes</i> .....	20

Below the conglomerate, in the eastern and southeastern part of the Sewanee District, there are usually four seams of coal. In Franklin County and in the southern part of Grundy one seam disappears. In the northern part of Grundy and in Warren another seam is missing, and the thickness of the lower coal measure is reduced from 360 to fifty feet, exclusive of the conglomerate. The coal beds are very irregular in thickness, being often too thin to work profitably and in some places from three to nine feet thick. The aggregate amount of coal is very great and the quality good, and the extent coincides with the Sewanee District. The conglomerate is the cover and protector of the lower coal measures, having saved them from denudation in past ages. The Tracy City coals belong to the upper coal measures; those of Little Fiery Gizzard to the lower measures. On Crow, Battle and Little Sequatchie Creeks are important outcrops of the lower coals. On Cave Creek in Marion County, under the Cliff rock, a coal seam nine feet thick outcrops and near in the "pocket" is five feet thick. At the old Parmelee Bank it is from seven to nine feet thick. North of Tracy City only two coal seams of the lower measures are usually found; those near McMinnville are thin. In Bledsoe, Van Buren, Warren and Grundy they are thin with occasional thicker spots. The conglomerate is mainly the surface rock from Tracy City to Alabama, and over this expanse only occasional knolls of the upper coal measures occur: one two miles west of Tracy City, another about half way between Tracy City and the Nashville & Chattanooga tunnel; and another just south of the lower mines.

Southeast, east and northeast of Tracy City the ridges of the upper measures often appear. The main Sewanee coal in the vicinity of Tracy City is of good quality, semi-bituminous, and contains little pyrites. It is fragile and is usually a four or five foot bed, and is the most reliable one west of the Sequatchie Valley. Other seams of the upper measures are found in the Sewanee District, but are not so valuable.

The Raccoon and Walden's Ridge District embraces the portion of the table-land east of Sequatchie Valley and the Crab Orchard Mountains, and extends from Alabama to the Emery River in Morgan County, comprising parts of Marion, Sequatchie, Hamilton, Bledsoe, Rhea, Cumberland,

Roane and Morgan. At the Etna Mines and vicinity the Cliff rock becomes a conglomerate, and the conglomerate (the cap of the lower measures) becomes a sandstone. The following is the section at Etna Mines :

## UPPER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Sandstone, cap rock at Etna.....	.75
Shale .....	.48
Coal, good block and uniform.....	.4
Shale with occasional thin coal .....	.30 to 40
Coal with slate or shale.....	.5 to 6
Shale.....	.44
Coal, good block.....	.2 to 3
Fire clay.....	.1 to 2
Sandstone (Conglomerate of last table).....	.75
Coal.....	(few inches)
Shale .....	.30 to 40
Coal.....	(10 inches)
Sandy shale.....	.100 to 130
Conglomerate (the cliff rock of the former table where it is classified with the lower coal measures).....	.70 to 100

## LOWER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Shale .....	.0 to 12
Coal (main Etna or Cliff vein, most important bed in the Raccoon Mountains) average.....	.3
Fire clay with <i>Stigmaria</i> .....	.1 to 3
Shale .....	.5 to 20
Coal, thin.....	. $\frac{1}{2}$ to 1
Sandstone and sandy shale.....	.80 to 120
Shale (?).....	.0 to 5
Coal.....	. $\frac{1}{2}$ to 3
Fire clay.....	.0 to 2
Sandy shale and sandstone.....	.20 to 25
Shale.....	.15 to 20
Coal.....	.1 $\frac{1}{2}$ to 3
Fire clay.....	.0 to 3
Shales and shaly sandstones.....	.80 to 150
Mountain limestone.....	not ascertained

The above section is a typical exhibit of the measures of the Raccoon Mountain District. The upper measures are rich in coal, and it will be observed by comparison that there is one more coal seam in the lower measures than on the west slope of Sequatchie Valley, and the volume is much greater. The lower measures are well exhibited where the Tennessee River cuts through the Walden Range and are similar to the Etna measures. The four coals below the cliff rock outcrop on the slopes. Northward to the Emery River the sections above of the Sewanee and Raccoon Districts may be taken as types of both the upper and lower measures. The main Sewanee is the principal coal, and numerous outcrops of the upper and lower measures occur on the eastern slope of the

table-land. The strata are often much disturbed, doubtless by volcanic forces. The following is the section where the Crossville & Kingston Road crosses Crab Orchard Range in Cumberland County:

## UPPER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Sandstone, probably.....	100
Shale, doubtless with coal.....	25 to 50
Sandstone.....	100 to 150
Shale, probably with coal.....	60
Sandstone.....	60
Shale.....	50
Coal, main Sewanee.....	4
Fire clay.....	1
Shale.....	30 to 40
Conglomerate, caps the mountains.....	100 to 150

## LOWER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Shale, possibly with coal.....	15
Sandstone.....	33
Shale with light coal seams.....	110
Sandstone.....	50
Shale, with impure coal.....	20
Mountain limestone.....	not ascertained

In this table the thicknesses are only approximately correct. Here the strata of the coal measures are folded in a great arch, and are missing at the summit, having been denuded by natural agencies.

The northern coal district is made to embrace that part of the table-land lying north of Van Buren and Bledsoe Counties and west of the Crab Orchard range, and a line running through Montgomery and Huntsville, and within its limits are parts of White, Cumberland, Morgan, Putnam, Overton, Fentress, Pickett and Scott Counties. Here the top of the table-land is usually a flat surface, and back from the slopes appears an upper plateau. In the eastern portion of this area the Crab Orchard section above may be considered the type. On Clifty Creek in White County the following is the section:

## UPPER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Sandstone and conglomerate.....	65
Shale.....	0 to 12
Coal, irregular.....	$\frac{1}{2}$ to 2
Fire clay.....	0 to 2
Shale with sandy strata.....	60
Fire clay with coal traces.....	(11 inches)
Sandstone.....	40
Shale.....	20
Fire clay with coal traces.....	(11 inches)
Sandy shale or sandstone.....	25

	Feet.
Shale .....	152
Coal .....	3
Shale .....	35
Conglomerate .....	60

## LOWER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Shale with one or two seams of coal 6 to 18 inches. in all. ....	15
Mountain limestone .....	40
Calcareous shale .....	not ascertained

At other points in White County the lower measures are of greater importance. Generally the lower measures on the western slope of the table-land from Alabama to Kentucky present the same features, comprising usually two, sometimes three to seven seams, often too thin for mining, but locally available and valuable. The measures under the conglomerate in this portion of the table-land are similar to those on the western slope of the Sewanee District. In fact the measures are similar throughout the extent of the western slope and consist of shales and sandstones and two, sometimes three, rarely more, seams of coal. Though often too thin for mining, they become thicker and valuable locally. In the valley of the Calfkiller, in Putnam County, the coals below the conglomerate are often valuable and the general features in the counties of Putnam, Overton, Pickett, Fentress, Morgan and Scott are the same as above. Little extensive mining has been done in this part of the district, owing mainly to the lack of transportation. The following section from the mouth of Big Hurricane Creek, in Fentress County, is typical of the coal measures of the northern counties.

## UPPER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Conglomerate overhanging cliffs .....	40
Shale, doubtless with coal .....	51
Sandstone .....	6
Shale, doubtless with coal .....	21
Sandstone .....	46
Shale, doubtless with coal .....	50
Conglomerate lower cliffs, main .....	99

## LOWER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Coal, good block .....	10 to 3
Fire clay, shale and sandstone .....	4
Shale with layers of clay ironstones .....	25 to 30
Mountain limestone .....	15
Shales, marly and variegated .....	100

The main conglomerate has always a coal horizon below, consisting of shales and sandstones, and when the cap rock of the upper plateau is present, has one above. Outcrops of the lower measures at Buffalo Cave,



Fentress County and near Jamestown show the coal below the conglomerate to be three to five feet thick, black, lustrous and excellent. Outcrops of the upper coals are not as numerous as of those below the main conglomerate. Numerous banks of these coals have been opened, one at Little Laurel, Overton County, being four and a half feet thick and excellent.

The northeastern district, embracing parts of the counties of Morgan, Anderson, Scott, Campbell and Claiborne, is traversed by numerous high ridges or mountains, in which are heavy developments of the coal deposits, particularly the upper; and shales, coals and sandstones are piled up high above the conglomerate, which, elsewhere, is the surface rock. The carboniferous formation here is not far from 2,500 feet, and nowhere else in the State are there so many coal beds or such an aggregate mass of coal. The following is an estimated section at Cross Mountain, four miles northwest of Jacksborough.

## UPPER COAL MEASURES.

	Feet.
Sandstone, cap of the mountains.....	100
Shales and sandstones.....	249
Coal, pure block, except a six-inch seam of black shale.....	6
Shales and sandstones.....	357
Coal, excellent, possibly 6 feet.....	4
Shale and sandstones.....	150 to 190
Coal, outcrop.....	1
Fire clay, shale and sandstones.....	262 to 323
Coal, outcrop.....	1
Shale.....	6
Coal, outcrop, may be 6 feet.....	3
Shales and sandstones.....	323 to 398
Coal outcrop with shale three inches.....	3
Shales and sandstones.....	260 to 290
Coal.....	3
Shales, slate and sandstones.....	170
Coal, outcrop.....	1
Fire clay and shale.....	9
Coal with three-inch parting.....	5
Fire clay, shale, black slate with <i>Stigmaria</i> , to foot of mountain.....	30

The entire thickness of this section is about 2,100 feet, and an aggregate thickness of twenty-seven feet of coal is found. A section at Tellico Mountain shows about the same aggregate quantity of coal, several seams of which, with the conglomerate, appear in the upper part of Pine Mountain, caused by a fault in the strata. The Cross Mountain section above is typical of the measures of this district. Numerous banks have been opened, all presenting, in general, similar characteristics. Scores of banks could be profitably opened on Emery River. The coal of this division is usually very good block and is practicably inexhaust-

ible. When railroads reach these valuable fields, future generations will receive the benefit. The coal of the Etna Mines contains 74.2 per cent of fixed carbon and 21.1 of volatile matter.\* The Sewanee coal gives 62 per cent of fixed carbon and 25.41 of volatile matter. The present production of coke is very great.

*Iron Ore.*—The deposits of iron ore are of the greatest value. The outcrops where such deposits occur appear in three belts which have been named and described as follows: The eastern iron region which extends through the State with and in front of the Unaka Range; the Dye-stone region, which skirts the eastern base of Cumberland Table-land or Walden's Ridge from Virginia to Georgia, and extends laterally into the valley of East Tennessee from ten to twenty miles, and includes the Sequatchie and Elk Valleys; the western iron region, which occupies a belt of high lands contiguous to the western valley and a part of the valley itself, and extends from Kentucky to Alabama.

The eastern region includes the counties of Johnson, Carter, Sullivan, Washington, Greene, Cocke, Sevier, Blount, Monroe, Polk and the entire eastern part of McMinn. In the valleys and coves of this vast region occur most of the iron ore deposits. The bottoms of the valleys are usually occupied by shales and slates and magnesian limestone of the Knox group, which have been so leached and weathered that ridges and knolls of clay, sand, chert and shaly *debris* or clay have been formed, and in these masses the iron ore has accumulated. Limonite, by far the most abundant ore of this region, contains, when pure, 59.92 per cent of metallic iron; 25.68 per cent of oxygen and 14.4 per cent of water. The source of limonite is the ferruginous chert of the lithostrotion bed. Practically the percentage of iron is less than 59.92 per cent owing to impurity. This ore occurs both as honey-comb and solid ore and sometimes in ochreous and earthy combinations. It occurs in all sizes less than beds ten or fifteen feet in diameter. Generally the most important banks are on knolls, hills or ridges fifty to 200 feet high and often several miles long, and the deposits occur at intervals. The ores in Johnson, Carter and Washington Counties contain lead and zinc. These ores, including the iron, originated doubtless from the decomposed limestones which contain these elements. The iron ore is of excellent quality and the beds are so numerous that it is estimated that there is sufficient ore to supply an average of three or four extensive works to each of the counties named for a long period of years. Hematite contains 70 per cent of iron and 30 per cent of oxygen. Impurities reduce the amount of iron. The hard, solid ore of this division occurs only in a few places

---

\*Analysis by Prof. Pohle, of New York City.



and in a regular, solid bed. The ore in more or less magnetic and excellent. The Dyestone ore is a stratified fossiliferous iron rock and is composed of flattened oölitic or rounded grains and frequently contains crinoidal buttons. Magnetite, when pure, contains 72.4 per cent of iron and 27.6 of oxygen. It is a very rare ore, one bed being in Cocke and another in Carter County. It is associated with *Sahlite* and decomposing gneissoid rocks and occurs in irregular layers, patches and wedge-shaped masses in the metamorphic group.

On the west side of the valley of East Tennessee is the Dyestone iron region, which includes a portion or all of the following counties: Hancock, Claiborne, Grainger, Campbell, Anderson, Roane, Rhea, Meigs, Hamilton, Marion, Sequatchie and Bledsoe. The ore is a distinctly stratified red iron stone, a variety of hematite, generally soils the fingers, but is sometimes quarried in blocks. It is highly fossiliferous and upon exposure becomes brownish red, though almost scarlet when first mined. This is the main ore of this region and its impurities are sandy and argillaceous matters and carbonate of lime. Numerous banks have been opened. Limonite to a limited extent is found in this region. The mountain ridge containing the Dyestone ore is 150 miles long and its average thickness is over 20 inches. Upon the Cumberland Table-land occur a few beds of clay ironstones. This ore is an impure carbonate of iron and contains 41.25 percent of metallic iron, 11.78 of oxygen, 35.17 carbonic acid and 11.8 of water, etc. Practically 30 to 33 per cent of iron is obtained. It occurs in nodules and balls and is limited in quantity. Black band ironstone and limonite are also found scattered over the table-land.

The western iron region includes part or all of the following counties: Lawrence, Wayne, Hardin, Lewis, Perry, Decatur, Hickman, Humphreys, Benton, Dickson, Montgomery and Stewart. The belt is about fifty miles wide and over the entire extent more or less ore occurs. There appear centers where heavy deposits of great value and extent are found. These banks have a high position on the tops or edges of plateau ridges, and owe their origin very probably to the remains of decomposed sandstones before the Central Basin or the valley of West Tennessee was excavated. The banks are from a few feet to 100 feet. Limonite is almost the only ore, though hematite occurs near Clifton, in Wayne County. Limonite occurs in irregular lumps or hollow concretions called "pots" scattered through the matrix of the *debris* of the strata of the siliceous group, consisting of angular fragments of half decomposed and often bleached chert and soft sandstones imbedded in clay. This is the bed of the ore. The varieties of this ore are called compact, honey-comb, pot

and pipe ores and ocher, the first three being common. The pots vary in size from an orange to two feet in diameter. Pipe ore is worked in Stewart County. It is estimated that the best banks furnish one-fourth to one-third of the mass removed in iron ore. Its occurrence in banks is irregular—sometimes in pockets, beds, veins, strata, columns, or isolated masses often ten to twenty feet through. Some masses furnish scores of tons of ore. The beds of Hickman are most extensive and valuable and more than twenty banks have been opened. Those of Dickson and Stewart are next valuable. On the eastern rim of the basin in the counties of White, Warren, Putnam and Overton, corresponding with the deposits of the western belt, limonite of good quality is found. The percentage of pure iron varies from 44 to about 60.

*Fossils.*—The paleontological features are characteristic and important. Every formation considered in this chapter, except the Unaka, contains fossils, often large, finely preserved and beautiful. As every formation contains, in the main, its own fossils, they become an important factor in identifying the strata. The most fruitful source of fossils in this State are the Trenton and Nashville groups. The following is a list of the genera: Buthotrephis, Stromatopora, Stenopora, Constellaria, Tetradium, Columnaria, Petraia, Cleiocrinus, Dendocrinus, Glyptocrinus, Palæocrinus, Petraster, Ptilodictia, Retepora, Graptolithus, Leptæna, Strophomena, Orthhis, Skenidium, Rhynchonella, Triplesia, Avicula, Ambonychia, Crytodonta, Ctenodonta, Modiololopsis, Holoepa, Cyclonema, Subulites, Eunema, Helicotoma, Maclurea, Trochonema, Pleurotomaria, Murchisonia, Crytolites, Bellerophon, Carinaropsis, Clioderma, Conularia, Salterella, Orthoceras, Cyrtoceras, Lituities, Trocholites, Asaphus, Calymene, Cheirurus, Eocrinurus, Illæus, Lichas, Phacops, Dalmanites and Leperditia. Many of these are represented by a half dozen or more species. In the Niagara group occur the following genera: Astylospongia, Palæomanon, Artræospongia, Stenopora, Thecostegites, Thecia, Heliolites, Plasmopora, Halysites, Favosites, Cyathophyllum, Petraia, Aulopora, Alveolites, Cladopora, Fenestella, Caryocrinus, Apiocystites, Pentatrematites, Saccocrinus, Platycrinus, Lampetrocrinus, Cytoocrinus, Eucatyptocrinus, Coccoocrinus, Synbathocrinus, Posteriocrinus, Gystocrinus, Haploocrinus, Calceola, Strophomena, Streptorhynchus, Orthhis, Spirifer, Atrypa, Pentamerus, Athyris, Rhynchonella, Platystoma, Platyceras, Cyclonema, Orthoceras, Ceraurus, Sphærexochus, Dalmania, Calymene and Bumastus. In the Lower Helderberg formation the following are found: Anisophyllum, Favosites, Apiocystites, Leptæna, Strophomena, Strophodonta, Orthhis, Spirifer, Trematospira, Nucleospira, Rhynchospira, Leptocoelia, Rhynchonella, Atrypa, Merista, Camarium, Eatonia,

Pentamerus, Platystoma, Platyceras, Phacops, Dolmania and Dalmania. In the Lower Carboniferous formation are found the following genera: Spirifer, Orthis, Platyceras, Granatocrinus, Agaricocrinus, Actinocrinus, Cyathocrinus, Iethiocrinus, Lithostrotion, Zaphrentis, Pentremites, Dichorinus, Melonites, Hemipronites, Retzia, Rhynchonella, Productus, Conularia, Astræa, Archimedes, Athyris, Terebratula, Aspidodus, Claydodus and a few others. The Green Sand of West Tennessee, famous for its beds of fossil shells, contains the following genera so far noticed and named: Platytrochus, Corbula, Crassatella, Astarte, Venilia, Cardium, Trigonina, Arca, Nucula, Cucullœa, Ctenoides, Pecten, Neithea, Ostrea, Oxogyra, Graphæ, Anomia, Placunanomia, Scalaria, Natica, Volutilithes, Rapa, Auchura, Baculites, Enchodus, Sphyræna, Ischyrrhiza, Terebratula, Rostellaria, Fusus, Turritella and Delphinula. In the Ripley group are the following: Corbula, Venus, Crassatella, Cardita, Leda, Modiola, Ostrea, Gryphæa, Turritella, Natica, Fasciolaria, Neptunea, Callianassa, Lamna and crocodilus. In the Bluff loam of West Tennessee are Helix, Planorbis, Cyclas, Amnicola, Lymnea, Succinea. In the Knox group are Crepicephalus, Lonchocephalus, Agnostus, Lingula and Pleurotomaria.

The fossil fauna of Tennessee are distinct and characteristic of the strata containing them. In the main Sewanee and Jackson coal horizon occur the following: Neuropteris, Hymenophyllites, Alethopteris, Asterophyllites, Calamities, Stigmaria, Sigillaria, Syrigodendron, Lepidodendron, Lepidostrobus, Trigonocarpum and Rhabdocarpus, and in the main Etua Sphenopteris, Hymenophyllites and Lepidodendron, and at the base of the coal measures on the Sewanee Railroad the fossil nut: Trigonocarpum. Wood and leaves are found in the Ripley group in West Tennessee. In the Orange sand appear the following genera: Quercus, Laurus, Prunus, Andromeda, Sapotacites, Elæagnus, Salix, Juglans, Fagus and Ceanothus. On the west side have been found bones of the extinct Mastodon, Megalonyx, Castor and Castoroides.

*Metals.*—Copper ore is found at Ducktown. The surface of the country is rolling, and is about 2,000 feet above the sea. Ocoee River crosses this area. The rocks are talcose, chlorite and mica slates, and dip at high angles to the southeast. The ore deposits are great lenticular masses of metal and gangue material, occurring in long ranges or belts, which have been improperly termed veins. These dip at high angles, and upon the surface is gossan, and below it about ten feet are the black copper ores, and further down are other zones containing more or less copper. Numerous mines have been opened since the discovery of copper in 1843. The ores and minerals found are as follows: Copper pyrites, iron pyrites,



magnetic pyrites, copper glauze, zinc blende, galena, orthoclase, albite, tremolite, actinolite, diallage, zoisite, calcite, quartz, rutile, garnet, allophane, alisonite, bornite, red copper, malachite, azurite, copperas, bluestone, black oxide (very valuable), native copper, harrisite, ralitite, limonite (gossan). Millions of dollars worth of copper ore have been taken out and shipped away.

Nearly every county in East Tennessee contains galenite in small quantities. In Claiborne and Union Counties it occurs particularly abundant. In the latter county, on Powell's River, between Tazewell and Jacksborough, about sixteen miles from Tazewell, is one of the richest mines. The vein fills a nearly vertical fissure about twenty inches wide, in nearly horizontal rocks, and can be traced nearly a mile. The galenite is associated with zinc blende and pyrite, and occurs in sheets, two or more, having an aggregated thickness of five to ten inches. This mine is typical of the others. Near Charleston galenite was mined by the earlier races, probably Mound-Builders. Veins of galenite occur also in Middle Tennessee, but are of little importance. An important one occurs in Davidson County, near Haysborough, occurring in a gangue of barite. Galenite has also been found among the limestones of West Tennessee. Smithsonite and calamite, two zinc ores, occur in deposits and irregular veins in the dolomites of the Knox group, the most important being in Union, Claiborne and Jefferson Counties. The Steiner locality in Union County is important. The ore outcrops in a belt fifty or sixty feet wide, and runs across a low ridge. Through this ore small veins of Smithsonite and calamite ramify. Gold occurs in East Tennessee in the sands and gravels of creeks which flow over the metamorphic slates of the Ocoee group, and could doubtless be found in the quartz veins of the same group. It has been found in Blount, Monroe and Polk Counties. The most has been found on Coca Creek and vicinity, in Polk County, in a tract eight or ten miles long by two or three wide. Gold was first discovered in 1831. Soon afterward the field was thoroughly explored, and up to 1853 \$46,023 in gold of this locality was deposited in the United States Mint. This gold is derived from the decomposed quartz veins, and has been washed into creek valleys. A quartz bearing gold has lately been found in Whip-poor-will Creek, the metal appearing in grains or scales in the quartz.

Lignite is found in beds in the Mississippi bluffs, and is a mass of dark grayish, laminated, micaceous sand, with lignitic, woody fragments, sticks, leaves, etc. It is also found in Carter County and a few other places. Crude petroleum and allied substances have been worked with profit in various places in Tennessee. Maury, Jackson, Overton, Dickson, Wilson, Montgomery, Hickman and other counties furnish it.

The black shale is a great source of these oils, the richest producing from thirty to forty gallons of oil to the ton. The Spring Creek, Overton County, wells have yielded most. Thousands of barrels of crude petroleum have been pumped, salt mines have been worked on Calfkiller Creek, and in Anderson, Warren, Van Buren, Overton, Jackson and elsewhere. Sulphur springs occur in some localities. Nitre is found in the numerous caves of the limestones of the table-land. Alum is obtained from the black shale. Epsom salts is found in the caves. Gypsum appears in several caves. Barite is found. Copperas was formerly extensively made from the protoxide of iron (pyrites) thrown out at the Duckworth copper mines, also sulphate of copper. Iron pyrites is often found. Black manganese is often found associated with limonite.

*Marble.*—The marbles are very valuable, and are already a great source of wealth. They have been divided as follows: 1, reddish variegated fossiliferous marble; 2, whitish variegated fossiliferous marble; 3, dull, variegated magnesian marble; 4, black and dark-blue marbles; 5, breccia and conglomerate marbles. The first is the most important and occurs in East, Middle and West Tennessee. Beds have been opened in Henry County, also in Benton and Decatur. In Franklin County are extensive beds. In White County a clouded white marble is obtained. In the valley of East Tennessee the reddish marble occurs in Hawkins, Hancock, Grainger, Jefferson, Knox, Roane, Blount, Monroe, McMinn and Bradley, and to a more limited extent in Meigs, Anderson, Union and Campbell. It has been extensively quarried, and is a variegated crinoidal and coralline limestone colored grayish-white or brownish-red and sometimes pinkish or greenish-red. The most common color is brownish-red more or less mottled with white or gray clouds or spots, due to corals. Large quantities are mined and shipped. It possesses great properties of weather durability and resistance to pressure. The whitish marble is a coralline, sparry gray-whitish rock, much of the white ground being mottled with pink or reddish spots. There is no superior building stone in the State than this variety. The other varieties are rarer, but all are good. From the gneiss and white quartz stones of the metamorphic group excellent mill-stones are obtained. The chert of the Knox dolomite furnishes fine mill-stones. The Ocoee group produces the best roofing slates. Hydraulic limestone and fire-clay abound. Sulphur, chalybeate, Epsom and alum springs abound. Sulphur springs originate in the black shale.

*Temperature.*—It has been found, through many years' observation, that the mean annual temperature of the Valley of East Tennessee is about 57 degrees, of the Central Basin 58, and of West Tennessee 59½ to 60 de-

grees, through the central part of the State, east and west. The average annual minimum temperature of Middle Tennessee is 2 degrees, and the average maximum temperature about 94 degrees. The average length of the growing season, between the last killing frost of spring and the first of autumn, is about 194 days. In East Tennessee it is a few days less. Southerly winds are most prevalent, then northerly, and easterly and westerly about the same. The quantity of rain and melted snow varies annually from 43 to 55 inches. These estimates are the best that can be given from the limited observations made in the past.

*Elevations.*—The principal elevations above the sea are as follows, in feet: Stone Mountain range—Cat Face Mountain, 4,913; State Gap, 3,400; Taylorsville, 2,395; State line in Watauga Valley, 2,131; Yellow and Roane range—Yellow Mountain, 5,158; Little Yellow, 5,196; Roane—Cold Spring, 6,132; Grassy Ridge Bald, 6,230; High Knob, 6,306; High Bluff, 6,296; Bald Mountain range—Bald Mountain, 5,550; Jonesborough, 1,734; Big Butt range—highest points over 5,000 feet; Greenville depot, 1,581; Great Smoky range—Warm Springs, N. C., 1,335; piazza of hotel, Tennessee line on French Broad, 1,264; Indian Grove Gap, 4,288; Man Patch Gap, 4,392; Bear Wallow Mountain, 4,659; Luftee Knob, 6,238; Thermometer Knob, 6,157; Raven's Knob, 6,230; Tricorner Knob, 6,188; Mount Guyot, 6,636; Mount Henry, 6,373; Mount Alexander, 6,447; South Peak, 6,299; highest peak of Three Brothers, 5,907; Thunder Knob, 5,682; Laurel Peak, 5,922; Reinhardt Gap, 5,220; top of Richland Ridge, 5,492; Indian Gap, 5,317; Peck's Peak, 6,232; Mount Ocona, 6,135; New Gap, 5,096; Mount Mingus, 5,694; Bullhead group—Mount Le Conte (central peak), 6,612; Mount Curtis (west peak), 6,568; Mount Safford, 6,535; Cross Knob, 5,931; Neighbor, 5,771; Master Knob, 6,013; Tomahawk Gap, 5,450; Alum Cave, 4,971; Rood Gap, 5,271; Mount Collins, 6,188; Collins' Gap, 5,720; Mount Love, 6,443; Clingman's Dome, 6,660; Mount Buckley, 6,599; Chimzey Knob, 5,588; Big Stone Mountain, 5,614; Big Cherry Gap, 4,838; Corner Knob, 5,246; Forney Ridge Peak, 5,087; Snaky Mountain, 5,195; Thunderhead Mountain, 5,520; Eagletop, 5,433; Spence Cabin, 4,910; Turkey Knob, 4,740; Opossum Gap, 3,840; North Bald, 4,711; Central Peak of Great Bald, 4,922; South Peak, 4,708; Tennessee River at Hardin's, 899; Chilhowee Mountain, 2,452; Montvale Springs, 1,293; between Little Tennessee and Hiwassee—Hangover Knob, over 5,300; Haw Knob, over 5,300; Beaver Dam or Tellico Bald, 4,266; south of the Hiwassee the elevation of the chain is reduced to 3,000 to 3,400 feet; Frog Mountain is about 4,226 feet; the Ducktown copper region is about 2,000 feet high.



Along the East Tennessee, Virginia and Georgia Railway the elevations are as follows: Bristol, 1,678; Union, 1,457; Carter, 1,474; Johnson's, 1,643; summit between Chucky and Watauga, 1,841; Jonesborough, 1,736; Limestone, 1,419; Fullens, 1,489; Greeneville, 1,581; Bull's Gap, 1,214; Russellville, 1,260; Morristown, 1,283; Strawberry Plains, 906; Knoxville, 898; Loudon, 819; Athens, 993; Hiwassee River at low water, 684; Cleveland, 878; State line between Tennessee and Georgia, 837; also Clinton, 847; Chattanooga, railroad grade, 675; Tennessee River at Chattanooga, 642; Cumberland Gap, 1,636; Pinnacle (near gap), 2,680; Elk Gap (surface), 1,702; Cross Mountain Point, 3,370; Gap, 2,875; Cove Creek, 1,041; average bottom of Elk Fork Valley, 1,200; Pine Mountain, 2,200 to 2,400; Tellico Mountain, 2,000 to 2,700; Crab Orchard Mountain, about 3,000; flat summit of Lookout Mountain, 2,154; Raccoon Mountain, back of Whiteside depot, 1,900; Tracy City, 1,847; highest ridges near Tracy City, 2,161; summit of Ben Lomond, 1,910; Tullahoma (grade), 1,070; creek at Manchester, 996; McMinville (depot), 912; Sparta, station, 945; Livingston, station, 966; Hickory Nut Mountain, about 1,400; Murfreesboro depot, 583; Nashville depot grade, 435. Nashville, low water in Cumberland, 365; Springfield grade, 659; Gallatin surface, 528; Franklin depot, 642; Columbia depot, 657; Mount Pleasant (creek), 625; Palo Alto, 1,025; Pulaski, 648; Kingston Station, 506; highest point on the railroad west from Nashville to the Tennessee River, 915; lowest point on the grade at the Tennessee River, 368; Grand Junction on the west side, 575; Middleton, 407; Moscow, 351; Germantown, 378, Memphis, 245; low water of the Mississippi at Memphis, 170; Obion River on the Ohio & Mississippi Railroad (grade), 287; Bolivar, 430; Medon, 420; Jackson, 459.

## CHAPTER II.

THE MOUND-BUILDERS—EVIDENCES OF PRE-HISTORIC OCCUPATION—ARGUMENTS OF BANCROFT AND HILDRETH—DEDUCTIONS OF JUDGE HAYWOOD—COMPARISON OF ANCIENT RACES AND CUSTOMS—THE SUN WORSHIPERS—THE NATCHEZ TRIBE—CLASSIFICATION OF EARTHWORKS—REPRESENTATIVE MOUNDS OF TENNESSEE—THE “STONE FORT”—CONTENTS OF THE WORKS—THEIR GREAT AGE.

AT the time of the discovery of the present State of Tennessee by white people, the larger part of it, as well as the larger part of the State of Kentucky, was unoccupied by any Indian tribe. The reason of this state of things will appear as the reader proceeds. But although then unoccupied there were found abundant evidences not only of the former presence of Indian tribes but of a still more dense and ancient population, possessing a higher degree of civilization, a more highly developed condition of art, agriculture, warfare and religion, than anything of the kind pertaining to any of the aboriginal or Indian tribes, as they are called. These evidences consist of mounds of various shapes and kinds, of fortifications and of burying-grounds, of their contents, relics and remains still to be found throughout the valley of the Mississippi, and of the valleys of its tributaries from the Alleghany to the Rocky Mountains, and from the Gulf of Mexico to the great lakes, all of which relics and remains will be appropriately noticed in the proper connection. But from the existence and frequency of the occurrence of these mounds, the origin and history of which were at least as inexplicable to the aboriginal Indian tribes, as to their more intelligent and inductive successors, their erectors and constructors for want of a better name, have been by American historians generally called the “Mound Builders.”

The most conspicuous exception to this rule is the venerable Bancroft, whose opinions, even if occasionally erroneous, are eminently worthy of profound respect. To the historian and especially to the antiquarian, even if in less degree to the general student and reader, is the inquiry pertinent as to the origin of the first inhabitants of America. Bancroft many years ago wrote: “To aid this inquiry the country east of the Mississippi has no monuments. The numerous mounds which have been discovered in the alluvial valleys of the West, have by some been regarded as the works of an earlier and more cultivated race of men, whose cities have been laid waste, whose language and institutions have been destroyed, or driven

*Bancroft  
as  
Mound Builders*

away; but the study of the structure of the earth strips this imposing theory of its marvels. Where imagination fashions relics of artificial walls, geology sees but crumbs of decaying sandstone, clinging like the remains of mortar to blocks of green stone that rested on it; it discovers in parallel intrenchments, a trough that subsiding waters have ploughed through the center of a ridge; it explains the tessellated pavement to be but a layer of pebbles aptly joined by water; and, on examining the mounds, and finding them composed of different strata of earth, arranged horizontally to the very edge, it ascribes their creation to the Power that shaped the globe into vales and hillocks. When the waters had gently deposited their alluvial burden on the bosom of the earth it is not strange that of the fantastic forms shaped by the eddies, some should resemble the ruins of a fortress; that the channel of a torrent should seem even like walls that connected a town with its harbor; that natural cones should be esteemed monuments of inexplicable toil. But the elements as they crumble the mountain, and scatter the decomposed rocks, do not measure their action as men measure the labor of their hands. The hunters of old, as more recently the monks of La Trappe, may have selected a mound as the site of their dwellings, the aid to their rude fortifications, their watch-towers for gaining a vision of God, or more frequently than all as their burying places. Most of the northern tribes, perhaps all, preserved the bones of their fathers; and the festival of the dead was the greatest ceremony of Western faith. When Nature has taken to herself her share in the construction of the symmetrical hillocks, nothing will remain to warrant the inference of a high civilization that has left its abodes or died away—of an earlier acquaintance with the arts of the Old World. That there have been successive irruptions of rude tribes may be inferred from the insulated fragments of nations which are clearly distinguished by their language. The mounds in the valley of the Mississippi have also been used; the smaller ones perhaps, have been constructed as burial places of a race, of which the peculiar organization, as seen in the broader forehead, the larger facial angle, the less angular figure of the orbits of the eye, the more narrow nose, the less evident projection of the jaws, the smaller dimensions of the palatine fossa, the flattened occiput, bears a surprisingly exact resemblance to that of the race of nobles who sleep in the ancient tombs of Peru. Retaining the general characteristics of the red race, they differ obviously from the present tribes of Miamis and Wyandots. These moldering bones from hillocks which are crowned by trees that have defied the storms of many centuries, raise bewildering visions of migrations of which no tangible traditions exist; but the graves of earth from which they are dug, and the feeble fortifications that are sometimes found in

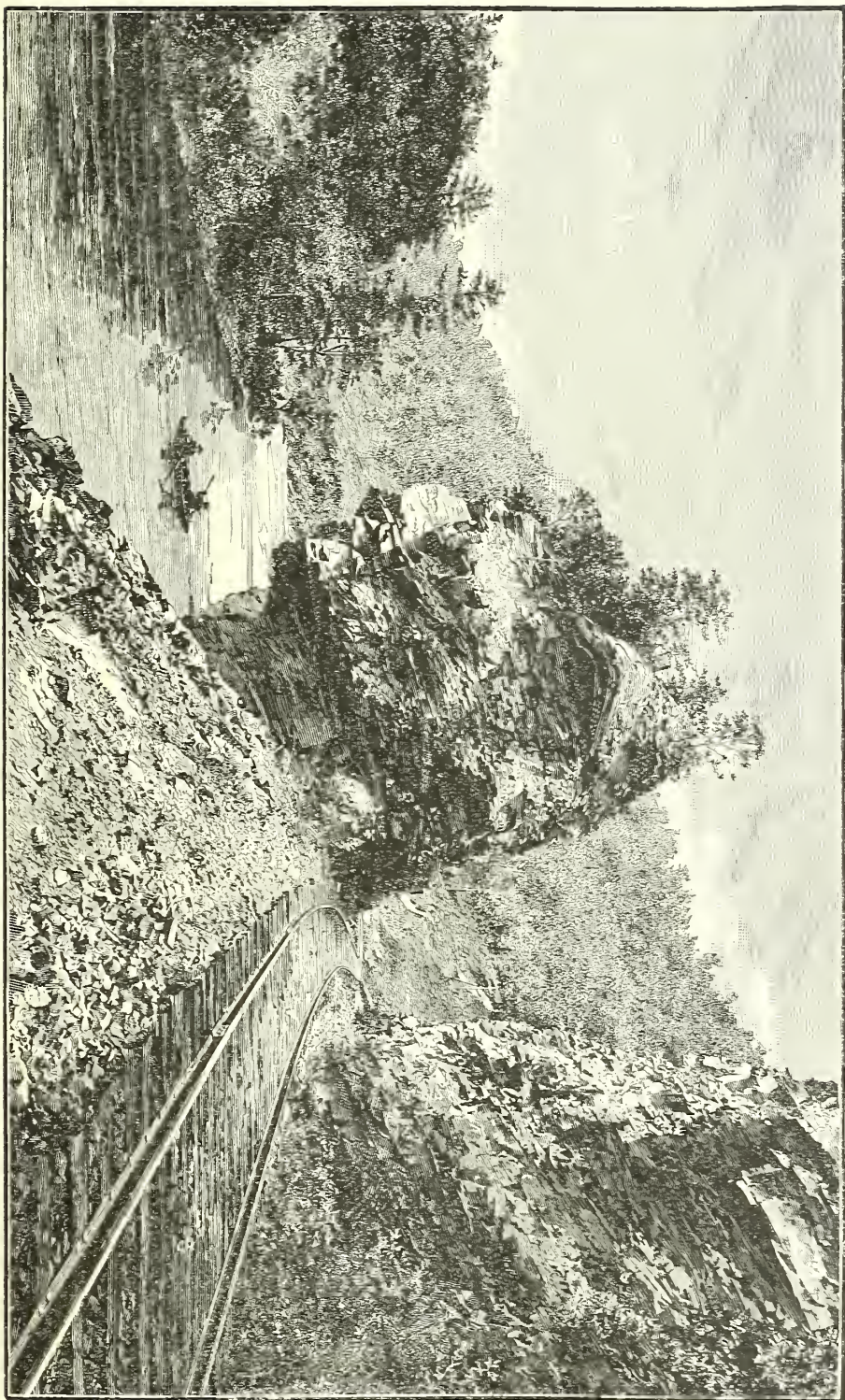
the vicinity. afford no special evidence of early connection with other continents. 'Among the more ancient works,' says a careful observer, who is not disposed to undervalue the significance of these silent monuments, near which he dwells, and which he has carefully explored, 'there is not a single edifice nor any ruins which prove the existence in former ages of a building composed of imperishable materials. No fragment of a column, nor a brick, nor a single hewn stone large enough to have been incorporated into a wall, has been discovered. The only relics which remain to inflame curiosity are composed of earth.' Some of the tribes had vessels made of clay; near Natchez an image was found of a substance not harder than clay dried in the sun. These few memorials of other days may indicate revolutions among the barbarous hordes of the Americans themselves: they cannot solve for the inquirer the problem of their origin."

Thus Bancroft while denying the general proposition that there was in the Mississippi Valley anteriorly to its occupation by Indians, a race of Mound Builders, as that term is generally understood, yet admits that there may have been a race who may have constructed the smaller mounds, as burial places, and whose general physical characteristics bore a strikingly exact resemblance to that of the race of nobles who sleep in the ancient tombs of Peru. But other authorities, notably *Winchell*, the author of "Preadamites," hold, from the evidences which they have accumulated, that not only was the entire Mississippi Valley inhabited by an agricultural population of greater or less density, but such population possessed an entirely different physical structure and entirely different habits and civilization than these possessed by the Indian tribes. If the latter were the descendants of the earlier race of Mound Builders sufficient time elapsed between them to change the stature, cranial development and pursuits. It is well established that, while the Indians professed no knowledge of the construction of the greater number of the mounds, they themselves built them for probably the same purpose as the Mound Builders.

Another celebrated American historian, *Hildreth*, expresses himself with reference to the inferences to be drawn from the existence of the mounds in the following language: "These memorials consist of embankments of earth and stone exhibiting indisputable evidence of design and were sometimes of very great extent. Some of them were located along the brows of hills or upon the precipitous edges of ravines enclosing considerable table-land, and were evidently designed as works of defense. Others still more numerous, extensive and elaborate were most probably connected with religious ideas. In various places they present curious basso-



VIEW ON THE EMERY RIVER.





*relievos*, birds, beasts, reptiles and even men; more generally enclosures of various sorts, perfect circles or squares and parallel lines of great extent, the embankments being from five to thirty feet in height, and the enclosures from one to fifty or even to four hundred acres; other classes of structures connected with or separate from those just mentioned, increasing in number toward the south, conical and pyramidal structures, from a few yards to hundreds in diameter and from ten to ninety feet in height occasionally terraced like the Mexican *teocallis*. Some of these were for sepulchral purposes, others were doubtless mounds of sacrifice. Connected with these ancient monuments are found remnants of pottery, and weapons and utensils of stone, axes and ornaments of copper; but nothing which indicates a higher civilization than that possessed by the Indians. Yet the extent and number of these earth erections, of which there are but few traces east of the Alleghanies, which region was the most populous when discovered by Europeans, evinces the combined labor of many hands, of a kind of which no trace has ever been found among the aboriginal tribes."

All writers on American antiquities infer from the existence of these antiquities the existence of a race of Mound Builders. Accepting this conclusion as settled there still remain the puzzling problems as to whence they came, how long they remained and when and whither they went. Other authors, besides Judge Haywood, have made strong attempts at a solution from the scanty evidence at hand. His attempt, though exceedingly interesting and ingenious, has not been generally recognized as final. He labors assiduously to show various similarities between the Hindoos and Egyptians, and then to show the similarities between Mexicans and Peruvians and the Hindoos and Persians. All of these nations called their rulers the children of the sun. The Mexicans and Hindoos both divided the people into four castes. The state of property was also the same in Persia, Egypt and Peru, one-third set apart as sacred to the God they worshiped, one-third to the sovereign and one-third to the people. The religion of the Mexicans and of the Hindoos was also similar. The Hindoos have a *trimurti* consisting of Brahma, Vishnu and Siva. From Hindostan this idea or conception of a triune God traveled into Egypt, and thence to the Hebrew nation, Greece and Rome, and if the same deified trinity be found in America it is legitimate to refer it to the same Hindoo origin, at least until a better be assigned.

Haywood's theory.  
Mexico, Peru, Persia, Egypt, & Hindoos.

The representations of the Mexican god Hialzettipocli very strikingly resemble that of the Hindoo god Krishna. The masque of the Mexican priest is represented in Mexico. He is drawn as sacrificing a human victim, a sacrifice which all worshippers of the sun everywhere make.



The masque represents an elephant's trunk, similar to the head so often seen portrayed in Hindostan. As no elephants exist in America it is reasonable to conclude that the design was brought from Asia. Various coincidences are seized upon to show the possible derivation of the religion of the Mexicans from that of the Hindoos. Among the latter the conch shell is used as a symbolical representation of Vishnu, and also in the worship of that deity. The conch shell is similarly used by the Mexicans in their worship of the god of the ocean, which they adore equally with the sun. And the little conch shells found in the graves of the ancient inhabitants of the Mississippi Valley indicate similar religious belief and ceremonies. Multitudinous ablutions are alike used by both. The sacred buildings of the Mexicans are similar to the same buildings, and the pyramids of Egypt and India and the temple of Belus. The tower of Babel and the great temple of Mexico were each dedicated to two divinities. The similarity of the construction of the pyramids of Mexico is worthy of notice, those in both countries being square and so built as to almost exactly face the four cardinal points of the compass; those in Egypt being precisely coincident with the true meridian, and those in Mexico varying only by fifty-two seconds of arc. The cosmical history of the Mexicans is the same as that of the Hindoos, both believing, to illustrate, that the world would be destroyed by a general conflagration, and mankind having all derived it from the prophecy of Noah.\* The vernacular customs of both Hindoos and Mexicans were the same both as to those relative to religion and as to those relating to the common concerns of life. The titles the sun, the brother of the sun, the children of the sun, were given to the princes of Peru and of Mexico and of the Natchez, and are the same as those anciently given to the princes of Persia, India, Ceylon and China. The Mexican year consisted of 365 days, six hours, and the day began with the rising of the sun, as was likewise the case with the Persians and Egyptians, as well as the greater part of the nations of Asia. The Egyptians did not know of the year consisting of 365 days in the time of Moses nor until 1322 B. C. In the time of Plato, 384 B. C., they discovered that a year consists of 365 days, six hours. The people of America called the constellation now universally known as the Great Bear by a name which signifies the bear, a name first given to this constellation by the Egyptians and some Asiatic people. Such facts as these afford indubitable proof that the astronomy of the Mexicans was not of their own invention, but was learned by them from the countries whence they immigrated. They also were familiar with certain Scriptural traditions; as the fall of man, and the connection of the

---

\*Genesis ix: 11 to 15.



serpent with that fall; of a great flood overwhelming the earth from which only a single family escaped, and also of a great pyramid erected by the pride of man, and destroyed by the anger of the gods. But they have no tradition of any thing that occurred on the eastern side of the Atlantic Ocean later than the building of the tower of Babel. The Mexicans therefore could not have learned them from the writings of Moses or they would also have known of the history of Abraham and of the Israelites as well as of the facts to which such traditions relate. Hence they must have left the Old World before the writings of Moses came into existence, or they must have lived for a time in some part of Asia, where, on account of the prevailing idolatry, the writings of Moses could not penetrate, but yet where they had access to the astronomical learning of the Chaldeans after 384 B. C.

At the time of Moses all the civilized nations of Asia worshiped the sun, as the numerous places named Baal with an affix abundantly testify, as Baalath, Baalpeor, etc., and so far were his many and earnest injunctions from subduing their disposition to this worship, that even Solomon, who lived 500 years after Moses' time, and who was the wisest of princes, embraced the idolatrous worship of the sun. It is fair to presume that sun-worshippers follow the same customs all over the world. Sun-worshippers, wherever they are known to practice this form of idolatry, build high places, enclosing them in open courts, and upon these high places erect houses for their idols, placing the idols within the houses. Upon these high places they burnt incense to Baal, to the sun, to the moon, to the planets and to the hosts of heaven. Upon these high places they made sacrifices of human beings, even of their sons and daughters, to the sun, and made their children pass through the fire to their idols. In Scotland a ceremony used to be celebrated on the 1st of May (O. S.), the inhabitants of a district assembling in the field, digging out a square trench, in which they built a fire and baked a cake, and then cutting the cake into as many pieces as there were persons, and blacking one with charcoal, all were thrown into a bag, out of which each person, blind-folded, drew a piece, the one drawing the black piece was sacrificed to Baal (some say made to leap through the fire three times) to propitiate him for the coming year. This is the same ceremony as was practiced by Manasseh, the sixteenth King of Judah, who made his sons pass through the fire to Moloch. Certain worshippers of the sun kept the festival of Tammuz, at the time of the summer solstice, the same time at which the southern Indians celebrated the green corn dance.

The Mexicans had pikes pointed with copper which appeared to have been hardened with an amalgam of tin, and they had among them car-

penters, masons, weavers and founders. The Peruvians used mattocks of hardened wood and bricks dried in the sun. They had the art of smelting ore, and of refining silver, of which they made domestic utensils. They had also hatchets of copper made as hard as iron, but they did not worship idols. They carried the idols of the people they conquered to their temple of the sun at Cusco. Hence the mounds upon which images have been found in the Mississippi Valley can not be ascribed to the Peruvians. The question remains, can they be ascribed to the Mexicans or to a similar race?

All the nations west of the Mississippi when they first became known to Europeans were worshipers of the sun, and were governed by despotic princes—two prominent circumstances in which they differed from the Indians who lived on the Great Lakes and on the east side of the Alleghanies. At this time the Natchez tribe of Indians occupied almost the entire eastern part of the Mississippi Valley south of the Ohio River, and a portion of that north of this river, and most of the mounds were the limits of their settlements. They were governed by one man who styled himself the child of the sun, or the sun, and upon his breast was the image of that luminary. His wife was called the wife of the sun, and like him was clothed with absolute authority. When either of these rulers died, the guards killed themselves in order to attend them in the other world. They had one temple for the entire nation and when on one occasion it caught fire, some mothers threw their children into the flames to stop their progress. Some families were considered noble and enjoyed hereditary dignity, while the great body of the people were considered vile. Their great chief, the descendant of the sun, the sole object of their worship, they approached with religious veneration, and honored him as the representative of their deity. In their temples, which were constructed with some magnificence, they kept up a perpetual fire as the purest emblem of their divinity. The Mexicans and the people of Bogota were worshipers of the sun and moon, and had temples, altars, priests and sacrifices. The name of the Natchez melted away, and their decline seemed to keep pace with the wasting away of the Mexican empire. The Natchez were partially destroyed in a battle with the French, east of the Mississippi, and after their retreat up Red River, west of the Mississippi, they were finally conquered, their women and children reduced to slavery and distributed among the plantations, and the men themselves sent to serve as slaves in San Domingo.

The Natchez were the most highly polished and civilized of any race of Indians. They had an established religion and a regular priesthood. The usual distinctions created by rank were understood and observed, in

which particulars they differed from the Indians north of the Ohio and east of the Alleghanies. They were seldom engaged in any but defensive wars and did not deem it glorious to destroy the human species. They were just, generous and humane, and attentive to the wants of the needy; and it is probable they inhabited all the country from the Mississippi eastward to the Alleghanies and northward to the Ohio.

In the light of more recent investigations, although Judge Haywood's line of argument is that necessarily followed by naturalists, and although the facts brought to light by him are yet as valuable as though his theory were impregnable, yet it was necessary for him to assume untenable positions in order to make it appear reasonable that the Natchez were the Mound Builders. In all probability this tribe occupied a territory much smaller than that supposed by him, viz.: the entire eastern half of the Mississippi Valley south of the Ohio River. But even if his supposition in this respect were true, there are many thousands of mounds outside of these limits, in Ohio, Indiana, Illinois and Wisconsin. In this latter State the mounds appear to be of a kind peculiar to that location, being so constructed as to show they were designed to be effigies of most of the various kinds of quadrupeds known in the country, as well as fishes, reptiles and birds. Of these perhaps the most remarkable is the "Big Elephant Mound," a few miles below the mouth of the Wisconsin River, in Wisconsin. From its name its form may be inferred. It is 135 feet in length and otherwise properly proportioned. It scarcely seems probable that the people who constructed these mysterious mounds could have represented an elephant or a mastodon without having seen one, and it is perhaps justly inferable that the "Big Elephant Mound" was constructed in the days of the mastodon. If this be true it is eloquent in its argument for the immense age of the mounds, as geologists are generally agreed that the mastodon lived not much later than the Pliocene era.

Another fact attesting the great age of these most interesting relics is this: The human bones found therein, except those of a later and probably intrusive burial, are not in a condition to admit of removal, as they crumble into dust upon exposure to the air; while human bones are removed entire from British *tumuli* known to belong to ages older than the Christian era, and frequently from situations much less conducive to preservation than those in the mounds, and in addition the mounds are rarely found upon the most recently formed terraces of the rivers.

The selection of sites for the location of these mounds appears to have been guided by the location of soils capable of cultivation, and by accessibility to navigable streams; the same situations have since frequently been selected by pioneers of civilization as the centers of settle-



ment and trade. While the purpose for which some of these mounds were erected is sometimes doubtful, as is the case with the "animal mounds" in Wisconsin, a few in Ohio, and some in the valley of the Arkansas, yet as to many of them which have been carefully explored there is less doubt, and they are divided according to the usés to which they were probably devoted. All the earthworks found in Tennessee belong to one of the classes below. Mounds are numerous in West Tennessee, on the Cumberland, on both Big and Little Tennessee, on French Broad, on Duck and on the Elk. The earthworks have been classified by an eminent antiquarian\* as follows:

EARTHWORKS.	{	Mounds	{	Sepulchral.
			{	Templar.
			{	Sacrificial.
			{	Memorial.
			{	Observatory.
		Effigies	{	Animal.
			{	Emblematic.
			{	Symbolical.
			{	Military.
		Inclosures	{	Covered.
			{	Sacred.

One of these mounds is in the immediate vicinity of Nashville, upon which Monsieur Charleville, the French trader, had his store in 1714, when the Shawanee Indians were driven away by the Cherokees and Chickasaws. Very large burying grounds lay between this mound and the river; thence westwardly and then to the creek. The great extent of the burying ground, and the vast number of interments therein, induce the belief that a population once resided there many times greater than that now occupying that portion of the State, and suggested the idea that the cemetery was in the vicinity of the mound because the mound was used for religious purposes.

About fourteen miles up the Cumberland above Nashville is a mound twelve to thirteen feet high. Upon excavation ashes were found mixed with lime and substances resembling human bodies after being burned.

On Big Harpeth River, near the mouth of Dog Creek, is a square mound, 47x47 feet and 25 feet high and in a row with it two others from 5 to 10 feet high. At some distance are three others in a row parallel with the first, the space between resembling a public square. All around the bend of the river, except at a place of entrance, is a wall on the margin of the river, the mounds being within the area enclosed by the wall. Within this space is a reservoir of water about fifteen feet square. On the top of the large mound was found an image eighteen inches long from head to foot composed of soapstone. The trees standing upon the mounds are very old; a poplar tree was five or six feet in diameter.

\*Isaac Smucker in "Ohio Statistics."



Higher up the river and within a mile of those just described is another bend in the river. In this bend, on the south side of the river, is a mound of the same size as the larger one described above. Near this mound were found a large number of pine knots. As there were then no pine woods within five or six miles it is supposed that these pine knots are the remains of the old field pines, which grew to full size after cultivation had deserted this region, and falling there decayed. The soil renewed its richness, and the present growth, consisting of oaks, poplars and maples, succeeded that renewal. Allowing 250 years for the growth of the pines, 50 years for the renewal of the soil and 350 years for the present growth, 650 years have passed since the commencement of the growth of the pines. Hence those pines must have begun to grow about the year 1240, which again shows the great age of the mounds.

In Sumner County, in a circular enclosure between Bledsoe's Lick and Bledsoe's Spring branch, is a wall from fifteen to eighteen inches high, with projecting angular elevations of the same height, the wall enclosing about sixteen acres. Within the enclosure is a raised platform from thirteen to fifteen feet above the common surface, about 200 yards from the south wall. This platform is sixty yards wide, is level on the top and joins a mound which is twenty feet square and eighteen feet above the common level. In 1785 a black oak tree three feet through was growing on the top of this mound. About 1815 there was plowed up on top of the mound an image made of sandstone. The breast was that of a female and prominent, and the color was that of a dark infusion of coffee. Near this mound was a cave, which at the time of its discovery contained a great number of human skulls, without the appearance of any other portions of the human skeleton near them.

In Williamson County, northwardly from Franklin, on the north side of Little Harpeth, are walls of dirt running north from the river. In 1821 they were four or five feet high, and from 400 to 500 yards long, the inclosure containing about fifty acres. Within this inclosure are three mounds standing in a row from north to south, all nearly of the same size. Within this inclosure is a large number of graves, some of the bones in which were very large.

In the same county on the south side of Big Harpeth, about three miles from Franklin, is an ancient entrenchment nearly in the form of a semi-circle, containing about twenty acres. Within the inclosure made by this entrenchment and the bluff are several mounds of different shapes and sizes, from six to ten feet high and from ten to twelve yards wide. Besides these are other mounds nearly round and ten yards in diameter. The largest of the mounds of the first class is sixty-eight feet wide and

148 feet long and about ten feet high. The trees within the enclosure are as large as those of the surrounding country.

In Hickman County, at the junction of Piney River with Duck River, is an enclosure containing twenty-five or thirty mounds, one of which is about fifteen feet high, round and somewhat raised on top, but yet flat enough to build a house on. At the base it is about thirty or forty yards across. There are numerous mounds in the bottoms of Duck River, and caves containing human bones.

In Lincoln County, near Fayetteville, below the mouth of Norris Creek, are a wall and a ditch proceeding from a point on the river circularly till it returns to the river, forming an enclosure of about ten acres. Within this enclosure are mounds six or eight feet high. On the outside of the wall and joined to it are angular projections about 180 feet apart and extending outward about ten feet. On one of these angular projections stood a black oak tree, which, when cut down, exposed 260 annular rings.

In Warren County are numerous mounds fifteen feet high. Eight miles south from McMinnville, on Collins River, is a mound thirty feet high, with a flat top, containing about one and a half acres of ground. On either side of the mound toward the north and south is a ditch about twenty feet wide and four feet deep at present, extending parallel and terminating at each end at a high bluff. On the mounds were large stumps indicating trees of a very great age.

In Roane County is a mound thirty feet high, having a flat top and a regular ascent from bottom to top. The summit contains one-fourth of an acre, and all around the summit there was a stone wall about two feet high. It is on the south side of the Tennessee River. Across the Tennessee facing the mound is a high bluff, upon which three figures are painted with black and red colors from the waist upward. One of the figures is that of a female.

On the French Broad River, about one mile above the mouth of the Nollichucky, is a mound thirty feet high, with old trees at the top.

In the third section of the fourth range of the Tenth District of the Chickasaw Purchase are seven mounds, one of them seventeen feet high and about 140 feet across. Seven miles southwest of Hatchie River and about fifty miles east of the Mississippi, in a fertile part of the country, are three mounds enclosed by an intrenchment from ten to thirty feet wide. Two miles south of the south fork of Forked Deer River and about fifty miles east of the Mississippi, is a mound fifty-seven feet high and over 200 feet across. On the south side of Forked Deer River, about forty miles west of the Tennessee, is a mound about 100 rods in diameter

at the base, the summit containing about four acres, and in this part of the country are a great number of mounds besides.

On the north bank of the Holston River five miles above the mouth of French Broad, are six mounds on half an acre of ground, irregularly scattered. The bases of these mounds are from ten to thirty feet in diameter, the largest one ten feet high. Near these mounds on a bluff 100 feet high are painted in red colors the figures of the sun and moon, birds, fishes, etc.

The contents of the mounds are sometimes of considerable interest. In 1821 the Charleville mound near Nashville was opened, and pottery of Indian fabrication was found, as also the jaw bone of some unknown carnivorous animal, and small fragments of bones thought to be human. About four feet from the summit was found a layer of charcoal about two inches thick and extending outward from the center of the mound from eight to ten feet. The inference was that a fire had been built on top of the mound, and after the fuel had been consumed, fresh dirt carried in earthen jars and laid on the ashes before they had time to blow away, the fragments of these jars being seen through every part of the mound. The object for which the mound was raised can only be conjectured. It could not have been for a throne for the ruler of the nation, for savages are not thus devoted to their leaders. It could not have been for military purposes, for to be placed on the mound would be only to be more exposed to the enemy's missiles. It could not have been for a tower, for there was no narrow pass near it to be guarded. It therefore seems probable that it could only be for religious purposes.

In the mounds near Bledsoe's Lick (Castalian Springs), in Sumner County, were found ashes, pottery ware, flint, muscle shells, periwinkles, coal, etc. In making an excavation in one of these mounds there was found two feet below the surface a layer of ashes fourteen inches thick. In proceeding downward there were found twenty-eight layers of ashes, alternating with clay, the ashes being of a blackish color. At eight feet below the summit of the mound was found the skeleton of a child, the surroundings bearing evidence of careful burial. The skeleton was in quite a decayed state. At its feet was a jug of sand-stone capable of holding about a gallon. Small pieces of decayed human bones were also found, and also the jaw-bone of some unknown animal with a tusk attached, the tusk being of the same form as that of the mastodon. There were found also the bones of birds, arrow points, and flints at the depth of eighteen feet, and pottery, some of which was glazed, isinglass, and burnt corn-cobs. At the depth of nineteen feet were found a piece of a corn-cob and some small pieces of cedar almost entirely decayed.



Near Nashville, probably about the year 1800, there was dug up an image. The base of this image was a flat circle from which rose a somewhat elongated globular figure terminating at the top with the figure of a female head. The features of the face were Asiatic, probably a resemblance of the Mound Builders themselves. The crown of the head was covered with a cap or ornament, shaped into a pyramidal figure, with a flattened circular summit ending at the apex in a rounded button. Another image was found about twelve miles south from Nashville, of sculptured stone, representing a woman sitting with hands under her chin and elbows on her knees. It was well proportioned, neatly formed and highly polished. Two others were found near Clarksville, one of an old man the other of an old woman. In 1883 a roughish stone image was found on the farm of Dr. W. H. Garman, seven miles from Franklin, Williamson County. This is the image of a person sitting with limbs drawn close to the body and hands upon knees, and with the features resembling somewhat the supposed appearance of the Mound Builders. This image is now in the possession of the Tennessee Historical Society at Nashville.

In a cave about six miles from Carthage on the Cumberland River were found a number of human skeletons, one of which was that of a female with yellow hair, and having around the wrist a silver clasp with letters inscribed resembling those of the Greek alphabet. This was in 1815. But perhap the most interesting relics found in Tennessee, in the form of human skeletons, were discovered in 1811 in a cave in Warren County, about twenty miles from McMinnville. These were of two human beings, one male the other female. They had been buried in baskets the construction of which was evidence of considerable mechanical skill. Both bodies were dislocated at the hips and were placed erect in the baskets, each of which had a neatly fitting cover of cane. The flesh of these persons was entire and undecayed, dry and of a brown color. Around the female, next to her body, was placed a well dressed deer-skin, and next to this was a mantle composed of the bark of a tree and feathers, the bark being composed of small strands well twisted. The mantle or rug was about six feet long and three feet wide. She had in her hand a fan made from the tail feathers of a turkey, and so made as to be opened and closed at pleasure. The hair remaining on the heads of both was entire, and that upon the head of the female, who appeared to have been about fourteen years old at the time of her death, was of a yellow color and a very fine texture. Hence the individuals were thought to have been of European or Asiatic extraction. With reference to the mantles in which these bodies were enclosed it may be remarked that the Florida Indians met with by De



Soto in his wanderings "adorned themselves with mantles made of feathers, or in a textile fabric of some woody fiber," and "wore shoes and clothing made from skins which they dressed and colored with great skill."\* It appears also that certain Indians were acquainted with some kind of rude art of preserving the bodies of the dead, for, in 1528, Pamphilo de Narvaez and his company in a reconnoissance along the coast near Tampa Bay, Fla., "came upon a little Indian village, where they found some bodies in a sort of mummified condition, the sacred remains, no doubt, of the ancestors of the chiefs of the tribe."† Thus the mantles and the mummified condition of these bodies might perhaps be considered sufficiently accounted for, but there remains the question of the color and fineness of the texture of the hair to be solved.

Numbers of the constructions by the Mound Builders were evidently for other than sacrificial or religious purposes. On the south branch of Forked Deer River between the Tennessee and Mississippi Rivers is the appearance of what the people there call an ancient fortification. It is 250 yards square. The wall is made of clay and is eight feet above the general level. Trees as large as any in the surrounding county are growing on the top and sides of the wall. Within this wall is an ancient mound eighty-seven feet high, circular in form except at the top where it is square and fifty feet each way.

In Stewart County, near the junction of Spring Branch with Wells Creek is a fortification about ninety feet square, with bastions twelve feet square at the opposite corners. Large white oak and hickory trees are growing on the walls and bastions.

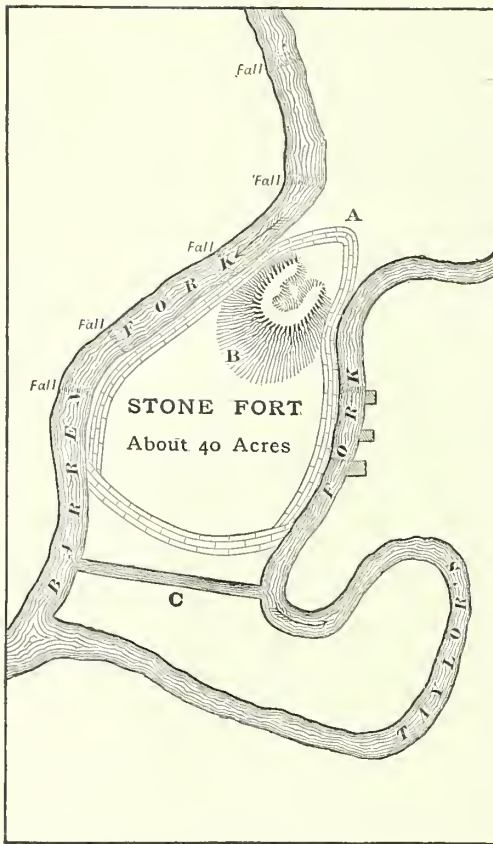
But perhaps the most interesting of all the ancient constructions in Tennessee is what is everywhere known as the "Old Stone Fort." This fort is in Coffee County, at the verge of the highlands one mile from Manchester, just above the junction of Barren Fork and Taylor's Fork of Duck River. The fort itself is in the form of an irregular oval. On the east and west sides of it the water falls from precipice to precipice until the fall is 100 feet in a half mile. The fort is a wonderful structure. The walls are composed of boulders, conglomerate and *debris* from the beds of the two streams, and earth. The embankment has a base of thirty feet and when built it was doubtless higher than the men who made it. The amount of material which entered into its construction is immense, and a corresponding amount of labor was required to do the work. Thirty years ago the ground was very heavily timbered with poplar, chestnut and hickory, ranging from three to five feet in diameter. Trees as large as could be found anywhere in the vicinity were standing

---

\*Bryant.

†Ibid.

immediately on the embankment, and it is manifest that at the time of the building of the fort there was not a tree nor shrub to be found in the vicinity.



In the diagram A represents the entrance into the fort, B a semi-circular embankment to cover the entrance, and C an excavation about 100 feet deep extending from one river to the other. Whether this excavation was made by man or nature can not now be known, but speculation favors the hypothesis that it was made by man. The antiquity of the fort is indubitable. Nothing has ever been found about the fort to furnish the least clue to its origin. It could not have been, as has been suggested, the work of De Soto and his men, for in the first place they were probably much farther south when they passed its longitude, and second it would have required half a lifetime to do the work, and then they would have had no use for it when made. In addition to

these considerations it is shown to have been in existence before De Soto visited this country. On the 7th of August, 1819, Col. Andrew Erwin, on whose land the fort was, caused to be cut down a white oak tree. Maj. Murray and himself counted 357 annular rings in this tree, which was growing on the wall. How long it was after the building of the wall before the tree began to grow it is of course impossible to know. It may have been one hundred or a thousand years. But if no interval be allowed, which however cannot be supposed, the fort can not have been erected later than 357 years previous to 1819, or 1462, thirty years before Columbus discovered America, and seventy-eight years before De Soto made his famous tour of exploration. Thus again do we arrive at an immense age for these works, and it is also fair to presume that the fort was built when this section of the country was thickly inhabited.

Many other remains and relics of great interest, especially to the anti-

quarian, have been found within this State. Enough has been presented to show that the Mound Builders, whencesoever and whenever they may have come, were a numerous, intelligent, religious, agricultural and, to a considerable degree, a warlike people, at least so far as defensive wars are concerned; that they occupied the country probably for many centuries; that they were driven out by a race superior in numbers and probably in the art of war, but inferior in intellect; that they can scarcely have lived in this country later than 1,000 or 1,200 A. D.; that when driven out they probably moved southward into Mexico, Central and South America, and they may possibly have been the ancestors of, or have been absorbed by, some Central American or South American race.

---

### CHAPTER III.

THE INDIAN RACES—DIALECTS AND TRADITIONS—GEOGRAPHICAL TRIBAL LOCATION—FRENCH AND SPANISH SETTLEMENTS—ESTABLISHMENT OF THE FIRST FORT—SAVAGE ATROCITIES—THE FORT LOUDON MASSACRE—DESTRUCTION OF INDIAN VILLAGES AND FIELDS—"THE BELOVED TOWN"—PEACE AND CESSION TREATIES—BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT—BORDER WARS—EXPEDITIONS OF RUTHERFORD AND CHRISTIAN—"THE LOWER TOWNS"—SEVIER'S CAMPAIGNS—RESERVATIONS AND BOUNDARY LINES—THRILLING FRONTIER INCIDENTS—INDIAN AFFAIRS ON THE CUMBERLAND—ROBERTSON'S EXERTIONS—THE COLDWATER AND NICKAJACK EXPEDITIONS—TREATY STIPULATIONS—THE UNICOI TURNPIKE COMPANY—THE HIWASSEE LANDS—THE WESTERN PURCHASE—EXODUS.

THE race of red men having the earliest claim to the territory now embraced within the limits of Tennessee, was the Iroquois, or Confederacy of Six Nations, though it was for the most part unoccupied by them. The Achalaques had a kind of secondary, or perhaps it may be called permissory claim to it. In Schoolcraft's great work on the Indian races of North America is a map showing the location of the various Indian tribes in the year 1600, which, if authentic, proves that the Achalaques then occupied most of Tennessee east of the Tennessee River, and also small portions of Georgia and Alabama, and a considerable portion of Kentucky. The ancient Achalaques were the same tribe or nation as the modern Cherokees. They have no *l* in their language, and hence substitute the letter *r* therefore, in a manner similar to that in which the modern Chinaman substitutes *l* for *r*. Then by a few other slight and obvious changes the name Cherokee is easily obtained. But the first actual Indian occupants of this territory, of which history or tradition fur-



nishes any account, were the Shawanees, or Shawanoes as they were earlier known.

With respect to the origin of the Shawanees it is proper to observe that they and the Algonquins are the only tribes of Indians, having a tradition of an origin from beyond the seas—of a landing from a sea voyage. John Johnson, Esq., who was for many years prior to 1820 agent for the Shawanees, observes, in a letter dated July 7, 1819, that they migrated from west Florida and parts adjacent to Ohio and Indiana, where they were then located:

“The people of this nation have a tradition that their ancestors crossed the sea. They are the only tribe with which I am acquainted who admit a foreign origin. Until lately they kept yearly sacrifices for their safe arrival in this country. From where they came or at what period they arrived in America they do not know. It is a prevalent opinion among them that white people had inhabited Florida who had the use of iron tools. Blackhoof, a celebrated Indian chief, informs me that he has even heard it spoken of by old people that stumps of trees covered with earth were frequently found which had been cut down with edged tools.”

About the year 1600 the Five Nations were settled near the site of Montreal, Canada, having come probably from the north or northwest. There were among them, as well as among other races, several traditions relative to the extirpation of an ancient race of people. The tradition of the Indians northwest of the Ohio was that Kentucky had been inhabited by white people, and that they had been exterminated by war. The Sac Indians had a tradition that Kentucky had been the scene of much blood. The ancient inhabitants, they said, were white, and possessed arts of which the Indians were entirely ignorant. Col. McGee was told by an Indian that it was a current tradition among the Indians that Ohio and Kentucky had once been inhabited by white people who possessed arts not understood by the Indians, and that after many severe conflicts they had been exterminated. The various sources from which this tradition comes is evidence of its very general existence among the Aborigines more, perhaps, than of its truth.

The Shawanees, who came from the Savannah River, whose name was once the Savannachers, and after whom the Savannah River received its name, at one time claimed the lands on the Cumberland River. This was, however, at a later period in their history, when their name had been changed from the Savannachers to the Shawanoes. The French called both the tribe and the river the Chauvanon, or Shauvanon. The Cherokees, as was stated above, also asserted a claim to the same land, but always acknowledged the superior claim of the Iroquois, who themselves



claimed the country by right of conquest. For many years both Shawnees and Cherokees maintained against each other a bloody contest for its possession; but being so nearly equal in strength and prowess, neither could gain any decided advantage over the other. At length both nations, fearing the results of a continuation of the conflict, refrained from going upon the lands between the Cumberland and the Kentucky and Ohio, for which reason this beautiful section of the country became an immense, luxuriant park, abounding in game of every kind perfectly safe from the arrows of the savages, who fearfully observed this as a neutral ground. When this great and unusual abundance of game became known to white hunters belonging to the English and French pioneers, they soon began to resort thither for the purpose of enriching themselves with the skins and furs of the bear, the deer, the otter and the mink, to be so easily and so plentifully obtained. Gen. Robertson learned that about a century and a half before his time the Shawanees had by degrees returned to the lands on the Cumberland, were scattered to the westward as far as the Tennessee, and even considerably to the north. About the year 1710, being much harassed by the Cherokees, they came to the determination to permanently leave the country.

The Chickasaws were at that time occupying the country to the southwest, in the western part of Tennessee and the northern part of Mississippi. According to their own tradition they came from west of the Mississippi. When about to start eastward from their ancient home they were provided with a large dog as a guard and a pole as a guide. The dog would give them warning of the approach of an enemy, to defend themselves against whom they could then prepare. The pole they set up in the ground every night, and the next morning they would look at it and go in the direction it leaned. They continued their journey thus until they crossed the Mississippi River, and until they arrived on the waters of the Alabama where Huntsville is now located. There the pole was unsettled for several days, but finally becoming steady it leaned in a northwest direction, and in consequence they resumed their journey toward the northwest, planting the pole every night as before until they arrived at the place called "Chickasaw Old Fields," where the pole stood perfectly erect. All then came to the conclusion that they had reached the promised land. In this location they remained until 1837 or 1838, when they migrated west of the State of Arkansas.

When the pole was in its unsettled condition a part of the tribe moved on eastward and joined the Creeks. They always afterward declined the invitation to reunite with the majority of their tribe, but always remained friendly until they had intercourse with the whites. The great dog was

lost in crossing the Mississippi, and the Chickasaws always believed that he fell into a large sink-hole and there remained. They said they could hear him howl at night, and so long as this continued whenever they took any scalps from an enemy they sent boys back with the scalps to throw to the dog. In traveling from the West they have no recollection of having crossed any large stream of water except the Mississippi. Upon leaving the West they were informed they might look for white people, that these white people would come from the East, and that they were to be on their guard against them lest they should become contaminated with all the vices the whites possessed.

The Shawanees, it is believed, came to this country about the year 1650, and in 1710 or thereabouts, when they determined to leave it forever on account of the frequent harassments to which they were subjected by the Cherokees, the Chickasaws, for some reason which does not appear, united with the Cherokees, the hereditary enemies of the Shawanees, for the purpose of striking a decisive blow and thus making themselves masters of the situation. In pursuance of this design a large body of Chickasaws repaired to the Cumberland just above the mouth of Harpeth, where they attacked the Shawanees, killed a large number of them and took from them all their property. The remnant of the tribe made their way northward as best they could.

The claim of the Cherokees to the land north of the Cumberland was not considered as perfect even by themselves. This became apparent at the treaty of Fort Stanwix, which was made November 5, 1768. This treaty was made between Sir William Johnson, superintendent for northern Indian affairs, representing the King of Great Britain, and 3,200 Indians of seventeen different tribes—the Six Nations, and tribes tributary to that confederacy, or occupying territory contiguous to territory occupied by them. In this treaty the delegates of the respective nations aver that “they are the true and absolute proprietors of the lands thus ceded,” and that for the consideration mentioned they continued the line south to Cherokee or Hogohegee\* River, because the same is and we declare it to be our true bounds with the southern Indians, and that we have an undoubted right to the country as far south as that river.” Some visiting Cherokees, who were present at the treaty, on their arrival at Fort Stanwix, having killed some game on the way for their support, tendered the skins to the Six Nations, saying, “they are yours, we killed them after passing the Big River,” the name by which they always called the Tennessee. By the treaty at Fort Stanwix the right to the soil and sovereignty was vested in the king of

---

\* Holston.

Great Britain, and by the treaty of 1783 the king of Great Britain resigned his sovereignty in the lands, and thus they became the property of those States within whose limits they happened then to be.

While the Six Nations claimed the lands only by the right of conquest, the Cherokees had long exercised the privilege of using them as a hunting ground, and naturally, therefore, regarded with jealousy the encroachments of the whites. John Stuart, superintendent of Southern Indian Affairs, was, therefore, instructed to assemble the southern Indians for the purpose of establishing a boundary line with them, and concluded a treaty with the Cherokees at Hard Labour, S. C., October 14, 1768. By this treaty it was agreed that the southwestern boundary of Virginia should be a line "extending from the point where the northern line of North Carolina intersects the Cherokee hunting grounds, about thirty-six miles east of Long Island, on the Holston River, and thence extending in a direct course north by east to Chiswell's Mine, on the east bank of Kanawha River, and thence down that stream to its junction with the Ohio."

Having thus traced the Iroquois and Shawanees to their departure from the State, the former by treaty with Great Britain, and the latter by expulsion by the Cherokees and Chickasaws, there now remain, to treat of in this chapter the Creeks—or as they were originally known, the Muscogeas—the Choctaws and Chickasaws, the three leading tribes or nations of the Appalachian group, which in early Indian times, just previous to the dawn of history in this State, occupied Florida, Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi and the western part of Tennessee, and the Achalagues or Cherokees, who ostensibly occupied Eastern and Middle Tennessee and small portions of Georgia, Alabama and Kentucky.

Perhaps the earliest exploits of the Creeks and Cherokees desirable to mention in this work, were their alliances with the whites in 1711, about the time of the expulsion of the Shawanees from the Cumberland, when the Tuscaroras, Corees and other tribes combined for the extermination of the settlers on the Roanoke, their attempt resulting in the massacre of 137 white people. The details of this disaster reaching Charleston, Gov. Craven sent Col. Barnwell with 600 militia and 400 Indians went to the relief of the survivors, the 400 Indians consisting in part of Creeks and Cherokees. The Tuscaroras and Corees were subdued, the hostile portion of the former tribe migrated to the vicinity of Oneida Lake, and then became the sixth nation of the Iroquois Confederacy.

In about four years after the suppression of the Tuscaroras, all the Indian tribes from Florida to Cape Fear united in a confederacy for



the destruction of the white settlements in Carolina. This confederacy was composed of the Catawbas, Congarees, Creeks, Cherokees, and Yamassees. It is believed they were instigated to the course they pursued by the Spaniards, as they had just received guns and ammunition from St. Augustine. After spreading desolation and death for some time through the unsuspecting settlements, the confederacy was met by Gov. Craven at Salkehatchie, defeated and driven across the Savannah River.

The French were at this time erecting forts in various parts of the Southwest: Paducah at the mouth of the Cumberland; Assumption, on Chickasaw Bluff; besides others, and numerous trading posts on the Tennessee. The English and French colonists were each seeking to ingratiate themselves with the various Indian tribes with which they came in contact, with the view of attaching to themselves as many of the Indians as possible and of thus obtaining advantages the one over the other. In pursuance of this policy Gov. Nicholson, in 1721, invited the Cherokees to a general conference, in order to establish a treaty of commerce and friendship. In response to this invitation the chieftains of thirty-seven different towns attended the conference, at which Gov. Nicholson made them presents, laid off their boundaries, and appointed an agent to superintend their affairs. Similar measures were taken with the Creeks. In 1730 the projects of the French with reference to uniting Louisiana and Canada began to be more noticeably developed. They had already made many friends among the Indians west of Carolina, and in order to counteract their influence Great Britain sent out Sir Alexander Cumming to treat with the Cherokees, who then occupied the lands about the head waters of the Savannah River, and backward from the Appalachian chain of mountains. This tribe was then computed to consist of more than 20,000 individuals, 6,000 of whom were warriors. Sir Alexander met the chiefs in April of the year last mentioned at Nequassee, all the towns sending in representatives or delegates. Nequassee was near the sources of the Hiwassee. A treaty of friendship, alliance and commerce was drawn up and formally executed, in consequence of which a condition of peace and friendship continued to exist for some time between the colonists and this tribe. Two years afterward Gov. Oglethorpe effected a treaty with the Lower and Upper Creeks, a powerful tribe then numbering in the aggregate about 25,000 souls. These alliances with the Cherokees and Creeks promised security to the colonists from the encroachments from the Spanish and French in Florida and Louisiana.



In 1740 the Cherokee Indians marked out a path from Augusta to their nation, so that horsemen could ride from Savannah to all the Indian nations. In 1750 a treaty was made by Col. Waddle and the chief, Attakullakulla, in behalf of the Cherokee nation, in accordance with which Fort Dobbs was built about twenty miles from Salisbury, N. C., and near the Yadkin; but the Indians paid but little attention to the treaty, as they killed some people the next spring near the Catawba. In 1755 Gov. Glenn, of South Carolina, met the Cherokee warriors and chiefs in their own country, and made a treaty with them at which a cession of considerable territory was made to the King of Great Britain and deeds of conveyance formally executed in the name of the whole people. In 1756 the Earl of Loudon, commander of the King's troops in America, sent Andrew Lewis to erect a stone fort on the Tennessee River, at the head of navigation. It was erected about thirty miles from the present site of Knoxville, and was named Fort Loudon in honor of the Earl. This fort was garrisoned with about 200 men, the existence of the fort and the presence of the troops giving great uneasiness to the Indians. In the spring of 1758 the settlement around Fort Loudon, by the arrival of hunters and traders, soon grew into a thriving village. During this year the British captured Fort Du Quesne, the English Army being commanded by Gen. Forbes, and immediately after its capitulation the name was changed to Fort Pitt, in honor of the great commoner of England. In the army of Gen. Forbes were several Cherokees, who had accompanied the provincial troops of North and South Carolina. The disaffection among the Cherokees already existing was unfortunately suddenly and largely increased by a serious occurrence in the back parts of Virginia. Returning home through this part of the country, the Cherokees, who had lost some horses on the expedition to Fort Du Quesne, stole such as they found running at large. This action of theirs was resented by the Virginians killing twelve or fifteen of the Cherokees, which ungracious conduct from allies whose frontier the Cherokees had aided to defend, at once aroused a spirit of resentment and revenge. The garrison of Fort Loudon, consisting of about 200 men, under the command of Capts. Demeré and Stuart, on account of its remoteness from white settlements, was the first to notice and suffer from the retaliatory proceedings of the Cherokees. Soldiers making excursions into the woods to procure fresh supplies of provisions were attacked by the Indians, and some of them killed. From this time it became necessary for them to confine themselves within the narrow limits of the fort. The sources of their provisions being cut off, there seemed no prospect before them but famine and death. Parties of warriors

rushed down upon the settlements along the border, and the work of massacre became general among the frontier settlements.

After the fall of Fort Du Quesne, and the decline of the power of France in America, a fundamental change occurred in the relations of the northern Indian tribes to the French and English nations. The northern tribes had hitherto been allied to the French, but now the French, having been overcome by the English, it became necessary for them to transfer their allegiance to the English. But the southern tribes remained quiescent and relied for security on the power of the French. At this time the territory of the Cherokees extended from Fort Ninety-six on the Carolina frontier and Fort Prince George on the Keowee branch of the Savannah to the source of that river and across the Appalachian chain of mountains to and down the Cherokee or Tennessee River and its southern branches, a country replete with every resource required for the sustenance of savage life and customs.

Gov. Lyttleton hearing of the investment of Fort Loudon, and of the outrages along the border, summoned the militia to assemble at Congaree, for the purpose of chastising the enemy, but previous to assuming offensive measures, called together some of the head men of the nation and made with them a treaty, which after reciting reference to former treaties, which had been violated by the Indians, proceeded with commendable precision to rehearse grievances of a still later date, for all of which the Cherokees promised to make amend, and also promised good conduct for the future. Two of their own nation who had committed murders were actually delivered up, and the surrender of twenty more was promised, to be kept as hostages, until the same number of Indians guilty of murder, should be delivered up, and that the Cherokees should kill or take prisoner every Frenchman that should presume to come into the nation. This treaty was signed by Attakullakulla and five other principal chiefs on the part of the Cherokees, and by Gov. Lyttleton. His purpose having been accomplished, and peace restored as he supposed, the Governor returned to Charleston, and the Indians recommenced their depredations. It has been well said by a writer on American history, that the Indians are of such a nature that unless they feel the rod of chastisement, they cannot believe in the power to inflict it; and accordingly whenever they happen to be attacked unprepared they have recourse to a treaty of peace as a subterfuge, in order to gain time to collect themselves. Then without the least regard to the bonds of public faith, they renew their hostilities on the first opportunity. Possibly, however, there may be some little palliation for their perfidy with reference to this treaty with Gov. Lyttleton signed by the six Cherokees, when it is consid-

ered that only this small number signed it, and that the treaty itself was not in accordance with the sentiments of the tribe. This became painfully evident immediately after the departure of the Governor from Fort Prince George and the dispersion of his army. Hostilities were at once renewed and fourteen whites killed within a mile of the fort. On the 18th of February, 1760, the Cherokees assembled at the fort on the Keowee, and attempted to surprise it. As the garrison was gazing at the forces from the ramparts, a noted chief, Oconostota, approached and expressed a desire to speak to the commandant, Lieut. Coytmore, who agreed to meet him on the bank of the Keowee River, whither he was accompanied by Ensign Bell and the interpreter, Mr. Coharty. Oconostota said he wished to go down to see the Governor and requested that a white man be permitted to go with him. This request being acceded to he said to an Indian "Go and catch a horse for me." This was objected to, but the chief making a faint motion carelessly swung a bridle, which he held, three times around his head. This being a secret signal to men lying concealed, a volley was poured in which mortally wounded Coytmore, who received a ball in his breast, and inflicted deep flesh wounds on others.

This treachery of Oconostota so aroused the indignation of Ensign Miln, commanding the garrison of the fort, that he determined to put the twenty hostages as well as the two murderers in irons; but the first attempt to seize the assassins was so successfully resisted that the soldier deputed to effect it was instantly killed and another wounded. This so exasperated the garrison that they immediately put to death all the hostages. This act of retaliation was followed by a general invasion of the frontier of Carolina, and an indiscriminate slaughter of men, women and children.

Measures were taken as soon as practicable to punish and restrain these excesses by collecting together a large force of men and sending them forward under Col. Montgomery for the Cherokee country. Such was the celerity of his movements that the Cherokees were taken completely by surprise. On the 26th of May he reached Fort Ninety-Six, and on June 1 passed the twelve-mile branch of the Keowee. Four miles before reaching the town of Estatoe Col. Montgomery's attention was attracted by the barking of a dog about a quarter of a mile from the road, at a town called Little Keowee. He detached a force of soldiers to surround the town with instructions to kill the men, but to spare the women and children, which instructions were obeyed, the main force proceeding on to Estatoe, a town of about 200 houses, well supplied with provisions and ammunition. Estatoe was reduced to ashes, and twelve of its warriors killed. Other towns were attacked in rapid succession, until every one in the lower



nation had been visited and destroyed. About twenty of the Cherokees were killed and forty taken prisoners, with a loss to Col. Montgomery of four soldiers killed and two officers wounded.

Montgomery then returned to Fort Prince George, whence he sent out messengers inviting the Cherokees to sue for peace, and also sending word to Capts. Demeré and Stuart, commanding at Fort Loudon, requesting them to obtain peace if possible with the Upper Towns. But hearing nothing from them he determined to penetrate to the Middle Towns. Starting on the 24th of June he marched with the same celerity three days, on the third day reaching Etchowee. Entering the valley near this town the savages sprang from their lurking lair, fired upon the troops, killed Capt. Morrison and wounded a number of his men. A heavy firing sprang up on both sides and lasted about an hour, with the result of killing twenty-six and wounding seventy of Col. Montgomery's men. The loss to the Indians is not known, but the battle was not decisive, and Col. Montgomery, with such a large number of wounded men upon his hands, found it impracticable to proceed further, and so returned to Fort Prince George.

Fort Loudon, by reason of its great distance from the seat of authority in North Carolina, was peculiarly exposed to the dangers of frontier warfare. Its garrison was now reduced to the fearful alternative of starving to death or of submitting to the enraged Cherokees, as neither Virginia nor North Carolina was able to render any assistance. For an entire month they had been obliged to subsist on the flesh of lean dogs and horses and a small supply of Indian beans, stealthily procured for them by some friendly Cherokee women. Besieged night and day, and with no hope of succor, the garrison refused longer to be animated and encouraged to hold out by their officers, and threatened to leave the fort, take their chances of cutting through the forces of their savage besiegers, and, failing, die at once rather than longer endure the slow, painful process of starvation. The commander therefore held a council of war, and the officers all being of the opinion that it was impossible to hold out longer, agreed to surrender the fort to the Cherokees on the best terms that could be obtained. Capt. Stuart therefore obtained leave to go to Chota, where he obtained the following terms of capitulation:

That the garrison of Fort Loudon march out with their arms and drums, each soldier having as much powder and ball as their officers shall think necessary for the march, and all the baggage they may choose to carry; that the garrison be permitted to march to Virginia or Fort Prince George as the commanding officer shall think proper, unmolested; that a number of Indians be appointed to escort them and hunt for provisions on the march; that such soldiers as are lame, or are by sickness disabled from marching, be received into the Indian towns and kindly used until they recover, and then be allowed to return to Fort Prince George; that the Indians provide for the garrison as many horses as they conveniently can for the march, agreeing with the officers and soldiers for pay-



ment; that the fort, great guns, powder, ball and spare arms be delivered to the Indians without fraud or delay on the day appointed for the march of the troops.

In accordance with this stipulation the garrison marched out of the fort, with their arms, accompanied by Oconostota, Judd's friend, the prince of Chota, and several other Indians, and marched fifteen miles on the first day, encamping for the night on a plain about two miles from Tellico. At this place all their Indian attendants left them upon one pretext or another. This desertion was looked upon by the garrison as of a very suspicious nature, and hence a strong guard was placed around the camp. The next morning about daybreak, one of the guard came running into camp with the information that a vast number of Indians armed and painted in the most dreadful manner, were creeping up among the bushes and preparing to surround the camp. Almost immediately the enfeebled and dispirited garrison was surrounded and a heavy fire was opened upon them from all quarters, which they were powerless to resist. Capt. Demeré, three other officers and about twenty-six private soldiers fell at the first onset. Some fled to the woods, others were taken prisoners and confined in the towns of the valley. Capt. Stuart and some others were taken back to Fort Loudon. Attakullakulla, hearing of his friend Stuart's capture, immediately repaired to the fort, purchased him from his captors, took him to his own home, where he kept him until a favorable opportunity should offer for aiding him in his escape. The soldiers were after some time redeemed by the Province at great expense.

While the prisoners were confined at Fort Loudon, Oconostota decided to make an attack upon Fort Prince George, and in the attack to employ the cannon and ammunition taken at Fort Loudon. The council at which this decision was made was held at Chota, Capt. Stuart being compelled to attend. The Captain was given to understand that he must accompany the expedition to Fort Prince George, and there assist in the reduction of the fort by manning the artillery for the Indians, and by being their enforced amanuensis in the correspondence with the fort. This prospect was so alarming to the Captain that he, from the moment of being made acquainted with the designs of the Cherokees with reference to himself, resolved to escape or perish in the attempt. He therefore privately communicated his purpose to his friend Attakullakulla, and invoked his assistance to accomplish his release, which Attakullakulla promptly pledged himself to give. Claiming Capt. Stuart as his prisoner, he announced to the other Indians his intention of going hunting for a few days, and took the Captain with him. The utmost caution and celerity were required in order to prevent surprise from pursuit. Nine days and nights did they hasten on through the wilderness for Virginia,

shaping their course by the sun and moon. On the tenth they fell in with a party of 300 men at the banks of Holston River, sent out by Col. Bird for the relief of Fort Loudon. For his kindly offices to Capt. Stuart Attakullakulla was loaded with provisions and presents, and sent back to protect the other unhappy prisoners until such time as they could be ransomed, and to exert his influence with his nation for the restoration of peace.

The success of the Cherokees at Fort Loudon and the fact of the battle of Etchowee with Col. Montgomery being indecisive, or perhaps rather being favorable to the Indians, only served to stimulate their spirit of aggression; but the French in Canada being now reduced it became much surer than hitherto to send from the north a force adequate to the defense of the southern provinces. In pursuance of this policy of defense against the warlike Indians, Col. Grant arrived at Charleston with the British regulars early in 1761, and in company with a provincial regiment raised for the purpose, marched for the Cherokee country. Among the field officers of this regiment were Middleton, Laurens, Moultrie, Marion, Huger and Pickens. Col. Grant arrived with his command at Fort Prince George May 27, 1761. Attakullakulla, hearing of the approach of this formidable army, hastened to the camp of Col. Grant, and vainly proposed terms of peace; but knowing too well the story of Cherokee perfidy, the Colonel was determined on severer measures than a treaty, the terms of which were so soon forgotten. A fierce battle was therefore fought near the town of Etchowee on the same ground where a year before Montgomery was practically defeated. The engagement raged three hours, until the perseverance and bravery of the soldiers expelled the Cherokees from the field. After the battle their granaries and corn fields were destroyed, and their wretched families driven to the barren mountains. Their warlike spirit was for a time subdued, and at the earnest solicitation of Attakullakulla, the old and friendly chief, peace was once more restored and ratified. The peace which succeeded this victory over the Cherokees brought with it a remarkable increase of population and prosperity.

In 1767, upon the application of the Cherokee nation, and at the recommendation of Gov. Tryon, an application was made by North Carolina for the running of a dividing line between the western settlements of the Province and the hunting grounds of the Cherokees, the tribe of Indians most closely identified with the history of Tennessee. They were a formidable tribe, both with regard to numbers and to warlike prowess. The early history of this State is full of incidents illustrative of their courageous, revengeful and perfidious spirit. It had been found impossible to reconcile them with the Tuscaroras. When the attempt was

made the Cherokees replied: "We can not live without war. Should we make peace with the Tuscaroras we must immediately look out for some other nation with whom we may be engaged in our beloved occupation." Animated by this sentiment they were constantly acting on the offensive. In the earlier maps of the country the Tennessee River is called the Cherokee, as the Cumberland was early called the Shawanee, and similarly the name of this tribe was applied to the mountains near them, the word Currahee being only a corruption of Cherokee. They had almost universally been conquerors in their wars with other nations, and their continued success made them arrogant, quarrelsome and defiant. About the year 1769 they took offense at the Chickasaws and made a hostile invasion of their country. At the Chickasaw Old Fields the inoffensive but brave Chickasaws met them with great spirit, the result being a sanguinary conflict and the total defeat of the Cherokees, who retired to their own village beyond the Cumberland and the Caney Fork. This defeat, occurring about the same time with the settlement on the Watauga, doubtless contributed much to the peaceful demeanor of the Indians toward that infant and feeble colony, and hence to its success.

One of the institutions of most Indian tribes was the city of refuge, which, if a murderer or other criminal could once enter, was a sure protection against punishment so long as he remained within its limits. Chota, five miles above the ruins of Fort Loudon was the city of refuge for the Cherokees. On a certain occasion an Englishman, after killing an Indian warrior in defense of his property, took refuge in Chota and found protection there so long as he chose to remain, but was warned that if he ventured outside some Cherokee would surely kill him on the first opportunity. How long he remained in Chota is not recorded, nor what was his fate upon leaving the beloved town.

The Cherokees had a profound veneration for the relics of the Mound Builders, the origin of which, however, they knew nothing; but they considered them the vestiges of an ancient and numerous race, further advanced in the arts of civilized life than themselves.

Early in 1772 the authorities of Virginia made a treaty with the Cherokees by which a boundary line was agreed upon, to run west from the White Top Mountain in northern latitude 36 degrees, 30 minutes. Almost immediately afterward the Watauga leases were made, which are referred to in the chapter on settlement, and also that of Jacob Brown. In the fall of 1774 negotiations were commenced between Richard Henderson & Co. and the Cherokees, which terminated in March, 1775, the treaty being held at Watauga. At this treaty two deeds were obtained—one known as the "Path Deed," and the other as the "Great Grant." The boundaries expressed in the Path Deed were as follows:



"All that tract, territory, or parcel of land beginning on the Holston River, where the course of Powell's Mountain strikes the same; thence up the said river as it meanders to where the Virginia line crosses the same; thence westwardly along the line run by Donelson *et. al* to a point six English miles eastward of the Long Island in the said Holston River; thence a direct course toward the mouth of the Great Kanawha, until it reaches the top of Powell's Mountain; thence westwardly along the said ridge to the beginning." The Great Grant Deed contained the following boundaries:

"All that tract, territory or parcel of land situated, lying and being in North America, on the Ohio River, one of the eastern branches of the Mississippi River, beginning on the said Ohio River, at the mouth of Kentucky, Cherokee or what is known by the English as the Louisa River; thence running up said river, and the most northwardly fork of the same to the head spring thereof; thence a southeast course to the ridge of Powell's Mountain; thence westwardly along the ridge of said mountain unto a point from which a northwest course will hit or strike the head spring of the most northwardly branch of Cumberland River; thence down the said river, including all its waters, to the Ohio River; thence up the said river as it meanders to the beginning."

These two purchases, or the treaty under which they were made, were repudiated by both North Carolina and Virginia, as being made by private individuals, the States themselves, however, claiming the benefit of the treaty. About the time of the commencement of negotiations between Col. Henderson & Co. and the Cherokees, occurred the first battle with the Indians in which Tennessee troops were engaged. This was the battle of the Kanawha or Point Pleasant, on the Ohio River, and here they displayed that adventure and prowess which have so signally characterized them during all periods of the history of their State. The tribes of Indians engaged in the work of destruction and massacre on the Virginia frontier were the Shawanees and other northern and western tribes. Lord Dunmore took immediate and vigorous measures to repress the hostilities and punish the audacity of the enemy. Four regiments of militia and volunteers under Gen. Andrew Lewis, who built Fort Loudon, were ordered to march down the Great Kanawha to the Ohio. While on the march down the Great Kanawha, or, as it is called now, the New River, Gen. Lewis was joined by Capt. Evan Shelby, who had raised a company of upward of fifty men for the expedition in what are now Sullivan and Carter Counties. The entire army reached and encamped upon the present site of Point Pleasant, on the 6th of October. Early on the morning of the 10th the camp was attacked by a large body



of Indians, and a sanguinary battle ensued which lasted the entire day, but which by skillful maneuvering and courageous fighting terminated in the evening in a total rout of the Indians, in their precipitate flight across the Ohio, and their return to their towns on the Scioto. The loss of the Indians in this hard and well-fought battle appears not to have been ascertained, but that of Gen. Lewis was twelve commissioned officers killed or wounded, seventy-five non-commissioned officers killed and 141 wounded.

Capt. Evan Shelby's company consisted of the following persons: James Robertson, Valentine Sevier and John Sawyer were three of the orderly sergeants; James Shelby, John Findley, Henry Sparr, Daniel Mungle, Frederick Mungle, John Williams, John Comack, Andrew Torrence, George Brooks, Isaac Newland, Abram Newland, George Ruddle, Emanuel Shoutt, Abram Bogard, Peter Forney, William Tucker, John Fain, Samuel Fain, Samuel Vance, Samuel Handley, Samuel Samples, Arthur Blackburn, Robert Handley, George Armstrong, William Casey, Mack Williams, John Stewart, Conrad Nave, Richard Burk, John Riley, Elijah Robertson, Rees Price, Richard Halliway, Jarret Williams, Julius Robinson, Charles Fielder, Benjamin Graham, Andrew Goff, Hugh O'Gullion, Patrick St. Lawrence, James Hughey, John Bradley, Basielel Maywell and Barnett O'Gullion.

After the battle of Point Pleasant a treaty was made between the Indians and Lord Dunmore, by which they relinquished all their claims to lands north of the Ohio River, and by the treaty with Henderson & Co. the Cherokees relinquished all their claim to the land lying between the Ohio and Cumberland Rivers; hence this immense tract of magnificent country was at that time entirely free from Indian occupants as claimants.

Previous to the conclusion of the Henderson Treaty, a remarkable speech was made by Oconostota, a Cherokee chief, whose name has occurred heretofore in this history. Oconostota had fought for the retention of the country by his own people and was now opposed to the treaty, and though his speech was listened to with profound attention and all the respect due to so venerable an orator, yet its counsels were not heeded, and the cession was made. In the light of subsequent events, however, it can scarcely be said that the cession was unwise, notwithstanding the eloquence and prophetic nature of the speech of Oconostota, for had not the cession been made in March, 1775, it would have been made at a later time and at the close of a more or less protracted and sanguinary struggle. In his speech Oconostota reminded his auditory of the once flourishing condition of his nation, of the continual en-

encroachments of the white people upon the consequently continually retreating Indian nations, who had been compelled to leave the homes of their ancestors to satisfy the insatiable greed of the white people. It was at one time hoped that these white people would not be willing to travel beyond the mountains, but now that fallacious hope had vanished, and the Cherokee lands were fast being absorbed and usurped, and the attempt was now being made to have those usurpations confirmed by a treaty in which the Cherokees would sign their own rights away, after the accomplishment of which the same encroaching spirit would again lead them upon other Cherokee lands, until finally the entire country which the Cherokees and their forefathers had occupied for so many centuries would be required, and the Cherokee nation once so great and formidable, reduced to a small remnant, would be compelled to seek a retreat in some far distant wilderness, there to dwell but a short time when the same greedy host would again approach with their banners of civilization, and unable to point out any further retreat for the Cherokees to seek, would proclaim the extinction of the whole race. The close of this oration was a strong appeal to his people to run all risks rather than consent to any further diminution of their territory.

But when accomplished this treaty, like so many others, failed to satisfy a large portion of the Cherokee nation, and in the year 1776 they made great preparations for an attack on the settlements on the Watauga and Holston. Indications of these preparations became more and more evident and numerous. Jarret Williams and Robert Dews, two traders among them, from observations they had made arrived independently of each other at the conclusion that an exterminating war had been determined upon. Evidence was also discovered that the Cherokees had been so influenced as to be ready to massacre all the back settlers of Carolina and Georgia. The commencement of the Cherokee hostility was the killing of two men named Boyd and Doggett, after the former of whom Boyd's Creek in Sevier County was named. John Stuart, superintendent of southern Indian affairs, instructed by the British War Department, dispatched orders to his deputies resident among the different tribes, to carry into effect the desires of the Government. Alexander Cameron, agent for the Cherokee nation, upon receipt of his instructions, lost no time in convening the chiefs and warriors; and notwithstanding efforts were made by the Americans to counteract his intrigues, Cameron was successful in enlisting the sympathies and assistance of a majority of the head men and warriors of the tribe. A formidable invasion was planned by the Cherokees, which would doubtless have been harassing and destructive in the extreme but for the opportune assistance of Nancy Ward,

who has been named the "Pocahontas of the West," and who, allied to some of the leading chiefs, obtained information of their plan of attack and immediately thereupon communicated this information to Isaac Thomas, a trader, her friend and a true American. Mr. Thomas without delay proceeded to the committee of safety in Virginia, which adopted such measures as were practicable for the defense of the frontier.

The plan of attack by the Cherokees upon the settlements was for one division of the Indians under "Dragging Canoe" to fall upon the Holston settlement, and another division under "Old Abraham" to fall upon Watauga. These divisions were to consist of 350 men each. "Dragging Canoe's" division was defeated in a "miracle of a battle" at Heaton's Station near Long Island, in which the Indians lost upward of forty in killed and the settlers, only five wounded, all of whom recovered. Among the wounded was John Findley, who was supposed by Collins and by Ramsey not to have been heard of after the attack on Boone's camp in 1769. "Old Abraham" with his forces made the attack on the fort at Watauga, where Capt. James Robertson was in command. Capt. John Sevier was also present, and although the attack was made with great vigor the defense was successful and the Indians were driven off with considerable loss. It was during this siege that occurred the following romantic incident: As the Indians approached the fort they appear to have taken by surprise, and almost surrounded, Miss Catharine Sherrill, who, discovering her danger just in time, started for the fort. She was a young woman, tall and erect of stature and fleet of foot as the roe. In her flight she was closely pursued, and as she approached the gate she found other Indians in her way, doubtless confident of a captive or of a victim to their guns and arrows. But turning suddenly she eluded her pursuers and leaped the palisades at another point, falling into the arms of Capt. John Sevier. In a few years after this sudden leap into the arms of the captain she became the devoted wife of the colonel, and the bosom companion of the general, the governor, the people's man and the patriot, John Sevier, and finally the mother of ten children, who could rise up and call her blessed.

Another incident not less romantic but of quite a different character connected with this attack upon Fort Watauga, is worthy of commemoration. No one in the fort was wounded, but Mrs. Bean was captured near Watauga, and taken a prisoner to the station camp of the Indians over the Nollichucky. After being questioned by the Indians as to the number and strength of the forts occupied by the white people, she was condemned to death, bound and taken to the top of one of the mounds to be burned. It was a custom with the Cherokees to assign to a certain



woman the office of declaring what punishment should be inflicted upon great offenders, whether for instance, burning or other death, or whether they should be pardoned. The woman so distinguished was called the "beloved" or "pretty woman." At the time Mrs. Bean was condemned to death Mrs. Nancy Ward was exercising the functions of the "pretty woman," and the question of carrying into execution the sentence against Mrs. Bean being referred to Mrs. Ward, she pronounced her pardon.

A division of the Cherokees (other than those commanded by Old Abraham and Dragging Canoe), commanded by Raven, made a detour across the country with the intention of falling upon the frontier in Carter's Valley. Coming up the Holston to the lowest station, the Raven heard of the repulse at Watauga and of the bloody defeat at Long Island Flats, and hence retreated to his own towns. A fourth party of Indians fell upon the inhabitants scattered along the valley of Clinch River, and carried fire, devastation and massacre to the remotest cabin on Clinch, and to the Seven Mile Ford in Virginia. William Creswell, whose numerous descendants now live in Blount and Sevier Counties, was among the killed.

This, as has been previously said, was about the time of the commencement of the Revolutionary war, and the hostilities of and invasion by the Cherokees were imputed to the instigation of British officers. The details of the conspiracy were traced to a concerted plan of Gen. Gage and John Stuart, the superintendent of Indian affairs for the southern district. The evidence appears conclusive that Mr. Stuart was engaged in arousing the resentment and in stimulating the bad passions of the savages against the Americans who were struggling against aggression, and attempting to vindicate the rights of freemen. The plan of Gen. Gage and Mr. Stuart was to send a large body of men to west Florida, to penetrate through the country of the Creeks, Cherokees and Chickasaws, and induce the warriors of those nations to join the body, and with this large force of British and Indian soldiers, invade the Carolinas and Virginia. But after the repulse of Peter Parker in the harbor of Charleston, preparations were immediately made by the colonists to march with an imposing force upon the Cherokees, who at that time occupied, as places of residence or hunting grounds, the country west and north of the upper settlements in Georgia, west of the Carolinas and southwest of Virginia. Their country was known by three great geographical divisions, as the Lower Towns, having 356 warriors; the Middle Settlements, having 878 warriors; and the Overhill Towns, having 757 warriors—a total of 1,991 warriors.

Col. McBurny and Maj. Jack, from Georgia, entered the Indian settlements on Tugalo, defeated the Indians, and destroyed their towns on



that river. Gen. Williamson, of South Carolina, early in July was at the head of 1,150 men, in command of whom he encountered and defeated a large body of Esseneca Indians at Oconowee, destroyed their towns and a large amount of provisions. Burning Sugaw Town, Soconee, Keowee, Octatoy, Tugalo and Braso Town, he proceeded against Toimassee, Chehokee and Eusturtee, at which latter place, observing a trail of the enemy, he made pursuit, overtook and vanquished 300 of their warriors, and destroyed the three last named towns. In the meantime North Carolina had raised an army under Gen. Rutherford, who, in concert with Col. Williamson and Col. Martin Armstrong, marched upon the Indians and fought an engagement with them at Cowhee Mountain, in which but one white man was killed. How many of the Indians were killed is not known, as the survivors carried off their dead. From Cowhee Mountain the army under Gen. Rutherford marched to the Middle Towns on the Tennessee River, expecting there to form a junction with Gen. Williamson. After waiting a few days they left here a strong guard and marched on to the Hiwassee towns, but all the towns were found evacuated, the warriors evidently not desiring to meet the troops under Gen. Rutherford. Few Indians were killed and few taken prisoners, but the towns were burned and the buildings, crops and stock of the enemy very generally destroyed, leaving them in a starving condition. In this expedition of Gen. Rutherford from thirty to forty Cherokee towns were destroyed. The route pursued by this army has since been known as "Rutherford's Trace." While these movements were in progress an army under Col. William Christian, of Virginia, was marching into the heart of the Cherokee country to avenge the ravages of that nation on the settlements on the Watauga, Holston and Clinch. By the 1st of August several companies had assembled at the place of rendezvous, the Great Island of Holston. Soon afterward Col. Christian was re-enforced by about 400 North Carolina militia under Col. Joseph Williams, Col. Love and Maj. Winston. This entire army took up its march for the Cherokee towns, about 200 miles distant. Crossing the Holston at Great Island they marched eight miles and encamped at Double Springs, on the head waters of Lick Creek. Here the army was joined by a force from Watauga, by which its strength was augmented to 1,800 men, armed with rifles, tomahawks, and butcher knives, all infantry except one company of light horse. Sixteen spies were sent forward to the French Broad, across which the Indians had boasted no white man should go. At the encampment that night, near the mouth of Lick Creek, Alexander Hardin informed Col. Christian that at the French Broad were assembled 3,000 Indians prepared to dispute his passage. Hardin was ordered into camp

with the spies, who, at the head of the Nollichucky, found the camps of the enemy deserted, but affording evidence that the Indians were in the neighborhood in large numbers. Col. Christian sent Hardin forward to inform the Indians that he would cross not only the French Broad, but also the Tennessee before he returned. As they came down Dumlplin Creek they were met by a trader named Fallen with a flag of truce, of whom no notice was taken, in consequence of which he returned immediately and informed the Indians that the whites, as numerous as the trees of the forest, were marching into their country.

Having arrived at the river Col. Christian ordered every mess to build a good fire and make such preparations as would lead the Indians to think that he intended to remain there several days. During the night a large detachment, under great difficulties, crossed the river near where Brabson's mill afterward stood and passed up the river on its southern bank. Next morning, when the main army crossed the river near the Big Island, marching forward in order of battle, they momentarily expected an attack from the Indians, but, to their surprise, found no trace of even a recent camp. It was afterward learned that after the departure of Fallen to meet Col. Christian with his flag of truce, another trader, by the name of Starr, who was in the Indian encampment, made a very earnest speech to the Indians, saying to them in effect that the Great Spirit had made the one race of white clay and the other of red; that he intended the former to conquer the latter; that the pale face would certainly overcome the red man and occupy his country; that it was useless, therefore, to resist the onward movements of the white man, and advised an immediate abandonment of their purpose of defense, as that could only result in defeat. A retreat was made at once to their villages and to the fastnesses of the mountains. The next morning the army under Col. Christian resumed its march along the valley of Boyd's Creek, and down Ellejoy to Little River, thence to the Tennessee, and on the march not an Indian was to be seen, but it was expected that on the opposite side of the Tennessee a formidable resistance would be made. Here also they were disappointed, for crossing the Little Tennessee they took possession of a town called Tamotlee, above the mouth of Tellico River, and encamped in the deserted village. Next morning Great Island was taken without resistance, a panic having seized the Cherokee warriors, not one of whom could be found. But they were not for this reason to go unpunished. Their deserted towns and villages were burned and laid waste, as Neowee, Tellico and Chilhowee and others. Occasionally a solitary warrior was seen making his way from one town to another, but no one was taken prisoner. Such towns, however, as were known not to



FROM PHOTO BY THUSS, KOELLEIN & GIER, NASHVILLE

JAMES ROBERTSON





have consented to hostilities, as Chota, were not destroyed. This course was pursued by Col. Christian to convince the Indians, the Cherokees, that he was at war only with enemies. Sending out a few men with flags of truce requesting a talk with the chiefs, six or seven of them immediately came in, and in a few days several others came forward and proposed a cessation of hostilities. This was granted to take effect when a treaty should be made with the whole tribe, which was to assemble the succeeding May on Long Island. A suspension of hostilities followed, applicable to all the Cherokee towns but two, which were high up in the mountains on Tennessee River. These were reduced to ashes because they had burned a prisoner named Moore, taken some time previously near Watauga. Col. Christian's troops, having conquered a peace, returned to the settlement.

But a part of the Cherokee nation was still hostile, panted for revenge and resolved not to participate in the contemplated treaty. However two separate treaties were made, one at Dewitt's Corner, between the Indians and commissioners from South Carolina; the other at Long Island, between several chiefs of the Overhill Towns, and Col. Christian and Col. Evan Shelby, commissioners from Virginia, and Waightstill Avery, Joseph Winston and Robert Lanier from North Carolina. By the former large cessions of territory were made on the Saluda and Savannah Rivers, and by the latter Brown's line was agreed upon as the boundary between the Indians and the settlements, and the Cherokees released lands as low down the Holston River as the mouth of Cloud's Creek, but the Chickamaugas refused to join in the treaty. At this treaty, made at Fort Henry, on the Holston River, near Long Island, July 20, 1777, between North Carolina and the Overhill Indians, the following among other articles were agreed upon:

ARTICLE I. That hostilities shall forever cease between the said Cherokees and the people of North Carolina from this time forward, and that peace, friendship and mutual confidence shall ensue.

By the second article all prisoners and property were to be delivered up to the agent to be appointed to reside among the Cherokees, and by the third article no white man was permitted to reside in or pass through the Overhill towns without a certificate signed by three justices of the peace of North Carolina, or Washington County, Va., the certificate to be approved by the agent. Any person violating this article was to be apprehended by the Cherokees and delivered to the said agent, whom they were to assist in conducting such person to the nearest justice of the peace for adequate punishment, and the Cherokees were authorized to apply to their own use the effects of such person so trespassing. Ar-

ticle fourth provided for the punishment of murderers, both Indians and white men, and article fifth defined the boundary line as follows:

“That the boundary line between the State of North Carolina and the said Overhill Cherokees shall forever hereafter be and remain as follows: Beginning at a point in the dividing line which during this treaty hath been agreed upon between the said Overhill Cherokees and the State of Virginia, where the line between that State and North Carolina, hereafter to be extended, shall cross or intersect the same; running thence a right line to the north bank of Holston River at the mouth of Cloud’s Creek, being the second creek below the Warrior’s Ford at the mouth of Carter’s Valley; thence a right line to the highest point of a mountain called the High Rock or Chimney Top; thence a right line to the mouth of Camp Creek, otherwise called McNamee’s Creek on the south bank of Nollichucky River, about ten miles or thereabouts, below the mouth of Great Limestone, be the same more or less, and from the mouth of Camp Creek aforesaid, a southeast course into the mountains which divide the hunting grounds of the Middle Settlements from those of the Overhill Cherokees. And the said Overhill Cherokees, in behalf of themselves, their heirs and successors, do hereby freely in open treaty; acknowledge and confess that all the lands to the east, northeast and southeast of the said line, and lying south of the said line of Virginia, at any time heretofore claimed by the said Overhill Cherokees, do of right now belong to the State of North Carolina, and the said subscribing chiefs, in behalf of the said Overhill Cherokees, their heirs and successors, do hereby in open treaty, now and forever, relinquish and give up to the said State, and forever quit claim all right, title, claim and demand of, in and to the land comprehended in the State of North Carolina, by the line aforesaid.”

This treaty was signed by Waightstill Avery, William Sharpe, Robert Lanier and Joseph Winston, on the part of North Carolina, and by the following chiefs and warriors, each one making his mark: Oconostota, The Old Tassel, The Raven, Willanawaw, Ootosseteh, Attusah, Abram of Chillowee, Rollowch, Toostooch, Amoyah, Oostossetih, Tillehaweh, Queeleekeh, Amakelinjah, Annacekah, Skeahrtukah, Attakullakulla, Ookoonakah, Kataquilla, Tuskasah and Sunnewauh. Witnesses, Jacob Womack, James Robins, John Reed, Isaac Bledsoe, Brice Martin and John Kearns. Interpreter, Joseph Vann.

The negotiations and details of this treaty of Holston, which commenced on the 30th of June and was concluded on the 20th of July, are of unusual interest, but too numerous and requiring too much space to be introduced into this work. And while much was hoped from the friendly and yielding disposition of the large number of chiefs and warriors in

attendance, yet as some distinguished chiefs were absent, peace and tranquility could not be considered as absolutely assured before the views and intentions of these absent chiefs were known. Judge Friend, the Dragging Canoe, the Lying Fish and Young Tassel were among the absent ones. Dragging Canoe was chief of the Chickamaugas, who remained dissatisfied in part, at least, as the result of British intrigue. In order to counteract so far as practicable the influence of the British agents, Gov. Caswell directed that a superintendent of Indian affairs reside among them, and the North Carolina commissioners appointed Capt. James Robertson to that important position. Capt. Robertson carried, as a present from Gov. Caswell, a dog to the Raven of Chota, proposing and hoping for peace. Swanucah and some of the more aged chiefs were disposed to peace, but they were unable to suppress the warlike spirit of the Dragging Canoe and his hostile tribe.

Some years previous to the time at which we have now arrived certain families from West Virginia, desiring to reach west Florida, built boats on the Holston, and following that stream and the Tennessee reached the lower Mississippi by water. They were obliged to employ Indians and Indian traders as guides. Occasionally a boat was wrecked between the Chickamauga towns and the lower end of the Muscle Shoals, and then its crew became an easy prey to the Indians whose settlements were extending along the rapids from year to year. The Chickamaugas were the first to settle in this locality, and usually failed to attend treaties of peace held by other portions of the Cherokee nations, and hence did not consider themselves bound by treaty stipulations entered into by the other portions of the nation. Leaving their towns near Chickamauga they moved lower down and laid the foundations of the five lower towns—Running Water, Nickajack, Long Island Village, Crow Town and Look Out. These towns soon became populous and the most formidable part of the Cherokee nation. Here congregated the worst men from all the Indian tribes, and also numerous depraved white men, all of whom for a number of years constituted the “Barbary Powers of the West.” They were a band of reckless, lawless banditti of more than 1,000 warriors. Having refused the terms of peace proffered by Col. Christian, having committed numerous atrocities upon the frontier, and being the central point from which marauding expeditions radiated for murderous and all criminal purposes, it was determined to invade their country and destroy their towns. A strong force was therefore ordered into the field by Virginia and North Carolina under the command of Col. Evan Shelby, whose name is familiar to all Tennesseans in connection with the defense of the pioneers against the savages. Col. Shelby’s force consisted of



1,000 volunteers from these two States, and a regiment of twelve months' men under Col. John Montgomery, this regiment having been raised as a re-enforcement to Gen. George Rogers Clarke in his expedition to Kaskaskia, Vincennes, etc., but was temporarily diverted from that purpose to assist in the reduction of the Chickamaugas. This expedition was fitted out on the individual responsibility of Isaac Shelby. The army rendezvoused at the mouth of Big Creek, a few miles above the present location of Rogersville. From this rendezvous, having made canoes and pirogues, the troops descended the Holston as rapidly as possible, and reaching the Chickamauga towns took them completely by surprise. Upon discovering the approach of Col. Shelby's command the Indians fled in all directions to the woods and mountains without giving battle, pursued by Shelby, and losing in killed at the hands of his command upward of forty of their warriors, most of their towns being destroyed, and about 20,000 bushels of corn being captured. They also lost about \$20,000 worth of stores and goods. This success of Col. Shelby was very fortunate, as it prevented Gov. Hamilton, of Canada, from forming a grand coalition of all the northern and southern Indians, to be aided by British regulars in a combined attack upon the settlers on the western waters.

After the battle of King's Mountain, in which Tennessee officers and soldiers bore such an honorable and conspicuous part, Col. John Sevier became apprehensive of an outbreak from the Cherokees, in the absence of so many men and arms, and sent home Capt. Russell to guard the frontier settlers. Information was brought in by two traders, Thomas and Harlin, that a large body of Indians was on the march to assail the frontier, but before the attack was made Col. Sevier himself, with his vigorous troops, arrived at home in time to assist in repelling the attacks of the Indians. Without losing any time Sevier set on foot an offensive expedition against the Cherokees, putting himself at the head of about 100 men and setting out in advance of the other troops. Coming upon a body of Indians he pursued them across French Broad to Boyd's Creek, near which he drew on an attack by the Indians. Sevier's command was divided into three divisions—the center under Col. Sevier, the right wing under Maj. Jesse Walton, and the left wing under Maj. Jonathan Tipton. The victory won here by Sevier was decisive. The Indians lost twenty-eight in killed and many wounded, who escaped being taken prisoners. Of the white troops none were killed and only three seriously wounded. This rapid expedition saved the frontier from a bloody invasion, as the Indian force which he thus broke up was large and well armed.

A few days after this repulse of the enemy Col. Sevier's little



army was re-enforced by the arrival of Col. Arthur Campbell with his regiment from Virginia and by Maj. Martin with his troops from Sullivan County. He then had at his command a body of about 700 mounted men. With this force he crossed Little Tennessee three miles below Chota, while the main body of the Indians were lying in wait for him at the ford one mile below Chota. The Indians were so disconcerted by his crossing at the lower ford instead of at the upper, and so overawed by the imposing array of so large a body of cavalry, that they made no attack, but instead, upon his approach, hastily retreated and escaped. The troops pushed on to Chota and proceeded to reduce Chilhowee, eight miles above. Every town between the Little Tennessee and the Hiwassee was reduced to ashes. The only white man killed in this expedition was Capt. Elliott, of Sullivan County. Near to Hiwassee, after it was burned, an Indian warrior was captured, and by him a message was sent to the Cherokees proposing terms of peace. At Tellico the army was met by Watts and Noonday who were ready to make terms. After passing Hiwassee Town the army continued its march southwardly until it came near the Chickamauga, or Look Out Towns, where they encamped, and next day marching into them found them deserted. They proceeded down the Coosa to the long leafed or yellow pine and cypress swamp, where they began an indiscriminate destruction of towns, houses, grain and stock, the Indians fleeing precipitately before them. Returning to Chota they held a council with the Cherokees which lasted two days. A peace was here agreed upon, after which the army, crossing near the mouth of Nine Mile Creek, returned home.

The Cherokees, notwithstanding their repeated failures and chastisements, were still unable to repress their deep passion for war and glory and strong love of country, which continued to further aggression and hostility. They still prowled around the remote settlements committing theft and murder. Col. Sevier, therefore, in March, 1781, collected together 130 men and marched with them against the Middle Settlements of the Cherokees, taking by surprise the town of Tuckasejah, on the head waters of Little Tennessee. Fifty warriors were slain, and fifty women and children taken prisoners. About twenty towns and all the grain and corn that could be found were burned. The Indians of the Middle Towns were surprised and panic stricken, and consequently made but a feeble resistance. During the summer a party of Cherokees invaded the settlements then forming on Indian Creek; and Gen. Sevier, with a force of 100 men, marched from Washington County, crossed Nollichucky, proceeded to near the site of the present town of Newport, on French Broad, crossed that river, and also the Big Pigeon, and unexpectedly fell upon the trail

of the Indians, surrounded their camp, and by a sudden fire killed seventeen of them, the rest escaping. This was on Indian Creek, now in Jefferson County.

In the spring of 1782 settlements were formed south of the French Broad. Of this intrusion the Cherokees complained, and Gov. Martin wrote to Col. Sevier in reference thereto, asking him to prevent the encroachments complained of, and to warn the intruders off the lands reserved to the Indians, and if they did not move off according to warning he was to go forth with a body of militia and pull down every cabin and drive them off, "laying aside every consideration of their entreaties to the contrary."

Notwithstanding the efforts of a part of the Cherokee nation in the interest of peace, it continued impossible to restrain the majority of the warriors. They could plainly see that the white man was steadily encroaching upon their hunting grounds and reservations, and that there was no remedy, at least there was no remedy but war. Treaty lines were but a feeble barrier against the expansive force of the settlements. Unless this feeble barrier could be made as strong as the famous Chinese wall, and as the Raven expressed it at the treaty of Holston, be as "a wall to the skies," it would not be out of the power of the people to pass it; and so long as it was not out of their power to pass it it served only as a temporary check upon their advance, and as a means of tantalizing the red proprietors of the soil into a false sense of security of possession, of raising his hopes of retaining the beautiful and beloved home of his ancestors, only to dash them cruelly to the ground in a few short weeks or months at most. Even the Indians most peacefully disposed complained that there was no line drawn according to promise in former treaties which should serve as a boundary between the two races. However, in May, 1783, the western boundary of North Carolina was fixed by the Legislature of that State as follows:

"Beginning on the line which divides this State from Virginia, at a point due north of the mouth of Cloud's Creek; running thence west to the Mississippi; thence down the Mississippi to the thirty-fifth degree of north latitude; thence due east until it strikes the Appalachian Mountains; thence with the Appalachian Mountains to the ridge that divides the waters of the French Broad River and the waters of the Nollichucky River; and with that ridge until it strikes the line described in the act of 1778, commonly called Brown's Line; and with that line and those several water-courses to the beginning."

There was reserved, however, a tract for the Cherokee hunting grounds as follows:

“Beginning at the Tennessee River where the southern boundary of North Carolina intersects the same, nearest the Chickamauga Towns; thence up the middle of the Tennessee and Holston Rivers to the middle of French Broad River, which lines are not to include any islands in said river, to the mouth of Big Pigeon River; thence up the same to the head thereof; thence along the dividing ridge between the waters of Pigeon River and Tuskejah River to the southern boundary of this State.”

About this time occurred the unfortunate killing of Untoola, or Gun Rod of Citico, a Cherokee chief, known to the whites as Butler. It was when attempts were being made to revive peaceful relations between the white and Indian populations. The aged and wise among the Cherokees could clearly see the futility of continuing hostilities with the whites, and their councils had at length prevailed over the inconsiderateness and rashness of the young men and warriors. But Butler was one of the chiefs who was opposed to peace, and when he heard of the presence of Col. James Hubbard and a fellow soldier, who were in the Cherokee country for the purpose of trafficking for corn and other necessities, he, in company with a brave who still adhered to his fortunes, went forth to meet Col. Hubbard, against whom, according to Indian ideas of honor, he had special reasons for enmity, and attempted to put him out of the way. After meeting Hubbard, and maneuvering for some time to gain the advantage of position, Butler suddenly, and as quick as lightning, raised his gun and fired upon Col. Hubbard, the ball passing between his head and ear, grazing the skin and slightly stunning him; Butler and his attendant brave suddenly turned their horses' heads and galloped rapidly away. Recovering himself Col. Hubbard seized his rifle, which he had leaned against a tree for the purpose of convincing Butler of his peaceful intentions, fired upon him when at a distance of about eighty yards, hitting him in the back and bringing him to the ground. Approaching the wounded Indian hard words passed between the two, and at length Col. Hubbard, unable to longer bear the taunts and insults of Butler, clubbed his gun and killed him at a single blow. The companion of Butler, inadvertently permitted to escape, carried the news of Butler's death and the manner of it to the Cherokee nation, and they in retaliation committed many acts of revenge and cruelty, notwithstanding Gov. Martin made every reasonable effort to preserve the peace. The Governor was informed that Col. Hubbard had killed Untoola, or Butler, without any provocation, and sent a conciliatory “talk” to the Cherokees. He also sent a letter to Gen. Sevier informing him that he had given directions for the apprehension of Hubbard and his retention in jail until such time as a trial should be obtainable.



Besides the killing of Butler the Cherokees had other causes for dissatisfaction. The limits set by the Franklin treaties had not been, because they could not be, observed by the settlers. The consequences of these continual encroachments was that it was thought necessary by Congress that a treaty should be held under the authority of the United States. In order to hold and establish such a treaty Benjamin Hawkins, Andrew Pickens, Joseph Martin and Lachlin McIntosh were appointed government commissioners. By these commissioners the chiefs of the respective towns were invited to a conference at Hopewell on the Keowee in South Carolina. This treaty of Hopewell was concluded November 28, 1785. By it the boundary which had been the chief cause of complaint by the Indians was made to conform very nearly to the lines of the deed to Henderson & Co. and the treaty of Holston in 1777. The fourth article of this treaty fixing the boundary was as follows:

ARTICLE 4. The boundary allotted to the Cherokees for their hunting grounds between the said Indians and the citizens of the United States within the limits of the United States of America is, and shall be the following, viz.: Beginning at the mouth of Duck River on the Tennessee; thence running northeast to the ridge dividing the waters running into Cumberland from those running into the Tennessee; thence eastwardly along the said ridge to a northeast line to be run which shall strike the river Cumberland forty miles above Nashville; thence along the said line to the river; thence up the said river to the ford where the Kentucky road crosses the river; thence to Campbell's line near the Cumberland Gap; thence to the mouth of Cloud's Creek on Holston (River); thence to the Chimney-top Mountain; thence to Camp Creek near the mouth of Big Limestone on Nolichucky; thence a southerly course six miles to a mountain; thence south to the North Carolina line; thence to the South Carolina Indian boundary and along the same southwest over the top of the Oconee Mountain till it shall strike Tugalo River; thence a direct line to the top of the Currahee Mountain; thence to the head of the south fork of Oconee River.

It was also provided in the articles of treaty that if any citizen of the United States should settle within the above described Indian domain, and would not remove within six months after the conclusion of the treaty, he should forfeit all rights of protection from the Government; and it was further provided that all Indians committing murders or other crimes should be surrendered to the authorities of the Government for trial, and all white persons committing crimes against the Indians should be punished as if such crimes had been committed against white citizens; that the United States had the sole right of regulating trade with the Indians; that the Indians should have the right to send a deputy to Congress; that the punishment of the innocent under the idea of retaliation was unjust and should not be practiced by either party, and that the hatchet should be forever buried and friendship be universal. The witnesses who signed the articles were William Blount, Maj. Samuel Taylor, John Owen, Jesse Walton, Capt. John Cowan, Thomas Gregg, W.



Hazzard, James Madison (intrepreter), and Arthur Coody (interpreter). The Indians were represented by the following chiefs, who made their marks to the articles: Koatohee, or Corn Tassel, of Toquo; Scholannetta, or Hanging Man of Chota; Tuskegatahue, or Long Fellow, of Chistohee; Ooskwha, or Abraham, of Chillhowee; Kolacusta, or Prince, of North; Newota, or the Gritz, of Chickamanga; Konatota, or the Rising Fawn, of Hiwassee; Tuckasee, or Young Terrapin, of Ellejoy; Toostaska, or the Waker, of Oostanawa; Untoola, or Gun Rod, of Citico; Unsuo-kanil, or Buffalo White Calf, "New Cussee;" Kostayeck, or Sharp Fellow, Watauga; Chonosta, or Cowe; Cheskoonhoo, or Bird in Close, of Tomotlee; Tuckassee, or Terrapin, of Hightower; Chesetoah, or the Rabbit, of Flacoa; Chesecotetona, or Yellow Bird, of the Pine Log; Sketaloska, or Second Man, of Tellico; Chokasatabe, or Chickasaw Killer, Tosonta; Onanoota, of Koosoati; Ookoseeta, or Sour Mush, of Kooloque; Umatooetha, of Lookout Mountain; Tulco, or Tom, of Chatauga; Will, of Akoha; Necatee, of Sawta; Amokontakona, or Kutcloa; Kowetatabee, of Frog Town; Keukuch, of Talkoa; Tulatiska, of Choway; Wooalooka, the Waylayer, of Chota; Tatlausta, or Porpoise, of Talassee; John, of Little Tellico; Skeleelack; Akonialneta, the Cabin; Cheanoka, of Kawetatakac, and Yellow Bird.

This treaty was signed with great unanimity by the chiefs of the Cherokees, as well it might be considering what they gained. A glance at the map of the State will show that the United States commissioners set aside the treaty made by North Carolina in that State (if that can be called a treaty in which the Indians had no voice) so far as to recede to the Cherokees nearly all of the territory in this State between the Cumberland and Tennessee Rivers except that north of the mouth of Duck River. The surrender of this territory was made to conciliate the Cherokees, but it failed of permanent influence for peace, and gave great dissatisfaction to the border settlers, whose boundaries were thereby very much contracted. William Blount, then in Congress from North Carolina, gave it all the opposition in his power, arguing that Congress had no authority to make a treaty which was repugnant to the laws of North Carolina concerning lands within her limits.

This view, however, seems not to have obtained in Congress, for within three months from the time of the conclusion of this treaty with the Cherokees, a treaty was concluded January 10, 1786, between the same commissioners, with the exception of Mr. McIntosh, and the Chickasaw nation, by which their boundaries were for the first time definitely fixed. The following were the boundaries established between the Chickasaws and the United States:

Beginning on the ridge that divides the waters running into the Cumberland from those running into the Tennessee, at a point on a line to be run northeast, which shall strike the Tennessee at the mouth of Duck River; thence running westerly along the said ridge till it shall strike the Ohio; thence down the southern banks thereof to the Mississippi; thence down the same to the Choctaw line of Natchez district; thence along the said line to the line of the district eastwardly as far as the Chickasaws claimed and lived and hunted on November 29, 1782; thence the said boundary eastwardly shall be the lands allotted to the Choctaws and Cherokees to live and hunt on and the lands at present in the possession of the Creeks, saving and reserving for the establishment of a trading post a tract or parcel of land to be laid out at the lower post of the Muscle Shoals at the mouth of Ocochappo, in a circle, the diameter of which shall be five miles on the said river, which post and the lands annexed thereto, shall be to the use and under the Government of the United States of America.

The usual provisions concerning prisoners, criminals, stolen horses, Indian trade, etc., were established. This treaty was signed by Benjamin Hawkins, Andrew Pickens and Joseph Martin, commissioners on the part of the United States, and by Piomingo, head warrior and first minister of the Chickasaw nation; Mingatushka, one of the leading chiefs, and Latopoya, first beloved man of the nation. Not long after the conclusion of the treaty of Hopewell with the Cherokees, an attack was made by some Indians belonging to this nation on some settlers on the Holston. Mr. Biram's house was attacked and two men killed. A few of the settlers hastily erected temporary defenses, while the others fell back upon the settlements above. To again check these atrocities, Gen. Sevier adopted the policy so frequently pursued by him with salutary effect, viz.: that of suddenly penetrating with a strong force into the heart of the Cherokee country. This invasion of Gen. Sevier resulted in the killing of fifteen warriors and of the burning of the valley towns, and although the pursuit from motives of military expediency was abandoned, yet it had the effect of preventing aggressions for some considerable time. Yet further measures of conciliation were not considered unwise by either North Carolina or the State of Franklin which had been in operation about two years. The former State sent Col. Joseph Martin into the Cherokee nation on a tour of observation. Col. Martin on his return wrote Gov. Caswell, May 11, 1786, to the effect that affairs were not yet by any means in a settled condition, that two or three parties of Cherokees had been out on an expedition to secure satisfaction for the murder, by a Mr. McClure and some others, of four of their young men; that these parties had returned with fifteen scalps and were satisfied to remain at peace if the whites were, but if they wanted war they could have all of that they might want; that there were great preparations making among the Creeks, instigated as he believed by the French and Spaniards for an expedition against the settlers on the Cumberland.

Gov. Sevier, in order if possible to maintain peace between his State and the Indians, appointed commissioners to negotiate another treaty with the Cherokees, the commissioners being William Cocke, Alexander Outtaw, Samuel Wear, Henry Conway and Thomas Ingle. Negotiations were begun at Chota Ford July 31, 1786, and concluded at Coyatee August 3. The chiefs who conducted the negotiations were Old Tassel and Hanging Maw. The proposition made to the Indians was that if the Cherokees would give up the murderers among them, return the stolen horses, and permit the whites to settle on the north side of the Tennessee and Holston, as they intended to do at any rate, the whites would live at peace with them and be friends and brothers. The land claimed in this treaty was the island in the Tennessee at the mouth of the Holston, and from the head of the island to the dividing ridge between Holston, Little River and Tennessee to the Blue Ridge and the lands sold to them by North Carolina on the north side of the Tennessee. These terms were agreed to and the treaty signed by the two chiefs named above.

During the existence of the State of Franklin the Cherokees were comparatively quiet, having a wholesome dread of the courage and ability of Gov. Sevier; but with the fall of the Franklin government they began again to manifest a desire to renew hostilities, and an Indian invasion was regarded as imminent. Messengers were therefore sent to Gen. Sevier, who was in the eastern part of the Territory, who, after his failure at the siege at Tipton's house, was immediately himself again, and at the head of a body of mounted men upon the frontier ready, as of old to guard and protect its most defenseless points. On July 8, 1788, Gen. Sevier and James Hubbert, one of his old Franklin officers, issued an address to the inhabitants in general recommending that every station be on its guard, and also that every good man that could be spared report to Maj. Houston's station to repel the enemy if possible.

Just before Gen. Sevier started out on this expedition a most atrocious massacre occurred of the family of a Mr. Kirk, who lived about twelve miles from Knoxville, on the southwest side of Little River. During the absence of Mr. Kirk from home, an Indian named Slim Tom, who was well known to the family, approached the house and asked for something to eat. After being supplied he withdrew, but soon returned with a party of Indians, who fell upon and massacred the entire family, leaving them dead in the yard. Not long afterward Mr. Kirk returned, and, seeing the horrible condition of his dead family, immediately gave the alarm to the neighborhood. The militia, under command of Sevier, assembled to the number of several hundred, and severely punished the Indians in several portions of the Territory, though they generally fled



before the troops to the mountains. A friendly Indian by the name of Abraham lived with his son on the south side of the Tennessee. When the troops came to the south side of the river opposite Abraham's house, they sent for him and his son to cross over to them, and afterward Abraham was sent to bring in the Tassel and another Indian, that a talk might be held with them, a flag of truce being also displayed to assure the Indians of their peaceful intentions. The Indians, when they had crossed the river under these conditions and assurances, were put into a house. Gen. Sevier being absent on business connected with his command, young Kirk, a son of the man whose family had just before been massacred, was permitted to enter the house with tomahawk in hand, accompanied by Hubbard. There Kirk struck his tomahawk into the head of one of the Indians, who fell dead at his feet, the troops looking in through the window upon the deed. The other Indians, five or six in number, immediately understood the fate in store for them, and bowing their heads and casting their eyes to the ground, each in turn received the tomahawk as had the first, and all fell dead at the feet of young Kirk, the avenger. Thus was committed an act as base and treacherous as any ever committed by the red man. Gen. Sevier returning, learned of the commission of this crime, saw at a glance what must be the inevitable effects of the rash act, and remonstrated with young Kirk for the cruel part he had played, but was answered by him that if he (Sevier) had suffered at the hands of the murderous Indians as he had done, he would have acted in the same way. Kirk was sustained by a number of the troops, and Sevier was obliged to overlook the flagitious deed.

The massacre of Kirk's family was followed by that of many others. A man named English was killed near Bean's Station, and also James Kirkpatrick. Some were killed near Bull Run, others north of Knoxville, and many others on the roads to Kentucky and West Tennessee. Capt. John Fayne, with some enlisted men, and Capt. Stewart, who had been sent to Houston's Station, were sent out to reconnoiter the adjacent country. They crossed the Tennessee and entered an apple orchard to gather some fruit. Some Indians lying in wait suffered them to march into the orchard without molestation, and then while they were gathering the fruit fell upon them and drove them into the river, killing sixteen, wounding four and taking one prisoner. This massacre occurred near a town named Citico. The killed were afterward found by Capt. Evans, horribly mutilated, and by him buried. The war was continued for several weeks with success to the south of the Tennessee, and finally the troops returned home.

The events above narrated mainly occurred in the eastern part of this



State. An attempt will now be made to relate as succinctly as may be, and yet with a sufficiency of detail, similar events that had been for some years simultaneously occurring upon the Cumberland. The proximity of the Chickasaws to the settlements on the Cumberland had been cause for serious apprehension; yet, notwithstanding this, the first attack upon them was made by the Creeks and Cherokees. This was in the year 1780, and was made, not by a large force of Indians in battle array, but by small parties upon individuals or small parties of white men. In April of that year the Indians killed an elder and younger Milliken, Joseph Bernard, Jonathan Jennings, Ned Carver and William Neely, all in the vicinity of Nashville; at Eaton's Station, James Mayfield; at Mansker's Lick, Jesse Ballentine, John Shockley, David Goin and Risby Kennedy; at Bledsoe's Lick, William Johnson; at Freeland's Station, D. Larimer, and near Nashville, Isaac Lefevre, Solomon Phillips, Samuel Murray and Bartlett Renfroe. About this time occurred the massacre at Battle Creek, in Robertson County, recited in detail in the history of that county. The Indians engaged in this massacre were Chickasaws, and the reason given by them for its commission was that Gen. George Rogers Clarke had that year built Fort Jefferson, eighteen miles below the mouth of the Ohio, on the east side of the Mississippi. All the territory west of the Tennessee River they claimed, and they were especially offended at Gen. Clarke's intrusion, upon which they became the allies of the English. Isolated cases of murder were numerous for years in these settlements, the names of the killed being generally reserved for insertion in the histories of the counties in which the murders occurred, in order to avoid unnecessary repetition. In April, 1781, a determined attack was made by a numerous body of Cherokees on the fort at the Bluff, and nineteen horsemen, who sallied forth to drive them off, were defeated with a loss of seven killed, four wounded and some of their horses stolen. At this battle occurred the famous onset of the dogs upon the Indians, an anomaly in warfare, and which enabled nearly all of those not killed to regain the fort in safety. Mrs. Robertson, who directed the guard to let slip the dogs, pertinently remarked that the Indians' fear of dogs and love of horses proved the salvation of the whites on this occasion. In 1782 John Tucker, Joseph Hendricks and David Hood were fired upon at the French Lick. The first two, though wounded, escaped through the assistance of their friends. David Hood was shot down, scalped, stamped upon and left by the Indians for dead, in their chase after Tucker and Hendricks. Hood, supposing the Indians had gone, slowly picked himself up and began to walk toward the fort, but to his disappointment and dismay he saw the same Indians just before him making

sport of his misfortunes and mistake. They then made a second attack upon him, inflicting other apparently mortal wounds, and again left him for dead. 'He fell in a brush heap in the snow, where he lay all night. The next morning being found by his blood he was taken home and placed in an outhouse for dead, but to the surprise of all he revived and lived for many years.

The continuance, frequency and savageness of these depredations led many of the people on the Cumberland to seriously consider the propriety of breaking up the settlements and going away to Kentucky, or to some place where it was hoped they might live in peace. Gen. Robertson earnestly opposed the plan, as it was impossible to get to Kentucky, and equally so to reach the settlements on the Holston. The only plan which contained an element of practicability was to go down the river to Illinois, and even to the execution of this plan there seemed insuperable obstacles, the principal one being to build the boats. This could not be done without timber; the timber was standing in the woods, and the woods were full of Indians.

In 1783, after further ravages by the Chickasaws, Gen. Robertson obtained a cession from them by which they relinquished to North Carolina a region of country extending nearly forty miles south of the Cumberland to the ridge dividing the tributaries of that stream from those of the Duck and Elk Rivers. This cession, however, did not cause invasions and murders to cease. Instigated by the Spaniards at a conference held at Walnut Hills, they returned to the settlements evidently with the renewed determination to kill as many of the settlers as possible. In order to neutralize the influence of the Spaniards Gen. Robertson opened a correspondence with one of the Spanish agents, a Mr. Portell, in which a mutual desire to live at peace was expressed; but the letters which passed between Gen. Robertson and Mr. Portell had apparently but little if any effect upon the minds of the Indians, whose depredations were continued through the year 1785. In 1786 was made the treaty of Hopewell with the Chickasaws, as mentioned and inserted above, by which immigration to the Cumberland was greatly encouraged and increased.

In 1787 Indian atrocities continued as numerous as before, and it became necessary for Gen. Robertson to imitate the tactics of Gen. Sevier, viz.: To carry offensive operations into the heart of the enemy's country. For this purpose a force of 130 men volunteered, of whom Gen. Robertson took command, assisted by Col. Robert Hays and Col. James Ford. At the head of this force he marched against the Indian village of Coldwater, with two Chickasaw Indians as guides. Arriving within ten miles of the Muscle Shoals he sent forward some of his most active

soldiers with one of the Chickasaw guides to reconnoiter. At 12 next day they struck the river at the lower end of the Muscle Shoals, and concealed themselves until night. After a futile attempt to capture some Indians it was determined to cross the Tennessee River that night. The soldiers who had been sent forward with the guide swam the river and went up on the opposite bank to the cabins of an Indian village, which they found empty, and securing a canoe returned to the main body on the north side of the river. On account of the leaky condition of the canoe it was impossible to get across the river before daylight next morning. A heavy rain coming on forced the men into the cabins until it was over, and when the clouds cleared away they followed a well beaten path leading toward the west. At the distance of about six miles they came to Coldwater Creek, upon the opposite side of which was a number of cabins built upon low ground. The people of this village were surprised by this sudden invasion and fled precipitately to their boats pursued by such of the men as had crossed the creek. This town was occupied by the Creeks, some French traders and a white woman. In the attack upon the Indians twenty-six of the Creek warriors were killed, as were also the three Frenchmen and the white woman. A large quantity of stores was secured in the town, and afterward the town itself was burned down and the domestic animals destroyed. Each of the Chickasaw Indian guides was presented with a horse, a gun and as many blankets and clothes as his horse could carry, and sent home. After disposing of the prisoners and goods, most of the latter being taken to Eaton's Station, sold, and the proceeds distributed among the soldiers, the soldiers were disbanded on the nineteenth day after setting out on the expedition. This invasion of the Creek country was of great benefit to the Cumberland settlement, as it gave them peace and quiet for a considerable time, and discovered to them the sources whence the Indians were obtaining their supplies. But it was not entirely without disastrous, or at least threateningly disastrous, consequences. David Hay, of Nashville, attempted to carry on simultaneously, a campaign by water against the same Indians, with the view of assisting Gen. Robertson's men, both in their warfare and in respect to supplying them with provisions in case they should be detained longer away from home than was anticipated, but unfortunately his company was led into an ambush, was attacked by the Indians and was obliged to return. Gen. Robertson's campaign came very near involving him in difficulties with the French, who were carrying on trade with the Indians from the Wabash up the Tennessee.

The cessation of hostilities procured by Gen. Robertson's Coldwater campaign was of but temporary duration. Capt. John Rains, a vigilant

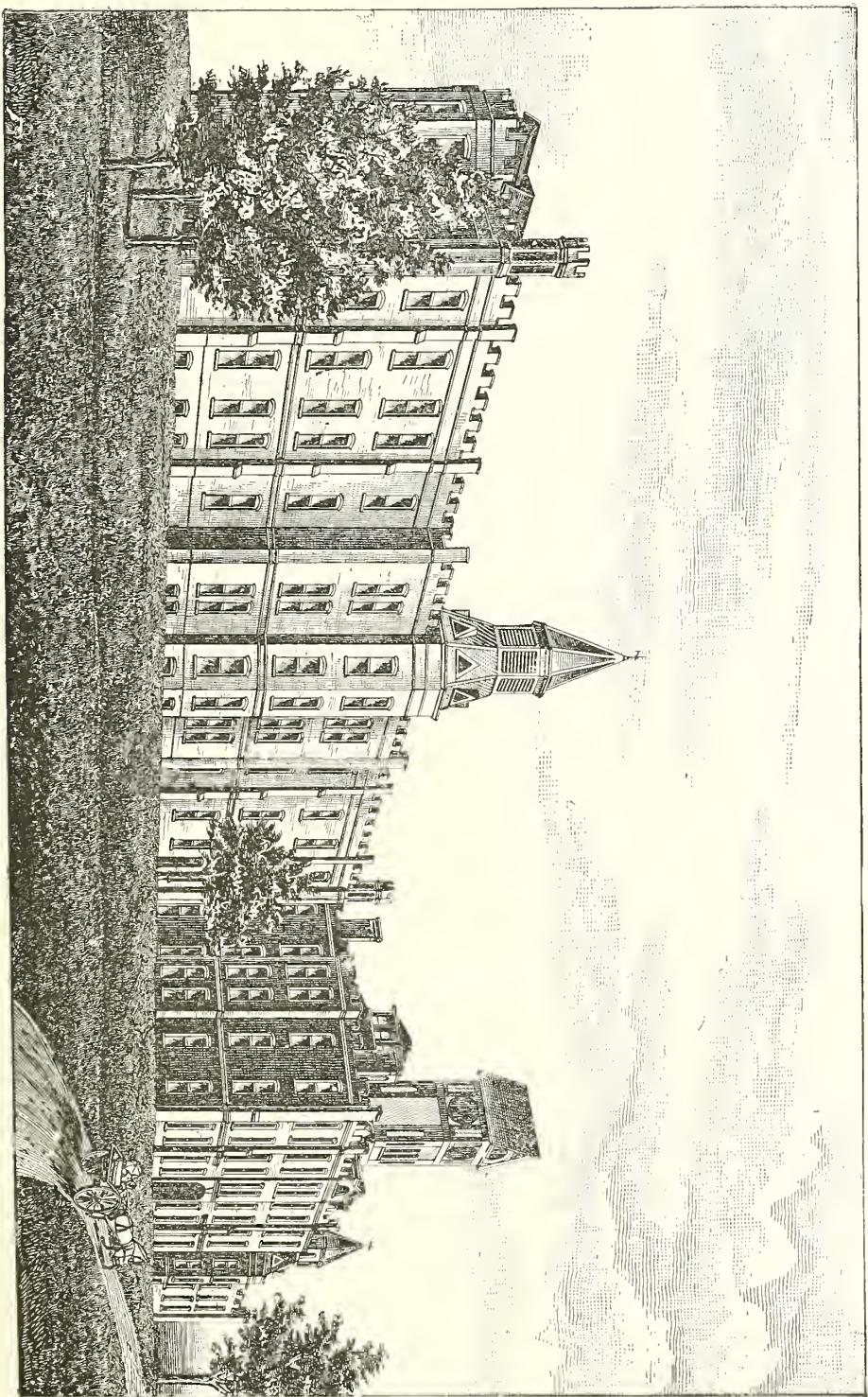


and intrepid Indian fighter, made three successful campaigns against the Indians, and similar expeditions were made by others in every direction throughout the country. In 1788 the hostilities which still continued were committed by the Creek warriors, still under the malign influence of the Spaniards. As no settlements had been made on territory claimed by that nation, and as no acts of offensive war had been committed against Spanish colonies, it was determined to inquire into the reason for their instigation of these incursions upon the settlers. Gen. Robertson and Col. Anthony Bledsoe, therefore, addressed a joint letter to the celebrated agent of the Creeks, McGilvery. To this communication the agent replied that the Creeks, in common with other southern Indians had adhered to the British interests during the late war, that after peace was declared he had accepted proposals for friendship by the settlers, and that while these negotiations were pending, six of his nation were killed at Coldwater and their death had given rise to a violent clamor for revenge, and that the late expeditions by the Creeks had been undertaken for that purpose. But now as the affair at Coldwater had been amply retaliated he would use his best endeavors for peace. Immediately afterward, however, hostilities were renewed and Col. Anthony Bledsoe killed at the fort of his brother Isaac at Bledsoe's Lick. At this time North Carolina was unable to assist her western settlements even had she been so disposed, and in their extremity it became absolutely necessary for Gen. Robertson to forget the murder of his friend Anthony Bledsoe, and to bring into play all the arts of diplomacy of which he was possessed in order to soothe the savage breast and to beget in him a peaceful, or at least a less warlike disposition. Dissembling the resentment which the cruel murder of his friend must have caused him to feel, he wrote to McGilvery acknowledging the satisfaction caused by the receipt of his letter, seemed to extenuate the recent aggressions of the Creeks upon the settlers, and stated that he had caused a deed for a lot in Nashville to be recorded in his name. To another letter from the Creek chief he replied that the Cumberland settlers were not the people who had made encroachments upon Creek territory, and stated that the people of the Cumberland only claimed the land which the Cherokees had sold to Col. Hudson in 1775, etc.

The right to the lands of the Lower Cumberland was claimed by the Chickasaws rather than by the Cherokees at the time of the Revolutionary war. Prior to that time the former tribe lived north of the Tennessee and about fifty miles lower down that stream than the Lower (Cherokee) Towns. They ceded the Cumberland lands in 1782 or 1783 at the treaty held by Donelson and Martin.

In 1786 commissioners were appointed by Congress to treat with the





EAST TENNESSEE ASYLUM FOR THE INSANE.



Cherokees and other southern tribes. These commissioners say in their report to Richard Henry Lee, president of Congress, "that there are some few people settled on the Indian lands whom we are to remove, and those in the fork of French Broad and Holston being numerous, the Indians agree to refer their particular situation to Congress and abide by their decision." Although these persons had settled contrary to treaty stipulations entered into by Virginia and North Carolina in 1777, yet they were too numerous to order off, hence the necessity of obtaining the consent of the Cherokees to refer the matter to Congress. The same report furnishes an estimate of the number of warriors of the nations of Indians living south of the Tennessee and in reach of the advanced settlements which was as follows: Cherokees, 2,000; Creeks, 5,400; Chickasaws, 800; Choctaws, 6,000—total number, 14,200, besides remnants of the Shawanees, Uchees and other tribes. That this number of warriors was not able with the assistance of northern tribes to crush out the settlements in what is now Tennessee in that early day is very remarkable, but is doubtless due in part to determination and courage of the whites.

The year 1788 was distinguished by the unfortunate attempt of Col. James Brown to reach Nashville by the Tennessee, Ohio and Cumberland Rivers, related at such length in the chapter on settlements as to only need brief mention here in chronological order. The same year was distinguished by the campaign against the Cherokees, by the attack on Sherrell's and Gillespie's Stations.

During the administration of Gov. Blount the policy of conciliation was persistently followed in obedience to instructions and proclamations from the President of the United States, Gen. Washington. An earnest attempt was made by both the authorities of the United States, and of the "Territory of the United States south of the river Ohio," to enforce treaty stipulations, but notwithstanding all that was or could be done by both Governments, both Indians and whites disregarded and violated all the treaties they should have observed. And while it was thus demonstrated and had been from the signing of the first treaty, that treaties were only a temporary make-shift, or subterfuge, yet both Nation and State kept on making treaty after treaty with the various tribes of Indians.

In obedience to this treaty-making spirit another treaty was concluded July 2, 1791, at the treaty ground on the bank of Holston River, near the mouth of the French Broad, between the Cherokees of the one part and William Blount, governor in and for the "Territory of the United States of America south of the river Ohio," and superintendent of Indian affairs for the southern district, of the other part, whereby the following boundary between the lands of the two parties was established:



ARTICLE 4. The boundary between the citizens of the United States and the Cherokee nation is and shall be as follows: Beginning at the top of the Currahee Mountain where the Creek line passes it; thence a direct line to Tugelo River; thence northwest to the Occunna Mountain, and over the same along the South Carolina Indian boundary to the North Carolina boundary; thence north to a point from which a line is to be extended to the river Clinch that shall pass the Holston at the ridge which divides the waters running into Little River from those running into the Tennessee; thence up the river Clinch to Campbell's line, and along the same to the top of the Cumberland Mountain; thence a direct line to the Cumberland River where the Kentucky road crosses it; thence down the Cumberland River to a point from which a southwest line will strike the ridge which divides the waters of Cumberland from those of Duck River, forty miles above Nashville; thence down the said ridge to a point from whence a southwest line will strike the mouth of Duck River.

It was agreed that all land lying to the right of this boundary, beginning at Currahee Mountain, should belong to the United States; and as a further consideration the Government stipulated to pay the Cherokees an annuity of \$1,000, which was increased later by an additional article to \$1,500. All prisoners were to be surrendered, criminals punished, whites settling on Indian lands to be denied the protection of the Government, whites to be granted the navigation of the Tennessee and to be permitted to use a road between Washington and Mero Districts, the Indians to be furnished with implements of husbandry, etc., etc. The witnesses signing this treaty were Daniel Smith, secretary of the Territory of the United States south of the river Ohio; Thomas Kennedy, of Kentucky; James Robertson, of Mero District; Claiborne Watkins, of Virginia; John McWhitney, of Georgia; Fauche, of Georgia; Titus Ogden, of North Carolina; John Chisholm, of Washington District; Robert King and Thomas Gregg. The official and sworn interpreters were John Thompson and James Ceery. Forty-one chiefs of the Cherokee nation were the contracting party for the Indians. The additional article of the treaty, which provided that \$1,500 instead of \$1,000 should be annually paid to the Cherokees, was agreed to between Henry Knox, Secretary of War, and seven chiefs, February 17, 1792.

In 1793 a force of 1,000 Indians, 700 of them Creeks, the rest Cherokees, under the lead of John Watts and Double Head, 100 of the Creeks being well mounted horsemen, invaded the settlements with the view of attacking Knoxville, but failing to surprise the citizens they abandoned their contemplated attack upon the town. Falling back they found it impossible to leave the country without carrying out in some degree their revengeful purposes, and so made an attack on Cavett's Station. Here after suffering a temporary repulse they proposed that if the station would surrender they would spare the lives of the inmates and exchange them for an equal number of Indian prisoners. Relying upon these promises the inmates of the station surrendered, but no sooner had they passed



the door than Double Head and his party fell upon them and put them to death, and most horribly, barbarously and indelicately mutilated their bodies, especially those of the women and children.

This daring invasion by the Creeks and Cherokees, under the celebrated chief John Watts, convinced the Federal and also the Territorial authorities that defensive warfare was of but little if any use in preventing Indian invasions. The people themselves had long been convinced of this fact, and earnestly desired a return to the tactics of Gen. Sevier. A sudden and decisive blow was loudly called for as the only means of punishment for the Indians and of defense for the settlements. Gen. Sevier was once more the man to lead in a campaign of this kind. His little army then at Ish's was re-enforced by troops under Col. John Blair for Washington District and Col. Christian for Hamilton District, and with these forces Gen. Sevier made his last campaign against the Indians. Crossing Little Tennessee, near Lowry's Ferry he came to an Indian town named Estinaula, and suffered a night attack from the Indians with the loss of one man wounded. Breaking camp in the night he went on toward Etowah, which place he succeeded in capturing after overcoming a determined resistance by the Indians under the command of King Fisher, who, however, fell in the engagement. After being defeated the Indians escaped into the secret recesses of the surrounding country, and Gen. Sevier having burned the town and becoming satisfied that further pursuit would not meet with results commensurate with the exertion demanded, countermarched and the troops returned safely to their homes. Thus terminated the last campaign of Sevier, and the first for which he received compensation from the Government. In this campaign he lost three brave men, Pruett and Weir killed in the battle, and Wallace mortally wounded.

A treaty was concluded at Philadelphia between Henry Knox, Secretary of War, and thirteen chiefs of the Cherokees, on the 26th of June, 1794, to set at rest certain misunderstandings concerning the provisions of the treaty of Holston of July 2, 1791. It was declared that the treaty of Holston should in all particulars be valid and binding, and that the boundary line then established should be accurately defined and marked. In lieu of the annuity of \$1,000 granted by the treaty of Holston in 1791, or the annuity of \$1,500 granted by the treaty of Philadelphia in 1792, the Government at this treaty of 1794 agreed to pay the annual sum of \$5,000 to the Cherokees. This treaty was attended by thirteen Cherokee chiefs. John Thompson and Arthur Coody were the official interpreters. The boundary provided in these treaties was not ascertained and marked until the latter part of 1797, by reason of which delay sev-

eral settlements of white people were established upon the Indian domain. These settlers were removed by authority of the Government, and two commissioners, George Walton, of Georgia, and Lieut.-Col. Thomas Butler, commander of the troops of the United States in the State of Tennessee, were appointed to adjust the mutual claims and rights of the white settlers and the Indians. These commissioners met thirty-nine authorized Cherokee chiefs, representing the "whole Cherokee nation," in the council house of the Indians near Tellico, October 2, 1798, and the following provisions, in substance, were mutually agreed to: The former boundaries were to remain the same with the following exception: The Cherokees ceded to the United States all the lands "from a point on the Tennessee River below Tellico Block-house, called the White Cat Rock, in a direct line to the Militia Spring near the Maryville road leading from Tellico; from the said spring to the Chilhowee Mountain by a line so to be run as will leave all the farms on Nine Mile Creek to the northward and eastward of it, and to be continued along Chilhowee Mountain until it strikes Hawkins' line; thence along the said line to the Great Iron Mountain, and from the top of which a line to be continued in a southeastwardly course to where the most southwardly branch of Little River crosses the divisional line to Tugalo River. From the place of beginning, the Wild Cat Rock, down the northeast margin of the Tennessee River (not including islands) to a point or place one mile above the junction of that river with the Clinch; and from thence by a line to be drawn in a right angle until it intersects Hawkins' line leading from Clinch; thence down the said line to the river Clinch; thence up the said river to its junction with Emery River; thence up Emery River to the foot of Cumberland Mountains; from thence a line to be drawn northeastwardly along the foot of the mountain until it intersects with Campbell's line." It was further understood that two commissioners, one to be appointed by each the Government and the Cherokee nation, were to run and mark the boundary line; that the annuity should be increased from \$5,000 to \$6,000 in goods; that the Kentucky road running between the Cumberland Mountains and the Cumberland River should be open and free to the white citizens as was the road from Southwest Point to Cumberland River; that Indians might hunt upon the lands thus ceded until settlements should make it improper; that stolen horses should be either returned or paid for, and that the agent of the Government living among the Indians should have a piece of land reserved for his use. Elisha I. Hall was secretary of the commission; Silas Dinsmore, agent to the Cherokees; Edward Butler, captain commanding at Tellico, and Charles Hicks and James Casey were interpreters.

The year 1794 was distinguished for the Nickajack expedition. The banditti Indians of the five Lower Towns on the Tennessee River continued to make attacks on the frontier settlements, and the frontiers determined to invade the towns as the only effectual means of self-defense, and of inflicting punishment upon the Indians for the injuries they had received. But as the Cumberland settlers were not of themselves strong enough to successfully undertake an expedition, they appealed to the martial spirit of Kentucky to aid them in punishing an enemy from whom they had also been frequent sufferers. Col. Whitley of Kentucky entered into the scheme. Col. James Ford, of Montgomery, raised a company from near Clarksville; Col. John Montgomery brought a company from Clarksville, and Gen. Robertson raised a company of volunteers from Nashville and vicinity.

Maj. Ore, who had been detached by Gov. Blount to protect the frontiers of Mero District, opportunely arrived at Nashville as the troops were concentrating for the Nickajack expedition, as it has ever since been known, and entered heartily into the project; Maj. Ore temporarily assumed command, and the expedition has sometimes been called "Ore's expedition." Upon the arrival of the Kentucky troops, Col. Whitley was given command of the entire force, and Col. Montgomery of the volunteers raised within the Territory.

Notwithstanding Col. Whitley having command of the little army, Gen. Robertson issued instructions to Maj. Ore, on the 6th of September, and on the next day, Sunday, the army set out upon its march. It crossed the Barren Fork of Duck River near the Stone Fort, and arrived at the Tennessee on the night of the 8th. Of the individuals present at this expedition were Joseph Brown, son of Col. James Brown, whose melancholy fate is elsewhere recorded in this work; William Trousdale, afterward governor of Tennessee, and Andrew Jackson. The troops having the next morning crossed the river, penetrated to the center of the town of Nickajack, a village inhabited by about 250 families. In this village the troops killed quite a number of warriors, and many others, while they were attempting to escape in canoes or swimming in the river. Eighteen were taken prisoners and about seventy in all were killed; but this number includes those killed in the town of Running Water as well as those killed in Nickajack. When an attack was made on two isolated houses, one of the squaws remained outside to listen. She attempted to escape by flight, but after a hard chase was taken prisoner, and carried up to the town and placed among the other prisoners, in canoes. As these were being taken down the river the squaw loosed her clothes, sprang head foremost into the river, artfully disengaged her-



self from her clothing, left them floating on the water and swam rapidly away. While thus making her escape, some of the soldiers cried out "Shoot her! shoot her!" but others admiring her activity and courage restrained those who were in favor of shooting her, by saying "No, let her escape, she is too smart to kill." With respect to the number killed, it was given to Joseph Brown some time afterward by a chief in conversation at Tellico Block-house as seventy-six.

By an act approved May 19, 1796, the following boundary between the United States and the Indian tribes for the States of Kentucky and Tennessee was ordered surveyed and definitely marked. "Beginning at a point on the highlands or ridge on the Ohio River between the mouth of the Cumberland and the mouth of the Tennessee River; thence easterly along said ridge to a point from whence a southwest line will strike the mouth of Duck River;\* thence still easterly on the said ridge to a point forty miles above Nashville; thence northeast to the Cumberland River; thence up the said river to where the Kentucky road crosses the same; thence to the top of Cumberland Mountain; thence along Campbell's line to the river Clinch; thence down the said river to a point from which a line shall pass the Holston at the ridge which divides the waters running into Little River from those running into the Tennessee; thence south to the North Carolina boundary."

At a treaty held at the Chickasaw Bluffs, October 24, 1801, between Brig.-Gen. James Wilkinson, Benjamin Hawkins, of North Carolina, and Andrew Pickens, of South Carolina, "and the Mingo, principal men and warriors of the Chickasaw nation," permission was given the United States to lay out and cut a wagon road between the settlements of the Mero District in Tennessee and those of Natchez on the Mississippi River. It was agreed that \$700 should be paid the Indians to compensate them for furnishing guides and assistance. Seventeen Chickasaw chiefs signed the articles of the treaty.

A treaty was held at Tellico, October 25, 1805, between Return Jonathan Meigs and Daniel Smith on the part of the United States, and thirty-three chiefs on the part of the Cherokees, by which the Indians ceded all their land north of the following boundary: "Beginning at the mouth of Duck River; running thence up the main stream of the same to the junction of the fork, at the head of which Fort Nash stood, with the main south fork; thence a direct course to a point on the Tennessee River bank opposite the mouth of Hiwassee River. If the line from Hiwassee should leave out Field's settlement, it is to be marked round this improvement and then continue the straight course; thence up the middle of

\* See treaty with the Chickasaws, January 10, 1786.



the Tennessee River (but leaving all the islands to the Cherokees) to the mouth of Clinch River; thence up the Clinch River to the former boundary line agreed upon with the said Cherokees, reserving, at the same time, to the use of the Cherokees, a small tract lying at and below the mouth of Clinch River; thence from the mouth extending down the Tennessee River (from the mouth of Clinch) to a notable rock on the north bank of the Tennessee, in view from Southwest Point; thence a course at right angles with the river to the Cumberland road; thence eastwardly along the same to the bank of Clinch River so as to secure the ferry landing to the Cherokees up to the first hill and down the same to the mouth thereof together with two other sections of one square mile each, one of which is at the foot of Cumberland Mountain, at and near where the turnpike gate now stands, the other on the north bank of the Tennessee River where the Cherokee Talootiske now lives. And whereas, from the present cessions made by the Cherokees, and other circumstances, the size of the garrisons at Southwest Point and Tellico are becoming not the most convenient and suitable places for the accommodation of the said Indians, it may become expedient to remove the said garrisons and factory to some more suitable place, three other square miles are reserved for the particular disposal of the United States on the north bank of the Tennessee opposite to and below the mouth of Hiwassee." In consideration of this cession the Government agree to pay the Indians \$3,000 immediately in valuable merchandise, and \$11,000 within ninety days after the ratification of the treaty and also an annuity of \$3,000 to begin immediately. The Indians, at their option, might take valuable machines for agriculture and useful domestic or hunting articles out of the \$11,000. The Government was also to have the "free and unmolested use" of two new roads "one to proceed from some convenient place near the head of Stone's River and fall into the Georgia road at a suitable place toward the southern frontier of the Cherokees; the other to proceed from the neighborhood of Franklin or Big Harpeth, and crossing the Tennessee at or near the Muscle Shoals, to pursue the nearest and best way to the settlements on the Tombigbee."

At Tellico, on the 27th of October, 1805, two days after the above treaty, the same commissioners (Meigs and Smith) concluded an additional treaty with fourteen Cherokee chiefs, the following being a portion of one of the articles of such treaty: "Whereas, it has been represented by the one party to the other, that the section of land on which the garrison of Southwest Point stands and which extends to Kingston, is likely to become a desirable place for the assembly of the State of Tennessee to convene at (a committee from that body now in session having viewed

the situation), now, the Cherokees being possessed of a spirit of conciliation, and seeing that this tract is desired for public purposes and not for individual advantages, reserving the ferries to themselves, quitclaim and cede to the United States the said section of land, understanding, at the same time, that the buildings erected by the public are to belong to the public, as well as the occupation of the same, during the pleasure of the Government. We also cede to the United States the first island in the Tennessee above the mouth of Clinch [River].”

It was also agreed that mail which had been ordered to be carried from Knoxville to New Orleans through the Cherokee, Creek and Choctaw countries, should not be molested by the former nation over the Tellico and Tombigbee road; and that the Government should pay for the land ceded as above described \$1,600 in money or merchandise, at the option of the Indians, within ninety days after the ratification of the treaty.

On the 23d of July, 1805, at a treaty concluded in the Chickasaw country between James Robertson and Silas Dinsmore and the chiefs of the Chickasaws, the latter ceded the following tract of land to the United States: “Beginning at the left bank of [the] Ohio at the point where the present Indian boundary adjoins the same; thence down the left bank of Ohio to the Tennessee River; thence up the main channel of the Tennessee River to the mouth of Duck River; thence up the left bank of Duck River to the Columbian highway or road leading from Nashville to Natchez; thence along the said road to the ridge dividing the waters running into Duck River from those running into Buffalo River; thence eastwardly along the said ridge to the great ridge dividing the waters running into the main Tennessee River from those running into Buffalo River near the main source of Buffalo River; thence in a direct line to the great Tennessee River near the Chickasaw Old Fields, or eastern point of the Chickasaw claim, on that river; thence northwardly to the great ridge dividing the waters running into the Tennessee from those running into the Cumberland River so as to include all the waters running into Elk River; thence along the top of said ridge to the place of beginning; reserving a tract of one mile square adjoining to and below the mouth of Duck River on the Tennessee, for the use of the chief, Okoy, or Lishmastubbee. The commissioners agreed to pay \$20,000 for the use of the nation and for the payments of its debts to traders, etc., and to pay George Colbert and Okoy \$1,000 each. These sums were granted these head men upon the request of the Chickasaw delegation, as a reward for distinguished services rendered the nation; also, the head chief of the nation, Chinnubbee, was granted an annuity of \$100 during

the remainder of "his natural life," "as a testimony of his personal worth and friendly disposition." Two dollars per day was ordered paid an agent of the Chickasaws appointed to assist in running and marking the boundary above described.

On the 7th of January, 1806, at the city of Washington, a treaty was held between Henry Dearborn, Secretary of War, and Double Head, James Vann, Tallotiska, Chuleoah, Sour Mush, Turtle at Home, Katihu, John McLemore, Broom, John Jolly, John Lowry, Red Bird, John Walker, Young Wolf, Skewha, Sequechu and William Showry, chiefs and head men of the Cherokees, Charles Hicks serving as interpreter, and Return J. Meigs, Benjamin Hawkins, Daniel Smith, John Smith, Andrew McClary and John McClary as witnesses, whereby the following was agreed upon: The Cherokee nation ceded to the United States "all that tract of country which lies to the northward of the river Tennessee, and westward of a line to be run from the upper part of the Chickasaw Old Fields at the upper part of an island called Chickasaw Island on said river, to the most easterly head waters of that branch of said Tennessee River called Duck River, excepting the two following tracts, viz.: one tract bounded southerly on the said Tennessee River at a place called the Muscle Shoals, westerly by a creek called Tekeetanoah or Cypress Creek, and easterly by Chuwalee or Elk River or creek, and northerly by a line to be drawn from a point on said Elk River, ten miles on a direct line from its mouth or junction with Tennessee River, to a point on the said Cypress Creek, ten miles on a direct line from its junction with the Tennessee River. The other tract is to be two miles in width on the north side of Tennessee River and to extend northerly from that river three miles and bounded as follows, viz.: Beginning at the mouth of Spring Creek and running up said creek three miles on a straight line; thence westerly two miles at right angles with the general course of said creek; thence southerly on a line parallel with the general course of said creek to the Tennessee River; thence up said river by its waters to the beginning—which first reserved tract is to be considered the common property of the Cherokees who now live on the same, including John D. Chisholm, Autowe and Chechout; and the other reserved tract, on which Moses Milton now lives, is to be considered the property of said Milton and Charles Hicks in equal shares. And the said chiefs and head men also agree to relinquish to the United States all right or claim which they or their nation have to what is called the Long Island in Holston River."

In consideration of the relinquishment of this land the United States agreed to pay \$2,000 to the Indians as soon as the treaty was ratified by



the President, and \$2,000 on each of the four succeeding years, or in all \$10,000; and agreed to build a grist-mill in the Cherokee country for the use of the nation; to furnish a machine for cleaning cotton; to pay annually to the old chief, Eunolee, or Black Fox, during the remainder of his life \$100, and to settle the claims of the Chickasaws on the two reservations described above. Apparently, the terms of this treaty required elucidation, as, September 11, 1807, another meeting between James Robertson and Return J. Meigs and a delegation of Cherokees, of whom Black Fox was one, was held "at the point of departure of the line at the upper end of the island opposite to the upper part of the said Chickasaw Old Fields," on which occasion the following was fixed as the eastern limits of the ceded tract: "A line so to be run from the upper end of the Chickasaw Old Fields a little above the upper part of an island called Chickasaw Island, as will most directly intersect the first waters of Elk River; thence carried to the great Cumberland Mountain, in which the waters of Elk River have their source; then along the margin of said mountain until it shall intersect lands heretofore ceded to the United States at the said Tennessee Ridge." It was also agreed that \$2,000 should be paid to the Cherokees to meet their expenses at this council or treaty, and that the Cherokee hunters might hunt over the ceded tract "until, by the fullness of settlers, it shall become improper." Eunolee, or Black Fox; Fauquitee, or Glass; Fulaquokoko, or Turtle at Home; Richard Brown and Sowolotaw, or King's Brother, signed this "declaration of intention." The following treaty or agreement with reference to the cultivation of a certain tract of ground by the proprietors of the Unicoi road was entered into July 8, 1817:

We, the undersigned chiefs of the Cherokee nation, do hereby grant unto Nicholas Byers, Arthur H. Henly and David Russell, proprietors of the Unicoi road to Georgia, the liberty of cultivating all the ground contained in the bend on the north side of Tennessee River, opposite and below Chota Old Town, together with the liberty to erect a grist-mill on Four Mile Creek, for the use and benefit of said road and the Cherokees in the neighborhood thereof; for them, the said Byers, Henly and Russell, to have and to hold the above privileges during the term of use of the Unicoi road, also obtained from the Cherokees and sanctioned by the President of the United States.

At a treaty between Isaac Shelby and Andrew Jackson and the "chiefs, head men and warriors" of the Chickasaw nation held on the 19th of October, 1818, "at the treaty ground east of Old Town, the Indians ceded lands as follows: The land lying north of the south boundary of the State of Tennessee, which is bounded south by the thirty-fifth degree of north latitude, and which lands hereby ceded lie within the following boundary, viz.: Beginning on the Tennessee River about thirty-five miles by water below Col. George Colbert's ferry, where the thirty-fifth degree of



north latitude strikes the same; thence due west with said degree of north latitude to where it cuts the Mississippi River at or near the Chickasaw Bluffs; thence up the said Mississippi River to the mouth of the Ohio; thence up the Ohio River to the mouth of the Tennessee River; thence up the Tennessee River to the place of beginning."

In consideration of this valuable cession "and to perpetuate the happiness of the Chickasaw nation" the Government agreed to allow the Indians an annuity of \$20,000 for fifteen successive years; also to allow Capt. John Gordon, of Tennessee, \$1,115 due him from the Chickasaws, and also to allow Capt. David Smith, of Kentucky, \$2,000 to reimburse him and forty-five soldiers of Tennessee in assisting in the defense of their towns (upon their request) against the attacks of the Creek Indians in 1795. A reservation in the above tract was retained by the Indians. It contained four miles square of land, including a salt spring or lick on or near Sandy River, a branch of the Tennessee. The Chickasaw chief, Levi Colbert and Maj. James Brown were constituted agents to lease the salt licks to a citizen or citizens of the United States for the benefit of the Indians, a certain quantity of salt to be paid therefor annually to the nation; and after two years from the date of the ratification of the treaty no salt was to be sold higher than \$1 per bushel of fifty pounds weight. The Government further agreed to pay to Oppassantubbee, a principal chief of the Chickasaws, \$500 for his two-mile reservation on the north side of the Tennessee River; retained September 20, 1816, to pay John Lewis, a half-breed, \$25 for a lost saddle while serving the United States; to pay Maj. James Colbert \$1,089, which had been taken from his pocket in June, 1816, at a theater in Baltimore.

Also to give upon the ratification of the treaty to the following named chiefs \$150 each: Chinnubbee, king of the Chickasaws; Teshuahmingo, William McGibvery, Oppassantubbee, Samuel Seely, James Brown, Levi Colbert, Iskarweuttaba, George Pettigrove, Immartoibarmicco, and Malcolm McGee, interpreter; and to Maj. William Glover, Col. George Colbert, Hopoyebaummer, Immauklusharhopoyea, Tushkaihopoye, Hopoyebaummer, Jr., James Colbert, Coweamarthlar and Illachouwarhopoyea, \$100 each. At a treaty with the Cherokees held at Washington City, February 27, 1819, the Indians ceded the following tract of country:

All of their lands lying north and east of the following line, viz.: Beginning on the Tennessee River at the point where the Cherokee boundary with Madison County in Alabama Territory joins the same; thence along the main channel of said river to the mouth of the Hiwassee; thence along its main channel to the first hill which closes in on said river about two miles above Hiwassee; thence along the ridge which divides the waters of the Hiwassee and Little Tellico, to the Tennessee River at Telassee; thence along the main channel to the junction of the Cowee and Nauteyalee; thence along the ridge in the fork of

said river to the top of the Blue Ridge; thence along the Blue Ridge to the Unicoy turn-pike road; thence by a straight line to the nearest main source of the Chestatee; thence along its main channel to the Chatahouchee, and thence to the Creek boundary; it being understood that all the islands in the Chestatee, and the parts of the Tennessee and Hiwassee (with the exception of Jolly Island in the Tennessee near the mouth of the Hiwassee) which constitutes a portion of the present boundary, belong to the Cherokee nation.

ART. 3. It is also understood and agreed by the contracting parties, that a reservation in fee simple, of six hundred and forty acres square, with the exception of Maj. Walker's which is to be located as is hereafter provided, to include their improvements, and which are to be as near the center thereof as possible, shall be made to each of the persons whose names are inscribed on the certified list annexed to this treaty,\* all of whom are believed to be persons of industry, and capable of managing their property with discretion and have, with few exceptions, made considerable improvements on the tracts reserved. The reservations are made on the condition that those for whom they are intended shall notify in writing to the agent for the Cherokee nation within six months after the ratification of this treaty that it is their intention to continue to reside permanently on the land reserved. The reservation for Lewis Ross so to be laid off as to include his house and out-buildings and ferry adjoining the Cherokee agency, reserving to the United States all the public property there and the continuance of the said agency where it now is during the pleasure of the Government; and Maj. Walker's so as to include his dwelling house and ferry, for Maj. Walker an additional reservation is made of 640 acres square, to include his grist and saw-mill; the land is poor and principally valuable for its timber. In addition to the above reservations the following are made in fee simple, the persons for whom they are intended not residing on the same: To Cobbin Smith 640 acres, to be laid off in equal parts on both sides of his ferry on Tellico, commonly called Blair's ferry; to John Ross 640 acres, to be laid off so as to include the Big Island in Tennessee River, being the first below Tellico, which tracts of land were given many years since by the Cherokee nation to them; to Mrs. Eliza Ross, step-daughter of Maj. Walker, 640 acres square, to be located on the river below and adjoining Maj. Walker's; to Margaret Morgan 640 acres square to be located on the west of and adjoining James Riley's reservation; to George Harlin 640 acres square, to be located west of and adjoining the reservation of Margaret Morgan; to James Lowry 640 acres square, to be located at Crow Mocker's old place, at the foot of Cumberland Mountain; to Susannah Lowry 640 acres, to be located at the Toll Bridge on Battle Creek; to Nicholas Byers 640 acres, including the Toqua Island, to be located on the north bank of the Tennessee opposite to said island.

Immediately after the ratification of this treaty North Carolina appointed commissioners and surveyors to survey and sell the lands acquired within her limits under the treaty. These commissioners and surveyors performed their duties without knowing what reservations would be taken by the Indians, or where they would be located. Subsequently to the sale by the State, commissioners were sent out by the United States Government to survey and lay off the reservations for those Indians who claimed under the treaty. The consequence was that nearly all the reservations conflicted with lands previously sold by the State Commissioners to citizens, a number of whom had sold their homesteads in older settled portions of the State, and had moved to the newly acquired

\*Robert McLemore, John Baldrige, Lewis Ross, Fox Taylor, Rd. Timberlake, David Fields (to include his mill), James Brown (to include his field by the long pond), William Brown, John Brown, Elizabeth Lowry, George Lowry, John Benze, Mrs. Elizabeth Peck, John Walker, Sr., John Walker, Jr., Richard Taylor, John McIntosh, James Starr, Samuel Parks, The Old Bark (of Chota)—total 20. (Only those are here given whose reserves were in Tennessee.)

territory. These conflicting claims caused much disturbance, the purchasers from the State commissioners looking to the State to make their title valid, and the Indians looking to the United States to make their title valid. A great many suits were brought by the Indians in the courts of North Carolina against citizens who had taken possession under titles obtained from the State of North Carolina, and one case was carried to the supreme court of the State and decided in favor of the Indian. Clearly perceiving the disagreeable results that must ensue from a continuance of this state of things, North Carolina felt compelled to take prompt measures for the relief of the citizens to whom she had sold these lands. Time would not permit application to the General Government to extinguish the Indian title, and she therefore took the only course left open for her to pursue, viz.: to appoint commissioners of her own to purchase of the Indians their claims to the lands. This purchase was effected at a cost to the State of \$19,969, besides incidental expenses, the entire sum expended by the State in this matter being \$22,000. North Carolina then made application to Congress for the reimbursement to her treasury of this sum, basing her claim for reimbursement on the two following reasons: *First*—That the General Government had no power to exercise any control over any part of the soil within the limits of any of the original States, and that the injury sustained by North Carolina resulted from the act of the General Government in the assumption and exercise of this power as set forth in this treaty, and which was a violation of the rights and sovereignty of the State. *Second*—That the general policy of the General Government has been to extinguish Indian titles to land within the States when she could do so. The first proposition was discussed at considerable length and the second was sustained by extracts from the treaties of Hopewell, 1785, and of Holston, 1791. The application of North Carolina for the repayment to her of \$22,000 was granted by Congress in an act approved May 9, 1828. Soon after the conclusion of the above treaty the following agreement with reference to the laying out and opening of a road from the Tennessee to the Tugalo River was made and entered into:

CHEROKEE AGENCY, HIWASSEE GARRISON.

We the undersigned chiefs and councilors of the Cherokees, in full council assembled, do hereby give, grant and make over unto Nicholas Byers and David Russell, who are agents in behalf of the States of Tennessee and Georgia, full power and authority to establish a turnpike company to be composed of them, the said Nicholas and David, Arthur Henly, John Lowry, Atto and one other person, by them to be hereafter named in behalf of the State of Georgia, and the above named person are authorized to nominate five proper and fit persons, natives of the Cherokees, who, together with the white men aforesaid, are to constitute the company; which said company when thus established, are hereby fully authorized by us to lay out and open a road from the most suitable point on the



Tennessee River, to be directed the nearest and best way to the highest point of navigation on the Tugalo River; which said road when opened and established shall continue and remain a free and public highway, unmolested by us, to the interest and benefit of the said company and their successors, for the full term of twenty years yet to come after the same may be opened and complete; after which time said road with all its advantages shall be surrendered up and reverted in the said Cherokee nation. And the said company shall have leave, and are hereby authorized, to erect their public stands, or houses of entertainment, on said road, that is to say: One at each end and one in the middle, or as nearly so as a good situation will permit, with leave also to cultivate one hundred acres of land on each end of the road and fifty acres at the middle stand, with a privilege of a sufficiency of timber for the use and consumption of said stands. And the said turnpike company do hereby agree to pay the sum of \$160 yearly to the Cherokee nation for the aforesaid privilege, to commence after said road is opened and in complete operation. The said company are to have the benefit of one ferry on Tennessee River, and such other ferry or ferries as are necessary on said road, and likewise said company shall have the exclusive privilege of trading on said road during the aforesaid term of time.

In testimony of our full consent to all and singular the above named privileges and advantages, we have hereunto set our hands and affixed our seals this eighth day of March, eighteen hundred and thirteen

OU-TA-HE-LEE	BIG CABBIN,	Oo-SEE-KEE,
THE-LA-GATH-A-HEE,	NETTLE CARRIER,	CHU-LA-OO,
TWO KILLERS,	JOHN WALKER,	WAU-SA-WAY,
JOHN BOGGS,	NA-AH-REE,	THE BARK,
CUR-A-HEE,	THE RAVEN,	SEE-KEE-KEE,
TOO-CHA-LEE,	TE-IS-TIS-KEE,	DICK BROWN,
DICK JUSTICE,	QUO-TI-QUAS-KEE,	CHARLES HICKS.

The foregoing agreement and grant was amicably negotiated and concluded in my presence.

RETURN J. MEIGS, *Agent to the Cherokees.*

I certify I believe the within to be a correct copy of the original.

WASHINGTON CITY, March 1, 1819

CHARLES HICKS, *Agent to the Cherokees.*

On the 15th of November, 1819, the Legislature of Tennessee passed an act to dispose of the lands in the former Cherokee hunting grounds between the rivers Hiwassee and Tennessee, and north of the Little Tennessee. The act provided that three commissioners should be appointed to superintend the sale of these lands, that no one person should be allowed to purchase for himself more than 640 acres, and 320 acres for each of his children, and that no land should be sold for less than \$2 per acre. By this act the Unicoi Turnpike Company was permitted to retain, possess and enjoy all the franchises yielded to them by the Cherokees in the treaty of February 27, 1819, together with the use and occupancy of 250 acres of land convenient to the public house then occupied by Maj. Henry Stephens during the continuance of the grant. A few days previous to the passage of the above act, the Legislature of Tennessee passed an act (October 23, 1819) for the adjudication of the North Carolina land claims and for satisfying the same by an appropriation of the vacant soil south and west of the congressional reservation line, and extending to the Mississippi River. This territory was divided into seven



districts, numbered from the seventh to the thirteenth inclusive, all of these districts being definitely bounded in the second section of this act.

The "congressional reservation line" was described in an act of Congress, approved April 18, 1806, entitled 'an act to authorize the State of Tennessee to issue grants and perfect titles to certain lands therein described, and to settle the claims to the vacant lands within the same.' Following is the description of the line: "Beginning at the place where the eastern or main branch of Elk River shall intersect the southern boundary line of the State of Tennessee; from thence running due north until said line shall intersect the northern or main branch of Duck River; thence down the waters of Duck River to the military boundary line as established by the seventh section of an act of the State of North Carolina entitled 'an act for the relief of the officers and soldiers of the continental line and for other purposes' passed in the year 1783; thence with the military boundary line west to the place where it intersects the Tennessee River; thence down the waters of the river Tennessee to the place where the same intersects the northern boundary line of the State of Tennessee."

With reference to the departure of the Cherokee Indians from the State of Tennessee, it is proper to observe that early in this century they were divided into the Lower and Upper Towns; the Lower Towns clinging to the hunter life, and the Upper Towns wishing to assimilate with the whites. In 1808 delegations from both parties called upon the President of the United States—the former to express a wish to remove to Government lands west of the Mississippi. On July 8, 1817, lands were ceded to the United States in exchange for lands on the Arkansas and White Rivers, and under this arrangement 3,000 moved in 1818. Then followed the treaty of 1819, after which the Cherokees had left east of the Mississippi River about 8,000 square miles of territory, chiefly in the State of Georgia.

The last treaty made with the Chickasaws was under date of October 19, 1818, at which they ceded all their lands north of Mississippi between the Tennessee and Mississippi Rivers, for certain specified annual payments, the Colberts, influential men of the tribe, aware of the value of the lands, securing unusually favorable terms for the Chickasaws. By treaties of 1832 and 1834 they ceded to the United States all their remaining lands east of the Mississippi River.

It is difficult to obtain accurate statistics with regard to the numbers of the various Indian tribes residing within the limits of Tennessee at any specified period previous to 1860. There was taken no valuable census of the Indian population previous to 1825, and then it was taken

with reference to the tribes themselves instead of with reference to States. In that year there were estimated to reside in the States of North Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi and Tennessee, 53,625 Indians—Cherokees, Creeks, Chickasaws and Choctaws. Of the Creeks there were about 20,000 residing principally in eastern Alabama. Of the Choctaws there were about 20,000, residing principally in Mississippi. Of the Chickasaws there were about 3,600, residing almost wholly in Mississippi, the rest being Cherokees residing in North Carolina, Georgia, Alabama and Tennessee. At this time the total number of Indians in Tennessee was about 1,000, which remained the Indian population of the State for several years, but the number was gradually reduced until 1860, when it was sixty; in 1870 it was seventy.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

SETTLEMENT OF TENNESSEE—EARLY EXPLORATIONS—FERDINAND DE SOTO—IDENTITY OF CHISCA AND MEMPHIS—WOOD'S TOUR OF DISCOVERY—SETTLEMENTS AND INTRIGUES OF THE FRENCH—SPOTTSWOOD'S EXPLORATION—CONFLICTING DESIGNS OF THE FRENCH AND THE ENGLISH—CONSTRUCTION OF FORTS LOUDON AND PATRICK HENRY—SCOTCH AND FRENCH TRADERS—WALKER'S DISCOVERIES—DANIEL BOONE—THE HUNTING EXPEDITIONS—THE GRADUAL APPEARANCE OF PERMANENT WHITE SETTLERS—RESULTS OF THE TREATY OF 1763—RAPID INCREASE OF PIONEERS—WATAUGA, CARTER'S AND BROWN'S SETTLEMENTS—LAND CESSIONS AND PRE-EMPTION GRANTS—ACTS OF THE WATAUGA ASSOCIATION—THE EXPLORATION OF CUMBERLAND VALLEY—DONELSON'S JOURNAL—DESCRIPTION OF A THRILLING VOYAGE—GENERAL OBSERVATIONS.

THE problem of who were the first inhabitants of the immense, diversified and fertile territory now organized into and named the State of Tennessee will doubtless always remain unsolved. The present limits of the State were certainly entered in the western part, and possibly in the eastern part by that daring explorer and intrepid warrior, Fernando De Soto, while on his ill-starred expedition of 1540 and 1541. The opinion as to his presence in East Tennessee rests mainly if not entirely upon inferences drawn from descriptions of localities, rivers and islands, and from the names of Indian tribes and villages contained in the narrative of the Portuguese historian who accompanied De Soto in his final and fatal wanderings. According to McCullough, the extreme northern point of the route followed by De Soto's army was at Chonalla, near the thirty-fifth parallel of latitude, and somewhere among the sources of the Coosa River. And Dr. Ramsey thinks it possible that Chonalla was identical

with the modern Cherokee, Chilhowee, as the description by the Portuguese gentlemen of the country around Chonalla applies to that around Chilhowee. "Canasaqua" is also mentioned in the Portuguese narration, and this name is thought to have been changed into Canasauga, which is the name of one of the tributaries of the Coosa, and it is also the name of a small town in the southeast corner of Polk County. Talise and Sequatchie are also mentioned, which seems to additionally confirm the theory of De Soto's presence in East Tennessee. In 1834 Col. Pettival visited two forts or camps on the west bank of the Tennessee River, one mile above Brown's Ferry, below the Muscle Shoals, and opposite the mouth of Cedar Creek, which he was certain "belonged to the expedition of Alphonso De Soto." This fact, if established, would be in confirmation of the theory that De Soto crossed the Tennessee River to the northward, and then again to the southward on his march into what are now Alabama and Mississippi.

But whatever may be the fact regarding the presence of De Soto's army in East Tennessee, there is no reasonable doubt of its having been in West Tennessee. After leaving Talise, De Soto, in response to an invitation from Tuscaluza, visited the residence of that cazique about fifteen leagues distant from Talise, and on the windings of the river. Continuing his march he arrived at Mauvilla, October 18, 1540, and here was compelled to fight one of his greatest battles, in which he lost eighty-two of his soldiers and inflicted a loss of 2,500 on the natives. Proving victorious he rested his army in the village of Mauvilla until November 18, when he started northward. After five days marching the Spaniards entered the province of Chicaza and approached the village, Cabusto, where another battle was fought with the Indians, and after winning this battle they arrived at Chicaza village December 18. Here, as at Mauvilla, they were surprised by a well concerted night attack from the Indians, but were again victorious and resumed their march to Chiacilla, where they remained the rest of the winter. April 1, 1541, they marched four leagues and encamped beyond the boundaries of Chicaza. At Alibamo they fought their next battle, and then marched northward seven days through an uninhabited wilderness, and at length came in sight of Chisca, seated near a wide river, the largest they had as yet discovered, and which they named the Rio Grande. Juan Coles, one of the followers of De Soto, says the Indians named the river Chucaqua. The Portuguese narrator says that in one place it was named Tomaliseu, in another Tupata, in another Mico, and where it enters the sea Ri, probably different names among the different tribes. The Portuguese gentlemen called Chisca by the name of Quizquiz.\*

---

\*Ramsay.



Chisca is believed to have occupied the site of the present thriving city of Memphis. On the morning of its discovery by the Spaniards they rushed into it in a disorderly manner, pillaging the houses and taking numerous persons of both sexes prisoners. Chisca, the chief of the province, though ill, was exceedingly enraged, and was determined to rush forth and exterminate all who had thus dared to enter his province without permission. But he was restrained by his women and attendants, and after a proffer of peace by De Soto, became more peaceable, granted the request, and De Soto went into camp. The next morning some of the natives advanced without speaking, turned their faces toward the east, and made a profound genuflection to the sun; then turning to the west they made the same obeisance to the moon, and concluded with a similar but less profound reverence to De Soto. They then said they had come in the name of the cazique, Chisca, and in the name of all his subjects, to bid them welcome, and to offer their friendship and services. They also said they were desirous of seeing what kind of men the strangers were, as there was a tradition handed down from their ancestors that a white people would come and conquer their country.\*

The Spaniards remained at Chisca twenty days, at the end of which time, having built four piraguas, they were ready to cross the great river. About three hours before day De Soto ordered the piraguas to be launched, and four troopers of tried courage to cross in each. The troopers, when near the opposite shore, rushed into the water, and meeting with no resistance easily effected a landing, and were thus masters of the pass. The entire army was over the river two hours before the setting of the sun. The Mississippi River at this place, according to the Portuguese narrator, was half a league across, was of great depth, very muddy, and was filled with trees and timber, carried along by the rapidity of the current.

According to Bancroft, De Soto saw the Mississippi River for the first time April 25, 1541, being guided to it by the natives at one of their usual crossing places, probably the lowest Chickasaw Bluff, not far from the thirty-fifth parallel of latitude; Belknap says within the thirty-fourth parallel; Andrew Elliott's journal says it was in thirty-four degrees and ten minutes; "Martin's Louisiana" says a little below the lowest Chickasaw Bluff; "Nuttall's Travels in Arkansas" says at the lowest Chickasaw Bluff, and McCullough says twenty or thirty miles below the mouth of the Arkansas River.

From the time of De Soto's departure from Chisca there appears to have been no attempt at exploration within the present limits of Tennessee

---

\*Irving.



until the year 1655, when Col. Wood, who lived at the falls of the James River, sent suitable persons out on a tour of discovery to the westward. These parties crossed the Alleghany Mountains, and reached the Ohio and other rivers flowing into the Mississippi. And it is believed possible by writers on this department of literature that Col. Wood's explorers followed the beautiful valley of Virginia, passed through the upper part of East Tennessee and the Cumberland Gap, and thus were the pioneers of that vast flood of immigration which but little more than a century later poured its current of life and activity into Tennessee.

Less than twenty years after this conjectural tour through Tennessee of Col. Wood's adventurers two remarkable, historical personages passed down the Mississippi, and found between the thirty-fifth and thirty-sixth parallels of latitude, on the eastern bank of the great river, densely populated Indian villages. These celebrated personages were Marquette and Joliet, and these discoveries were made in June, 1673. In the map published in connection with Marquette's Journal, in 1681, highlands corresponding to the first, second and third Chickasaw Bluffs are delineated with considerable accuracy, as is also a large island, known as President's Island. Reports of these visits and discoveries circulated in France excited among their countrymen brilliant schemes of colonization along the banks of the Mississippi, and La Salle was commissioned to perfect the exploration of the great river and its immense and productive valley. In furtherance of this object La Salle descended the river to its mouth in 1682, and planted the standard of France near the Gulf of Mexico, claiming the territory for that power, and naming it "Louisiana," in honor of his sovereign, Emperor Louis XIV. As he passed down the river he framed a cabin and built a fort on the first Chickasaw Bluff, naming it *Prud'homme*. Except the four piraguas, or pirogues, built at this point by the Spanish adventurer De Soto, in 1541, this cabin and fort built by the French explorer La Salle, in 1682, was the first handicraft by civilized man within the boundaries of Tennessee.

While at this fort La Salle entered into friendly arrangements with the Chickasaw Indians for the opening of trade, and established a trading post, which he hoped would serve as a rendezvous for traders from the Illinois to posts which might afterward be established below. Since the time of La Salle the largest commercial city of Tennessee has been established and developed very near, if not precisely upon, the very spot selected by him for his trading post. But this State was not to be settled from the West. It was from Virginia and North Carolina that were to come the hardy sons of toil and courageous pioneers that were to convert the "howling wilderness," which Tennessee had been for centuries, into

a populous, industrious and prosperous commonwealth. After the death of Bacon immigration set in toward the west, and extended into the beautiful valley of Virginia. In 1690 the settlements reached the Blue Ridge, and explorations of the great West were soon afterward undertaken. In 1714, according to Ramsey, Col. Alexander Spottswood, then lieutenant-governor of Virginia, passed, and was the first to pass the Great Blue Hills, and his attendants, on account of having discovered a horse-pass, were called "Knights of the Horse Shoe." It has been said that during this tour Gov. Spottswood passed Cumberland Gap, and conferred this name upon the gap, the mountains and the river, which they have ever since retained, but this is probably an error. During the same year (1714) M. Charleville, a French trader from Crozat's colony, at New Orleans, came among the Shawanees, then living upon the Cumberland River, and opened trade with them. His store was upon a mound, on the present site of Nashville, west of the Cumberland River, near French Lick Creek, and about seventy yards from each stream. But it is thought M. Charleville could not have remained long, for about this time the Chickasaws and Cherokees made a combined attack upon the Shawanees, and drove them from their numerous villages along the lower Cumberland.

Evidently it was the design of the French at that time to exclude the English from the valley of the Mississippi and to confine their colonies to narrow limits along the Atlantic coast. In order to accomplish this purpose they endeavored to enlist in their behalf the native Indian tribes. Traders from Carolina having ventured to the countries of the Choctaws and Chickasaws had been driven from their villages through the influence of Bienville, France claiming the entire valley of the Mississippi by priority of discovery. According to Adair the eastern boundaries of the territory at that time claimed by the French extended to the head springs of the Alleghany and Monongahela, of the Kanawha and of the Tennessee. One half mile from the head of the Savannah was "Herbert's Spring," the water from which flows to the Mississippi, and strangers who drank of it would say they had tasted "French waters;" and the application of the name "French Broad" to the river now known by that name is thus explained. Traders and hunters from Carolina in passing from the head waters of Broad River, and falling upon those of the stream with which they inosculate west of the mountains, and hearing of the French claim would naturally call the newly discovered stream the "French Broad." Not long after this the French built and garrisoned Fort Toulouse, at the confluence of the Coosa and Tallapoosa; Tombeckbee in the Choctaw country; Assumption, on the Chick-

asaw Bluff, and Paducah, at the mouth of the Cumberland, and numerous trading posts along the Tennessee, indicative of their intention to maintain possession of the country.

To counteract the influence of the French and to frustrate their designs the English sent out Sir Alexander Cumming to treat with the Cherokees, who at that time occupied the country in the vicinity of the source of the Savannah River and back therefrom to and beyond the Appalachian chain of mountains. Summoning the Lower, Middle Valley and Overhill tribes, Sir Alexander met the chiefs of the Cherokee towns at Nequassa, in April, 1730, informed them by whom he was sent and demanded of them obedience to King George. The chiefs, falling upon their knees, solemnly promised what was demanded, and Sir Alexander, with their unanimous consent, nominated Moytoy, of Tellico,\* commander-in-chief of the Cherokee nation. The crown was brought from Tennesee,† their chief town, which together with five eagle feathers and four scalps, taken from the heads of their enemies, they requested Sir Alexander to lay at his sovereign's feet.

As has been seen above it was the policy of France to unite the extremes of her North American possessions by a cordon of forts along the Mississippi River; but the Chickasaws had hitherto formed an obstacle to the accomplishment of this design. This tribe of Indians was considered inimical to the purposes of the French, and hence the French resolved upon their subjugation. A joint invasion was therefore made into their country by Bienville and D'Artuquette, which resulted disastrously to the invaders. The French, however, not to be deterred by disaster, toward the last of June, 1739, sent an army of 1,200 white men and double that number of red and black men, who took up their quarters in Fort Assumption, on the bluff of Memphis. The recruits from Canada sank under the torridity of the climate. In March, 1740, the small detachment proceeded to the Chickasaw country. They were met by messengers who supplicated for peace, and Bienville gladly accepted the calumet. The fort at Memphis was razed, and the Chickasaws remained the undoubted lords of the country.‡

Thus did the present territory of Tennessee again rid itself of civilization, almost precisely two centuries after De Soto built his piraguas near the site of the razed Fort Assumption, on the banks of the Mississippi. But civilization can not be restrained. Settlements were gradually extending from the Atlantic colonies toward Tennessee. In 1740

\* Probably the modern Tellico.

† Tennesee was on the west bank of the present Little Tennessee River, a few miles above the mouth of Tellico, and afterward gave its name to Tennessee River and the State.

‡ Bancroft



there was a handsome fort at Augusta garrisoned by twelve or fifteen men, besides officers, and the boundary line between Virginia and North Carolina was extended in 1749 by commissioners appointed by their respective Legislatures to Holston River, directly opposite Steep Rock. According to Haywood the Holston River was discovered by and settled upon by a man of that name, which event must therefore have occurred previous to 1749. Fort Dobbs was built in 1756, about twenty miles west of Salisbury, in accordance with the terms of a treaty between Col. Waddle and Attakullakulla, the Little Carpenter, in behalf of the Cherokees. But to this treaty the Indians paid little attention, and hence it became necessary for Gov. Glenn, of South Carolina, to make an alliance with the Indians for the purpose of securing peace and protection to the frontier settlements. This alliance or treaty was made in 1755, at which a large cession of territory was made to the King of Great Britain, whom Gov. Glenn represented, and soon afterward Gov. Glenn built Fort Prince George upon and near the source of the Savannah River, 300 miles from Charleston, and in the immediate proximity of an Indian town named Keown.

In the spring of 1756 the Earl of Loudon, who had been appointed commander of the King's troops in America and governor of Virginia, sent Andrew Lewis out to build another fort on the southern bank of the Little Tennessee River, above the mouth of Tellico River, nearly opposite the spot upon which Tellico Block-house was afterward erected and about thirty miles from the site of Knoxville. Lewis named the structure Fort Loudon, in honor of the Earl. This fort is remarkable as being the first erected in Tennessee by the English, but authorities differ as to the year in which it was erected—some say in 1756, others in 1757. In 1758 Col. Bird, of Virginia, erected Long Island Fort, on the north bank of the Holston, nearly opposite the upper end of Long Island. At this time the line between Virginia and North Carolina had not been extended beyond Steep Rock Creek, and this fort was thought to be in Virginia, but as the line when extended passed north of the fort, the Virginians have the honor of having erected the second Anglo-American fort within the limits of Tennessee.

While these events were taking place, numerous traders were making their way from the Atlantic coast to the south and west. In 1690 Doherty, a trader from Virginia, visited the Cherokees, and in 1730 Adair, from South Carolina, extended his tour through the towns of this tribe. In 1740 other traders employed a Mr. Vaughn as packman to transport their goods. These traders passed to the westward along the Tennessee below the Muscle Shoals, and there came in competition with other trad-



ers from New Orleans and Mobile. Those who returned to northern markets were usually heavily laden with peltries which sold at highly remunerative prices. A hatchet, a pocket looking-glass or a piece of scarlet cloth and other articles which cost but little and were of but little intrinsic value would command among the Indians on the Hiwassee or the Tennessee peltries which could be sold for forty times their original cost in Charleston or Philadelphia. It is worthy of remark that most of these traders were Scotchmen who had been but a short time in the country, who were thus at peace with the Indians, and the commerce which they carried on proved a source of great profit and was with them for a time a monopoly. But this monopoly was not to be permitted long to continue. The cupidity of frontier hunters became excited as they perceived the heavily laden trader or packman returning from the far Western wilderness which they had not yet ventured to penetrate; and as game became scarce in their own accustomed haunts east of the mountains they soon began to accompany the traders to the West and to trap and hunt on their own account.

But these hunters and traders can scarcely be considered the precursors of the pioneer settlers of Tennessee. In 1748 Dr. Thomas Walker, of Virginia, in company with Cols. Wood, Patton and Buchanan and Capt. Charles Campbell, made an exploring tour upon the Western waters. Passing Powell's Valley he gave the name "Cumberland" to the lofty range of mountains on the west of the valley. Tracing this range in a southwest direction he came to a remarkable depression in the chain. Through this depression he passed, calling it "Cumberland Gap." West of the range of mountains he found a beautiful mountain stream to which he gave the name of "Cumberland River," all in honor of the Duke of Cumberland, then Prime Minister of England. The Indian name of the river was Warito. On account of the supposition that the Virginia line, if extended westward, would run south of its present location, a grant of land was made by the authorities in Virginia to Edmund Pendleton of 3,000 acres lying in Augusta County on a branch of the middle fork of the Indian River, called West Creek, now in Sullivan County, Tenn. The original patent was signed by Gov. Dinwiddie, was presented to Dr. Ramsey by T. A. R. Nelson, of Jonesboro, and is probably the oldest patent in the State.

In 1760 Dr. Walker again passed over Clinch and Powell Rivers on a tour of exploration into Kentucky. At the head of one of the parties that visited the West in 1761 "came Daniel Boone, from the Yadkin in North Carolina, and traveled with them as low as the place where Abingdon now stands and there left them." This is the first time the name of

Daniel Boone is mentioned by historians in connection with explorations into Tennessee, but there is evidence that he was in the State at least a year earlier, evidence that is satisfactory to most writers on the subject. N. Gammon, formerly of Jonesboro, and later of Knoxville, furnished to Dr. Ramsey a copy of an inscription until recently to be seen upon a beech tree standing in the valley of Boone's Creek, a tributary of the Watauga, which is here presented:

D. Boon		
Cilled	A	B A R
on Tree	in	the
year		
1760		

If Daniel Boone wrote or rather cut this inscription on the tree, as is generally believed to have been the case, it is not improbable that he accompanied Dr. Walker on his second tour of exploration, which was made in 1760, and it fixes the date of his arrival in this State. But this, apparently, is not demonstrable. The New American Cyclopedia says in reference to Daniel Boone: "When he was about eighteen his father removed to North Carolina and settled on the Yadkin. Here Daniel married Rebecca Bryan and for some years followed the occupation of a farmer, but about 1761 we find that his passion for hunting led him with a company of explorers into the wilderness at the head waters of the Tennessee river;" and Collins, in his History of Kentucky, writes as though Boone's knowledge of and interest in the wild-woods of Kentucky began upon hearing reports of their beauty and value by John Findley, who did not make his exploration until 1767, which will be referred to in its proper chronological connection. However, with regard to the inscription it would seem legitimate to inquire why did not Boone spell his own name correctly on the tree?

In this same year, 1761, a company of about twenty hunters, chiefly from Virginia came into what is now Hawkins County, Tenn., and hunted in Carter's Valley about eighteen months. Their names have not all been preserved; a portion of them, however, were Wallen, Scaggs, Blevins and Cox. Late in 1762 this party came again and hunted on the Clinch and other rivers, as was also the case in 1763 when they penetrated further into the interior, passed through Cumberland Gap, and hunted the entire season upon the Cumberland River. In 1764 Daniel Boone, now in the employ of Henderson & Co., came again to explore the country. He was accompanied this time by Samuel Callaway, ancestor of the Callaway family in Tennessee, Kentucky and Missouri. After Boone and Callaway came Henry Scaggins, who extended his tour to the lower Cumberland and fixed his station at Mansker's Lick,

the first exploration west of the Cumberland Mountains by an Anglo-American. In June, 1766, according to Haywood, Col. James Smith set out to explore the rich lands between the Ohio and Cherokee Rivers, then lately ceded to Great Britain. Traveling westwardly from the Holston River, in company with Joshua Horton, Uriah Stone and William Baker, and a slave belonging to Horton, they explored the country south of Kentucky, and the Cumberland and Tennessee Rivers from Stone River, which they named after Uriah Stone, down to the Ohio. Arriving at the mouth of the Tennessee Col. Smith, accompanied by Horton's slave, returned to Carolina in October. The rest of the party went on to Illinois.

The recital by Col. Smith of what he had seen on the lower Cumberland, the extraordinary fertility of the soil, its rich flora, its exuberant pasture, etc., excited in the minds of the people in the Atlantic States which he visited an ardent and irrepressible desire to emigrate to that country. In 1767 John Findley, accompanied by several persons, visited the West. Passing through Cumberland Gap he explored the country as far as the Kentucky River. Upon his return his glowing descriptions of the fertility of the country beyond the Cumberland Mountains excited the curiosity of the frontiersmen of North Carolina and Virginia no less than did those of Col. Smith. With reference to this journey of Findley, Collins says:

"In 1767 the return of Findley from his adventurous excursion into the unexplored wilds beyond the Cumberland Mountains, and the glowing account he gave of the richness and fertility of the new country, excited powerfully the curiosity and imagination of the frontier-backwoodsmen of Virginia and North Carolina, ever on the watch for adventure, and to whom the lonely wilderness with its perils presented attractions which were not to be found in the close confinement and enervating inactivity of the settlements. To a man of Boone's temperament and tastes, the scenes described by Findley presented charms not to be resisted; and in 1769 he left his family upon the Yadkin, and in company with five others, of whom Findley was one, he started to explore the country of which he had heard so favorable an account.

"Having reached a stream of water on the borders of the present State of Kentucky, called Red River, they built a cabin to shelter them from the inclemency of the weather (for the season had been very rainy), and divided their time between hunting and the chase, killing immense quantities of game. Nothing of particular interest occurred until the 22d of December, 1769, when Boone, in company with a man named Stuart, being out hunting, was surprised and captured by the Indians. They



remained with their captors seven days, till having, by a rare and powerful exertion of self-control, suffering no signs of impatience to escape them, they succeeded in disarming the suspicions of the Indians, effected their escape without difficulty. \* \* \* On regaining their camp they found it dismantled and deserted; the fate of its inmates was never ascertained, and it is worthy of remark that this is the last and almost only glimpse we have of Findley, the first pioneer."

Ramsey says: "Of Findley nothing more is known than that he was the first hunter of Kentucky and the pilot of Boone to the dark and bloody ground." He also says that in December of that year (1769) John Stewart was killed by the Indians (quoting from Butler) "the first as far as is known in the hecatombs of white men, offered by the Indians to the god of battles in their desperate and ruthless contention for Kentucky." Boone, therefore, except possibly Findley, was the only one of this party of six who, passing through East Tennessee, made this exploration into Kentucky and returned.

The events which immediately follow the above in chronological succession have more or less relation to the Treaty of Paris, or the Peace of 1763, hence a brief account of that treaty is appropriate in this connection, and also from the fact that the territory, now comprising Tennessee, as well as a large amount of other territory, was by that treaty ceded by France to England. Of the effect of this treaty upon England, Bancroft says:

"At the peace of 1763 the fame of England was exalted in Europe above that of all other nations. She had triumphed over those whom she called her hereditary enemies, and retained one-half a continent as a monument of her victories. Her American dominions extended without dispute, from the Atlantic to the Mississippi, from the Gulf of Mexico to Hudson's Bay, and in her older possessions that dominion was rooted as firmly in the affections of the colonists as in their institutions and laws. The ambition of British statesmen might well be inflamed with the desire of connecting the mother country and her trans-Atlantic empire by indissoluble bonds of mutual interests and common liberties."

But this treaty, howsoever great may have been its effect upon the majesty and grandeur of the English Government, and howsoever great may have been the relief obtained by the French nation, neither French nor English appears to have taken into account the rights or well-being of the independent Indian tribes, the real owners of the territory ceded by the one nation to the other. Not having been consulted by the great powers, having been in fact entirely ignored, the Indians naturally refused to be bound by the transfer of their country by the French to the



English, and hence every excursion into their hunting ground was looked upon with jealousy, and was finally met with resistance as an invasion of their country, and an unwarranted encroachment upon their rights. The Indians had been, in the years of their alliance with the French, prepared for this attitude toward the English, by the efforts of the people of the former nation to excite in the savage tribes fears of the designs of the English to dispossess them of their entire country. For the purpose of allaying as far as practicable, or removing these apprehensions, King George, on the 7th of October, 1763, issued his proclamation prohibiting the provincial governors from granting lands or issuing land warrants to be located west of the mountains, or west of the sources of those streams flowing into the Atlantic Ocean. And all private persons were strictly enjoined from purchasing any lands of the Indians, such purchases being directed to be made, if made at all, at a general meeting or assembly of the Indians, to be held for that purpose by the governor or commander-in-chief of each colony, respectively.

But no matter what may have been the intention of King George, of England, in the issuance of this proclamation, its effect upon the westward tide of immigration was imperceptible. The contagious spirit of adventure and exploration had now risen to the dignity of an epidemic. An avalanche of population was being precipitated upon these fertile valleys, hills and plains, and the proclamation of the King had no more effect upon these eager, moving masses than had the famous fulmination of the Pope against the comet. And the proclamation of the King was looked upon even by "the wise and virtuous George Washington and Chancellor Livingston" as an article to quiet the fears of the Indians while the occupancy of their country went on all the same. In addition to the natural stimulus to this tide of immigration, of the immense advantages of the soil and climate, was the artificial stimulus of special grants of land by the provinces of Great Britain, with the approval of the crown, to officers and soldiers who had served in the British Army against the French and their allies, the Indians. Thus the King's proclamation was in direct contravention of the grants authorized by a previous proclamation of the King. By this latter mentioned, but earlier issued proclamation, officers and soldiers were granted lands as follows: Every person having the rank of a field officer, 5,000 acres; every captain, 3,000 acres; every subaltern or staff officer, 2,000 acres; every non-commissioned officer, 200 acres, and every private fifty acres. These officers and soldiers, with scrip and military warrants in their hands, were constantly employed in selecting and locating their claims. These continued encroachments kept the Indian tribes in a state of dissatisfaction and

alarm, but though thus exasperated they refrained from open hostilities. Because of these encroachments and alarms the royal Government instructed the superintendents of Indian affairs to establish boundary lines between the whites and Indians, and to purchase from the Indians the lands already occupied, to which the title had not been extinguished.

Capt. John Stuart was at this time superintendent of southern Indian affairs. On the 14th of October, 1768, Capt. Stuart concluded a treaty with the Cherokees at Hard Labour, S. C., by which the southwestern boundary of Virginia was fixed as follows: "Extending from the point where the northern line of North Carolina intersects the Cherokee hunting grounds, about thirty-six miles east of Long Island, in the Holston River; thence extending in a direct course, north by east, to Chiswell's Mine on the east bank of the Kanawha River, and thence down that stream to its junction with the Ohio."

To follow the instructions of the royal Government in regard to purchasing the lands already occupied by the Indians was not easy of accomplishment, because of the uncertainty as to which Indian tribe or tribes were the rightful proprietors of the soil. At the time of its earliest exploration the vast extent of country between the Ohio and Tennessee Rivers was unoccupied by any Indian tribe. Indian settlements existed on the Scioto and Miami Rivers on the north, and on the Little Tennessee on the south. Between these limits existed a magnificent forest park, abounding in a great variety of game, which was thus the hunting ground of the Choctaws, Chickasaws and Cherokees of the south, and of the various tribes composing the Miami Confederacy of the north. It also served as a kind of central theater for the enactment of desperate conflicts of savage warriors and deadly enemies. Why this great extent of valuable country was, as by common consent of all the surrounding Indian tribes, left unoccupied will probably always remain unexplained except by conjecture. But though not inhabited by any tribe or nation, title to it was claimed by the Confederacy of the Six Nations, and this confederacy, by a deputation sent to the superintendent of Indian affairs in the north, on the 6th of May, 1768, presented a formal remonstrance against the continued encroachments upon these lands. Upon consideration by the royal government of this remonstrance, instructions were issued to Sir William Johnson, superintendent, to convene the chiefs and warriors of the tribes most interested. Accordingly this convention was held at Fort Stanwix, N. Y., October 24; 3,200 Indians of seventeen different tribes attended, and on the 5th of November a treaty and a deed of cession to the King were signed. In this the delegates from their respective nations declared themselves to be "the

true and absolute proprietors of the lands thus ceded," and that they had "continued the line south to the Cherokee or Hogohegee River because the same is our true bounds with the southern Indians, and that we have an undoubted right to the country as far south as that river." This was the first deed from any aboriginal tribe for any lands within the present boundaries of Tennessee.

*The Watauga Settlement.*—Dr. Thomas Walker was Virginia's commissioner to the convention at Fort Stanwix. Upon his return he brought with him the news of the cession. At the treaty at Hard Labour the Indians had assented to an expulsion of the Holston settlements, and as a consequence the nucleus was formed of the first permanent settlement within the limits of Tennessee, in the latter part of December, 1768, and the early part of January, 1769. It was merely an enlargement of the Virginia settlements, and was believed to be in Virginia—the boundary line between Virginia and North Carolina not having been established west of Steep Rock. The settlers were principally from North Carolina, and some of them had been among the troops raised by that province and sent in 1760 to the relief of Fort Loudon, and others had wintered in 1758 at Fort Long Island, around which a temporary settlement had been made but broken up.

About the time of the incipency of the Watauga settlement Capt. William Bean came from Pittsylvania County, Va., and settled with his family on Boone's Creek, a tributary of the Watauga. His son, Russell Bean, was the first white child born in Tennessee. Bean's Station was named after him. About a month after Daniel Boone "left his peaceful habitation on the Yadkin River, in quest of the country of Kentucky," a large company was formed for the purpose of exploring and hunting in Middle Tennessee. Some of them were from North Carolina, some from the vicinity of the Natural Bridge and others from Ingle's Ferry, Va. Some of their names are here introduced: John Rains, Casper Mansker, Abraham Bledsoe, John Baker, Joseph Drake, Obadiah Terrell, Uriah Stone, Henry Smith, Ned Cowan and Robert Crockett. They established a rendezvous on New River, eight miles below Fort Chissel, and passing through Cumberland Gap, discovered southern Kentucky and fixed a station camp at what has since been known as Price's Meadow, in Wayne County. Robert Crockett was killed near the head waters of Roaring River, and after hunting eight or nine months the rest of the party returned home in April, 1770. After their return a party of about forty stout hunters was formed for the purpose of hunting and trapping west of the Cumberland. This party was led by Col. James Knox, who, with nine others, reached the lower Cumberland, and after a long absence,



having made an extensive tour, returned home and won the appellation of the "Long Hunters."

The settlement on the Watauga continued to receive considerable accessions to its numbers, both from North and South Carolina and Virginia. This was in part because of the comparatively unproductive hills and valleys of those provinces and because of the absence of courts in South Carolina outside of the capital of the State previous to 1770. In this latter province the people felt under the necessity of taking the law into their own hands, and punished offenders by organized bodies of regulators. The regulators were opposed by the Scovillites, so named after their leader Scovil, who was commissioned by the governor to operate against the regulators, and from North Carolina the inhabitants were driven in part by the determination of the British Government to quarter troops in America at the expense of the colonies and to raise a revenue by a general stamp duty. After the defeat of the regulators by Gov. Tryon on the Alamance May 16, 1771, numbers of them proceeded to the mountains and found a cordial welcome in Watauga, remote from official power and oppression. While these movements were in progress the settlements were spreading beyond the limits established at Hard Labour and a new boundary had been agreed upon by a new treaty signed at Lochaber October 18, 1770. The new line extended from the south branch of Holston River, six miles east of Long Island, to the mouth of the Great Kanawha.

At that time the Holston River was considered the boundary line between Virginia and North Carolina. The Legislature of Virginia passed an act granting to every actual settler having a log cabin erected and some ground cultivated the right to 400 acres of land so located as to include his improvement, and subsequently extended the right to each settler to purchase 1,000 acres adjoining at a merely nominal cost. This generous action on the part of the Legislature of Virginia greatly stimulated immigration to the West, where every man could easily secure a valuable estate. Crowds immediately advanced to secure the proffered fortune, and afterward, when the boundary line was run, they found themselves in North Carolina. But most of the new arrivals at Watauga came from North Carolina. Among those who came about this time was Daniel Boone, at the head of a party of immigrants, he acting merely as guide, which he continued to do until his death in 1820 or 1822.

Early in 1770 came James Robertson, from Wake County, N. C., who, henceforth, for many years was destined to be one of the most useful and prominent of the pioneers of Tennessee. He visited the new settlements forming on the Watauga, and found a settler named Honey-



cutt living in a hut, who furnished him with food. On his return home he lost his way, and after wandering about for some time, nearly starving to death, he at length reached home in safety and soon afterward settled on the Watauga. During this same year hunting was carried on in the lower Cumberland country by a party composed of Mr. Mansker, Uriah Stone, John Baker, Thomas Gordon, Humphrey Hogan and Cadi Brook and four others. They built two boats and two trapping canoes, loaded them with the results of their hunting and descended the Cumberland, the first navigation and commerce probably carried on upon that stream. Where Nashville now stands they discovered the French Lick, surrounded by immense numbers of buffalo and other wild game. Near the lick on a mound they found a stock fort, built, as they thought, by the Cherokees on their retreat from the battle at Chickasaw Old Fields. The party descended the Cumberland to the Ohio, met John Brown, the mountain leader, marching against the Senecas, descended the Ohio, meeting Frenchmen trading with the Illinois, and continued their voyage to Natchez, where some of them remained, while Mansker and Baker returned to New River.

In the autumn of 1771 the lower Cumberland was further explored by Mansker, John Montgomery, Isaac Bledsoe, Joseph Drake, Henry Suggs, James Knox, William and David Lynch, Christopher Stoph and William Allen. The names of most of this company are now connected with different natural objects, as Mansker's Lick, Drake's Pond, Drake's Lick, Bledsoe's Lick, etc. After hunting some time and exhausting their ammunition they returned to the settlements.

In the meantime the Holston and Watauga settlements were receiving a steady stream of emigration. Most of those who came were honest, industrious pioneers, but there were those who did not possess these characteristics. These had fled from justice, hoping that in the almost inaccessible retreats of the frontiers to escape the punishment due them for their crimes. Here, from the necessities of their surroundings, they did find safety from prosecution and conviction. The inhabitants north of the Holston believing themselves to be in Virginia, agreed to be governed by the laws of that province. South of Holston was admitted to be in North Carolina, and here the settlers lived without law or protection except by such regulations as they themselves adopted.\*

In 1772 Virginia made a treaty with the Cherokees by which it was decided to run a boundary line west from White Top Mountain in latitude thirty-six degrees thirty minutes. Soon after a deputy agent for the Government of Great Britain, Alexander Cameron, resident among the Cher-

---

\*See chapter on organization.

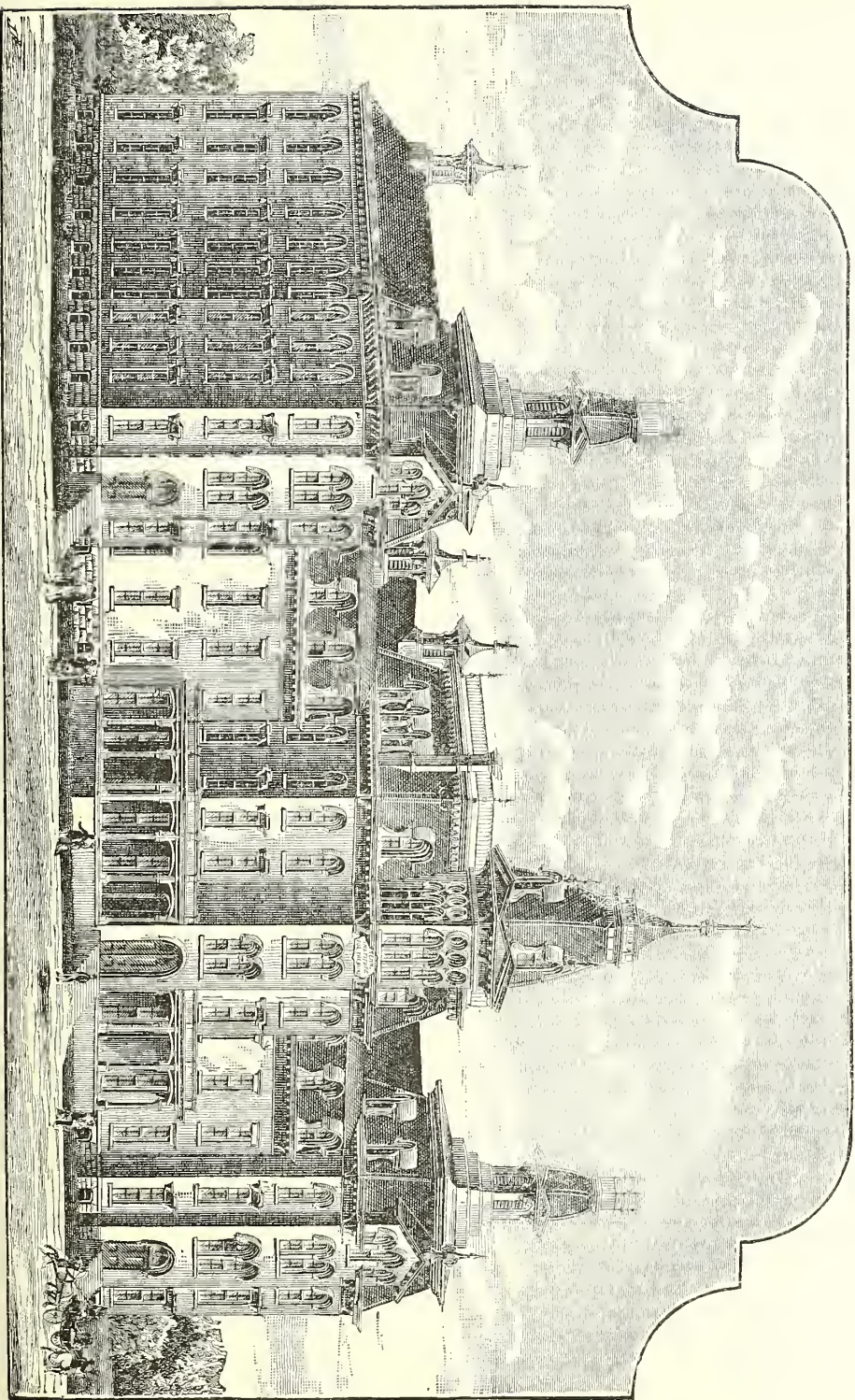
okees, ordered the settlers on the Watauga to move off. But some of the Cherokees expressing a wish that they might be permitted to remain provided no further encroachments were made, the necessity for their removal was avoided. But being still uneasy the settlers deputed James Robertson and John Boone to negotiate with the Indians for a lease. The deputies succeeded in effecting a lease for eight years for about \$5,000 worth of merchandise, some muskets and other articles.

About this time the Nollichucky Valley was settled by Jacob Brown and one or two others upon the northern bank of the river. These families were from North Carolina. Brown bought a lease of a large tract of land with a small quantity of goods which he had brought from his former home on his pack horse. A little before Brown made his settlement on the Nollichucky, Carter's Valley was settled by Carter, Parker and others from Virginia, Carter's Valley being north of the Holston was thought to be in Virginia. Carter & Parker opened a small store which was soon afterward robbed by the Indians, it was supposed by the Cherokees, but no serious consequences followed. But the wanton killing of an Indian at the time of the execution of the Watauga lease, came near precipitating a conflict between the two races, which might have entirely destroyed the frontier settlements. James Robertson came to their relief and by his wisdom and intrepidity saved them from extermination by the outraged Cherokees. Robertson made a journey of 150 miles, and by his courage, calmness and fairness, by his assurances to the Indians that the white men intended to punish the murderer as soon as he could be found, saved the settlers from the fury of the savages. p 576.

Two important events followed, viz.: The battle of Point Pleasant, and Henderson's Treaty. (For account of these events see elsewhere.) By this treaty of Henderson' all that tract of country lying between the Kentucky and Cumberland Rivers was relinquished to Henderson and his associates. This purchase was named Transylvania, and the establishment of an independent government was at first contemplated. During the progress of this treaty which was concluded at Sycamore Shoals, Carter & Parker whose store had been robbed by Indians, as narrated above, demanded, in compensation for the loss inflicted upon them, Carter's Valley, to extend from Cloud's Creek to the Chimney Top Mountain of Beech Creek. The Indians consented to this upon the condition of additional consideration, and in order to enable them to advance the price Messrs. Carter & Parker took Robert Lucas into partnership. These lands were afterward found to be in North Carolina.

The Watauga Association, holding their lands under an eight years' lease, were desirous of obtaining a title in fee. Two days after the Hen-





TENNESSEE INSTITUTE FOR THE BLIND.





derson purchase they succeeded in securing a deed of conveyance to Charles Robertson of a large extent of country. It was made March 19, 1775, and is recorded in the register's office of Washington County. This deed was signed by Oconostota, Attakullakulla, Tennesee Warrior and Willinawaugh in presence of John Sevier, William Bailey Smith, Jesse Benton, Tillman Dixon, William Blevins and Thomas Price, and conveyed for the sum of £2,000 lawful money of Great Britain, all that tract of land, including all the waters of the Watauga, part of the waters of Holston and the head branches of New River, or Great Kanawha. These lands were afterward regularly patented to the settlers, the first patentee being Joshua Haughton. But it is proper here to refer to a deed to Jacob Brown by which for the consideration of 10 shillings, a "principality" was conveyed to him embracing much of the best land in Washington and Greene Counties. This deed was dated March 25, 1775.

At this time the colonial government claimed the exclusive right to purchase lands of the Indians as one of the prerogatives of sovereignty, and Gov. Martin pronounced the purchase, at Watauga, of the Cherokee lands illegal, alleging in his proclamation against it that it was made in violation of the king's proclamation of October 7, 1763, the effect of which proclamation has been already described as a *brutum fulmen*. This proclamation of Gov. Martin was equally harmless.

The Watauga settlement constantly increased in numbers, and the tribunal consisting of five commissioners chosen by themselves settled all controversies arising among the people. Its sessions were held at regular intervals, and its business increased with the growth of the colony. No records of this court have been discovered, but while searching among the public papers of North Carolina, Dr. Ramsey found a petition from the Watauga settlement praying to be annexed to North Carolina as a county, as a district, or as some other division. This petition is without a date, and is in the hand-writing of John Sevier. The chairman of the meeting which adopted it was John Carter, whose grandson was chairman of the Constitutional Convention of 1834. The petition was received by the general assembly of North Carolina, August 22, 1776, and was signed by 112 persons. It commences thus: "The humble petition of the inhabitants of Washington District, including the River Wataugah, Nonachuckie, etc., in committee assembled, humbly sheweth, etc." The committee who drew up this petition were as follows: John Carter, chairman; Charles Robertson, James Robertson, Zachariah Isbell, John Sevier, James Smith, Jacob Brown, William Bean, John Jones, George Russell, Jacob Womack and Robert Lucas. The name Washington Dis-

trict is believed to have been suggested by John Sevier, and thus the pioneers of Tennessee were probably the first to honor Washington.

The Provincial Congress convened at Halifax, November 12, 1776, and continued in session until December 18. From "Washington District, Watauga Settlement," were present John Carter, Charles Robertson, John Haile and John Sevier; Jacob Womack was elected, but did not attend. A bill of rights and a State constitution were adopted, in the former of which the limits of the State are made to extend westward "so far as is mentioned in the charter of King Charles the Second, to the late proprietors of Carolina." The following clause is also in the Declaration of Rights, "That it shall not be construed so as to prevent the establishment of one or more governments westward of this State, by consent of the Legislature."

While these events were in progress, other events were either transpiring or in embryo, which were of transcendent importance to the three centers of settlement—at Carter's at Watauga, and at Brown's. Difficulties between Great Britain and her American colonies had already commenced, the dawn of the American Revolution was at hand. Every means was to be employed by the mother country in reducing to submission her refractory subjects, one of those measures being to arm the neighboring Indian tribes and to stimulate them to fall upon and destroy the feeble settlements on the frontier.

The war with the Cherokees having happily come to an end, and prosperity having returned to the settlements, a treaty was made with them, and signed July 20, 1776. In April of that year the Legislature of North Carolina passed an act for the purpose of encouraging the militia and volunteers in prosecuting the war against the Cherokees.

At the same session an act was passed establishing Washington District, appointing justices of the peace, and establishing courts of pleas and quarter sessions. In November following, Washington County was created, to which was assigned the entire territory of the present State of Tennessee. A land office was provided for in Washington County, and each head of a family was permitted to take up for himself 640 acres of land, for his wife 100 acres, and 100 acres for each of his children. The ease and small expense with which land entries could be made, led numerous poor men westward, for without a dollar in his pocket the immigrant, upon arriving at the distant frontier, and upon selecting a homestead, at once became a large land-owner, and almost instantaneously acquired a competency and an independency for himself and his family. These men brought no wealth, but they did bring what was of more value—industry, frugality, hardihood, courage, economy and self-reli-

ance—and of such material was the foundation of society in the future great State of Tennessee composed. During this year a road was laid out and marked from the court house in Washington County to the county of Burke; and the first house covered with shingles was put up a few miles east of where Jonesboro now stands. In 1778 the Warm Springs on the French Broad were accidentally discovered by Henry Reynolds and Thomas Morgan.

By the treaty made at Watauga in March, 1775, which has been already alluded to, the Cherokees deeded to Henderson & Co. all the lands between the Kentucky and Cumberland Rivers. A portion of this purchase was within the supposed boundary of North Carolina, and numbers of explorers continued to pass through Cumberland Gap on their way to Middle Tennessee. Among them Mansker renewed his visits in November, 1775, and accompanied by Bryant and others encamped at Mansker Lick. Mansker and three others remained hunting and trapping on the Sulphur Fork of Red River. Thomas Sharp, Holliday, Spencer and others came in 1776 to the Cumberland and built a number of cabins. The rest returning, Spencer and Holliday remained until 1779. Capt. De Munbreun came to Middle Tennessee about 1775 and established his residence at Eaton's Station. He hunted through Montgomery County, and during the summer of 1777 he saw some parties at Deacon's Pond, near the present site of Palmyra. In 1778 a settlement was formed near Bledsoe's Lick in the heart of the Chickasaw Nation, and about the same time a party of French erected a trading post at "The Bluff," with the approval of the Chickasaws. Other parties kept coming to the lower Cumberland. Richard Hogan, Spencer, Holliday and others were there, and in the spring of 1778 they planted a small field of corn, the first plantation in Middle Tennessee. A large hollow tree stood near Bledsoe's Lick in which Spencer lived. Holliday, becoming dissatisfied, was determined to leave the country, and Spencer, unable to dissuade him from his purpose, accompanied him to the barrens of Kentucky, breaking and giving to Holliday one half of his own knife, and returned to his hollow tree, where he spent the remainder of the winter. Spencer was a very large man, and one morning, having passed the cabin occupied by one of De Munbreun's hunters, and left his immense tracks in the rich alluvial soil, which were discovered by the hunter on his return, the hunter became affrighted, immediately swam the Cumberland and wandered through the woods until he reached the French settlements on the Wabash.

In 1779 there was nothing in the valley of the lower Cumberland, except the hunter's camp and the lonely log habitation of Spencer. But



in the spring of that year a small party of brave pioneers left the parent settlement on the Watauga, crossed the Cumberland Mountains, and, arriving at the French Lick, pitched their tents and planted a field of corn on the present site of Nashville. This was near the lower ferry, and the party consisted of Capt. James Robertson, George Freeland, William Neely, Edward Swanson, James Hanly, Mark Robertson, Zachariah White and William Overall. A number of others, piloted by Mansker, soon joined this party. Having put in their crop of corn White, Swanson and Overall remained to care for it, while the rest returned to their families, Capt. Robertson by the way of Illinois to see Gen. George Rogers Clarke. Upon their return to the Watauga John Rains and others were persuaded to accompany Robertson to the French Lick. Other companies also were induced to join them, and at length a party of from 200 to 300 was collected, which in the fall started to the new settlement where Nashville now stands. Their route lay through Cumberland Gap and along the Kentucky trace to Whitley's Station; thence to Carpenter's Station, on Green River; thence to Robertson's Fork; thence down Green River to Pitman's Station; thence crossing and descending that river to Little Barren, crossing it at Elk Lick; thence past the Blue and Dripping Springs to Big Barren; thence up Drake's Creek to a bituminous spring; thence to the Maple Swamp; thence to Red River at Kilgore's Station; thence to Mansker's Creek and thence to the French Lick. The time consumed in this journey does not appear, but it was longer than was anticipated, on account of the depth of the snow and the inclemency of the weather, and they did not arrive at their destination until about the beginning of the year 1780. Some of them remained on the north side of the Cumberland and settled at or near Eaton's Station, but most of them, immediately after their arrival, crossed the river upon the ice, and settled where Nashville now stands. Both parties, those who remained on the north side of the river and those who crossed over to the south side, built block-houses, connected by stockades, as a defense against possible, and as they believed probable, future attacks upon them by the Indians, and the logic of events proved the wisdom of their course. Freeland's Station was established about this time, and likewise Dead-erick's Station by John Rains.

While these brave and hardy adventurers were pursuing their perilous journey through the wilderness of Kentucky and Tennessee, several boat loads of other adventurers, no less brave and no less hardy, were pursuing even a still more perilous journey down the Tennessee, up the Ohio and up the Cumberland, having in view the same objective point. This latter party was composed of friends and relatives of the former to



a considerable extent. They started from Fort Patrick Henry, near Long Island, and were commanded by Col. John Donelson, the projector of the voyage. Col. Donelson kept a journal, giving full particulars of the remarkable adventure, the principal parts of which are here inserted:

“Journal of a voyage intended, by God’s permission, in the good boat ‘Adventure,’ from Fort Patrick Henry on Holston River to the French Salt Spring on Cumberland River, kept by John Donaldson.

“December 22, 1779.—Took our departure from the fort and fell down the river to the mouth of Reedy Creek, where we were stopped by the fall of water and most excessive hard frost, and after much delay and many difficulties we arrived at the mouth of Cloud’s Creek on Sunday evening the 20th of February, 1780, where we lay by until Sunday, 27th, when we took our departure with sundry other vessels, bound for the same voyage, and on the same day struck the Poor Valley Shoal, together with Mr. Boyd and Mr. Rounsifer, on which shoal we lay that afternoon and succeeding night in great distress.

“Monday, February 28, 1780.—In the morning, the water rising, we got off the shoal, after landing thirty persons to lighten the boat. In attempting to land on an island we received some damage and lost sundry articles, and came to camp on the south shore, where we joined sundry other vessels, also bound down. \* \* \* \* \*

“March 2d.—Rain about half the day; passed the mouth of French Broad River, and about 12 o’clock, Mr. Henry’s boat being driven on the point of an island by the force of the current, was sunk, the whole cargo much damaged and the crew’s lives much endangered, which occasioned the whole fleet to put on shore and go to their assistance, but with much difficulty bailed her in order to take in her cargo again. The same afternoon Reuben Harrison went out a hunting and did not return that night, though many guns were fired to fetch him in.

“March 3d.—Early in the morning fired a four-pounder for the lost man; sent out sundry persons to search the woods for him; firing many guns that day and the succeeding night, but all without success, to the great grief of his parents and fellow travelers.

“Saturday 4th.—Proceeded on our voyage, leaving old Mr. Harrison with some other vessels to make further search for his lost son. About 10 o’clock the same day, found him a considerable distance down the river, where Mr. Benjamin Belew took him on board his boat. At 3 o’clock P. M., passed the mouth of Tennessee River, and camped on the south shore about ten miles below the Tennessee.

“Sunday 5th.—Cast off and got under way before sunrise; 12 o’clock passed the mouth of Clinch; came up with the Clinch River Company, whom he joined and camped, the evening proving rainy.

"Monday 6th.—Got under way before sunrise. \* \* \* \*  
Camped on the north shore where Capt. Hutching's negro man died, being much frosted in his feet and legs, of which he died.

"Tuesday 7th.—Got under way very early, the day proving very windy, at S. S. W., and the river being wide occasioned a high sea, inso-much that some of the smaller crafts were in danger; therefore came to at the uppermost Chickamauga town, which was then evacuated, where we lay by that afternoon and camped that night. The wife of Ephraim was here delivered of a child. Mr. Peyton has gone through by land with Capt. Robertson.

"Wednesday 8th.—Cast off at 10 o'clock and proceeded down to an Indian village, which was inhabited, on the south side of the river; they insisted on us to 'come ashore,' called us brothers, and showed other signs of friendship, insomuch that Mr. John Caffrey and my son then on board took a canoe, which I had in tow, and were crossing over to them, the rest of the fleet having landed on the opposite shore. After they had gone some distance a half-breed, who called himself Archy Coody, with several other Indians, jumped into a canoe, met them, and advised them to return to the boat, which they did, together with Coody and several canoes which left the shore and followed directly after him. They appeared to be friendly. After distributing some presents among them, with which they seemed much pleased, we observed a number of Indians on the other side embarking in their canoes, armed and painted in red and black. Coody immediately made signs to his companions, ordering them to quit the boat, which they did; himself and another Indian remaining with us, and telling us to move off instantly. We had not gone far before we discovered a number of Indians armed and painted, proceeding down the river as it were to intercept us. Coody the half-breed and his companion sailed with us for some time, and telling us that we had passed all the towns and were out of danger, left us. But we had not gone far until we had come in sight of another town situated likewise on the south side of the river, nearly opposite a small island. Here they again invited us to come on shore, called us brothers, and observing the boats standing off for the opposite channel, told us that 'their side of the river was better for the boats to pass.' And here we must regret the unfortunate death of young Mr. Payne, on board Capt. Blackmore's boat, who was mortally wounded by reason of the boat running too near the northern shore opposite the town, where some of the enemies lay concealed, and the more tragical misfortune of poor Stuart, his family and friends, to the number of twenty-eight persons. This man had embarked with us for the western country, but his family being diseased with the

small-pox, it was agreed upon between him and the company that he should keep at some distance in the rear, for fear of the infection spreading, and he was warned each night when the encampment should take place by the sound of a horn. After we had passed the town, the Indians, having now collected to a considerable number, observing his helpless situation, singled off from the rest of the fleet, intercepted him, and killed and took prisoners the whole crew, to the great grief of the whole company, uncertain how soon they might share the same fate; their cries were distinctly heard by those boats in the rear.

"We still perceived them marching down the river in considerable bodies, keeping pace with us until the Cumberland Mountain withdrew them from our sight, when we were in hopes we had escaped them. We were now arrived at the place called the Whirl or Suck, where the river is compressed within less than half its common width above, by the Cumberland Mountain, which juts in on both sides. In passing through the upper part of these narrows, at a place described by Coody, which he termed the "Boiling Pot," a trivial accident had nearly ruined the expedition. One of the company, John Cotton, who was moving down in a large canoe, had attached it to Robert Cartwright's boat, into which he and his family had gone for safety. The canoe was here overturned and the little cargo lost. The company, pitying his distress, concluded to halt and assist him in recovering his property. They had landed on the northern shore at a level spot, and were going up to the place, when the Indians, to our astonishment, appeared immediately over us on the opposite cliffs, and commenced firing down upon us, which occasioned a precipitate retreat to the boats. We immediately moved off; the Indians lining the bluffs along continued their fire from the heights on our boats below, without doing any other injury than wounding four slightly. Jennings' boat was missing.

"We have now passed through the Whirl. The river widens with a placid and gentle current, and all the company appear to be in safety except the family of Jonathan Jennings, whose boat ran on a large rock projecting out from the northern shore, and was partly immersed in water immediately at the Whirl, where we were compelled to leave them, perhaps to be slaughtered by their merciless enemies. Continued to sail on that day and floated throughout the following night. \* \* \*

"Friday 10th.—This morning about 4 o'clock we were surprised by the cries of "help poor Jennings" at some distance in the rear. He had discovered us by our fires, and came up in the most wretched condition. He states that as soon as the Indians discovered his situation they turned their whole attention to him, and kept up a most galling fire at



his boat. He ordered his wife, a son nearly grown, a young man who accompanied them, and his negro man and woman, to throw all his goods into the river, to lighten their boat for the purpose of getting her off, himself returning their fire as well as he could, being a good soldier and an expert marksman. But before they had accomplished their object his son, the young man, and the negro, jumped out of the boat and left them. Mr. Jennings, however, and the negro woman succeeded in unloading the boat, but chiefly through the efforts of Mrs. Jennings, who got out of the boat and shoved her off, but was near falling a victim to her own intrepidity on account of the boat starting so suddenly as soon as loosened from the rock. Upon examination he appears to have made a wonderful escape, for his boat is pierced in numberless places with bullets. It is to be remarked that Mrs. Peyton, who was the night before delivered of an infant, which was unfortunately killed upon the hurry and confusion consequent upon such a disaster, assisted them, being frequently exposed to wet and cold then and afterward, and that her health appears to be good at this time and I think and hope she will do well. Their clothes were much cut with bullets especially Mrs. Jennings'.

\* \* \* \* \*

"Sunday 12th.—Set out, and after a few hours' sailing heard the crowing of cocks and soon came within view of the town; here they fired on us again without doing any injury.

"After running until about 10 o'clock came in sight of the Muscule Shoals. Halted on the northern shore at the appearance of the shoals, to search for the signs Capt. James Robertson was to make for us at that place. He set out from Holston early in the fall of 1779, was to proceed by the way of Kentucky to the Big Salt Lick on Cumberland River, with several others in company, was to come across from the Big Salt Lick to the upper end of the shoals, there to make such signs that we might know he had been there and that it was practicable for us to go across by land. But to our great mortification we can find none—from which we conclude that it would not be prudent to make the attempt, and are determined, knowing ourselves to be in such imminent danger, to pursue our journey down the river. After trimming our boats in the best manner possible we ran through the shoals before night. \* \* \* Our boats frequently dragged on the bottom; \* \* \* they warped as much as in a rough sea. But by the hand of Providence we are preserved from this danger also. I know not the length of this wonderful shoal; it had been represented to me to be twenty-five or thirty miles. If so we must have descended very rapidly, as indeed we did, for we passed it in about three hours. \* \* \* \*



“Wednesday 15th.—Got under way and moved on peaceably the five following days, when we arrived at the mouth of the Tennessee on Monday, the 20th, and landed on the lower point immediately on the bank of the Ohio. Our situation here is truly disagreeable. The river is very high and the current rapid, our boats not constructed for the purpose of stemming a rapid stream, our provisions exhausted, the crews almost worn down with hunger and fatigue, and we know not what distance we have to go, or what time it will take us to reach our place of destination. The scene is rendered still more melancholy, as several boats will not attempt to ascend the rapid current. Some intend to descend the Mississippi to Natchez, others are bound for the Illinois—among the rest my son-in-law and daughter. We now part perhaps to meet no more, for I am determined to pursue my course, happen what will. \* \* \* \*

“Friday 24th.—About 3 o’clock came to the mouth of a river which I thought was the Cumberland. Some of the company declared it could not be—it was so much smaller than was expected. But I never heard of any river running in between the Cumberland and Tennessee. We determined, however, to make the trial, pushed up some distance and encamped for the night.

“Saturday, 25th.—To-day we are much encouraged. The river grows wider; the current is gentle and we are now convinced it is the Cumberland. \* \* \* \*

“Friday, 31st.—Set out this day, and after running some distance met with Col. Richard Henderson, who was running the line between Virginia and North Carolina. At this meeting we were much rejoiced. \* \* \* Camped at night near the mouth of a little river, at which place and below there is a handsome bottom of rich land. Here we found a pair of hewed mill-stones, set up for grinding, but appearing not to have been used for a long time.

“Proceeded on quietly until the 12th of April, at which time we came to the mouth of a little river running in on the north side, by Moses Renfro and his company, called Red River, upon which they intended to settle. Here they took leave of us. We proceeded up the Cumberland, nothing happening material until the 23d, when we reached the first settlement on the north side of the river, one mile and a half below the Big Salt Lick, and called Eaton’s Station, after a man of that name, who with several other families came through Kentucky and settled there.

“Monday, April 24th.—This day we arrived at our journey’s end, at the Big Salt Lick, where we have the pleasure of finding Capt. Robertson and his company. It is a source of satisfaction to us to be enabled to restore to him and others their families and friends, who were intrusted

to our care, and who some time since, perhaps, they despaired of ever meeting again. Though our prospects at present are dreary, we have found a few log cabins, which have been built on a cedar bluff above the Lick by Capt. Robertson and his company."

This journal here presented may be found in full in Ramsey. In copying out of his work, unimportant portions have been omitted for the sake of saving space. This emigration of Col. Donelson ranks as one of the most remarkable achievements in the settlement of the West, and as the names of the participators in the expedition have far more than a local interest, they are here inserted: John Donelson, Sr., Thomas Hutchings, John Caffrey, John Donelson, Jr., Mrs. James Robertson and five children, Mrs. Purnell, M. Rounsifer, James Cain, Isaac Neelly, Jonathan Jennings, Benjamin Belew, Peter Looney, Capt. John Blackmore, Moses Renfroe, William Crutchfield, James Johns, Hugh Henry, Sr., Benjamin Porter, Mrs. Mary Henry (widow), Frank Armstrong, Hugh Rogan, Daniel Chambers, Robert Cartwright, Mr. Stuart, David Gwinn, John Boyd, Reuben Harrison, Frank Haney, Mr. Maxwell, John Montgomery, John Cotton, Thomas Henry, John Cockrell, John White, Solomon White and Mr. Payne. The above list of names is copied from Putnam. Ramsey gives these additional ones: Isaac Lanier, Daniel Dunham, Joseph and James Renfroe, Solomon Turpin and John Gibson. There were other persons, men, women and children, whose names have not been preserved. The total number of persons in this expedition is not known, but from the best information obtainable there were at least thirty boats in the entire fleet, no one of which contained less than two families.

With reference to the fate of the three young men who ran away from Mr. Jennings, when his boat was attacked, as narrated in Capt. Donelson's journal, authorities are not agreed. Ramsey and John Carr agree in stating that the negro man was drowned, and that the young man, whose name is not given, was taken to Chickamauga Town, where he was killed and burned, and that young Jennings was ransomed by an Indian trader named Rogers, and afterward restored to his parents. Putnam, however, doubts the correctness of this narration, especially so far as it refers to the burning of the young man. He says "such cruelty and crime have not been clearly proven against them (the Indians)." But as both Ramsey and Carr say "they killed and burned the young man," it may justly be inferred that the "burning occurred after the killing," or, in other words, they killed and then burned the body of the young man, and thus the "cruelty and crime" would consist in the killing and not in the burning.

The capture of Stuart's boat and crew, among whom were the several

cases of small-pox, as narrated in Capt. Donelson's journal, resulted in great mortality among the Indians, many of whom were attacked by the disease with fatal results. It is said that when attacked and when the fever was upon them they took a "heavy sweat" in their houses, and then leaped into the river, the remedy being no less fatal than the disease itself. Putnam quotes approvingly from the "narrative of Col. Joseph Brown," that this mortality was "a judgment upon the Indians," though just how it can have been a judgment upon the Indians, any more than it and the capture and killing of so many of Stuart's family was a judgment on them, is not easily discernible.

---

## CHAPTER V.

SETTLEMENT CONCLUDED—RESULTS OF DONELSON'S VOYAGE—THE FRENCH LICK—THE ESTABLISHMENT OF MANY BLOCK-HOUSES, STATIONS, ETC.—THE LONG REIGN OF TRYING TIMES—THE MILITARY WARRANTS AND GRANTS—PIONEER CUSTOMS—GOVERNMENT OF THE CUMBERLAND COLONY—THE EMIGRANT ROAD—COL. BROWN'S DISASTROUS VOYAGE—NORTH CAROLINA'S NEGLECT OF THE COLONIES—THEIR ISOLATION AND SUFFERING—THE TENNESSEE LAND COMPANY—NATIONAL EXECUTIVE INTERFERENCE—DESIGNS OF THE COMPANIES THWARTED BY THE EFFECTIVE ACTS OF THE CITIZENS OF GEORGIA—SUMMARY OF TENNESSEE LAND GRANTS—THE WESTERN PURCHASE—THE CHICKASAWS—ENTRY OF THE WHITES INTO WEST TENNESSEE—THE BLUFFS—PERMANENT SETTLEMENT—INCIDENTS AND ANECDOTES.

THE principal results of the emigration of Col. Donelson to Middle Tennessee were the establishment of the settlements at and near the Bluff and the subsequent formation of an independent government May 1, 1780, a number of years before the organization of the State of Franklin. Some of these early settlers plunged at once into the adjoining forests. Col. Donelson himself, with his family, being one of the number. He went up the Cumberland, and erected a small fort at a place since called Clover Bottom, near Stone River, and on the south side of that stream. Dr. Walker, Virginia's commissioner for running the boundary line between that State and North Carolina, arrived at the Bluff, accompanied by Col. Richard Henderson and his two brothers, Nathaniel and Pleasant. Col. Henderson erected a station on Stone River, remained there some time, and sold lands under the deed made to himself and partners at Watauga in March, 1775, by the Cherokees. The price charged for this land by Col. Henderson was \$10 per 1,000 acres. The certificate of purchase contained a clause by which it was set forth that payment for the land was conditioned on the confirmation of the Henderson



treaty by the proper authorities; but both the States of Virginia and North Carolina annulled his title, or rather declared it to be null and void *ab initio*, and refused to recognize the sales made by him or his company, and purchasers on contracts made with him were never urged to make payment for their lands. But notwithstanding the fact that the two States decided that the Transylvania Company had not by the purchase acquired any title to the lands, on the ground that private individuals had no power or right to make treaties with Indian tribes, yet they at the same time decided that the Indians had divested themselves of their title to them, and hence Transylvania became divided between the two States of North Carolina and Virginia. But each State, on account of the expenditures of the company and the labor to which they had been and the interest manifested by them in the welfare of the early settlers, made to them a grant of 200,000 acres. The Virginia grant was on the Ohio River in what is now Henderson County, Ky., and the North Carolina grant was bounded as follows: "Beginning at the old Indian town in Powell's Valley, running down Powell's River not less than four miles in width on one or both sides thereof to the junction of Powell and Clinch Rivers; then down Clinch River on one or both sides not less than twelve miles in width for the aforesaid complement of 200,000 acres." The remaining part of the land was devoted to public uses.

The little band of immigrants at the Bluff were in the midst of a vast extent of country apparently uninhabited by Indians. Savage tribes were to be found in all directions, but toward the south none were known to be north of the Tennessee, and toward the north none were known to be south of the Ohio. Apparently no lands within or near the new settlements were claimed by Creek or Cherokee, Chickasaw or Choctaw; hence a sense of safety soon manifested itself among the pioneers, and hence, also, many of them began to erect cabins for individual homes in the wild woods, on the barrens or on the prairie where no pathway or trace of animal or human could be seen; and in their anxiety to make improvements on their individual claims and to become independent, many of the more thoughtless of them were reluctant to devote much of their time and labor to the erection of forts, stockades and palisades to which all could retreat for mutual defense in case of an attack by the now apparently harmless lords of the soil. But this desire, laudable though it was when not carried to the extreme of imprudence, was by the wise and experienced among them sufficiently repressed to secure an agreement on the part of all to give a portion of their valuable time to the erection of a few forts and depositories for arms, ammunition and provisions.



The fort at the Bluffs, called Nashborough, in honor of Francis Nash, of North Carolina, a brigadier-general in the Continental Army, was to be the principal fort and headquarters for all. The others were as follows: Freeland's, at the spring in North Nashville; Eaton's, upon the east side of the river upon the first high land at the river bank; Gasper's, about ten miles north at the sulphur spring where now stands the town of Goodlettsville; Asher's, on Station Camp Creek, on the bluff, about three miles from Gallatin; Bledsoe's, near the sulphur spring about seven miles from Gallatin; Donelson's, on the Clover Bottom where the pike passes, and Fort Union, at the bend of the river above the Bluffs, where since has stood the town of Haysborough. "The fort at Nashborough stood upon the bluff between the southeast corner of the public square and Spring Street. Like the other forts it was a two-story log building with port holes and lookout station. Other log houses were near it and palisades were thrown entirely around the whole, the upper ends of the palisades or pickets being sharpened. There was one large entrance to the enclosure. The view toward the west and southwest was obstructed by a thick forest of cedars and a dense undergrowth of privet bushes. The rich bottom lands were covered with cane measuring from ten to twenty feet in height. The ancient forest trees upon the rich lands in this region were of a most majestic growth; all the elements of nature seem to have combined to make them what they were, and yet, although many of the loveliest sites for country residences have been hastily and unwisely stripped of their chief ornament and charm, and civilized man has speedily destroyed, by thousands in a year, such monarchs of the forest as a thousand years may not again produce, there remain here and there some lovely spots and glorious oaks not wholly dishonored or abased by the woodman's ax. There are a few, and but a few, of such native woods and magnificent trees remaining in the vicinity of the capital of Tennessee."\*

As has been stated above the winter of 1779-80 was unusually severe, the Cumberland River being frozen over sufficiently solid to permit Robertson's party to cross upon the ice. The inclemency of the weather was such as to cause great inconvenience and suffering to the early settlers. It was impossible to keep warm in their cabins, necessarily loosely constructed, and the game upon which they depended in part for food was in an impoverished condition and poor. But while these evils resulted from this cause, there were also benefits enjoyed unconsciously to the settlers themselves. The Indians were themselves in as unsatisfactory condition, and as unprepared to make an attack upon the

---

\*Putnam.

cabins as the people in the cabins were to successfully defend themselves against an attack; and during this interim of security from invasion by the savage tribes, which lasted until some time in May, 1780, the forts and other defenses were erected and strengthened, and numerous acquisitions were made to the numbers of the whites. Immigration had set in with a new impetus, the roads and traces to Kentucky and the Cumberland country being crowded with adventurers seeking independence and fortune in the new Eldorado of the West, which was in verity beautiful, fertile and grand; and it is not at all surprising that its native proprietors should at length muster all their strength, their wildest energies and fiercest passions, to dispossess the invaders and to repossess themselves of their own fair, delightful paradise. However, the attempt to accomplish this design soon convinced them that it could not be done by force of arms, the settlers being too strong, too resolute, and too well-defended; the only recourse therefore had was, if possible, to deprive the whites of food by driving away and dispersing the deer, buffalo and other wild game, which was commenced in the spring of 1780, and continued with such success for two or three years as to necessitate adventures by the stationers to far-off distances, and thus expose themselves to the dangers of ambush and attack by the lurking savage. This state of things rendered life at the Bluff and in the vicinity, anything but pleasant. Numbers wished they had never come, or that they had gone to other settlements where, being ignorant of the actual facts connected therewith, they imagined a greater degree of security and plenty reigned. But here, as in every community, there were a goodly number of brave-hearted men and women, who, having suffered in getting to their homes, put their trust in Providence and resolved to stay.

One of the causes which led to the rapid settlement of Tennessee, was the passage, by the General Assembly of North Carolina, of an "act for the relief of the officers and soldiers in the Continental line, and for other purposes," which was as follows:\*

WHEREAS, The officers and soldiers of the Continental line of this State have suffered much by the depreciation of paper currency, as well as by the deficiency of clothing and other supplies that have been due them according to sundry acts and resolves of the General Assembly, and whereas, the honorable, the Continental Congress, have resolved that the deficiency shall be made good to the 18th day of August, 1780, according to a scale of depreciation established. And

\* \* \* \* \*

WHEREAS, It is proper that some effectual and permanent reward should be rendered for the signal bravery and persevering zeal of the Continental officers and soldiers in the service of the State. Therefore

*Be it enacted, etc.,* That each Continental soldier of the line of this State who is now in service, and continues to the end of the war, or such of them as from wounds or bodily

---

\*Laws of 1782. Chapter III.

infirmity have been or shall be rendered unfit for service, which shall be ascertained by a certificate from the commanding officer, shall have six hundred and forty acres of land; every officer who is now in service, and shall continue in service until the end of the war, as well as those officers who from wounds or bodily infirmity have left or may be obliged to leave the service, shall have a greater quantity according to his pay as followeth: Each non-commissioned officer, one thousand acres; each subaltern, two-thousand five hundred and sixty acres; each captain, three thousand eight hundred and forty acres; each major, four thousand eight hundred acres; each lieutenant-colonel, five thousand seven hundred and sixty acres; each lieutenant-colonel commandant, seven thousand two hundred acres; each colonel, seven thousand two hundred acres; each brigadier-general, twelve thousand acres; each chaplain, six thousand two hundred acres; each surgeon, four thousand eight hundred acres; each surgeon's mate, two thousand five hundred and sixty acres; and where any officer or soldier has fallen or shall fall in the defense of his country, his heirs or assigns shall have the same quantity of land that the officer or soldier would have been entitled to had they served during the war.

According to the next section of this act any family that had settled on the tract of land set apart to be divided up among the officers and soldiers should be entitled to 640 acres, provided that no such grant should include any salt lick or salt spring which were reserved with 640 acres in connection with each lick or spring for public purposes.

By the eighth section Absalom Tatom, Isaac Shelby and Anthony Bledsoe were appointed commissioners to lay off the land and they were to be accompanied by a guard of not more than 100 men.

By the tenth section Gen. Nathaniel Greene was allowed 25,000 acres of land, which by an act passed in 1784 was described as follows: "Beginning on the south bank of Duck River, on a sycamore, cherry tree and ash, at the mouth of a small branch, running thence along a line of marked trees south seven miles and forty-eight poles, to a Spanish oak, a hickory and a sugar sapling; thence east six miles and ninety poles, to a Spanish oak and hackberry tree; thence north three miles and 300 poles, to a sugar-tree sapling, and two white oak saplings into a cleft of Duck River, where it comes from the northeast; thence down Duck River according to its meanderings to the beginning."

The Revolutionary war came to an end in November, 1782. Capt. Robertson anticipated this event and from it inferred an abatement of Indian hostilities. It was soon followed by the arrival from North Carolina of quite a number of persons, who gave additional strength and encouragement to the settlements. Early in 1783 the commissioners named above in the eighth section of the act for the relief of the officers and soldiers in the Continental line arrived from North Carolina accompanied by a guard to lay off the lands promised as bounties to the officers and soldiers of said Continental line. These commissioners also came to examine into the claims of those persons who considered themselves entitled to pre-emption rights granted to settlers on the Cumberland previous to 1780, and also to lay off the lands given to Gen. Greene. The



settlers, animated with new hope by the presence of all these additions to their numbers and strength, entirely abandoned the designs they had long entertained of leaving the country.

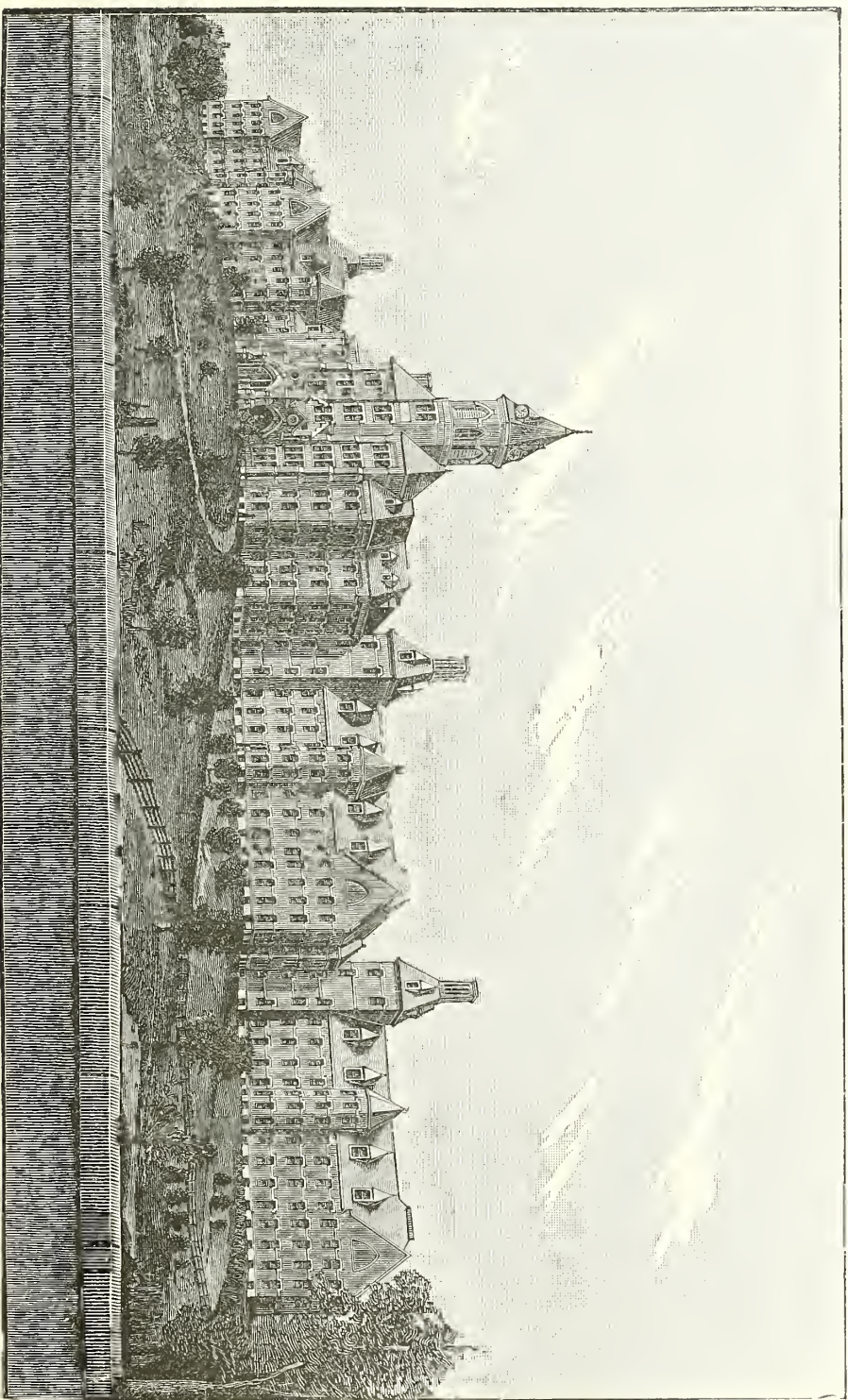
The commissioners and guards, with some of the inhabitants in company, went to the place since called Latitude Hill, on Elk River, to ascertain the thirty-fifth degree of north latitude, and there made observations. They then went north to Duck River to the second creek below Columbia and laid off Greene's 25,000 acres, and then fifty-five miles from the southern boundary of the State, and parallel thereto ran a line which received the name of the "Continental line," because it was the boundary of the territory allotted to the officers and soldiers of North Carolina in the Continental Army. But upon the representation, and at the request of the officers made to the General Assembly at the session of 1783, they directed it to be laid off from the northern boundary fifty-five miles to the south: Beginning on the Virginia line where the Cumberland River intersects the same; thence south fifty-five miles; thence west to the Tennessee River; thence down the Tennessee River to Virginia line; thence with the said Virginia line east to the beginning.\* This line was run by Gen. Rutherford, in 1784, and named the "Commissioner's line." The Continental line passed the Harpeth River about five miles above the town of Franklin. The Commissioner's line included the land in the Great Bend of Tennessee—all lands on the east side of the Tennessee to the present Kentucky line. The method of running it was as follows: Commencing at the Kentucky line the commissioners ran south fifty-five miles to Mount Pisgah, then forming themselves into two parties, one party ran westward to the Tennessee and the other eastward to the Caney Fork.

Never were more generous bounties given to more deserving patriots. The war-worn veteran might here secure a competency, or perhaps even wealth or affluence to himself and children after the storm of battle had subsided, in the enjoyment of which he might pass the evening of life, serenely contemplating the great benefits derived and to be derived from the sacrifices himself and his compatriots had made in the establishment of the independence of the American nation. A vast emigration from North Carolina was the direct result of her generous action, insomuch that it was at one time estimated that nine-tenths of the population of Tennessee were from the mother State. And in addition to the bounties offered to the officers and soldiers of the Continental line, other bounties were offered to the guards of the commissioners who were appointed to lay off the reservation for the said officers and soldiers. These bounties

---

\*Haywood.





WEST TENNESSEE HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE.

UNFINISHED.



were named "Guard Rights," and induced numerous individuals to become members of the guard, and numerous grants were located and settled upon by such individuals. After running the line as authorized by the General Assembly of North Carolina, the commissioners sat at the Bluff to examine into pre-emption claims and issued certificates to such as were entitled thereto. The commission then dissolved and Isaac Shelby removed to Kentucky, thus ceasing to be a citizen of Tennessee. Of Kentucky he became the first governor, and died suddenly July 18, 1826, in the seventy-sixth year of his age.

The commissioners having come and gone affairs again assumed their usual aspect at the Bluff. The people were employed in their ordinary labors, doing what could be done to improve their condition. Additions to their numbers continued to be made from North Carolina, and they were gratified to learn that even much larger numbers were added to the settlements in Kentucky. Goods began to be brought in by boats from the Ohio and its tributaries, but according to Putnam the first store at the Falls of the Ohio was supplied from Philadelphia, and the supplies carried on pack-horses. The second store was kept at Lexington by Col. (afterward Gen.) James Wilkinson, from which small supplies were purchased for the settlers on the Cumberland. Several years after this a small store was opened at the Bluff. Lardner Clark was the first merchant and ordinary-keeper, dealing in dry goods, thimbles and pins for ladies; dinners and liquors for men, and provender for horses. As one of the improvements made in that early day in the way of labor-saving machinery, it may not be inappropriate to introduce here a description of a hominy-mill invented and constructed by a Mr. Cartwright. It consisted mainly of a wheel, upon the rim of which he fastened a number of cows' horns, in such position that as each horn was filled with water its weight would cause it to descend and thus set the wheel in revolution. To the axle of this wheel was attached a crank, and to the crank the apparatus for cracking the corn. Thus many a little blow was made by the little pestle upon the quart of corn in the mortar. This mill was owned by Heyden and James Wells.

As to the general condition of affairs on the Cumberland the following description from Ramsey is probably as graphic and correct as can be composed: "As on the Watauga at its first settlement, so now here the colonists of Robertson were without any regularly organized government. The country was within the boundaries of Washington County, which extended to the Mississippi, perhaps the largest extent of territory ever embraced in a single county. But even here in the wilds of the Cumberland, removed more than 600 miles from their seat of government, the



people demonstrated again their adequacy to self-government. Soon after their arrival at the Bluff, the settlers appointed trustees, and signed a covenant obliging themselves to conform to the judgments and decisions of their officers, in whom they had invested the powers of government.\* Those who signed the covenant had considerable advantages over those who did not; they were respectively allowed a tract of land, the quiet possession of which was guaranteed by the colony. Those who did not sign the covenant were considered as having no right to their lands, and could be dispossessed by a signer without any recourse. To the trustees were allowed in these days of primitive honesty and old-fashioned public spirit neither salaries nor fees. But to the clerk appointed by the trustees were given small perquisites as compensation for the expense of paper and stationery. The trustees were the executive of the colony, and had the whole government in their own hands; acting as the judiciary their decisions gave general satisfaction. To them were also committed the functions of the sacerdotal office in the celebration of the rites of matrimony. The founder of the colony, Capt. James Robertson, as might have been expected, was one of the trustees and was the first who married a couple. These were Capt. Leiper and his wife. Mr. James Shaw was also a trustee, and married Edward Swanson to Mrs. Carvin, James Freeland to Mrs. Maxwell, Cornelius Riddle to Miss Jane Mulherrin and John Tucker to Jenny Herrod, all in one day. The first child born in the country was John Saunders, since the sheriff of Montgomery County, and afterward killed on White River, Indiana, by the Indians. The second was Anna Wells.       \*       \*       \*       \*       \*

“Under the patriarchal form of government, by trustees selected on account of their experience, probity and firmness, the colony was planted, defended, governed and provided for several years, and the administration of justice and the protection of rights, though simple and a little irregular, it is believed was as perfect and satisfactory as at any subsequent period in its history.”

Approach to the Cumberland settlements previous to 1785 was generally through the wilderness of Kentucky, but at the November session of the General Assembly of North Carolina for this year, it enacted a law providing for a force of 300 men to protect these settlements, and it was made the duty of these soldiers or guards, to cut and clear a road from the lower end of Clinch Mountain to Nashville by the most eligible route. This road was to be at least ten feet wide and fit for the passage of wagons and carts. For the half of his first year's pay each private was allowed 400 acres of land, and for further services in the same pro-

---

\* See chapter on Organization.



portion. The officers were to be paid in a similar manner. The road was opened during the year, after which the route was more direct, and immense numbers of the more wealthy people of the Atlantic sections sought the Cumberland over it. But as the guards were overburdened in protecting the settlements from Indian incursions and attacks; the road cut by them was not sufficient for the purpose of the vast immigration now pouring into the country. A wider and more level road was demanded, hence the road already cut was widened and another road was cut leading into it from Bledsoe's Lick. The field officers of the counties were authorized and directed, when informed that a number of families were at Cumberland Mountain waiting for an escort to conduct them to the Cumberland settlements, to raise militia guards, to consist of not more than fifty men to act as such escort. The expenses of these guards were to be defrayed by a poll tax which the county courts were authorized to levy. By the improvement in the roads and the protection provided for emigrants, great accessions were constantly made to the Cumberland settlements for the next succeeding years. Large numbers of families would concentrate on the banks of the Clinch, and attended by the guard would pass through the wilderness with little apprehension of trouble from the Indians on the way, and the settlements thus constantly strengthened soon secured a foretaste of that final triumph over discouragements and disasters by which they had so long been enfeebled and depressed. They became better prepared to repel savage aggressions, and at length able themselves to carry on an offensive warfare against the Indians. In fact the population of Davidson County increased so rapidly that for the convenience of the inhabitants living remote from Nashville, the seat of justice, it became necessary to divide the county and form a new one named Tennessee.

The records of Davidson County for the October term of 1787 contain a resolution that for the better furnishing of the troops now coming into the country under Maj. Evans with provisions, etc., one-fourth of the tax of the county should be paid in corn, two-fourths in beef, pork, bear meat and venison, one-eighth in salt, and one-eighth in money to defray the expense of moving the provisions from the place of collection to the troops. It was also provided that the price of corn should be 4 shillings per bushel, beef \$5 per hundred weight, pork \$8, good bear meat (without bones) \$8, venison 10 shillings per hundred weight, and salt \$16 per bushel. With reference to the currency the court, at its next April term, appointed Robert Hays, Anthony Hart and John Hunter a committee of inspection, with authority to destroy such of the bills as they believed to be counterfeit. This action was taken subsequent to the refusal of Jesse

Cain to receive the currency of the State, for which he was indicted by the grand jury April 7, 1787, but not punished. It will be noticed that the currency of the Cumberland was something to eat, while that of Franklin was something to wear.

In the *State Gazette* of North Carolina, under date of November 28, 1788, Col. Robertson published the following notice: "The new road from Campbell's Station to Nashville was opened on the 25th of September, and the guard attended at that time to escort such persons as were ready to proceed to Nashville; that about sixty families had gone on, among whom were the widow and family of the late Gen. Davidson, and John McNairy, judge of the Superior Court; and that on the 1st day of October next, the guard would attend at the same place for the same purpose."

Not long after this the General Assembly of North Carolina established a provision store on the frontier of Hawkins County at the house of John Adair, for the reception of beef, pork, flour and corn for the use of the Cumberland Guard when called on to conduct these emigrant parties through the wilderness, and John Adair was appointed a commissioner for the purchase of these provisions. In payment for them he was authorized to issue certificates receivable by the sheriff in the District of Washington in part payment of the public taxes in the counties of that district, from whom they were to be received by the treasurer of the State. It was also provided that when any person, wounded in the formation and defense of the Cumberland settlements, was unable to pay the expense of his treatment, the county courts should pass the accounts, and that accounts so passed should be received in payment of public taxes. The courts were also authorized to sell the several salt licks, heretofore reserved, at which salt could be manufactured, and to declare the others vacant and subject to entry as other public lands. Two of the licks of the first description were to be retained for the use of Davidson Academy.

The year 1788 was distinguished by the deplorable adventure of Col. James Brown, a Revolutionary officer in the North Carolina line. He was immigrating to the Cumberland to take possession of the lands allotted to him for his military services during the Revolution. His family consisted of himself, wife, five sons, four daughters and several negroes. Two of his sons were young men. Besides his immediate family, Col. Brown's party consisted of J. Bays, John Flood, John and William Gentry, and John Griffin. Being unwilling to expose his family to the dangers of an overland journey to the Cumberland, Col. Brown determined to go by water, following the famous example of Col. John Donelson, of eight years before. His boat was built on Holston, a short distance be-

low Long Island. It was fortified by placing two-inch oak plank all around above the gunwales. These were pierced with port-holes at proper distances, and a swivel-gun was placed in the stern of the boat. By taking these precautions he hoped to make the journey for his party safe, easy and pleasant. They embarked on the 4th of May, and on the 9th the party passed the Chickamauga towns about daybreak, and the Tuskegee Island town a little after sunrise. At this place the head man, Cuttey Otoy, and three other warriors, came on board and were kindly treated. Returning to the shore, they sent runners to Running Water Town and Nickajack to raise all the warriors they could to ascend the river and meet the boat. Not long after they had left the boat, Col. Brown's party saw a number of canoes ascending the river, evidently prepared to do mischief, if that were their intention. One of their number, John Vann, was a half-breed, and could speak English plainly. By pretending to be friendly, the Indians in the canoes came alongside Col. Brown's boat, boarded it, forced it to the shore, killed Col. Brown, and took all of the others prisoners. All of the men of the party were killed. Mrs. Brown and one daughter were retained prisoners for seventeen months; two of the daughters and one son were released about eleven months after their capture, and one little son was kept five years among the Creeks, at the end of which time he had forgotten the few English words he had learned at the time of his capture. The son of Col. Brown, released at the end of eleven months, was subsequently Col. Joseph Brown, of Maury County, Tenn. After his release, himself and other members of the family made a successful overland journey to the Cumberland, and settled about three miles below Nashville. Mrs. Brown was released through the aid of Col. McGilvery, the head man of the Creek nation, as was also one of her daughters. Few families suffered more from Indian atrocities than the Browns; Col. Brown, two sons, and three sons-in-law, were killed, another was shot in the right hand and cut about the wrist; another son, Joseph, and two daughters, were prisoners nearly a year; Mrs. Brown and another daughter were prisoners seventeen months, the former being driven on foot by the Creeks 200 miles, her feet blistered and suppurating, not being allowed time to take the gravel from her shoes; and a younger son was a prisoner five years. Gen. Sevier was at this time actively engaged in suppressing Indian hostilities, and it is to him credit is due for the exchange of prisoners effected. A full account of his operations will be found in the chapter on Indian history.

Not long after the fall of the Franklin government in the spring of 1788, it became evident that North Carolina, although opposed to the existence of that anomaly, was at the same time exceedingly economical



in the adoption of measures and in providing means for the welfare and protection of her western counties. This disposition on the part of the parent State soon revived the discontents and complaints of the western people, especially of those who had been in the Franklin revolt, and it soon became the general opinion on both sides of the Alleghany Mountains that a separation was not only the best policy for each but was also for the interest of both. The General Assembly acting upon this principle passed an act for the purpose of ceding to the United States certain western lands therein described, and in conformity with one of the provisions of this act, North Carolina's United States Senators, Samuel Johnston and Benjamin Hawkins, on the 25th of February, 1790, executed a deed of the territory ceded to the United States. On the 2d of the following April, the United States Congress accepted the deed and what is now Tennessee ceased to be a part of North Carolina.

One of the few last legislative enactments of North Carolina respecting her western territory was one establishing Rogersville in Hawkins County, in 1789. This was the last town established by North Carolina in Tennessee.

Having thus traced some of the principal events in settlements of the territory now comprising the State of Tennessee, it is proper to pause and consider the condition of things at the time the final cession was made to, and accepted by, the Congress of the United States. The settlements were comprised in two bodies or communities. That in East Tennessee extended from the Virginia line on the east, southwest to the waters of Little Tennessee, in the shape of a peninsula. Its length was about 150 miles, and its width from twenty-five to fifty. This narrow strip of inhabited country was bounded on the south by a constant succession of mountains claimed and in part occupied by the Indians, on the west by territory occupied by them, and on the north and northwest by the Clinch and Cumberland Mountains. And the settlements within these limits were confined mainly to the valleys of the Holston, Nollichucky and the French Broad and Little Rivers below the mountains. All the rest of East Tennessee was occupied by Cherokee villages or their hunting grounds. In this portion of the State, comprising what was then Washington District, there were about 30,000 inhabitants.

The other community was settled along the Cumberland River, and was almost entirely insulated from the community in East Tennessee. They were included in Mero District, and numbered about 7,000 inhabitants. The counties were Davidson, Tennessee and Sumner. Between these two sections thus distant from each other there was no direct and easy communication. By water the great obstacles were the rapids and



Muscle Shoals of the Tennessee River, and the ascent of the Ohio and Cumberland, and between the two a mountain chain and a wilderness intervened which could not well be traversed without a military guard.

West of the Tennessee River lay the territory claimed but unoccupied by the Chickasaws. Much of it was covered by grants from North Carolina but as yet none of it had been settled by white people. It furnished a thoroughfare through which intercommunication was continued for a considerable period between northern and southern tribes of Indians, and foreign emissaries who sought to involve the settlements in difficulties with the tribes. Spaniards were also residing in the towns of the Creeks and Choctaws, who themselves had no valid claim to the lands. Such was the state of affairs when the cession was made, and when the territory of the United States south of the Ohio River was organized, and when that accomplished gentleman, William Blount, of North Carolina, was appointed its governor by the President of the United States, George Washington.

An important transaction took place about this time with which several prominent citizens of Tennessee were connected either directly or indirectly. It was between the Legislature of the State of Georgia and the Tennessee Land Company. It would probably be very difficult to ascertain the names of all the members of this company, even if it were desirable so to do. The leading spirit, however, in the enterprise, was Zachariah Cox. Others who were either members of the company or interested in its operations were Matthias Maher, William Cox, James Hubbard, Peter Bryant, John Ruddle, Thomas Gilbert, John Strother, a Mr. Williams and a Mr. Gardiner, Gen. Sevier and Col. Donelson. The territory of Georgia then like that of North Carolina, extended westward to the Mississippi River, and the Legislature of that State considering itself authorized by the constitution so to do, and thinking it would be to the interest of their State, sold large quantities of land in its western territory to different companies, among these being the Tennessee Land Company. The tract of land thus purchased by this company lay upon the Great Bend of the Tennessee River and was bounded as follows: "Beginning at the mouth of Bear Creek, on the south bank of the Tennessee River; thence up the said creek to the most southern source thereof; thence due south to latitude thirty-four degrees and ten minutes; thence a due east course 120 miles; thence a due north course to the great Tennessee River; thence up the middle of said river to the northern boundary line of this State; thence a due west course along the said line to where it intersects the great Tennessee River below the Muscle Shoals; thence up the said river to the place of beginning." Within

these limits were contained 3,500,000 acres of land, and the stipulated price was \$46,875. The act of the Legislature making this grant was passed December 21, 1789; \$12,000 was to be paid down, and 242,000 acres were to be reserved to the citizens of Georgia. Of this land Gen. Sevier had "ten or twenty thousand acres at the mouth of Blue Water Creek, which empties into the Tennessee near the head of Muscle Shoals, the right to which he afterward relinquished to the United States for the privilege of entering 5,000 acres of other unappropriated public lands."\*

In view of the course taken by the United States toward those who attempted to settle upon this purchase, this statement is somewhat confusing. Zachariah Cox and Thomas Carr, as agents of the company, soon took measures to effect this settlement. From their territory they issued a notice September 2, 1790, that they would embark a large armed force at the mouth of French Broad. But little attention was paid to them by Gov. Blount, as it was supposed they were unable to start the expedition. But about January 10, 1791, Cox and about twenty-five or thirty others arrived at the place of embarkation, and began to make preparations in earnest to go down the river. The President of the United States, hearing of the purchase and intended occupation of these lands, issued a proclamation forbidding the settlement, and declaring those who made such settlement would be entirely outside the protection of the United States. Upon the receipt of a letter from the Secretary of War, dated January 13, 1791, Gov. Blount dispatched Maj. White, of Hawkins County, to make known to the company the tenor of the proclamation, and to inform them that if they went to the Muscle Shoals the Indians would be immediately notified of it and be at liberty to act toward them as they might think proper, without offense to the United States; and to inform them also that if the Indians would permit them to settle, the United States would not.

This communication for a time intimidated the company, but upon considering that in February a force of about 300 men from Kentucky intended to make a settlement near the Yazoo, upon land bought by the Virginia Yazoo Company, at the same time the Tennessee Company purchased their land, they determined to disregard the Federal prohibition and proceed with their enterprise. Zachariah Cox, Col. Hubbard, Peter Bryant and about fifteen others embarked at the mouth of the Dumphlin in a small boat and two canoes for the purpose of taking possession of the Tennessee grant. With such a small party the enterprise of sailing down the river was hazardous in the extreme. Remembering the sad fate of Col.

---

\* Putnam.

Brown three years before, they proceeded down the river with the utmost caution. "Below the Suck a small party of Indians came out in their canoes and hailed them. The same number of white men were sent out to meet them, advancing firmly with their rifles in their hands, but with orders not to fire till the last extremity. Their canoe floated down toward the Indians, who, observing their preparation for attack, withdrew and disappeared. A little further down night overtook the voyagers, and, when, from the dangers of navigation at night, it was proposed to steer to the shore, they saw upon the bank a row of fires, extending along the bottoms as far as they could see, and standing around them armed Indian warriors. They silenced their oars by pouring water upon the oar-pins, spoke not a word, but glided by as quietly as possible. \* \* \* Several times next day the Indians tried by various artifices to decoy them to land. On one occasion three of them insisted, in English, to come and trade with them. After they had refused and passed by, 300 warriors rose out of ambush. \* \* \* For three days and nights they did not land, but doubled on their oars, beating to the south side at night and to the middle of the river by day.\*

Arriving at the Muscle Shoals Cox and his party built a block-house and other works of defense on an island. The Glass with about sixty Indians shortly afterward appeared, and informed the intruders that if they did not peacefully withdraw he would put them to death. Upon considering their defenseless condition as against a much superior force, they abandoned their works, which the Indians immediately reduced to ashes. Returning to Knoxville Cox and his associates were arrested upon a warrant by Judge Campbell to answer for their offense, but the indictments, two of which were sent to the grand jury, were not sustained as true bills. Thus Cox and his twenty young men from Georgia seemed to triumph over the Government, and were thereby encouraged to persevere in their attempt to settle at the Muscle Shoals. They soon found purchasers for many thousands of acres of land and made public declaration of their intention to make another attempt at settlement, and that they would do so with a great force drawn from Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia. The time fixed upon for this grand movement was November, 1791, or as soon thereafter as their numbers could be collected. This movement, however, appears to have failed, and the failure was probably on account of the company's failure to comply with the terms of their purchase of the lands from Georgia.

For two or three years the matter remained in abeyance, but in 1794 the Legislature of Georgia passed another bill for the sale of the lands

---

\*Ramsey.



which was vetoed by the Governor in December of that year. In January, 1795, a bill was passed which received the Governor's signature and became a law. Under this law an aggregate of 35,000,000 acres of land was sold to four companies, very nearly in proportion to the amounts paid by each company. The Georgia Company paid \$250,000, the Georgia-Mississippi Company paid \$155,000, the Upper Mississippi Company paid \$35,000 and the Tennessee Land Company paid \$60,000, the latter company receiving the same amount as under the first purchase in 1789. In August, 1795, a report was circulated that Cox and his associates intended making another attempt at the establishment of a settlement on the lands purchased from Georgia, and Gov. Blount recommended a regular military force to prevent them. In January, 1796, some individuals arrived from Georgia for the purpose of making a passage to the Muscle Shoals with the view of keeping possession there until a settlement could be established by the Tennessee Company. They gave out, however, that they were going to Natchez, and it was some time before the Governor could learn their true designs. On the 18th of February, 1796, he wrote a letter to the chiefs of Cherokees, informing them that about four weeks before that time a boat with many men had left Knoxville, ostensibly for Natchez, but really for the Muscle Shoals with the view of settling on the Great Bend of the Tennessee, and gave assurance to the chiefs that if such were the fact the United States would remove the intruders and that they, the Cherokees, need not be uneasy.

But the settlement under all of these purchases was effectually prevented by the action of the State of Georgia with reference to the sale of the lands, which is in itself a curious and interesting study. The entire populace of that State became intensely excited and most highly inflamed against the Legislature for selling the lands, and in 1796 the act by which the sale was made was repealed by a new Legislature elected for the purpose, by an overwhelming vote, on the ground of unconstitutionality and fraud, and the enrolled bill, passed January 7, 1795, was publicly and solemnly burned February 13, 1796, together with such portions of the records as could be destroyed without destroying other and valuable portions. And it is matter of tradition that the fire was kindled by means of a sun glass, upon the theory that the infamy sought to be cast upon the fair fame of the State could only appropriately be obliterated by fire brought down from heaven.

The following table shows the various land grants or appropriations by the State of North Carolina, within her western territory, now the State of Tennessee:



	Acres.	Acres.
Granted to claimants in the counties of Washington, Sullivan, Greene and Hawkins.....	879,262	
Granted to claimants in the Eastern, Middle and Western districts.....	1,271,280	
	<hr/>	2,150,542
Granted to the settlers on the Cumberland pre-emption.....		309,760
Granted to Maj.-Gen. Nathaniel Greene.....		25,000
Granted to the officers and soldiers in the Continental line.....	1,239,498	
Granted to ditto for which warrants had been granted, but for which grants had not been issued.....	1,594,726	
	<hr/>	2,834,224
Granted to the surveyor of the military lands for his services.....		30,203
Granted to the commissioners, surveyors, officers and guards, for ascertaining the bounds of the military lands.....		65,932
		<hr/>
Total number of acres.....		5,415,661

The above statement was certified by J. Glasgow, secretary of state for North Carolina, July 30, 1791, and by Alexander Martin, governor, August 10, of the same year.

*Settlement of West Tennessee.*—That portion of Tennessee lying west of the Tennessee River was not settled—was not opened for settlement—until long after Tennessee became a flourishing and wealthy State. The lands in this section were owned and occupied by the Chickasaw tribe of Indians as far back as there is any authentic record. Their firm friendship for the whites, particularly the English, was something rather remarkable. They were first met by De Soto in his tour of conquest in 1540, a little above the southern boundary of the State, by whom he was treated with remarkable courtesy until he demanded of them 200 of their number to carry his baggage. He had spent the winter at their village, Chisca, and received many courtesies from them, but on this demand they burned their village and flew to arms. They preferred desolated homes and death to anything like slavery. Whether De Soto and his band marched within the boundaries of this State is questioned. The next white man, possibly the first, was the Jesuit missionary, Marquette, who visited the borders of the State in 1673, but his voyage down the river was one of exploration and discovery rather than settlement. He found the dusky men of the forest armed with the weapons of civilized warfare, which they had doubtless obtained from traders along the Atlantic coast.

In 1736 an attempt was made by Bienville from the south, in concert

with D'Artaguet and Vinsennè from the north, to dispossess the Chickasaws of their lands. The attempt was a disastrous failure, the two forces not acting simultaneously; the former was compelled to beat a hasty retreat, and the latter two were captured and burned at the stake. In 1739 the French again attempted to possess themselves of the territory of the Chickasaws; this time they made an attack upon the Indians at Chickasaw Bluffs (at Memphis), but were defeated with loss. The attempt was renewed at the same place in 1740 by Bienville and De Noailles, who ascended the river in boats. They met with little success but managed to patch up a hollow treaty. A fort was built by them at Chickasaw\* Bluff, called Prud'homme, but the date is unknown. Desultory fighting was kept up between them for the possession of this territory for ten years longer. In nearly all the wars of the United States and while the colonies were under control of the English Government, these Indians sided with and assisted the English. In consequence of which they received very liberal boundaries at the treaty of Hopewell, after the Revolutionary war. Besides lands the Government courted their friendship by large donations of corn and other supplies.

In 1782 (December 11) Gen. Robertson established Chickasaw Bluffs as a depot to which was sent the supplies given to the Indians. The Bluffs thus became a kind of permanent post at which the English and Chickasaws met, from time to time, till the treaty of 1818, when the entire western portion of the State was transferred to the United States.

The Spanish seemed anxious to obtain this territory whether by fair means or foul. The Spanish governor of Natchez, Gayoso by name, appeared at the Chickasaw Bluffs some time between the last of May and the 9th of July, with the intention of building a fort there. He took possession of the bluff on the east side of the river within the territorial limits of the United States. He came up the river with three galleys which anchored on the side opposite the bluffs, until the materials on the west side were prepared for the erection of a block-house. When the material was ready it was quickly transferred across to the east side, and the block-house hastily erected. Complaint was made to Gov. Blount by the Chickasaws that their territorial rights had been invaded. November 9, 1795, Gov. Blount, by direction of the President, sent a letter to Gayoso, by Col. McKee, at Fort St. Ferdinando, near the Chickasaw Bluff. This letter stated that the United States considered the establishment of a Spanish fort at or near Chickasaw Bluff an encroachment not only upon the territorial rights of the United States but also upon the rights of the Chickasaw nation, and that the Government of the United States expected

---

\*Haywood.

him to demolish the fort, block-house or whatever military works he may have erected, and to withdraw his troops from its limits. The Spanish officers at this time from Fort St. Fernando and New Madrid below and to the mouth of the Ohio above allowed no boats to pass without reporting their destination and cargo. This was done to prevent supplies being sent to the Chickasaws. Col. McKee who had been sent to Gayoso did not return till in the spring of 1796, when it was learned that the General Government had made a treaty with Spain that ended all grounds for controversy.

Various treaties were made with the Chickasaws with a view to obtain their territory in the State for settlement. Among these treaties were those of 1806-07 by which they relinquished 355,000 acres for settlement for \$22,000, and a large amount again in 1816, for which they received \$4,500 cash and \$12,000 in ten annual installments. The final treaty by which they relinquished all West Tennessee was signed October 19, 1818, by Isaac Shelby and Andrew Jackson on the part of President James Monroe, and by the chiefs on the part of the Chickasaws. The substance of this treaty is here given. It was to settle all territorial controversies and remove all grounds of complaint or dissatisfaction which might arise to interrupt the peace and harmony so long and so happily existing between the United States and the Chickasaw nation of Indians. It ceded all lands lying north of the southern boundary of the State (except a small tract reserved for a special purpose) described as follows: "Beginning on the Tennessee River about thirty-five miles by water below Col. George Colbert's ferry, where the thirty-fifth degree of north latitude strikes the same; thence due west with said parallel to where it cuts the Mississippi River at or near the Chickasaw Bluffs; thence up said river to the mouth of the Ohio; thence up the Ohio to the mouth of the Tennessee; thence up the Tennessee to the place of beginning."\*

The consideration of this treaty was that the Chickasaws were to receive \$20,000 annually for fifteen years to be paid to the chiefs of the nation; also a private claim of Capt. John Gordon, \$1,115 due him by Gen. William Colbert of the nation; to Capt. David Smith \$2,000, for supplies furnished to himself and forty-five soldiers in assisting the Chickasaws in a war with the Creeks; to Oppassantubbee, principal chief, \$500 for a tract of land two miles square, reserved for him in the treaty of September 20, 1816; to John Lewis \$25, for a saddle lost in the service; to John Colbert \$1,089, stolen from him at a theater in Baltimore; also reservations to Col. George Colbert, May Levi Colbert

---

\*Land Laws.

and John McClish, who had married a white woman. It was further ordered that the boundary line on the south should be marked in bold characters by commissioners agreeable to both the President and the Chickasaws. It was further agreed, in consideration of the faithfulness of the Chickasaws, but particularly as a "manifestation of the friendship and liberality of the President" of the United States, that the commissioners pay certain sums annually to the leading chiefs of the tribe.

To the time of the above treaty little effort at settlement had been made in West Tennessee. The friendly feeling so long existing between the whites and the Chickasaws, and the determination of the Government to maintain that friendship by preventing any encroachment upon their territory, prevented a long series of murders and Indian massacres so common to the settlement of a new country. From this time the settlement became rapid and soon grew to vast proportions, owing to the inviting lands and large population in sections so near. Before any settlements had been made there were roads or traces leading through the territory on which occasionally there was a squatter. One of these roads or traces, known as the "Massac trace," entered West Tennessee nearly south of Somerville and passed a little west of north through Haywood County and in the same direction to Fort Massac, in Illinois. Another was a United States road that entered West Tennessee west from Waverly, and passed through the territory in a southwesterly direction. Along the southern boundary of the State was another road or pathway. On the upper courses of the main stream of the Big Hatchie were two or three rough bridges. These roads were opened about the beginning of the present century. Among the squatters who lived on these roads was John Chambers who dwelt on the road leading south to Natchez. He raised cattle and corn; the latter he sold at a very high price. The first settlers in the northwest part of the State were Stephen Mitchell, eight miles below New Madrid, at Mitchell's Landing on the Mississippi; Enoch Walker, at Walker's Landing, on Reelfoot Lake; Evan Shelby, at Shelby's Landing, also on Reelfoot Lake, and the Bone family, three miles below Shelby's. All these were between 1818 and 1820 and were in Lake County.

Others in the same county and about the same time were Robert and Jefferson Nolen, John and R. J. Rivers, Reuben and Richard Anderson, Michael Peacock, William Box, Henry Walker, Joe Bone, Robert C. Nall, Ezekiel Williams, Thomas Wynn, Robert Thompson, Richard J. Hill, James Crockett, John Campbell, E. W. Nevill, Jesse Gray, Richard Sand, J. W. Bradford, C. H. Bird and B. B. Bird. The first settlers entered Obion County about 1821; among them were John Cloy, Valentine



Westerbrook, Thornton Edwards, James Hollowman, Benjamin Totten, Benjamin and David Hubbard, James Collins, John Tarr, James Bedford, John Clark, O. Roberts, Fletcher Edwards, John White, Benjamin Faris, William Scott, Col. Lysander Adams, Gen. George Gibbs, Hardin Talley, Robert Corwin, John Parkey, William Caldwell, Alfred McDaniel and Benjamin Evans. The celebrated Davy Crockett assisted in laying off the town of Troy in 1825, and later, when on a tour, canvassing for Congress, he was without money, and Col. William M. Wilson came to his relief and paid his hotel bill. A nice family Bible was sent to Col. Wilson from Washington by Crockett, as a reward for his kindness. It is needless to say that this is kept as a highly prized heirloom by the Wilson family. The first white child born in the county was Thomas D. Wilson, son of Col. William M. Wilson. The first settlement in Weakley County was made in 1819. Those settling in the vicinity of Dresden were John Terrill, Perry Vincent, Dr. Jubilee Rogers, Benjamin Bondurant, Richard Porter, T. and A. Gardner and Robert Powell. A few years later than these were Vincent Rust, Claiborne Stone, Thomas Parham and John H. Reams. Vincent Rust raised the first hogshead of tobacco in Weakley County in 1835. This was hauled by Dr. Reams to Hickman, Ky., and sold at 5 cents per pound. Those settling northeast of Dresden were Levi Mizell, Joe Wilson, John Webb, and those a little later were the families of Ridgeway, Buckley, Killebrew and Kilgore. Those on the northeast between the middle fork of Obion and the Kentucky line were John F. Cavitt, who settled there March 20, 1820, also John Stevenson, Isaac and William Killingham, who had preceded Stevenson a short time and had erected a hut; John Rogers moved into the cabin with Cavitt above mentioned until he could erect a cabin for himself. These were soon followed by J. B. Davis, Peter Williams, Marcus Austin, L. F. Abernathy and Benjamin Farmer. The latter was elected constable and was given an execution levying on a cow and calf, to serve on a settler. In his simplicity he ran down the cow and rubbed the execution against her, but was unable to catch the calf; he shook the instrument at it and exclaimed: "you too, calfy." Alexander Paschall was one of the first settlers in the northeast part of the county; he came there in 1824 from Carroll County, N. C. As evidence of the sparsely settled country, Paschall, in building his house, invited all persons living within a circuit of twelve miles, and got only thirty-one hands. Other settlers about the same time were Daniel Laswell, Sr., John and George Harlin and Peter Mooney.

It is said the first preaching in that vicinity was by a colored minister. Everybody was anxious to go to church, but few of the women had

a change of dresses. Mrs. Paschall having seven, loaned six to her less fortunate sisters and thus enabled them to attend the first preaching in that vicinity. On Mud Creek were settled Reuben Edmunson, Dudley Glass, Sr., Levi Clark and Israel Jones. Between Mud Creek and Middle Fork were Owen Parrish, Thomas Etheridge, father of Hon. Emerson Etheridge, A. Clemens, J. W. Rogers and John Jenkins. Between Middle and South Fork were Duke Cantrell, M. H. G. Williams, William Hills, Alfred Bethel, F. A. Kemp and Calloway Hardin. Higher up the river were Robert Mosely, E. D. Dickson, James Hornback, John and G. Bradshaw and Richard Drewery. Southeast on Upper Spring Creek were Thomas Osborne, A. Demming, Isaac Crew, Robert Gilbert, Jonathan Gilbert, James and Alfred Smith, William Hamilton, Francis Liddle, John O'Neal, James Kennedy and Tilghman Johnson. On Thompson's Creek were John Thomas, Daniel Campbell, Samuel Morgan, Elijah Stanley, M. Shaw, William Gay, John H. Moore and Hayden E. Wells. On Lower Cypress were Capt. John Rogers, E. P. Latham, the Carneys, McLeans, Scultzs and Stewarts. On Upper Cypress were the Rosses, Thompsons, Winsteads and Beadles. Davy Crockett settled near the junction of South and Rutherford Forks of Obion, in Weakley County, and was elected to the Legislature the same year on a majority of 247 votes. He was beaten for Congress in 1825 and 1827 by Hon. A. R. Alexander on a majority of only two votes each time. He was elected in 1829 by 3,585 votes. He was beaten by William Fitzgerald in 1831, and he in turn beat Fitzgerald in 1833 by a good majority. Crockett was himself beaten in 1835 by Adam Huntzman, a wooden-legged lawyer. Crockett was in Congress the author of the "occupant's bill," a measure to give each settler 200 acres of land. Henry Stunson, who was born in 1821, was the first white child born in Weakley County. The first cabin built by a white man was erected in 1819 by John Bradshaw.

The settlement in the northeastern part of the western section of the State began in 1819; the first settlers were from Stewart County; they were Joel Ragler, John Studdart and James Williams. They came in wagons, having made their way through the forest and settled near Manleyville. When they arrived at Big Sandy it was so high they could not cross. After waiting two weeks they were compelled to make a canoe and a raft. When these were completed some of the party hesitated to enter. As evidence of the bold spirit of those pioneer women, "Granny" Studdart, on seeing the hesitation of the party, said, "I—I'll get in." She did so, and soon all were landed safely on the other shore. Other settlers near Paris were James Leiper, Gen. Richard Porter, John Brown, J. L. Allen and Dr. T. K. Allen. A horse-mill was erected by John



*FROM PHOTO BY THUSS KOELLEIN & DIERS, NASHVILLE*

DAVID CROCKETT





Carter, near Springville, in 1820, and a water-mill in the northwest part of this county in the same year by Thomas James.

Settlements began in Dyer County in 1823. William Nash settled between the forks of Forked Deer River; John Rutledge at Key Corner, and the Dugan family on Obion Lake. The first house built in Dyersburg was erected by Elias Dement, and had only a dirt floor. Among other settlers in this section were John Rutherford, Benjamin Porter, John Bowers, William Bowers and William Martin. Nathaniel Benton, another settler, was a brother of Thomas H. Benton, who moved to Dyer County about 1818. The section away from the large rivers—the Tennessee and Mississippi—was not settled quite so early as those along the rivers. In what is now Gibson County the first settlement began about 1819. Those who settled in that year were Thomas Fite, John Spencer and J. F. Randolph. This settlement was made about eight miles east of Trenton. Other settlers followed in rapid succession; among them were Luke and Reuben Biggs, William Holmes, John B. Hogg, David P. Hamilton, Col. Thomas Gibson, John Ford and W. C. Love. That part of West Tennessee now embraced in Carroll County was settled by Thomas Hamilton on Cedar Creek, near McKenzie; John Woods on Rutherford Fork of Obion; Samuel McKee, Spencer and Nathaniel Edwards on the Big Sandy; and E. C. Daugherty where McLemoresville now stands; and John Blunt, who built a mill on a branch of the Big Sandy in 1821–22. Settlements in Benton County began in 1819–20, the first settler being William and D. Rushing, on Rushing Creek, six miles north of Camden; the next was by Nicholas and Lewis Browers in 1820, on Randall Creek, twelve miles from Camden; Thomas and William Minnis, on Bird Song Creek, in 1820. Lauderdale County was first settled by Benjamin Porter, in April, 1820. He moved from Reynolds-ville by way of the Tennessee, the Ohio; thence down the Mississippi to the mouth of the Forked Deer; thence up said river to Key Corner, near which place he settled and remained till his death. The first flat-boat on Forked Deer River brought the family, household goods and stock of Henry Benjamin to Lauderdale County in 1820. One of the first cotton gins in West Tennessee is said to have been built at Key Corner in 1827, by John Jordan and William Chambers. Capt. Shockey ran the first steam-boat, the “Grey Eagle,” up Forked Deer River in 1836. Capt. Thomas Durham, of North Carolina, settled at what is now Durhamville, in 1826. A man named Vincent settled at Fulton, near the Chickasaw Bluffs, on the Mississippi, in 1819, and John A. Givens, from South Carolina, one and one-half miles east of the bluff in 1820. Other settlers in Lauderdale were Henry and John Rutherford, sons of Gen.

Griffith Rutherford, of North Carolina. James Sherman, who resided in Lauderdale for a great many years, was once on a jury which was trying a man for his life. They were unable to agree, and stood six for conviction and six for clearing the man. The judge refused to release the jury without a verdict. It was finally agreed to leave the matter to a game of "seven-up." A deck was sent for and the champions were chosen. The game was hotly contested, but by the fortunate turn of a card the game was decided in favor of the defendant. This story, though seemingly incredible, is vouched for on excellent authority, and shows the crude idea of administering justice in that day.

The first settlers in Tipton County were from Middle Tennessee and the older States. Among these were H. Terrell, E. T. Pope, R. W. Sanford, Gen. Jacob Tipton, Maj. Lauderdale, Capt. Scurry, Dr. Hold, the Durhams, Mitchells, Davises, Pryors, Hills, Parrishes and Garlands. In the White and Archer neighborhood were C. C. Archer, George Sharkley, William McGuire and the Whites. In and near Randolph were K. H. Douglass, George W. Frazier, Thomas Robinson, Jesse Benton, M. Phillips, R. H. Munford, A. N. McAllister, W. P. Mills, Anderson Hunt, the Simpsons and Clements. On Big Creek were Dr. R. H. Rose, Henry Turnage, Capt Jones, Capt. Newman, Alfred Hill and Maj. Legrand. The vicinity of Indian Creek was settled by the Smiths, Owens, Kellers, Kinneys and Walks. "Old Uncle Tommy" Ralp built a horse-mill one mile from Covington, this being perhaps the first in the county.

The portion of West Tennessee known as Crockett County, was settled about 1823. Among the first in this section were John B. Boykin, B. B. Epperson, Alexander Avery, David Nann, Isaac Koonse, Thomas Thwatt, James Friar Randolph, Anthony Swift, John McFarland, John Yancey, Zepheniah Porter, Solomon Rice, Giles Hawkins, Joseph Clay, John Bowers, E. Williams, Cornelius Bunch and Robert Johnson. J. F. Randolph, above mentioned, moved with his father from Alabama, and settled at McMinnville, Warren County; thence to West Tennessee. I. M. Johnson was a native of Rutherford County, and settled in what was then Haywood, now Crockett, in 1823.

Into Haywood County the whites began to enter about 1820. The first permanent settler is believed to have been Col. Richard Nixon, in 1821, who was born October 26, 1769, and whose father was a Revolutionary soldier. For his services in that war he was rewarded by a grant of 3,600 acres of land. The grant fell in Haywood County, and on a portion of this Col. Nixon settled. His place of settlement was on Nixon Creek, about four miles from Brownsville. Lawrence McGuire, David Hay, Sr., B. H. Sanders, David Jefferson, N.

T. Perkins, David Cherry and Joel Estes, were among those who found homes on the north side of the river. Those settling down amidst the virgin forest on the south side of the river were Oliver Wood, B. G. Alexander, Samuel P. Ashe and Rev. Thomas P. Neely. The latter of these came between 1826 and 1828. It was at the house of Col. Nixon that the first courts were established in 1824. As rivers were about the only means of egress at that time nearly all settlements were made along the river courses.

After the final treaty with the Chickasaws, by which they gave up West Tennessee, the inhabitants from East and Middle Tennessee, North and South Carolina and Virginia began to pour rapidly into those unoccupied lands. The first in the vicinity of Jackson were Adam R. Alexander, William Doak and Lewis Jones. In the Wilson neighborhood were Theophilus and David Launder, and Mr. Lacy. In 1820 John Hargrave and Duncan McIver settled in the vicinity of "Old Cotton Grove," and a little later John Bradley; about the same time J. Waddell settled on Spring Creek. The city of Jackson was built on lands owned by B. G. Stewart, Joseph Lynn and James Trousdale. Dr. William Butler planted cotton in 1821, in this county; also erected a gin the same year, which was brought all the way from Davidson County. Bernard Mitchell brought a keel-boat loaded with goods, groceries and whisky, up Forked Deer, and landed within one mile and a half of Jackson; this was the first to vex the waters of that stream.

Pioneers came into Henderson County in 1821; a few came earlier. Joseph Reel was beyond doubt the first permanent white settler in the county. He came to the place in 1818, and settled on Beech River, about five miles east of the present site of Lexington. His sons John and William remained on the same land during their lifetime. Abner Taylor settled near the site of Lexington; Maj. John Harmon near the head waters of the Big Sandy; Jacob Bartholomew and William Hay at the head of Beech River; William Cain and George Powers near the site of Pleasant Exchange; William Doffy at the head waters of the south branch of Forked Deer River; William Dismukes on the north fork of Forked Deer, and Joseph Reed near Pine Knob. This county developed rapidly. A mill was built on Mud Creek, in 1821, by John and William Brigham, and one on Forked Deer about the same time by Daniel Barecroft. A horse-mill was built on the road from Lexington to Trenton about the same time; also a cotton-gin by Maj. John Harmon, on Beech Creek, in 1823. The first legal hanging in the vicinity was the execution of a slave woman of Dr. John A. Wilson's for the willful drowning of his daughter. Willis Dæden, who moved into this county from North Car-



olina, was a man remarkable for size; his weight was never known, but was estimated at 800 pounds.

Samuel Wilson owned the land on which the city of Lexington now stands; this was set apart for the city in 1822. The land office was established at the house of Samuel Wilson in the same year.

The rich and attractive lands on the Tennessee in the southeastern portion of this county was first to attract immigrants. Almost as soon as the Indian title was extinguished, 1818, immigrants began to pour into this section of the newly acquired territory. That portion of the country known as Hardin County was laid off in 1820 and named in honor of Capt. John Hardin, of Revolutionary fame. James Hardin settled at the mouth of Horse Creek, a tributary entering the Tennessee not far from Savannah, in 1818 or 1819, and a horse-mill was erected on the same stream by Charles B. Nelson in 1819. It was doubtless from this source that the stream got its name. T. C. Johnson, Lewis Faulkner, Samuel Faulkner and Daniel Robinson settled on Turkey Creek about 1820. Hiram Boon settled on a small stream that was afterward called Boon's Creek. James White gave a name to a small creek, a tributary of Horse Creek. Thomas White became a resident on Flat Gap Creek in 1819. Samuel Parmley, Thomas Cherry and Samuel Bruton became residents of this section at a little later period, all of whom were on the east side of the river. On the west side of the river, opposite the mouth of Horse Creek, Simpson Lee, Nathaniel Way and James McMahan took claims in 1818 or 1819. The pioneers were compelled, before the erection of mills, to depend upon the mortar or hand-mill for meal. This being rather a slow process water or horse-mills were encouraged and liberally patronized. A water-mill was built by Jesse Lacewell, on Smith's Fork of Indian Creek, in 1819, and another about the same time and near the same place by John Williams. Few regular ferries were to be found at that time. The Indian with his light or birch-bark canoe was enabled to cross the stream at almost any time as he could carry his boat with him. It was not till after his white brother got possession of the country that regular ferries were established. Among the first of these was one at Rudd's Bluff, just above where Savannah now stands. This was in 1818. Lewis H. Broyles opened a store in this section in 1819-20. His goods were loaded on a flat-boat in East Tennessee and floated down the Tennessee to the place of landing. The first marriage ceremony in this county was performed by Rev. James English in 1818, the contracting parties being A. B. Gantt and Miss M. Boon. All the necessary wants of a civilized and progressive people were soon supplied to these people, as a school was being taught near Hardinsville in 1820.



by Nathaniel Casey; a church of the Primitive Baptists was built on Turkey Creek in 1819-20, with Rev. Charles Riddle as pastor; a cotton-gin was built by James Boyd on Horse Creek in 1822. Courts were established in January, 1820, at the house of Col. James Hardin, near the mouth of Horse Creek. A small log court house was soon after erected, having a dirt floor and dimensions 16x20 feet. A large hollow tree sufficed for an improvised jail.

Immediately west of Hardeman County lies McNairy; this county being away from any of the larger streams immigrants did not reach it quite so early as some of the counties whose location was geographically more favorable. Among the pioneers of this county were Abel Oxford, who settled on Oxford Creek below the mouth of Cypress; also Quincy Hodge and William S. Wisdom with their families settled in the southwest part of the county. Others were John Shull, Peter Shull, John Pluak, John Woodburn and Francis Kirby, whose son, Hugh Kirby, was the first white child born, 1821, in the county. James Reed and Allen Sweat came from North Carolina and settled in McNairy about 1824. John Chambers and N. Griffith established the first business house in the county. A water-mill was built on Cypress Creek in 1824, by Boyd & Barnesett.

Lying in the upper valley of the Big Hatchie is Hardeman County. Settlements began in this portion of West Tennessee in 1819-20. Among the first and for whom the county was named was Col. Thomas J. Hardeman, also Col. Ezekiel Polk, his son William Polk and son-in-law Thomas McNeal. Before permanent settlements began a number of transient persons had squatted in different parts of the county. Among them was Joseph Fowler, who settled at Fowler's Ferry, about sixteen miles south of Bolivar. The next permanent settlement was made by William Shinault in the southwest part of the county, not far from Hickory Valley. Jacob Purtle raised a crop of corn near "Hatchie Town," in the neighborhood of Thomas McNeal's in 1821. William Polk made a crop the same year, five miles north of Bolivar. On the organization of the county court, in 1823, he was made chairman. A mill was built by Samuel Polk on Pleasant Run Creek, one and one-half miles east of the present site of Bolivar, about 1823; a second one was built on Mill Creek about six miles south of Bolivar, in the same year, for Col. John Murray by John Golden. A school was taught in the Shinault neighborhood in 1823-24 by Edwin Crawford. Maj. John H. Bills and Prudence McNeal were the first couple united in marriage in that vicinity by the laws of civilization. The steam-boat "Roer," commanded by Capt. Newman, was the first to stem the waters of Hatchie as far up as Bolivar.

Fayette County began to be settled about 1822-23. Among the first was Thomas J. Cocke, who came from North Carolina and settled in the northwest part of the county in 1823. R. G. Thornton and Joel Langham followed soon after. Where Somerville now stands the lands were entered by George Bowers and James Brown some time before 1825. Bears and wolves and other beasts of the forest were then holding almost undisputed sway throughout the territory. Joseph Simpson claimed to have killed a bear, near where the court house of the county now stands, in 1824. The county seat, Somerville, was named in honor of Lieut. Robert Somerville, who was killed at Horseshoe Bend in battle with the Indians. Other settlers were David Jornegan, Thomas Cook, Daniel Head (a gunsmith), Horace Loomis, Dr. Smith, Henry Kirk, Henry M. Johnson, William Owen, L. G. Evans, William Ramsey, Daniel Cliff and John T. Patterson, with their families.

The oldest and most wealthy division in West Tennessee is Shelby County. Could the rocks and rills speak, or "the books in running brooks" and "the tongues in trees" tell their story of the past, volumes of untold interest would be revealed to us which must forever remain hidden. It is problematical whether the adventurous Spaniard, DeSoto, in the year 1540, was the first white man to tread the soil of this portion of Tennessee or whether it was left to the French Father Marquette or Bienville; yet this much is certain, it is historic ground, around which cluster many events having great weight in the march of civilization. Known as it was for more than 200 years with its inviting prospects, it seems strange that the polished hand of civilization should have been held back so long. The Chickasaw Bluffs were long a place of getting or receiving supplies between the whites and Indians; it did not become a place of permanent abode for the whites till about 1818-19. Among the first settlers in Shelby County were Joel Kagler and James Williams. Shelby was admitted into the sisterhood of counties on November 24, 1819, although the first court was not held until May 1, 1824. This was opened at Chickasaw Bluffs on the above date. As few if any roads were open for travel through the county, the first was opened from Memphis to the Taylor Mill settlement on Forked Deer River. Persons connected with road officially were Thomas H. Persons, John Fletcher, John C. McLemore, Marcus B. Winchester, Charles Holeman and William Erwin. William Irvine was the legalized ferryman at Memphis in 1820. The following were the rates charged: Each man and horse, \$1; each loose horse, 50 cents; each hog or sheep, 25 cents; each four-wheeled carriage drawn by four horses, the wagon being empty, \$3; the same, loaded, \$5; each four-wheeled vehicle and two horses, \$1.50; the

same, loaded, \$2.50. The first ordinaries or houses of entertainment were kept in the city of Memphis in 1820 by Joseph James and Patrick Meagher. These houses were regulated by law as to charges, board being \$2.50 to \$3.50 per week or \$1 per day. A horse was kept at \$2.50 a week or 50 cents per day. The court was somewhat itinerant in its nature at first, having been changed to Raleigh in 1827, and then to Collierville in 1837. Peggy Grace is said to have purchased the first lot after the city of Memphis was laid out. Among the earliest settlers in the county were W. A. Thorp, who owned a grant near the old State line—a little north of it—and Peter Adams, who settled near the same place, a little south of the old line. On Big Creek, in 1820, were settled Jesse Benton, Charles McDaniel, D. C. Treadwell, Samuel Smith and Joel Crenshaw. In the vicinity of Raleigh were Dr. Benjamin Hawkins, William P. Reaves, Thomas Taylor and William Sanders. The first American white child born in Shelby County was John W. Williams, in 1822. The steam-boat, "Ætna" was the first to make regular trips to the wharf at Memphis early in the decade of the twenties. A brief retrospect shows that in a few years after the Indian title was extinguished in West Tennessee, the whole country was changed as if by magic into an abode of civilization, wealth and refinement. In less than a decade every part of it was organized into counties, having their courts, churches, schools and accumulating wealth.

## CHAPTER VI.

ORGANIZATION—THE EUROPEAN CHARTERS—PROPRIETARY GRANTS—THE BOUNDARY CONTROVERSIES—CAUSES OF DISPUTE—FAILURE OF ATTEMPTED SETTLEMENT OF THE QUESTION—FINAL ESTABLISHMENT—NEW CAUSES FOR DISPUTE—EXTENSION OF THE NORTHERN LINE—THE WALKER AND THE HENDERSON SURVEYS—THE RESULTING CONFUSION—OPINION OF GOV. BLOUNT—THE DEMANDS OF KENTUCKY—NEGOTIATIONS—ILLOGICAL POSITION OF TENNESSEE—THE COMPROMISE OF 1820—THE READJUSTMENT OF 1860—THE SOUTHERN BOUNDARY ESTABLISHED IN 1818 AND IN 1821—THE WATAUGA ASSOCIATION—OFFICERS AND LAWS—THE GOVERNMENT OF THE NOTABLES—THE “COMPACT” OR “AGREEMENT”—LAWS—THE STATE OF FRANKLIN—CAUSES WHICH LED TO ITS FORMATION—FORM OF GOVERNMENT—THE FIRST LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY—INTERFERENCE OF NORTH CAROLINA—RESISTANCE OF GOV. SEVIER—RATIFICATION OF THE CONSTITUTION—CONFLICT OF AUTHORITY—SEVERE MEASURES—FALL OF THE STATE OF FRANKLIN.

THE first charter granted by an English sovereign to an English subject to lands in North America, was by Queen Elizabeth to Sir Humphrey Gilbert, to any lands he might discover in North America. Its date was about June 11, 1578, and it was to be of perpetual efficacy provided the plantation should be established within six years. After several failures Sir Humphrey made a determined effort in 1583 to plant a colony on the island of Newfoundland, which resulted fatally to himself, his little bark of ten tons going down in a storm with himself and all on board.

The second grant was by Queen Elizabeth to Sir Walter Raleigh, and was dated March 26, 1584. It was similar in its provisions, to that granted to Sir Humphrey Gilbert, and as Sir Walter's patent included what is now Tennessee, those provisions may be briefly stated in this connection. They are worthy of particular attention, as they unfold the ideas of that age respecting the rights of “Christian rulers,” to countries inhabited by savage nations, or those who had not yet been brought under the benign influences of the gospel.

Elizabeth authorized Sir Walter to discover, and take possession of all barbarous lands unoccupied by any Christian prince or people, and vested in him, his heirs and assigns forever, the right of property in the soil of those countries of which he should take possession. Permission was given such of the Queen's subjects as were willing to accompany Sir Walter to go and settle in the countries which he might plant, and he was empowered, as were also his heirs and assigns, to dispose of what-



ever portion of those lands he or they should judge fit to persons settling there in fee simple according to the laws of England; she conferred upon him, his heirs and assigns, the complete jurisdiction and royalties, as well marine as other within the said lands and seas thereunto adjoining, and gave him full power to convict, punish, pardon, govern and rule in causes capital and criminal, as well as civil, all persons who should from time to time settle in these countries, according to such laws and ordinances, as should by him, or by his heirs and assigns, be devised and established.

Raleigh, one of the most enterprising, accomplished and versatile men of his time was eager to undertake and execute the scheme of settling his grant, and, in pursuit of this design, despatched two small vessels under command of Amadas and Barlow, two officers of trust, to visit the country which he intended to settle. In order to avoid the serious error made by Sir Humphrey Gilbert, in coasting too far north, Raleigh's captains selected the course by the Canary and West India Islands, and arrived on the American coast July 4, 1584, landing on the island of Wocoken. Raleigh's grant was named by the Queen "Virginia," in commemoration of her state of life. But notwithstanding the precautions of the captains, and the smiles of the virgin queen upon the various attempts made to settle this grant, these attempts all terminated no less disastrously than had Sir Gilbert's, and at the end of Queen Elizabeth's reign, in 1603, not a solitary Englishman had effected a permanent settlement on North American soil.

In 1607, however, a more successful effort was made to form a permanent English colony on this continent at Jamestown, in Virginia. In 1609 a second charter was granted to this colony, investing the company with the election of a council, and the exercise of legislative power independent of the crown. In 1612 a third patent conferred upon the company a more democratic form of government, and in 1619 the colonists were themselves allowed a share in legislation. In 1621 a written constitution was brought out by Sir Francis Wyatt, under which constitution each colonist became a freeman and a citizen. The colony prospered, and extended its southern boundaries to Albemarle Sound, upon which the first permanent settlers of North Carolina pitched their tents, having been attracted in this direction by reports of an adventurer from Virginia, who, upon returning from an expedition of some kind, spoke in the most glowing terms of the kindness of the people, of the excellence of the soil and of the salubrity of the climate.

Representations of this kind reaching England had the effect of stimulating into activity the ambition and cupidity of certain English

courtiers, and on March 24, 1663, Charles II made a grant to Edward, Earl of Clarendon, "hated by the people, faithful to the king;" Monk, "conspicuous in the Restoration, now the Duke of Albemarle;" Lord Craven, "brave cavalier, supposed to be the husband of the Queen of Bohemia;" Lord Ashley Cooper, afterward Earl of Shaftesbury; Sir John Colleton; Lord John Berkeley and his younger brother, Sir William Berkeley, and Sir George Carteret, "passionate, ignorant and not too honest," the grant including the country between the thirty-first and thirty-sixth parallels of latitude, and extending from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean.

Notwithstanding the extent of this grant the proprietaries above named, in June, 1665, secured by another patent its enlargement and an enlargement of their powers. This second charter granted by King Charles II was in part as follows:

CHARLES THE SECOND, BY THE GRACE OF GOD, OF GREAT BRITAIN, FRANCE AND IRELAND, KING, DEFENDER OF THE FAITH, ETC.

WHEREAS, By our letters patent, bearing date the 24th of March, in the fifteenth year of our reign, we were graciously pleased to grant unto our right trusty and right well beloved cousin and counsellor, Edward, Earl of Clarendon, our high chancellor of England [here follow the names of the other grantees as given above] all that province, territory or tract of ground called Carolina, situate, lying and being within our dominions of America, extending from the north end of the island called Luke Island, which lieth in the southern Virginia seas, and within thirty-six degrees of north latitude, and to the west as far as the South seas, and so south respectively as far as the river Matthias, which bordereth upon the coast of Florida and within thirty-one degrees of northern latitude, and so west in a direct line as far as the South seas aforesaid.

Know ye, that at the humble request of the said grantees, we are graciously pleased to enlarge our said grant unto them according to the bounds and limits hereafter specified, and in favor of the pious and noble purpose\* of the said Edward, Earl of Clarendon [the names of the other proprietaries here follow], their heirs and assigns, all that province, territory or tract of land, situate, lying and being within our dominions of America as aforesaid, extending north and eastward as far as the north end of Currituck River or Inlet, upon a straight line westerly to Wyonoak Creek, which lies within or about the degree of thirty-six and thirty minutes, north latitude, and so west in a direct line as far as the South seas, and south and westward as far as the degree of twenty-nine, inclusive, of northern latitude, and so west in a direct line as far as the South seas, together with all and singular the ports, harbors, bays, rivers and inlets belonging unto the province and territory aforesaid.

This grant was made June 30, 1665, and embraced the territory now included in the following States: North and South Carolina, Georgia, Tennessee, Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana and Arkansas, and parts of Florida, Missouri, Texas, New Mexico and California. The line of thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes extending from the top of the Alleghany Mountains to the eastern bank of the Tennessee River, separates Virginia and Kentucky from Tennessee. The powers granted to the lords, proprietors of this immense province, were those of dictating constitutions

---

\*This pious and noble purpose was none other than the increase of their own worth and dignity.

and laws for the people by and with the advice and assent of the freemen thereof, or the greater part of them, or of their delegates or deputies, who were to be assembled from time to time for that purpose.

This munificent grant was surrendered to the King July 25, 1729, by seven of the eight proprietors under authority of an act of parliament (2nd George, 2nd ch., 34), each of the seven receiving £2,500, besides a small sum for quit rents. The eighth proprietor, Lord Carteret, afterward Earl Granville, on the 17th of September, 1744, relinquished his claim to the right of government, but by a commission appointed, jointly by the King and himself, was given his eighth of the soil granted by the charter, bounded as follows: "North by the Virginia line, east by the Atlantic, south by latitude thirty-five degrees thirty-four minutes north, and west as far as the bounds of the charter." Prior to this the government of Carolina had been proprietary; but now (after 1729) it became regal, and the province was divided into two governments, North and South Carolina, in 1732. The Georgia Charter, issued in 1732, comprised much of the Carolina grant, but after 1752 the proprietors gave up the government, which also then became regal. Tennessee from this time until the treaty of Paris, in 1782, continued the property of the British Government, when all right to it was relinquished to North Carolina.

It may be interesting to the general reader to learn that the descendant of Lord Carteret, who had become the Earl of Granville before the Revolutionary war, brought suit a short time before the war of 1812 in the Circuit Court of the United States for the district of North Carolina, for the recovery of his possessions. The case, as we learn from the Hon. W. H. Battle, formerly one of the judges of the Supreme Court of North Carolina, was tried before C. J. Marshall, and Judge Potter, who was then the district judge, and resulted in a verdict and judgment against the plaintiff, whereupon he appealed to the Supreme Court of the United States. Before the case could be heard in that court the war of 1812 came on, which put a stop to it and it was never revived.

William Gaston (afterward Judge Gaston), then a young man, appeared in the suit for the plaintiff, and Messrs. Cameron (afterward Judge Cameron), Baker (afterward Judge Baker) and Woods appeared for the defendants. The question was whether Lord Granville's rights, which had been confiscated by the State of North Carolina during the Revolutionary war, had been restored by the treaty of peace between the United States and Great Britain. The case was never reported. Thus passed away the last vestige of the most munificent gift of which history makes mention.\*

---

\*Killebrew's Resources of Tennessee.



The twenty-fifth section of the Declaration of Rights of North Carolina at the time of the adoption of her constitution in December, 1776, so far as it relates to the boundary of that State, is as follows:

The property of the soil in a free government being one of the essential rights of the collective body of the people, it is necessary in order to avoid future disputes, that the limits of the State should be ascertained with precision; and as the former temporary line between North and South Carolina was confirmed and extended by commissioners appointed by the Legislatures of the two States agreeable to the order of the late King George the Second in Council, that line and that only should be esteemed the southern boundary of this State as follows, that is to say: Beginning on the sea-side at a cedar stake at or near the mouth of Little River, being the southern extremity of Brunswick County; and runs thence a northwest course through the Boundary House which stands in thirty-three degrees and fifty-six minutes to thirty-five degrees north latitude; and from thence a west course so far as is mentioned in the charter of King Charles the Second to the late proprietors of Carolina: Therefore all the territories, seas, waters and harbors with their appurtenances, lying between the line above described and the southern line of the State of Virginia, which begins on the sea shore in thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes north latitude; and from thence runs west agreeable to the said charter of King Charles I., the right and property of the people of this State to be held by them in sovereignty, any partial line without the consent of the Legislature of this State at any time thereafter directed or laid out in any wise notwithstanding.

A number of provisos was included in the section, the last being that "nothing herein contained shall affect the title or possessions of individuals holding or claiming under the laws heretofore in force, or grants heretofore made by the late King George the Third, or his predecessors, or the late lord proprietors or any of them."

The history of the establishment of the line—thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes—as the northern boundary of North Carolina, is as follows: James I, King of England, on May 23, 1609, made a grant to Robert, Earl of Salisbury; Thomas, Earl of Suffolk, and numerous other persons, "of all those countries lying in that part of America called Virginia, from the point of land called Cape or Point Comfort, all along the sea-coast to the northward 200 miles, and from the same Point Comfort all along the sea-coast to the southward 200 miles, and all that space or circuit of land throughout from sea to sea." The above was the enlarged grant to the London Company, and extended along the Atlantic coast from Sandy Hook to Cape Fear, and from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean. In 1620 the grant to the Plymouth Company made the fortieth parallel their southern limit, and established that parallel as the northern boundary of Virginia. On March 24, 1662, Charles II made his first grant to the proprietors of Carolina as recited above, and on June 30, 1665, Charles II enlarged this grant, as also recited above, and named a line destined to become only less famous in the history of the United States than Mason and Dixon's line, viz.: the line of thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes north latitude. The language of this second charter



of Charles II, so far as it pertains to this famous line, is as follows: "All the province, etc., in America, extending north and eastward as far as the north end of Currituck River or inlet, upon a straight westerly line to Wyonoak Creek, which lies within or about thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes northern latitude, and so west on a direct line as far as the South Seas." North Carolina was called "Our County of Albemarle," in Carolina until about 1700, when it began to be called the Colony of North Carolina. The boundary line between North Carolina and Virginia soon began to be the source of considerable altercation between the two colonies, for the reason that the grant of Charles I overlapped the grant of his grandfather, James I. That this altercation was not followed by strife and bloodshed was due in part to the necessity of mutual aid and defense during the protracted struggle preceding and during the Revolution. But notwithstanding the forbearance thus caused and manifested it was necessary to locate this unlocated boundary line, for Virginians were continually claiming lands south of the proper line, under what they supposed to be titles from the Crown, and North Carolinians were as continually entering lands to the north of the proper limits under warrants from the lord proprietors of Carolina.

The London Company had been dissolved by James I, and when this dissolution occurred Virginia became a royal province; hence the settlement of the boundary line between Virginia and Carolina devolved upon the Crown and the lord proprietors. Early in 1710 commissioners representing the Crown of England, met similar commissioners representing the lord proprietors, having for their object the settlement of this vexed question. But upon attempting to fix upon a starting point, they failed to agree by a difference of about fifteen miles; hence they separated without having accomplished anything. Against the Carolina commissioners serious charges were made. On the 1st of March, 1710, an order of council was issued, from which the following is extracted: "The commissioners of Carolina are both persons engaged in interest to obstruct the settling of the boundaries; for one of them has been for several years surveyor general of Carolina, and has acquired great profit to himself by surveying lands within the controverted bounds, and has taken up several tracts of land in his own name. The other of them is at this time surveyor general, and hath the same prospect of advantage by making future surveys within the same bounds." The conclusion of the order is as follows: "Her Majesty, in Council, is pleased to order as it is hereby ordered, the Right Honorable, the Lord Commissioners for Trade and Plantations, do signify her Majesty's pleasure herein to her Majesty's Governor or Commander-in-chief of Virginia for the time

being, and to all persons to whom it may belong, as is proposed by their Lordships in said representation, and the Right Honorable, the Lord Proprietors of Carolina are to do what on their part does appertain."

In January, 1711, commissioners appointed by both the governors of North Carolina and Virginia again attempted to settle the question, but failed to complete their task for want of money. Great inconvenience to the settlers was the result of this protracted controversy, and a remedy was sought in an act, the preamble of which was as follows:

WHEREAS, great suit, debate and controversy hath heretofore been, and may hereafter arise by means of ancient titles to lands derived from grants and patents by the governor of Virginia, the condition of which patents has not been performed, nor quit-rents paid, or the lands have been deserted by the first patentees or from or by reason of former entries or patents or grants in this government, etc., and for the prevention of the recurrence of such troubles, and for quieting men's estates an act was passed.

In obedience to the above quoted order of the Queen an agreement was entered into between the two governors, Charles Eden and Alexander Spotswood, which was transmitted to England for the approbation of the King. This agreement was approved by the King in council, and also by the lord proprietors and returned to the governors to be executed. The agreement or "convention," as Haywood calls it, was as follows: "That from the mouth of Currituck River, or Inlet, setting the compass on the north shore thereof, a due west line shall be run and fairly marked, and if it happen to cut Chowan River between the mouth of Nottaway River and Wiccacon Creek, then the same direct course shall be continued toward the mountains, and be ever deemed the dividing line between Virginia and North Carolina. But if the said west line cuts Chowan River to the southward of Wiccacon Creek, then from that point of intersection the bounds shall be allowed to continue up the middle of the Chowan River to the middle of the entrance into said Wiccacon Creek, and from thence a due west line shall divide the two governments. That if said west line cuts Blackwater River to the northward of Nottaway River, then from the point of intersection the bounds shall be allowed to be continued down the middle of said Blackwater River to the middle of the entrance into said Nottaway River, and from thence a due west line shall divide the two governments, etc."

Commissioners were appointed to carry this agreement or convention into effect, in accordance with following order: "At the court of St. James, the 28th day of March, 1727. Present the King's Most Excellent Majesty in Council. \* \* His Majesty is hereupon pleased with the advice of his Privy Council to approve the said Proposals, \* \* and to order, as it is hereby ordered, that the Governor or Commander-in-chief of our Colony in Virginia do settle the said bound-

aries in conjunction with the Governor of North Carolina, agreeable to said Proposals." The royal commission, so far as it regards Virginia, was in part as follows: "George II, by the Grace of God of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, to our well-beloved William Byrd, Richard Fitz William and William Dandridge, Esqrs., members of our Council of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia, Greeting." This commission was dated December 14, 1727. The Carolina commission was dated February 21, 1728, and as that colony was under the government of the lord proprietors, the commission runs in their name: "Sir Richard Everard, Baronet, Governor, Captain, General and Commander-in-chief of the said Province: To Christopher Gale, Esqr., Chief Justice; John Lovick, Esqr., Secretary; Edward Mosely, Esqr., Surveyor General, and William Little, Esqr., Attorney General, Greeting: \* \* I, therefore, reposing especial confidence in you \* \* to be Commissioners on the part of the true and absolute Lord Proprietors."

The commissioners thus appointed met at Currituck Inlet March 6, 1728, and after some disputes placed a cedar post on the north shore of Currituck Inlet, as their starting point. This point was found to be in north latitude thirty-six degrees and thirty-one minutes, and at that point the variation of the compass was found to be very nearly three degrees, one minute and two seconds west. Allowing for this variation they ran, as they supposed, a due west line, passing through the Dismal Swamp, and acquired, as Col. Byrd expresses it, "immortal reputation by being the first of mankind that ever ventured through the Dismal Swamp." Upon arriving at Buzzard Creek about 169 miles westward from the Atlantic coast, the Carolina commissioners abandoned the work, October 5, 1728. Mr. FitzWilliam also abandoned the work at the same time. Col. Byrd and Mr. Dandridge continued the line to a point on Peter's Creek, a tributary of Dan River, near the Saura Towns, 241 miles and 30 poles from the coast, and there marked the termination of their work on a red oak tree, October 26, 1728. Col. Byrd wrote a delightful work entitled: "The History of the Dividing Line," in which he records his disappointment at finding that the people along the border were desirous of falling on the Carolina side of the line, and though disgusted and indignant, as well as disappointed, at this preference of the people, yet true to the generosity of his nature, he favored their wishes as far as his instructions would permit, and located the line about one mile north of thirty-six degrees and thirty-one minutes. In his history he says: "We constantly found the borderers laid it to heart, if their land was taken into Virginia. They chose much rather to belong to Carolina,



where they pay no tribute to God or Cæsar." Col. Byrd closes his narrative in the following language: "Nor can we by any means reproach ourselves of having put the Crown to any exorbitant expense in this difficult affair, the whole charge from beginning to end amounting to no more than £1,000. But let no one concerned in this painful Expedition complain of the scantiness of his pay, so long as his Majesty has been graciously pleased to add to our reward the Honour of his Royal approbation, and to declare, notwithstanding the Desertion of the Carolina Commissioners, that the line by us run shall hereafter stand as the true Boundary betwixt the Governments of Virginia and North Carolina."

The next step in the history of this line was taken in 1749, when it was extended westward from Peter's Creek, where Col. Byrd terminated his labors, to a point on Steep Rock Creek, a distance of eighty-eight miles, in all 329 miles from the coast. In this extension the commissioners on the part of Virginia were Joshua Fry, professor of mathematics in William and Mary College, and Peter Jefferson, father of Thomas Jefferson, afterward President of the United States; and on the part of North Carolina they were Daniel Weldon and William Churton.

The line thus extended by these last commissioners was satisfactory, and remained the boundary between North Carolina and Virginia; and as by the treaty of Paris in 1763, the Mississippi River was fixed upon as the western boundary of North Carolina, it was hoped that that and the northern boundary line were established—the latter at thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes. In 1779, urged by the necessities of the western settlements, the Legislatures of Virginia and North Carolina appointed a joint commission to extend the line westward between their respective territories. The commissioners on the part of North Carolina were Col. Richard Henderson and William B. Smith; and on the part of Virginia, Dr. Thomas Walker and Daniel Smith. These commissioners were instructed to begin the extension of the line where Fry and Jefferson, and Weldon and Churton ended their work; and if that were found to be truly in latitude thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes north, then to run due west from that point to the Tennessee or the Ohio River. If that point were found not to be truly in said latitude, then to run from the said place due north or due south into the said latitude and thence due west to the said Tennessee or Ohio River, correcting said course at due intervals by astronomical observations.

The commissioners met early in September, 1779, but failed to find the point on Steep Rock Creek where Fry and Jefferson, and Weldon and Churton ended their line. The point of observation chosen, according to memoranda of agreement entered on the books of both parties, was in



north latitude thirty-six degrees, thirty-one minutes and twenty-five seconds, and in west longitude eighty-one degrees and twelve minutes. From this point they ran due south one mile, to a point supposed to be in latitude thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes. From this point they ran a line, as they supposed, due west about forty-five miles, to Carter's Valley, when a disagreement occurred, and the two commissions separated. Each commission then ran a line independent of the other as far west as the Cumberland Mountain, the two lines being parallel with each other, and about two miles apart. The line run by the North Carolina commissioners, generally known as Henderson's line, was north of that run by the Virginia commissioners, likewise generally known as Walker's line. At the Cumberland Mountain the North Carolina commissioners abandoned their work after sending in a protest against Walker's line. The Virginia commissioners continued with their line to the Tennessee River, leaving, however, an unsurveyed gap from Deer Fork to the east crossing of Cumberland River, a distance estimated by them to be one hundred and nine miles. Although not authorized to do so, the commissioners marked the termination of this line on the Mississippi River, but did not survey the intervening distance. The total length of the line thus far surveyed was as follows: Bryd's line, 241 miles; Fry and Jefferson's line, 88 miles; Walker's line—from Steep Rock Creek to Deer Fork— $123\frac{3}{4}$  miles, unsurveyed line (estimated) 109 miles; from the east to the west crossing of the Cumberland, 131 miles; and from the Cumberland to the Tennessee River,  $9\frac{1}{4}$  miles; total distance from the Atlantic Ocean to the Tennessee River, 702 miles. The commissioners were at Deer Fork November 22, 1779; at the east crossing of the Cumberland February 25, 1780; and at the Tennessee River March 23, following.

Considerable disorder followed the running of these two lines, as between them the authority of neither State was established; the validity of process from neither State was acknowledged; entries for lands between the lines were made in both States; and both States issued grants for the said lands. Crimes committed on this disputed territory could not be punished, and while no immediate action was taken by the two States, yet such a condition of society between them could not be long endured, especially as by concert of action a remedy could be applied. Upon this subject the Governor of Virginia addressed a letter to the Legislature of North Carolina, proposing that the line commonly called Walker's line be established as the boundary between the States; and that if that proposition were not satisfactory, they then would appoint commissioners to meet commissioners to be appointed by North Carolina, empowered to confer on the propriety of establishing either Walker's or Henderson's

line, and to report the result of their conference to the Legislatures of their respective States. This letter was referred by the Legislature of North Carolina to a committee of which Gen. Thomas Person was chairman, at its session commencing November 2, and ending December 22, 1789. The committee reported through Gen. Person in favor of the passage of a law confirming and establishing Walker's line as the boundary between the two States. Doubts arising as to the formality and sufficiency of this action of the Legislature, a second report was made by the Carolina committee on boundaries, of which Gen. Person was again chairman, again recommending the confirming of Walker's line as the boundary line. This report was read and concurred in December 11, 1790, by both the House of Commons and the Senate. Learning of this action on the part of North Carolina, the Legislature of Virginia passed an act on the 7th of December, 1791, declaring "That the line commonly called and known by the name of Walker's line shall be, and the same is hereby declared to be the boundary line of this State." Thus the boundary line, which had so long been in controversy, was regarded by both States as being finally settled.

With reference to the direction of the line run by Mr. Walker and Mr. Smith it may here be stated that in consequence of failure to make due allowance for the variation of the needle, this line continuously deflected toward the north. This deflection was caused either by the imperfection of their instruments or by the failure of the commissioners to test their work by a sufficient number of observations. Upon reaching the Tennessee River Walker's line was more than twelve miles too far north in a direct line, being near latitude thirty-six degrees and forty minutes, and where it first touched the State of Tennessee it was near latitude thirty-six degrees and thirty-four minutes.

With respect to the date of the first resolution confirming Walker's line, it should here be noted that it was adopted practically on the 2d of November, 1789, as under the law of North Carolina all acts related to the first day of the session, and the act ceding the Western Territory to the United States was passed at the same session of the Legislature, and thus, therefore, on the same day. The deed executed to Congress, in pursuance of the cession act, was dated February 25, 1790, and was accepted April 2, 1790. The second resolution confirmatory of Walker's line was passed December 11, 1790.

In 1792 William Blount, territorial governor of Tennessee, insisted that the first resolution of the Carolina Legislature, referred to above, was not a legal confirmation of Walker's line, and that the second resolution adopted December 11, 1790, having been passed many months

after the acceptance by Congress of the cession of the Western Territory, was invalid as to the United States, of which Tennessee was then a Territory. Gov. Blount also urged that for ten years previous to the cession North Carolina had exercised jurisdiction to Henderson's line, and announced his intention of maintaining that jurisdiction. A proclamation was issued by Gov. Blount asserting jurisdiction to Henderson's line, and a counter proclamation was issued by Gov. Lee, of Virginia, asserting jurisdiction to Walker's line. Matters remained in this rather hostile shape until 1801, when a joint commission was appointed to determine the true boundary line.

The Legislature of Tennessee passed an act appointing Moses Fisk, Gen. John Sevier and Gen. George Rutledge her commissioners to meet commissioners appointed by Virginia to take the latitude and run the line. Virginia appointed Joseph Martin, Creed Taylor and Peter Johnson. This commission met at Cumberland Gap December 18, 1802, and failing to agree in the result of their astronomical observations, entered into an agreement, which they reduced to writing, signed and sealed, and ran the line in accordance therewith parallel to the two lines in dispute and about midway between them, and about one mile from each. The agreement of the commissioners and the certificate of the surveyors who ran the line are as follows:

The commissioners for ascertaining and adjusting the boundary line between the two States of Virginia and Tennessee, appointed pursuant to the public authority on the part of each, have met at the place previously appointed for the purpose, and not uniting from the general result of their astronomical observations to establish either of the former lines called Walker's or Henderson's, unanimously agree, in order to end the controversy respecting the subject, to run a due west line equally distant from both, beginning on the summit of the mountain generally known by the name of White Top Mountain, where the northwest corner of Tennessee terminates, to the top of the Cumberland Mountain, where the southwestern corner of Virginia terminates, which is declared hereby to be the true boundary line between the two States, and has been accordingly run by Brice Martin and Nathan B. Markland, the surveyors duly appointed for the purpose, and marked under the direction of the said commissioners, as will more at large appear by the report of the said surveyors hereto annexed, and bearing date herewith. The commissioners do, therefore, unanimously agree to recommend to their respective States that individuals having claims or titles to lands on either side of the said line as now affixed and agreed upon and between the lines aforesaid, shall not in consequence thereof in any wise be prejudiced or affected thereby, and that the Legislatures of their respective States should pass mutual laws to render all such claims or titles secure to the owners thereof.

Given under our hands and seals at William Robertson's, near Cumberland Gap, the 8th day of December, 1802.

The certificate of the surveyors that they had run the line as above described was dated on the same day, and signed by both. This agreement and the line run in accordance therewith were confirmed by the Legislatures of both States, by Tennessee November 3, 1803, and by



Virginia in the same year, and the boundary between Virginia and Tennessee was thus finally established by a compromise. Although subsequent negotiations have occurred, no change has been made, but in 1859 the line was re-marked by Samuel Milligan and George R. McClellan, commissioners for Tennessee, and Leonidas Baugh and James C. Black, commissioners for Virginia.

While this compromise line midway between Walker's and Henderson's lines became the established boundary between Tennessee and Virginia, the boundary between Tennessee and Kentucky was Walker's line. In the first Carolina resolution confirming the Walker line, the following language was used: "Mr. Walker and the other commissioners from Virginia extended the line to the Tennessee River and marked its termination on the Mississippi from observations, leaving the line from the Tennessee to that place unsurveyed." The second resolution reaffirmed the first, and the Legislatures of both States ratified the action of the commissioners, thus clearly extending the line to the Mississippi River. But the action of Tennessee under Gov. Blount, above explained, repudiating the Carolina and Virginia compact, was seized upon by Kentucky in later years to reopen the boundary question as between her and Tennessee. As stated above Kentucky discovered that Walker's line was several miles north of thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes; the parallel upon which it was designed to be run, and was desirous of readjusting the boundary on that parallel. The logic of her argument in favor of this was irresistible: "Since by your own showing the confirmation of Walker's line by Virginia and North Carolina is invalid as to us, then we have no dividing line except the imaginary one of thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes. Let us move down south and locate it."

In 1813 Kentucky passed an act in the preamble to which she intimates her impatience at the continuance of the struggle, and her determination to find some effectual means of settling it: "Whereas Tennessee proposes to depart from the true line of separation \* \* \* to be ascertained by correct and scientific observations, etc., the disagreeable necessity is imposed upon Kentucky of having the long-contested question finally settled by the means pointed out by the Constitution of the United States." The next step taken by Tennessee was November 17, 1815, when an act was passed to which the following is the preamble:

WHEREAS, Some difficulty has existed between the State of Kentucky and this State, and whereas it is essential to the harmony and interest of both States that the line commonly called Walker's line heretofore considered and acted on as the boundary between them should be established as the boundary between the two States, therefore be it en-



acted that the line commonly called Walker's line be, and the same is hereby established and confirmed as the true boundary between the States of Kentucky and Tennessee."

\* \* \* \* \*

SEC. 5. *Be it enacted* that if the Legislature of Kentucky shall refuse to pass such an act as the above, then this act shall cease to be in force, etc.

In response to this proposition on the part of Tennessee, Kentucky passed an act on the 10th of February, 1816, in which she declines to accept the line proposed, but offers to adopt "Walker's line so far as it was originally run and marked, to wit: From a point near the mouth of Obed's, *alias* Obey's River to the Tennessee River, as the true jurisdictional line between this State and the State of Tennessee, and as to the residue of the line between the two States, the following shall be adopted as the true position thereof: At the eastern extremity of Walker's line near the mouth of Obed's River aforesaid, a line shall be run at right angles either north or south, as the case may require, till it reaches the true chartered limits of the two States in the latitude of thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes north, and from that point the line shall be extended to the east, still keeping the same latitude till it reaches the eastern boundary of this State; and at the west extremity of Walker's line, to wit, the Tennessee River, a line shall be extended up or down the said river as the case may require till it reaches the true chartered latitude thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes north, and from that point the line shall be extended due west, still keeping the same latitude till it reaches the Mississippi River."

Had this proposition been accepted by Tennessee about 180 miles of the boundary line would have been placed on the "chartered latitude," thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes; but Tennessee could be satisfied with nothing short of Walker's line, or at least with very little less than that line as her northern boundary, and in order to show her insistence on that line passed an act, after reciting the customary preamble, "that the line commonly called Walker's line, so far as the same has been run and marked, shall be considered and taken to be the true line between the States."

SEC. 2. That as soon as the State of Kentucky shall pass a law agreeing thereto, a direct line from the eastern extremity of the line called Walker's line, as marked at Cumberland River, to Walker's line at a place called Cumberland Gap, shall be considered and taken the true line between the States.

SEC. 3. That this State will, provided the State of Kentucky agree thereto, apply to the Executive of the United States to appoint a commissioner to ascertain the true point where the boundary line between this State and the State of Kentucky will strike the Tennessee River on the western bank thereof, and that from that point a line shall be run directly west to the western boundary of the State of Tennessee, which shall be the line bounding the two States.

This persistence on the part of Tennessee in affirming what she con-

sidered to be her right, considerably nettled her sister State, who replied to this proposal on January 30, 1818, by the following "spicy enactment."

*Be it enacted* that all laws heretofore passed by the General Assembly of this commonwealth relative to the boundary line between this State and Tennessee shall be, and the same are hereby repealed.

SEC. 2. That the southern boundary line of this State shall be and remain on a line running west from the top of Cumberland Mountain to the Mississippi River in 36° 30' north latitude, anything in any former law passed by this State to the contrary notwithstanding.

In pursuance of this enactment Kentucky, in 1819, sent her surveyors Alexander and Munsell to run and mark the line on thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes between the Tennessee and Mississippi Rivers, and declared this to be the true boundary. This line struck the Tennessee River about twelve miles in a direct line south of Walker's line, and if it had been continued on eastward it would have passed about two miles to the south of Clarksville. It was now evident to Tennessee that her territorial integrity was in danger, and that decided steps must be taken if she would not lose to a large extent in property and population. She realized her own illogical position in claiming jurisdiction to a line the validity of which as a boundary she had solemnly repudiated. She could not rest quietly in possession, for she plainly saw that Kentucky intended to have the boundary question settled, and to extend her southern line down to the "chartered limits" of the State, thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes; the latitude in which Walker's line was supposed to be run. It was necessary to find some plea by which she could still plausibly maintain her right to Walker's line as actually run as her northern boundary. This plea was supplied by Gov. Joseph McMinn in his message of October 6, 1819, and it was the only plea which Tennessee could bring to her aid, the desire of the people residing on the belt of territory between the "chartered limits," and Walker's line, to remain under the jurisdiction of Tennessee. He admitted that Alexander & Munsell's line, if it were in fact in latitude thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes, should be allowed to stand. The necessity of this compromise was forced upon Tennessee by her being estopped from pleading the confirming of Walker's line by the Virginia and Carolina compact which under Gov. William Blount she had repudiated.

The Legislature of Tennessee having thus failed to establish her claim by enactments determined to send commissioners to the Kentucky Legislature and try the efficacy of a joint commission. Kentucky though opposed to that method of settling the question, was at length persuaded by Tennessee's commissioners, Felix Grundy and William L. Brown, to

appoint a commission, selecting John J. Crittenden and Robert Trimble. Notwithstanding the fact that Kentucky's argument as to abstract title was unanswerable, yet the Tennessee commissioners successfully urged actual possession, and the desires of the people, together with the multitude of hardships that must necessarily result from a change, and offered to permit all the lines to remain as then located including Alexander & Munsell's line. The compromise was accepted by Kentucky, and effected February 2, 1820. According to this compromise the boundary line was to be Walker's line to the Tennessee River; thence up and with said river to Alexander & Munsell's line; thence with said line to the Mississippi River—the treaty to be valid when ratified by the Legislature of Kentucky. Thus the main points were finally settled, but still for some years numerous inconveniences continued to develop from the loss of some of the landmarks of Walker's line, the uncertainty regarding others, and the unsurveyed gap, between Deer Fork and the Cumberland River. In 1821, this gap unsurveyed by Walker, was surveyed by a joint commission consisting of William Steele, on the part of Kentucky, and Absalom Looney, on the part of Tennessee, and they extended their survey from the east crossing of Cumberland River to Cumberland Gap. On November 13, 1821, Tennessee passed an act confirming this survey as far as it extended, including in the act a minute description of the survey, and on the 22d of the same month Kentucky confirmed this line.

In 1831 James Bright, commissioner for Tennessee, and Dr. Munsell, commissioner for Kentucky, ran and marked Walker's line along the southern borders of Allen, Simpson and Trigg Counties straight from the point near the west crossing of the Cumberland River to the Tennessee. This survey, if adopted, would have thrown into Kentucky a strip of land about a mile wide which is now a portion of Tennessee.

In 1845 Gov. James C. Jones appointed, as commissioners on the part of Tennessee, C. W. Nance and William P. McLain, who met Messrs. Wilson and Duncan, commissioners from Kentucky, in October of that year, and marked a line along the borders of Trigg and Christian Counties, and along that portion of Fulton County west of Reelfoot Lake. These different lines were all readjusted in 1859, by a joint commission consisting of Benjamin Peeples and O. R. Watkins, commissioners; O. H. P. Bennett, engineer; J. Trafton, L. Burnett, assistant engineers, and J. M. Nicholson, surveyor, on the part of Tennessee; and Austin P. Cox and C. M. Driggs, commissioners; J. Pillsburg, engineer; G. Trafton, G. Stealey and A. Hensly, assistant engineers, on the part of Kentucky. They met at a place called Compromise, on the Mississippi River, and having improved instruments made an accurate and satisfactory survey,



placing the stones as required and marking the line on permanent trees with four chops toward the east and toward the west.

From Compromise, in latitude thirty-six degrees, twenty-nine minutes and fifty-five and seven hundredths seconds, they followed very nearly along Alexander and Munsell's line to the Tennessee, in latitude thirty-six degrees, twenty-nine minutes and fifty-four seconds. Thence they ran down the Tennessee to Walker's line, which is very nearly in latitude thirty-six degrees, forty minutes and forty-five seconds, and from this point they followed Walker's line to the southeastern corner of Kentucky, latitude thirty-six degrees, thirty-four minutes and fifty-three and forty-eight hundredths seconds. From this point they ran to the southwest corner of Virginia in latitude thirty six degrees, thirty-six minutes and ninety-two hundredths seconds. This survey cost Tennessee \$25,357, and Kentucky \$22,630.07. The stone posts cost \$1,265. Kentucky approved the acts of this joint commission February 28, 1860, and Tennessee March 21, 1860.

Thus after a protracted, and in many instances a vexatious controversy, lasting from 1792 to 1860, Tennessee finally established her title, if not her right, to that strip of territory extending from White Top Mountain to the Tennessee River. That portion adjoining Virginia is about 110 miles long, and averages about seven miles in width, while that adjoining Kentucky is about 245 miles long, and about five and three-quarters miles wide at its eastern extremity, gradually increasing in width until it reaches the Tennessee, where it is about twelve and one-half miles wide.

For this acquisition she is indebted first to the failure of the Virginia and Carolina commissioners to make due allowance for the variation of the needle; second, to the fidelity and ability of her public servants; third, to the preference of the people along the border to remain within her jurisdiction, and fourth, to the liberality of Kentucky and Virginia, which led them to respect the preferences of the people. And for the loss of the strip west of the Tennessee and between the "chartered limits" and Walker's line, she is indebted to the repudiation by Gov. Blount, of the Virginia and Carolina compact. And yet, although this struggle which lasted so long and had attracted so much attention, was settled thus in 1860, her constitution of 1870 adheres to the old imaginary lines, and describes her northern boundary as thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes, but this careless description is well guarded by the following clause: "Provided that the limits and jurisdiction of this State shall extend to any other land and territory now acquired by compact or agreement with other States or otherwise, although such land and territory are not included within the boundaries hereinbefore designated."



The history of the southern boundary line of this State is not of such absorbing interest, nor fortunately so long as that above detailed. Quoting again from the Declaration of Rights: "That line and that only should be esteemed the southern boundary of this State (North Carolina) as follows, that is to say: Beginning on the sea-side at a cedar stake at or near the mouth of Little River, being the southern extremity of Brunswick County and runs thence a northwest course through the Boundary House, which stands in thirty-three degrees and fifty-six minutes, to thirty-five degrees north latitude, and from thence a west course, so far as is mentioned in the charter of King Charles II to the late proprietors of Carolina." This declaration was adopted in December, 1776, and shows that the parallel of thirty-five degrees north latitude was considered as the established southern boundary line of North Carolina westward from the point where the line "running a northwest course through the Boundary House" if extended would intersect that parallel. To establish the line between North and South Carolina, commissioners were appointed by both these colonies in 1737. Those of the former colony were Robert Hilton, Matthew Rowan and Edward Mosely. They began at the cedar stake on the sea shore by the mouth of Little River, and ran the line until they arrived at the thirty-fifth degree. At the termination of the northwest line they erected a light wood stake upon a mound. The line was continued by private parties twenty miles, and in 1764 was still further extended.

In 1818 the boundary between Tennessee and Georgia was established. The commissioners appointed Joseph Cobb surveyor, and two chain carriers and two markers. These parties arrived at Ross' in the Cherokee nation on the 15th of May. From Ross', which was on the Tennessee River, they proceeded to Nickajack, where on the next day they met the commissioners and surveyor appointed by Georgia. The joint commission decided that the thirty-fifth degree of north latitude was one mile and twenty-eight poles from the south bank of the Tennessee, due south from near the center of the town of Nickajack. This point was supposed by them to be the corner of the States of Georgia and Alabama. At this point they caused a rock to be erected, two feet high, four inches thick and fifteen inches broad, engraved on the north side "June 1, 1818, Var. six degrees and forty-five minutes east," and on the south side "Geo. Lat. thirty-five degrees north, J. Carmack." From this rock they ran the line due east to the top of the Unaka Mountains, where they closed their survey with a variation of the compass of five degrees and thirty minutes; the length of the line surveyed being nearly 110 miles. The line west of Nickajack was extended in part by Gen. Coffee and the

residue by Gen. Winchester. The boundary line between Tennessee and Mississippi was also run by John Thompson, and his line was adopted by Tennessee as the southern boundary, but Mississippi failed to adopt it. The question was finally settled by Tennessee November 9, 1837, and by Mississippi February 8, 1838, on which dates the two States, respectively, ratified the proceedings of a joint commission to run the true boundary line. The history of the running of the line is sufficiently shown in the language of the act by the Tennessee Legislature above referred to as follows:

WHEREAS the State of Tennessee believing the southern boundary line of the State dividing Tennessee from Mississippi was not correctly run by the commissioners in 1819, with the thirty-fifth parallel of north latitude; and whereas the State of Tennessee, by an act passed November 29, 1833, did establish what is known as Thompson's line as the southern boundary of the State, which act did not receive the sanction of the State of Mississippi; and whereas the authorities of Tennessee and Mississippi having recently by commissioners on the part of the two States, run and marked another line which is agreed upon providing they ratify the same, which line is described in the commissioners' report as follows: Commencing at a point on the west bank of the Tennessee River, sixty-four chains south or above the mouth of Yellow Creek and about three-fourths of a mile north of the line known as Thompson's line, and twenty-six chains and ten links north of Thompson's line at the basis meridian of the Chickasaw surveys, and terminating at a point in the east bank of the Mississippi River, opposite Cow Island, sixteen chains north of Thompson's line; therefore

*Be it enacted, etc.,* That the line as run and marked between this State and Mississippi by B. A. Ludlow, D. W. Connely and W. Petrie (commissioners on the part of Mississippi), and John D. Graham and Austin Miller (commissioners on the part of Tennessee) be and the same is hereby declared to be the true southern boundary of the State of Tennessee, being 35° north latitude, and that the jurisdiction of the State be extended to that line in as full and ample a manner as the same was extended to the line run by Winchester.

The eastern boundary line, or that between Tennessee and North Carolina, was finally established by an act passed by the Legislature of the former State during the session commencing November 19, 1821, the language of the act running somewhat as follows: That the dividing line run and marked by Alexander Smith, Isaac Allen and Simeon Perry, commissioners on the part of Tennessee, and James Mebane, Montford Stokes and Robert Love, commissioners from North Carolina, which line begins at a stone set up on the north side of the Cataloochee Turnpike Road, and marked on the west side "Tenn. 1821," and on the east side "N. C. 1821," and running along the summit of the Great Smoky Mountains, etc., etc., and striking the southern boundary line twenty-three poles west of a tree in said line marked "72 M," where was set up by said commissioners a square post, marked on the west side "Tenn. 1821," and on the east side "N. C. 1821" and on the south side "G." be and the same is hereby ratified, confirmed and established as the true boundary line between this State and North Carolina. This line was confirmed by

the Legislature of North Carolina during the session commencing November 19, 1821.

#### THE WATAUGA ASSOCIATION.

The settlers on the Watauga and Holston, though very near the boundaries of Virginia and North Carolina, and though most of them were emigrants from the latter State, were living without the protection of the laws of either. Being thus without regular government, it was necessary for them to adopt for themselves rules for their own guidance. These rules were adopted in 1772, and are believed to have constituted the first written compact of government west of the mountains. The government was simple and moderate, paternal and patriarchal, summary and firm. The settlers elected as commissioners thirteen citizens, as follows: John Carter, Charles Robertson, James Robertson, Zachariah Isbell, John Sevier, James Smith, Jacob Brown, William Bean, John Jones, George Russell, Jacob Womack, Robert Lucas and William Tatham. Of these thirteen commissioners five were appointed as a court, by whom all matters in controversy were settled, and the same tribunal had entire control of everything pertaining to the public good. This court was composed, it is believed, of the following persons: John Carter, Charles Robertson, James Robertson, Zachariah Isbell and John Sevier, with William Tatham as clerk. For a number of years this form of government performed its functions with success and satisfaction to the people. But at length dissensions arose, and the result of these various views and desires of the people was the establishment of the State of Franklin, as detailed later in this chapter.

After the establishment of the Watauga Association, the Government of the Notables was the next in the order of time. This was on the banks of the Cumberland, as that was on the banks of the Watauga. It grew up from the necessities of the people, far removed from any protecting government. Robertson's principal colony arrived at the French Lick about January 1, 1780—Putnam says December 25, 1779. John Donelson's party arrived April 24, 1780, and on May 1 following, the compact of government or articles of agreement were entered into by the settlers on the Cumberland. It was stated in the chapter on the settlement of the territory, that in the vicinity of the French Lick there were eight stations, and when the government came to be established, each station was entitled to representatives in the "Tribunal of Notables" as follows:

Nashborough (at Nashville).....	3
Mansker's (Casper Mansker's Lick).....	2
Bledsoe's (now Castilian Springs)....	1



Asher's (Station Camp Creek).....	1
Freeland's (at Dr. McGavock's or Horticultural Garden). ....	1
Eaton's (now Brooklyn).....	2
Fort Union (where Haysborough was).....	1
Stone's River (west of the Hermitage).....	1

These representatives, or a majority of them, after being bound by the solemnity of an oath to do equal and impartial justice between all contending parties, were empowered and made competent to settle all controversies relative to location and improvements of lands; all other matters and questions of dispute among the settlers; protecting the reasonable claims of those who may have returned for their families; providing implements of husbandry and food for such as might arrive without such necessities; making especial provisions for widows and orphans whose husbands or fathers may die or be killed by the Indians; guaranteeing equal rights, mutual protection and impartial justice; pledging themselves most solemnly and sacredly to promote the peace, happiness and well being of the community, to suppress vice and punish crime.

In this compact one of the principal elements of popular government was expressly set forth, viz.: the right of the people at the various stations to remove their representative or judge, or other officers, for misconduct or unfaithfulness in the discharge of their duties, and to elect others to fill the vacancies. "This tribunal exercised the prerogatives of government to their fullest extent, with the exception of the infliction of capital punishment. They called out the militia of the stations to 'repel or pursue the enemy;' impressed horses for such service as the public exigency might demand; levied fines, payable in money or provisions; adjudicated causes; entered up judgments and awarded executions; granted letters of administration upon estates of deceased persons, taking bonds 'payable to Col. James Robertson, chairman of committee,' " etc.

Following are the articles of agreement, or compact of government, entered into by the settlers on the Cumberland River May 1, 1780. The first page is lost and the second torn and defaced, but there can be read distinctly as follows, supplying in brackets lost words:

\* \* property of right shall be determined as soon [as] conveniently may be in the following manner: The free men of this country over the age [of twenty] one years shall immediately, or as soon as may [be convenient], proceed to elect or choose twelve conscientious and [deserving] persons from or out of the different sections, that is [to] say: From Nashborough, three; Mansker's, two; Bledsod's, one; Asher's, one; Stone's River, one; Freeland's, one; Eaton's, two; Fort Union, one. Which said persons, or a majority of them, after being bound by the solemnity of an oath, to do equal and impartial justice between all contending parties, according to their best skill and judgment, having due regard to the regulations of the land office herein established, shall be competent judges of the matter, and \* \* hearing the allegations of both parties and [their] witnesses as to the facts alleged or otherwise \* \* as to the truth of the case, shall have [power] to



decide controversies, and determine who is of right entitled to an entry for such land so in dispute, when said determination or decision shall be forever binding against the future claim of the party against whom such judgment [shall be rendered]. And the entry taker shall make a [record thereof] in his book accordingly, and the entry \* \* tending party so cast shall be \* \* \* if it had never been made, and the land in dispute \* \* \* to the person in whose favor such judgment shall \* \* \* in case of the death, removal, or absence of any of the judges so to be chosen, or their refusing to act, the station to which such person or persons belong, or was chosen from, shall proceed to elect another, or others, in his or their stead, which person, or persons, so chosen, after being sworn, as aforesaid, to do equal and impartial justice, shall have full power and authority to proceed to business, and act in all disputes respecting the premises as if they had been originally chosen at the first election.

That the entry book shall be kept fair and open by \* \* person \* \* to be appointed by said Richard Henderson \* \* \* chose, and every entry for land numbered and dated, and \* \* \* order without leaving any blank leaves or spaces \* \* \* to the inspection of the said twelve judges, or \* \* of them at all times.

That many persons have come to this country without implements of husbandry, and from other circumstances are obliged to return without making a crop, and [intend] removing out this fall, or early next spring, and it \* \* reason \* \* such should have the pre-emption \* \* \* of such places as they may have chosen. \* \* the purpose of residence, therefore it is \* \* \* be taken for all such, for as much land as they are entitled to from their head-rights, which said lands shall be reserved for the particular person in whose name they shall be entered, or their heirs, provided such persons shall remove to this country and take possession of the respective place or piece of land so chosen or entered, or shall send a laborer, or laborers, and a white person in his or her stead to perform the same, on or before the first day of May, in the year one thousand seven hundred and eighty-one; and also provided such land so chosen and entered for is not entered and claimed by some person who is an inhabitant, and shall raise a crop of corn the present year at some station or place convenient to the general settlement in this country. But it is fully to be understood that those who are actually at this time inhabitants of this country shall not be debarred of their choice or claim on account of the right of any such absent or returning person or persons. It is further proposed and agreed that no claim or title to any lands whatsoever shall be set up by any person in consequence of any mark or former improvement, unless the same be entered with the entry taker within twenty days from the date of this association and agreement; and that when any person hereafter shall mark or improve land or lands for himself, such mark or improvement shall not avail him or be deemed an evidence of prior right, unless the same be entered with the entry taker in thirty days \* \* from the time of such mark or improvement, but no other person shall be entitled to such lands so as aforesaid to be reserved \* \* consequence of any purchase gift, or otherwise.

That if the entry taker to be appointed shall neglect or refuse to perform his duty, or be found by said judges, or a majority of them, to have acted fraudulently, to the prejudice of any person whatsoever, such entry taker shall be immediately removed from his office, and the book taken out of his possession by the said judges, until another be appointed to act in his room.

That as often as the people in general are dissatisfied with the doings of the judges or triers so to be chosen, they may call a new election at any of the said stations and elect others in their stead, having due respect to the number now to be elected at each station, which persons so to be chosen shall have the same power with those in whose room or place they shall or may be chosen to act.

That as no consideration money for the lands on Cumberland River, within the claim of the said Richard Henderson and Company, and which is the subject of this association, is demanded or expected by the said company, until a satisfactory and indisputable title can be made, so we think it reasonable and just that the £26, 13s. 4d. current money per hundred acres, the price proposed by the said Richard Henderson, shall be

paid according to the value of money on the first day of January last, being the time when the price was made public, and settlement encouraged thereon by said Henderson, and the said Richard Henderson on his part does hereby agree that in case of the rise or appreciation of money from that \* \* \* an abatement shall be made in the sum according to its raised or appreciated value.

That where any person shall remove to this country with intent to become an inhabitant and depart this life, either by violence or in the natural way, before he shall have performed the requisites necessary to obtain lands, the child or children of such deceased person shall be entitled, in his or her room, to such quantity of land as such person would have been entitled to in case he or she had lived to obtain a grant in their own name; and if such death be occasioned by the Indians the said Henderson doth promise and agree that the child or children shall have as much as amounts to their head-rights *gratis*, surveyor's and other incidental fees excepted,

AND WHEREAS, from our remote situation and want of proper offices for the administration of justice, no regular proceedings at law can be had for the punishment of offenses and attainment of right, it is therefore agreed that until we can be relieved by Government from the many evils and inconveniences arising therefrom, the judges or triers to be appointed as before directed when qualified shall be and are hereby declared a proper court or jurisdiction for the recovery of any debt or damages; or where the cause of action or complaint has arisen, or hereafter shall commence for anything done or to be done among ourselves, within this our settlement on Cumberland aforesaid, or in our passage hither, where the laws of our country could not be executed, or damages repaired in any other way; that is to say, in all cases where the debt or damages or demand does or shall not exceed one hundred dollars, any three of the said judges or triers shall be competent to make a court, and finally decide the matter in controversy; but if for a larger sum, and either party shall be dissatisfied with the judgment or decision of such court, they may have an appeal to the whole twelve judges or triers, in which case nine members shall be deemed a full court, whose decision, if seven agree in one opinion, the matter in dispute shall be final, and their judgment carried into execution in such manner, and by such person or persons as they may appoint, and the said courts, respectively, shall have full power to tax such costs as they may think just and reasonable, to be levied and collected with the debt or damages so to be awarded.

And it is further agreed that a majority of said judges, or triers, or general arbitrators shall have power to punish in their discretion, having respect to the laws of our country, all offenses against the peace, misdemeanors, and those criminal or of a capital nature provided such court does not proceed with execution so far as to affect life or member; and in case any should be brought before them whose crime is or shall be dangerous to the State, or for which the benefit of clergy is taken away by law, and sufficient evidence or proof of the fact or facts can probably be made, such courts, or a majority of the members, shall and may order and direct him, her, or them to be safely bound and sent under a strong guard to the place where the offense was or shall be committed, or where legal trial of such offense can be had, which shall accordingly be done, and the reasonable expense attending the discharge of this duty ascertained by the court, and paid by the inhabitants in such proportion as shall be hereafter agreed on for that purpose.

That as this settlement is in its infancy, unknown to government, and not included in any county within North Carolina, the State to which it belongs, so as to derive the advantages of those wholesome and salutary laws for the protection and benefits of its citizens, we find ourselves constrained from necessity to adopt this temporary method of restraining the licentious, and supplying, by unanimous consent, the blessings flowing from a just and equitable government, declaring and promising that no action or complaint shall be hereafter instituted or lodged in any court of record within this State or elsewhere, for anything done or to be done in consequence of the proceedings of the said judges or general arbitrators so to be chosen and established by this our association.

That the well-being of this country entirely depends, under Divine Providence, on unanimity of sentiment and concurrence in measures, and as clashing interests and opin-

ions without being under some restraint will most certainly produce confusion, discord and almost certain ruin, so we think it our duty to associate and hereby form ourselves into one society for the benefit of present and future settlers, and until the full and proper exercise of the laws of our country can be in use, and the powers of government exerted among us, we do solemnly and sacredly declare and promise each other that we will faithfully and punctually adhere to, perform and abide by this our association, and at all times, if need be, compel by our united force a due obedience to these our rules and regulations. In testimony whereof we have hereunto subscribed our names, in token of our entire approbation of the measures adopted.

The following additional resolutions were adopted and entered into at Nashborough, May 31, 1780:

That all young men over the age of sixteen years, and able to perform militia duty, shall be considered as having a full right to enter for and obtain lands in their own names as if they were of full age; and in that case not be reckoned in the family of his father, mother or master so as to avail them of any land on their account.

That when any person shall mark or improve land or lands, with intent to set up a claim thereto, such person shall write or mark in legible characters the initial letters of his name at least, together with the day of the month and year on which he marked or improved the same at the spring or most notorious part of the land, on some convenient tree or other durable substance, in order to notify his intention to all such as may inquire or examine; and in case of dispute with respect to priority of right, proof of such transaction shall be made by the oath of some indifferent witness, or no advantage or benefit shall be derived from such mark or improvement; and in all cases where priority of mark or occupancy cannot be ascertained according to the regulations and prescriptions herein proposed and agreed to, the oldest or first entry in the office to be opened in consequence of this association shall have the preference, and the lands granted accordingly.

It is further proposed and agreed that the entry office shall be opened at Nashborough on Friday, the 19th of May, instant, and kept from thenceforward at the same place unless otherwise directed by any future convention of the people in general or their representatives.

That the entry taker shall and may demand and receive twelve dollars for each entry to be made in his book, in manner before directed, and shall give a certificate thereof if required; and also may take the same fee for every caveat or counter-claim to any lands before entered; and in all cases where a caveat is to be tried in manner before directed, the entry book shall be laid before the said committee of judges, triers, or general arbitrators, for their inspection and information, and their judgment upon the matter in dispute fairly entered as before directed; which said court or committee is also to keep a fair and distinct journal or minutes of all their proceedings, as well with respect to lands as other matters which may come before them in consequence of these our resolutions.

It is also firmly agreed and resolved that no person shall be admitted to make an entry for any lands with the said entry taker, or permitted to hold the same, unless such person shall subscribe his name and conform to this our Association, Confederacy and General Government, unless it be for persons who have returned home, and are permitted to have lands reserved for their use until the first day of May next, in which case entries may be made for such absent persons according to the true meaning of this writing, without their personal presence, but shall become utterly void if the particular person or persons for whom such entry shall be made should refuse or neglect to perform the same as soon as conveniently may be after their return, and before the said first day of May, 1781.

WHEREAS, The frequent and dangerous incursions of the Indians and almost daily massacre of some of our inhabitants renders it absolutely necessary for our safety and defense that due obedience be paid to our respective officers elected and to be elected at the several stations or settlements to take command of the men or militia at such fort or station,

It is further agreed and resolved that when it shall be adjudged necessary and expedient by such commanding officer to draw out the militia of any fort or station to pursue



or repulse the enemy, the said officer shall have power to call out such and so many of his men as he may judge necessary, and in case of disobedience may inflict such fine as he in his discretion shall think just and reasonable, and also may impress the horse or horses of any person or persons whomsoever, which, if lost or damaged in such service, shall be paid for by the inhabitants of such fort or station in such manner and such proportion as the Committee hereby appointed, or a majority of them, shall direct and order; but if any person shall be aggrieved, or think himself unjustly vexed and injured by the fine or fines so imposed by his officer or officers, such person may appeal to the said Judges or Committee of General Arbitrators, who, or a majority of them, shall have power to examine the matter fully and make such order therein as they may think just and reasonable, which decision shall be conclusive on the party complaining as well as the officer or officers inflicting such fine; and the money arising from such fines shall be carefully applied for the benefit of such fort or station in such manner as the said Arbitrators shall hereafter direct.

It is lastly agreed and firmly resolved that a dutiful and humble address or petition be presented by some person or persons to be chosen by the inhabitants, to the General Assembly, giving the fullest assurance of the fidelity and attachment to the interest of our country and obedience to the laws and Constitution thereof; setting forth that we are confident our settlement is not within the boundaries of any nation or tribe of Indians, as some of us know and all believe that they have fairly sold and received satisfaction for the land or territories whereon we reside, and therefore we hope we may not be considered as acting against the laws of our country or the mandates of government.

That we do not desire to be exempt from the ratable share of the public expense of the present war, or other contingent charges of government. That we are, from our remote situation, utterly destitute of the benefit of the laws of our country, and exposed to the depredations of the Indians, without any justifiable or effectual means of embodying our militia, or defending ourselves against the hostile attempts of our enemy; praying and imploring the immediate aid and protection of government, by erecting a county to include our settlements; appointing proper officers for the discharge of public duty; taking into consideration our distressed situation with respect to Indians, and granting such relief and assistance as in wisdom, justice and humanity may be thought reasonable.

Nashborough, 13th May, 1780.

To these articles of agreement 250 persons signed their names, all of whom could write but one, James Patrick, who made his mark. No records of the government of the Notables have been discovered by any historian, for the reason, doubtless, that few, if any, were made. Putnam to whom this, as well as other histories, is largely indebted for its account of this government on the Cumberland says on this point: "After the organization of the primitive government on May-day, 1780, down to January, 1783, we have no records, not even a fugitive scrap or sheet, of which that ready clerk, Andrew Ewin, was usually so careful. The people were so greatly exposed and kept in such constant alarm, some leaving, and many agitating the propriety or possibility of remaining, all admitting that their perils were imminent and were likely so to continue for an indefinite period, that we may presume there were no regular meetings of the judges and no regular minutes made. \* \* \*

"From our researches we conclude that immediately after the adoption of the articles, an election was held at the stations, and that then Robertson was chosen colonel; Donelson, lieutenant-colonel; Lucas, major;





VIEW ON FALLS CREEK, NEAR SMITHVILLE.





and George Freeland, Mauldin, Bledsoe and Blackmore, captains." How long these individuals remained in office, or what duties they performed, is not now known. But in 1783 the government was revived, as the following extract shows:

NORTH CAROLINA, CUMBERLAND RIVER, January 7, 1783

The manifold sufferings and distresses that the settlers here have from time to time undergone, even almost from our first settling, with the desertion of the greater number of the first adventurers, being so discouraging to the remaining few that all administration of justice seemed to cease from amongst us, which, however weak, whether in constitution, administration or execution, yet has been construed in our favor against those whose malice or interest would insinuate us a people fled to a hiding place from justice, and the revival of them again earnestly recommended. It appears highly necessary that for the common weal of the whole, the securing of peace, the performance of contracts between man and man, together with the suppression of vice, again to revive our former manner of proceedings, pursuant to the plan agreed upon at our first settling here, and to proceed accordingly until such times as it shall please the Legislature to grant us the salutary benefits of the law duly administered amongst us by their authority.

To this end, previous notice having been given to the several stationers to elect twelve men of their several stations, whom they thought most proper for the business, and being elected, to meet at Nashborough on the 7th day of January, 1783.

Accordingly there met at the time and place aforesaid Col. James Robertson, Capt. George Freeland, Thomas Molloy, Isaac Lindsey, David Rounsevail, Heydon Wells, James Maulding, Ebenezer Titus, Samuel Barton and Andrew Ewin, who constituted themselves into a committee, for the purposes aforesaid, by voluntarily taking the following oath:

I, ———, do solemnly swear that as a member of the committee, I will do equal right and justice, according to the best of my skill and judgment, in the decision of all causes that shall be laid before me without fear, favor or partiality. So help me God.

The committee then proceeded to elect Col. James Robertson, chairman; John Montgomery, sheriff, and Andrew Ewin, clerk, and to fix the clerk's fees. From this time to the organization of Davidson County in April, 1783, the committee held meetings as occasion required, accounts of which will properly be introduced as a prelude to the history of that organization. And in this way the government of the Notables served its purpose and came to its end. It was wholly unlike that other anomaly in government, the State of Franklin, in not aspiring to independent Statehood, and always looking steadily to North Carolina as the source of proper government for the settlers on the Cumberland. Its proceedings were frequently dated "North Carolina, Cumberland District," and a part of the time "Nashborough," and were continued until in August, after which the regular authorities of Davidson County, the act for the organization of which was approved October 6, 1783, assumed authoritative control of public affairs.

#### THE STATE OF FRANKLIN.

The Revolutionary war was over and independence won. The colonies and their dependencies were thrown entirely upon their own resources.

Society was in an unsettled, in somewhat of a chaotic condition, but it is remarkable that there was very little of the spirit of insubordination and anarchy. The main reason for the universal disposition to maintain order was undoubtedly the financial necessities of the various colonial governments, as well as those of the Continental Congress. The stability of the individual States and of the General Government depended, in large measure, upon the extinguishment of the debts that had been created during the war of the Revolution.

One of the expedients for improving the condition of things resorted to by Congress, was its suggestion to such of the States as owned vacant lands to throw them together, establish a joint fund, and with this joint fund pay off the common debt. North Carolina owned a large amount of territory, extending from the Alleghany Mountains to the Mississippi River, and among the measures adopted by her General Assembly was the act of June, 1783, ceding to Congress the lands therein described. According to this act the authority of North Carolina was to extend over this territory until Congress should accept the cession. The members to the General Assembly, from the four western counties, Washington, Sullivan, Greene and Davidson, were present and voted for the cession.

These members perceived a disinclination on the part of the parent State to make proper provision for the protection of the people in the western province. Accounts were constantly being presented to the General Assembly for the defense of the frontier settlements against the Indians. These accounts were reluctantly received, cautiously scrutinized and grudgingly paid. Crimination and recrimination were mutually indulged in by North Carolina and her western counties, and it was even intimated that some of these accounts, or portions of some of them, were fabricated or invented. The inhabitants of these western counties, whose exposed situation seemed not to be appreciated and whose honor seemed thus to be impugned, remembering that in the Bill of Rights adopted at the same time with the State Constitution, a clause had been inserted authorizing the formation of one or more new States out of this western territory, and entertaining the impression that Congress would not accept the cession of the territory within the two year limit, and feeling that the new settlements included within this territory would be practically excluded from the protection of both North Carolina and Congress, would in fact be left in a state of anarchy, unable to command their own powers and resources, knowing that no provision had been made for the establishment of superior courts west of the mountains, seeing that violations of law were permitted to pass unpunished except by the summary process of the regulators appointed for the purpose by the people themselves,



and perceiving also that the military organization was inadequate to the defense of the inhabitants, in part because there was no brigadier-general authorized to call the military forces into active service, with an extensive frontier constantly exposed to and suffering from the ravages of the savages, and with numerous other considerations suggested to them by their anomalously exposed situation, perceived the necessity of themselves devising means for the extrication of themselves from the numerous, great and unexpected difficulties with which they found themselves surrounded.

For the purpose of an attempt at extrication it was proposed that each captain's company elect two representatives, and that these representatives assemble to deliberate upon the condition of affairs and if possible devise some general plan adapted to the emergency. Accordingly these representatives met August 23, 1783, in Jonesborough. Following are the names of the deputies from Washington County: John Sevier, Charles Robertson, William Trimble, William Cox, Landon Carter, Hugh Henry, Christopher Taylor, John Christian, Samuel Doak, William Campbell, Benjamin Holland, John Bean, Samuel Williams and Richard White. Sullivan County: Joseph Martin, Gilbert Christian, William Cocke, John Manifee, William Wallace, John Hall, Samuel Wilson, Stockley Donelson and William Evans. Greene County: Daniel Kennedy, Alexander Outlaw, Joseph Gist, Samuel Weir, Asahel Rawlings, Joseph Bullard, John Managhan, John Murphey, David Campbell, Archibald Stone, Abraham Denton, Charles Robinson and Elisha Baker. Davidson County sent no delegates.

John Sevier was chosen president of the convention, and Landon Carter, secretary. A committee was appointed to deliberate upon the condition of affairs, consisting of Cocke, Outlaw, Carter, Campbell, Manifee, Martin, Robinson, Houston, Christian, Kennedy and Wilson. After deliberation upon and discussion of the objects of the convention, during which the Declaration of Independence was read, and the independence of the three counties represented suggested, the committee drew up and presented a report, which was in substance as follows: That the committee was of the opinion that they had the right to petition Congress to accept the cession of North Carolina and to recognize them as a separate government; that if any contiguous part of Virginia should make application to join this association, after being permitted to make such application by Virginia, they should receive and enjoy the same privileges that they themselves enjoyed, and that one or more persons should be sent to represent the situation of things to Congress. This report was adopted by the following vote: Yeas—Messrs. Terrell, Samms,

North, Taylor, Anderson, Houston, Cox, Talbot, Joseph Wilson, Trimble, Reese, John Anderson, Manifee, Christian, Carnes, A. Taylor, Fitzgerald, Cavit, Looney, Cocke, B. Gist, Rawlings, Bullard, Joshua Gist, Valentine Sevier, Robinson, Evans and Managhan. Nays—John Tipton, Joseph Tipton, Stuart, Maxfield, D. Looney, Vincent, Cage, Provine, Gammon, Davis, Kennedy, Newman, Weir, James Wilson and Campbell.

It is thought that the above described proceedings were had at the August convention of 1784, which may account for the discrepancy in the names of those voting as compared with those elected, as given earlier.\* The plan of the association was drawn up by Messrs. Cocke and Hardin, and was referred next day to the convention. This plan was the formation of an association by the election of representatives to it, to send a suitable person to Congress, and to cultivate public spirit, benevolence and virtue, and they pledged themselves to protect the association with their lives and fortunes, faith and reputation.

It was then determined that each county should elect five members to a convention to adopt a constitution and form an independent State. This convention met in November and broke up in great confusion upon the plan of association, and besides some were opposed to separation from North Carolina. The North Carolina General Assembly was then in session at Newbern, and repealed the act of cession to the United States, appointed an assistant judge and an attorney-general for the superior court, directed the superior court to be held at Jonesborough and also organized the militia of Washington District into a brigade and appointed John Sevier brigadier-general. Gen. Sevier expressed himself satisfied with the action of North Carolina, and advised the people to proceed no further in their determination to separate from the parent State, but they were not to be advised. Proceeding with their movement five delegates or deputies were chosen to the convention from each county as follows: Washington County—John Sevier, William Cocke, John Tipton, Thomas Stewart and Rev. Samuel Houston. Sullivan County—David Looney, Richard Gammon, Moses Looney, William Cage and John Long. Greene County—Daniel Kennedy, John Newman, James Roddye and Joseph Hardin.

Upon assembling John Sevier was elected president of the convention, and F. A. Ramsey, secretary. Prayer was offered by the Rev. Samuel Houston. A constitution was adopted subject to the ratification or rejection of a future convention to be chosen by the people. This convention met at the appointed time and place, Greeneville, November 14, 1784, the first legislative assembly that ever convened in Tennessee.

---

\*Ramsey.

Landon Carter was speaker and Thomas Talbot clerk of the Senate; William Cage, speaker and Thomas Chapman, clerk of the House of Commons. The assembly, after being organized, elected John Sevier governor. A judiciary system was established, and David Campbell elected judge of the superior court, and Joshua Gist and John Anderson assistant judges. The last day of this first session was March 31, 1785. Numerous acts were ratified, among them one for the promotion of learning in the county of Washington. Under the provisions of this act Martin Academy was founded, and Rev. Samuel Doak became its president. Wayne County was organized out of a part of Washington and Wilkes Counties. The officers of this new State, in addition to those mentioned above, were the following: State senator, Landon Carter; treasurer, William Cage; surveyor-general, Stockley Donelson; brigadier-generals of the militia, Daniel Kennedy and William Cocke. Gen. Cocke was chosen delegate to Congress. Council of State, William Cocke, Landon Carter, Francis A. Ramsey, Judge Campbell, Gen. Kennedy and Col. Taylor. The salaries of the officers were fixed, various articles were made a legal tender in the payment of debts, and a treaty was made with the Cherokee Indians. The boundary line, according to this treaty, which was concluded May 31, 1785, was the ridge dividing the Little River and the Tennessee.

Gov. Martin, of North Carolina, hearing of the organization of the State of Franklin, addressed Gov. Sevier, requesting information regarding the movement. In response to this request a communication was sent to Gov. Martin, signed by Gov. John Sevier, by Landon Carter, speaker of the Senate, and by William Cage, speaker of the House of Commons, setting forth what had been done and the several reasons therefor. Thereupon Gov. Martin called together the Council of North Carolina, April 22, and convened the Legislature June 1, and on the same day issued an elaborate manifesto to the inhabitants in the revolted counties, Washington, Sullivan and Greene, hoping to reclaim them to their allegiance to North Carolina, and warning them of the consequences of their action in adhering to the State of Franklin. A few had, from the first, opposed the organization of the State. The repeal of the cession act had increased their number, but no one seemed to desire to establish a permanent connection with North Carolina, hence a large majority of the people firmly adhered to the new commonwealth.

During the administration of Patrick Henry as governor of Virginia, information was communicated by him to the Legislature of that State as to the movement of Col. Arthur Campbell and others, who had labored with some success to persuade the citizens of Washington County to sever



their connection from the old government of Virginia, and attach themselves to the new State of Franklin, or to form a new one distinct from it. It was proposed by Col. Campbell that the limits of the new State, which he was in favor of forming and naming "Frankland," should be as follows: "Beginning at a point on the top of the Alleghany or Appalachian Mountains, so as a line drawn due north from this point will touch the bank of the New River, otherwise called Kanawha, at its confluence with Little River, which is about one mile from Ingle's Ferry, down the said river Kanawha to the mouth of the Rencovort, or Green Briar River; a direct line from thence to the nearest summit of the Laurel Mountains, and along the highest part of the same to the point where it is intercepted by the thirty-seventh degree of north latitude; west along that latitude to a point where it is met by a meridian line that passes through the lower part of the River Ohio; south along the meridian to Elk River, a branch of the Tennessee; down said river to its mouth, and down the Tennessee to the most southwardly part or bend of the said river; a direct line from thence to that branch of the Mobile called Tombigbee; down said river Tombigbee to its junction with the Coosawattee River, to the mouth of that branch of it called the Hightower; thence south to the top of the Appalachian Mountains, or the highest land that divides the sources of the eastern from the western waters; northwardly along the middle of said heights and the top of the Appalachian Mountains to the beginning."

The proposed form of government stated that the inhabitants within the above limits agreed with each other to form themselves into a free and independent body politic or State by the name of the "Commonwealth of Frankland." It will be seen that the people who proposed to establish the independent State of Frankland had affixed such boundaries to their proposed commonwealth as to include the State of Franklin, much of the territory of Virginia, and the present Kentucky, and of Georgia and Alabama. This magnificent project was supported by but few men, and was soon abandoned, even by its friends and projectors.

The people who had revolted from North Carolina, however, continued to maintain their form of government, but it still remained for the people in convention assembled to ratify, amend or reject the constitution proposed by a former convention. The convention met, but a complete list of their names has not been preserved. The following is a partial list: David Campbell, Samuel Houston, John Tipton, John Ward, Robert Love, William Cox, David Craig, James Montgomery, John Strain, Robert Allison, David Looney, John Blair, James White, Samuel Menece, John Gilliland, James Stuart, George Maxwell, Joseph Tipton and Peter Parkinson. The Bill of Rights and Constitution of the State of Frankland,



were proposed for adoption, discussed and rejected by a small majority. The president of the convention, Gen. John Sevier, then presented the constitution of North Carolina as the foundation of the government for the new State. This constitution, modified to suit the views of the members of the convention, was adopted by a small majority. The names "Franklin," after Dr. Benjamin Franklin, of Philadelphia, and "Frankland," meaning the land of freemen, were then proposed, and the name Franklin chosen, and the convention appointed Gen. Cocke to present the constitution as adopted to Congress, with a memorial applying for admission into the Union, but he was not received and no notice was taken of his mission.

The Franklin government had now got under way, and Greeneville became the permanent capital of the State. Four days after the Greeneville Convention was held the North Carolina Legislature passed an act preceded by a preamble in which were recited the reasons for the organization of the State of Franklin, that the citizens thought North Carolina inattentive to their welfare, had ceased to regard them as citizens, and had made an absolute cession of the soil and jurisdiction of the State to Congress. It stated that this opinion was ill-founded, that the General Assembly of North Carolina had been and continued to be desirous of extending the benefits of civil government over them, and granted pardon and oblivion for all that had been done, provided they would return to their allegiance to North Carolina. It appointed officers civil and military in place of those holding office under the State of Franklin, and empowered the voters of Washington, Sullivan and Greene Counties to elect representatives otherwise than by the methods then in vogue. Dissatisfaction with the Franklin government began to manifest itself, and in Washington County, George Mitchell, as sheriff, issued the following notice:

July, 19th day, 1786.

*Advertisement*—I hereby give Publick Notice that there will be an election held the third Friday in August next at John Rennoe's near the Sickamore Sholes, where Charles Robinson formerly lived, to choose members to represent Washington County in the General Assembly of North Carolina, agreeable to an act of Assembly in that case made and provided, where due attendance will be given pr me.

GEORGE MITCHELL, *Sheriff*.

The election was held on Watauga River. Col. John Tipton was chosen senator from Washington County, and James Stuart and Richard White members of the House of Commons. Their election was, and was generally perceived to be, ominous of the fate of the State of Franklin, and following their example many citizens enrolled their names in opposition to the new State. From this time resistance to its authority assumed a more systematic and determined form. The unusual anomaly

was exhibited of two empires holding sway at one and the same time over the same territory. As was to be expected, the authority of the two frequently came in conflict with each other. The county courts of the one were broken up by the forces of the other and *vice versa*, and the justices of the peace turned out of doors. But the government of Franklin continued to exercise its authority in the seven counties constituting its sovereignty, and to defend its citizens from the encroachments of the Indians. Gen. Cocke and Judge Campbell were appointed commissioners to negotiate a separation from North Carolina, but notwithstanding their most determined and persistent efforts, the General Assembly of North Carolina disregarded their memorials and protests, and continued to make laws for the government of the people of the State of Franklin. Commissioners were sent to, accepted, and acted under, by several people in Washington, Sullivan and Hawkins Counties as justices of the peace, and courts were held by them as if the State of Franklin did not exist. Difficulties between the two States continued, notwithstanding efforts on the part of the people to adjust them, and trouble with the Indians could not be avoided. Negotiations were conducted with Georgia for the purpose of securing mutual assistance. Gov. John Sevier was elected a member of the "Society of the Cincinnati." Sevier recruited an army to co-operate with Georgia in her campaign against the Creek Indians. In 1787 there remained in the commonwealth of Franklin scarcely vitality enough to confer upon it a mere nominal existence, the Legislature itself manifested a strong inclination to dismemberment, its county courts were discordant, and in fact attempting to exercise conflicting authority. An unpleasant clashing of opinion and effort to administer the laws was the necessary result. The county court of Washington County held its session at Davis', under the authority of North Carolina, while that under Franklin held its sessions at Jonesborough. John Tipton was clerk at Davis' and the following extract is from his docket:

1788, February term—*Ordered*, that the Sheriff take into custody the County Court docket of said county, supposed to be in possession of John Sevier, Esq., and the same records being from him or any other person or persons in whose possession they may be, or hereafter shall be, and the same return to this or some succeeding Court for said County.

The supremacy of the new and old governments was soon after this brought to a test. A *scire facias* was issued in the latter part of 1787 and placed in the hands of the sheriff to be executed in the early part of 1788 against the estate of Gov. John Sevier. The sheriff of North Carolina seized Gov. Sevier's negroes while he was on the frontiers of Greene County defending the inhabitants against the Indians. Hearing of this

action of the sheriff Gov. Sevier immediately resolved to suppress all opposition to the government of Franklin and to punish the actors for their audacity. Raising 150 men he marched directly to Col. Tipton's house. Gov. Sevier's indignation had also been aroused by a knowledge of the fact that Tipton had made an attempt to take him prisoner. Upon Sevier's arrival before Tipton's house, which was on Sinking Creek, a branch of Watauga River, about eight or ten miles from Jonesborough, he found it defended by Col. Tipton and fifteen of his friends. Though he had a much larger force than Tipton and was in possession of a small piece of ordnance, his demand for an unconditional surrender was met with a flat refusal and the daring challenge "to fire and be damned." But Gov. Sevier could not bring himself to the point of making an attack upon men who were, and upon whom he looked as, his fellow citizens. Negotiations failed to effect a surrender. Gov. Tipton received large reinforcements, and after the siege had been continued a few days made an attack upon the Governor's forces, who, after defending themselves in a half-hearted way for a short time, were driven off. With this defeat of Gov. Sevier's troops the government of Franklin practically came to an end. But the populace was greatly excited. Not long after this siege, which terminated about February 28, 1788, Bishop Francis Asbury made a visit to the settlements on the Watauga and held a conference, the first west of the mountains, about May 1, 1788. His calm dignity and unpretending simplicity served to soothe and quiet and harmonize the excited masses, and to convert partisans and factions into brothers and friends.

After the termination of the siege at Tipton's, Gov. Sevier, now a private citizen, was engaged in defending the frontiers against the Indians. As was to be expected, his conduct was represented to the Governor of North Carolina as embodying under the form of a coloneley of an Indian expedition, still further resistance to North Carolina. The consequence was that Gov. Johnston issued to Judge Campbell the following instructions:

HILLSBOROUGH, 29th July, 1788.

*Sir:* It has been represented to the Executive that John Sevier, who styles himself captain-general of the State of Franklin, has been guilty of high treason, in levying troops to oppose the laws and government of the State, and has with an armed force put to death several good citizens. If these facts shall appear to you by the affidavit of credible persons, you will issue your warrant to apprehend the said John Sevier, and in case he can not be sufficiently secured for trial in the District of Washington, order him to be committed to the public gaol.

Judge Campbell, either from unwillingness or incapacity arising from his past relations with Gov. Sevier, or both, failed to obey the order of Gov. Johnston; but Spencer, one of the judges of North Caro-



lina, held a superior court at Jonesborough in conjunction with Campbell, and there issued the warrant against Sevier for the crime of high treason. After the expiration of considerable time Sevier was arrested, handcuffed, and taken as a prisoner to Morganton for trial, notwithstanding his protest against being taken away from his home and friends. After being in Morganton a few days, during a part of which time he was out on bail, a small party of men, composed of two sons of his (James and John Sevier), Dr. James Cozby, Maj. Evans, Jesse Greene and John Gibson arrived unnoticed in Morganton, having come in singly, and at night, at the breaking up of the court which was then in session, pushed forward toward the mountains with the Governor with the greatest rapidity, and before morning were there and far beyond pursuit. This rescue, so gallantly made, was both witnessed and connived at by citizens of Burke County, of which Morganton was the county seat, many of whom were friends of Sevier, and although sensible that he had been guilty of a technical violation of the law, were yet unwilling to see him suffer the penalty attached by the law to such violation. His capture and brief expatriation only served to heighten, among the citizens of the late State of Franklin whom he had served so long and so well, their appreciation of his services, and to deepen the conviction of his claims to their esteem and confidence, and when the General Assembly, which met at Fayetteville November 21, 1788, extended the act of pardon to all who had taken part in the Franklin revolt except John Sevier, who was debarred from the enjoyment of any office of profit, of honor or trust in the State of North Carolina, this exception was seen to be at variance with the wishes of the people, and at the annual election in August of the next year the people of Greene County elected John Sevier to represent them in the Senate of North Carolina. At the appointed time, November 2, 1789, he was at Fayetteville, but on account of disabilities did not attempt to take his seat until after waiting a few days, during which time the Legislature repealed the clause above mentioned which debarred him from office. During the session he was reinstated as brigadier-general for the western counties. In apportioning the representatives to Congress from North Carolina the General Assembly divided the State into four Congressional Districts, the westernmost of which comprising all the territory west of the mountains. From this district John Sevier was elected, and was thus the first member of Congress from the great Mississippi Valley. He took his seat Wednesday, June 16, 1790.

## CHAPTER VII.

ORGANIZATION CONCLUDED—CONGRESSIONAL ACTION FOR THE DISPOSAL OF UN-APPROPRIATED LANDS—THE CESSION ACT OF NORTH CAROLINA—THE ACCEPTANCE BY CONGRESS—THE DEED—ACT FOR THE GOVERNMENT OF THE TERRITORY—OFFICES AND COMMISSIONS—GUBERNATORIAL ACTS AND POLICIES—THE SPANISH AND THE INDIAN QUESTIONS—ESTABLISHMENT OF COUNTIES—THE TERRITORIAL ASSEMBLY—THE EARLY LAWS AND TAXES—OFFICIAL DOCUMENTS—STATISTICS—THE FIRST CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION—DEBATE OF FORMS AND PROVISIONS—THE BILL OF RIGHTS—REAL ESTATE TAXATION—OFFICIAL QUALIFICATIONS—OTHER CONSTITUTIONAL MEASURES—FORMATION OF THE STATE GOVERNMENT—THE STATE ASSEMBLY—JOHN SEVIER, GOVERNOR—LEGISLATIVE PROCEEDINGS—ESTABLISHMENT OF COURTS—THE SECOND CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION—ALTERATIONS, ETC.—AMENDMENTS BEFORE AND SOON AFTER THE CIVIL WAR—THE PRESENT CONSTITUTION—ITS GENERAL CHARACTER AND WORTH.

AS was stated under the history of the State of Franklin, it was not long after the dissolution of that organization before it became necessary that separation should occur between North Carolina and her western territory. And this separation was effected by the passage by the mother State of her second cession act, dated December, 1789. This cession was in accordance with the following resolution adopted by the Congress of the United States, October 10, 1780:

*Resolved:* That the unappropriated lands that may be ceded or relinquished to the United States by any particular State, pursuant to the recommendation of Congress of the 6th day of September last, shall be disposed of for the common benefit of the United States and be settled and formed into distinct republican States, which shall become members of the Federal Union and have the same rights of sovereignty, freedom and independence as the other States; that each State which shall be so formed shall contain a suitable extent of territory, not less than one hundred nor more than one hundred and fifty miles square, or as near thereto as circumstances will admit; that the necessary and reasonable expenses which any particular State shall have incurred since the commencement of the present war, in subduing any British posts or in maintaining forts or garrisons within, and for the defense, or in acquiring any part of the territory that may be ceded or relinquished to the United States, shall be reimbursed; that the said lands shall be granted or settled at such times and under such regulations as shall hereafter be agreed on by the United States in Congress assembled, or any nine or more of them.—*Journals of Congress, October 10, 1780.*

The cession act of North Carolina was in the following language:

WHEREAS, the United States in Congress assembled, have repeatedly and earnestly recommended to the respective States in the Union, claiming or owning vacant western territory, to make cession of part of the same as a further means, as well of hastening the extinguishment of the debts, as of establishing the harmony of the United States; and the

inhabitants of the said western territory being also desirous that such cession should be made, in order to obtain a more ample protection than they have heretofore received;

Now, this State, being ever desirous of doing ample justice to the public creditors, as well as the establishing the harmony of the United States, and complying with the reasonable desires of her citizens:

*Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the State of North Carolina, and it is hereby enacted by the authority of the same,* That the senators of this State, in the Congress of the United States, or one of the senators and any two of the representatives of this State, in the Congress of the United States, are hereby authorized, empowered and required to execute a deed or deeds on the part and behalf of this State, conveying to the United States of America all right, title and claim which this State has to the sovereignty and territory of the lands situated within the chartered limits of this State west of a line beginning on the extreme height of the Stone Mountain, at a place where the Virginia line intersects it; running thence along the extreme height of the said mountain to the place where Watauga River breaks through it; thence a direct course to the top of the Yellow Mountain, where Bright's road crosses the same; thence along the ridge of said mountain between the waters of Doe River and the waters of Rock Creek to the place where the road crosses the Iron Mountain; from thence along the extreme height of said mountain to where Nolichucky River runs through the same; thence to the top of the Bald Mountain; thence along the extreme height of the said mountain to the Painted Rock on French Broad River; thence along the highest ridge of the said mountain to the place where it is called the Great Iron or Smoky Mountain; thence along the extreme height of the said mountain to the place where it is called Unicoy or Unaka Mountain, between the Indian towns of Cowee and Old Chota; thence along the main ridge of the said mountain to the southern boundary of this State; upon the following express conditions and subject thereto: *That is to say:*

First. That neither the lands nor the inhabitants westward of the said mountain shall be estimated after the cession made by virtue of this act shall be accepted, in the ascertaining the proportion of this State with the United States in the common expense occasioned by the late war.

Secondly. That the lands laid off or directed to be laid off by an act or acts of the General Assembly of this State for the officers and soldiers thereof, their heirs and assigns, respectively, shall be and inure to the use and benefit of the said officers, their heirs and assigns, respectively; and if the bounds of the lands already prescribed for the officers and soldiers of the continental line of this State shall not contain a sufficient quantity of land fit for cultivation, to make good the several provisions intended by law, that such officer or soldier or his assignee, who shall fall short of his allotment or proportion after all the lands fit for cultivation within the said bounds are appropriated, be permitted to take his quota, or such part thereof as may be deficient, in any other part of the said territory intended to be ceded by virtue of this act, not already appropriated. And where entries have been made agreeable to law, and titles under them not perfected by grant or otherwise, then, and in that case, the governor for the time being shall, and he is hereby required to perfect, from time to time, such titles, in such manner as if this act had never been passed. And that all entries made by, or grants made to, all and every person or persons whatsoever agreeable to law and within the limits hereby intended to be ceded to the United States, shall have the same force and effect as if such cession had not been made; and that all and every right of occupancy and pre-emption and every other right reserved by any act or acts to persons settled on and occupying lands within the limits of the lands hereby intended to be ceded as aforesaid, shall continue to be in full force in the same manner as if the cession had not been made, and as conditions upon which the said lands are ceded to the United States. And further, it shall be understood that if any person or persons shall have by virtue of the act entitled "An act for opening the land office for the redemption of specie and other certificates and discharging the arrears due to the army," passed in the year one thousand seven hundred and eighty-three, made his or their entry



in the office usually called John Armstrong's office and located the same to any spot or piece of ground on which any other person or persons shall have previously located any entry or entries, and then, and in that case, the person or persons having made such entry or entries, or their assignee or assignees, shall have leave, and be at full liberty to remove the location of such entry or entries, to any land on which no entry has been specially located or on any vacant lands included within the limits of the lands hereby intended to be ceded: *Provided*, That nothing herein contained shall extend, or be construed to extend, to the making good of any entry or entries, or any grant or grants heretofore declared void, by any act or acts of the General Assembly of this State.

Thirdly. That all the lands intended to be ceded by virtue of this act to the United States of America, and not appropriated as before mentioned, shall be considered as a common fund for the use and benefit of the United States of America, North Carolina inclusive, according to their respective and usual proportion in the general charge and expenditure, and shall be faithfully disposed of for that purpose and for no other use or purpose whatever.

Fourthly. That the territory so ceded shall be laid out and formed into a State or States,\* containing a suitable extent of territory, the inhabitants of which shall enjoy all the privileges, benefits and advantages set forth in the ordinance of the late Congress for the government of the Western Territory of the United States; that is to say: Whenever the Congress of the United States shall cause to be officially transmitted to the executive authority of this State, an authenticated copy of the act to be passed by the Congress of the United States accepting the cession of territory made by virtue of this act under the express conditions hereby specified, the said Congress shall at the same time, assume the government of the said ceded territory, which they shall execute in a similar manner † to that which they support in the territory west of the Ohio; shall protect the inhabitants against enemies and shall never bar nor deprive them of any privileges which the people in the territory west of the Ohio enjoy: *Provided always*, that no regulations made or to be made by Congress shall tend to emancipate slaves.

Fifthly. That the inhabitants of the said ceded territory shall be liable to pay such sums of money as may, from taking their census, be their just proportion of the debt of the United States, and the arrears of the requisitions of Congress on this State.

Sixthly. That all persons indebted to this State residing in the territory intended to be ceded by virtue of this act shall be held and deemed liable to pay such debt or debts in the same manner, and under the same penalty or penalties, as if this act had never been passed.

Seventhly. That if the Congress of the United States do not accept the cession hereby intended to be made, in due form, and give official notice thereof to the executive of this State, within eighteen months from the passing of this act, then this act shall be of no force or effect whatsoever.

Eighthly. That the laws in force and use in the State of North Carolina, at the time of passing this act shall be, and continue, in full force within the territory hereby ceded until the same shall be repealed or otherwise altered by the Legislative authority of the said territory.

Ninthly. That the lands of non-resident proprietors within the said ceded territory shall not be taxed higher than the lands of residents.

Tenthly. That this act shall not prevent the people now residing south of French Broad, between the rivers Tennessee and Big Pigeon, from entering their pre-emptions in that tract should an office be opened for that purpose under an act of the present General Assembly. *And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid*, That the sovereignty and jurisdiction of this State, in and over the territory aforesaid, and all and every inhabitant

\* See Act of Congress of June 1, 1796, *post*; also resolution of Congress of October 10, 1790, *ante*.

† The "manner" of government here referred to is fully set forth in "An Ordinance for the Government of the Territory of the United States Northwest of the River Ohio," passed July 13, 1787. The "Territory of the United States south of the River Ohio" was, for the purpose of temporary government, declared to be one district by an act of Congress approved May 26, 1790.

thereof, shall be, and remain, the same, in all respects, until the Congress of the United States shall accept the cession to be made by virtue of this act, as if this act had never passed.

Read three times, and ratified in General Assembly the — day of Decmber, A. D. 1789.

CHAS. JOHNSON, *Sp. Sen.*

S. CABARRUS, *Sp. H. C.*

Upon the presentation of this cession act to Congress, that body passed the following act accepting the cession:

AN ACT TO ACCEPT A CESSION OF THE CLAIMS OF THE STATE OF NORTH CAROLINA TO A CERTAIN DISTRICT OF WESTERN TERRITORY.

A deed of cession having been executed, and, in the Senate, offered for acceptance to the United States, of the claims of the State of North Carolina to a district or territory therein described, which deed is in the words following, viz.:

*To all who shall see these Presents.*

We, the underwritten Samuel Johnston and Benjamin Hawkins, Senators in the Congress of the United States of America, duly and constitutionally chosen by the Legislature of the State of North Carolina, send greeting.

WHEREAS, The General Assembly of the State of North Carolina on the — day of December, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and eighty-nine, passed an act entitled “an act for the purpose of ceding to the United States of America certain western lands therein described,” in the words following, to wit:

(Here was recited the cession act of North Carolina.)

*Now, therefore, know ye,* That we, Samuel Johnston and Benjamin Hawkins, Senators aforesaid, by virtue of the power and authority committed to us by the said act, and in the name, and for and on behalf of the said State, do, by these presents, convey, assign, transfer and set over, unto the United States of America, for the benefit of the said States, North Carolina inclusive, all right, title and claim which the said State hath to the sovereignty and territory of the lands situated within the chartered limits of the said State, as bounded and described in the above recited act of the General Assembly, to and for the use and purposes, and on the conditions mentioned in the said act.

In witness whereof we have hereunto subscribed our names and affixed our seals in the Senate chamber at New York, this twenty-fifth day of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and ninety, and in the fourteenth year of the independence of the United States of America.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of

SAM. A. OTIS

SAM. JOHNSTON,

BENJAMIN HAWKINS.

The following act was then passed by Congress:

*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled,* That the said deed be, and the same is hereby accepted.

FREDERICK AUGUSTUS MULENBERG,

*Speaker of the House of Representatives.*

JOHN ADAMS,

*Vice-President of the United States and President of the Senate.*

Approved April the 2d, 1790.

GEORGE WASHINGTON,

*President of the United States.*

The cession thus being accepted and approved, Congress soon afterward passed a law for the government of the new acquisition. This law was in the following language:

## AN ACT FOR THE GOVERNMENT OF THE TERRITORY OF THE UNITED STATES, SOUTH OF THE RIVER OHIO.

SECTION 1. *Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United State of America in Congress assembled,* That the territory of the United States south of the river Ohio, for the purposes of temporary government, shall be one district, the inhabitants of which shall enjoy all the privileges, benefits and advantages, set forth in the ordinance of the late Congress for the government of the territory of the United States northwest of the river the Ohio. And the government of the said territory south of the Ohio, shall be similar to that which is now exercised in the territory northwest of the Ohio, except so far as is otherwise provided in the conditions expressed in an act of Congress of the present session entitled: "An act to accept a cession of the claims of the State of North Carolina to a certain district of western territory."

SEC. 2. *And be it further enacted,* That the salaries of the officers, which the President of the United States shall nominate, and with the advice and consent of the Senate appoint, by virtue of this act shall be the same as those, by law established of similar officers in the government northwest of the river Ohio. And the powers, duties and emoluments of a superintendent of Indian affairs for the Southern Department shall be united with those of the Governor.

Approved May 26, 1790.

Congress having thus made provision for the government of the territory, the duty devolved upon President George Washington to appoint suitable officers to carry the government of the new territory into operation. As is usual in such cases, there were several gentlemen of acknowledged capacity and worth of character, who through their friends were candidates for the office of governor. Mr. Mason of Virginia was presented to the President by Patrick Henry. But the representatives in the North Carolina General Assembly from Washington and Mero Districts, had frequently met in the Assembly a North Carolina gentleman, kindly and sociable in disposition, of graceful and accomplished manner, business-like in his habits, and of extensive information respecting Indian affairs, and, who in addition to these qualifications had manifested many proofs of sympathy and interest for the pioneers of the territory now needing an executive head. This gentleman was William Blount, and besides his eminent fitness for the position; there was an evident propriety in selecting the governor from the State, by which the territory had been ceded to the United States. President Washington, recognizing the validity and force of these considerations, issued to him a commission as governor, which he received August 7, 1790. On the 10th of October following, Gov. Blount reached the scene of his new and important public duties on the frontier, and took up his residence at the house of William Cobb, near Washington Court House, in the fork of Holston and Watauga Rivers, and not far from Watauga Old Fields. Mr. Cobb was a wealthy farmer, an emigrant from North Carolina, and was no stranger to comfort, taste nor style. He entertained elegantly, and kept horses, dogs, rifles and even traps for the comfort and amusement of his guests. Thus



surrounded, Gov. Blount held his first court. The President had appointed as judges in the Territorial Government David Campbell and Joseph Anderson. David Campbell will be remembered as having held a similar position under the State of Franklin, and subsequently under the appointment of North Carolina. Joseph Anderson had been an officer in the Continental service during the Revolutionary war. Gov. Blount appointed Daniel Smith Secretary of the Territorial Government, and also the civil and military officers for the counties forming the district of Washington. The oath of office was administered to these appointees by Judge Campbell. The following are the names of some of the officers: Washington County, November term, 1790—magistrates, Charles Robertson, John Campbell, Edmond Williams and John Chisholm; clerk, James Sevier. Greene County, February term, 1791—magistrates, Joseph Hardin, John Newman, William Wilson, John McNabb and David Rankin; clerk, David Kennedy. David Allison and William Cocke were admitted to the bar. Hawkins County, December term, 1790, clerk, Richard Mitchell.

The private secretaries of the Governor were Willie Blount, his half-brother, afterward governor, and Hugh Lawson White, afterward Judge White, and candidate for the presidency of the United States. Having commissioned the necessary officers for the counties of Washington District, Gov. Blount set out for Mero District on the 27th of November. Mero District was composed of Davidson, Sumner and Tennessee Counties. Davidson County—John Donelson, justice of the peace, and Sampson Williams was appointed sheriff, and upon the presentation of his commission from the governor, was appointed by the court. Sumner County: Benjamin Menees was appointed justice of the peace, his commission being dated December 15, 1790, as were also George Bell, John Philips and Martin Duncan. Anthony Crutcher was appointed clerk, and James Boyd sheriff. At the April term, 1791, John Montgomery produced his commission from Gov. Blount as justice of the peace. In all the counties the Governor had appointed military officers below the rank of brigadier-general. These he was not authorized to appoint, but recommended for appointment Col. John Sevier for Washington District, and Col. James Robertson for Mero District. These commissions were issued in February, 1791. Following is the commission of John Donelson:

WILLIAM BLOUNT, GOVERNOR IN AND OVER THE TERRITORY OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA SOUTH OF THE RIVER OHIO.

*To all who shall see these Presents, Greeting:*

Know ye that I do appoint John Donelson, Esq., of the County of Davidson in the said Territory, a Justice of the Peace for the said County, and do authorize and empower

him to execute and fulfill the duties of that office according to law, and to have and to hold the said office during his good Behavior, or during the existence of the Temporary Government of said Territory, with all the powers, authorities and privileges to the same of right appertaining.

Given under my hand and seal in the said Territory, this 15th day of December, 1790.

By the Governor:

WILLIAM BLOUNT.

DANIEL SMITH.

In his tour through the territory, Gov. Blount endeavored to familiarize himself with the condition and necessities of the inhabitants, with the view of becoming better prepared to discharge his official duties. His position was by no means a sinecure, for, besides the ordinary duties of his gubernatorial office, he was obliged to perform those pertaining to that of superintendent of Indian affairs, having been also appointed to that position on account of his long familiarity with the Indian tribes, with whom the people of his territory were necessarily immediately in contact. It was and is believed that no man could have been selected better qualified than he to reconcile the two classes of citizens more or less estranged by the setting up, continuing in existence and dissolution of the anomalous government of the State of Franklin, and to regulate affairs between the people of the territory, the Indians, and the government of the United States. His superintendency of Indian affairs included the four southern tribes—the Creeks, the Cherokees, the Chickasaws and Choctaws. All of these tribes either resided within or claimed hunting grounds within his own territory, and the collisions continually occurring between some of these Indians and the settlers caused a constant complaint to be addressed to the Governor for redress or mitigation. One reason of these conflicts was, that in all of the tribes there were several distinct parties swayed by opposing influences and motives. Some adhered and favored adherence to the United States; others adhered to the Spanish authorities, who still held possessions with military and trading posts in Florida, and also similar posts within the limits of the United States east of the Mississippi. The Spaniards, notwithstanding treaties of peace and professions of friendship, by artful persuasions and tawdry presents, incited and inflamed the savages to robbery, pillage and murder. To reconcile all these animosities, and to protect the people from their naturally injurious effects, frequent conferences and an extensive correspondence were required, as also was required a high degree of administrative and diplomatic ability. The difficulties of his position were enhanced by the policy of the Government of the United States, which was to avoid offensive measures, and rely upon conciliation and defense with the view of the establishment of peace between the various Indian tribes and the settlements, and the neutralization of the influence of the

Spaniards. Under these circumstances, Gov. Blount found it impossible to afford protection to settlers upon the frontier, aggressions upon whom were numerous and of several years' continuance. The settlers themselves, whose property was being destroyed and whose friends and relatives were being barbarously murdered, could not appreciate this inoffensive policy, but burned with the desire to retaliate in kind upon their savage foe, and, as was perfectly natural, heaped upon the head of Gov. Blount unstinted censure. Neither were they any better satisfied with the treaty concluded August 17, 1790, between the Government of the United States and the Creek nation of Indians, by which a large territory was restored to that nation. The treaties, however, were not observed by the Indians, and, consequently, not by the white people, who complained against the Governor for not adopting vigorous measures of offense. The Indians complained that such measures were adopted, and the United States Government complained that the expense of protecting the frontier accumulated so rapidly. Thus Gov. Blount was the center of a steady fire of complaint from at least three different sources. But like the martyrs of old, the Governor bore these complaints with equanimity, and at length the people, ascertaining that the fault was not with him, withdrew their complaints, and very generally sustained his authority.

Besides difficulties with the Indians the duty devolved upon the Governor of preventing the settlement by the Tennessee Company of their immense purchase in the Great Bend of the Tennessee River, which was at length effectually prevented by the State of Georgia annulling the sale. He had also to raise a force of 332 men in the district of Washington for service under Gen. St. Clair at Fort Washington. These duties, however, he was obliged to permit to fall on Gen. Sevier, his own time being so fully engrossed with his Indian superintendency, in which capacity he made a treaty with the Cherokees on the Holston July 2, 1791. Indian hostilities, however, continued, notwithstanding the treaty of Holston, and numerous people were killed for a number of years. During the next year the Governor held another conference with the Indians, this time at Nashville with the Chickasaws and Choctaws, and in company with Gen. Pickens, who attended the conference at the request of the Secretary of War. There was a large delegation of chiefs in attendance; goods were distributed among them, which gave renewed assurances of peace. A brief account of this conference was written by the Governor to the Secretary of War under date of August 31, 1792, as follows:

On the 10th inst. the conference with the Chickasaws and Choctaws ended; there was a very full representation of the former, but not of the latter, owing, there is reason to



believe, to the Spanish influences. During the conference Gen. Pickens and myself received the strongest assurances of peace and friendship for the United States from these nations, and I believe they were made with great sincerity.

In this way was the Governor engaged for the first two years of his term. In 1792 he turned his attention to civil government, and on the 11th of June, 1792, he issued an ordinance circumscribing the limits of Greene and Hawkins Counties, and creating Knox and Jefferson Counties. This ordinance fixed the time for holding courts of pleas and quarter sessions in these two new counties. A number of acts were also passed by the Governor and his two judges, David Campbell and Joseph Anderson, the first one being passed November 20, 1792. This act authorized the levying of a tax for building or repairing court houses, prisons and stocks in the respective counties, limiting the tax to 50 cents on each poll, and to 17 cents on each 100 acres of land.

According to the congressional ordinance for the government of the territory of the United States south of the Ohio River, the governor and the judges, or a majority of them, were authorized to adopt and publish such laws, criminal and civil, as might be necessary and best suited to the circumstances of the district, which, being from time to time reported to Congress and by that body approved, were to be the law of the Territory until the organization of the General Assembly, but afterward the General Assembly was to have the power to alter them as they might see proper. According to this ordinance the Territorial Legislature was to consist of the governor, Legislative Council and the House of Representatives. The General Assembly met at Knoxville, August 25, 1794, the Legislative Council being composed as follows: The Hon. Griffith Rutherford, the Hon. John Sevier, the Hon. James Winchester, the Hon. Stockley Donelson and the Hon. Parmenas Taylor. The Hon. Griffith Rutherford was unanimously elected president; George Roulstone, clerk, and Christopher Shoat, door-keeper. The House of Representatives was composed as follows: David Wilson, James White, James Ford, William Cocke, Joseph McMinn, George Rutledge, Joseph Hardin, George Doherty, Samuel Wear, Alexander Kelly and John Baird. A message was sent by the house to the council, and also one to the governor, notifying each respectively of its readiness to proceed to business. The next day they adopted rules of decorum and also rules to be observed in the transaction of business, prepared by a joint committee of the two houses. When all the preliminaries had been arranged the following bills were reported: An act to regulate the military of this Territory; an act to establish the judicial courts and to regulate the proceedings thereof; an act making provision for the poor; an act to enable executors and administrators to

make rights for lands due upon bonds of persons deceased; an act declaring what property is to be taxable, and for collecting the tax thereon; an act to levy a tax for the support of the Government of 1794, and an act to provide relief for such of the military as have been wounded by the Indians in the late invasion.

By the ordinance for the government of the Territory it was provided that as soon as a Legislature shall be formed in the district, the council and house, assembled in one room, shall have authority, by joint ballot, to elect a delegate to Congress. Under this authority the two houses met September 3, 1794, at the court house and balloted for a delegate to Congress. The joint committee to superintend the balloting was composed of Parmenas Taylor, from the council, and George Doherty and Leroy Taylor on the part of the house, and the result of the balloting was the election of James White as delegate to Congress. On the next day a resolution was adopted by the council requesting the concurrence of the house to the taking of a new census of the people, to be made on the last Saturday of July, 1795.

Toward the latter part of the session the two houses had considerable difficulty in arranging the details of the Tax Bill. Amendments were proposed by the one house and uniformly rejected by the other. During this discussion the council submitted to the house the following estimate to show that its own schedule of taxation was ample in its provisions for the raising of revenue. The following is the estimate of the contingent fund: 10,000 white polls at  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents, \$1,250; 1,100 black polls at 50 cents, \$550; 100 stud horses at \$4, \$400; 200 town lots at \$1, \$200; taxes of law proceedings, grants, deeds, etc., \$750; 1,000,000 acres of land at  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents, \$1,250; total \$4,400. This was while the council was insisting that a tax of  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents on each 100 acres of land was sufficient, while the house insisted that the tax on land should be 25 cents on each 100 acres. Failing to agree on Saturday, September 27, the two houses adjourned until Monday, the 29th, and on that day, after an attempt at compromise by fixing the land tax at 18 cents on each 100 acres, the council at length yielded and sent the house the following message: "The council accede to your proposition in taxing land at 25 cents per 100 acres; you will, therefore, send two of your members to see the amendments made accordingly." Following is the resolution of the house fixing the pay of the members of both houses: "*Resolved*, that the wages of the members, clerks and door-keepers of both houses be estimated as follows: For each member per day, \$2.50; for each clerk per day, \$2.50; for each clerk for stationery \$25; for each door-keeper per day, \$1.75; each member, clerk and

door-keeper to be allowed for ferriages; every twenty-five miles, riding to and from the assembly, \$2.50." On the last day of the session, September 30, among other joint resolutions the following was passed: "That the thanks of this General Assembly be presented to Gov. Blount for the application of his abilities and attention in forwarding their business as representatives; more especially in compiling and arranging the system of court law, and that as there appears to be no more business before this assembly his excellency is requested to prorogue the same to the first Monday in October, 1795." The Governor after acknowledging that the laws presented for his approval were essential to the public happiness, and that no law of importance was omitted, sent the following prorogation:

WILLIAM BLOUNT, GOVERNOR IN AND OVER THE TERRITORY OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, SOUTH OF THE RIVER OHIO.

*To the President and Gentlemen of the Legislative Council, and the Speaker and Gentlemen of the House of Representatives.*

The session of the General Assembly is prorogued until the first Monday in the month of October, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-five, then to commence at this place. Given under my hand at Knoxville, September 30, 1794.

By the Governor, DANIEL SMITH.

WILLIAM BLOUNT

The expense of the Legislative Council for the August and September session, 1794, amounted to \$970.71 $\frac{2}{3}$ , and of the House of Representatives for the same session, \$1,700.16 $\frac{3}{4}$ . The Territorial Assembly, although prorogued as above narrated, was convened by the Governor on June 29, 1795. In his message the Governor said: "The principal object for which I have called you together at an earlier period than that to which the General Assembly stood prorogued, is to afford an opportunity to inquire whether it is as I have been taught to believe, the wish of the majority of the people that this Territory should become a State, when by taking the enumeration there should prove to be 60,000 free inhabitants therein, or at such earlier period as Congress shall pass an act for its admission, and if it is to take such measures as may be proper to effect the desired change of the form of government as early as practicable." On the 7th of July, following, John Sevier from the joint committee appointed for the purpose offered the following address to the Governor:

*Sir:*—The members of the Legislative Council, and of the House of Representatives beg leave to express to your Excellency their approbation of the object for which they were principally called together; and feeling convinced that the great body of our constituents are sensible of the many defects of our present mode of government, and of the great and permanent advantages to be derived from a change and speedy representation in Congress; the General Assembly of this Territory will during the present session, endeavor to devise such means as may have a tendency to effect that desirable object, and in doing so we shall be happy in meeting with your Excellency's concurrence.



The treasurer of Washington and Hamilton Districts submitted his report at this session of the Legislature. A joint committee, to whom it was referred, in the conclusion of their report used the following language: "Your committee beg leave to observe that the moneys arising from the tax levied by the last General Assembly very much exceed their most sanguine expectations, and that such will be the state of the treasury department, that the next tax to be levied may be very much lessened and then be fully commensurate and adequate to defray every expenditure and necessary contingency of our government." It is believed that this flattering condition of the treasury had its influence in determining public sentiment more strongly in favor of the change in the form of government from a Territory to a State. The preference of the people of the Territory for a State form of government was recognized by the Legislature, which passed an act for the enumeration of the inhabitants of the Territory, in which it was provided that "if it shall appear that there are 60,000 inhabitants therein, the governor be authorized and requested to recommend to the people of the respective counties, to elect five persons of each county to represent them in convention to meet at Knoxville at such time as he shall judge proper for the purpose of forming a constitution or form of government for the permanent government for the people who are or shall become residents upon the lands by the State of North Carolina ceded to the United States." So general had become the conviction that the territorial would soon be superseded by a State government, that this session of the Territorial General Assembly was of but short duration—thirteen days—and its work, other than that outlined above, comparatively unimportant, and in accordance with a concurrent request of the two houses, the Governor sent the following message:

WILLIAM BLOUNT, GOVERNOR IN AND OVER THE TERRITORY OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, SOUTH OF THE RIVER OHIO.

*To the President and Gentlemen of the Legislative Council and the Speaker and Gentlemen of the House of Representatives.*

The business of this session being completed the General Assembly is prorogued *sine die*.

Given under my hand and seal at Knoxville, July 11, 1795.

WILLIAM BLOUNT.

By the Governor,

THOMAS H. WILLIAMS, *Pro. Sec'y.*

The results of the enumeration of the people under the act passed as above recited were as follows:

TERRITORY OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, SOUTH OF THE RIVER OHIO.

Schedule of the aggregate amount of each description of persons, taken agreeably to "An act providing for the enumeration of the inhabitants of the Territory of the United States of America south of the River Ohio," passed July 11, 1795.

COUNTIES.	Free white males, 16 years and up- ward, including heads of families.	Free white males under 16 years.	Free white males, including heads of families.	All other free per- sons.	Slaves.	Total Popula- tion.	Yeas.	Nays.
Jefferson.....	1706	2225	3021	112	776	7840	714	316
Hawkins.....	2666	3279	4767	147	2472	13331	1651	534
Greene.....	1567	2203	3350	52	446	7638	560	495
Knox.....	2721	2723	3664	100	2365	11573	1100	128
Washington.....	2013	2578	4311	225	978	10105	873	145
Sullivan.....	1803	2340	3499	38	777	8457	715	125
Sevier.....	628	1045	1503	273	129	3578	261	55
Blount.....	585	817	1231	.....	183	2816	476	16
Davidson.....	728	695	1192	6	992	3613	96	517
Sumner.....	1382	1595	2316	1	1076	6370	.....	.....
Tennessee.....	380	444	700	19	398	1941	58	231
Totals.....	16179	19994	29554	973	10613	77262	6504	2562

I, William Blount, Governor in and over the Territory of the United States of America, south of the River Ohio, do certify that the schedule is made in conformity with the schedules of the sheriffs of the respective counties in the said Territory, and that the schedules of the said sheriffs are lodged in my office.

Given under my hand at Knoxville November 28, 1795.

WILLIAM BLOUNT.

The Territory being thus found to contain more than the number of inhabitants required by the ordinance to authorize the formation of a State government, Gov. Blount issued the following proclamation:

*William Blount, Governor in and over the Territory of the United States of America, south of the River Ohio, to the people thereof:*

WHEREAS by an act passed on the 11th of July last, entitled "An act providing for the enumeration of the inhabitants of the Territory of the United States of America south of the River Ohio," it is enacted "that if upon taking the enumeration of the people in the said Territory as by that directed, it shall appear that there are 60,000 inhabitants therein, counting the whole of the free persons, including those bound to service for a term of years and excluding Indians not taxed and adding three-fifths of all other persons, the Governor be authorized and requested to recommend to the people of the respective counties to elect five persons for each county, to represent them in convention to meet at Knoxville at such time as he shall judge proper for the purpose of forming a constitution or permanent form of government."

And, WHEREAS, upon taking the enumeration of the inhabitants of said Territory, as by the act directed, it does appear that there are 60,000 free inhabitants therein and more, besides other persons; now I, the said William Blount, Governor, etc., do recommend to the people of the respective counties to elect five persons for each county, on the 18th and 19th days of December next, to represent them in a convention to meet at Knoxville on the 11th day of January next, for the purpose of forming a constitution or permanent form of government.

And to the end that a perfect uniformity in the election of the members of the convention may take place in the respective counties, I, the said William Blount, Governor, etc., do further recommend to the sheriffs or their deputies, respectively, to open and hold polls of election for members of convention, on the 18th and 19th days of December, as aforesaid, in the same manner as polls of election have heretofore been held for members

of the General Assembly; and that all free males twenty one years of age and upward, be considered entitled to vote by ballot for five persons for members of convention, and that the sheriffs or their deputies holding such polls of election give certificates to the five persons in each county having the greatest number of votes, of their being duly elected members of convention.

And I, the said William Blount, Governor, etc., think proper here to declare that this recommendation is not intended to have, nor ought to have, any effect whatever upon the present temporary form of government; and that the present temporary form will continue to be exercised in the same manner as if it had never been issued, until the convention shall have formed and published a constitution or permanent form of government.

Done at Knoxville November 28, 1795.

WILLIAM BLOUNT.

By the Governor, WILLIE BLOUNT, *Pro. Secretary.*

In accordance with the suggestions of this proclamation, elections were held in each of the eleven counties in the Territory, for five members of the convention from each county. These members met at Knoxville, January 11, 1796. Following are the names of the members who appeared, produced their credentials and took their seats:

Jefferson County—Joseph Anderson, George Doherty, Alexander Outlaw, William Roddy, Archibald Roane. Hawkins County—James Berry, William Cocke, Thomas Henderson, Joseph McMinn, Richard Mitchell. Greene County—Elisha Baker, Stephen Brooks, Samuel Frazier, John Galbreath, William Rankin. Knox County—John Adair, William Blount, John Crawford, Charles McClung, James White. Washington County—Landon Carter, Samuel Handley, James Stuart, Leroy Taylor, John Tipton. Sullivan County—William C. C. Claiborne, Richard Gammon, George Rutledge, John Rhea, John Shelby, Jr. Sevier County—Peter Bryan, Thomas Buckingham, John Clack, Samuel Wear, Spencer Clack. Blount County—Joseph Black, David Craig, Samuel Glass, James Greenaway, James Houston. Davidson County—Thomas Hardeman, Andrew Jackson, Joel Lewis, John McNairy, James Robertson. Sumner County—Edward Douglass, W. Douglass, Daniel Smith, D. Shelby, Isaac Walton. Tennessee County—James Ford, William Fort, Robert Prince, William Prince, Thomas Johnson.

The convention was organized by the election of William Blount, president; William Maclin, secretary, and John Sevier, Jr., reading and engrossing clerk. John Rhea was appointed door-keeper. On motion of Mr. White, seconded by Mr. Roddy, it was ordered that the next morning's session commence with prayer, and that a sermon be delivered by Rev. Mr. Carrick. In the act providing for the enumeration of the inhabitants of the Territory, it was provided that each member of the convention should be entitled to receive the same wages as a member of that session of the Assembly—\$2.50 per day. The convention on the second day of its session adopted the following resolutions:



*Resolved*, That economy is an admirable trait in any government and that, in fixing the salaries of the officers thereof, the situation and resources of the country should be attended to.

*Resolved*, That ten shillings and sixpence, Virginia currency, per day to every member is a sufficient compensation for his services in the Convention, and one dollar for every thirty miles they travel in coming to and returning from the Convention, and that the members pledge themselves each one to the other that they will not draw a greater sum out of the public treasury.

After substituting \$1.50 for 10s. 6d. in the second resolution, both resolutions were unanimously adopted. It was then resolved that the convention appoint two members from each county to draft a constitution, and that each county name its members, and accordingly the following individuals were named as members of the committee.

Blount County—Daniel Craig and Joseph Black. Davidson County—Andrew Jackson and John McNairy. Greene County—Samuel Frazier and William Rankin. Hawkins County—Thomas Henderson and William Cocke. Jefferson County—Joseph Anderson and William Roddye. Knox County—William Blount and Charles McClung. Sullivan County—William C. C. Claiborne and John Rhea. Sumner County—D. Shelby and Daniel Smith. Sevier County—John Clack and Samuel Wear. Tennessee County—Thomas Johnson and William Fort. Washington County—John Tipton and James Stuart. On motion of Mr. McMinn, the sense of the convention was taken as to whether a declaration of rights be prefixed to the constitution, which being decided in the affirmative the committee was directed to present as early as practicable a declaration or bill of rights to be thus prefixed. A bill of rights was consequently prepared, but later in the session it was decided by the convention to affix it to the constitution as the eleventh article thereof.

On the 18th of January an important question was presented to the convention by Mr. Outlaw, as to whether the Legislature should consist of two houses. This question being decided in the affirmative, another question was raised by Mr. McNairy as to whether the two houses in the Legislature should be of equal numbers and of equal powers. This question, being decided in the affirmative, was the next day reconsidered on motion of Mr. McNairy, and amended so as to read as follows: In lieu of the words "two houses," insert "one House of Representatives," and that no bill or resolution shall be passed unless by two thirds of the whole number of members present. This proposed form of the legislative branch of the government was, upon reflection, no more satisfactory than "two houses of equal numbers and powers," and on the 20th of January the convention again resolved itself into committee of the whole on this question; and Mr. Robertson, chairman of the committee, reported

that "the Legislature shall consist of two branches, a Senate and a House of Representatives, organized on the principles of the constitution of North Carolina, to be elected once in two years; and that the members of each house be elected by the same electors, and that the qualifications of the members of each house be the same, until the next enumeration of the people of the United States, and then to be represented by members, retaining the principle of two representatives to one senator; provided the ratio shall be such as that both shall not exceed forty until the number of the people exceed 200,000, and that the number shall never exceed sixty."

Although in the report of the proceedings of the convention no further reference is made to discussions upon this part of the constitution, yet on January 30, when the draft of the constitution was considered in committee of the whole, this clause is found to have undergone considerable change. It was then provided that the General Assembly should consist of a Senate and a House of Representatives, the former to consist of one and the latter of two members from each county, to continue thus for sixteen years from the commencement of the second session, and after that representation should be apportioned according to numbers in such manner that the whole number of senators and representatives should not exceed thirty-nine until the number of free white persons should be 200,000, and after that (preserving the same ratio of two representatives to one senator) the entire number of senators and representatives should never exceed sixty. As finally adopted on February 4, 1796, this portion of the constitution assumed the following form:

#### ARTICLE I.

SECTION 1. The legislative authority of this State shall be vested in a General Assembly, which shall consist of a Senate and House of Representatives, both dependent on the people.

SEC. 2. Within three years after the first meeting of the General Assembly, and within every subsequent term of seven years, an enumeration of the *taxable inhabitants* shall be made in such manner as shall be directed by law. The number of representatives shall at the several periods of making such enumeration be fixed by the Legislature, and apportioned among the several counties according to the number of taxable inhabitants in each, and shall never be less than twenty-two, nor greater than twenty-six, until the number of taxable inhabitants shall be 40,000; and after that event at such ratio that the whole number of representatives shall never exceed forty.

SEC. 3. The number of senators shall at the several periods of making the enumeration before mentioned be fixed by the Legislature, and apportioned among the districts, formed as hereinafter directed, according to the number of taxable inhabitants in each, and shall never be less than one-third, nor more than one-half of the number of representatives.

SEC. 4. The senators shall be chosen by districts, to be formed by the Legislature, each district containing such a number of taxable inhabitants as shall be entitled to elect

not more than three senators. When a district shall be composed of two or more counties they shall be adjoining, and no county shall be divided in forming a district.

Thus was concluded perhaps the most important part of the work of the convention. It is doubtless more curious than profitable to reflect upon what would have been the consequences to the people of the State had either of the earlier propositions been adopted—to form a Legislature consisting of two houses of equal power and numbers, or of “one House of Representatives.” It is an interesting study, however, to note the varying forms this subject assumed in the minds of those primitive constitution builders, illustrating as it does the general principle that the wisest form or course is seldom that first suggested to the mind. There are other features in this constitution, declared by Jefferson to be the “least imperfect and most republican” of the systems of government adopted by any of the American States, worthy of especial comment. Several of its features or principles had previously been enacted into laws by North Carolina. So far as those laws are concerned these principles had their origin in the demands of the times, or the necessities of the people; and experience, that great teacher of the wise legislator, had determined their wisdom by demonstrating their adaptability to the ends they were designed to subserve. This adaptability being thus clearly proven by experience, the principles were embodied in the constitution for the purpose of conferring upon the people with certainty the benefits to be derived from their operation, and of placing them beyond the power and caprice of Legislatures; for it is worthy of remark that the present, no matter how much confidence it may possess in its own wisdom and in that of the past, has very little respect for that of the future. One of these principles was enacted into a law, in 1777, by the Legislature of North Carolina, as follows: “That every county court shall annually select and nominate a freeholder, of sufficient circumstances, to execute the office of sheriff, who shall thereupon be commissioned by the governor, or commander-in-chief, to execute that office for one year.” The Constitution of Tennessee, Article VI, Section 1, reads as follows: “There shall be appointed in each county, by the county court, one sheriff, one coroner, one trustee, and a sufficient number of constables, who shall hold their offices for two years. They shall also have power to appoint one register and one ranger for the county, who shall hold their offices during good behavior. The sheriff and coroner shall be commissioned by the governor.” In 1784 the Legislature of North Carolina passed the following law:

WHEREAS, It is contrary to the spirit of the constitution and the principles of a genuine republic that any person possessing a lucrative office should hold a seat in the General Assembly;



*Therefore, be it enacted, etc.,* That from and after the present session of the General Assembly, every person holding a public office of profit, either by stated salary or commissions, shall be and they are hereby declared to be incapable of being elected a member to serve in the General Assembly, or to enjoy seats therein."

This principle was embodied in the constitution of Tennessee in the following form: "No person, who heretofore hath been or hereafter may be a collector or holder of public monies, shall have a seat in either house of the General Assembly." The next section was of similar import. In the year 1785 North Carolina passed the following law: "That from and after passing of this act the several county courts of pleas and quarter sessions within this State shall have, hold and exercise jurisdiction in all actions of trespass in ejectment, *formedon in descender*, remainder and reverter, dower and partition, and of trespass *quare clausum fregit*, any law to the contrary notwithstanding," etc.

The constitution of Tennessee, Article V, Section 7, provides that "the judges or justices of the inferior courts of law shall have power in all civil cases, to issue writs of *certiorari*, to remove any cause or a transcript thereof from any inferior jurisdiction into their court, on sufficient cause supported by oath of affirmation." North Carolina enacted in 1786 that the public tax on each and every poll should equal the public tax on 300 acres of land. The constitution of Tennessee, Article I, Section 26, provides that "no freeman shall be taxed higher than 100 acres of land, and no slave higher than 200 acres on each poll." But perhaps the most remarkable feature of this constitution was that respecting the tax to be levied on land, in the following language: "All lands liable to taxation in this State, held by deed, entry or grant, shall be taxed equally and uniformly in such manner that no 100 acres shall be taxed higher than another, except town lots," etc.

It is not certain whence this idea was derived. It is not to be found in the constitution of North Carolina, nor in that of any of the other States. It probably originated in the Territorial Legislature of 1794, in which, as will be seen by reference to the preceding pages, the most serious contest occurred over the question of what the tax should be upon each 100 acres of land, whether 12½ cents, 18 or 25 cents, the decision being finally in favor of 25 cents. The idea of taxing lands according to quantity instead of according to value was probably derived from the fact of the equal value of the lands at that time, and was suggested to the constitutional convention of 1796 by the course pursued by the Territorial Legislature of 1794. At any rate it was embodied in the first constitution of this State, where it remained an anomalous feature, working greater and greater injustice, as lands became more and more unequal in value, until the adoption of the constitution of 1834, when the

principle was adopted of taxing lands as well as other property according to their value.

With reference to the qualifications of electors the constitution of Tennessee provided that "Every freeman of the age of twenty-one years and upwards possessing a freehold in the county wherein he may vote, and being an inhabitant of this State, and every freeman being an inhabitant of any one county in this State six months immediately preceding the election, shall be entitled to vote for members of the General Assembly for the county in which he may reside." This was a step considerably in advance of the provisions of the North Carolina constitution, which required an elector to be a freeman, a resident of the county twelve months, and to be possessed of a freehold of fifty acres in the county in which he resided, to qualify him to vote for senator. To be qualified to vote for representative he was required to have been a resident of his county twelve months, and to have paid public taxes. But it will be observed that under both these constitutions colored men, if free, could vote.

Then in reference to the qualifications of office-holders, the constitution of Tennessee provided, like that of North Carolina, that no clergyman or preacher of the gospel should be eligible to a seat in either house of the General Assembly. With regard to the religious qualification of office-holders in general, it is interesting to note the advance made in public opinion during the twenty years from 1776 to 1796. In the North Carolina constitution it was provided that "No person who shall deny the being of God, or the truth of the Protestant religion, or the divine authority of either the Old or New Testament, or who shall hold religious principles incompatible with the freedom or safety of the State, shall be capable of holding any office or place of trust or profit in the civil department of this State." The constitutional convention of Tennessee, when discussing this question, evidently had the constitution of North Carolina before them, and were determined to improve upon that instrument. When the first draft of the constitution was presented, January 30, 1796, no reference was made to religious qualifications for office-holders; but on February 2, Mr. Doherty moved, and Mr. Roan seconded the motion, that the following be inserted as a section in the constitution: "No person who publicly denies the being of God, and future rewards and punishments, or the divine authority of the Old and New Testaments, shall hold any office in the civil department in this State;" which was agreed to. Mr. Carter then moved, and Mr. Mitchell seconded the motion, that the words "or the divine authority of the Old and New Testaments" be struck out, which being objected to, the yeas and nays were called for,

and resulted in an affirmative victory by a vote of twenty-seven votes to twenty-six. Afterward the word "publicly" was struck out, and this section of the constitution was adopted in the following form: "No person who denies the being of God, or a future state of rewards and punishments, shall hold any office in the civil department of this State."

One or two features of the bill of rights are deemed worthy of notice in this connection. The twenty-ninth section, adopted through the efforts of William Blount, was as follows: "That an equal participation of the free navigation of the Mississippi is one of the inherent rights of the citizens of this State; it cannot, therefore, be conceded to any prince, potentate, power, person or persons whatever." Section 31 was as follows: "That the people residing south of French Broad and Holston, between the rivers Tennessee and Big Pigeon, are entitled to the right of pre-emption and occupation in that tract." It is stated that the name "Tennessee" was suggested as the name of the State by Andrew Jackson, the members from the county of Tennessee consenting to the loss of that name by their county, on condition that it be assumed by the State.

The president of the convention was instructed to take the constitution into his safe keeping until a secretary of State should be appointed under it, and then to deliver it to him. The president was also instructed to send a copy of the constitution to the Secretary of State of the United States; and he was also instructed to "issue writs of election to the sheriffs of the several counties, for holding the first election of members of the General Assembly and a governor, under the authority of the constitution of Tennessee, to bear teste of this date." (February 6, 1790.) On the 9th of February a copy of the constitution was forwarded to the Secretary of State, Mr. Pickering, by Joseph McMinn, who was instructed to remain at the seat of the Federal Government long enough to ascertain whether members of Congress from Tennessee would be permitted to take their seats in Congress. Mr. White, who was then territorial delegate in that body, was urged by Mr. McMinn to apply for the admission of Tennessee into the Union. In response to the application of Mr. White, Congress at length passed the following act, receiving the State of Tennessee into the Union:

WHEREAS, By the acceptance of the deed of cession of the State of North Carolina, Congress are bound to lay out into one or more States the territory thereby ceded to the United States.

*Be it enacted, etc.,* That the whole of the territory ceded to the United States by the State of North Carolina shall be one State, and the same is hereby declared to be one of the United States of America, on an equal footing with the original States, in all respects whatever, by the name and title of the State of Tennessee. That until the next general census the said State of Tennessee shall be entitled to one representative in the House of



Representatives of the United States; and in all other respects as far as they may be applicable, the laws of the United States shall extend to and have force in the State of Tennessee, in the same manner as if that State had originally been one of the United States.

Approved June the 1st, 1796.

GEORGE WASHINGTON,

*President of the United States.*

JONATHAN DAYTON,

*Speaker of the House of Representatives.*

SAMUEL LIVERMORE,

*President of the Senate, pro. tem.*

Writs of election were issued by the president of the convention to the sheriffs of the several counties, requiring them to hold the first election of members of the General Assembly, and governor of the State. The Legislature thus elected assembled at Knoxville March 28. The Senate was constituted as follows: From Tennessee County, James Ford; from Sumner County, James Winchester; from Knox County, James White; from Jefferson County, George Doherty; from Greene County, Samuel Frazier; from Washington County, John Tipton; from Sullivan County, George Rutledge; from Sevier County, John Clack; from Blount County, Alexander Kelly; from Davidson County, Joel Lewis; from Hawkins County, Joseph McMinn.

The Senate was organized by the election of James Winchester, speaker; Francis A. Ramsey, clerk; Nathaniel Buckingham, assistant clerk; Thomas Bounds, door-keeper. The House of Representatives was composed of the following gentlemen: Blount County, Joseph Black and James Houston; Davidson County, Seth Lewis and Robert Weakley; Greene County, Joseph Conway and John Gass; Hawkins County, John Cocke and Thomas Henderson; Jefferson County, Alexander Outlaw and Adam Peck; Knox County, John Crawford and John Manifee; Sullivan County, David Looney and John Rhea; Sevier County, Spencer Clack and Samuel Newell; Sumner County, Stephen Cantrell and William Montgomery; Tennessee County, William Fort and Thomas Johnson; Washington County, John Blair and James Stuart. James Stuart was chosen speaker; Thomas H. Williams, clerk; John Sevier, Jr., assistant clerk, and John Rhea, door-keeper.

The two houses being thus organized met in the representatives chamber, to open and publish the returns of the election in the several counties for governor. From these returns it appeared that "citizen John Sevier is duly and constitutionally elected governor of this State, which was accordingly announced by the speaker of the Senate, in presence of both houses of the General Assembly. On the same day a joint committee was appointed "to wait on his Excellency, John Sevier, and request his attendance in the House of Representatives, to-morrow, at 12 o'clock, to be qualified agreeably to the constitution of the State of Tennes-

see." Gov. William Blount was requested to be present at the qualification of the governor elect, and on March 30, "both houses having convened in the representative chamber, the several oaths prescribed for the qualification of the governor were duly administered to him by the honorable Joseph Anderson." After his inauguration Gov. Sevier presented the following address:

*Gentlemen of the Senate and House of Representatives:*

The high and honorable appointment conferred upon me by the free suffrage of my countrymen, fills my breast with gratitude, which, I trust, my future life will manifest. I take this early opportunity to express, through you, my thanks in the strongest terms of acknowledgment. I shall labor to discharge with fidelity the trust reposed in me; and if such my exertions should prove satisfactory, the first wish of my heart will be gratified. Gentlemen, accept of my best wishes for your individual and public happiness; and, relying upon your wisdom and patriotism, I have no doubt but the result of your deliberations will give permanency and success to our new system of government, so wisely calculated to secure the liberty and advance the happiness and prosperity of our fellow citizens.

JOHN SEVIER.

The duty of electing United States Senators for Tennessee still remained unperformed. The mode adopted at that time was as follows: The following message was sent by the House to the Senate: "This House propose to proceed to the election of two senators to represent this State in the Congress of the United States; and that the Senate and House of Representatives do convene in the House of Representatives for that purpose to-morrow at 10 o'clock; and do propose Mr. William Blount, Mr. William Cocke and Mr. Joseph Anderson, as candidates for the Senate." The Senate replied by the following message: "We concur with your message as to the time and place for the election by you proposed, and propose Dr. James White to be added to the nomination of candidates for the Senate." On the next day the names of Joseph Anderson and James White were withdrawn, leaving only William Blount and William Cocke as candidates, who were thereupon duly and constitutionally elected the first United States senators from Tennessee. Addresses were prepared by committees appointed for that purpose to William Blount as retiring governor, and as senator elect, and to William Cocke as senator elect, to which both these gentlemen appropriately replied. William Maclin was elected Secretary of State; Landon Carter, treasurer of the districts of Washington and Hamilton, and William Black, treasurer of the district of Mero. John McNairy, Archibald Roane and Willie Blount, were elected judges of superior courts of law and equity. This election occurred April 10. John McNairy and Willie Blount declined the appointment, and Howell Tatum and W. C. C. Claiborne were commissioned in their places respectively. John C. Hamilton was appointed attorney for the State, in place of Howell Tatum, appointed judge.



JOHN SEVIER





On the 14th of April a curious piece of legislation was attempted in the House of Representatives: "The bill to preclude persons of a certain description from being admitted as witnesses, etc., was then taken up, to which Mr. Gass proposed the following amendment: 'That from and after the passing of this act, if any person in this State shall publicly deny the being of a God and a future state of rewards and punishments, or shall publicly deny the divine authority of the Old and New Testaments, on being convicted thereof, by the testimony of two witnesses, shall forfeit and pay the sum of — dollars for every such offense, etc.' The foregoing amendment being received the question was taken on the amended bill which was carried. Whereupon the yeas and nays were called upon by Mr. Johnson and Mr. Gass, which stood as follows: Yeas: Messrs. Blair, Plack, Conway, Clack, Crawford, Gass, Houston, Johnson, Looney, Montgomery, Newell, Outlaw, Peck and Weakly—14. Nays: Messrs. Cantrell, Cocke, Fort, Henderson, Lewis, Manifee, Rhea—7. Mr. Lewis entered the following protest: "To this question we enter our dissent, as we conceive the law to be an inferior species of persecution, which is always a violation of the law of nature, and also that it is a violation of our constitution. Seth Lewis, John Cocke, William Fort, John Rhea, Stephen Cantrell, John Manifee, Thomas Henderson." On the 16th of April this question came up in the Senate, where the following proceedings were had: "Ordered that this bill be read, which being read was on motion rejected." On the 22d of April, both houses of the General Assembly being convened in the representatives' chamber, proceeded to ballot for four electors to elect a President and Vice-President of the United States, when the following gentlemen were chosen: Daniel Smith, Joseph Greer, Hugh Neilson and Joseph Anderson. Attorneys-general were also similarly elected on the same day; for Washington District, Hopkins Lacey; Hamilton District, John Lowrey; Mero District, Howell Tatum.

The above mentioned action of the General Assembly, in electing four electors, was in accordance with a law passed by which it was provided that the General Assembly should, from time to time, by joint ballot, elect the number of electors required by the constitution of the United States. The error was in supposing that the State was entitled to two representatives in Congress as well as two Senators, and in accordance with this supposition an act was passed April 20, 1796, dividing the State in two divisions, the first to be called the Holston Division, and to be composed of the districts of Washington and Hamilton; the second to be called Cumberland Division, to be composed of Mero District; each of which divisions should be entitled to elect one representative to Congress.

When it was learned that Tennessee was entitled to only one representative in Congress, Gov. Sevier convened the Legislature in extra session to meet on the 30th of July for the purpose of making an alteration in the act directing the mode of electing representatives to Congress; "for by a late act of Congress the intended number of our representatives is diminished, of course it proportionably lessens our number of electors for President and Vice-President of the United States." In accordance with the necessities of the situation and the recommendations of the governor, the Legislature on the 3d of August, passed the following law:

*"Be it enacted, etc.:* That an election shall be held at the respective court houses in each county in this State on the first Tuesday in October next and on the day next succeeding, to elect one representative to represent this State in the Congress of the United States."

In an act passed October 8 provision was made for the election of electors for the districts of Washington, Hamilton and Mero, one for each district. William Blount and William Cocke were again elected senators to Congress, and under the act providing for the election of electors of President and Vice-President, the State was divided into three districts, Washington, Hamilton and Mero, and three persons from each county in each district were named to elect the elector for their respective districts. The electors named in the act were to meet at Jonesborough, Knoxville, and Nashville, and elect an elector for each district, and the three electors thus elected were to meet at Knoxville on the first Wednesday in December, "to elect a President and Vice-President of the United States, pursuant to an act of Congress. Andrew Jackson was elected representative from Tennessee to the Congress of the United States, and when that body assembled at Philadelphia, December 5, 1799, Mr. Jackson appeared and took his seat.

On the 31st of January, 1797, an act was passed by Congress giving effect to the laws of the United States within the State of Tennessee. By the second section of this act the State was made one district, the district court therein to consist of one judge who was required to hold four sessions annually, three months apart, and the first to be held on the first Monday of April, the sessions to be held alternately at Knoxville and Nashville. This judge was to receive an annual compensation of \$800. By the fourth section of this act, the entire State of Tennessee was made one collection district, the collector to reside at Palmyra, "which shall be the only port of entry or delivery within the said district of any goods, wares and merchandise, not the growth or manufacture of the United States; and the said collector shall have and exercise all the powers which any other collector hath, or may legally exercise for collecting the duties aforesaid; and in addition to the fees by law provided,



shall be paid the yearly compensation of one hundred dollars." At the election of August, 1797, John Sevier was again elected governor; and a Legislature, consisting of eleven senators and twenty-two representatives from the thirteen counties then in existence, was chosen. Grainger and Hawkins sent Joseph McMinn, Senator, and Robertson and Montgomery sent James Ford. James White was elected speaker of the Senate; George Roulstone, principal clerk; and N. Buckingham, assistant clerk; James Stuart was elected speaker of the House; Thomas H. Williams, clerk; Jesse Wharton, assistant clerk, and John Rhea, door-keeper.

On the 3d of December, 1798, the second session of the Second General Assembly convened at Knoxville. James Robertson was elected senator in place of Thomas Hardeman, who had resigned. William Blount appeared from Knox County in place of James White, resigned. William Blount was elected speaker of the Senate, George Roulstone, clerk, and N. Buckingham assistant clerk. It was at this session of the Legislature that the number of senators was increased to twelve and the number of representatives to twenty-four by a law passed January 5, 1799. Section 2 of the act provided that there should be four senators and eight representatives from Washington District. Washington and Carter Counties were made one senatorial district, and Sullivan, Greene and Hawkins Counties each had one senator, while Carter and Hawkins Counties each had one representative, and Washington, Sullivan and Greene each had two. Hamilton District was divided as follows: Knox and Grainger each had one senator, Blount and Sevier had one, and Jefferson and Cocke one; Knox and Grainger had two representatives each, while the other counties in the district had one each. Mero District—Davidson County had two senators and three representatives; Sumner County one senator and three representatives; and Robertson and Montgomery Counties one senator from both counties and one representative from each. The first session of the General Assembly elected according to the provisions of this act began at Knoxville, September 16, 1799. Alexander Outlaw was chosen speaker of the Senate, and John Kennedy, clerk. William Dickson was chosen speaker of the House, and Edward Scott, clerk.

The first constitution of Tennessee had been so wisely constructed as to subserve its purpose for forty years without urgent necessity being felt for its revision. But in 1833, in response to a demand in various directions, for its amendment, the Legislature passed an act, under date of November 27, providing for the calling of a convention. The act provided that the convention should consist of sixty members, who should be elected on the first Thursday and Friday of March following, and that

it should meet at Nashville on the third Monday of May. The convention having assembled May 19, 1834, Willie Blount, of Montgomery County, was made temporary chairman, and immediately afterward William B. Carter, the delegate from Carter County, was elected president. Mr. Carter, in the course of his speech acknowledging the honor conferred upon him, said "the great principle which should actuate each individual in this convention is to touch the constitution with a cautious and circumspect hand, and to deface that instrument, formed with so much wisdom and foresight by our ancestors, as little as possible, and should there be in that sacred charter of liberty some articles or features of doubtful policy, prudence requires that we should better let it remain than to launch it into a sea of uncertainty when we cannot perhaps better its condition." The Rev. James C. Smith, of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church of Nashville, pronounced a solemn and appropriate prayer. William K. Hill was made secretary of the convention, and William I. I. Morrow assistant secretary, the latter by a yea and nay vote of fifty-one to nine. Ministers of the gospel and editors of Tennessee newspapers were admitted to seats within the bar of the house. Various committees were appointed, each committee to bring forward amendments on some specific department of the constitution—the first the Bill of Rights, the second the Judicial Department, the third the Legislature, etc. The Bill of Rights in the new constitution remained substantially the same as in the old. Its position was changed from that of the eleventh article to that of the first, and the first change was in the seventeenth section, from which is the following sentence: "Suits may be brought against the State in such manner and in such courts as the Legislature may by law direct, provided the right of bringing suit be limited to citizens of this State," the proviso being omitted. In the nineteenth section the sentence "and in all indictments for libels the jury shall have a right to determine the law and the facts, under the direction of the court, as in other cases," the word "criminal" was inserted in the last phrase, so as to cause it to read "as in other criminal cases." Section 26, reading that "the freemen of this State shall have a right to keep and bear arms for the common defense," was changed so as to read that "the free white men," etc. Section 31, describing the boundaries of the State, was amended by the following additional words: "And provided also that the limits and jurisdiction of this State shall extend to any other lands and territory now acquired or that may hereafter be acquired by compact or agreement with other States or otherwise, although the land and territory are not included within the boundaries hereinbefore designated."

In the constitution proper, Article I in the old constitution became Article II in the new, and two new sections were prefixed thereto. These new sections provided that the government should be divided into three distinct departments, Legislative, Executive and Judicial, and that no person belonging to one of these departments should exercise any of the powers belonging to either of the others except in certain specified cases. Section 4 of this second article provides that an enumeration of the qualified voters should be made every ten years, commencing in 1841, instead of an enumeration of the taxable inhabitants every seven years, and Section 5 provides that representatives shall be appointed according to the number of qualified voters instead of the taxable inhabitants, and the number of representatives was limited to seventy-five until the population of the State became 1,500,000, and after that event the number should never exceed ninety-nine, and the number of senators was limited to one-third of the number of representatives. Under the old constitution no man was eligible to a seat in the General Assembly unless he possessed, in his own right, at least 200 acres of land. From the new constitution this requirement was omitted. Section 20, Article I, of the old constitution limited the pay of legislators to \$1.75 per day, and no more than that sum for every twenty-five miles of travel to and from the place of meeting. This was changed in the new constitution so that each member was allowed \$4 per day, and \$4 for every twenty-five miles of travel to and from the seat of government.

In the old constitution the governor was required to possess a freehold estate of 500 acres of land, and to have been a citizen of the State four years. In the new constitution he was required to be at least thirty years of age, to be a citizen of the United States, and to have been a citizen of Tennessee at least seven years next preceding the election, the property qualification being omitted. The article on the qualifications of electors was changed so as to read "every free white man of the age of twenty-one years, being a citizen of the United States, and of the county wherein he may offer to vote six months next preceding the day of election, shall be entitled to vote for members of the General Assembly and other civil officers for the county or district in which he may reside; provided that no person shall be disqualified from voting at any election on account of color who is now by the laws of this State a competent witness in the courts of justice against a white man. A free man of color shall be exempt from military duty in time of peace, and also from paying a free poll tax." Section 3 of article IX was entirely new, and read: "Any person who shall fight a duel, or knowingly be the bearer of a challenge to fight a duel, or send or accept a challenge for



that purpose, or be an aider and abettor in fighting a duel, shall be deprived of the right to hold any office of honor or profit in this State." The new constitution established a supreme court for the State, and provided that this court should consist of three judges, one of whom should reside in each of the three grand divisions of the State, the concurrence of two of whom was necessary in every case to a decision. It also provided for their term of office and salary.

The above are the principal changes made in the old constitution by the convention of 1834. Its labors terminated August 30, after passing an ordinance for an election to be held on the first Thursday and Friday of March, 1835, on the question of adopting the constitution it had prepared. A curious provision of this ordinance was as follows: "That no person shall be deemed a qualified voter in said election except such as are included within the provisions of the first section of the fourth article of the amended constitution," according to which only free white men were allowed to vote. Thus the convention itself assumed the right and exercised the power of adopting for the people a portion of the constitution, the whole of which it was preparing to submit to them for their ratification or rejection. This proceeding was doubtless extra-judicial, but was defensible, if at all, on the ground that the free colored men who had hitherto exercised the right of suffrage, would most probably vote against their own disfranchisement, and thus, perhaps, render doubtful the fate of the constitution. The amended constitution was submitted to the people March 5 and 6, and was ratified by them by a vote of 42,666 for the constitution to 17,691 against it. According to the census of 1830 there were then in the State 4,511 free colored persons, or about 900 who, under the old constitution, were entitled to vote, which number had probably increased to 1,000 at the time of the adoption of the amended constitution.

The session of the convention lasted about three months and its deliberations were characterized by great earnestness, patriotism and intelligence. The future good of the State was kept constantly in view, and the care and caution and even jealousy with which proposed changes were scrutinized are sufficiently indicated by the method adopted in their discussion—each section being read, considered and voted upon four times before finally disposed of. But its crowning work was its estimate placed upon the value of education, and provision made for the perpetuity of the fund for the support of common schools. This estimate is clearly and forcibly expressed in the following language: "Knowledge, learning and virtue being essential to the preservation of Republican institutions, and the diffusion of the opportunities and advantages of

education throughout the different portions of the State being highly conducive to the promotion of this end, it shall be the duty of the General Assembly in all future periods of this Government to cherish literature and science." The provision made for the perpetuity of the common school fund, and the development of the educational facilities under the new constitution are discussed and set forth in the chapter on education.

In 1853 this constitution was so amended as to provide for the election of the judges of the supreme court by the qualified voters of the State at large, and of the judges of the inferior courts by the qualified voters of the district to which such judges were assigned. An attorney-general for the State and attorney for the districts and circuits were to be elected in the same manner instead of by the Legislature. Before the conclusion of the civil war, a convention met at Nashville, January 9, 1865, and completed its labors on the 26th of the same month. By this convention the following amendments were framed and submitted to the people

That slavery and involuntary servitude, except as a punishment for crime, whereof the party shall have been duly convicted, are hereby forever abolished and prohibited throughout this State.

The Legislature shall make no law recognizing the right of property in man.

Other amendments were made abrogating certain features of the constitution of 1834, so as to make it consistent with the above amendments, and also declaring treasonable, unconstitutional, null and void, the declaration of independence of Tennessee, and the ordinance dissolving the Federal relations between Tennessee and the United States of America, passed and promulgated May 6, 1861.

The present constitution was prepared by a convention held in Nashville January, 1870, and which ended its labors February 23, 1870. The first change made was in Article I, Section 4, which in the constitution of 1834 reads: "No religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under this State." In the constitution of 1870 this section reads, "No political or religious test, other than an oath to support the constitution of the United States and of this State, shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under this State." Section 5 of this article, "That elections shall be free and equal," was amended by adding the following words: "And the right of suffrage, as heretofore declared, shall never be denied to any person entitled thereto, except upon conviction by a jury of some infamous crime, previously ascertained and declared by law and judgment thereon by a court of competent jurisdiction." Section 6, reading "That the right of trial by jury shall remain inviolate," was amended by adding

"and no religious or political test shall ever be required as a qualification for "jurors." Section 8, "That no free man shall be taken or imprisoned or disseized of his freehold, liberties or privileges," etc., was amended by omitting the word "free." Section 18 was amended so as to read: "The Legislature shall pass no law authorizing imprisonment for debt in civil cases."

In the legislative department of the constitution, important changes were made. Counties and incorporated towns were forbidden to lend their credit to, or to become stockholders in, any incorporation, except upon a three-fourths majority of the vote cast at an election upon the question, and the credit of the State was forbidden to be given to any company, incorporation or municipality. No bonds of the State can be issued to any railroad company, which at the time of its application for the same is in default in payment of interest upon the State bonds previously loaned to it, or that previously to such application shall have sold any State bonds loaned to it at less than par. In the executive department the principal change made was in conferring upon the governor the veto power. The qualifications of electors were so changed as to confer the suffrage on every male person of the age of twenty-one years, resident in the State one year and in the county six months who had paid his poll tax. The supreme court was changed so as to consist of five judges instead of three, of whom not more than two may reside in any one of the grand divisions of the State. The judges themselves are required to elect one of their own number chief justice.

One of the miscellaneous provisions of the present constitution is as follows: "The Legislature shall have no power to authorize lotteries for any purpose, and shall pass laws to prohibit the sale of lottery tickets within this State." A provision was also inserted under which each head of a family is entitled to a homestead of the value of \$1,000, exempt from sale for debt, except for public taxes and the purchase price of the homestead, which may be retained by the widow and minor children so long as occupied by them. The intermarriage of white persons with negroes or mulattoes, or persons of mixed blood descending from a negro to the third generation inclusive, is prohibited under this constitution. The vote on the ratification of this new constitution was taken March 26, 1870, and resulted as follows: For the constitution, 98,128; against it, 33,872. In East Tennessee, 15,678; against it, 17,155. Middle Tennessee, 48,503; against it, 7,190. West Tennessee, 33,947; against it, 9,527.



## CHAPTER VIII.\*

GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT—IMPERFECT AGRICULTURAL METHODS—PRODUCTIONS FOR MARKET—SUPPLY FOR HOME CONSUMPTION—ADOPTION OF IMPROVED AGRICULTURAL IMPLEMENTS—COMPARISON OF THE THREE GRAND DIVISIONS OF THE STATE IN CROPS AND PROGRESS—THE STAPLE PRODUCTS—THE GREAT RANGE OF PRODUCTIONS AND THE REASON—FRUIT, GRAIN, TOBACCO, COTTON, PEANUTS, HAY, HEMP, FLAX, SORGHUM, LIVE-STOCK AND MISCELLANEOUS PRODUCTS—INTRODUCTION OF THE COTTON-GIN—PURCHASE OF THE PATENT BY THE LEGISLATURE—THE LABOR QUESTION AND THE COST OF PRODUCTION—FERTILIZATION AND STATISTICS.

TENNESSEE is so happily situated geographically and topographically that her fields yield in greater or less abundance nearly every product of the temperate zones, and it is doubtful if any other State in the Union possesses equal agricultural resources. Yet the condition of agriculture in the State has not been so prosperous as the nature of the soil, the variety of the products and the salubrity of the climate should insure. This is due partly to the agricultural methods, which have been in the main quite primitive, and partly to the fact that in Middle and West Tennessee especially, the attention of farmers has been directed to one or two crops to the almost utter exclusion of all others. It is true that before the war these farmers were the most thriving in the State and that many of their farms were in a high state of cultivation and improvement, but this mode of agriculture could succeed and prove profitable only under a well regulated and well disciplined system of slave labor. The great civil convulsion which overturned the social system of the South wrought most disastrous changes among the land owners and farmers, and many years have been required for them to recover from the effects, and to adapt themselves to the new condition of society.

There is a widely marked and striking difference in the three divisions of the State in the economical management of the farmers. The most distinguishing characteristic of the average farmer in East Tennessee is the effort which he makes to supply what may be required for his own consumption. It is not uncommon on a small farm to see a patch of cotton, which the women of the household work up into cloth; a spot given to tobacco for home consumption; a field of sorghum, from which

\*Compiled from Killebrew's "Resources of Tennessee," "Revised Hand Book of Tennessee," census and other reports, and collected by the writer from numerous original and reliable sources.

syrup is made for domestic use; a few acres of wheat are raised for flour; corn and oats or hay to feed the stock, which usually consist of a few sheep, to supply wool for winter clothes; cows, from which a considerable revenue is derived by the manufacture of butter, and a brood-mare or two, from which the farmer rears his mules and horses for farm use. Besides these an abundance of the staple vegetables and of all kinds of poultry are raised. A few bee-hives and an apple and peach orchard are the necessary adjunct to nine-tenths of the farms in East Tennessee. The most striking fact in the farming operations of that division is that no money crop is raised. Tobacco, cotton, corn and hay are all grown in small quantities, not so much for sale as for use. The amount of money realized by the average farmer of East Tennessee is exceedingly small, and yet the people in no portion of the State live so well or have their tables so bountifully furnished. Many a farmer, who lives like a lord at his table, does not realize \$200 in money from his farm in a year, and this comes mainly from the sale of feathers, chickens, eggs, dried fruit and occasionally a few cattle or mules. Indeed, with their strict habits of economy, they have but little use for money. The wool and cotton, by the patient industry of the female members of the family, are wrought into cloth. A few hides from the beeves are tanned and made into shoes. Salt, coffee and sugar comprise almost the sum total of purchases, while a few dollars are required to meet the demands of the tax-gatherer.

The use of improved machinery, except in the valley lands, is impossible on the farms in East Tennessee; consequently the implements are very inexpensive, and are frequently made at the neighboring blacksmith shop. The valley farms, however, are usually supplied with all the machinery to be found upon the best farms in the other portions of the State. The growing of corn and wheat for a long period in East Tennessee, without proper rotation, resting or clovering, has greatly impaired the fertility of the soil; yet there is no better land anywhere for clover, and the rich, red ferruginous subsoils, resting in the valleys on the limestone rock, are susceptible of being kept up to a high point of fertility if properly managed. Although a small minority of the farmers are content to plant, work and gather their crops just as did their fathers and grandfathers before them, under the lead of a few intelligent farmers, and the inspiration of the East Tennessee Farmers' Convention, great changes for the better have been wrought within the past few years. Improved breeds of cattle, sheep and hogs, and better methods of cultivation have been pretty generally introduced. When this spirit of progress and improvement shall have become general, East Tennessee will rival

any other portion of the Union in the variety and wealth of its agricultural products.

Unlike his brother in East Tennessee, the farmer of the middle division, especially in the Central Basin and the richer portions of the Highlands, aims to have in addition to the food crops, a "money crop" of either tobacco, cotton or peanuts. His anxiety is greater to secure the former than the latter, for his domestic habits are not such as to enable him to dispense with money to the same extent as the farmer of East Tennessee. As a usual rule, except in places remote from town, he does not manufacture his clothes at home, but buys them. He does not pay as much attention to the smaller industries, nor is his every day table supplied with such a variety of food. Milk and butter he usually produces in abundance for home consumption, but unless in the dairy business he does not aim to produce a surplus for market. While his orchards may cover more acres, his orchard products are less remunerative. Fowls are raised in large quantities, but the money for them belongs to the housewife, and does not enter into his bills receivable. His thoughts center in his money crops, and everything, even the appearance of his farm, must yield to the imperative demands of such crops. He feels no disappointment at having no corn or pork to sell. He aims to make a supply. If there is a surplus he rejoices, if not, he remains contented. He knows and appreciates the value of labor-saving machinery, and his farm is usually well supplied with the best of implements. His work-stock are the best his purse will enable him to buy. He also inherits a love for a good saddle horse. He rejoices in a good cotton-gin, or tobacco screw, gin house or tobacco barn, and will take infinitely more pains to exhibit these than he will his dwelling, although his dwelling may be tasteful and elegant in its surroundings. He is fond too of a good stable, with a bounteous supply of provender, though stables and everything else must yield to the exactions of his "money crop." If a stock raiser, everything is subordinated to that, it being the "money crop." The possession of a heavy purse once a year is the dream of his existence. Energetic, thoughtful, intelligent and pains-taking, he prospered under a different condition of things. He prospers yet, when able to take the front row or to carry on his farm in a systematic and orderly manner. He is not so careful of his land now as before the war; he does not value it so highly. He can be tempted to rent out fields that in the regular order should be rested. Sometimes his clover seed runs short, and he prefers to let the unsown fields lie fallow rather than to incur further expense. He is not so particular about having his fence corners clean as formerly. He is in a manner disheartened because he



can rely upon no regular supply of labor. His enthusiasm is greatly chilled by the course of events, and yet he will confess that in a good season with good hands his profits are as great and as satisfactory as ever.

The farms in Middle Tennessee, as a general thing, are much better improved than in the other divisions. The dwelling houses are good, many of them elegant, some of them princely. Stock raising and cotton growing in this central basin are the favorite branches of industry. Fine stock, horses, cattle, hogs and sheep of the most approved breeds are to be found in every county. On the Highlands surrounding the basin, peanuts, tobacco, wheat and fruits are the favorite crops. The average farmer of lower West Tennessee aspires to be a planter. He loves to see many broad acres in cultivation. He is ambitious, industrious, careless and energetic. He cares for nothing so much as to see his cotton fields flourishing. He does not try to raise his supplies, but stoutly maintains that he can buy them cheaper than he can make them. Debt has no such terrors for him as for the East Tennessee farmer. He will stake his all upon the prospects for cotton; chicken, eggs, butter, corn, wheat, hay, meat—all these are little things and cotton will buy them. Cotton is the great mogul of all the crops. It controls all and buys all. Land, teams, tools are as nothing, compared with the lordly bales rolled out from the gin house. Gullies may wash, fences may rot, houses may fall to decay, but cotton must be raised. A big crop of cotton will buy fresh fields with virgin soil elsewhere. Taking care of land and resting it may do for the farmer elsewhere, but time is too valuable to be wasted in this way by the average West Tennessee farmer. He can and does spend money for fertilizers, and they are used where the cotton crop will get the full benefit. He will crop out his land, or rent it out, payable in cotton, but rarely in money. He is inclined to be more cosmopolitan than his brothers of the other divisions, yet he cherishes a high regard for his State, but would cherish it still more, if it would produce more cotton.

In the more northern counties of West Tennessee, however, the average farmer is very much like the Middle Tennessee farmer. He has his money crop, but he takes an interest in working supplies enough for home consumption. He is careful of his soil, and feeds and nurses it with clover. He takes great delight in his corn crop until his tobacco plants begin to press him, then the corn must stand second in his affections. He loves his hay fields, but his tobacco fields better. He is fond of rich soil and studies the aptitudes and capacities of the different varieties, and plants his various crops so that each may have the most con-

genial soil. There is no better farmer in the State than the farmer of northern West Tennessee. He raises a surplus of all food crops, but pays little attention to the smaller industries. He is fond of good stock, especially good hogs, which his magnificent corn crops enable him to rear in great quantities. He keeps up his improvements and has a lively faith in the future of the State.

The many varieties of soil and the difference of elevation give to Tennessee a very wide range in its agricultural products. Assuming that an elevation of 333 feet is equivalent, so far as temperature is concerned to one degree of latitude, it will be seen that the highest clime of the Unakas in the East differ from the low lands of the Mississippi by nearly fifteen degrees of latitude; the one having a semi-tropical climate and the other that of Canada. The soils do not differ less than the climate. Upon them can be grown the sweet potato of the South and the Irish potato of the North, both in remunerative quantities, and of excellent quality. Peaches that attain their luscious sweetness in a sunny climate find in the State a congenial home, where they are brought to their highest perfection. Apples, upon the elevated lands, bear as profusely and ripen as deliciously as in the great apple growing region of Ohio or Michigan. Grapes of many varieties bear in unsurpassed luxuriance upon the sunny slopes and rich hills in every part of the State. Plums, apricots, pears, nectarines and cherries flourish and yield in profusion. Even the fig, in sheltered places, may be brought to maturity in the open air. Those more common, but not less useful fruits, the blackberry, raspberry and the dewberry are indigenous throughout the State. In the woods and in the fields, on poor soil and on rich, covering the mountain tops and flourishing in the alluvial bottoms, the blackberry bush supplies a rich, healthy and delicious fruit, and in quantities sufficient to supply ten times the present population. So numerous and so excellent are the berries, that pickers are sent out from Cincinnati and from other northern towns to gather and ship the fruit. The raspberry and dewberry grow wild, and yield abundantly. The cranberry grows wild in the elevated swampy places of Johnson County, and but for want of facilities for transportation could be made a source of great profit. Of the great staple products, corn should, perhaps, be ranked first, although as a "money crop" it is subordinate to both cotton and tobacco. Tennessee now ranks ninth as a corn growing State. In 1840 she stood first. The average annual production of this cereal is not far from 50,000,000 bushels. The great central basin of Middle Tennessee, the rich valleys of East, and the low lands of West Tennessee raise enormous crops of this grain and the quality is greatly superior to that grown

in higher or lower latitude. The grain matures earlier than in the North and dries thoroughly, fitting it to make a superior quality of meal, and it is noted for its freedom from rot. The average yield per acre for the State is about twenty-three bushels; but this average is low, due to the pernicious habit in some parts of the State of planting the same land year after year in this exhaustive crop without manure. Among the best farmers, those who practice rotation and clovering, the average yield is not far from forty bushels. The rent paid for some of the bottom lands on the upper Tennessee, is twenty and sometimes thirty bushels of corn per acre, and the yield often reaches seventy-five, and in some rare instances, 100 bushels per acre.

Of the cereals, wheat ranks next in importance to corn. The usual quantity of wheat raised varies from 5,000,000 to 10,000,000 bushels, with a large average yield per acre. About 1,000,000 acres are sown annually. The best wheat growing portions of the State are to be found in the upper counties of the valley of East Tennessee, the counties lying on the north side of the Highland Rim, the northern counties of West Tennessee, and the rolling lands of the central basin. The average yield in these regions is not far from fifteen bushels. Though the yield of wheat is far from being what a thorough preparation of the land and early seeding could make it, yet the excellence of the berry compensates in some degree for the scantiness in the yield. The flour made of Tennessee wheat commands in every market a superior price. It has been estimated that at least one-half of the flour exported to Brazil and other inter-tropical countries is manufactured from wheat grown south of the Ohio and Susquehanna Rivers. There is a peculiarity in the flour which enables it to resist damp, and it remains fresh and sweet when flour made from wheat grown in high latitudes becomes sour and worthless. It also has the capacity of absorbing more water, and retaining it in the baking process, giving a greater number of pounds of bread for a given number of pounds of flour. All the nutritive elements are fully developed in the wheat of Tennessee, and, maturing a month earlier than the wheat crop of New York, it commands a ready market at good prices.

The annual production of oats in Tennessee amounts to about 5,000,000 bushels. The best authorities put the yield at sixteen bushels per acre, but the primitive methods employed in separating the straw from the grain leave a large portion of the latter adhering to the straw. Twenty-five bushels per acre can be grown upon any soils in any portion of the State that have not been impoverished by bad tillage. Even upon the thin, barren, flat lands that are found in some portions of Lewis, Lawrence, Coffee and other counties, oats grow with a prodigal luxuri-



ance, as also upon the sand-stone soils of the Cumberland Table-land. Upon the richer valley and bottom lands fifty bushels per acre are not an extraordinary yield, and seventy-five have been made. Greene, Hawkins, Knox, Sullivan, Roane, Washington and Blount Counties in East Tennessee; Davidson, Wilson, Montgomery and Sumner in the middle division, and Obion, Dyer and Gibson in West Tennessee furnish the best soils for oats.

While the number of acres devoted to barley in the State does not exceed 5,000, it is yet one of the most profitable crops grown by the farmer. The average yield per acre is about eighteen bushels. About one-third of all that is grown in the State is raised in Davidson County. It flourishes well in the high valleys and coves in Johnson and Carter Counties, and would grow well in all the rich valley lands of East Tennessee. The black lands of the central basin yield very large crops, twenty-five to thirty-five bushels being quite common.

Rye is not considered a productive crop in Tennessee. Farmers rarely sow it, except for winter or early spring grazing, a use to which it is admirably adapted. It is used also to some extent as a fertilizer, and as it grows with vigor where corn, oats and wheat fail, it supplies a great want upon the thin and worked soils. The amount of land in the State devoted to rye is about 25,000 acres, which gives a yield of about 220,000 bushels, or about nine bushels per acre. This yield is doubtless largely diminished in consequence of the excessive grazing to which it is subjected. The largest rye-growing counties are Marshall, Lincoln, Rutherford, Bedford and Davidson in Middle Tennessee, and Johnson and Carter in East Tennessee. West Tennessee raises but little rye, yet its soil and climate would insure an abundant yield.

Only a small amount of buckwheat is grown by the farmers of Tennessee. About 60,000 bushels is the average crop of the State, grown principally in Johnson, Carter, Washington and Perry Counties. It is not a remunerative crop, yielding only about seven bushels per acre.

From the early settlement to the present time, sweet potatoes have formed one of the leading articles of food. They grow well in all thoroughly drained soils of the State, and where the land is friable and moderately fertile. Bottom lands are not usually the best for the growth of this vegetable; the tendency of such places is to produce an enormous growth of vines at the expense of the tubers; nor does cold, clayey land suit them. The flavor is greatly improved in a soil with a small admixture of sand or fine gravel. When grown upon very rich land they are apt to be sappy and insipid. The annual yield is about 1,200,000 bushels, or 100 bushels per acre. The counties raising the greatest

quantities are Shelby, Obion and Gibson in West Tennessee; Davidson, Wilson and Montgomery in the Middle Division; and Knox, Bradley and Anderson in East Tennessee.

Irish potatoes are not grown in sufficient quantities in the State to supply the home demand, although when planted upon suitable soils and well worked, the yield is prolific. Upon land moderately fresh and well fertilized, the yield can be brought up to 400 bushels per acre. Yet the statistics of this crop shows an average yield of only seventy-seven bushels, and the entire production 1,122,000 bushels. This vegetable grows well in every division of the State, and especially is it brought to perfection in the more elevated portions. Even the Cumberland Tableland, though yielding sparsely of the leading crops, produces the Irish potato in profusion.

Of the "money crops," perhaps the most important is tobacco. In the production of this plant Tennessee stands third among the States, Kentucky being first and Virginia second. The average yield per acre is between 700 and 800 pounds, although as much as 1,200 and even as high as 1,800 can be grown on the best soils in favorable seasons. Grown in some of the soils of Kentucky and Tennessee, it acquires a peculiar richness. Tough, thick, gummy and leathery in its character, it has the capacity of absorbing water, which makes it peculiarly adapted to the manufacture of strips for the English market; the tobacco known as the "Clarksville tobacco," and which grows on the rich red soils of Stewart, Montgomery, Robertson, Cheatham and Dickson Counties, is capable of absorbing 33 per cent of its weight in water. It is prepared for the English market by pulling out the main stem and packing it in hogsheads as dry as possible. These "strips" are watered after reaching the English market, and inasmuch as the duty on tobacco is about 72 cents per pound, every pound of water absorbed by the strips is 72 cents in the pocket of the importer, and he is thus enabled to sell per pound at the same price at which he buys and still make a handsome profit. It is this peculiar property that gives the Clarksville tobacco such a high rank among the English dealers. The upper parts of Sumner, Trousdale and Smith, all of Macon, Clay and Jackson, and parts of Overton, Putnam, Wilson and DeKalb, raise a kind of tobacco not well suited for the manufacturer. It is large, leafy, coarser than the Clarksville tobacco, and is deficient in the active principle. It is principally consumed in the French and Spanish markets, a small quantity going to Italy and Germany. Obion, Dyer, Henry, Weakley and Benton Counties raise a very fine manufacturing leaf. It is, indeed, the finest article for that purpose grown west of the Alleghany Mountains. It is rich, silky,

mild, of a light color, and some of it rivalling the brilliant colors of the fading hickory leaf. It is especially valued for bright and mottled wrappers. All of this tobacco is consumed in the United States, none being exported on account of its high price and scarcity. This tobacco is not well adapted for stemming purposes, and even if it were, the price is too high to make its use in this manner profitable. Coffee, Warren, Moore, Lewis, Lawrence, Wayne, Hickman, Humphreys and Dickson, raise small quantities of light, mild tobacco. Nearly every county in East Tennessee grows enough for home consumption, and but little more. The quality of tobacco differs widely from that grown in the other divisions of the State. It is smaller and lighter, and not so rich in nicotine. The stronger tobaccos of Middle and West Tennessee contain as high as six per cent of that alkaloid, while that grown in East Tennessee does not contain above three per cent. It, however, is preferred by many on this account, being milder, pleasanter and more agreeable.

The history of tobacco cultivation in Tennessee dates back to its earliest settlement. The pioneers who settled in the fertile valleys of the Watauga, Nollichucky, and Holston Rivers, raised tobacco for their own consumption; and those who planted colonies on the Cumberland during the last two decades of the eighteenth century brought seed from North Carolina and Virginia, and began its culture. Although grown for many years in a small way, it was not until about 1810 that tobacco began to form one of the great staples of the State. By 1820 7,000 hogsheads were annually sent in flat-boats to New Orleans and exchanged for coffee, sugar, salt and other commodities. The extinguishment of Indian titles in West Tennessee, in 1818, added immensely to the available area for cultivation. Prices were generally low, but the cost of production was scarcely appreciable. It is estimated that during the decade from 1820 to 1830, the actual cost of growing tobacco did not exceed \$1 per 100 pounds. From 1830 to 1840 the culture was widely extended. In the latter year Henry County, in West Tennessee, heads the list, reporting a yield of 9,479,065 pounds, over 1,000,000 pounds more than any county at the present time produces. Smith County came next, with 3,017,012 pounds; Sumner, 2,615,000; Montgomery, 2,549,984; Wilson, 2,313,000; Robertson, 1,168,833; Williamson, 1,126,982; Rutherford, 1,084,000; and Stewart, Jackson and Davidson, 993,495, 859,336, and 334,394 pounds, respectively. The entire yield for the State in that year was 29,550,442 pounds, nearly 200,000 pounds more than was reported in the census of 1880. The prices which prevailed in 1837 were very low, and many planters shipping to New Orleans were brought into debt for freight and charges. During the next two years the prices increased, and from 4 to



10 cents per pound was frequently paid. In 1839 the prices were higher than for several succeeding years. From 1841 to 1846 the prices ranged from 2 to 8 cents, but in the latter year, on account of the Mexican war, the price fell to from 1 to 3 cents. In 1850 fair prices again prevailed. About 1834 dealers began to put up factories in Clarksville, and to purchase leaf tobacco. Several establishments for making "strips" sprang up shortly thereafter, and in 1840 the number of stemmeries had considerably increased. This gave renewed animation to the industry, millions of pounds of tobacco being annually bought in Clarksville, and prepared for the English trade.

The first effort to establish a market for the sale of tobacco in Clarksville was made in 1842, but it was difficult to persuade such planters as still adhered to the practice of pressing the tobacco and shipping it to New Orleans, to consent to sell in Clarksville. It was not until February, 1845, that warehouses for the inspection and sale of tobacco in casks were erected, and for the year ending September 1, 1845, 900 hogsheads were reported sold. Three or four warehouses were opened in 1846, and since that time they have been increased both in size and number. With the exception of Louisville, Clarksville opened the first inspection warehouse in the West.

Nashville also was a point where some business was done in tobacco as early as 1835. In 1840 the receipts amounted to 4,000 hogsheads, and for the next ten years remained stationary, varying from 4,000 to 5,000 hogsheads annually. About 1850 two tobacco stemmeries were put up, which prepared from 125 to 150 hogsheads of strips; considerable leaf tobacco was also shipped to the New Orleans market. From 1850 to 1860 the trade increased somewhat, reaching from 7,000 to 8,000 hogsheads, the weight of the hogshead being increased about twenty per cent. During the war the tobacco trade in Nashville was suspended, and did not greatly revive until 1872. Paris, Henry County, is also a tobacco market of some importance. In 1880 it contained six factories, only three of which were in operation. These factories during that year put up about 208,000 pounds.

In Clarksville, while the amount of sales varies somewhat with the success or partial failure of each crop, there is always a considerable amount sold loose to the factories for the manufacture of strips. In 1879 the number of hogsheads of strips was less than for many years. In that year five factories in operation reported an aggregate production of 544 hogsheads or 680,000 pounds of strips, although the usual amount ranges from 800 to 2,000 hogsheads. Springfield, in Robertson County, does a considerable business in stemming, and also in the manufacture of

plug tobaccos. Nearly every town in the tobacco-growing region, especially if it be on the railroad, contains one or more dealers who buy leaf tobacco, put it into hogsheads, and ship it to Clarksville, Nashville or Louisville.

Cotton is another of the great staple products of Tennessee. Its cultivation, however, is mainly restricted to a comparatively small area, eighty-four per cent of the entire amount being produced in West Tennessee, and only one per cent of it in that portion of the State east of the Central Basin. In 1879 the county in the State having the highest total production was Shelby, with 46,388 bales. The county having the highest average production per acre was Lake, with 1,059 pounds of seed cotton. These counties of West Tennessee produce the best cotton grown in the State, and the farmers give to this staple almost their entire attention. The uplands yield a very desirable article much sought after by the spinners of New England and Great Britain on account of its cleanliness. At the London exposition in 1851, the cotton raised by Col. John Pope, of Shelby County, received the medal as the best cotton known to the world. Lincoln, Rutherford, Giles, Williamson and Maury are the principal cotton-growing counties of Middle Tennessee, although it is produced to some extent in the whole of the Central Basin. The five counties mentioned in 1879 produced over 43,000 bales.

The following are the counties of Tennessee producing the greatest quantity of this staple, together with the number of bales and the average yield per acre for 1879 the weight of the bales averaging about 475 pounds:

	Production in bales.	Average bales per acre.
Shelby.....	46,388	.50
Fayette.....	39,221	.43
Tipton.....	21,415	.56
Haywood.....	23,092	.46
Gibson.....	19,372	.52
Madison.....	19,257	.42
Hardeman.....	18,937	.42
Lauderdale.....	13,250	.50
Giles.....	13,802	.44
Rutherford.....	12,414	.38
Carroll.....	11,505	.43
Henderson.....	9,469	.42
McNairy.....	9,419	.41
Crockett.....	9,320	.52
Maury.....	8,912	.41
Dyer.....	8,564	.59
Weakley.....	7,576	.49
Henry.....	5,516	.42
Hardin.....	5,345	.42
Williamson.....	4,538	.38

Obion .....	4,225	.58
Lincoln.....	3,486	.39
Lake .....	2,412	.74
Decatur .....	2,169	.39
Benton .....	1,801	.37
Marshall.....	1,721	.37
Davidson.....	1,333	.41
Hickman .....	1,302	.42
Wilson .....	1,272	.40
Wayne .....	1,207	.37

The remaining counties each produced less than 1,000 bales. Although the average yield per acre is one-half greater than that of Alabama, and equal even to that of Mississippi, it could be greatly increased with proper management. The estimated cost of production per acre, as furnished by eleven cotton growers in as many different counties, varies from \$4.05 to \$16.90 with an average of \$11.43. This cost can be materially reduced by cultivating less land and cultivating it better, employing less labor and thus increasing its efficiency, restoring the exhausted elements to the soil and thus keeping up its fertility, and by producing home supplies.

It is probable that the cultivation of cotton for home consumption was begun with the first settlement of the State, but the amount raised must have been quite small. The first cotton grown west of the mountains by American settlers was planted by Col. John Donelson in 1780, on the east side of Stone's River, opposite Clover Bottom. Before the close of the Indian war fields of half an acre or an acre of cotton were to be seen at most of the "improvements" or settlements. The entire care of this crop at that time, from the planting of the seed to the slow and laborious process of seeding the cotton, devolved upon the women and children of the household.

The invention of the gin by Whitney, in 1793, added impetus to the culture of cotton, although it was not until some time after that the machines came into general use. On October 22, 1803, the General Assembly of Tennessee passed an act, of which the following is the preamble:

WHEREAS, It is proposed by Russell Goodrich, the agent of Elijah Whitney, the inventor and patentee of a machine for the cleaning of cotton from the seeds, commonly called the saw-gin, and Phineas Miller, the assignee of one moiety of the patent right to said machine, to sell to the State of Tennessee, the sole and exclusive right of making, using and vending the said machine within the limits of this State, and

WHEREAS the culture of cotton is increasing in this State, and, from the invention and use of said machine, likely to become a valuable staple article of exportation, it is expedient that the State of Tennessee do purchase from the said Miller and Whitney their patent right to the making, using and vending of the said new invention on the terms and conditions hereinafter mentioned, that is to say, that there shall be levied and collected by the State of Tennessee on each and every said gin which shall be used in the State from the passing of this act, thirty-seven and one-half cents upon each and every



saw or circular row of teeth, which shall be used in said gins in each and every year, for the term of four years, which tax, when collected, is to be paid to the said Miller and Whitney or their order, first deducting the sheriff's usual commission of six per cent for collecting from year to year for the term aforesaid. The first payment to be made on the first day of November, 1804, and the last payment on the first day of November, 1807.

The total amount paid by the State for the use of the gin in the counties of Middle Tennessee, or Mero District, was \$4,517.49, after deducting the sheriff's commission of \$288.35. Gins were used in ten counties as follows: Davidson, twenty-four; Sumner, nine; Williamson, six; Montgomery, five; Robertson, five; Smith, five; Stewart, one; Dickson, one; Wilson, four, and Rutherford, four. The following statistics show the rapid increase in the production of cotton in Tennessee from the beginning of the century: The crop for the year 1801 was estimated at 1,000,000 pounds, and for 1811, at 3,000,000 pounds. Ten years later it had increased 20,000,000 pounds; in 1828, to 45,000,000 pounds, and in 1833, to 50,000,000 pounds. These amounts were only estimated however, and for the last two or three periods, were undoubtedly placed too high, as the census of 1840 reports the crop for the previous year at 27,701,277 pounds. The crop for the next four decennial years was as follows: 1849, 194,532 bales; 1859, 296,464 bales; 1869, 181,842 bales, and for 1879, 330,621 bales.

The great peanut growing region of the State embraces the counties of Perry, Hickman and Humphreys, and portions of Dickson and Lewis. The cultivation of this crop was introduced into this section by Jesse George, of Hickman County. The seeds came from North Carolina, and were given to him by some relatives, who were passing through the county on their way West. These he planted, and finding the county so well adapted to their growth he ventured to raise peanuts for market. Obtaining a good price for these he was stimulated to a larger planting. His neighbors caught the infection and Humphreys soon became famous for the richness and superiority of its peanuts. The entire production of this crop in the region mentioned above reached, in the year 1872, 680,000 bushels; of these Hickman raised 200,000; Humphreys, 250,000; Perry, 200,000, and Dickson, 30,000. The excessive production of that year reduced the price so low that the crop in 1873 was diminished to 110,000 bushels. The prices paid the Nashville and Cincinnati markets vary from 60 cents to \$2.25 per bushel, according to production and demand. The average yield is about forty bushels per acre. The best soils for peanuts are those which are well drained, and have a large quantity of intermingling gravel.

One of the most important crops of Tennessee, and one to which it is peculiarly adapted, is that of hay. Although its production is small in

comparison with its value to the farmer, it has steadily increased for the past fifty years, as is evidenced by the following figures taken from the census reports: In 1839 there were produced 31,233 tons; in 1849, 74,091 tons; in 1859, 143,499 tons; in 1869, 116,582 tons, and in 1879, 186,698 tons. The average yield per acre is not far from one and one-fourth tons. No State is more abundantly supplied with water-courses, and the hay crop of Tennessee might be made to rival that of any other State in the Union. But the hay growing regions are not confined to the low land bordering the streams; on the northern slopes of the ridges of East Tennessee and on the rolling lands of the Central Basin, timothy grows with a surprising luxuriance, and upon the flat lands of the Highland River and in the sandy lands of West Tennessee, herd grass finds a fitting soil and grows to a height almost incredible. Knox, Greene, Sullivan, Washington and Davidson are among the best hay growing counties in the State, Greene ranking first and Davidson second. While the average yield of hay for the State is small, instances are given where meadows favorably located have yielded, for a period of ten years in succession, from two to three tons per acre. Of the many varieties of grasses there is scarcely one but that in some portion of the State can be grown with profit. Timothy is the best grass for hay making, and it improves all pastures when it is mixed with other grasses. It does best in limestone land, in which the crop often amounts to two tons of hay per acre, which rarely sells for less than \$20 per ton.

Blue-grass is a perennial, and is essentially a pasture grass. It grows but on limestone lands, and to it Kentucky and several other States owe a large portion of their wealth. Much of the lands of Eastern and Middle Tennessee produce as fine blue-grass as can be grown anywhere, and it will ultimately cover all the limestone hills of the State. Several of the counties of West Tennessee will also produce good blue-grass. Indeed but little land exists in the State which, under proper management, will not grow this grass profitably, and there is no reason why Tennessee should not rival Kentucky in its production.

Herd's-grass, or red top, is a hardy perennial, and is devoted to both pasture and meadow. For making meadow in swampy land it is regarded as superior to any other grass. It produces a deep, tough sod of roots that make a firm surface, even in muddy places, and yields a ton and a half of hay of good quality per acre. In well drained upland it yields fair crops of hay, but is not equal to clover and timothy. This grass finds a most congenial soil throughout West Tennessee, in many places attaining the height of five feet. It is probably better adapted to all the soils of the State than any other grass. It flourishes upon the slopes.

and in the valleys of East Tennessee, and yields abundantly upon the sandstone soils of the Cumberland Table-land, as well as on the rolling surface of the Highland River. In the Central Basin, too, it is second only to red clover and timothy as a meadow grass.

Orchard-grass, also a perennial, makes hay and pasture of the best quality. It grows best on limestone lands, but makes good meadows on any rich soil. It is difficult, however, to get this grass well sodded and to keep it in full possession of the ground. Some of the good points of this grass are its adaptability to every variety of soil, its rapid growth, its ability to resist drought and its power to grow in the shade.

Red clover is the most valuable of all the grasses. It not only makes excellent hay and pasturage, but is, also, the great fertilizer of land. It grows best on rich limestone lands, but may be made to prosper on any land which is not extremely sandy. It finds a congenial soil in the clayey lands of the valleys of East Tennessee, on the red soils of the Highland Rim and on the limestone loams of the Central Basin. Probably three-fourths of the land in the State will grow clover remuneratively.

Besides the common red clover several other species are grown with success, the two most important of which are alsike clover and crimson clover. The former is a perennial and is hardier than red clover, but its yield is less. The latter is an annual, and is chiefly valuable as a green food. Of the annual grasses cultivated in Tennessee the most important is millet, of which there are many varieties. The first millet cultivated in the State was of the kind commonly termed Tennessee Millet. In a few years the Hungarian grass became popular, and later the Missouri millet became the favorite. At the close of the war the German variety was introduced, and soon superseded all others. These grasses all grow best in limestone soils, but prosper on any soil that is rich enough, and there is probably more hay made from them in Tennessee than from any other kind of grass. There are many other valuable grasses which could be profitably grown in the State, but which have not been very generally introduced. Several wild or indigenous grasses grow spontaneously, one of which is the barren, or prairie grass. It covered all the prairie lands when the country was first settled by white people. It springs up about the 1st of April, grows to the height of two feet, and affords good pasturage from April to the 1st of August, when it becomes hard and woody so that stock refuse to eat it. Wherever the forest is not so dense as to exclude the light and heat of the sun, on the streams and tablelands of the Cumberland Mountains and on the sandy, flinty and siliceous "flat woods" of the whole State, this grass still holds possession, and is a blessing to the inhabitants of all lands which are deficient in lime.



Another indigeneous perennial grass is known as nimble will. On limestone lands where the forest has been thinned out, it grows up to the height of about fifteen inches and forms a dense mat, affording good pasturage for five or six months in the year.

White clover is a spontaneous growth over nearly the entire State, and is luxuriant in limestone soils. Next to blue-grass it is one of the most valuable grazing plants, and is to the pasture what red clover is to the meadow. It is a hardy perennial, and withstands drouth and constant grazing.

Crab-grass is an annual of some value for fall pasturage, but is a troublesome pest among growing crops, especially during wet seasons. When the farm is kept under a rotation of crops, however, and tilled only once in four or five years, the crab-grass is soon exterminated and better grasses take its place.

In addition to the crops already mentioned there are grown in particular localities hemp, broom corn, flax, sorghum and rice. All the garden vegetables are raised in abundance. Peas, beans, onions, lettuce, cabbage, turnips, radishes, salsify, celery, cucumbers, butterbeans, tomatoes, squashes, melons, carrots, beets, egg-plant, asparagus and many others are found in almost every garden.

The cultivation of hemp is chiefly confined to the counties of East Tennessee. The total crop in the State for 1859 was 2,243 tons, of which Claiborne County produced nearly one-half. The other counties producing it in any considerable quantities during that year were Greene, Hawkins, Cannon and Anderson. In 1869 Hancock County ranked first and Johnson second, the crops for these counties being 290 and 207 tons respectively. The census reports for 1880 show no return from the hemp crop in Tennessee.

The raising of flax is also confined mainly to East Tennessee, and its production in that locality is somewhat decreased. In 1859 the State produced 164,294 pounds of fibre and 9,362 bushels of seed. The reports for 1879 show a total production of only 19,601 pounds of fibre, and 787 bushels of seed, Claiborne County ranking first, having produced nearly one-fourth of the entire amount.

Sorghum is now grown in considerable quantities in every county of the State. Since its introduction about thirty years ago, the production of the staple has steadily and rapidly increased, and it is now one of the most valuable crops raised. The entire production of sorghum for 1859 amounted to 706,663 gallons. The counties producing the greatest quantities were Knox, 51,027 gallons; Blount, 38,594; McMinn, 27,252, and Washington, 26,898. In 1879 the State produced 3,776,212 gallons.

Lincoln County ranked first with a production of 142,357 gallons, and Maury County second, with a production of 137,195 gallons. Wilson, Giles and Rutherford each produced more than 100,000 gallons.

Some maple sugar is also produced in many counties of the State, although the bulk of it is furnished by East Tennessee. In 1859 there was produced 115,620 pounds of sugar and 74,372 gallons of molasses, of which latter article Sevier County produced more than one-half.

In 1879 only 31,296 pounds of sugar and 3,688 gallons of molasses were produced, Grainger County ranking first and Fentress County second in sugar with a production of 3,040 and 2,415 pounds respectively. Wilson County ranked first, and Sullivan County second, in the production of molasses.

There has never been sufficient attention paid by the farmers of Tennessee to the preservation of the fertility of the soil. Land has, hitherto, been so easily obtained that, leaving the future out of consideration, it has been cheaper to buy new land than to preserve the old. But the spirit of improvement which, during the past twenty years, has manifested itself in every industry in the South, has developed better systems of cultivation, and a more intelligent appreciation of the value of fertilizers. All the stable manure and other refuse matter upon the farm is now carefully saved by the best farmers, and is returned to the field for the benefit of the future crops. On account of the small amount of stock kept upon the average farm, the supply of stable manure is insufficient, and recourse to other fertilizers becomes necessary. Of the green crops used for this purpose, here as nearly everywhere else, clover holds the leading place. As there is but little land in the State that will not produce clover, no difficulty is experienced in preserving the fertility of the soil, and in restoring fertility where it has already been impaired. The native or southern pea is also used to some extent as a fertilizer. Recently the use of artificial or commercial fertilizers has been introduced, and is rapidly becoming general. They are more largely used in the cultivation of tobacco and wheat than any other crop. The amount of these fertilizers used in the State in 1885 was estimated at from 10,000 to 12,000 tons, as against about 3,000 tons in 1882. The most extensive fertilizer manufactory in the State is the National Fertilizer Company, with headquarters at Nashville. The company was organized in 1882 with D. C. Scales as president, and W. G. Sadler as secretary and superintendent. Their factory is located about three miles from the town, and has a capacity of 10,000 tons per annum. About 25 per cent of these products are sold in Tennessee, the remainder being distributed among the other Southern States. The bone phosphate which forms the

base of their fertilizer is obtained from the phosphate rock beds of South Carolina. The chemical substances, with the exception of sulphuric acid, are imported from Europe. The company manufacture all of the latter substance which they use. It is generated by the action of acids upon what is commonly known as "iron pyrites," which contains about 45 per cent of sulphur. The rock containing the pyrites is obtained in quantities of several hundred tons at a time, from the quarries of Georgia, Illinois and Wisconsin. The Memphis Fertilizer Company utilizes the refuse from the cotton-seed oil mills as cotton-seed hull ashes and cotton-seed meal, which, when mixed with acid phosphates, make an excellent fertilizer, especially for cotton. There are also two or three firms in the State engaged in the manufacture of pure bone dust.

Tennessee, taking the twelfth rank in the sisterhood of States in the number of her population, aggregating 1,542,359, according to the last census, takes the thirteenth position in point of the value of her live-stock upon farms, aggregating in value \$43,651,470. With only 8,496,556 acres of improved land, there is about one-third of the area of the entire State, or a little more than five acres to each inhabitant, actually available and employed. According to the tenth census there are for each 100 acres eighty so employed; only three horses, three and six-tenths milch cows, five and six-tenths of all other cattle, eight sheep and twenty-five swine. Considering the vast area unemployed and unreclaimed, embracing as it does much of the best lands of the State for the production of the cereals and cultivated grasses, together with the magnificent climate and admirably watered valleys, so well adapted to stock-growing, notwithstanding the aggregate value of live-stock making a large item in the wealth of the State, the percentage appears very low when compared with her real capacity for the development of this great interest. But the State is yearly attracting greater attention among those engaged in stock raising, and she is certainly destined to occupy a foremost place in this most important branch of husbandry.

Tennessee, while possessing fewer horses according to population than many other States, is second to none in the fine quality of this kind of stock. For the past three-quarters of a century this branch of stock husbandry, has received the attention of many of the most enlightened minds of the State, whose time, means and zeal have been devoted to the production of the highest type of the equine race. As early as 1790 many good horses were brought into East Tennessee, and through the influence of Gen. Jackson, who was one of the leaders of the turf, many of them were afterward brought to Middle Tennessee. Since that time some of the finest imported horses ever brought to this country have been owned



in the State, and in the hands of skillful breeders have made Tennessee horses renowned throughout America. Although a few central counties, as Davidson, Sumner, Giles, Maury, Rutherford and others, have hitherto devoted the greatest amount of attention to the breeding of the finest horses, there are many counties which vie with them in the number and value of their stock. In 1880 there were fourteen counties of the State owning over 5,000 horses, Wilson with 9,166 ranking first, and Rutherford with 9,005 occupying the second place. These figures include only the horses owned upon farms. Not so much attention has been paid to the heavy draft horse as to the roadster, the high prices obtained for the latter making it more profitable to the breeder.

The mules raised in the State are nearly equal in number to the horses, and many of the States further south look to Tennessee for their supply of these animals. In 1880 Maury County owned 8,301 mules; Shelby, 7,094; Wilson, 6,336; Fentress, 5,602, and six other counties between 4,000 and 5,000 each.

Next in importance, if second to any other, is the cattle interest of the State. Yet, if the natural advantages and capabilities of the State are taken into consideration, this branch of stock husbandry is developed to a very limited extent. During the war this interest suffered more severely than almost any other, and it has required nearly two decades to recover from its effects. In 1860 the number of cattle of all kinds in the State aggregated 764,732; in 1870, 607,038, and in 1880, 783,634; an increase over 1860 of less than 20,000. The improvement in quality, however, has been great. Notwithstanding, some few of the improved breeds of cattle were introduced as early as 1834 by importations from England and elsewhere, nothing like a general interest was manifested in the introduction of improved breeds, or for the general distribution of the more economic and valuable variety of cattle, until within the last two decades. Since the war, however, the spirit of improvement has awakened the farmers of the State to a higher appreciation than was ever before had of the superiority of good stock over bad or indifferent. Many very valuable Short Horns have been brought into Middle and West Tennessee from Kentucky, and the Lime-stone Basin has become noted for its good cattle. In East Tennessee several very promising herds of Jerseys have been introduced into various sections of the valley, and the interest in stock-breeding is fast becoming general. Some excellent herds of Ayrshires, Devons and Holsteins are owned in various parts of the State, but the greatest number are found in the middle division. In the rougher and more mountainous regions, the native breeds, on account of their natural hardiness and endurance, will undoubtedly continue to be raised more largely than any other.

There is no State in the Union that in climate, physical features, and productions excels Tennessee in the proportion of her territory adapted to the successful prosecution of the important industry of wool-growing. The vast plateaus and extensive ridges and valleys of the eastern division of the State seem almost to have been formed especially for the production of wool, while the table-lands of the middle and western division are scarcely to be excelled for grazing purposes. Notwithstanding these great natural advantages, the aggregate number of sheep in Tennessee according to the last census was only 673,117, a decrease of 204,666 in ten years. This diminution in the number of sheep kept is largely owing to the fact that there is practically no legal protection for the property of the flock owner from the ravages of vicious dogs. Many sheep are annually killed by these depredators, and farmers are thereby discouraged from what would otherwise be one of the most profitable departments of husbandry. But while the number of sheep in the State has largely decreased, it is probable that the valuation of the flocks is fully equal to, if it does not exceed, that of ten years ago. This improvement in the quality of the stock is evidenced by the fact that although the number of sheep in 1880 was one-fourth less than in 1870, the wool clip of the former year exceeded in amount that produced in 1870 by nearly one-half. The pioneer in the breeding of fine sheep in Tennessee was Mark R. Cockrill, of Davidson County. At the great London exhibition held in 1849-50, where every nation in the world was represented, he was awarded the grand medal for the finest specimen of wool exhibited. After making a careful study of the wool of every country, he fearlessly maintained that the peculiar climate and soil and protecting agencies of Tennessee, would make it the best wool-growing region under the sun, and he proved it by wresting the premium for the finest fleece from the assembled wool-growers of the world. Yet with this example before them, the majority of farmers, if they raised any sheep at all, were content with the half-wild animal which may still be found roaming at large in some sections of the State. In late years, however, many counties have introduced in addition to the Merino, the Cotswold, Southdown and Leicester, all of which have proved profitable.

The adaptation of the soil of Tennessee to Indian corn renders it one peculiarly fitted for the growth of swine, and in 1850 she took first rank as a hog-growing State. The following figures show the number of hogs reported in the State at the beginning of each decade from 1840. 1840, 2,926,607; 1850, 3,104,800; 1860, 2,347,321; 1870, 1,828,690; 1880, 2,160,495. This industry became well nigh annihilated during the civil war, but owing to the rapid reproduction of this animal, the State is now

producing as many hogs as in 1860. Swine are probably more susceptible of rapid improvement, by judicious care and breeding, than almost any other class of domestic animals. Hence in renewing their herds, many of the more enterprising farmers, recognizing the importance of introducing improved breeds, made large importations of Berkshires, Poland China, Essex, Jersey Reds, and other standard varieties. These importations have since continued, and such is the perfection to which the hogs of the State are bred, it is questionable if finer specimens are to be found in any other portion of the United States, or in Europe.

More or less poultry is raised or allowed to breed on all farms in Tennessee, but as a general rule the fowls receive but little attention. In East Tennessee, however, the raising of poultry for market is growing into an industry of considerable importance. The value of this interest is usually under-estimated. In 1880 there were over 16,000,000 dozen eggs produced, and the number of fowls in the State exceeded 5,000,000. The natural aptitude of the soils of Tennessee for the production of valuable grasses has already been noticed. That it has natural advantages for the economical production of butter and cheese would almost follow as a necessary consequence. Yet so little have the dairy interests been developed that in 1879 Tennessee, compared with the other States of the Union, stood fourteenth in the amount of butter made upon farms, and twenty-third in the production of cheese, while in the amount of milk sold to butter and cheese factories she stood the twenty-fifth, the amount being only 1,006,795 gallons. With natural advantages equal to those of the great dairy States, New York, Pennsylvania and Ohio, Tennessee has not until very recently produced butter and cheese in sufficient quantities to supply the home demand. Within the past few years, however, the establishment of creameries has given the industry a decided impetus, and in many counties, it bids fair to become the most profitable branch of husbandry. The Tennessee Creamery Company, with headquarters in Nashville, and operating in Middle Tennessee, has done much toward the development of the dairy business in that section. The prices paid for milk by these creameries are fully one-third more than are paid in New York and Pennsylvania, yet they are able to compete successfully in the markets with the butter makers of any other State. The following was written by a well known authority upon the subject: "Tennessee has many eminent advantages as a dairy State. It can make butter as cheap or cheaper than any other State, because good grazing lands are cheaper; because it is the most southern State that grows a variety of grasses and forage plants; because the climate is mild, and cows have access for a longer period to those succulent grasses



which are so promotive of the heavy flood of milk, and consequently winter dairies can be carried on for a greater length of time." That the dairy interests of Tennessee are rapidly advancing is evident from the fact that the butter production for 1879 was double that of 1869, and it is safe to say that the increase during the present decade will be correspondingly great.

From the first settling of the State it has been the custom of a large majority of the farmers to secure a few colonies of bees as a necessary adjunct to a well stocked farm, but it was not until the introduction of improved hives, artificial swarming, movable combs and extractors that it was pursued as a separate vocation. At present there are many persons who engage in this business almost exclusively, and whose profits are satisfactory. In the year 1850 the number of pounds of bees-wax and honey reported for Tennessee was 1,036,572; in 1860, the amount of bees-wax was 98,882 pounds, and of honey, 1,519,390 pounds; in 1870, 51,685 pounds of bees-wax, and 1,039,550 pounds of honey. The decrease for 1870 is doubtless due to the effect of the war. In 1880 the amount of honey reported was 2,130,689 pounds, and of wax 86,421 pounds, which places Tennessee first among the States of the Union in apiarian products. These results are due not only to the increased number of bees kept, but to the improved methods of handling them and to the introduction of Italian bees, which were first brought into the State in the year 1866. Tennessee has the best climate and the greatest variety of food for bees of any State, having all the forage plants of both the North and the South, while it has some that are not found in either. The climate, too, is especially adapted to bee culture, being a medium one with mild and short winters and agreeable summers.

Perhaps no industry in Tennessee has made greater advancement in the past twenty years than that of grape growing, the admirable adaptation of the soil and climate to which was in a great measure unknown or neglected until since the close of the war. One of the first efforts to grow grapes in the State was made by P. F. Tavel, a Swiss, who came to Stewart County in 1844. The varieties he planted being imported failed to do well, and the attempt was abandoned under the impression that the climate was not propitious for the culture of the fruit. Some ten years later a few enterprising persons in various parts of the State, after inspecting the vineyards around Cincinnati, were induced to plant a few vines of the Isabella and Catawba varieties. Among these early pioneers in grape growing were James Clark and Rebecca Dudley, of Montgomery County, who, long before wine making in Tennessee was thought possible, planted and successfully managed several acres of vines, and

made wine that by reason of its excellence and flavor soon became famous throughout the country. The varieties they planted, however, were not suited to the latitude, and the frequent failures of their vineyards induced the belief that Tennessee could never be made a grape growing State. For a time they even were discouraged, but eventually came to the conclusion that the failures arose rather from the unsuitableness of the varieties than from the nature of the location, soil or climate. Acting upon this belief some new kinds, among which were the Ives Seedling and Concord, were planted and were found to thrive so well that the old vineyards were abandoned. Since that time grapes have been very successfully and profitably grown in nearly every section of the State. Several different varieties are planted, but for wine the two above named predominate.

From the days of the earliest settlers, even among the Indians, excellent apples have been grown in Tennessee, and there is scarcely a county in the State that, with proper cultivation, will not produce them abundantly. The most favorable localities for apples, as well as other of the larger fruits, are the river lands of Middle Tennessee, the great plateau of West Tennessee and the hillsides of the eastern division. These localities are equal to the most favored regions of New York and Pennsylvania. Until within the past few years the raising of apples has been mainly confined to the supply for domestic purposes. Most of the old orchards are stocked with native varieties, but new and improved late varieties are now being introduced, and the acreage of orchards is rapidly increasing. Several extensive orchards have recently been planted on the river lands in Robertson County, and also by the Ruby community, in Morgan County.

Of the cultivated berries the strawberry is the most largely raised, and it grows with vigor and productiveness in every portion of the State. The planting and crops of these berries in the vicinity of Chattanooga is said to have doubled annually for the past five years. The shipments of them for the season of 1882 aggregated 143,822 pounds; for the season of 1884, 457,846 pounds, and for the season of 1885, 814,574 pounds. Nearly all portions of West Tennessee, but more especially the northern counties, are unsurpassed for the production of this fruit, and large and annually increasing quantities are shipped to the cities of the North. With the advantages of soil, climate and transportation facilities the possibilities of this business are unlimited.

The cultivation of raspberries, blackberries and dew-berries has not been extensively engaged in on account of the luxuriance and perfection with which they grow in the wild state. Berries of the finest flavor and of large size grow wild along the fence-rows, in "old fields" and in the

forest. For the production of all kinds of small fruits Tennessee stands superior to any other State in the Union.

From the following lists of exports\* from Madison County for 1884 some idea of the extent of the fruit growing industry in West Tennessee may be obtained: Apples, 8,000 barrels; pears, 3,000 barrels; peaches, 2,500 crates; plums, 550 crates; strawberries, 22,000 crates; other fruits, 10,000 crates.

The shipments from Chattanooga for the same season were, in pounds: Peaches, plums, and pears, 86,115; blackberries, 208,208; raspberries, 2,465; strawberries, 457,816; and grapes, 16,733. The shipment of peaches for the season of 1885 amounted to 446,266 pounds.

CENSUS REPORTS OF AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTION WITH THE RELATIVE RANK OF TENNESSEE.

PRODUCTS.	1840.		1850.		1860.		1870.		1880.	
	Amount	Rank	Amount	Rank	Amount	Rank	Amount	Rank	Amount	Rank
Wheat.....	(Bushels) 4,569,692	6	1,619,386	13	5,459,268	13	6,188,916	13	7,331,353	18
Corn.....	44,986,188	1	52,276,223	5	52,089,926	6	41,343,614	7	62,764,429	9
Oats.....	7,035,678	6	7,763,086	8	2,207,814	17	4,613,315	13	4,722,190	16
Rye.....	304,320	12	89,137	15	257,989	16	223,335	17	156,419	21
Barley.....	4,809	21	2,737	24	25,141	21	75,068	22	30,019	29
Buckwheat.....	17,118	15	19,427	18	14,481	24	77,437	16	33,434	29
Irish Potatoes.....	1,904,370	.....	1,067,844	16	1,182,005	21	1,124,337	22	1,354,481	25
Sweet Potatoes.....			2,777,716	6	2,604,672	6	1,205,683	8	2,369,901	5
Cotton.....	27,701,277	7	(Pounds) 194,532	5	296,464	8	181,842	8	330,621	9
Tobacco.....	29,550,432	3	(Bales) 20,148,932	4	43,448,097	3	21,465,452	3	29,365,052	5
Hay.....	(Tons) 31,233	.....	74,091	21	143,499	22	116,582	24	186,698	26
Butter.....	.....	.....	(Pounds) 8,139,585	11	10,017,787	15	9,571,069	13	17,886,369	14
Cheese.....	.....	.....	177,681	19	135,575	22	142,240	18	98,740	22
Honey.....	.....	.....	11,036,572	4	1,519,300	5	1,039,550	5	2,130,689	1
Maple Sugar.....	.....	.....	158,557	14	115,620	17	134,968	18	31,296	20
Maple Molasses.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	74,372	9	4,843	18	3,688	18
Sorghum Molasses.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	706,663	6	1,254,701	6	3,776,122	2
Value of Orchard Products.....	.....	.....	\$52,894	19	\$305,003	18	\$571,520	21	\$919,844	16
Horses.....	Number 341,409	5	270,636	7	290,882	9	247,254	11	266,119	14
Mules and Asses.....	.....	.....	75,303	1	126,335	1	102,903	2	173,498	2
Oxen.....	.....	.....	86,255	4	102,158	7	63,970	5	27,312	14
Milch Cows.....	.....	.....	250,456	7	249,514	10	243,197	12	303,900	13
Other Cattle.....	.....	.....	414,051	14	413,060	15	336,529	11	452,462	15
Sheep.....	741,593	7	811,591	9	773,517	11	826,783	12	672,789	16
Swine.....	2,926,607	1	3,104,800	1	2,347,321	4	1,828,690	5	2,160,495	7
Value of all Live Stock.....	.....	.....	\$29,978,016	5	\$60,211,425	6	\$55,084,075	9	\$ 43,651,476	13
Acres of Improved Land.....	.....	.....	5,175,173	8	6,795,337	9	6,843,278	9	8,496,756	14
Value of Farms.....	.....	.....	\$97,851,212	9	\$271,358,985	8	\$218,743,747	12	\$266,749,837	14

\* Estimated.

† Wax and honey combined.



## CHAPTER IX.

GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT CONCLUDED—THE TIMBER INTERESTS—KIND AND QUANTITY OF NATIVE WOOD—MANUFACTORIES—IRON PRODUCTS AND SHIPMENTS—THE EARLY FURNACES—THE PRESENT ENORMOUS RETURNS—MINERAL COMPANIES—IRON MANUFACTURES—THE COAL CONSUMPTION AND EXPORTS—THE MARBLE QUARRIES—QUALITY, QUANTITY AND MARKET—THE YIELD OF COPPER ORE—THE PRODUCTION OF FLOUR, COTTON AND WOOLEN GOODS, GUNPOWDER, PAPER, LEATHER, WHISKY, COTTON-SEED OIL, ETC.—THE BUREAU OF AGRICULTURE, STATISTICS AND MINES—WHAT IT HAS ACCOMPLISHED.

FEW States of the Union have a larger proportionate area of valuable timber lands than Tennessee. With a superficial area of 26,000,000 acres, she has in farms a little over 20,000,000 acres, 54 per cent of which consists of woodland. The States having an equal or greater percentage of timber land are Florida, having 66 per cent; Arkansas, 65; North Carolina, 62; West Virginia, 61; Georgia, 59; Mississippi, 58; Alabama, 55; Louisiana, 55, and South Carolina, 54. If the value of the timber is considered Tennessee without a doubt exceeds them all. In her forests may be found almost every variety of tree known to the United States. This is due to the difference of elevation in the State, which produces a great diversity of climate, and to the existence of a variety of soil. Some portions of West Tennessee are covered with heavy forests, the magnificence of which are unsurpassed in America. The river swamps in this part of the State still contain large bodies of cypress, while the hills are covered with oaks, hickories and other hard-wood trees. The central portion of the State, now more largely cleared than either of the other divisions, was once covered with forests of hard wood, considerable bodies of which still remain upon the land least fit for agricultural purposes, or remote from railroads. Nearly through the center of this middle district, extending north and south, the "cedar glades" occupy an extensive region. The eastern portion of the State is covered with a heavy forest of oak and other hard woods, mixed at high elevation with hemlock, pine and spruce, and constituting one of the finest bodies of timber in the United States.

As a catalog and description of all the various varieties of timber in the State would require a volume, only a few of the most important will be noticed. Of the oak Tennessee has twelve or more species, the most valuable of which is the white oak. This tree attains an enormous

size in the valley of the Tennessee, and in the first and second tier of river counties of West Tennessee. It is found in considerable quantities in many parts of East Tennessee, the best being on the ridges in the western part of that division, or in the counties resting against the Cumberland Table-land, and also in the slopes of the Unaka Mountains. The ridges and valleys lying on Duck and Buffalo Rivers are also covered with this tree, and it is pretty generally scattered through all the wooded district of the Highland Rim. The timber from this tree is used in the manufacture of wagons and agricultural implements and for staves and fence rails. White oak lumber sells at the mills for \$18 to \$20 per 1,000 feet, according to demand and accessibility.

The red oak grows in nearly every portion of the State, and furnishes the greater part of the staves for tobacco hogsheads and flour barrels. A large proportion of the charcoal consumed by the furnaces is also manufactured from this timber. The post oak is found in all parts of the State, and grows where the soil is dry, gravelly and thin. It is used extensively for railroad ties, being solid, tough, close-grained and hard to split. The chestnut oak thrives on high, poor, barren and rocky soil, and upon such may be found in every division of the State, but especially upon the leached soils of the Highland Rim. It is chiefly valuable for its bark, which is richer in tanning than that of any other tree. The black oak is found in considerable quantities in the Highland Rim, especially those portions which have a rich loamy soil; as in Montgomery, and parts of Stewart and Robertson Counties. Much of this timber is annually made into boards and staves, many thousands of the latter being shipped to the St. Louis market. The scarlet oak is found in abundance in East Tennessee, growing in moist places. It is also found in the small swampy spots in Middle and West Tennessee, though not in sufficient quantities to make it of particular interest or profit. Black jack oak covers a considerable portion of the "barrens," but as a timber tree it is of little value. Other species of oaks are found in the State, but not in sufficient quantities to make them of much worth.

The black walnut is pretty generally distributed over all the rich soils of the State. Its growth is an unerring indication of fertility. It abounds in the Central Basin, and grows on the better part of the Highlands. It also flourishes on the north sides of ridges and in the valleys of East Tennessee, and attains a marvellous size upon the calcareo-siliceous soil of the western division. Probably no State east of the Mississippi has a greater quantity of this valuable timber. The uses to which it is put are familiar to all. The butternut or white walnut grows upon the margins of streams and is sometimes found on rich northern slopes.

It is scattered over almost as great an extent of territory as the black walnut. The wood from this tree is durable but not strong, and is sometimes used in ornamental work for giving variety and contrast.

Of the hickory there are six species found in Tennessee, the most important of which are the scaly-bark and the common hickory. The latter grows well upon all soils of middling quality in the State, and is found in abundance in what are called the "hickory barrens," on the Highland Rim. It rarely attains a greater diameter than eighteen inches. When of this size it is worked up into axles for wagons, spokes and felloes for carriages, and into ax handles; when small it is used for barrel and hogshead hoops and for box casings. The scaly-bark hickory seeks a fertile soil upon river banks and rich hill sides. It grows to a much larger size and splits more readily than the species described. It is employed for the same purposes.

Of the two species of ash met with in the State the white ash is the most common. It was formerly very plentiful in every part of the State, but is now growing scarce, except in places remote from facilities for transportation. It finds its most congenial soil in the caves and north sides of mountains, and in the rich lands of the Central Basin and West Tennessee. The largest trees to be met with are in Bedford County, some of which have attained a diameter of six feet. The wood is highly esteemed by wheelwrights, carriage-makers, ship-builders and manufacturers of agricultural implements, and is especially valuable for flooring. The green or blue ash is found only along water-courses.

The beech is a common growth throughout the State upon the moist soils lying upon the streams. The most extended groves are found in Macon, Trousdale, Smith, Sumner, Cannon, Bedford and other counties of the Basin. But little of it is converted into lumber, and it is chiefly valuable for fuel. When seasoned the wood is extremely hard and solid. It is used for plow-stocks, shoe-lasts and the handles of tools.

Chestnut is a valuable timber on account of its durability, and is abundant in the State. Large forests are found on the ridges of East Tennessee, on the sandstone soils of the Cumberland Table-land, and in portions of the Highland Rim, especially in the counties of Lawrence, Wayne, Hickman and Perry.

Upon the first settlement of the State cedar forests were as abundant in the Central Basin as those of oak and poplar. The demands of the agriculturist, combined with the export trade, however, have nearly exhausted the supply in Davidson, Williamson, Sumner and Rutherford Counties. The best forests are now found in Marshall, Wilson, Bedford and Maury, covering in the aggregate nearly 300 square miles. Occa-



sional trees of a valuable size are still seen upon the banks of a majority of the streams in Middle Tennessee. Nowhere else in the United States are there found such splendid trees of this timber. In the counties of Marshall and Bedford solid cedar logs have been cut that would square twenty-four inches for a distance of thirty feet.

The cypress finds its most congenial home and attains its highest development in the swamps lying on the Mississippi and Tennessee Rivers, where it is found in considerable quantities. Owing to its peculiar character it rarely grows in company with other trees, but stands in isolated forests, rearing its long white trunk high into the upper air, while its roots permeate the deep black soil, which is often covered with water of an inky blackness. A great quantity of cypress timber is made into shingles and staves for sugar hogsheads and molasses barrels. Set in the ground it resists decay for a great while, which makes it a valuable timber for fencing.

The pine is one of the most abundant, and at the same time one of the most valuable of the forest growths of the State. There are two species, the white and the yellow. The latter grows in considerable quantities in the vicinity of Knoxville, and in many of the parallel ridges in the valley of East Tennessee. It is also found in extensive forests in the Cumberland Table-land, and forms considerable belts in Hardin and Lawrence Counties. Patches are found on the south hill-sides of Wayne, and in less quantities in several counties of the Highland Rim and West Tennessee. It abounds on poor soils, those usually of sandstone, but often on red clay with gravel. It takes possession of abandoned old fields, and grows with rapidity when the soil is too sterile to produce other vegetation. In the regions where it abounds it forms the principal timbers for domestic purposes. The white pine is not so abundant as the preceding; it is distributed in greater or less quantities over the slopes of the Unaka Mountains, and is found locally on the Cumberland Table-land. It grows to a larger size than the yellow pine, and makes a quality of lumber highly prized on account of its lightness and comparative freedom from resinous exudations.

There are several varieties of poplar, known locally as blue, white and yellow poplar, the last named being the most valuable as a timber tree. This grows upon rich soils almost everywhere. The finest specimens in the State are to be found in Obion and Dyer Counties, West Tennessee, and in Maury and Macon, in Middle Tennessee. Trees twenty and twenty-five feet in circumference, and from sixty to seventy feet to the first limb, are often met with. The wealth of poplar timber is very great in almost every part of the State, and millions of feet are annually shipped by river and

rail. It is more used in the construction of houses than any other wood; the studding and clap-boards, sills and joints, rafters and shingles, in a large proportion of frame buildings being made from this timber.

The sycamore, plane or cotton-wood is found growing on the margins of streams in nearly every section of the State. It grows with rapidity, and is troublesome on account of the sprouts that it sends up from the stump. The wood is used in cabinet shops, and makes a beautiful article of furniture. Only as a firewood is it regarded with any favor by the farmer, as it does not split, and speedily decays when exposed to the weather.

Two very different species of trees are commonly called gum; both are quite abundant in Tennessee. The black gum is usually found upon rich, moist soils, and grows to a considerable size where the soil is favorable to its growth. It is a valuable timber for hubs, and is much used for that purpose on account of the difficulty with which it splits. The sweet gum is found in wet marshy places in every part of the State. Large quantities of it are manufactured into plank, which is used for coarse work; it is cheaper than poplar but decays much more rapidly.

The linden or bass-wood, is abundant in the blue grass region of the Central Basin, and in some localities in East Tennessee. As a timber tree it is chiefly valuable for making firkin staves.

Black or yellow locust, flourishes upon the slopes of the Highland and Cumberland Mountains, and also upon the sides of the Unakas. It is also found upon the north sides of Clinch and Powell Mountains, and grows upon the glady places of the Central Basin, where no other tree will survive. This tree rarely attains a greater size than one foot in diameter and a height of thirty or forty feet; but it grows with rapidity and in ten years makes good posts or railroad ties.

There are three species of maple found in Tennessee, the sugar-maple, the red flowering maple and the white maple. The first abounds in the coves of the mountains and on the rich bottoms of the streams. It formerly covered a large portion of the Central Basin, and was the chief reliance of the early settlers for sugar. The wood of this tree has a remarkable beauty. One variety of it, the bird's-eye maple, has an exquisite appearance, the fibres being contorted into little knots resembling the eye of a bird. This timber is still quite abundant in nearly every part of the State, and is yearly becoming more valuable. The red flowering maple grows in wet soils and on the marshy margin of streams, and in such localities is quite plentiful in every division of the State. The wood is hard and close grained. It is valuable for cabinet work, the most beautiful varieties selling higher than mahogany.

Of the elm there are also three species, the white elm, the slippery elm and the wahoo witch, or cork elm. The first is widely distributed in considerable quantities throughout the State, and is by far the largest of the elms, attaining in favorable localities as much as 100 feet in height and 5 feet in diameter. The other two varieties are, perhaps, as widely distributed, but are not so abundant as the white elm. None of the species are of much value for either timber or fuel.

Cotton-wood is confined almost exclusively to the alluvial bottoms of the Mississippi in West Tennessee. It grows very large, towering high in the air, darkening the landscape with its thick foliage. The wood is white, soft and easily cut. Its chief value is for fuel, being used in great quantities by the steam-boats that ply on the Mississippi.

Of the firs there are two species found in the State, the balsam fir and the black fir or spruce. Some of the highest mountain peaks are covered with the former variety, which is seldom met with at a lower elevation than 4,000 feet. The dark foliage of the tree has given the name to the Black Mountains of North Carolina, and makes the characteristic feature of many of the highest peaks of the Unakas. Being inaccessible it is rarely made into lumber, though the trunks often reach 100 feet in diameter. The black fir is found in the same localities.

As a shrub sassafras is found in every portion of the State, but most abundantly in the valley of East Tennessee and upon the Highland Rim. It is a great pest to the farmer, sometimes covering a field with sprouts almost as thickly and continuously as if sown. These shrubs upon their soil never reach the dimensions of a tree, and rarely attain a size sufficient for fence-stakes. In West Tennessee, however, the sassafras is one of the largest trees of the forest. A specimen of this species was found in Obion County which measured sixty inches in diameter, exclusive of the bark. The wood is soft, brittle and close grained, and is used for house studding and to some extent for the manufacture of furniture.

The trees mentioned constitute the great bulk of the timber in Tennessee, but there are many other varieties which have a special interest. Among them are the buckeye, mulberry, wild cherry, dogwood, tupelo, pecan, catalpa, cucumber, laurel, holly, hornbeam, box elder, chinquapin, crab apple, hackberry, willow, birch and persimmon.

The development of the manufacturing and other industrial enterprises in Tennessee since the close of the civil war has been almost unprecedented, and especially is this true of the lumber business. No trade during the past twenty years has exhibited a more uniform and substantial growth than that embraced in the manufacture and distribution of lumber, and no industry with the exception of iron, gives employ-



ment to a greater number of persons and requires a larger investment of capital. The principal center of this industry in the State is Nashville, which now ranks fifth in the importance as a lumber market, and third in size as a manufacturing center. The annual value of her lumber production amounts to about \$5,000,000. The annual shipments of rough and manufactured lumber reach nearly 120,000,000 feet. It is sent to nearly every city in the United States, and large quantities are exported to London, Liverpool, Hamburg, and other European points. Although during later years considerable amounts have been received by rail, the chief supply of logs and lumber is received by the Cumberland River, one of the greatest logging streams for its length in the world. The chief lumber staple of Nashville is the yellow poplar, although that city stands at the head of all Southern cities as a hard-wood market, and has the largest trade in black walnut lumber of any market in the United States. It is also the distributing point for the famous Tennessee red cedar. The beginning of this industry in Nashville may be said to date from 1840, when the first steam saw-mill was erected. From that time until the war the lumber operations were confined almost exclusively to the local trade. The only shipments of any consequence were red cedar rafted to Memphis, Helena and New Orleans, and consisting mostly of railroad ties. Within the past ten years the business has developed wonderfully, and the volume of capital invested is annually increasing. In 1870 there were but three saw-mills and six planing-mills. There are now within the limits of the city thirteen saw-mills, twelve planing-mills and thirty-five firms engaged in the lumber trade.

The second city in importance as a lumber center is probably Chattanooga. The mills in that city now cut annually from 14,000,000 to 20,000,000 feet of lumber, while those in the country tributary to it cut not less than 100,000,000 feet more. Of this latter product about 30,000,000 feet is handled by Chattanooga dealers, and used by her wood-working establishments. Large amounts of pine, both yellow and white, as well as nearly all the varieties of hard wood are manufactured into lumber and shipped to Northern cities. In addition to the plow and other agricultural implement manufactories which consume a large amount of lumber there are in Chattanooga nine establishments engaged in manufacturing chair furniture, pumps, handles, and wooden ware, which represent in the aggregate an investment of over \$350,000. These factories gives employment to more than 500 hands, and turn out annually manufactured products to the value of \$500,000. Few of these establishments date their existence back of 1870, and the majority of them have been put into operation the present decade.

Memphis is also a lumber center of importance. Its mills are supplied by raft from the Mississippi, Arkansas and Tennessee Rivers, and saw large quantities of cypress, ash, poplar, hickory, gum, and black walnut.

This industry in Knoxville also is developing rapidly, and that city, situated as it is in one of the finest timber regions in the world, will in a few years, no doubt, rival any other point in the State, especially in the manufacture of pine and hard-wood lumber. Every county in the State manufactures lumber in greater or less quantities. According to the last census the number of saw-mills in Tennessee was 755, representing an investment of capital to the amount of \$2,004,500, and making \$3,744,905 worth of products annually. Could a report of this industry be obtained at the present time these figures would be largely increased. The following table exhibits the condition in 1880 of the manufactures which are altogether or very largely dependent upon timber for raw material:

	No. of Estab- lishments.	Capital.	Value of Products.
Agricultural implements.....	33	\$161,030	\$ 182,116
Boxes.....	3	23,500	46,000
Coffins, caskets, etc.....	27	40,485	75,900
Carriages and wagons.....	51	715,050	1,253,721
Cooperage.....	52	36,350	153,275
Sash, doors and blinds.....	8	183,500	268,230
Wooden ware.....	3	99,430	247,350
Furniture.....	85	511,250	954,100

The making of white oak staves for the European market has grown to be quite an important industry. The number annually shipped from the lower Tennessee River, and made in Hardin, Wayne, Perry, Humphreys and Stewart Counties is over 1,500,000. About one-half of the quantity is shipped out of the Cumberland. In their rough state they command at New Orleans usually from \$80 to \$150 per thousand.

The industry of first importance to Tennessee, and for which she has resources unexcelled by any State in the Union, is the manufacture of iron and its manipulation into forms of utility. Although this industry, as it now exists, has grown up in the past twenty years, its history dates back into the last century. The first settlers of Tennessee erected iron works within its limits soon after the close of the Revolution. A bloomary was built in Washington County in 1790, and another at Elizabethton, on Doe River in Carter County, about 1795. Wagner's bloomary, on Roane Creek, in Johnson County, is said to have been built in the same year. A bloomary was also erected on Camp Creek, in Greene County, in 1797. Two bloomaries in Jefferson County, the Mossy Creek Forge, ten miles north of Dandridge, and Dumppling Forge, five miles

west of Dandridge, were built in the same year. At about the same time, if not earlier, David Ross, the proprietor of iron works in Campbell County, Va., erected a large furnace and forge at the junction of the two forks of the Holston River, in Sullivan County, near the Virginia line, on the great road from Knoxville to Philadelphia. It is said that boats of twenty-five tons' burden, could ascend to Ross' iron works, and that at Long Island, a short distance above on the Holston, boats were built to transport iron and castings, made in considerable quantities at these works, with other produce, to the lower settlements and to New Orleans. A bloomary was built about 1795 below the mouth of the Watauga, and another at the same time about twenty-five miles above the mouth of French Broad River, and thirty miles above Knoxville. In what is now known as Middle Tennessee, iron was also made during the last decade of the last century. A few years after the founding of Nashville, iron ore was discovered about thirty miles west of the future city. Between 1790 and 1795 Cumberland Furnace was erected on Iron Fork of Barton's Creek, in Dickson County, seven miles northwest of Charlotte. This furnace was rebuilt in 1825, and is still in operation. This county, with Stewart and Montgomery Counties, afterward became very prominent in the manufacture of charcoal and pig-iron. The first furnace in Montgomery County was probably on Yellow Creek, fourteen miles southwest of Clarksville, built in 1802. The enterprises of these early iron workers assume a picturesque aspect, when viewed in connection with the primitive methods of manufacture which were employed by them, and which, in some portions of East Tennessee, have been continued to the present day. Their charcoal furnaces were blown through one tuyere with wooden tubs, adjusted to attachments which were slow in motion, and which did not make the best use of the water-power that was often insufficiently supplied by mountain streams of limited volume. A ton or two of iron a day in the shape of pigs or castings was a good yield. The bloomaries, with scarcely an exception, were furnished with a *trompe* or water-blast in a small stream with a suitable fall supplying both the blast for the fires and the power which turned the wheel that moved the hammer. Of cast iron cylinders, steam power, two tuyeres, and many other improvements in the charcoal-iron industry, these people knew but little. They were pioneers and frontiersmen in every sense; from the world of invention and progress they were shut out by mountains and streams and hundreds of miles of unsubdued forests. It is to their credit, and it should not be forgotten, that they diligently sought to utilize the resources which they found under their feet, and that they were not discouraged from undertaking a difficult task, because the only means for its accom-



plishment of which they had any knowledge were crude in conception and often very difficult to obtain.

The iron industry of Tennessee, however, made steady progress after the opening of the present century. Both furnaces and bloomaries multiplied rapidly. In 1856 there were enumerated over 75 forges and bloomaries, 71 furnaces, and 4 rolling-mills in the State, each of which had been in operation at some period after 1790. Of the furnaces, 29 were in East Tennessee, and 42 in Middle and West Tennessee. Of the latter, 14 were in Stewart County, 12 in Montgomery, 7 in Dickson, 2 in Hickman, 2 in Perry, 2 in Decatur, 2 in Wayne, and 1 in Hardin County. The furnaces in East Tennessee were mainly in Sullivan and Carter Counties, Sullivan having 5, and Carter 7; but Johnson, Washington, Greene, Cocke, Sevier, Monroe, Hamilton, Claiborne, Campbell, Grainger and Union Counties, each had 1 or 2 furnaces, while Roane County had 3. The forges and bloomaries were mainly located in East Tennessee. Johnson County contained 15, Carter 10, Sullivan 6, Washington 3, Greene 10, Campbell 7, Blount 4, Roane 7, Rhea 3, and a few other counties 1 and 2 each. Nearly all of these were bloomaries. In West Tennessee there were less than a dozen refinery forges, and 1 or 2 bloomaries. These forges were mainly employed, from about 1825 to 1860, in the manufacture of blooms for rolling-mills, many of which were sold to mills in the Ohio Valley. Most of the furnaces, forges and bloomaries enumerated have been abandoned. There still remain in the State 20 charcoal furnaces and about the same number of forges and bloomaries. Cumberland Rolling-mill, on the left bank of the Cumberland River, in Stewart County, was built in 1829. It was, probably, the first establishment of the kind in the State, and was the only one as late as 1856.

Since the close of the civil war, Chattanooga has become the most prominent iron center in Tennessee, having several iron enterprises of its own, and others in its vicinity. In 1854, Bluff Furnace was built to use charcoal, and at the beginning of the war, in 1861, the erection of the Vulcan Rolling-mill, to roll bar iron, was commenced. This mill was not finished in 1860, when it was burned by the Union forces. It was rebuilt in 1866. In 1864 a rolling-mill, to re-roll iron rails, was erected by the United States Government, under the supervision of John Fritz, superintendent of the Cambria Iron Works. In 1869 it was purchased by the Roane Iron Company, who at once put in puddling furnaces and began making iron rails. This company, the year previous, had purchased a large tract of land about seventy miles north of Chattanooga, in Roane County, and had built a small furnace with a capacity of about 9,000

tons per year. The business was successful, and the company soon began the erection of another and larger furnace, which was put in blast in 1872. Working capacity of the two, about 20,000 tons annually, which have since been doubled. The first open-hearth steel made in any Southern State, was made by this company, by the Siemens-Martin process, at Chattanooga, June 6, 1878.

The Tennessee Coal, Iron and Railroad Company own three furnaces situated at Cowan and South Pittsburg, which have a combined capacity of about 75,000 tons. The one at the former place was built in 1880, and those at South Pittsburg, in 1879 and 1881.

Other furnaces which are more or less tributary to Chattanooga as a center are Oakdale, in Roane County, capacity, 21,000 tons; Citico, in that city, 35,000 tons; Dayton, in Rhea County, 70,000 tons, making an aggregate capacity of over 225,000 tons. In 1880 the total production of the blast furnace of the State was reported at only 47,873 tons, showing an increase of little less than 500 per cent during the past six years. The grand aggregate of iron and steel manufactured in Tennessee according to the last census was 77,100 tons, valued at \$2,274,253. The capital invested in this industry amounted to \$3,681,776, and was distributed among forty-three establishments. The six leading counties in the order of production were Hamilton, 35,645 tons; Marion, 17,958 tons; Roane, 12,000 tons; Knox, 4,181 tons; Dickson, 2,400 tons, and Stewart, 1,800 tons.

The number of establishments engaged in the manufacture of machinery, nails, car-wheels and other articles using iron as raw material, is annually increasing. The capital invested in this branch of the iron industry in Chattanooga amounts to over \$500,000, and the annual product of iron to over \$800,000. Knoxville, also, has a considerable amount of capital invested in manufactories of this class. The Knoxville Car-Wheel Company in 1880, with a capital of \$101,000, was turning out an average of thirty-five car-wheels per day. The Knoxville Iron Company was incorporated in 1864, and in 1880 had a capital stock paid in of \$230,000. It employs 250 hands, and has a capacity of 200 kegs of nails per day. It has eight puddling furnaces, four trains of rollers, and thirty nail machines. Besides nails the company makes railroad spikes, boat spikes, street rails and light T rails.

The Knoxville Foundry & Machine Company had an invested capital in 1880 of \$45,000, and employed forty hands. This company manufactures mill machinery, castings, steam engines, boilers, saw-mills, derricks and other machinery of that class. Nashville and Memphis are not very extensively engaged in iron manufacturing. In 1880 the number

of foundries and machine shops in the former city was thirteen, with a capital of \$143,300, and an annual production of \$487,451. The extent of this business in Memphis does not differ materially from that in Nashville.

As great and important as are the iron resources of Tennessee, they would be of little value were it not for the vast bodies of coal which lie adjacent. Previous to 1850 but very little coal was mined, and that was mostly used in blacksmithing. The pioneer in the coal business of Tennessee was Henry H. Wiley, of Anderson County, a native of Virginia, and a land surveyor by profession. He opened a mine on Poplar Creek, and for many years during the winter months boated coal down to Huntsville and Decatur, Ala. He hauled the coal four miles to a point below the junction of the four forks of Poplar Creek, where it was put in boats, floated out that stream to the Clinch, then into the Tennessee, and thence to its destination. This mine was opened in 1852. Other mines, however, had been opened several years previous, one or two as early as 1840, but these had been worked merely for local supply. One of the first opened was at what is known as the Tracy City Mine, now the most extensive in the State. The seam of coal at this place was discovered by some boys hunting a rabbit; the animal ran under the root of a tree, and in digging it out the coal was found. They reported the discovery to their father, Ben Wooten, and he, thinking it might be of some value, got out a grant for 500 acres covering the opening. The Wooten Bros. afterward opened the seam, and for many years hauled the coal down the mountain to the blacksmiths in the valley, and some was sent to Nashville. In 1852 Roorman Johnson, John Cryder, S. F. Tracy and others, of New York, came to Tennessee looking for opportunities for investment. They were shown this property and soon after purchased it. A company was then formed under the name of the Sewanee Mining Company, which had a paid in capital of \$400,000. In 1854 the construction of a railroad from the Nashville & Chattanooga Railroad to the mines was commenced, but was not completed until 1859, when the company found themselves \$400,000 in debt. They were sued by both the New York and Tennessee creditors. The latter, represented by A. S. Colyar, obtained the first judgment, bought in the property and re-organized the company under the name of the Tennessee Coal & Railroad Company, with Colyar as president. In 1862 the mines were abandoned by the company, but were taken possession of by the United States troops, and for some time were worked for the use of the army. At the close of the war a compromise was effected with the New York creditors, and, with P. A. Marbury as general manager, operations were recommenced.



In 1868 the manufacture of coke in pits on the ground was begun, and during the year 5,377 bushels were shipped. In 1873 the company foresaw that to make a great and profitable business the manufacture of coke must form a large part of their business, and that that coke must be a good iron-making fuel. A small furnace was erected on the mountain, and this experiment satisfactorily tested. During that year the shipment of coke amounted to 62,175 bushels. The erection of the Chattanooga Iron Company's furnace gave great impetus to the enterprise, and in 1874 the coke shipment increased to 619,403 bushels. The next year the entire property was sold to Cherry, O'Connor & Co., who in 1880 began the erection of a furnace at Cowan, which was finished in July, 1881. In the early part of the following year the property was sold to John H. Inman and others, Tennessee parties retaining a one-third interest. The name was changed to the Tennessee Coal, Iron & Railroad Company.

The first coal shipped from this mine since the war was in June, 1866, and shipments for remainder of the year amounted to 9,240 tons. In 1870 they amounted to 47,110 tons of coal and 413 tons of coke; in 1875, to 109,100 tons of coal and 16,160 tons of coke; in 1880, to 114,170 tons of coal and 64,440 tons of coke; 1883, 126,784 tons of coal and 101,090 tons of coke; 1884, 152,307 tons of coal and 100,935 tons of coke. For several years about one-half of the labor employed in these mines has been that of convicts. The company have a very large tract of land, 25,000 acres of which is underlaid with the Sewanee seam of coal, ranging from two to seven feet in thickness.

The Rockwood mines, owned by the Roane Iron Company, are located in Roane County, ninety-two miles above Chattanooga. This remarkable body of coal was discovered in 1840 by William Green, an employe of John Brown. Green and William Brown soon after entered the land, and began mining the coal for local purposes. This was continued until 1867, when the property was purchased by a company, of which Gen. John T. Wilder was vice-president and manager. As has been stated, the company erected two blast furnaces, and to supply them began the manufacture of coke. This latter branch of their business has steadily increased until they now have 180 ovens.

The Etna mines are situated in Marion County, fourteen miles from Chattanooga in what is known as Raccoon Mountain. They were first opened in 1852 by an Eastern company working under a lease from Robert Cravens and the Boyce and Whiteside estates. Since that time they have been operated by several different companies and individuals with varied success and reverses. The present company was organized in August, 1881, under the name of the Etna Coal Company. The mines

now operated are owned by the company, the estate consisting of about 3,000 acres, extending from the Nashville, Chattanooga & St. Louis Railway to the Tennessee River. The veins worked are known as the Kelly and Oak Hill. From the Kelly Mine a coke is made for foundry use exclusively, while that from Oak Hill is used for blast furnaces. The former mine was originally opened for general domestic use and the product was sold largely in Nashville, Chattanooga and elsewhere, but its superior qualities for blacksmith use and for the manufacture of coke soon caused the trade to drift almost exclusively into that channel. In 1880 about one-fourth of the entire output was coked, the remainder being sold to blacksmiths throughout the South. In 1884 the company had sixty-four coke ovens, and the output from January 1 to November 1 was coal, 41,205 tons, and coke, 533,436 bushels.

The Soddy Coal Company's mines are located on the Cincinnati Southern Railway, twenty-one miles from Chattanooga, at Rathburn Station. This mine was opened in 1867 by an association of Welshmen on the co-operative plan. It proved a failure, and the mine went into the hands of a receiver. The present company took charge in 1877, and the business has since steadily increased. They have 150 coke ovens. Their output from ten months preceding November 1, 1884, was 96,000 tons of coal, of which 32,000 tons were converted into coke. They ship to Georgia, Alabama, Louisiana, Mississippi and Texas.

The Walden's Ridge Coal Company is a corporation with the same stock holders as the Soddy Company. They operate a mine on Rocky Creek, nine miles farther up the railroad, having begun in 1883. Two seams are worked, the lower for coking exclusively, and the upper for steam and domestic purposes. In 1884 thirty-five coke ovens were in operation, producing 404,949 bushels of coke annually. These mines were worked as far back as 1843, but little coal except for blacksmithing was consumed at that time. The first coal mined here for shipment was by Thomas A. Brown and John Baxter, of Knoxville, in 1866.

The coal lands at Coal Creek, in Anderson County, are owned by the Coal Creek Consolidated Mining Company. There are now six mines being worked at that place, of which two are operated by the above company and the remainder leased to the Knoxville Iron Company, the Coal Creek Coal Company, the New River Coal Company, and H. B. and Joel Bowling. The Coal Creek mines were first opened for shipping coal upon the completion to that place of the Knoxville & Ohio Railroad, in 1870. The shipments in 1871 amounted to 36,000 tons; in 1875, 62,369 tons; in 1880, 150,000 tons; and in 1882, 200,000 tons. The Knoxville Iron Company operates a mine about one and one-half miles from

the main track of the Knoxville & Ohio division of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad. They employ about 150 convicts and thirty-four laborers. During the year 1882 the company shipped 98,645 tons of coal to various markets in southwest Virginia, North and South Carolina, Georgia and Alabama. For the first ten months of 1884 their output amounted to 204,978 tons.

The Dayton Coal & Iron Company's mines are located in Rhea County, Tenn., and are owned by English capitalists. These mines have been recently opened, and are designed mainly to supply coke for the blast furnaces which have been built.

The Standard Coal & Coke Company is composed of Tennessee capitalists who own about 1,400 acres of land, underlaid by a seam of coal four and one-half feet thick. Their mine is situated near Newcomb Station, in Campbell County. They employ 175 men, and produce about 350 tons of coal per day.

The Poplar Creek mines are located in Morgan County. These mines are all small. They are operated by the following companies: Poplar Creek, Mount Carbon, Winter's Gap, Eureka and Oliver.

The Glenn Mary Coal & Coke Company is located in Scott County, on the Cincinnati Southern Railroad.

The Tabler, Crudup Coal & Coke Company was incorporated in 1881. They own 7,000 acres of land in Hamilton County, and put out about 200 tons of coal daily.

One of the most promising fields of industrial activity in East Tennessee, is the development of the wonderful marble quarries in the vicinity of Knoxville. These marbles have obtained a reputation second to no other in the United States, and it is said that when they come into competition with foreign marble, they are greatly preferred and sell for a much higher price. The varieties are almost innumerable, and are of the most exquisite colors. Their solidity, durability and susceptibility of polish make them unequalled for building and monumental purposes. Although nearly fifty years have elapsed since the first marble quarry was opened, the business is still in its infancy, but is now developing rapidly.

The Hawkins County marble was the first quarried, and it is said that it was brought to notice by the favorable expression with reference to it by Dr. Troost, the first State geologist.

In 1838 the Rogersville Marble Company was formed for the purpose of sawing marble and establishing a marble factory in the vicinity of Rogersville. Orville Rice was elected president, and S. D. Mitchell secretary. The company operated to a limited extent for several years,



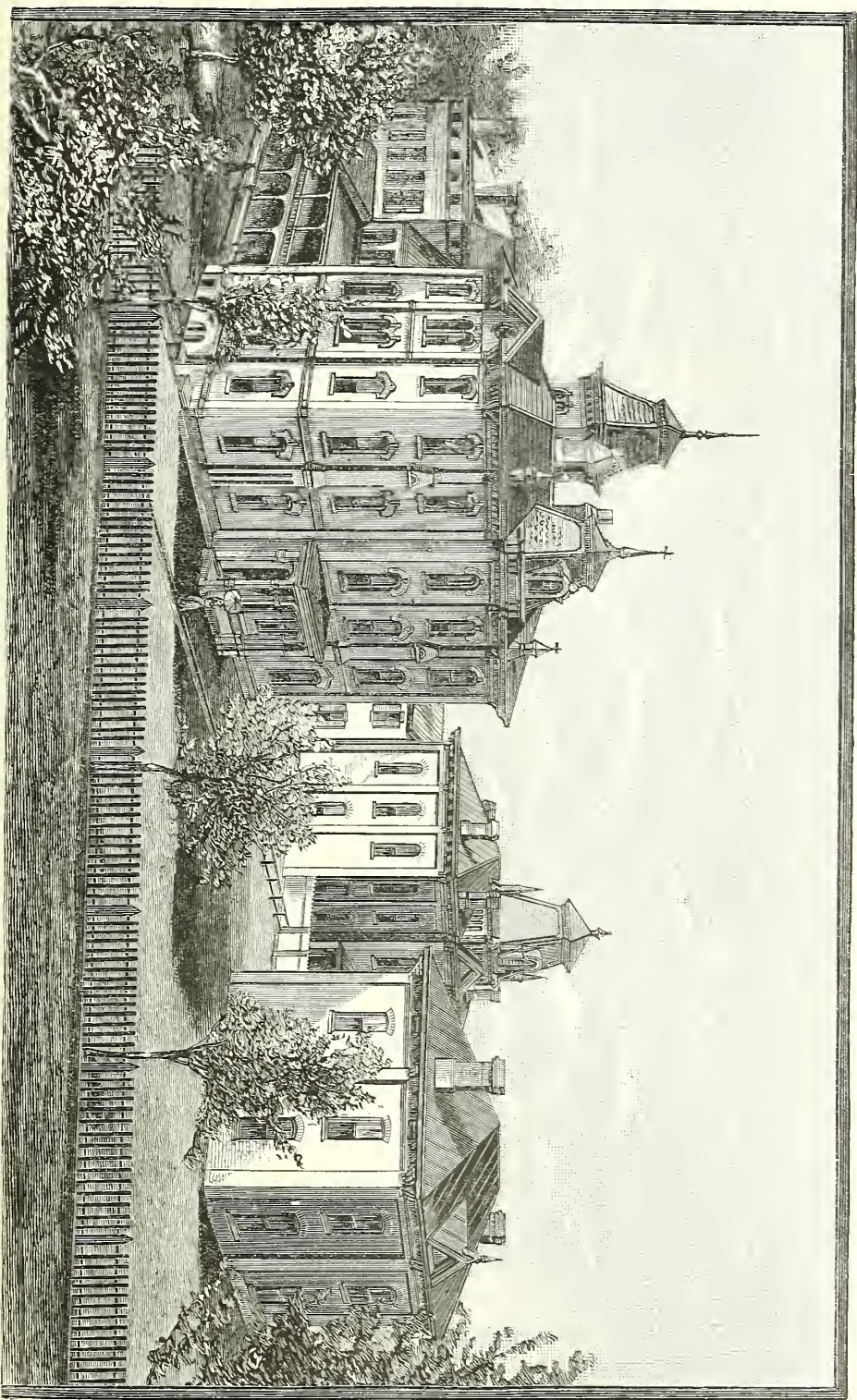
erected a mill and sold several thousand dollars worth of marble annually, which was mostly distributed in East Tennessee. In 1844 the company sold out to the president, Rice, who on a moderate scale carried on the business for many years. He sent a block of the "light mottled strawberry variety" to the Washington monument. This was called the "Hawkins County Block," and bears the inscription "From Hawkins County, Tennessee." Another block of one of the best varieties was sent by act of the Legislature, which was called the "State Block." These blocks attracted the attention of the building committee of the National Capitol, who, although they had numerous specimens from all parts of the Union before them, decided in favor of the East Tennessee marble. An agent was sent out by them to ascertain whether or not it could be obtained in quantity, who upon examination found the supply apparently inexhaustible. As a result of these circumstances, an extensive quarry affording an excellent material has been opened near Mooresburg, Hawkins County, and is now known as the old Dougherty Quarry. From this was obtained marble for probably one-half of the ornamental work in the Capitol at Washington. The balustrades and columns of the stairs leading up to the House and Senate galleries, the walls of the marble room and other parts of the building are made from it. It has since been used in the United States Treasury building, the State-house at Columbia, S. C., and many of the finest buildings in New York, Philadelphia, Chicago and Cincinnati. The stone from this quarry has not been used for general construction on account of the high price which it commands for ornamental work.

In 1852 James Sloan opened a quarry about two miles north of Knoxville, near the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad. It was from this quarry that the variegated marble used in the capitol at Nashville was obtained.

The first quarry in the vicinity of Concord was opened in the lands of William T. Smith by S. L. King, 1856. He also constructed a small mill on Lime Creek, where some marble was sawed.

Col. John Williams also opened a quarry previous to the war, a few miles northeast of Knoxville, from which marble of the gray variety was obtained.

The most extensive quarry in Tennessee, and one of the oldest now in operation in the vicinity of Knoxville, was opened by the United States Government in 1869 to procure stone for the construction of the custom house and postoffice buildings at Knoxville. A considerable quantity of this marble was also used in the State Capitol at Albany, New York. The quarry is located at the junction of the French Broad and Holston Rivers,



DEAF AND DUMB ASYLUM, KNOXVILLE.





and the stone is carried by boat four miles to Knoxville. This marble is susceptible of a high polish, and when so polished has a pink tinge and shows dark wavy lines running through it. It is highly esteemed for mantels and table-tops, because it is not easily stained. It is also largely used for cemetery work, and tombstones which have been exposed for thirty years do not show the slightest signs of disintegration or wear.

Morgan & Williams operate two quarries within two miles of Knoxville, one of them producing a white marble, and the other a pink material known as Knoxville marble. The former was used in the construction of the custom house at Memphis, and the shaft of the Lee monument at New Orleans is made of it. The supply of this marble is practically inexhaustible.

The total capital invested in the marble business in Knox County in 1884 was estimated at \$250,000, and the number of men employed at 300. The following were the quarries in operation at that time: the Cross Cut Marble Company, Morgan & Williams, John M. Ross, Craig & McMullen, T. P. Thomas & Co., R. H. Armstrong & Co., H. H. Brown & Co., Harvey & Smith, Franklin Marble Company, Beach & Co., C. B. Ross & Co., and the Lima & East Tennessee Marble Company.\* The only ones using machinery are the Knoxville Marble Company and Morgan & Williams. The former has five steam drills, seven steam derricks, and runs a saw-mill with two gangs of saws. Morgan & Williams have three steam channeling machines, and a mill with one gang of saws. In Knoxville Beach & Co. and the Crescent Marble Company have mills for sawing and machinery for polishing. There is a demand for a greater amount of capital in this branch of the business.

The amount of marble in Hawkins County is very great, and its variegated varieties possess greater brilliancy than those of any other section. The business of quarrying has not increased in the same proportion as in Knox County, on account of the poor facilities for transportation. The quarries in operation in 1884 were Prince & Co., Chestnut & Chestnut, John Harn & Co., Chestnut & Fulkerson, James White, the Dougherty Quarry, Joseph Stamps and the Baltimore Marble Company. The business at none of these quarries is carried on very extensively, and but little machinery is used. For the year ending June 30, 1881, there was shipped from such of these quarries as were operating 20,000 cubic feet of marble, all of which was of the finest grade for ornamental purposes, and was worth on an average \$4 per cubic foot upon the cars. The chief markets of this marble are Philadelphia, Baltimore, New York, Boston and other Northern cities. The amount of

\* "Hand Book of Tennessee."

marble shipped over the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad for the year ending June 30, 1871, was about 7,000 cubic feet, of which Hawkins County furnished all but about 350 cubic feet. For the year ending June 30, 1881, the amount shipped over the same railroad was about 80,000 cubic feet, valued at \$240,000. Of the entire amount Knox County furnished not far from 56,000 cubic feet.

Hamblen County produces marble of good quality, but chiefly for local use. Extensive beds of excellent marble exist in Bradley County on the Hiwassee River, above Charleston, at which machinery has lately been erected and preparations made for work on a large scale. South of Cleveland, near the Georgia line, is the quarry of Patrick & Smith, from which a beautiful grade of pink marble is obtained. Although marble in greater or less quantities and of various kinds is found in several other counties of the State, no quarries of importance are now in operation in any of them.

Concord, in Knox County, has recently become the center of a large number of quarries, there being no less than eight companies operating in that vicinity, all of which have been organized since 1880. The Lima & East Tennessee Marble Company, operating the Red Triangle Quarry, was organized in 1882, and made their first shipment in June of that year. Their marble, light and dark variegated, is remarkably sound, and meets with a ready sale in the cities of the North. The Concord marble quarries, operated by Brown, Godfrey & Co., were opened in 1881. They employ an average force of 150 hands, and make large shipments, principally to New York and Boston. Woods & Stamps began operations in 1884, and work a large force of hands. The Juniata Marble Company made their first opening in February, 1883. Their quarries are situated in Blount County, near Louisville. The company employ about thirty-five hands, and have machinery in operation for sawing the marble into slabs. The Great Bend Marble Company, Kinkaid & Co. and the Cedar Bluff Marble Manufacturing & Railway Company, all opened quarries during 1885.

The number of men now employed in the marble business in East Tennessee is estimated at 2,000. The shipments from the various stations in 1885 aggregated 1,256 car loads, worth from \$250 to \$300 each. There were also manufactured at home about 100 car loads. The shipments for 1886 will not fall short of 1,500 car loads.

Although suspended at the present time, the mining of copper was carried on extensively for many years in Polk County. The discovery of the ore was made in 1843, but none was mined until 1847, when a German named Webber, securing a lease, took out ninety casks of ore and

shipped them to the Revere Smelting Works near Boston. The results not proving satisfactory, he suspended operations and gave up his lease. A year or two later John Caldwell, upon petitioning the Legislature, obtained the passage of a law under which he secured a lease of a section of school land near Ducktown. In May, 1850, he began mining in the woods, and during the year sunk two shafts, from both of which he obtained copper. The next year in connection with S. Congdon, the agent of the Tennessee Mining Company, he opened what was afterward known as the Hiwassee Mine. For the first two or three years the ore was carried out of the mountains on mules, but in 1853 a wagon road was completed at a cost of \$22,000. In 1855 there were fourteen mines in operation, and over \$1,000,000 worth of ore was shipped to the North. Three years later a number of the companies united under the name of the Union Consolidated Copper Company, but the war coming on soon after nothing of importance was then accomplished. In 1866 operations were again commenced and were rapidly extended. Up to June 1, 1873, this company had taken out 8,476,872 pounds of ingot copper, worth an average of 26 cents per pound. At that time they employed 562 men and ran sixteen furnaces. The whole value of their property was \$474,549.30. In 1873 there was one other large company operating near Ducktown, known as the Burra Burra Copper Company. It ran nine furnaces and employed 158 men, paying out for wages \$60,000. It also consumed 10,192 cords of wood and produced 917,329 pounds of ingot copper, valued at \$192,639.

In 1878 the consolidated company entered into litigation with Capt. Raht, the superintendent, which caused a stoppage of operations, and since that time but little has been done by any of the companies. The property of the consolidated company was purchased during the latter part of 1884 by a company from New York, who has not yet put it into operation.

The flour-milling industry of Tennessee in 1880 ranked above all other industrial enterprises both in the amount of capital invested and in the value of its products. At that time there were 990 flour and grist-mill establishments in the State having an aggregate capital of \$3,595,585, and putting out annually products to the amount of \$10,784,804. These amounts were slightly exceeded by one other Southern State, Virginia, but the growth of this business in Tennessee during the past six years has made her the leading milling State of the South. Although no other industry is so thoroughly distributed over the State, Nashville is the flour-milling center of Tennessee. The growth of the business in that city during the past ten years has been wonderfully rapid. In that



time the four leading mills have been built, and the production raised from 500 to 1,800 barrels per day, while the capital invested has increased from \$100,000 to \$600,000. The amount of wheat used annually by these mills reaches 2,340,000 bushels, of which a large portion is grown in Tennessee.

Besides Davidson County there were in 1880 five counties in the State the value of whose mill products amounted to over \$300,000 each. They were Knox, with a production of \$444,617; Henry, \$365,372; Bedford, \$359,208; Maury, \$314,067, and Williamson, \$301,270.

Among the first settlers of Tennessee, Indian corn was used exclusively for bread. This was due to the small amount of labor required in its cultivation, and to the ease with which it could be prepared for use. Previous to the erection of the first rude mill, the only machinery used in the preparation of corn for hominy or meal was the mortar and pestle, the former usually consisting of the stump of a tree hollowed out for that purpose. The first mill erected in Tennessee was built before 1775 on Buffalo Creek, in Carter County, and belonged to Baptist McNabb. At about the same time another mill was built by Matthew Talbot on Gap Creek. The first mill west of the Cumberland Mountains was a corn-mill and hominy-pounder built at Eaton's Station in 1782; a dam was made across the small creek which empties into the Cumberland at the foot of the high land on which the station was located, and by the construction of a race by the side of the branch, sufficient fall of water was obtained to turn a pair of rudely cut stones. The hominy-pounder was an extremely primitive piece of machinery. "A trough was made twelve feet long and placed upon a pivot, or balance, and was so dug out that by letting the water run in at one end of the trough, it would fill up so as to overcome the equipoise, when one end would descend, and, the water rushing out, the trough would return to its equilibrium, coming down at the other end with considerable force, when a pestle or hammer was made to strike with force sufficient to crack the grains of corn." This process proving too slow a Mr. Cartwright constructed a wheel upon which was fastened a number of cow's horns in such a way that as each horn was filled by water its weight turned the wheel so that the next horn was presented to receive its supply, and thus the wheel was kept in constant revolution. To a crank was attached the apparatus for corn-cracking, and by the revolution of the wheel many little blows were made upon the corn placed in the mortar. This mill-seat, water-wheel and hominy-block was the property of James and Heyden Wells, the earliest millers in Middle Tennessee.\* A little later Casper and his brother

---

\*Putnam.

George Mansker erected a rival establishment within a mile of Mansker's station. Larger and better equipped mills were erected by Frederick Stump and John Buchanan. Stump's mill was on White's Creek and Buchanan's on Mill Creek, two miles south of Nashville. The many streams in all parts of the State afforded abundant water-power, and after the beginning of the present century there was no lack of mills. Those on Red River were especially numerous, and had a wide reputation for the good quality of their flour. Within the past few years the introduction of the more expensive roller-mills has had a tendency to drive out some of the smaller establishments, and the number of mills is decreasing somewhat.

The manufacture of cotton into various goods has long been an industry of considerable importance in Tennessee, but it has never attained the proportions which her natural advantages would justify. The raising of cotton began to assume considerable proportions during the first decade of the present century, but its manufacture, except in a domestic way, was not attempted until a few years later. In a report of the cotton-mills of the United States in 1810, only one is mentioned in Tennessee, and that was a horse-mill. The *Tennessee Gazetteer* published in 1834, in enumerating the manufactories in the State, mentions two "spinning factories" at Knoxville and Paris, each, and one at Athens; two cotton factories at Murfreesboro and one at Franklin and Statesville, each. The last two are designated as "extensive." There was also a rope and bagging factory at Lebanon. In 1840 the number of cotton factories in the State had increased to thirty-eight, representing a capital of \$463,240, and operating 16,813 spindles. Of the whole number twenty-five were in Middle Tennessee, eight in East Tennessee and five in the western division. The counties having more than \$30,000 invested in this business were Wilson, \$65,000; Williamson, \$48,000; Lawrence, \$47,000; Madison, \$50,000 and Franklin \$33,100. The census of 1860 reported thirty factories with 29,850 spindles and 243 looms, and representing a capital of \$965,000. At this time Lawrence County stood first, having one-fifth of the whole number of factories, and more than one-fifth of the capital invested. Owing to the effects of the civil war the next decade shows a slight decrease in the number of factories and the quantity of the product. From 1870 to 1880 quite a large amount of new capital was invested in cotton manufacturing, but the greatest increase has been within the past five years. In that time the business has increased about 130 per cent. The largest factory in the State, and perhaps in the South, is operated by the Tennessee Manufacturing Company at Nashville. They have over \$1,000,000 invested; run 850 looms and 30,000 spindles, and

turn out products to the amount of nearly \$1,000,000 annually. The goods manufactured consist principally of sheetings, shirtings, grain bags and cotton plaids. Nashville has two other factories, both of which were established in 1881, and represent a combined capital of \$340,000. Their production consists largely of carpet warps, twines and rope. The Columbia Cotton-mills, established in 1884, operate 6,500 spindles and 174 looms, and manufacture sheeting, bags and yarn. The Pioneer Mill at Mount Verd, McMinn County, put into operation in 1881 at an outlay of \$200,000, runs 5,272 spindles and 132 looms. The Trenton Manufacturing Company organized in 1884, with a capital stock of \$60,000, use 3,200 spindles and 100 looms in the manufacture of white goods. The Brookside Cotton-mills, of Knoxville, began operations in March, 1886, employing 200 hands. Other factories of less capacity have been erected since the beginning of this decade, but the above are sufficient to illustrate the rapid growth of this industry. With the advantage of abundant water-power, cheap fuel, and close proximity to the raw material, it is only a question of time when Tennessee will rival, if not excel, New England in the manufacture of cotton goods.

The capital invested in the manufacture of woolen goods is less than one-half that represented by the cotton factories, but it is distributed among a much greater number of establishments, many of which are of small capacity and run only a portion of the year. The woolen-mills of the State, as reported in 1880, numbered 106, representing an aggregate investment of \$418,464. The annual productions are valued at \$620,724, and consisted principally of the following goods: Jeans, 644,036 yards; linsey, 94,493 yards; satinets, 23,300 yards; flannels, 18,450 yards; cloths, cassimeres and similar goods, 8,440 yards; blankets, 2,387 yards; tweeds, 3,000 yards, and shawls 1,000 yards. There was also one establishment engaged in the manufacture of mixed textiles, having a capital of \$35,000, and producing goods to the value of \$79,000 annually. Since the beginning of this decade the manufacture of woolen goods has more than doubled, several of the largest factories in the State having been put into operation within the last four years. The Nashville Woolen Mill Company, with a capital of \$78,000, began business in 1882. They employ 100 operatives, who turn out products to the amount of \$150,000. The Jackson Woolen Manufacturing Company, having an invested capital of \$50,000, began business in 1884, and operate forty-seven looms. The Knoxville Mills, which began business in 1885 with a capital of \$180,000, operates 104 looms.

Previous to 1880 the largest woolen-mill in the State was the one at Tullahoma, which represents a capital of \$90,000, and runs eighty-five



looms. Previous to the war the business consisted almost exclusively in wool-carding, which was carried on by small establishments involving an outlay of only a few hundred, or at most a few thousand dollars. The following is a list of these "carding machines," as reported in the census of 1840. It is evidently incomplete:

	Number.	Capital Invested.	Value of Products.
Wilson.....	6	\$3,750	\$6,000
Sumner.....	5	4,650	2,050
Rutherford.....	5	6,000	3,400
Jefferson.....	3	1,200	360
Grainger.....	3	1,500	700
Hawkins.....	1	2,000	....
Coffee.....	1	4,000	1,000
McNairy.....	1	1,400	30
Knox.....	1	800	450
Dickson.....	1	300	300
Totals.....	27	\$25,600	\$14,290

In 1860 the number of these establishments had increased to sixty-nine, and the capital invested to \$82,300. During the year previous they carded 460,665 pounds of wool, making 460,000 pounds of rolls, valued at \$219,772. At that time Tennessee had over one-third of this business in the Southern States, and was excelled by only three States in the Union. The only mill reported which contained a loom was located in Sumner County. This mill used 10,000 pounds of wool and manufactured 18,000 yards of cloth.

Fifty years ago gunpowder was manufactured in a small way in many of the counties of this State. The capital invested amounted to but little, and the product was correspondingly small. Of these establishments, in 1840, Claiborne and Overton Counties had two each, and Campbell, Carter, Jefferson, Sullivan, Giles and Warren one each. The capital represented ranged from \$25 to \$900, and the product from 160 to 6,000 pounds, the aggregate production reaching 10,333 pounds. About 1845 the Sycamore Manufacturing Company located in Cheatham County, erected a large mill for the manufacture of gunpowder, which they continued to operate until the war. At the close of hostilities the company was organized under a charter, with a capital of \$100,000, which has since been increased to \$300,000. In 1874 the entire machinery of the Confederate Powder Works, at Augusta, Ga., were purchased by the company, and the capacity of their mills was increased to 100,000 kegs of powder per year.

The manufacture of paper was begun in Tennessee at a comparatively early date, and has been continued by one or more mills to the present time. One of the first establishments of this kind was erected at Paper-

ville, a little village on a branch of the Holston River, in Sullivan County. In 1840 the number of paper-mills in the State was six, located one in each of the following counties: Grainger, Knox, McMinn, Sullivan, Davidson and Sumner. They represented an aggregate capital of \$103,000, and their annual products were valued at \$60,000. In 1860 the number of mills had decreased to two, and the amount of capital invested to \$28,000. Their annual product was 200,000 pounds of paper, valued at \$14,500.

The manufacture of leather and boots and shoes is a pioneer industry. Among the early settlers nearly every farmer had a vat, or more frequently merely a trough, in which was tanned the leather to make the boots and shoes for his household. Later numerous small tanneries were erected, which endeavored only to supply the local demand. In 1840 there were 454 of these establishments, of which East Tennessee had 225; Middle Tennessee, 164; and the western division, 65. The entire capital invested in the business was \$484,114, of which Middle Tennessee had a little more than one-half. The aggregate products were 133,547 sides of sole-leather, and 171,339 sides of uppers, of which Montgomery County produced nearly one-sixth. In 1860 the number of tanneries was reported at 265, with a capital of \$851,780, and an annual production of leather to the value of \$1,142,246. The estimated amount of capital invested in the making of boots and shoes was \$214,512, and the productions were valued at \$395,790. In 1870 the number of establishments engaged in the manufacture of leather was 396, representing capital to the amount of \$705,665, and turning out products to the value of \$1,851,638. According to the census of 1880 there were 113 establishments engaged in the manufacture of curried leather, whose product amounted to \$546,427, and 147 establishments manufacturing tanned leather to the amount of \$1,504,660 during the year. The largest tannery in the State is located at Chattanooga, and is operated by Fayerweather & Ladew. The products from this establishment amount to little less than \$1,000,000 per annum. Nashville has several tanneries, all of which do a good business. The Hall & Ordway Manufacturing Company are erecting an extensive establishment at that place to supply their factory, as well as to meet a large foreign demand. This firm operate the only shoe manufactory in the State, and are the pioneers in that business. The company was organized in November, 1885, and began business the first of the following January. They have a capacity of 700 pairs of shoes per day, but already contemplate increasing it to 1,000. They employ from 100 to 350 hands. Their materials, except the findings and uppers, which come principally from Boston and New

York, are obtained from Tennessee tanneries, and their trade is rapidly extending over the entire South. Their success in this business is a sure precursor of numerous other establishments of the kind, as Nashville already has the largest boot and shoe trade of any city of its size in the United States. It is also said by experienced shoemen that Tennessee leather, on account of the superior quality of the bark and the purity of the water used in its manufacture, is superior to that of any other State.

The manufacture of whisky in Tennessee dates back nearly to the advent of the first colonists. As early as 1785 Col. James Robertson, learning that the establishment of distilleries in the Cumberland settlements was under contemplation, secured the passage of an act by the Legislature of North Carolina, prohibiting the distillation of spirituous liquors in Davidson County. The prohibition, however, proved of but limited duration, and there was soon considerable domestic manufacture and increased consumption. For the first fifty or sixty years of the present century, there was scarcely a county in the State that was not more or less extensively engaged in the manufacture of whisky. It was usually made in small distilleries with a capacity of thirty or forty gallons per day. In 1840 the number of distilleries reported in East Tennessee was 606, producing for that year 314,445 gallons of whisky. The counties producing the most were McMinn, Claiborne, Hawkins, Greene, Roane and Marion. The whole number of "still-houses" in Middle Tennessee was 668, and the number of gallons of whisky produced, 695,769. Lincoln, Bedford, Davidson, Maury and Robertson produced the greatest quantities. The first named county had 87 distillers and manufactured 128,180 gallons of whisky. This county and Robertson have long enjoyed the reputation of producing the best whisky in the State, if not in the United States. This is largely due to the fact that it is manufactured by men of long experience in the business, and the materials used are of superior quality. These two counties now produce a large part of the whisky made in the State. The largest distillery in Tennessee is that of Charles Nelson, near Greenbrier, in Robertson County. This establishment in the year 1885 produced 379,125 gallons, more than one-third the entire production for the State, and about 82 per cent of the production in Robertson County. During the fiscal year, ending June 30, 1885, there were 90 registered grain distilleries in the State, of which 55 were in operation, and 238 fruit distilleries—all in operation. The total revenue for the year paid by the former was \$802,515.74, and by the latter \$73,-\$49.55. The materials used by the grain distilleries were as follows: rye, 26,063 bushels; corn, 181,899 bushels; mill feed, 5,581 bushels;



wheat, 49 bushels; and malt, 12,717 bushels. The following is the internal revenue collected upon distilled liquors in Tennessee for each year from 1864 to 1885: 1864, \$602,705.93; 1865, \$1,605,263.41; 1866, \$3,381,840.56; 1867, \$3,349,459.91; 1868, \$3,717,010.04; 1869, \$1,255,781.12; 1870, \$1,470,859.57; 1871, \$874,221.65; 1872, \$766,840.20; 1873, \$644,480.76; 1874, \$664,717.18; 1875, \$861,645.28; 1876, \$596,713.67; 1877, \$897,181.73; 1878, \$844,485.08; 1879, \$908,924.44; 1880, \$1,003,735.86; 1881, \$1,146,763.64; 1882, \$997,728; 1883, \$1,173,890.29; 1884, \$1,249,975.96; 1885, \$1,057,189.43. The total tax collected for the twenty-one years amounts to \$29,071,413.31.

The manufacture of cotton-seed oil is an industry of great importance, both in the amount of capital invested and the value of the products. Memphis is the center of this business, although there are several other towns which have extensive oil-mills. In that city there are eleven mills, but all are not run on full time. The magnitude of this branch of business is indicated by the fact that nearly \$1,000,000 is annually paid out for cotton seed by the Memphis mills alone. It also gives employment to fully 600 hands, and affords to river and railway commerce nearly \$350,000 in freight. The receipts of cotton seed in Memphis during 1885 were 58,000 tons, from which there was a yield of 45,000 barrels of oil, 22,000 tons of oil cake, 26,000 bales of regius and 200 tons of ashes. The last article is used in the manufacture of fertilizers.

A mill to manufacture oil from cotton seed was established in Jackson about seven years ago, and has grown to be one of the largest establishments of the kind in the State. It gives employment to about 150 hands, and runs day and night. In 1883 a company was organized to engage in the business at Trenton, and during the summer large buildings were erected, into which was put the most improved machinery. When first put into operation, the mill consumed 750 bushels of cotton seed, making 500 gallons of oil and 9,000 pounds of meal or coke. Within the past year the capacity of the mill has been doubled.

Nashville has two mills, the first of which was built in 1868. Each consumes from 5,000 to 6,000 tons of cotton seed yearly. Their combined annual product is estimated at 400,000 gallons of oil and 2,100 tons of meal. The oil is used in the manufacture of soap and candles, and in the adulteration of lard and other oils. It is also said to be used to some extent in the manufacture of oleomargarine. The growth of the manufacturing interest of the State since 1850 is shown in the following table:

Year.	No. Establishments.	Capital Invested.	Hands Employed.	Wages Paid.	Value of Materials.	Value of Produce.
1850 ....	2,887	\$6,527,729	12,039	\$2,247,492	\$5,166,886	\$9,725,608
1860 ....	2,572	14,426,261	12,528	3,370,687	9,416,514	17,987,225
1870 ....	5,317	15,595,295	19,412	5,390,630	19,657,027	34,362,636
1880 ....	4,326	20,092,845	22,445	5,254,775	23,834,262	37,074,886

The agency which has been most effective in placing the vast natural resources and advantages of Tennessee before the world, and in inaugurating a better system of farming, is the Bureau of Agriculture, Statistics and Mines, established by act of the Legislature in December, 1871. With the limited appropriations granted to this bureau, not one-fifth as much as is expended for that purpose by some States of the Northwest, it has succeeded in the past ten years in bringing into the State millions of dollars of capital and thousands of families. The commissioners of this department have been men of untiring energy and practical business ability, and to them are largely due the results which have been obtained. J. B. Killebrew, the secretary of the bureau, and the first commissioner, published numerous works on the agricultural and industrial interests. His work on the "Resources of Tennessee" is one of the most thorough and complete publications of the kind ever made. The work of the bureau under his administration proved very effective. A committee, appointed in 1879 to investigate its affairs, reported not less than 8,000 immigrants, and about \$9,000,000 capital had been introduced into the State through its instrumentality. In 1881 the commissioner reported that during the preceding two years there had been added not less than \$5,600,000 to the wealth of the State, and 7,000 immigrants to its population. From 1881 to 1883 the bureau was under the direction of ex-Gov. Hawkins, and since that time the office of commissioner has been filled by Maj. A. J. McWhirter, who is thoroughly alive to the interests of the State. In 1883 an exhibit of the natural resources and agricultural products of Tennessee was made at the Southern Exposition, held at Louisville, Ky., and the Mechanics Institute Fair, held at Boston, Mass. A more extensive exhibit was made at the Industrial and Cotton Centennial of New Orleans in 1884-85, and also in the following year. The profits derived from these exhibits have been great and are manifested in the rapid development of the manufacturing and mining interests of the State, as well as the increase in the number of farms. The population of Tennessee, as reported by the last census, was 1,542,359. It is now estimated by the best statisticians at 1,850,000, a gain of over 300,000, or 20 per cent in six years. The increase in wealth has been proportionately great.

## CHAPTER X.

STATE INSTITUTIONS—THE LOCATION OF LEGISLATIVE SESSIONS—FINAL ESTABLISHMENT OF THE CAPITAL—CONSTRUCTION OF THE STATE-HOUSE—DESCRIPTION OF THE STYLE OF ARCHITECTURE—THE JACKSON STATUE—THE STATE LIBRARY—THE DEAF AND DUMB SCHOOL—THE TENNESSEE SCHOOL FOR THE BLIND—THE TENNESSEE HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE—THE STATE PENITENTIARY—THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY—THE MEDICAL SOCIETY—THE STATE BOARD OF HEALTH—THE AGRICULTURAL BUREAU—THE GRAND LODGES OF MASONS, ODD FELLOWS, KNIGHTS OF HONOR, UNITED ORDER OF THE GOLDEN CROSS, AMERICAN LEGION OF HONOR, KNIGHTS OF PYTHIAS, KNIGHTS AND LADIES OF HONOR, ANCIENT ORDER OF UNITED WORKMEN, ROYAL ARCANUM AND GRAND ARMY OF THE REPUBLIC.

PREVIOUS to the year 1843, the seat of government of the State had not been definitely fixed. The Territorial Assembly met in Knoxville, in 1794-95; also the Constitutional Convention in 1796. In 1807 the Legislature convened on September 21, at Kingston, but two days later adjourned to Knoxville. Nashville was the place of meeting in 1812, 1813, 1815; Knoxville again in 1817; then Murfreesboro, from 1819 to 1825, inclusive. The session of 1826 was held in Nashville, as have been all succeeding ones. Section 2 of the schedule to the constitution of 1834 declared that the seat of government should be determined upon within the first week after the commencement of the session of the General Assembly in 1843. That body convened on Monday, October 1, of that year, and the first subject to engage its attention was the location of the capital. Almost every town in the State, having any pretension at all to eligibility or convenience of position, had its advocates. Thus the following places were successively voted upon: Woodbury, McMinnville, Franklin, Murfreesboro, Kingston, Lebanon, Columbia, Sparta, Gallatin, Clarksville, Shelbyville, Harrison, Chattanooga, Cleveland, Athens, Knoxville and Nashville. On Thursday, October 4, the Senate voted to locate the seat of government at Kingston, Roane County, and the House at Murfreesboro. But finally, on the Saturday following, Nashville was agreed upon by both houses, and became the capital of the State. This result is mainly attributable to the liberality of the town selected, the corporation having purchased Campbell's Hill, at a cost of \$30,000 and donated it to the State as a site for the capitol building. An interesting anecdote is told in connection with this property. Many years previous, Judge Campbell had sold a cow and calf to a neighbor, who, subsequently determining to remove from the country, notified his cred-



itor that a rifle and Cedar Hill was all he had to give for the debt. The Judge accepted them, thinking that the sum he might be able to sell the gun for would be all that he would realize for the cow and calf; besides the four acres, which he sold to the city, he disposed of several lots to individuals, and retained the one upon which his residence was built, opposite the south front of the capitol.\*

Previous to this time the meetings of the Legislature in Nashville had been held in the Davidson County Court House, but the building had become too small for the constantly increasing membership of that body, and the building of a capitol was a necessity. Now that the seat of government had become fixed, no obstacle lay in the way of beginning the work, and on January 30, 1844, an act was passed making the first appropriation for that purpose, \$10,000. Gov. William Carroll, William Nichol, John M. Bass, Samuel D. Morgan, James Erwin and Morgan W. Brown were appointed commissioners, to whom were added, May 14, 1844, James Woods, Joseph T. Elliston and Allen A. Hall. John M. Bass was appointed chairman March 31, 1848, and held the position until March 31, 1854, when Samuel D. Morgan was appointed. April 20, 1854, John Campbell, John S. Young and Jacob McGavock were appointed commissioners by Gov. Andrew Johnson. By act of February 28, 1854, R. J. Meigs and James P. Clark were appointed commissioners, and John D. Winston was appointed by the governor. The following governors of the State were *ex-officio* commissioners: James C. Jones, Aaron V. Brown, Neill S. Brown, William Trousdale, William B. Campbell, Andrew Johnson and Isham G. Harris. Clearing of the ground for the site was begun about January 1, 1845; foundations were dug and nearly finished by the 4th of July, on which day the corner-stone was laid in the southeast corner of the building with imposing ceremonies. An eloquent oration was delivered on the occasion by the Hon. Edwin H. Ewing.

On the 20th of May previous William Strickland, the designer of many of the finest public buildings in Philadelphia, was appointed architect, and from this time the building was carried on regularly and steadily without error or interruption till the time of his death, April 7, 1854. His funeral ceremonies were conducted in Representative Hall, and he was entombed in a recess, which he had prepared about a year before, in the wall of the north basement portico. After the death of Mr. Strickland the work was for several years carried on by his son, W. F. Strickland. The last stone of the tower was laid July 21, 1855, and the last stone of the lower terrace March 19, 1859. This completed the

\*"Old Times in Tennessee."

stone work. The building was first occupied by the Legislature October 3, 1853. For several years the greater portion of the efficient convict labor was employed in quarrying the stone for the capitol, and after its completion the same kind of labor was used in improving the grounds. The entire cost to the State of the building and grounds up to 1859 amounted to \$900,500. The \$30,000 paid for the site by the city, added to the amount expended in completing the grounds, makes a total cost of something over \$1,000,000. The following description of the building is taken from the architect's report and other sources:

"The State-house is parallelogram in form, 112x239 feet, with an elevation of 64 feet 8 inches above an elevated terrace walk which surrounds it, or 74 feet 8 inches above the ground. Rising through the center of the roof is the tower, 36 feet square and 80 feet high. The main idea of the elevation of the building is that of a Greek Ionic temple erected upon a rustic basement, which in turn appears to rest upon a terraced pavement. The building has four fronts, each graced with a noble portico. The end porticoes, north and south, are each composed of eight magnificent Ionic columns; the side porticoes, east and west, are composed each of six columns. These columns, twenty-eight in all, are each 4 feet in diameter, 33 feet high, and rest upon the entablature of the basement. This entablature is supported by a rusticated pier, rising through the basement story under each column of the portico above. The end porticoes are capped by an entablature, which is continued around the building, and above which is a heavy pediment. The side porticoes are capped by the entablature and double blocking courses. The building inside is divided into three stories: the crypt, or cellar; the basement, or first floor; and the main or second floor. The crypt is used for the State arsenal and for furnaces, etc.

"The basement story is intersected by longitudinal and transverse halls of wide dimensions, to the right and left of which large and commodious rooms are appropriated to the use of the governor, the comptroller, the treasurer, the secretary of state, register of lands, superintendent of weights and measures and keeper of public arms, superintendent of public instruction, and the commissioner of agriculture, statistics and mines. There is also an archive room, which is 34 feet square, and a supreme court room, which is 35x52 feet, 8 inches. From the great central hall the principal story is approached by a double flight of stairs, the hand-railing of which is of East Tennessee marble. The longitudinal hall of this floor is 128 feet 2 inches long by 24 feet 2 inches wide, while the dimensions of the transverse hall are the same as that of the basement. This story is divided into three apartments: representa-

tive hall, the senate chamber and the library. The main floor of representative hall, 61x97 feet, is flanked on the east and west sides by eight committee rooms, 16 feet 8 inches square. Above these rooms are the public galleries, each of which is fronted by eight columns of the Roman Ionic order, 2 feet 8 inches in diameter, and 21 feet 10 inches high. The shaft of each column is of one block of stone surmounted by exceedingly graceful and elaborate capitals, the device of the architect. The speaker's stand and screen wall are composed of red, white and black Tennessee marble. The chandelier is one of the largest and most elaborate in the country. It possesses the merit of being original in style and novel in design, though it is not graceful nor altogether pleasing to the eye. The senate chamber is of an oblong shape from 35 to 70 feet, having pilasters of the Ionic order with a full entablature, and is surrounded on three sides by a gallery 10 feet 9 inches wide supported by twelve columns of variegated East Tennessee marble. This room also has a chandelier, similar in design to that of the representative hall, though smaller and of better proportions. Immediately opposite the senate chamber are the rooms containing the state library. The main room is 35 feet square, with two smaller rooms on each side. From the main room a spiral stairway of iron leads to the two galleries above, the lower one of which extends entirely around the room, and the upper one on two sides.

"Above the center of the building through the roof rises the tower supported by four massive piers 10 or 12 feet built from the ground. The design of the tower, which is one of the finest features of the entire structure, is a modified reproduction of the "Choragic Monument of Lysicrates," or, as it is sometimes called, the "Lantern of Demosthenes." The tower is composed of a square rustic base, 36 feet square and 42 feet high, with a window in each front. Above this the lantern or round part of the tower rises 26 feet 8 inches in diameter by 37 feet high. It consists of a circular cell with eight beautiful three-quarters fluted Corinthian columns attached around its outer circumference with alternate blank and pierced windows between each two columns in each of the two stories of the cell. The columns have each a very elaborate and beautifully wrought capital of the purest Corinthian style, and above all a heavy entablature. The column shafts are 2 feet 6 inches in diameter by 27 feet 8 inches high, and capital 4 feet high. The roof and iron finial ornament are together 34 feet high above the last stone of the tower, making the whole height of the edifice above the ground 206 feet 7 inches, or over 400 feet above low water mark in the Cumberland River.

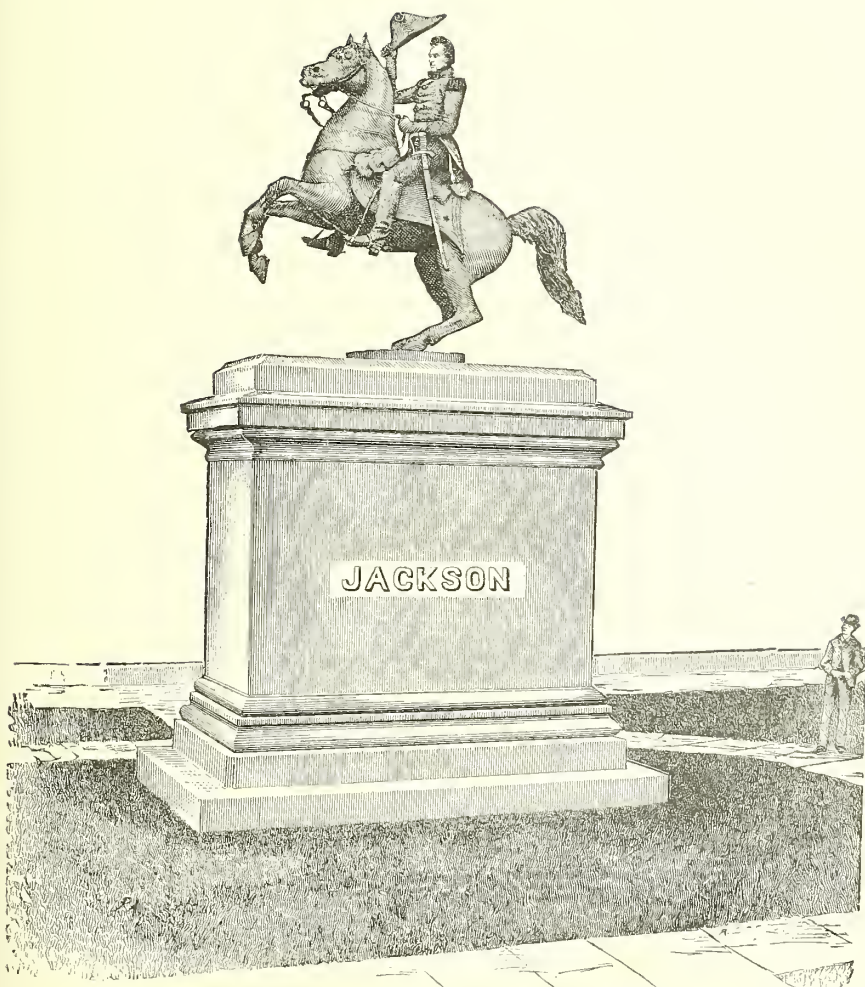


"The roof of the building is constructed of rafters composed of wrought iron ties and braces, trussed in sections, and joined together by cast iron plates and knees. The greatest span of these rafters is over Representative Hall, a distance of sixty-five feet. The whole is sheathed and covered with copper. The walls of the building for the foundation are 7 feet thick; those of the superstructure 4 feet and 6 inches. All of the inside walls are laid with rubble stone; the terraces, pavements and the round part of the tower, chiseled; the outer walls of the first story and the square part of the tower, rusticated work and tooled. The material of the building is of a stratified fossiliferous limestone of slightly bluish-gray tint with cloud-like markings. It was procured within half a mile west of the building in a quarry opened by the State on the grounds of Samuel Watkins. Stones have been quarried from this place, weighing in their rough state, fifteen or twenty tons, and thirty and more feet long. One of the terrace stones of the building is 8 feet 3 inches by 14 feet, and the cap stones of the terrace buttresses are 5 feet 10 inches by 15 feet 11 inches, the heaviest weighing probably eight or ten tons. The stone may be considered both as to durability and beauty of appearance when worked well, equal to any building stone in the country. Nearly all the materials, in addition to the stone, used in the construction of the building, were produced in Tennessee, and the work was mainly done by Tennessee workmen—a magnificent monument to the mechanical skill and the resources of the State."

• One of the most interesting objects to be seen upon Capitol Hill is the magnificent equestrian statue of Gen. Jackson. So long ago as the session of the General Assembly\* of 1845-46, the idea was conceived of erecting at the capitol in Nashville a statue in honor of Gen. Andrew Jackson, whose death took place June 8, 1845; and an act was passed the 2d of February, 1846, appropriating the sum of \$7,500, "when a sufficient sum shall be subscribed by the people in connection therewith to complete said monument." Commissioners were appointed in the sixth section of said act to receive any voluntary contributions, control the disbursements of all funds, contract with an American sculptor or artist, and superintend the erection of said statue. For various reasons no further action was taken in the matter for many years though, it was by no means forgotten. Early in the month of January, 1879, Gen. Marcus J. Wright, of Washington City, addressed a letter to the vice-president of the Tennessee Historical Society, suggesting that Clark Mill's equestrian statue of Gen. Jackson was on sale, expressing the hope that Tennessee could be induced to make the purchase and tendering his services

---

\*Report of the Legislative Committee of the Jackson Statue.



EQUESTRIAN STATUE OF GEN. JACKSON, AT NASHVILLE.

Photo by Thuss, Koellein & Giers.





to aid in the negotiation. A correspondence ensued between Gen. Wright and the vice-president, and then papers, with a letter from Mills stipulating the price, were laid before the society. There was a discussion of plans for obtaining the requisite funds to make the purchase, but nothing definite was agreed upon and the vice-president was instructed to communicate for the society with Gen. Wright and also to confer with the governor of the State as to the policy of applying to the General Assembly for an appropriation. After due deliberation, the time was not deemed opportune to invoke the assistance of the State, and the society did not care to have any future prospect clouded by a denial of favorable legislation. At a meeting held July 1, 1879, the subject was again brought up. Various plans for raising the money were proposed, none of which, however, commanded that assurance of success which warranted immediate action, and the measure was indefinitely postponed. At a subsequent meeting of the society and of the citizens of Nashville to make arrangements for the centennial anniversary to be celebrated in 1880, an enthusiasm was aroused which spread through the entire community. There was a pause in the pursuit of individual interests and the moment given to an unselfish and patriotic inspiration. Memories of the past seem to rise spontaneously in the public mind, and it doubtless occurred to more than one that the conjuncture of circumstances was favorable for the acquisition of the Jackson statue. Such a thought did certainly occur to a venerable and patriotic citizen of Nashville, Maj. John L. Brown, who, early after the meeting in December, expressed his intention to try to raise, by voluntary subscriptions, the money necessary for the purchase.

He wrote to Senator Harris and Maj. Blair, of Washington City, to make inquiry as to the cost of the statue, which was found to be \$5,000. Several letters written by Col. Bullock on the subject of the purchase were published, and gave renewed impetus to the movement. Maj. Brown, continuing his efforts, secured the appointment of the president and secretary of the Historical Society with himself as "a committee for the purchasing of the statue for the State of Tennessee." Every means and appliance was used to further the enterprise, and by the 18th of March, 1880, the list of subscribers had so increased that success being in sight the Centennial board of directors incorporated a committee of seven members, to be known as the committee for the purchase and dedication of the equestrian statue of Gen. Jackson, of which Gen. G. B. Thurston became chairman. The subscription soon aggregated an amount near or quite \$5,000, which justified the consummation of the purchase.

On the 20th of May, 1880, in the presence of a vast assemblage of people, the statue was unveiled with appropriate and impressive ceremonies. Hon. John F. House was the orator of the day, an original ode written by Rev. F. W. E. Paschau was sung, prayer was offered by Rev. T. A. Hoyt, and a prize poem, by Mrs. Bowser, was read by Dr. G. S. Blackie. A grand military procession paraded the street, in which several United States officers, including Gen. Buell, Gen. Pennypacker and others, together with Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, Gen. Cheatham and others of the old Confederate Army, participated. Clark Mills, the sculptor, was an invited guest, and in speaking of the statue stated that it is a triplicate of the one standing in front of the President's house in Washington, which was not only the first equestrian statue ever self-poised on the hind feet, but was also the first ever modeled and cast in the United States. "The incident selected for representation in this statue occurred at the battle of New Orleans, on the 8th of January, 1815. The commander-in-chief has advanced to the center of the lines in the act of review. The lines have come to present arms as a salute to their commander, who acknowledges it by raising his *chapeau* four inches from his head according to the military etiquette of that period. But his restive horse, anticipating the next evolution, rears and attempts to dash down the line, while his open mouth and curved neck show that he is being controlled by the hand of his noble rider." The statue was first placed on a temporary pedestal of wood, fronting northward, with the head of the horse turned toward the Capitol. April 6, 1881, an appropriation of \$2,000 was made for the purpose of placing a marble or granite base under the statue, which was accordingly done about three years later.

For some years previous to 1854 the State Library consisted entirely of donations from the General Government and from other States of the Union, and of the State's own publications. Counting a large number of duplicates, there were about 10,000 volumes, but only about 1,500 or 2,000 separate works. The books were kept in a room which was devoted to that purpose, in the Davidson County Court House, and which formed a kind of passage-way or ante-room to the governor and secretary of states' office, and the Representative Chamber.\* It was consequently open all day, and even at night. On account of this negligence a large number of the law reports of the various States were misplaced, lost or stolen. In 1853, when the Legislature first met in the Capitol, the books were removed to that place, and by an act of January 20, 1854, the secretary of State was constituted *ex officio* librarian, with instructions to keep the library open at least one day in the week.

---

\*The Legislature then met in the Court House.

By the active endeavors of a few enlightened men who knew the great need of a State Library, the Legislature was induced to insert two sections referring to the library into the general appropriation bill of 1854. It appropriated \$5,000 to purchase a library, and R. J. Meigs was appointed a commissioner to procure books. A very excellent selection of books was made, and they were placed in the north ante-room of the library, the larger room not having been fitted up at that time.

March 1, 1856, \$500 per annum was appropriated to make additions to the library, and R. J. Meigs was appointed librarian at a salary of \$500. With the exception of the years from 1861 to 1868, from that time until 1879 annual appropriations varying from \$500 to \$2,500 were made for the purchase of additional books. Since 1871, however, no new books have been added, except those obtained by exchange with other States. The library now contains about 35,000 volumes of well-selected standard works, but in recent literature it is very deficient.

For the past eight years this institution has been under the management of Mrs. S. K. Hatton, and her daughter, Miss Emma Hatton, the assistant librarian, and too much praise can not be accorded them for the fidelity and courtesy with which they have discharged their duties.

The Tennessee Deaf and Dumb School owes its origin to the benevolent impulses and the prompt and persistent action of Gen. John Cocke, of Grainger County, while a member of the senatorial branch of the General Assembly. On December 20, 1843, a bill providing for the establishment in Nashville of an institution for the blind, being on its third reading before the Senate, Gen. Cocke moved to amend by the addition of a section providing for the appropriation of \$2,000 for putting into operation at Knoxville, a deaf and dumb school. After the substitution of \$1,000 for \$2,000 the amendment was adopted, and then the entire bill was rejected by a vote of eleven to thirteen. On the following day the vote was reconsidered, and other amendments were adopted. The vote on Gen. Cocke's amendment was reconsidered by a majority of three, but it was again adopted by a majority of one, and the bill was finally passed in the Senate December 21, 1843. The bill then went to the House, where on its third reading it was rejected by a majority of three, but the vote was subsequently reconsidered, and the bill in the form in which it had left the Senate was passed January 29, 1844. The governor appointed, to constitute the first board of trustees, Messrs. R. B. McMullen, Joseph Estabrook and D. R. McAnally, who met at Knoxville, July 27, 1844, and organized by electing Mr. McMullen, president, and Mr. McAnally, secretary.

These gentlemen immediately went to work with characteristic zeal,



opening correspondence with officers of similar institutions in other States, obtaining information as to the number and situation of the deaf mutes in this State, selecting a suitable building in which to open the school, and securing the services of a competent instructor for the pupils. Rev. Thomas McIntire, a former teacher in the Ohio Deaf and Dumb School, was made the first principal, and under his charge the exercises of the school were begun in what was known as the Churchwell House, in East Knoxville, in June, 1845. By an act passed January 31, 1846, the General Assembly recognized the existence of the institution, incorporated it, made better provision for its support, and added Messrs. T. Sullins, J. H. Cowan and Campbell Wallace to its board of trustees.

It now became a leading object of the board to procure means for the erection of more appropriate buildings for the purposes of the school, and measures tending to that end were promptly undertaken and vigorously prosecuted. The board issued circular letters to the benevolent throughout the State, applied to Congress for a donation of public lands, established several local agencies, and fortunately placed in the position of manager of a general soliciting and collecting agency,\* Col. John M. Davis, of Knox County. These efforts met with gratifying success, and over \$4,000 was contributed by individuals. This sum, supplemented by appropriations made by the Legislature, enabled the trustees to erect a large and commodious building, at a cost of about \$20,000. As originally built it consisted of a main building 25x79 feet and three stories high, with two wings of the same size as the main building, altogether forming a main front to the south of 100 feet, and east and west front of 129 feet each. The grounds belonging to the institution were obtained at different times by gift and purchase. They now embrace about eight acres lying in a rectangular form, entirely surrounded by streets, and are handsomely improved. The original site, consisting of two acres, was donated by Calvin Morgan, of Knoxville, and the remaining six acres were purchased at a cost of about \$6,000.

After becoming permanently established in the new building the school rapidly increased, both in numbers and efficiency. During the first session the number of pupils in attendance was nine, while in 1857 the number had increased to eighty. In the year 1861 the school was among the largest institutions of the kind in the country, and received a liberal support from the State. The whole building had been refurnished in a creditable manner, and the grounds were highly ornamented. But the war came. The school was disbanded, and the buildings were taken possession of by the military authorities, and were used by the con-

---

\*Compiled from a report by Thomas L. Moses.

tending armies in turn for hospital purposes. In 1866 the buildings were turned over to the trustees in a badly damaged condition, and after some repairs had been made the school was again opened December 3 of that year. Owing to the financial embarrassment of the State the appropriations to the institution for some time were scarcely adequate to supply its wants, and it required the exercise of the strictest economy on the part of its management to maintain the school. In 1873, however, the appropriation of \$10,000 placed it upon a firm financial basis, and since that time it has been in a most prosperous condition. A few years ago a new chapel was erected and other improvements made, so that at present the institution can comfortably accommodate 125 pupils.

In the fall of 1881 a school for colored mutes was opened in a rented house in East Knoxville, about one mile from the main building. The school numbered ten pupils, and was taught by Matt R. Mann, the present teacher, and a former pupil of the institution. Two years later a substantial brick building, with twenty-seven acres of land, situated about a mile east of the town, was rented for the use of the school. The number of pupils in this department in 1884 was seventeen. The white pupils for the same time numbered about 100. On December 24, 1882, Mr. J. H. Ijams, who had been principal of the school for sixteen years, died, and Thomas L. Moses was elected to fill the vacancy, which position he still holds. This noble charity is well managed, and too much praise cannot be awarded to the patient, conscientious teachers, who have dedicated their lives to the work of educating these unfortunate children.

The first school for the education of the blind in America was opened in Boston 1832. So favorable were the results obtained, that the subject was agitated throughout the country, and within the next twenty years nearly every State had made some provision for the education of her sightless children. In 1843 an exhibition was given in one of the churches of Nashville, showing the ability of the blind to read by the sense of touch. A good audience was assembled, to a majority of whom, the method of reading by the fingers was something new and surprising. An enthusiastic interest was awakened. The Legislature was petitioned for aid to establish a school, and \$1,500 was appropriated by that body annually for two years. With this sum, increased by private subscriptions, a house was rented and furnished and the school opened. Mr. James Champlin, who had given the exhibition, was selected as the first teacher. He proved to be incompetent, and in a few months thereafter W. H. Churchman was elected principal. The pupils then numbered about fifteen.

In 1846 a charter nominating J. T. Edgar, R. B. C. Howell, J. T.

Wheat and A. L. P. Green, as a board of trustees, was granted to the school, and the annual appropriations for the next two years was increased to \$2,500. The household and domestic department was placed under the control of Mrs. John Bell, Mrs. William H. Morgan, Mrs. Matthew Watson and Mrs. Joseph H. Marshall, all of whom had taken a deep interest in the institution from the first. After serving as principal of the school less than two years, Mr. Churchman resigned the position to enter upon a broader field of labor in Indiana, and Mr. E. W. Whelan, of Philadelphia, was elected to take his place, which he retained until May, 1849, when he was succeeded by Jacob Berry, also of Philadelphia. In little more than a month Mr. Berry died of cholera, also the matron, steward, and several of the most promising pupils. Mr. Whelan volunteered in the midst of suffering and death to take charge of the school temporarily. His offer was accepted, and after holding the position a short time he was succeeded by Mr. Fortescue, who resigned in about two months. These frequent changes in the management of the school and still more the fatal visitation of cholera within the household, hindered its growth and retarded the improvement of the pupils.

In November, 1850, J. M. Sturtevant was engaged to superintend the school. He took charge of it the following January, and for many years very acceptably performed the duties of the office. In 1852 a lot was purchased from the University of Nashville, and an appropriation was made for the erection of a building upon it. By the following January a house sufficiently spacious to meet the requirements of the school was completed. Additions were afterward made, and the grounds gradually improved until June, 1861, the whole cost of buildings and grounds having been, up to that time, about \$25,000. In November of that year the building was demanded for the accommodation of the sick and wounded Confederates. The trustees refused to give it up, and on the 18th of the month the inmates "were summarily ejected." The pupils who had no homes were distributed to private residences, and the furniture was stored away.

After the Federals took possession of Nashville, in February, 1862, they continued to use it as a hospital until November, when by order of J. St. Clair Morton, Chief Engineer of the Army of the Ohio, the building, together with all surrounding improvements, was entirely destroyed. At the close of the war a few of the pupils were collected and the school was reorganized. In October, 1872, Hon. John M. Lea, for \$15,000, purchased the Claiborne residence with about seven acres of land, for the purpose of donating it to the Tennessee School for the Blind, to which it was conveyed immediately after the purchase. The Legislature of 1873



acknowledged the excellence of the location and the munificence of the gift by appropriating \$40,000 for the erection of a building "commensurate with the wants of a first-class institution." A competent architect was employed, and it was decided to erect a wing on both the north and south sides of the mansion, giving when completed, an entire front of 205 feet. To do this required additional appropriations. The next General Assembly added \$30,000 and the Legislature of 1879 set apart \$34,000 for the use of the school, a portion of which, it was provided, might be expended in improvements upon the building. About three years ago provision was made for the admission of colored pupils, and a separate department was established for them.

Although there are many larger institutions of the kind in this country, with more costly buildings and grounds, yet in excellence of management and thoroughness of results, it is unexcelled.

In addition to a literary education the boys are taught some simple mechanical trade, and the girls are instructed in sewing, and bead and other ornamental work. Much attention is also given to music, some of the graduates of that department having become excellent teachers. The school is now under the superintendency of Prof. L. A. Bigelow, and in December, 1884, had an enrollment of sixty-nine pupils, eight of whom were colored.

October 19, 1832, the Legislature passed an act to establish a lunatic hospital in this State, to be located in Davidson County, near Nashville. Francis Porterfield, Joseph Woods, Henry R. W. Hill, James Roane, Felix Robertson and Samuel Hogg were appointed commissioners to purchase a site and to erect a building, for which purpose \$10,000 were appropriated. A small tract of land, about one mile from the city, was obtained, and the erection of the building begun. From some cause the work progressed very slowly, and the asylum was not ready for occupancy until 1840. Three years later there were only thirteen patients in the institution, which up to that time had cost the State over \$56,000.

In 1847 the well-known philanthropist, Miss D. L. Dix, visited Tennessee, and finding the accommodations for the insane inadequate, memorialized the Legislature, and aroused the representatives of the people to take action upon the subject. It was decided to dispose of the old hospital and grounds and to erect new buildings on some more favorable site. The old grounds were too small, the water supply insufficient, the location unhealthy, and the arrangement of the building itself not good.

By authority of the legislative act the governor appointed nine commissioners to purchase a new site. They selected a large farm about six miles from Nashville, on the Murfreesboro pike, one of the healthiest

localities in the State. Dr. John S. Young was employed as superintendent and A. Heinman as architect of the building to be erected. Before entering upon their work they visited various asylums in the North and East for the purpose of perfecting their plans. Butler Asylum, of Providence, R. I., was finally chosen as a model, with a slight change in the architecture.

In 1849, with an appropriation of \$75,000, the work of erection began, and in April, 1852, the patients were removed from the old hospital. Two years later two large wings were added, making the whole building capable of accommodating 250 patients. During the entire process of erection Miss Dix, who has made a study of buildings of this character, lent her aid and assistance, and so highly was this appreciated that a room was especially fitted up for her to occupy whenever she chose to visit the institution.\* The Tennessee Hospital for the Insane is of the castellated style of architecture, with twenty-four octagonal towers of proportionate dimensions, placed on the corners of the main building and its wings, while from the center of the main building rises a larger octagonal tower, twenty-five feet above the roof, and sixteen feet in diameter. A range of battlements from tower to tower surrounds the whole edifice, following the angles of the several projections, giving a fine relief to it from any point of view. The extreme length of the main building and its wings from east to west is 405 feet and 210 feet from north to south. There are two airing courts in this area, each about 150 feet square. The height of the main building from the ground to the top of the main tower is eighty-five feet. The center, right and left of the main building are four stories high without the basement; the intervening ranges and the wings are three stories high. Its interior arrangement and structure are in accordance with the most approved plans. In all the minutiae of detail, the comfort, convenience and health of the patients have been very carefully studied. The ventilation of the building is a decided feature in its construction. It is carried on by means of a centrifugal fan seventeen feet in diameter, driven by a steam-engine. The air is conducted through subterranean passages to the central chambers in the basement, and thence through the steam-pipe chambers into vertical flues passing through the entire building. The quantity of air discharged may be carried up to 70,000 cubic feet per minute to each occupant. Thus a constant supply of pure fresh air may be kept up during the most oppressive weather. The means of heating the building are no less complete. The series of vertical flues before alluded to are constructed in the longitudinal walls of the halls, starting from a coil

---

\*History of Davidson County and the Architect's Report.

of pipe or hot-air chambers in the basement story, from the halls and rooms of the different stories near the floor. By this arrangement the air supply is constant without reference to any external condition of weather or temperature. Water is pumped by the engine from a reservoir to a tank in the center of the building, and from thence distributed by pipes to other parts of the institution. Soon after the war suitable quarters removed from the main building were erected by the State, at a cost of about \$25,000, for the accommodation of the colored insane. The grounds now include 480 acres, and the entire property is valued at about \$400,000.

This admirably managed charity has been under the superintendency of Dr. John H. Callender for several years, and has accomplished a vast amount of good in extending the most helpful and tender ministrations to the suffering insane. In December, 1884, the whole number of patients in the institution was 412, of whom a few were colored. The annual cost per patient for the two years previous was \$178.68. In 1883 the superintendent, as he had done in many previous reports, urged upon the Legislature the necessity of providing more accommodations for the insane of the State. At that session \$80,000 was appropriated for the East Tennessee Insane Asylum, to be erected near Knoxville upon the property known as Lyon's View, which the State had purchased for that purpose some time before. Agreeably to the provision of the act making the appropriation the governor appointed R. H. Armstrong, J. C. Flanders and Columbus Powell, all of Knoxville, to constitute a board of directors, who promptly organized and elected W. H. Cusack, of Nashville, architect, and Dr. Michael Campbell, of Nashville, superintending physician of construction. The board of directors, with the superintending physician and architect, after visiting some of the most famous asylums in the country, adopted a plan embracing the latest improvements, both sanitary and architectural. The asylum consists of nine buildings, including an administration building, chapel, kitchen, laundry, boiler-house and engine-house. The main front is 472 feet long. The wards consist of 174 rooms that will accommodate from 250 to 300 patients. In 1885 the original appropriation had been exhausted, and an additional sum of \$95,000 was granted by the Legislature for the completion of the buildings. The asylum was ready for occupancy March 1, 1886, and a transfer of the patients belonging to East Tennessee was made. No more beautiful and desirable spot could have been chosen for an insane asylum than Lyon's View. Within four miles of the city of Knoxville, high in elevation, commanding a full view of the river and the adjacent heights with their attractive scenery, the location possesses in itself all the



requirements that could possibly be desired in an institution designed for the comfort, care and cure of the unfortunate insane.\* The asylum itself is one of the most stately and best equipped in the country, and stands an honorable monument to the munificent charity of Tennessee.

Even with these two large asylums it was found that not all of this unfortunate class, who are peculiarly the wards of the State, could be accommodated, and an appropriation of \$85,000 was made for the erection of a similar institution in West Tennessee. John M. Lea, John H. Callendar and W. P. Jones were appointed commissioners to select a site and superintend the construction of the buildings. These commissioners, after spending several weeks in visiting and carefully examining several places, selected a point between three and four miles northwest of Bolivar, in Hardeman County. The structure will be of brick with white stone trimmings. Its length will be 750 feet, with a depth of 40 feet. The central or main portion of the building will be five stories high, and will be occupied by the offices and domestic apartments of the officers. On either side of the main building are to be two sections four stories high, separated from each other by fire-proof walls. Between the tiers of rooms will be large corridors, and above each corridor lofty flues, all so arranged as to secure perfect ventilation and sufficient light. The building will cost over \$200,000, without the furnishing, and will accommodate 250 patients.

Previous to the adoption of the penitentiary system, the severity of the penal laws of the State tended rather to increase than to decrease the number of crimes committed. As the means of punishment were limited to the whipping-post, stocks, pillory, county jail, the branding-iron and the gallows, the penalties were either lighter than could prove effective, or else in severity out of all proportion to the offense committed. In either case the result was the same, the severe penalty frequently preventing conviction. The penalty, as expressed in the following act passed October 23, 1799, is an example of the punishments inflicted for crimes of that character:

*Be it enacted*, "That from and after the passage of this act any person who shall be guilty of feloniously stealing, taking or carrying away any horse, mare or gelding, shall for such offense suffer death without benefit of clergy."

For some years after the organization of the State many of the penal laws remained the same as before its separation from North Carolina. In 1807 an act was passed by the General Assembly fixing a somewhat lighter penalty for several felonies. For grand larceny, arson and malicious prosecution, the penalty for the first offense was the infliction upon the bare back of a number of lashes, not to exceed thirty-nine,

---

\*Gov. Bate.

imprisonment in the county jail for a term not to exceed twelve months, and to "be rendered infamous, according to the laws of the land." For the second offense, the penalty was death. The penalties for forgery and perjury were even more severe. In the earlier days of civilization such punishments would have been deemed mild, but at the time in which these laws were passed, the growth of humanizing influences rendered their cruelty apparent, and not infrequently the culprit escaped conviction more on account of the sympathy of the judge and jury than from a lack of sufficient evidence against him. This fact was recognized, and the successive governors in nearly every message urged upon the General Assembly the necessity of establishing a penitentiary. In 1813 an act was passed requiring the clerk of each county court to keep a subscription list for the purpose of permitting persons "to subscribe any amount they may think proper for erecting a penitentiary." This plan of raising money for that purpose was not a success, as four years later the total sum subscribed amounted to only \$2,173.40, a great part of which the committee appointed to investigate the matter thought could not be collected. In 1819 Gov. McMinn again brought the subject before the Legislature. In his message he says: "Notwithstanding some fruitless attempts have been made toward establishing a penitentiary in this State, yet I think it my duty to bring the subject before you, and with an earnest hope that in your wisdom and in your love of humanity and justice you will lend your aid in commencing a work which will do lasting honor to its founders." Nothing more, however, was done until October 28, 1829, when the act providing for the building of the penitentiary became a law. The ground selected for the site of the institution contains about ten acres, and is situated about one mile southwest of the court house in Nashville. Contracts for the building were let in April, 1830, and work was immediately begun, under the supervision of the architect, David Morrison. The rock used in its construction was quarried upon the ground, and so vigorously was the work prosecuted that a proclamation was issued by the governor January 1, 1831, announcing the penitentiary open to receive prisoners. At the same time the revised penal code went into effect. The following description of the building as it originally appeared is taken from a Nashville paper issued December 7, 1830: "The principal front of the building presents a southern exposure, is 310 feet long, and consists of a center and two wings. The former, slightly projecting, is composed of brick embellished with cut stone dressing, 120 feet long, 32 feet wide, and three stories high. It contains the warden and keeper's apartments, two infirmaries, an apartment for confining female convicts, and sundry other

rooms for the use of the establishment. In surveying the front of the center building, the most conspicuous feature that strikes the eye is a large gateway in the center 23 feet high, 14 feet wide, the piers and arch being formed of large blocks of well-polished white stone, and filled by a massive wrought iron port-cullis weighing nearly a ton. The wings are constructed of large blocks of well-dressed lime stone, the wall being 4 feet thick and 33 feet high, pierced with narrow, grated windows corresponding in height with those of the center. On the center of the building, and immediately over the gateway above described, rises a splendid Doric cupola that accords with the noble proportions of the whole. In the rear of the building a wall 30 feet high incloses an area of 310 square feet. At each angle of the wall is a tower for the purpose of viewing the establishment." The entire cost of the building was about \$50,000. In 1857 the west wing was added at a cost of \$36,000, and in 1867 two large workshops, known respectively as the east and west shops, were built. The first prisoner received into the institution was W. G. Cook, from Madison County. It is stated that he was a tailor, and was convicted of malicious stabbing and assault and battery. He stabbed a man with his shears, and assaulted him with his goose.\* He was made to cut and make his own suit, the first work done in the penitentiary. In June, 1833, the cholera began its ravages among the inmates. Its progress was so rapid that in a few days business was entirely suspended, and an extra force of nurses and physicians was employed. Out of eighty-three convicts not one escaped the disease, and nineteen of the number died. The following year the disease again broke out, but was not so destructive in its results as before.

While the number of prisoners was small, they were employed by the State under the supervision of appointed officers, in the manufacture of various articles of trade. In 1833 they were classified under the following departments: shoe-makers, coopers, stone-cutters, tailors, chair-makers, hatters, blacksmiths, wagon-makers, carpenters and brick-layers. Other departments were afterward added and some of the above dropped, the aim of the State being to employ as far as possible the convicts upon such work as would come into the least competition with private manufacturers.

This system was employed with more or less success until 1866, when the inspectors reported that for the previous thirty-three years the institution had cost the State an average of \$15,000 per year. The Legislature at that session passed an act establishing a board of three directors, who were authorized to lease the prison, machinery and convicts to the high-

---

\*Warden's Report, 1884.



est bidders for a term of four years. - The lease was made to the firm of Hyatt, Briggs & Moore, afterward Ward & Briggs, at 40 cents per day for each convict. It was agreed upon the part of the State to provide the necessary guards to preserve discipline. The firm entered upon the fulfillment of the contract. In May, 1867, 300 convicts joined in an attempt to escape, and created great excitement. Quiet was restored without bloodshed, but the mutinous spirit was not quelled, and the following month they succeeded in setting fire to the east shops, which were destroyed.

A difficulty then arose between the State and the lessees. The latter refused to pay for the labor and claimed damages from the State for this failure to preserve discipline and for the losses occasioned by the fire. The lease was terminated by mutual agreement July 1, 1869, and the matter compromised by the State paying the lessees \$132,200.64 for the material on hand and in settlement of the damages claimed by them. In December, 1871, provision was again made for leasing the prisoners and shops. The contract was taken by W. H. Cherry, Thomas O'Connor, A. N. Shook and Gen. W. T. C. Humes, under the firm style of Cherry, O'Connor & Co. The second lease was taken December 1, 1876, by Messrs. Cherry, O'Connor, A. N. Shook and William Morrow, under the old firm name, with M. Allen as superintendent of the works. The lease system has proven highly satisfactory. Instead of requiring almost yearly appropriations for its support, the institution now pays an annual revenue to the State of \$101,000. The present lease, which is for six years, began January 1, 1884, the Tennessee Coal, Iron & Railroad Company being the lessees. The headquarters of this company are at Tracy City, where about one third of the prisoners are worked in the mines, and where a large and commodious prison has been erected. There are also branch prisons at the Inman mines in Marion County, and Coal Creek in Anderson County. A few prisoners are worked in marble works at Knoxville. About 40 per cent of the entire number are at the main prison, where they are worked under a sub-lease by Cherry, Morrow & Co. The firm is engaged exclusively in the manufacture of wagons. The shops are equipped with all the latest improved machinery, enabling them to turn out about fifty finished wagons per day. In the manufacture of their wagons they begin with the raw material, making their own bent-work, iron-work, castings, thimbles and skeins. Their goods are sold throughout the South and Southwest, and also in several of the Northern and Western States.

Under the present lease system the State is relieved from all expense of transportation and guarding of prisoners. The only officers connected

with the institution who are paid by the State are the warden, superintendent, physician and chaplain.

The number of convicts in the main prison and branches, December 1, 1884, was 1,323; in 1880, the number was 1,241; in 1870, 613; in 1857, 286, and in 1839, 154. During the late war the penitentiary was converted into a military prison, and at one time there were as many as 2,400 inmates. Two fires, the former quite destructive, occurred within the past five years. December 4, 1881, the various workshops and machinery belonging to the State and the lessees, were destroyed by fire, only the main building and cells escaping destruction. At the time over 700 convicts were within the walls, and it became necessary to turn them all out into the space in front of the prison; yet, so well were they managed, that only six escaped. The shops were immediately rebuilt by the State, and the lessees put in new machinery. On January 12, 1884, the east end of the blacksmith shop was discovered to be on fire, and as the second story was used as a paint shop it threatened to prove very destructive. It was, however, soon brought under control. The loss to the State was about \$3,300, which was fully covered by insurance.

\*Many years ago a society for the collection and preservation of historical papers, relics, antiquities, etc., existed in Nashville.† It did not accomplish much, but its very organization showed the tendency of the minds in the city noted for scholarly attainments to endeavor to rescue from oblivion the history of a people remarkable for patriotism, chivalry and intelligence. After it had ceased to exist for a considerable time several public-spirited citizens met in the library-rooms of the Merchants' Association, to reorganize an historical society. This was in May, 1849, and the organization was effected by the election of Nathaniel Cross as president; Col. A. W. Putnam, vice-president; William A. Eichbaum, treasurer; J. R. Eakin, corresponding secretary, and W. F. Cooper, recording secretary. This society did not exist many years, but was again brought to life in 1857, and at the May meeting elected the following officers: A. W. Putnam, president; Thomas Washington, vice-president; W. A. Eichbaum, treasurer; R. J. Meigs, Jr., corresponding secretary; Anson Nelson, recording secretary, and John Meigs, librarian. Contributions of valuable manuscripts, newspapers and relics poured in from all parts of the State, as well as a few from other States.

A public anniversary meeting took place on the 1st of May, 1858, in Watkin's Grove. An immense procession of old soldiers of the war of 1812, the Creek war, the Mexican war, the officers and cadets of the Western Military Institute, the Shelby Guards, the Nashville Typo-

\*Prepared by Anson Nelson, Esq., recording secretary.

†The Tennessee Antiquarian Society, organized July 1, 1820. Discontinued in August, 1822.

graphical Union, the Philomathean Society, the teachers and pupils of the Nashville Female Academy, the superintendent, teachers and pupils of the public schools of Nashville, citizens on horseback, in carriages and buggies, and citizens on foot marched from the public square to Watkin's Grove, when a collation was served in excellent style to all present. The Hon. James M. Davidson, of Fayetteville, was the orator of the day. Judge T. T. Smiley read an historical account of the services of the Third Tennessee Regiment in the war with Mexico. Gov. William B. Campbell and Rev. Dr. C. D. Elliott delivered eloquent addresses. Bands of music were distributed along the line of the procession, and the whole city made it a holiday occasion to commemorate the organization of the "provisional government" at Robertson's Station, now Nashville, May 1, 1780, and the formation of the society May 1, 1849. At the annual celebration, May 1, 1859, Randal W. McGavock, mayor of Nashville and a grandson of Hon. Felix Grundy, presented a full length portrait of Judge Grundy, painted by Drury. John M. Bright, of Lincoln, delivered an eloquent oration on the life, character and public services of the renowned statesman and jurist. The exercises took place in the hall of the House of Representatives, in the presence of as many people as could obtain admittance.

In September, 1859, a committee, consisting of Hon. Thomas Washington, Col. A. W. Putnam and Rev. Dr. R. B. C. Howell, was appointed to urge the council of the city of Nashville to adopt suitable measures for the removal of the remains of Lieut. Chandler, formerly paymaster in the United States Army, from their place of interment in the Sulphur Spring Bottom, to Mount Olivet Cemetery. The committee accomplished their purpose, and on the 23d of September the remains were exhumed, after having lain in the grave for nearly sixty years. The occasion was marked by appropriate exercises, Hon. E. H. East delivering a patriotic address.

In October, 1859, at the request of the society, Lieut. M. F. Maury, the distinguished scientist, delivered his celebrated lecture on the geography of the sea. In January, 1860, the society received from Egypt the fine Egyptian mummy now in the Capitol, sent by J. G. Harris of the United States Navy. After the meeting in September, 1860, the society ceased active operations until several years after the war. Many articles were lost during the war, but the small collection of coins was preserved intact.

In 1874 the society reorganized by electing the following officers: Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey, president; Dr. R. C. Foster, vice-president; Dr. John H. Currey, treasurer; Gen. G. P. Thurston, corresponding secretary;



Anson Nelson, recording secretary, and Mrs. P. Haskell, librarian. On June 16, of that year, the society held a called session at Knoxville, the home of the President, who presided on that interesting occasion. The Recording Secretary exhibited the original commission of Maj.-Gen. Israel Putnam, on parchment, issued June 19, 1775, signed by John Hancock, President, and Charles Thompson, Secretary of the Continental Congress. The society has also in its possession a vest worn by "Old Put," in the Revolutionary war.

In October, 1874, the society decided to participate in the fourth annual exposition of Nashville, and on the evening of October 6, the anniversary of the battle of King's Mountain, the Rev. T. A. Hoyt delivered an address giving the history of that important battle. The address was also delivered to a large audience in Knoxville. The centennial anniversary of the signing of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, May 20, 1775, was celebrated by the society at the Nashville Fair Grounds, Ex-Gov. Niell S. Brown delivering the oration. At the May meeting in 1875, several delegates were appointed to attend the centennial of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence in Charlottsville, N. C., only one of whom attended—Hugh L. Davidson, of Shelbyville. At the annual meeting in May, 1876, John M. Lea was elected vice-president, *vice* R. C. Foster; and J. B. Lindsley, librarian, *vice* Mrs. Haskell. The office of treasurer was attached to that of the recording secretary; the other offices remained the same as before.

The National Centennial was duly celebrated by the society in the hall of the House of Representatives, Dr. John H. Callender, reading the Declaration of Independence. An elegant historical centennial address, written by Dr. Ramsey, president of the society, was read by Rev. T. A. Hoyt. Other exercises appropriate to the occasion were rendered.

In 1878 the society commenced agitating the subject of celebrating the centennial of Nashville, and appointed a committee on that subject, who afterward reported a program for the exercises. Subsequently the idea expanded, and finally the society appointed a committee to wait upon the mayor and urge him to request the city council to call a public meeting to take action in the matter. This was done, and an enthusiastic interest was aroused. Various committees were appointed, an exposition was inaugurated, the orators chosen by the Historical Society were approved, a grand civic procession for the 24th of April provided for, and many other matters arranged to give *eclat* to the occasion. All of this was most successfully carried out, and the most sanguine expectations of the Historical Society were more than realized. On April 11, 1884, Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey, the distinguished president of the society, died at his

home in Knoxville. A delegation of members, numbering eleven, went from Nashville to be present at the funeral obsequies which took place on the 13th, and were attended by a very large number of the citizens of Knoxville and the surrounding country. At the next annual meeting in May Hon. John M. Lea was elected to the office made vacant by the death of Dr. Ramsey,

The society is indebted to the trustees of Watkins' Institute for the use of a large and elegant room in that building, for the exhibition of its books, manuscripts and relics, of which it has a great number.

Among the most interesting relics may be mentioned the musket of Daniel Boone, the veritable "Old Betsey;" the sword of Gov. John Sevier, and one of the pistols presented to him by the State of North Carolina; the sword of Col. Dupuyser, of the British Army, taken from him at the battle of King's Mountain; the red silk sash worn by Gen. Ferguson, when he was killed at King's Mountain; one of the chairs used by Gen. Nathaniel Greene; also one used by President Fillmore; the sword, coat and epaulette of Capt. Samuel Price, worn in the battle of Frenchtown, Raisin River, Mich.; the pitcher used at the treaty of Hopewell; three canes formerly belonging to President Polk, one in the form of a serpent, one bearing the electoral vote cast for him for President, the other a hickory cane from the Hermitage; the first greenback \$5 note issued by the United States; the portfolio used by Henry Clay in the United States Senate; over thirty battle-flags used by Tennessee soldiers in different wars from 1812 to 1865.

Among the manuscripts of the society are an old book in an excellent state of preservation, kept in Nashville by a merchant in 1795; the journals of Gov. William Blount from 1790 to 1796; the proceedings of the courts martial during Jackson's campaign in 1813, kept by Col. William White, acting judge-advocate; journal of Capt. John Donelson and companions while on their voyage from Holston River down the Tennessee, up the Ohio and Cumberland to what is now Nashville in 1779-80.

The society also possesses portraits of Prof. Priestly, Dr. Gerard Troost, Dr. Phillip Lindsley, Hon. Felix Grundy, Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey, Anson Nelson, Dr. Felix Robertson and his parents, Henry Clay, Davy Crockett and many others, besides portraits of all the governors of the State with the exception of two, Roane and McMinn.

Among the old and rare books are a copy of the Polydori Vergil II, in Latin, bound in vellum, printed in 1644; a copy of Cicero's "Discourse on old age," printed by Benjamin Franklin in Philadelphia in 1744; "Dioscoridis Mat. Med.," bound in parchment, printed in 1552; copies of the Bible printed in 1678 and 1757, respectively.

The present officers of the society are Hon. John M. Lea, president; Ex-Gov. James D. Porter, first vice-president; Capt. Albert T. McNeal, second vice-president; Joseph S. Carels, treasurer; James A. Cartwright, corresponding secretary; Anson Nelson, recording secretary; Robert T. Quarles, librarian.

The Medical Society of Tennessee\* was incorporated by an act of the Legislature, passed January 9, 1830, one hundred and fifty-four physicians from the various counties of the State being named in the charter. Certain powers and privileges were granted, among which was the power to appoint boards of censors, for the three divisions of the State, to grant licenses to applicants to practice medicine within its limits. The first meeting of the society was held in Nashville May 3, 1830, and its organization completed by adopting a constitution, by-laws and a code of medical ethics, and by electing officers for two years. These were James Roane, of Nashville, president; James King, of Knoxville, vice-president; James M. Walker, of Nashville, recording secretary; L. P. Yandell, of Rutherford County, corresponding secretary, and Boyd McNair, of Nashville, treasurer. Prof. Charles Caldwell, of Transylvania University, being in town at the time, was elected an honorary member of the society, and a committee was appointed to extend him an invitation to visit the meeting. The censors appointed for Middle Tennessee were Drs. Douglass, Stith, Hogg and Estill; for East Tennessee, Drs. McKinney and Temple; and for the western division of the State, Drs. Young and Wilson. The code of ethics was the same as that adopted by the Central Medical Society of Georgia in 1828. After adopting a resolution condemning the habitual use of ardent spirits and recommending total abstinence, except when prescribed as a medicine, the society adjourned.

The second assembling of the society took place in Nashville May 2 1861. Sixty members responded at roll-call, and fifty-four were added during the session, constituting the largest meeting ever held. Dr. John H. Kain, of Shelbyville, the first orator appointed, delivered the anniversary discourse before the society on "Medical Emulation." Dr. Yandell having been called to a professorship in the Transylvania University, resigned his office in the society, and delivered an address which was ordered to be published. He was subsequently elected an honorary member, and though he became a citizen of another State, no one ever served the society more faithfully, or contributed more to advance its interests. A premium of \$50 was offered at this meeting for the best essay on "The use and abuse of calomel," which two years later was awarded to James Overton, M. D. of Nashville. Dr. James G. F.

\*Condensed from its history, furnished by Paul F. Eve, M. D., in 1872.



Ramsey, of Knoxville, sent his essay on the topography of East Tennessee, and Dr. Becton read his own on the topography of Rutherford County. This session was one of the most enthusiastic and interesting ever held. By invitation of the governor, the society visited the penitentiary, then just erected. The third convocation of this body took place in Nashville, where it continued to meet until 1851, when it convened at Murfreesboro. Many of these sessions were very interesting, and several valuable contributions were added to medical literature. The limited facilities for travel, however, rendered it impossible for members from distant parts of the State to attend without losing a large amount of time and experiencing considerable inconvenience; consequently the number in attendance was frequently very small.

At the third session a committee was appointed to ask the Legislature to repeal the law making it a penitentiary offense to exhume a human body for the purpose of dissection, but this, as was the case with several other petitions presented by the society, the Legislature refused to grant.

At the meeting in 1843 the society decided to establish a museum at Nashville for the mutual improvement of its members. Subsequently a committee was appointed to solicit from the Legislature a donation for the museum and a library, but the request was not granted. Upon the establishment of the medical department of the University of Nashville the museum was transferred to that institution.

At the session of the society held in Murfreesboro, in 1851, the code of ethics adopted by the American Medical Association in 1847 was substituted for the one heretofore governing this body.

The society met at Murfreesboro again in 1852, but the following year convened at Nashville. The complete catalog of the membership of the society up to that time was 307. In 1857 twenty-five delegates were appointed to the American Medical Association, which assembled in Nashville the following year. The thirty-second annual meeting of the Tennessee Medical Society was held in the Masonic Hall at Murfreesboro April 2, 1861. The attendance was small, only eleven members being present at roll-call. Owing to the unsettled condition of the country no more meetings were held until April 20, 1866, when seven members assembled at Nashville. Dr. Robert Martin was elected president, and Dr. Nichol re-elected vice-president. But little business was transacted, and after the appointment of several committees preparatory to the next meeting, the society adjourned. From that time until the present, meetings have been held annually. In 1871 the society convened at Pulaski; in 1874 at Chattanooga; and in 1878 at Memphis. In 1872 a committee of

nine, three for each grand division of the State, was appointed for the purpose of forming and encouraging local societies. Two years later Drs. J. B. Lindsey, J. J. Abernethy and P. D. Sims were constituted a committee to examine the workings of the various State medical societies and report, at the next annual meeting, such amendments and by-laws as might tend to strengthen the society. This was accordingly done, and at the next meeting the constitution as revised by the committee was adopted after a full and free discussion. Since 1874 delegates have been appointed to each annual meeting of the American Medical Association, and in 1876 Drs. Paul F. Eve, Van S. Lindsley, D. C. Gordon, W. P. Jones, J. H. Van Deman, W. C. Cook, Thomas Menees, F. Bogart, J. B. Buist, S. S. Mayfield, H. J. Warmouth and A. Blitz were appointed delegates to the International Medical Congress.

The forty-seventh annual meeting was held at Knoxville, beginning April 6, 1880. The local attendance was quite large, and a number of delegates from Middle Tennessee were present, but the western division of the State was not so largely represented. Among the notable feature of this meeting was the election of the first female doctor to membership, she being regularly delegated from the Knox County Medical Society, of which she was an accepted member. The lady was Mary T. Davis.

In 1881 two meetings were held. At the date of the regular meeting on April 5, the society was convened in the supreme court room of the capitol, and the committee on arrangements reported that acting under the authority of the president, and at the request of a number of physicians of Knoxville, notices of an adjourned meeting had been sent out. Therefore, after having received the governor's signature to the bill which had just passed the Legislature, requiring the registration of the births, deaths, and marriages\* in the State, the society adjourned to meet on May 10, 1881. At that time the continental exposition was in progress, and the meeting was well attended.

The next year the society assembled at Casino Hall, in Memphis, on May 9. The attendance was not large, but the session proved an interesting one. Among its social features was a very pleasant excursion on the steamer "Benner," given by Dr. R. W. Mitchell, of the National Board of Health. The fiftieth annual meeting was held in Nashville, beginning April 10, 1883. One of the pleasing incidents of the session was an address by Gov. Bate. On April 8, 1884, the society again convened at Chattanooga just two years after its former meeting in that city. The session was in every respect one of the most successful ever held. Several amendments to the constitution were adopted, one of which ab-

---

\*This law was repealed by the next Legislature.

ished the boards of censors, and established in lieu a judicial council composed of the ex-presidents of the society. Fifty dollars was appropriated to assist in the erection of a monument to the memory of Dr. J. Marion Sims. The fifty-second annual meeting was held in the hall of Representatives in the State Capitol, April 14 to 16, 1885. Several interesting papers were read, and considerable business of importance was transacted.

The last meeting of the society was held in Memphis, on the first Tuesday in April, 1886. The present officers are Thomas L. Mad-din, M. D., of Nashville, president; Drs. S. T. Hardison, J. E. Black and G. W. Drake, vice-presidents, for Middle, West and East Tennessee, respectively; Dr. C. C. Fite, secretary and Dr. Deering J. Roberts, treasurer

The subject of preventive medicine has been for several years attracting more and greater attention, especially from the occurrence of frequent epidemics throughout the Union. The necessity of some organized and co-operative efforts\* on the part of persons clothed with authority to take such steps as may be deemed sufficient to protect the country from the rapid spread of epidemics, became so apparent that many of the States organized State Boards of Health, and such powers were delegated to them as were thought proper to effect the purpose of their creation.

This idea reached material development in this State in 1866, when the first board of health in Tennessee was organized at Nashville. Soon after a similar organization was formed for the city of Memphis, since which time local boards of health have been established in all of the larger towns and most of the smaller ones in the State. All are producing good fruit by developing an intelligent public sentiment and a growing interest in regard to the value and importance of sanitary science as applied not only to communities, but also to individuals, households and persons. In April, 1874, a committee was appointed by the State Medical Society to prepare and to present to the State Legislature at its next session a bill providing for the establishment of a State Board of Health. This bill passed the House but was lost in the Senate. Two years later another bill was presented, which, after much explanation, finally passed with the section of the bill providing for an appropriation of funds stricken out, thus securing the organization simply of the "State Board of Health of the State of Tennessee," without any executive power or means with which to carry out any of the more practical objects for which it was established; consequently they were compelled to

---

\*From the Reports of 1880 and 1884.



content themselves with acting as an advisory body only, notwithstanding the western and southern portions of the State as far east as Chattanooga were, during the summer of 1878, swept by a most disastrous epidemic of yellow fever. They issued advisory circulars through the secular press upon the lesser epidemics, such as scarlet fever and diphtheria, which appeared in different localities through the State, and otherwise gave timely counsel to the people, and created, as opportunity afforded, an interest in the subject of public hygiene. Two years subsequently the Legislature passed an amendatory act, which was approved by the governor, March, 1879, giving the board additional powers and making a small appropriation of money, which enabled them to obtain an office and pay their secretary a salary.

The first meeting of the board was held April 3, 1877, in the office of the Secretary of State, the following members appointed by the governor being present: Drs. J. D. Plunket, T. A. Atchison, James M. Safford, of Middle Tennessee; E. M. Wight, of East Tennessee, and R. B. Maury, of West Tennessee. Dr. J. D. Plunket, to whose exertion the board largely owed its existence, was chosen president, and Dr. J. Berrien Lindsley was appointed secretary *pro tem*. Committees were appointed on vital statistics, hygiene of schools, prisons, geological and topographical features of Tennessee in relation to disease, and epidemic, endemic and contagious diseases.

The first annual meeting of the board was held in Memphis, April, 1878, concurrently with the meeting of the State Medical Society. Little business of importance was transacted. The office of vice-president was created, and Dr. J. M. Safford was elected to that position. Following this meeting came the epidemic of yellow fever of 1878, yet the board was powerless to do aught to stay its dreadful ravages. A reign of terror existed, and, though badly needed, there was no guide, no head of power. The experience of that terrible season taught even the law-makers that a State Board of Health with enlarged powers and increased facilities was a necessity. Therefore March 26, 1879, an amendatory act was passed giving the board power to declare and enforce quarantine, and to prescribe rules and regulations to prevent the introduction of yellow fever and other epidemic diseases. The act also required the governor to appoint two additional members of the board connected with the commerce and transportation of the country, and appropriated \$3,000 to defray expenses. Hon. John Johnson, ex-mayor of Memphis, and Col. E. W. Cole, of Nashville, were chosen as the new members of the board. At the second annual meeting Dr. Lindsley resigned his position as secretary, and Dr. W. M. Clark was elected to fill out the unex-

pired term. In anticipation of the reappearance of the yellow fever in 1879, the board issued 10,000 copies of an address urging the people of the State to organize local boards of health to co-operate with the State Board. In consequence of this action many local boards were formed, and the State Board was thus enabled to carry on, with but little difficulty, its plans for staying the progress of the epidemic which followed. Since that time no widespread epidemic has visited the State, and the work of the board has been directed to the improvement of the sanitary condition of the jails, penitentiaries, etc., the education of the people in sanitary science, and the collection of valuable vital statistics. The board as constituted at the present time is as follows: J. D. Plunket, president; James M. Safford, vice-president; J. B. Lindsley, secretary; G. B. Thornton, P. D. Sims, Daniel F. Wright, David P. Hadden and E. W. Cole.

As early as 1834 or 1835 the Tennessee Agricultural and Horticultural Society was organized, and annual fairs were held for a few years. The officers elected at the meeting held October 13, 1835, were Dr. Philip Lindsley, president; Drs. John Shelby and Felix Robertson, vice-presidents; H. Petway, treasurer, and Joseph T. Dwyer, secretary. In 1840 the society established a paper called the *Tennessee State Agriculturalist*, of which Tolbert Fanning was installed as editor. Drs. Girard Troust and John Shelby were liberal contributors to its columns. In 1842 the Tennessee State Agricultural Society, including members from most of the counties of Middle Tennessee, was incorporated with an authorized capital stock of \$100,000.

December 18, 1851, several of the leading agriculturalists of the State, prominent among whom were Mark R. Cockrill, W. G. Harding, Willoughby Williams and Tolbert Fanning, secured the re-incorporation of the society, with authority to organize two auxiliary societies, one for each of the other two divisions of the State. These societies served to create an interest in improved methods of agriculture, and during the session of 1853-54 the subject was presented to the Legislature. The result was the organization of the Tennessee State Agricultural Bureau, consisting of the governor, *ex-officio* president, one member from each grand division of the State, five members from Davidson County, and one member from each of the county societies organized. It was made the duty of the bureau to investigate all such subjects relating to the improvement of agriculture as it might think proper, and to encourage the establishment of county agricultural societies. For the support of the bureau, it was provided that when \$1,000 had been raised by contributions of individuals and placed out at interest, the bureau should be

entitled to receive from the treasury of the State the sum of \$500. Each county society was also to receive \$50 from the State when \$300 had been contributed by individuals. It was found difficult for the county societies to comply with the latter proviso, and in 1856 the act was amended and a bounty of \$200 granted to each society without requiring any individual contributions. At the same time \$30,000 was appropriated for the purchase of suitable grounds for the biennial fairs to be held at Nashville, and State bonds to that amount were issued. A tract of land containing thirty-nine acres, lying on Brown's Creek, was purchased from John Trimble for the sum of \$17,750. The work of fitting up the grounds was immediately begun, and by October they were sufficiently improved to admit of holding the annual fair upon them. The fair of that year, however, was not so successful as previous ones, owing to unfavorable weather, and to the excitement incident to the presidential campaign then in progress. The improvements of the grounds was completed during the following year, and from the secretary's report it appears that the entire cost of the grounds and improvements exceeded \$30,000.

The sixth and last annual fair was begun on October 10, 1859, and continued six days. This was one of the most successful fairs held. The number of people in attendance on the second day was estimated at 10,000, to which assemblage an elaborate and instructive address was delivered by Lieut. M. F. Maury.

In the reports made by the officers of the society much regret is expressed at the lack of interest in making creditable exhibits of stock and other farm products. But the greatest good derived from these annual fairs came from the addresses delivered by scientific men like Lieut. Maury. They served to give the farmer a broader idea of his profession and to awaken him to the fact that there is a science of agriculture.

During the war, as a matter of course, the agricultural societies were suspended, and but little effort has since been made to revive them. In 1870 the old fair grounds of the State Agricultural Society were sold by a committee appointed by the Legislature, consisting of the secretary of state, comptroller and treasurer.

In December, 1871, an act was passed authorizing the governor to appoint two citizens from each grand division of the State, as commissioners of agriculture, to constitute a bureau of agriculture. They were required to meet once each year, and were allowed to appoint a secretary, at a salary of \$600 per year. The Legislature of 1875 abolished this department, and in its stead established the Bureau of Agriculture, Statistics and Mines, to be under the control of a commissioner appointed



by the governor. It is made the duty of the commissioner to collect specimens of all the agricultural and mineral products of the State; to analyze and inspect fertilizers sold in the State; to study the insects injurious to crops; to study the diseases of grain, fruit and other crops, and to collect statistics bearing upon these subjects. He is also allowed to employ a chemist and geologist to assist him in his researches. At the same time a bureau of immigration was established for the purpose of encouraging immigration to the State. Two years later the duties of this office were imposed upon the Bureau of Agriculture, Statistics and Mines, which had been placed under the control of J. B. Killebrew, as commissioner, a man of great ability, and untiring energy. He did much to make known the immense natural resources of the State; he wrote and published works on "Wheat Culture," "Tennessee Grasses and Cereals," "The Mineral Wealth of the State," "Sheep Husbandry," and an extensive work entitled "The Resources of Tennessee," all admirably well written. For the past three years the bureau has been under the efficient management of A. J. McWhirter.

The first charter issued to a Masonic Lodge in Tennessee was granted in accordance with a petition received by the Grand Lodge of North Carolina, December 17, 1796. The lodge was organized in Nashville, and was known as St. Tammany, No. 1. The Grand Lodge of North Carolina continued its authority over Tennessee until 1812. During the same period a charter was issued to one lodge in this State by the Grand Lodge of Kentucky, and a dispute arose between these two grand lodges in regard to their jurisdiction. In 1805 the Grand Secretary of the Grand Lodge of North Carolina was directed to write to the Grand Lodge of Kentucky, and request them to call in all dispensations or charters granted to lodges in Tennessee. The request was not complied with, and two years later it was renewed with the warning that, if it were not heeded, all communication between them would cease. The difficulty, however, was not settled until a separate Grand Lodge for Tennessee was established.

On December 11, 1811, a convention, consisting of representatives from all the lodges in Tennessee, met at Knoxville. Resolutions favoring the formation of a separate grand lodge were passed, and an address to the Grand Lodge of North Carolina prepared. This address was received by the Grand Lodge at its next meeting in December, 1812, and the petition for a separate grand lodge granted. Accordingly Grand Master Robert Williams called a convention to meet in Knoxville, on December 27, 1813, at which time a charter, or deed of relinquishment, from the Grand Lodge of North Carolina was presented. This charter

is still on file in the archives of the Grand Lodge, and is said to be the only charter of the kind in the United States.

The officers installed the first meeting were Thomas Claiborne, Grand Master; George Wilson, Deputy Grand Master; John Hall, Senior Grand Warden; Abraham K. Shaifer, Junior Grand Warden; Thomas McCarry, Grand Treasurer and Senior Grand Deacon; Edward Scott, Grand Secretary and Junior Grand Deacon. At the meeting held in July following a controversy arose as to whether the subordinate lodges could work under their old charters. It was finally decided to allow them to do so until new charters could be granted.

The constitution as originally adopted provided that the meetings of the Grand Lodge should be held at the place where the Legislature convened. In 1815 this was amended, and Nashville was permanently fixed as the place of meeting. Quarterly meetings of the Grand Lodge were held until October, 1819, when they were abolished. At a called meeting on May 4, 1825, Gen. La Fayette, who was then visiting Nashville, was elected an honorary member of the Grand Lodge, and during the day was introduced to the lodge by Gen. Jackson. The Grand Master delivered an address of welcome, to which Gen. La Fayette replied. An elegant oration was then delivered by William G. Hunt, J. G. W., after which a banquet terminated the exercises.

At the annual meeting held in October, 1825, Gen. Samuel Houston presented a memorial concerning a difficulty which had arisen between him and another member of Cumberland Lodge, No. 8. Upon hearing the case the committee completely exonerated Gen. Houston from all charges of unmasonic conduct, but two years later he was suspended by his lodge. He appealed to the Grand Lodge, but the decision of the subordinate lodge was not reversed. The chief grounds of his suspension was his having fought a duel with another Mason, Gen. White. The constitution and by-laws of the Grand Lodge were amended in 1822, and again in 1830. In 1845 a new constitution was adopted.

October 6, 1858, the corner-stone of the Masonic Temple at Nashville was laid with the usual ceremonies. Since that time but little of general interest has transpired in the proceedings of the Grand Lodge. During the yellow fever epidemic of 1878, the order was active in relieving the suffering, and over \$24,000 was contributed for that purpose. In 1885 the Grand Lodge had jurisdiction over 409 subordinate lodges with a membership of 15,263. The following is a complete list of the Past Grand Masters of the Grand Lodge:

Thomas Claiborne, 1813; Robert Searcy, 1815; Wilkins Tannehill, 1817; O. B. Hays, 1819; Wilkins Tannehill, 1820; Andrew Jackson,

1822; Wilkins Tannehill, 1824; Matthew D. Cooper, 1825; William E. Kennedy, 1827; Hugh W. Dunlap, 1829; Archibald Yell, 1831; Dudley S. Jennings, 1832; Harry L. Douglass, 1833; Benjamin S. Tappan, 1834; J. C. N. Robertson, 1836; Philander Priestly, 1837; Samuel McManus, 1838; George Wilson, 1840; Wilkins Tannehill, 1841; John Novell, 1843; Edmund Dillahunt, 1844; William L. Martin, 1846; Hardy M. Burton, 1848; Robert L. Caruthers, 1849; Charles A. Fuller, 1850; A. M. Hughes, 1852; John S. Dashiell, 1854; Thomas McCulloch, 1856; John Frizzell, 1858; James McCallum, 1860\*; A. M. Hughes, 1863; Thomas Hamilton, 1864; Joseph M. Anderson, 1866; Jonathan S. Dawson, 1868; John W. Paxton, 1869; John C. Brown, 1870; W. M. Dunaway, 1871; D. R. Grafton, 1872; James D. Richardson, 1873; Andrew J. Wheeler, 1874; J. C. Cawood, 1875; E. Edmundson, 1876; A. V. Warr, 1877; George C. Connor, 1878; Wilbur F. Fowler, 1879; J. T. Irion, 1880; N. S. Woodward, 1882; N. W. McConnell, 1883; B. R. Harris, 1884; H. M. Aiken, 1885; Thomas O. Morris, 1886. The following is a list of the present grand officers:

Thomas O. Morris, Nashville, M. W. Grand Master; Caswell A. Goodloe, Alamo, R. W. Deputy Grand Master; H. H. Ingersoll, Knoxville, R. W. Senior Grand Warden; John T. Williamson, Columbia, R. W. Junior Grand Warden; William H. Morrow, Nashville, R. W. Grand Treasurer; John Frizzell, Nashville, R. W. Grand Secretary; Rev. C. H. Strickland, Nashville, R. W. Grand Chaplain; H. W. Naff, Bristol, Wor. Senior Grand Deacon; H. P. Doyle, Dyersburg, Wor. Junior Grand Deacon; P. H. Craig, Waynesboro, Wor. Grand Marshal; N. A. Senter, Humboldt, Wor. Grand Sword Bearer; A. C. Robeson, Athens, Wor. Grand Steward; M. P. Prince, Minor Hill, Wor. Grand Pursuivant; Ewin Burney, Nashville, Wor. Grand Tyler. The Grand Council of Tennessee Royal and Select Master Masons was organized October 13, 1847, with the following officers:

Dyer Pearl, T. I. Grand Master; William R. Hodge, G. Prim. C. of Work; Joseph F. Gibson, Grand Treasurer; Charles A. Fuller, Grand Recorder. Since that time the following have filled the chair of Grand Master: John S. Dashiell, 1849; Henry F. Beaumont, 1850; John P. Campbell, 1851-52; James Penn, 1853; Jonathan Huntington, 1854; L. Hawkins, 1855; Edward W. Kinney, 1856; Robert Chester, 1857; H. M. Lusher, 1858; Jonathan Huntington, 1859; John H. Devereux, 1860; John Frizzell, 1861; William Maxwell, 1865; John McClelland, 1866; William H. McLeskey, 1867; David Cook, 1868; W. F. Foster, 1869; A. V. Ware, 1870; James McCallum, 1871; A. P. Hall, 1872; E.

\*No meetings held in 1861 and 1862. ...



Edmundson, 1873; W. R. Shaver, 1874; H. M. Aiken, 1875; B. F. Haller, 1876; Bradford Nichol, 1877; B. R. Harris, 1878; George H. Morgan, 1879; Ewin Burney, 1880-82; William Matthews, 1883; P. C. Wright, 1884.

The Grand Chapter was organized April 3, 1826, with the following officers: William G. Hunt, Grand High Priest; Wilkins Tannehill, Deputy Grand High Priest; Ed H. Steele, Grand King; Dyer Pearl, Grand Scribe; Moses Stevens, Grand Treasurer; and Charles Cooper, Grand Secretary.

The following have been the Grand High Priests: William G. Hunt,\* 1826; William G. Hunt,\* 1827; Moses Stevens,\* 1828; Wilkins Tannehill,\* 1829; William G. Dickinson,\* 1830; Hezekiah Ward,\* 1831; Hezekiah Ward,\* 1832; Jacob F. Foute,\* 1833; Moses Stevens,\* 1834; T. S. Alderson,\* 1835; Dyer Pearl,\* 1836; Benjamin S. Tappan,\* 1837; Benjamin S. Tappan, 1838; Moses Stevens,\* 1839; Edmund Dillahunt,\* 1840; Edmund Dillahunt,\* 1841; Henry F. Beaumont,\* 1842; James H. Thomas,\* 1843; Dyer Pearl,\* 1844; Dyer Pearl,\* 1845; Dyer Pearl,\* 1846; P. G. Stiver Perkins,\* 1847; P. G. Stiver Perkins,\* 1848; Charles A. Fuller,\* 1849; A. M. Hughes, 1850; A. M. Hughes, 1851; J. M. Gilbert, 1852; Edward W. Kenney,\* 1853; Edward Kenney,\* 1854; Solomon W. Cochran, 1855; Solomon W. Cochran, 1856; Robert I. Chester, 1857; Robert S. Moore,\* 1858; Robert S. Moore,\* 1859; W. H. Whiton, 1860; Jonathan Huntington,\* 1861; John Frizzell, 1865; Jonathan S. Dawson, 1866; Townsend A. Thomas, 1867; William Maxwell, 1868; John W. Hughes, 1869; William H. Armstrong, 1870; A. J. Wheeler,\* 1871; John W. Paxton,\* 1872; Joseph M. Anderson, 1873; Wilbur F. Foster, 1874; Algernon S. Currey, 1875; H. M. Aiken, 1876; John S. Pride, 1877; Benjamin F. Haller, 1878; Joe H. Bullock, 1879; Gideon R. Gwynne, 1880; W. E. Eastman, 1882; James D. Richardson, 1883; David J. Pierce, 1884; William S. Matthews, 1885; Bradford Nichol, 1886.

The following is a list of the present grand officers: Bradford Nichol, Nashville, Grand High Priest; John E. Pyott, Spring City, Deputy Grand High Priest; Lewis R. Eastman, Nashville, Grand King; N. F. Harrison, Germantown, Grand Scribe; N. S. Woodward, Knoxville, Grand Treasurer; John Frizzell, Nashville, Grand Secretary; Rev. H. A. Jones, Memphis, Grand Chaplain; Charles Buford, Pulaski, Grand Captain of the Host; J. W. N. Burkett, Jackson, Grand Principal Sojourner; John B. Garrett, Nashville, Grand Royal Arch Captain; James R. Crowe, Pulaski, Grand Master Third Veil; J. T. Williamson,

---

\*Deceased.

Columbia, Grand Master Second Veil; John H. Ferguson, Dayton, Grand Master First Veil; Ewin Burney, Nashville, Grand Sentinel.

The Grand Council of the order of High Priesthood for Tennessee was organized October 9, 1860, by Thomas Ware, of Kentucky, Grand President *pro tem*. The officers installed were Robert S. Moore, Grand President; John M. Morrill, Vice Grand President; Jonathan Huntington, Grand Chaplain; John Frizzell, Grand Treasurer, and John McClelland, Grand Recorder.

The following is a list of the Grand Presidents from the organization: Robert S. Moore, 1860; John McClelland, 1861; John S. Dashiell, 1864; John Frizzell, 1866; John Bell, 1867; John W. Paxton, 1868; J. M. Gilbert, 1869; John McClelland, 1870; Wilbur F. Foster, 1871; Wilbur F. Foster, 1872; A. J. Wheeler, 1873; Morton B. Howell, 1874; John B. Morris, 1875; George S. Blackie, 1876; E. Edmundson, 1877; Gideon R. Gwynne, 1878; Benjamin F. Haller, 1879; George S. Blackie, 1880; Henry M. Aiken, 1882; Bradford Nichol, 1883; Bradford Nichol, 1884; Bradford Nichol, 1885; D. J. Pierce, 1886.

October 12, 1859, the four commanderies of Knights Templar and appendant orders in Tennessee, working under charters from the Grand Encampment of the United States, assembled in Nashville for the purpose of organizing a Grand Commandery for Tennessee. Twenty-six Sir Knights were present. The officers chosen and installed were Charles A. Fuller, Grand Commander; A. M. Hughes, Deputy Grand Commander; Lucius J. Polk, Grand Generalissimo; M. Whitten, Grand Captain General; W. H. Horn, Grand Treasurer; W. H. Whiton, Grand Recorder, Jonathan Huntington, Grand Prelate; J. J. Worsham, Grand Senior Warden; A. S. Currey, Grand Junior Warden; Thomas McCulloch, Grand Standard Bearer; J. H. Devereux, Grand Sword Bearer; Henry Sheffield, Grand Warden; M. E. De Grove, Grand Sentinel. Annual meetings have since been held with the exception of three years during the war. The number of subordinate commanderies in 1885 was 14, with a membership of 813.

The following is a list of the Past Grand Commanders: Charles A. Fuller, Lucius J. Polk, J. J. Worsham, A. S. Underwood, John McClelland, John Frizzell, Dr. J. M. Towler, A. D. Sears, George S. Blackie, J. B. Palmer, George Mellersh, M. B. Howell, H. M. Aiken, W. R. Butler, E. R. T. Worsham, W. F. Foster, George C. Connor, Joseph H. Fussell, B. F. Haller, W. D. Robison, W. P. Robertson, G. R. Gwynne, J. B. Nicklin.

The Grand Commandery in 1886 assembled at Tullahoma and elected the following officers: Henry C. Hensley, Grand Commander; Charles

Mosby, Deputy Grand Commander; G. B. Wilson, Grand Generalissimo; W. C. Smith, Grand Captain General; Rev. J. J. Manker, Grand Prelate; Joseph H. Bullock, Grand Treasurer; W. F. Foster, Grand Recorder; N. S. Woodward, Grand Senior Warden; Dr. Robert Pillow, Grand Junior Warden; T. O. Morris, Grand Standard Bearer; H. C. Cullen, Grand Sword Bearer; D. J. Chandler, Grand Warden, and Ewin Burney, Grand Captain of the Guard.

The first lodge of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows was instituted in Nashville on the evening of June 1, 1839, and was known as Tennessee Lodge No. 1. This lodge is still in existence. The next year, 1840, a second lodge was organized at Nashville. The Grand Lodge of Tennessee was instituted under authority of a charter issued by the Grand Lodge of the United States August 10, 1841, by C. C. Trabue, Special Deputy Grand Sire. The first grand officers elected and installed were Timothy Kezer, Grand Master; R. A. Barnes, Deputy Grand Master; W. H. Calhoun, Grand Warden; William P. Hume, Grand Secretary; George R. Forsyth, Grand Treasurer. At the next meeting, August 24, the constitution and by-laws of the Grand Lodge of Ohio was adopted. New charters were granted to the two lodges already organized, and in October a charter was also granted to Columbia Lodge No. 3, the first instituted under authority of the Grand Lodge of Tennessee. On January 2, 1843, Grand Lodge Hall, over the postoffice, at the corner of Union and Cherry Streets, was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies. Soon after a committee was appointed to purchase the old Nashville theater, which was done at a cost of nearly \$10,000. In order to raise the necessary money to pay for the building and fit it up, an association was formed and incorporated by an act of the Legislature, under the name of the Odd Fellows Hall Association, with an authorized capital stock of \$20,000, divided into shares of \$25 each. Stock was taken by individuals and also by subordinate lodges. In January, 1850, the committee appointed to fit up the hall reported the work finished, and the entire cost of the building to be about \$30,000. This amount proved to be greater than the lodge could raise, and the following year the property was sold under a decree of the chancery court for \$9,500. This sale was set aside by the supreme court, and in March, 1853, the hall was sold to E. H. Childress and P. W. Maxey for \$12,350. The lodge still owed \$3,000, and they were obliged to sell other property to satisfy this debt. This, however, did not put an end to the financial difficulties, and in 1857 the indebtedness of the lodge amounted to over \$7,000. During the war many subordinate lodges were suspended, the Grand Lodge was cut off from communication with the Grand Lodge of the



United States, and the order throughout the State was badly disorganized. But within a few years after the cessation of hostilities prosperity returned, old lodges were revived and a large number of new ones instituted. In 1885 the number of subordinate lodges was 122, with a membership of 3,302. During the year benefits to the amount of \$12,599.78 were paid, and the total revenue from all sources was \$26,345.11. Since 1853 the Grand Lodge has owned no hall, but has held its meetings in the halls of subordinate lodges at various places, Nashville, Knoxville, Memphis and Chattanooga. The following is a list of the Grand Masters, with the year in which they were elected: Timothy Kezer, 1841; J. G. Harris, 1842; W. F. Tannehill, 1843; James R. Shelton, 1844; William H. Calhoun, 1845; W. S. McNairy, 1846; G. P. Smith, 1847; W. K. Poston, 1848; W. S. Howard, 1849; W. M. Blackmore, 1850; Robert Stark, 1851; George W. Day, 1852; Constantine Perkins, 1853; E. A. Raworth, 1854; George Robertson, 1855; E. D. Farnsworth, 1856; A. A. Barnes, 1857; Robert Hatton, 1858; Benjamin Johnson, 1859; M. D. Cardwell, 1860; J. D. Danbury, 1861; H. C. Hensley, 1862; E. D. Farnsworth, 1863; William Wood, 1864; M. C. Cotton, 1865; O. F. Prescott, 1866; William H. McConnell, 1867; Hervey Brown, 1868; M. R. Elliott, 1869; J. R. Prescott, 1870; James Rodgers, 1871; J. L. Weakley, 1872; A. M. Burney, 1873; H. T. Johnson, 1874; H. P. Sehorn, 1875; George B. Boyles, 1876; S. D. J. Lewis, 1877; Charles M. Carroll, 1878; E. G. Budd, 1879; R. D. Frayser, 1880; E. B. Mann, 1881; James H. Crichlow, 1882; C. F. Landis, 1883; James G. Aydelotte, 1884; Halbert B. Case, 1885.

The Grand Encampment of Tennessee was organized at Nashville July 21, 1847, by T. P. Shaffner, of Louisville, Ky. The first officers elected and installed were George W. Wilson, Grand Patriarch; Donald Cameron, Grand High Priest; N. E. Perkins, Grand Senior Warden; C. K. Clark, Grand Junior Warden; G. P. Smith, Grand Scribe; John Coltart, Grand Treasurer; C. G. Weller, Grand Inside Sentinel; Charles Smith, Grand Outside Sentinel. The constitution and by-laws of the Grand Encampment of Maine was adopted. At this time there were five subordinate encampments in the State, the first of which was Ridgely Encampment, No. 1, organized at Nashville. In 1849 the number of encampments had increased to ten, with a membership of eighty-three; in 1873 the encampments numbered twenty-nine, and the members 867. The present membership is about 300, divided among fifteen encampments.

The order of the Knights of Honor was introduced by the organization of Tennessee Lodge, No. 20, at Nashville, on May 6, 1874, with

a membership of fifteen. The Grand Lodge of Tennessee was organized in Nashville by Supreme Director Dr. A. E. Keys, of Mansfield, Ohio, July 3, 1875, at which time D. B. Gally was elected Grand Dictator, and W. H. Trafford Grand Reporter. The constitution and by-laws of the Supreme Lodge was adopted for the government of the Grand Lodge until a permanent constitution could be prepared, which was done at an adjourned meeting held in October, 1875. Since the organization of the first lodge in the State, the growth of the order has been steady. By January 1, 1878, the membership had reached 3,814; in 1880 it was 5,527, and in 1885, 6,858. The financial condition of the order has been equally prosperous.

During the yellow fever epidemic of 1878 much was done by the order to alleviate suffering. Dr. D. F. Goodyear, Grand Treasurer, of Memphis, with other members of the relief committee, remained in that city and distributed contributions, which were received from all parts of the State and of the United States, to the amount of nearly \$15,000. The number of deaths for that year was 167, of which 131 were caused by yellow fever. The amount of benefit for the year reached \$334,000.

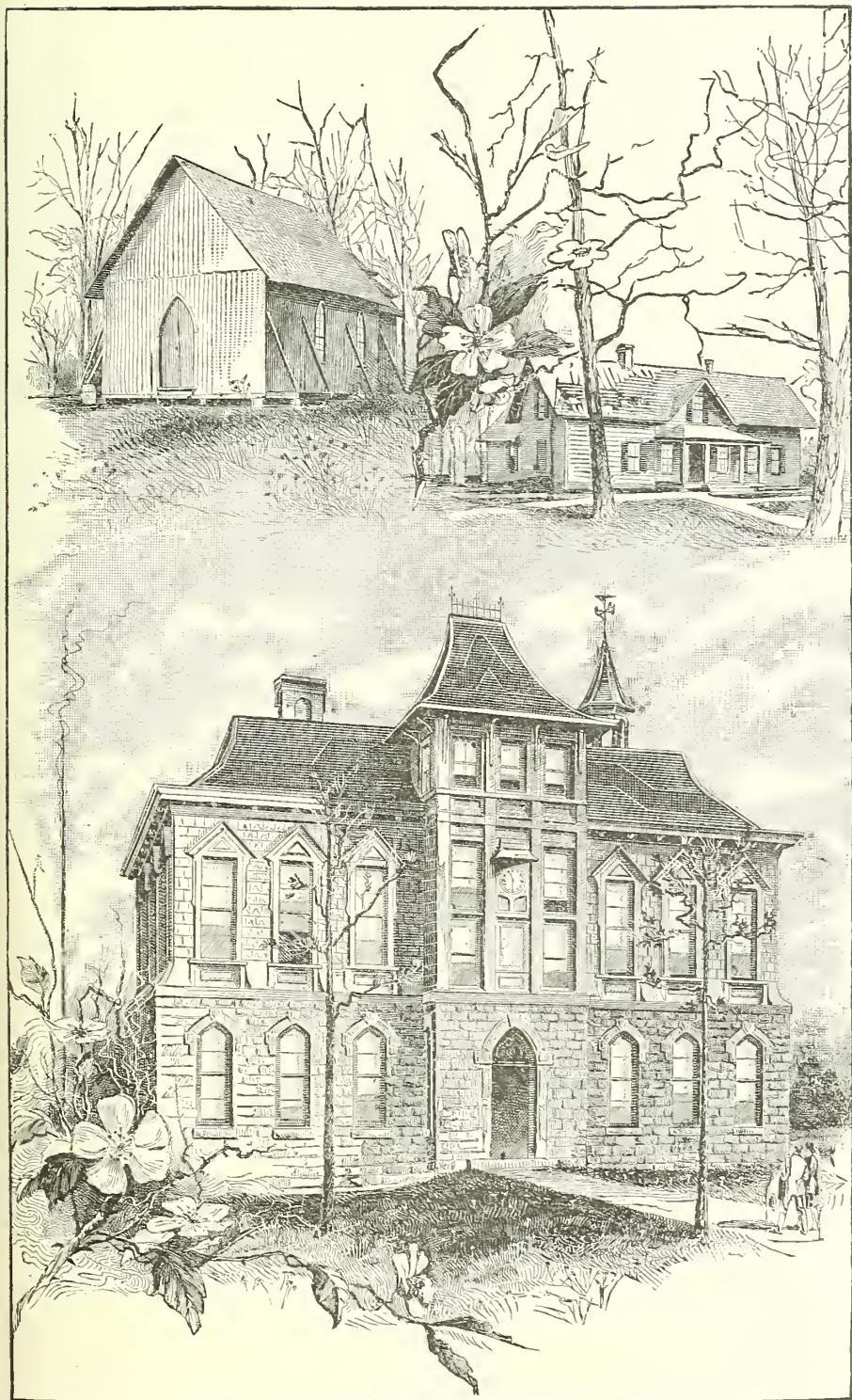
The following is a list of the Grand Dictators: D. B. Gally, of Nashville; L. A. Gratz, of Knoxville; John W. Childress, of Murfreesboro; E. Smithson, of Pulaski; J. Bunting, of Bristol; J. P. Young, of Memphis; W. E. Baskette, of Murfreesboro; Creed F. Bates, of Cleveland; Warner Moore, of Memphis; P. R. Albert, of Chattanooga, and others. The Grand Reporters have been W. H. Trafford, 1875-76; L. A. Gratz, 1877; Ben K. Pullen, 1878-83, and W. M. Johnson, 1884. Meetings of the Grand Lodge are held at Nashville in April of each year.

The Grand Lodge, Knights and Ladies of Honor of Tennessee, was organized in the hall of Harmony Lodge, at Nashville, April 7, 1879, under a dispensation from the Supreme Protector, by D. B. Gally. The organization was effected by the election and installation of the following officers: Ben K. Pullen, Past Grand Protector; D. B. Gally, Grand Protector; Mrs. Josephine Mackenzie, Grand Vice-Protector; George F. Fuller, Grand Secretary; George F. Hager, Grand Treasurer; A. A. Allison, Grand Chaplain; Mrs. Ada McCullough, Grand Guide; Miss Jessie M. Dorris, Grand Guardian; Mrs. D. J. Sanders, Grand Sentinel, and W. E. Ladd, W. H. Taylor and J. A. Kellogg, Trustees. The constitution of the Grand Lodge of Missouri was adopted, and Nashville was fixed as the permanent place of meeting. The first annual meeting was held April 12 and 13, at which time the Grand Protector reported that twelve new lodges had been established, making a total of thirty-eight lodges in the State, with a membership of about 1,200. At this session



FIRST. CHAPEL.

RESIDENCE OF MAJOR FAIRRANKS.



THOMPSON HALL, UNIVERSITY OF THE SOUTH.





Ben K. Pullen was elected Grand Protector, but refused to serve, and F. Smithson was chosen in his place. The latter failed to perform the duties devolving upon the office, and a called meeting was held September 30, 1880, to elect a Grand Protector to fill out the unexpired term. A. A. Allison, of Fidelia Lodge, No. 155, of Gallatin, was chosen to the office. A second special session of the Grand Lodge was held in Knights of Pythias Hall in Nashville, December 12 and 13, 1881.

After the reports of several committees, and that of the Grand Protector had been received, an animated discussion arose as to the powers of the Grand Lodge at this special session. The Grand Protector finally decided that any business offered could be transacted, and new officers were elected. D. B. Gally was chosen Grand Protector, and Mrs. E. E. De Pass, Grand Vice-Protector. The Secretary reported a total membership of about 1,500, distributed among forty-two working lodges. The first biennial session of the Grand Lodge was held April 2, 1883. But little except routine business was transacted. The Secretary reported forty-one lodges in working order, with an aggregate membership of 1,650. The Protector reported that up to that time there had been paid to the families of deceased members in Tennessee benefits to the amount of over \$80,000. At this meeting B. J. F. Owen was elected Grand Protector, and Mrs. J. E. Jordan, Grand Vice-Protector. April 13, 1885, the Grand Lodge convened in second biennial session at Nashville, and was opened in due form. The Grand Protector reported forty-five lodges in the State, with about 1,800 beneficiary members. He also reported that the State had drawn benefits to the amount of \$116,873.65, and paid in assessments \$73,908.15. After business of a miscellaneous character was transacted the following officers were elected: George E. Hawkins, Grand Protector; Mrs. Dosie Brooks, Grand Vice-Protector; George Fuller, Grand Secretary; R. A. Campbell, Grand Treasurer; Mrs. Olive Peacock, Grand Chaplain; Mrs. Josephine Mackenzie, Grand Guide; I. C. Garner, Grand Guardian, and J. T. Mackenzie, Grand Sentinel. W. L. Grigsby was elected representative to the Supreme Lodge, with W. R. Kendall as alternate. The lodge holds its next biennial session in April, 1887.

On May 9, 1876, fourteen ladies and gentlemen met in the city of Knoxville and resolved, after a preliminary discussion, to apply for a charter under the laws of Tennessee, that they might organize an order to be known and styled the United Order of the Golden Cross, together with provisions for the pecuniary relief of sick or distressed members, and the establishment of a benefit fund from which should be paid to the friends of deceased members a sum not to exceed \$2,000. The charter

was granted, and on July 4, 1876, the Supreme Commandery was organized. The first Subordinate Commandery organized was Peace No. 1, at Knoxville, on July 11. The order increased quite rapidly, and on May 10, 1877, a called meeting of the Supreme Commandery of the World was held at Knoxville for the purpose of organizing a Grand Commandery for the State of Tennessee. The members present were J. H. Morgan, Supreme Commander; Addie Wood, Supreme Vice-Commander; Isaac Emory, Supreme Prelate; D. H. Weaver, Supreme Keeper of Records; William Wood, Supreme Treasurer; R. A. Brown, Supreme Herald; C. J. Gochwend, Supreme Warden of the Inner Gate; E. W. Adkins, Supreme Warden of the Outside Gate; Harvey Clark, Supreme Post Commander; W. R. Cooper, Mary Adkins, Maggie P. Morgan, M. E. Weavers and A. M. Emory. An election of grand officers was held, which resulted as follows: E. E. Young, P. G. C.; A. J. Baird, G. C.; A. M. Emory, G. V. C.; S. H. Day, G. P.; George W. Henderson, G. K. of R.; E. W. Adkins, G. T.; J. A. Ruble, G. H.; Addie Wood, G. W. I. G.; W. J. Fagan, G. W. O. G. J. C. Flanders was elected Representative to the Supreme Commandery for one year, and George B. Staddan for two years. The whole number of third degree members reported at this time was 317. Both the first and second annual sessions of the Supreme Commandery were held in Knoxville, but the growth of the order was rapid in the other States, and the third session was held at Washington, D. C. The Grand Commandery held its first annual meeting in Cleveland, Tenn., on April 16, 1878, at which time A. J. Baird was chosen Grand Commander, and Addie Wood, Grand Vice-Commander. Seven new lodges were organized during the preceding year, which increased the membership to 598. The second annual session and all succeeding ones have been held at Nashville. At the meeting in 1880 it was decided to hold biennial instead of annual sessions, and accordingly the next convention of the Grand Lodge occurred on April 18, 1882. Two sessions have since been held. The Grand Commanders elected since 1878 have been S. H. Day, 1879; J. H. W. Jones, 1880; R. G. Rothrock, 1882; C. S. McKenna, 1884 and R. A. Campbell, 1886. The other officers at present are E. J. Roach, G. V. C.; W. W. Ownby, G. P.; George B. Staddan, G. K. of R.; E. W. Adkins, G. T.; Belle McMurray, G. H.; J. L. Webb, G. W. I. G.; D. S. Wright, G. W. O. G. The membership in 1880 was 766; in 1882, 1,036; and on January 1, 1884, 1,114. The influence of this order is always for good, and no person not pledged to total abstinence from all intoxicating liquors is admitted to membership.

The order of the Knights of Pythias was introduced by the establishment of Holston Lodge, No. 1, at Knoxville, Tenn., in March, 1872.



Soon after lodges were established at Chattanooga, Nashville, Memphis, and other points throughout the State. The Grand Lodge was organized at Nashville, April 2, 1872, by Supreme Chancellor, Samuel Read, of New Jersey. There were present representatives from six lodges: Holston Lodge, No. 1, of Knoxville; Damon Lodge, No. 2, of Chattanooga; Myrtle Lodge, No. 3, of Nashville; Bayard Lodge, No. 4, of Murfreesboro; Tennessee Lodge, No. 5, and Memphis Lodge, No. 6, both of Memphis. The first Grand Chancellor was Calvin McCorkle, of Knoxville. The representatives to the Supreme Lodge elected at the same time are W. Brice Thompson, of Nashville, and W. R. Butler, of Murfreesboro. Since the organization of the Grand Lodge the chancellors have been T. S. Jukes, of Memphis; Alexander Allison, of Knoxville; W. P. Robertson, of Jackson; J. J. Atkins, of Knoxville; B. H. Owen, of Clarksville; H. S. Reynolds, of Memphis; R. L. C. White, of Lebanon; E. S. Mallory, of Jackson; R. J. Wheeler, of Nashville; W. C. Caldwell, of Trenton; W. R. Carlile, of Chattanooga; George S. Seay, of Gallatin; L. D. McCord, of Pulaski, and M. M. Niel, of Trenton, the present incumbent.

H. S. Reynolds, was chairman of K. of P. Relief Committee at Memphis during the yellow fever epidemic of 1878, and remained in the city, discharging his duties, until he fell ill and died of the disease. In recognition of his noble work and sacrifice of his life the Supreme Lodge of the World, by special dispensation, placed his name on the roll of Past Grand Chancellors in the following words: "The name of Brother Reynolds is placed upon the list of Past Grand Chancellors, though he died during his term as Grand Chancellor; but he died nobly at his post of duty, and immortalized his name in the annals of Pythian Knighthood."

There are at present twenty-six lodges in the State, with an aggregate membership of 2,012. Financially the order is in excellent condition, there being on hand in the treasuries of subordinate lodges on December 31, 1885, the amount of \$5,543.64 cash, while the value of lodge furniture and real estate is estimated at \$21,597. The Grand officers, elected at Clarksville, in May 1886, are as follows: Sitting Past Grand Chancellor, George E. Seay, of Gallatin; Grand Chancellor, M. M. Neil, of Trenton; Grand Vice-Chancellor, Henry W. Morgan, of Nashville; Grand Prelate, G. B. Wilson, of Clarksville; Grand Keeper and Recorder of Seals, R. L. C. White, of Lebanon; Grand Master of Exchequer, W. A. Wade, of Milan; Grand Master of Arms, T. C. Latimore, of Chattanooga; Grand Inner Guard, E. L. Bullock, of Jackson; Grand Outer Guard, W. G. Sadler, of Nashville; and representatives to the Supreme Lodge, George E. Seay, of Gallatin, and R. L. C. White, of Lebanon.

The Grand Council of the American Legion of Honor was organized at Nashville, August 3, 1882, by Deputy Supreme Commander Michael Brooks. Past Commanders from ten councils throughout the State were present, and the following Grand officers were elected: George F. Hager, Past Grand Commander, Nashville; S. H. Day, Grand Commander, Cleveland; George F. Fuller, Grand Vice-Commander, Nashville; W. Z. Mitchell, Grand Orator, Memphis; Frank Winship, Grand Secretary, Pulaski; Frank A. Moses, Grand Treasurer, Knoxville; J. Radomsky, Grand Guide, Nashville; E. G. Buford, Grand Sentry, Pulaski; W. Z. Mitchell, George F. Hager and Julius Ochs, Grand Trustees. George F. Hager was also chosen representative to the Supreme Council.

The growth of this order in Tennessee as in other States, has been rapid, and owing to its careful and economical management it is in a splendid condition financially. There are now in the State sixteen subordinate councils with a membership of about 900. The Grand Council now holds biennial sessions. The following are the present officers: George F. Hager, Grand Commander, Nashville; Joseph Wassaman, Grand Vice-Commander, Chattanooga; W. Z. Mitchell, Grand Orator, Memphis; Alexander Allison, Past Grand Commander, Knoxville; F. C. Richmond, Grand Secretary, Knoxville; F. A. Moses, Grand Treasurer, Knoxville; John T. Rogers, Grand Guide, Cleveland; Samuel Strauss, Grand Chaplain, Chattanooga; Henry Benzing, Grand Warden, Nashville; L. Williams, Grand Sentry, Cleveland. W. Z. Mitchell, Memphis; John B. Everitt, Nashville; Henry Benzing, Nashville, Grand Trustees.

The Ancient Order of United Workmen originated in Meadville, Penn., in October, 1868. The first lodge organized in Tennessee was Tennessee Lodge, No. 2, instituted at Nashville, November 26, 1876. When this lodge was organized it was supposed that Lodge No. 1 had been formed at Memphis, but this was found to be a mistake, and consequently there has been no lodge of that number in the State. On February 22, 1877, representatives from six subordinate lodges met in Nashville, and organized a Grand Lodge with the following officers: Dr. G. Schiff, Past Grand Master Workman; John W. Childress, Grand Master Workman; John M. Brooks, Grand Foreman; D. W. Hughes, Grand Overseer; Thomas H. Everett, Grand Recorder; J. M. Barnes, Grand Receiver; P. R. Albert, Grand Guide; C. A. Thompson, Grand Watchman; Dr. G. Schiff, John Frizzell and John W. Childress, Supreme Representatives. According to the provisions of the constitution adopted, the meetings of the Grand Lodge are held at Nashville on the third Tuesday in January. Annual sessions were held until 1883, when biennial sessions were substituted. In 1878 the number of subordinate lodges was thirteen, with a

membership of 742. There are now in the State fifty-four lodges and 1,900 members. The A. O. U. W. is said to be the oldest beneficiary secret society in this country. It embraces in its membership men of every vocation, profession and occupation, employes and employers, workers of all classes. It has no connection with any religious sect or political party, but is designed to promote mental and social improvement and mutual assistance. The amount paid in benefits in Tennessee since its introduction into the State is over \$562,000.

The order of Royal Arcanum originated in Massachusetts, where the Supreme Council was incorporated November 5, 1877. The first council established in Tennessee was Nashville Council, No. 98, organized May 22, 1878, with twenty-eight charter members. During the next eighteen months councils were organized at Memphis, Knoxville, Chattanooga, Tracy City, Shelbyville, Edgefield, South Nashville, and a second lodge in Nashville. On February 20, 1878, official notice was received that a dispensation to form a Grand Council of the Royal Arcanum for the State would be granted upon the assembling of a sufficient number of Past Regents to constitute the same at Pythian Hall, Nashville, on March 9, following. In accordance with this notice a meeting was held at which were present twelve Past Regents, representing seven subordinate councils. The following officers were elected: A. B. Tavel, Grand Regent; W. Z. Mitchell, Grand Vice-Regent; A. M. Shook, Grand Orator; J. B. Everett, Past Grand Regent; I. K. Chase, Grand Secretary; T. H. Everett, Grand Treasurer; R. A. Campbell, Grand Chaplain; W. C. Dibrell, Grand Guide; T. M. Schleier, Grand Warden; W. P. Phillips, Grand Sentry. Supreme Regent J. M. Swain then proceeded at once to install the Grand officers, after which he pronounced the Grand Council legally instituted. A constitution was adopted, and the first session was closed. Since that time meetings of the Grand Council have been held in Nashville in March of each year. Although the growth of the order in the State has not been rapid, it has been remarkably well managed, and is now one of the most prosperous of the beneficiary societies. The number of members in Tennessee January 1, 1880, was 549. January 1, 1886, it was 1,106, distributed among twelve subordinate councils. Since that time Hermitage Council has been organized in North Nashville, with twenty-three charter members. Of the Widows' and Ophans' Benefit Fund there was received, in the six years from 1880 to 1885 inclusive, \$105,383.01, while for the same period there was disbursed \$168,000.

The following have been the Grand Regents elected since the first meeting: W. Z. Mitchell, 1881; Charles Mitchell, 1882; L. A. Gratz,



1883; Joseph Towler, 1884; H. W. Morgan, 1885; David Douglas, 1886. The Grand Secretary, up to 1885, was Irvine K. Chase. Since that time the office has been filled by Thomas Taylor.

On the 27th of February, 1882, George H. Thomas Post, No. 1, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized at Nashville. At the outset the Post was very weak, numbering only sixteen charter members. May 1, 1883, the Provisional Department of Tennessee and Georgia was formed, with four posts and a membership of 136. The posts at that time, besides the one mentioned, were Lookout, No. 2, at Chattanooga; Memphis, No. 3, and Lincoln, No. 4, at Nashville. The Department of Tennessee and Georgia, comprising the States of Tennessee, Georgia and Alabama, was organized February 26, 1884, under special order No. 4, from national headquarters. The following were the department officers elected: Department Commander, Edward S. Jones, Post 1; S. V. Department Commander, S. S. Garrett, Post 3; J. V. Department Commander, Newton T. Beal, Post 17; Medical Director, Frank Weise, Post 1; Department Chaplain, W. J. Smith, Post 3; Assistant Adjutant-General, James Chamberlin, Post 1; Acting Assistant Adjutant-General, Charles W. Norwood, Post 2; Assistant Quartermaster-General, Henry Trauernicht, Post 1; Department Inspector, Henry R. Hinkle, Post 6; Judge Advocate, L. A. Gratz, Post 14; Chief Mustering Officer, J. T. Wolverton, Post 7; Council of Administration, Edward M. Main, Post 1; T. B. Edgington, Post 3; Peter Martin, Post 4; A. B. Wilson, Post 8; Samuel Long, Post 17. The first annual encampment was held at Chattanooga February 26 and 27, 1885, at which time the Department Commander reported twenty-eight posts on the rolls, numbering 989 members in good standing. The department now numbers fifty posts, having an aggregate membership of nearly 2,000.

## CHAPTER XI.

STATE INSTITUTIONS—EARLY MANAGEMENT OF THE FINANCES—THE CREATION OF THE STATE DEBT—THE BONDS REFUNDED—THE QUESTION OF REPUDIATION—MEASURES TO LIQUIDATE THE INDEBTEDNESS—THE STATE BANKS—THE INTERNAL IMPROVEMENT ERA—STATE RAILROAD STOCK—IMPROVEMENT OF NAVIGABLE WATER-COURSES—THE TURNPIKE COMPANIES—ILLUSTRATIVE RECEIPTS AND DISBURSEMENTS—INTERNAL RAILWAY PROJECTS—THE INTRODUCTION OF STEAM WATER-CRAFT—CATALOG OF STATE OFFICERS—ELECTION RETURNS—FORMATION OF COUNTIES—POPULATION BY DECADES—STATISTICS, ETC.

HAD it been possible to maintain the primitive simplicity of the early government, little difficulty would have arisen concerning its financial management. The expenditures and receipts were very evenly balanced, the former consisting mainly in defraying the expenses of legislation. In the Territorial Assembly of 1794 Mr. Donelson, from the committee appointed to estimate the expenses for that year, reported the probable expenditures at \$2,390. The rates of taxation, as fixed at this session, were  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents on each white poll; 50 cents on each black poll; \$1 for each town lot, and 25 cents on each 100 acres of land. The Council had strongly urged that a tax of  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents upon land was sufficient, but after considerable discussion, and several offers to compromise on their part, they were forced to yield to the House, which stood firm for the rate fixed.

The following is a detailed account of the expenses of the Legislative Council and House of Representatives for the session beginning August 25, 1794, and ending September 30, 1794. The per diem allowance for each member and each clerk was \$2.50, and for each door keeper \$1.75. All were allowed for ferriages, and \$2.50 for each twenty-five miles of travel.

## LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL.

Griffith Rutherford, 37 days, 322 miles, 4 ferries.....	\$125 70
John Sevier, 37 days, 200 miles, 2 ferries.....	112 16 $\frac{3}{4}$
Stockley Donelson, 37 days, 130 miles, 4 ferries.....	105 83 $\frac{3}{4}$
James Winchester, 15 days, 312 miles, 4 ferries.....	69 70
Parmenas Taylor, 37 days, 102 miles, 2 ferries.....	102 86 $\frac{3}{4}$
G. Roulstone, clerk, 37 days.....	92 50
Stationery and engrossing.....	47 50
William Maclin, clerk, 37 days, 380 miles, 4 ferries.....	131 50
Stationery and engrossing.....	47 50
Christopher Shoat, doorkeeper, 37 days.....	64 75
Thomas Bounds, doorkeeper, 34 days, 12 miles.....	60 70
John Stone, house rent.....	10 00

---

\$970 71 $\frac{3}{4}$

## HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES.

David Wilson, 37 days, 310 miles, 4 ferries.....	\$124 00
James White, 37 days, 370 miles, 4 ferries.....	130 00
James Ford, 37 days, 420 miles, 4 ferries.....	135 00
William Cocke, 17 days, 100 miles, 2 ferries.....	52 33½
Joseph McMinn, 37 days, 170 miles, 2 ferries.....	109 83½
George Rutledge, 37 days, 240 miles, 2 ferries.....	116 83½
Joseph Hardin, 37 days, 150 miles, 2 ferries.....	107 60½
Leroy Taylor, 35 days, 200 miles, 2 ferries.....	107 66½
John Tipton, 26 days, 218 miles, 2 ferries.....	86 91½
George Doherty, 37 days, 60 miles, 2 ferries.....	98 66½
Samuel Wear, 37 days, 60 miles, 2 ferries.....	98,66½
Alexander Kelly, 30 days, 25 miles, 2 ferries....	77 66½
John Baird, 31 days, 30 miles.....	80 50
H. Lacy, clerk, 20 days, 100 miles, 2 ferries.....	60 33½
B. Harle, clerk, 37 days, 150 miles, 2 ferries.....	107 66½
W. L. Lovely, clerk, 14 days, 200 miles, 2 ferries.....	55 66½
Richard Mynat, doorkeeper, 37 days, 40 miles.....	68 75
Stationery and engrossing.....	102 00
James White, house rent.....	5 00
	<hr/>
	\$1,700 16½

The tax levy made at this session proved amply sufficient. The joint committee appointed to settle with the treasurer of Washington and Hamilton Districts for the following year reported the finances to be in a very flattering condition.

"Your committee beg leave to observe that the moneys arising from the tax levied by the last General Assembly very much exceeded their most sanguine expectations, and that such will be the state of the treasury department, that the next tax to be levied may be very much lessened, and then be fully commensurate and adequate to defray every expenditure and necessary contingency of our government."

At that time the drawing of lotteries was not an uncommon mode of raising money for the erection of public buildings and the support of public enterprises of all kinds. There seems to have been no thought of any immoral tendency in the promotion of these lotteries, as schools and churches frequently instituted them. The following is taken from the journal of the Assembly of 1794: "A bill to authorize the drawing of a lottery in the District of Mero for raising a fund for erecting a district gaol and stocks in Nashville; endorsed, read the third time, and passed."

One of the first acts passed after the organization of the State government was that establishing a treasury for the districts of Washington and Hamilton, and another for Mero District. The treasurer of Mero District was ordered to turn over to the other treasury each year all the money remaining on hand, within six days after the meeting of the General Assembly. This plan was followed until the seat of government



was changed. While located at Nashville or Murfreesboro the transfer of funds was reversed, and the treasurer of East Tennessee reported to the treasurer of the other division of the State. After the settlement of West Tennessee another treasury was established, and the balance of money remaining on hand in each of the other districts at the end of the year was delivered to the treasurer of Middle Tennessee. In 1836 the three treasuries were consolidated, and the first State treasurer elected. At the same time the office of comptroller was created.

The following is the report of the Committee on Finance at the first General Assembly in 1796:

Receipts by the treasurer of Washington and Hamilton Districts.....	\$6,380 63	
Disbursements.....	5,838 03	
Balance in the treasury.....		\$ 542 60
Receipts by the treasurer of Mero District.....	\$4,900 37 $\frac{5}{16}$	
Disbursements.....	2,297 33 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Balance in the treasury.....		\$2,603 03 $\frac{2}{16}$
Whole amount on hand.....		\$3,145 63 $\frac{2}{16}$

The first treasurer of Mero District was Howell Tatum; of the districts of Hamilton and Washington, Landon Carter. The expenses of the first General Assembly were \$2,351.70. For the two years 1805 and 1806 the total amount of revenue collected was \$36,181.72. The disbursements for the same period were \$30,110.18, and the balance remaining in the treasury was \$8,253.19. For the years 1817 and 1818 the receipts were \$118,008.17 $\frac{1}{2}$ , the disbursements \$62,689.31, and the balance remaining in the treasury \$83,183.35 $\frac{1}{2}$ . These amounts do not include the money set apart for the use of school and academies. In the settlement for 1825-26 an item of \$3,826.50 is charged for the expenses of Gen. Lafayette, a large amount for such a purpose at that time, showing that the State entertained the French hero of the Revolution in a fitting manner. The following is an itemized account of the expenditures for the years 1829 and 1830:

Legislature.....	\$40,965 20
Executive.....	5,687 50
Judges.....	46,004 60
Attorney-general.....	1,909 00
Militia.....	708 88
Public printing.....	12,445 18
Criminal prosecutions.....	23,041 86
County Commissioners.....	1,912 27
Sheriffs' releases.....	3,343 98
Treasurers' commissson.....	5,374 74
Enumeration.....	31 86

Solicitors.....	\$3,518 05
Revenue paid out.....	3,487 53
Wolf scalps.....	2,676 00
Miscellaneous.....	18,171 20
	<hr/>
	\$169,277 85

The receipts for the same period were.....\$175,986 52

Up to this time the government had been economically administered, and was free from debt. But it seems impossible for any State to emerge from the simplicity of the pioneer organization to the full development of a great commonwealth without incurring liabilities beyond its power to meet at the time they are incurred, and it requires the wisest and most careful management not to overstep the limits beyond which it is impossible to recover. Tennessee has been peculiarly unfortunate in this regard. Drawn into the extravagant schemes of the internal improvement era, she was almost overwhelmed by the losses and disasters of the civil war, and still further embarrassed by the rash and inconsiderate legislation of the reconstruction period; and it is only during the present administration that the question, how to preserve the honor and credit of the State, and yet work no hardship to the taxpayer, seems to have been solved.

The first indebtedness of the State was incurred in 1833, when \$500,000 of bonds were issued for stock in the Union Bank. Under the acts providing for internal improvements and the State Bank the bonded indebtedness rapidly increased. In his message to the Legislature in October, 1839, Gov. Polk presents the following statement of the financial condition of the State: "The whole public debt, exclusive of the internal improvement bonds authorized to be issued by the last General Assembly, and exclusive of the State's portion of the Federal revenue held on deposit, amounts only to the sum of \$1,763,666.62½. To meet this the State owns \$646,600 of stock in the Union Bank, \$1,000,000 in the Bank of Tennessee, and \$263,666.66⅔ in internal improvement companies, chartered previous to the last session of the General Assembly. The internal improvement bonds which have been issued under the act of the last General Assembly bearing an interest of 5 per cent, amount to \$899,580, making the whole public debt of the State of every description, exclusive of the Federal surplus revenue which she holds on deposit, \$2,666,166.66⅔." The amount of the surplus revenue received by the State was \$1,353,209.55, none of which was ever returned to the General Government.

The repeal of the internal improvement laws in 1840 stopped the issue of bonds to new companies, but as it did not interfere with work already begun bonds to a considerable amount were afterward issued

under those laws, so that the liabilities of the State had increased by October, 1843, to \$3,269,416.66. During the next eight years the growth of the debt was not so great. The only appropriations made except for the necessary expenses of the government, were for the erection of the capitol, two issues of bonds being made under acts of 1848 and 1850. The comptroller's report for 1851 shows the total indebtedness to be \$3,651,856.66, an increase of less than \$400,000 in eight years.

The General Assembly of 1851-52 passed an act directing the Governor to purchase, for the State, 500 acres of land belonging to the estate of Andrew Jackson, including the mansion and tomb. This was accordingly done at a cost of \$48,000, for which bonds were issued. During the same year \$30,000 of bonds were also issued to the agricultural bureau. Additional capitol bonds were issued in 1852, 1854, 1856 and 1860, making the entire amount for that purpose, \$866,000. These bonds with the previous issues, which had not been taken up or canceled, amounted to \$3,896,606.06, which constituted what was known as "the State debt proper," at the opening of the war. This debt bore an annual interest of \$212,388.25. At the same time the bonds loaned and endorsed to the various railroad companies under the internal improvement system, established by the Legislature of 1851-52, amounted to \$13,959,000, the interest upon which was paid by the companies. This was the financial condition of the State in 1861. There were issued to railroads immediately after the war, bonds to the amount of \$14,513,000, making the entire liabilities of the State, including unpaid interest, over \$35,000,000. The settlement of this enormous debt from that time until the present has been paramount to all other questions of legislation. For the history of this subject since the war, this volume is largely indebted to the very thorough *resume* by Gov. Bate in his message to the Legislature of 1883. The first act to provide for the funding of the State's indebtedness was passed November 23, 1865. It authorized and instructed the governor to issue 6 per cent coupon bonds to an amount sufficient to pay off all the bonds and interest past due as well as that to fall due during the two following years. Under this act there were funded \$4,941,000 of bonds. A similar act passed in 1868 provided for the funding of bonds maturing during the years 1868, 1869 and 1870, and under it were issued \$2,200,000 of bonds bearing 6 per cent interest. Under an act of 1852 and its amendments which provided for the substitution of coupon bonds for those without coupons, there were issued \$697,000 of bonds known as "renewals."

In 1873 the Legislature passed another act known as "the funding act" under which various classes and kinds of bonds were funded, and



bonds issued for past due interest upon them amounting to \$6,641,000. So objectionable was this to the people that at the ensuing Legislature all provisions for the payment of interest under this act were repealed.

An act to fund the State debt in bonds at 100 cents on the dollar and 3 per cent annual interest, was passed by the Forty-second General Assembly, and became a law on April 6, 1881. Before this was in full operation it was thrown into the courts by injunction, and finally declared by the supreme court unconstitutional and void; hence no bonds were issued under this act. The same General Assembly was convened in a third extraordinary session, and its labors during this extra session on May 19, 1882, resulted in the passage of what is known as the "60-6 act," authorizing the issue of bonds at the rate of 60 cents on the dollar for the old bonds and the past due interest upon them, payable in thirty years, bearing interest as follows: The first two years 3 per cent; the next two years 4 per cent; then 5 per cent for two years and 6 per cent for the remainder of the time. It was also enacted that the funding should cease after January 1, 1883, leaving all bonds not so funded unprovided for. The act went into effect immediately after its passage, and before it expired by limitation there had been funded under its provisions \$13,706,812.77, nearly one-third of which was made up of coupons. None of these five funding acts were satisfactory to both the people and the creditors. During the entire discussion of this subject there has been much difference of opinion as to the State's moral and legal obligation to pay the debt in full. Many have held that the State should pay the debt in full without regard to the manner in which it was contracted. The sentiments of these persons are expressed by Gov. Porter in a message to the Legislature:

"The settlement of this debt is paramount to all questions of legislation that can engage the attention of the General Assembly; it involves the honor and good name of the State, the credit and honor of every one of its citizens. It is a liability that was voluntarily contracted, and whether it was wisely created or not cannot now be a question. I hold and have always believed that in the light of moral and legal duty, as a question of commercial honor and State pride, the best settlement of the debt for Tennessee would be to pay the entire debt according to the terms of the contract."

Gov. Hawkins expresses the same opinion. He says: "I am free to declare that to my mind there can be no well founded question as to the moral and legal obligation of the State for the ultimate payment of the bonds." A large part of those who entertained no doubts as to the validity of the entire debt considered its payment in full an impossibility,

and that taking into consideration the great loss in revenue to the State occasioned by the war, it would be no dishonor to make the best terms possible with the owners of the bonds. This class in general supported the "60-6 act," and considered it an equitable settlement of the debt.

Others held that the bonds issued to railroad companies, under the act of 1852, formed no part of the State's liabilities, and that the owners of the bonds should look to the companies for their payment.

Another class, and the one which was in the majority, held that the liabilities of the State should be resolved into two parts. The "State debt proper," and the railroad debt for which the State had pledged its "faith and credit." They asserted that the "State debt proper" in 1882 consisted of the following bonds:

Capitol bonds.....	\$493,000
Hermitage bonds.....	35,000
Agricultural Bureau bonds.....	18,000
Union Bank bonds.....	125,000
Bank of Tennessee bonds.....	214,000
Bonds issued to various turnpike companies.....	741,000
Hiwassee Railroad bonds.....	280,000
East Tennessee and Georgia Railroad bonds.....	144,000
Memphis & La Grange Railroad bonds.....	68,000
Total.....	<u>\$2,118,000</u>

These bonds with the unpaid interest, exclusive of the interest which accrued from April 12, 1861, to May 26, 1865, it was held, should be funded dollar for dollar, and that the new bonds should bear the same rate of interest which the original bonds surrendered bore.

It was contended that the State, as a matter of right and equity, was entitled to a large abatement of the remainder of the debt. The grounds for this were that it was never intended that the State would be called upon to pay the bonds issued to railroad companies; that a large part of those bonds were issued "by authority of legislative acts passed and enforced immediately after the war, and by Legislatures elected at a time when more than one-half, if not three-fourths of all the citizens of Tennessee who had been voters were disfranchised;" and that the purchasers of the bonds so issued on account of this irregularity in State government at the time of their issuance and sale bought them at greatly reduced prices. It was therefore considered equitable to creditors and the State alike to fund this part of the debt with the unpaid interest, exclusive of that which accrued during the war. 50 cents on the dollar and 3 per cent interest. The only exception was that the bonds, no matter of what issue, held by literary, educational, and charitable institutions; also those owned by Mrs. James K. Polk should be funded dollar for dollar at 6 per cent interest.

This plan of settlement was embodied in the platform adopted by the Democratic State Convention in June, 1882. Upon that platform the canvass was made, and at the ensuing election a large majority of the votes were cast in its favor. Thus sanctioned by the people the Governor reviewed the plan in his message to the Legislature, and a bill in accordance with its provisions was passed March 15, 1883. At that time, according to the closest calculation, the entire indebtedness of the State including principal and interest amounted to \$28,786,066.39. Of this sum the State debt proper bonds and other bonds to be funded at 6 per cent made up \$2,783,150, leaving \$26,002,916.39 to be funded at 50 cents on the dollar and 3 per cent interest. This makes the total bonded indebtedness of the State,\* under operation of the act of 1883, about \$15,784,608.19. The funding board consisting of the governor, comptroller and treasurer began its work in July, 1883, and on March 8, 1886, bonds to the amount of about \$19,000,000 had been funded.

Since this plan of settlement is stamped with the approval of the majority of the citizens and taxpayers, and as the progress of funding evidences the acquiescence of the creditors of the State, it is probable that the question has been definitely settled. Should all the bonds be presented for funding, the State will ultimately have to pay \$492,399 interest annually. The decisions of the courts making the State liable for the payment of the notes of the old Bank of Tennessee have added nearly \$1,000,000 to the debt within the past two years. An act of the Legislature of 1883 provides for the issue of treasury certificates to take the place of bank notes. It also directs that \$200,000 of these certificates should be taken up annually in the payment of taxes. No steps have yet been taken toward paying the bonded indebtedness, but it will undoubtedly be a question for next Legislature. The bonds issued under the funding act of 1883 are made payable in thirty years and redeemable at the pleasure of the State. With a continuation of the present prosperous and healthy growth, and with wise and economical management of the government, the State, at the expiration of the thirty years, will have no debt to refund.

After the passage of the ordinance of secession, in May 6, 1861, the Governor was authorized to issue \$5,000,000 of bonds bearing 8 per cent interest payable in ten years. Only two-fifths of these bonds were sold, the remaining three-fifths being held as contingent, subject to the orders of the Governor and the Military and Financial Boards. The following month the act was amended and the Governor authorized to issue treasury notes in denominations of from \$5 to \$100 bearing 6 per cent interest in lieu of the \$3,000,000 of bonds.

---

\*Gov. Bate. Message of January 12, 1885.



The first bank in which the State became a stockholder was incorporated by an act of the General Assembly, November 20, 1811, under the name of the "President, Directors and Company of the Bank of the State of Tennessee." The charter provided that the capital stock should not exceed \$400,000, divided into shares of \$50 each. Subscriptions for stock were opened on January 1, 1812, in Knoxville, and in the following counties: Sullivan, Carter, Washington, Greene, Cocke, Jefferson, Hawkins, Sevier, Blount, Grainger, Claiborne, Anderson, Campbell, Roane, Rhea and Bledsoe, to each of which were assigned 440 shares. The State became a stockholder to the amount of \$20,000, but reserved the right to withdraw at the end of ten years. The subscriptions were payable in gold or silver, and divided into eight equal installments. As soon as \$25,000 was paid in the stockholders met in Knoxville and elected officers, except one director, who was named by the governor.

The main bank was located at Knoxville, with branches in Clarksville, Columbia and Jonesboro. No notes of less denomination than \$5 could be issued until 1815, when the limit was reduced to \$1. The bank was chartered for a period of thirty years, but continued only until 1828, when it began to close up its affairs, which was accomplished about three years later.

During the year 1820 the people of Tennessee, in common with those of the other Western States, experienced their first financial panic, and so disastrous were the consequences that Gov. McMinn convened the Legislature in extra session to provide some means of relief. Accordingly, on July 26 of that year, an act was passed "to establish a bank of the State of Tennessee, for the purpose of relieving the distresses of the community, and improving the revenues of the State." The capital stock was fixed at \$1,000,000, in bills payable to order or bearer, to be issued on the credit and security of the borrower, and the whole to be warranted by the State on the proceeds of the sales of public lands. The treasurers of East and West Tennessee were ordered to deposit all the public moneys in the bank, and the governor was authorized to issue stock bearing 6 per cent interest, to an amount not exceeding \$250,000. A branch bank was established at Knoxville, to which was allowed four-tenths of the capital stock. An agency was also established in each county in the State formed previous to the year 1819. The president and directors, ten in number, were elected on a joint ballot of the Legislature. The officers were instructed to put the bank into operation by the 15th of the next October, and to issue \$500,000 in bills of denominations of not less than \$5 nor more than \$100. Provision was afterward made for the issue of \$75,000 in fractional notes. According to

the charter either the Nashville Bank or the bank at Knoxville, or both, together with their branches, could consolidate and incorporate themselves with the State bank, but this they were unwilling to do.

The bank began business at the appointed time, and at first seemed to meet the expectations of its founders, but its capital having been distributed over the State, large amounts were lost by the defalcations of the county agents, and to add still further to its embarrassment, the cashier of the main bank, Joel Parrish, in 1832, was found to have permitted overdrafts to the amount of about \$80,000, the greater part of which was lost. On account of the number of branches, or agencies, this bank was sometimes referred to as the "Saddle Bags Bank." Gov. Carroll, in his message to the Legislature in 1833, discussed the subject at considerable length, and advised the closing of the bank, wisely adding that "the establishment of banks for the purpose of relieving the people from pecuniary distress, is, in most cases, ruinous to those who avail themselves of such relief."

In conformity with the recommendation of the Governor, the Legislature, during the session, passed an act abolishing the bank, and providing that its funds should be deposited in the Union Bank, then just incorporated. The capital stock of the latter bank was limited to \$3,000,000, of which the State subscribed \$500,000, in her own bonds, due in fifteen, twenty, twenty-five and thirty years, bearing 5 per cent interest. In consideration of this support the bank agreed to pay annually to the State a bonus of one-half of 1 per cent on the capital stock paid in. The bank began business March 4, 1833, and from that time until the civil war was one of the leading monetary institutions of Tennessee. Its stock was mainly held by Eastern capitalists, over 16,000 shares having been taken in Philadelphia.

In 1846 the president of the Bank of Tennessee was authorized to dispose of the State's stock in the Union Bank, then amounting to \$646,000, provided he could obtain for it an amount sufficient to pay off the bonds issued to the bank. This could not be accomplished, and the State still had \$125,000 of those bonds when the bank went out of existence. The Planter's Bank, contemporary with the Union Bank, did an equally extensive business, but received no aid from the State.

In 1817 a petition for the location of a branch of the United States Bank at Nashville was signed by a number of the leading men of the State and forwarded to Washington, but before it was considered, the General Assembly passed a law forbidding the opening of such a bank in Tennessee. Ten years later the law was repealed and the bank, with a nominal capital of \$1,000,000, was established. It continued to do busi-

ness until 1832 when President Jackson's veto of the bill rechartering the United States Bank necessitated the closing of its doors. Stock banks, like the Union and Planters, were established to take its place, and a disastrous system of over-banking and consequent over-trading was the result.

The contraction in the currency and the great depression in business following the panic of 1837, induced the Legislature to establish the Bank of Tennessee. By an act passed January 19, 1838, this institution was chartered in the name and for the benefit of the State, and for the support of which the faith and credit of the State were pledged. The capital stock was fixed at \$5,000,000, to be raised and constituted as follows: The whole of the common school fund, the proceeds of the sale of the Ocoee lands, the surplus revenue on deposit with the State, and an additional sum in specie or funds convertible into specie raised on the credit of the State, sufficient to make up the \$5,000,000. The Governor was authorized to issue bonds to the amount of \$2,500,000, due in thirty years, bearing 6 per cent interest, payable semi-annually. The act also provided that the bonds should not be sold at less than their par value, and it was with the greatest difficulty that any of them were disposed of, the "faith and credit" of all the Western States at that time, being at a very low ebb. The American Life Insurance & Trust Company of New York finally purchased two-fifths of the bonds, and the remainder were held by the bank for several months, when they were ordered to be canceled.

The location of the branch banks was left to the directors, who created considerable dissatisfaction in distributing them. The places chosen were Rogersville, Athens, Columbia, Shelbyville, Clarksville, Trenton, and Summerville. Another at Sparta was afterward created. The bank went into operation in the early part of 1838 with a capital of \$1,000,000 derived from the sale of bonds and \$90,893.71 of school fund. By April 1, 1839, this had been increased to \$2,073,356.45 by the addition of the surplus revenue, and the proceeds of the Ocoee lands. The redemption of notes in specie had been suspended by the other banks of the State in 1837. January 1, 1839, a general resumption of specie payments took place, but the movement was found to be premature, and in the following October another suspension occurred. At that time the Legislature had just assembled, and Gov. Polk devotes nearly the whole of a long message to a discussion of the financial difficulties. He states that the banking capital of the State exceeds \$10,000,000, and discourages any attempt to increase it. He refers to the recent suspension of specie payments as a matter of great regret, and adds that "the only substantial



and permanent relief is to be found in habits of economy and industry, and the productive labor of our people."

In compliance with a resolution adopted by the next General Assembly, the banks on January 1, 1843, once more began the redemption of their notes in specie, and the succeeding ten years were the most prosperous in their history. Especially was this the case with the Bank of Tennessee, which was carefully managed, and was looked upon with pride by the citizens of the State. The Legislature of 1851-52, however, began the ruinous policy of granting charters to a large number of banks, the most of which were founded upon fictitious capital. Each issued its paper to any extent that it could be disposed of, at no matter how great a discount. The volume of currency thus unduly expanded, the credit of the old banks was impaired and their profits reduced. This extravagant system of over-banking, which had invaded every State in the Union, culminated in the panic of 1857, in which the experiences of twenty years before were renewed. Gov. Johnson foresaw this result, and in his message to the Legislature in 1853 he advised the gradual closing up of the business of the State bank. This advice he renews in his messages of 1855 and 1857. In the last he gives a report from the directors of the bank in which they state that they have come to the conclusion with great unanimity, "and from a settled conviction, that the best interests of the State require it, that the Bank of Tennessee should be put into liquidation and its concerns closed at as early a period as the convenience of the citizens will allow." These recommendations were disregarded by the Legislature. Had they been acted upon, and the bank closed up, a large reduction of the State debt would have been effected. In October, 1857, the Bank of Tennessee suspended specie payment and began to curtail its business. The other banks did likewise. This was continued until 1861, when the exigencies of war required an increase in the circulating medium, and a law was passed compelling them to reverse their policy. Accordingly large issues of new notes were made, the circulation of the State bank, on September 1, 1862, reaching \$4,710,666.

When the Federal occupation of the State became imminent the banks were given permission to carry their assets into other States. The Bank of Tennessee was transferred to Georgia, and its specie deposited at Atlanta, where it afterward fell into the hands of the United States authorities. After the removal of the bank from Nashville its assets, to the amount of over \$8,000,000, were converted into Confederate bonds, coupons and treasury notes, which of course became valueless upon the restoration of peace. Gov. Brownlow, in his message of 1865, advised

the closing up of all existing banks, declaring them insolvent, and severely criticising their management previous to the war. In February, 1866, an act "to wind up and settle the business of the Bank of Tennessee" was passed. Six directors were appointed for this purpose, who were instructed to receive in payment for debts due the bank United States currency, or notes of the bank issued prior to May 6, 1861. The notes issued after that date were known as "New Issue" or "Torbett Issue," from the name of the president, G. C. Torbett, elected May 9, 1861. These were declared utterly void.

In May, 1866, by appointment of the chancery court, S. Watson became the trustee of the bank, and then began a series of litigations extending over a period of twenty years. The act closing the bank gave the school fund the preference in the distribution of assets over all other creditors. The depositors secured a decision of the supreme court against the validity of this act, and the holders of the "New Issue" demanded the redemption of their notes, also obtained a favorable decision. The assets of the bank were not sufficient to redeem these notes, and the State is compelled to receive them for taxes. The amount of the "New Issue" has not yet been definitely determined, but it is not far from \$1,000,000, treasury certificates having already been issued for nearly that amount. According to the constitution adopted in 1870, the founding of a bank by the State is prohibited. Section 31, Article 2, reads as follows: "The credit of the State shall not be hereafter loaned or given to, or in aid of any person, association, company, corporation or municipality. Nor shall the State become the owner in whole, or in part, of any bank, or a stockholder with others in any association, company or municipality."

In 1875 some effort was made to amend the constitution and establish another State Bank. Comptroller Burch in his report in 1874 advocated this measure. He proposed that the State issue \$5,000,000 of bonds, which he thought could be sold at 90 per cent. This would yield \$4,500,000 as the capital stock of the bank, and an issue of notes could then be made to the amount of \$13,500,000, on the basis of \$3 circulation to \$1 of capital. This scheme received but little support, and it is not probable that so long as the present system of national banks is maintained, the people of Tennessee will care to renew their experience with State banks.

The early pioneers depended upon trails and streams for their routes of travels, but with the growth of the settlements better means of communication became a necessity. Streams that were navigable for canoes and small boats might be entirely unfit for commercial purposes until

the obstructions which had accumulated for centuries were removed. The narrow trails winding through the forest over hills and down deep ravines were impassable to the vehicles of civilization.

So early as November, 1785, the General Assembly of North Carolina adopted measures for the better protection of the Cumberland settlements, which from their isolated position were peculiarly exposed to Indian depredations. It was enacted that 300 men should be embodied for the protection of those settlements, and that when assembled at the lower end of Clinch Mountain the troops should cut and clear a road from that point by the most eligible route to Nashville, making the same ten feet wide and fit for the passage of wagons and carts.\* During the year the road, as directed in the act, was opened. Hereafter, instead of by the long and circuitous route through the wilderness of Kentucky, the people from the Atlantic section reached the Cumberland through the new road which ran by the way of the Crab Orchard and the Flat Rock. Two years later the road was found insufficient for the purposes of the vast immigration which was pouring into the country. Accordingly at the representation of the members from Davidson and Sumner Counties the General Assembly of North Carolina authorized the militia officers of these counties to appoint two or more persons to examine, survey and mark out the best and most convenient way from the lower end of Clinch Mountain to the settlement of Cumberland, and to order out the militia of these counties to cut and clear the road so marked. The regiments were ordered to be divided into classes and parts of classes, beginning with the first, and so on in rotation, till the road should be cut. A tax was also assessed to defray the expense of opening the road. Under the provisions of this act the old road was widened and cleared, and a road leading into it was soon afterward cut from Bledsoe's Lick. The following year provision was made for still further improving these roads, and also for exploring the route making a road through the wilderness lying between the Cumberland settlement and the Holston counties. From this time, as the exigencies of the country demanded, other roads and channels of communication were opened, and as the country still further filled up and developed the question of internal improvement became one of the most important topics for the legislators. Under that head were included the construction of roads, the improvement of rivers and harbors, and later the building of railroads. For several years after the adoption of the United States Constitution there was much difference of opinion as to the right of the National Government to appropriate money for this purpose, the Federalists as a party

---

\* Ramsey.



-favoring it, and the Republicans advocating the opposite policy. The opinion of the former finally prevailed, and a system of internal improvement was inaugurated. The General Government, however, undertook only works of national importance, while those of a more local nature were left to the individual States.

The agitation of this subject after the organization of the State was begun as early as 1801, during the administration of Gov. Sevier, who, as well as all the governors succeeding him to 1837, made it a special point in their messages to the Legislature to urge the adoption of measures for the construction of highways and the improvements of the navigable streams. The delay in making appropriations for this purpose was occasioned by the opinion prevalent among the farming community that it would be to the exclusive interest of the commercial class.\* Gov. Carroll, in his message to the Legislature of 1829-30, after reviewing the work done by the General Government and some of the other States, asks: "With these bright examples before us, does it become Tennessee to be idle?" The Legislature undoubtedly thought that this interrogatory deserved a negative answer, as they appropriated \$150,000 for removing the obstructions in streams, and for other improvements. Six commissioners were elected to constitute a board of internal improvements, with power to appoint a civil engineer to superintend the work; \$30,000 was to be used in West Tennessee, and the remainder divided equally between the other two divisions of the State.

The constitution of 1834 declared that a well regulated system of internal improvements is calculated to develop the resources of the State, and to promote the happiness and prosperity of the people, therefore it ought to be encouraged by the General Assembly. In 1836, in compliance with the above section of the constitution, a general system of internal improvements was established. The act provided that when two-thirds of the capital stock of any company, organized for the purpose of constructing any railroad or macadamized turnpike within the limits of the State, had been subscribed, the Governor, in behalf of the State, should subscribe the remaining one-third, and issue bonds bearing  $5\frac{1}{4}$  per cent interest; therefore with the founding of the Bank of Tennessee a more extended system was adopted. Under this scheme the State became subscriber for one-half of the stock in all railroad and turnpike companies, provided that the whole amount of stock taken by the State had not reached \$4,000,000. The profits arising from the State stock, in the various companies, was set apart to constitute a fund for the redemption of the bonds issued. In addition to the above

---

\*McMinn in his message to the Legislature in 1817.

\$300,000 was appropriated for improving the navigation of rivers, to be divided equally among the three divisions of the State. Under these acts there were issued to the various turnpike companies bonds to the amount of nearly \$1,500,000, and to railroads, about \$800,000.

By the latter part of 1839 a reaction had set in against the internal improvement schemes. It was found that the State was becoming heavily involved in debt, and that the results were not commensurate with the outlay. Many of the improvements were of permanent value and general importance, but the law was open to abuse, and charters were frequently granted for local and unimportant work. The profits arising from these companies were small, and the bonds issued to them still form a part of the State's indebtedness. Had the charters been granted with greater discrimination, and the work placed under efficient superintendency, the results would have been more satisfactory.

In January, 1840, all the laws authorizing the Governor to subscribe stock on behalf of the State in internal improvement companies were repealed. This, however, was not to interfere with any work heretofore commenced and carried on in good faith. The governor, comptroller and attorney-general were constituted a board to examine the reports of special commissioners, and to decide upon the policy of completing any work already begun. This board was afterward made to consist of the comptroller, secretary of state and the president of the Bank of Tennessee.

No more aid was granted to corporations by the State until 1852, when the Legislature again passed an act creating a general system of internal improvements. It provided that when railroad companies had graded a certain amount of track, that bonds, to an amount not exceeding \$8,000 per mile (afterward increased to \$10,000), should be issued to equip the roads. For the security of this loan, the State held a lien upon the road and its franchises. The companies were required by the act and its amendments to provide for the payment of the coupons on the bonds as they matured, and also a sinking fund to pay the bonds themselves. This, at the time the bonds were issued, it was thought the companies would be able to do; and it is probable, had the war between the States not occurred, the public expectation would have been realized.\* In any case, it appeared as if the State's investment was sufficiently secured, since the lien which was held upon the roads was in the nature of a first mortgage, and took precedence over all other claims. But the general depreciation in values, and the unproductive character of much of the property rendered the sale of the roads, at anything like their actual cost, impossible. From the statement of Gov. Bate, it appears that

---

\*Governor Bate.

twelve railroads, to which \$20,502,684 of bonds had been issued, were sold under judicial proceedings instituted by the State, with a loss to the State of \$13,804,684. The following are the roads with the respective amounts annexed to each, which made up the sum of this loss.

	Amt. issued to road.	Amt. for which road sold.
Memphis, Clarksville & Louisville.....	\$2,953,795	\$1,700,000
McMinnville & Manchester.....	1,091,578	300,000
Nashville & Northwestern.....	4,541,129	2,400,000
Edgefield & Kentucky.....	2,081,429	900,000
Knoxville & Kentucky.....	2,816,176	350,000
Cincinnati, Cumberland Gap & Charleston.....	1,657,208	300,000
Winchester & Alabama.....	1,790,536	300,000
Rogersville & Jefferson.....	532,013	23,000
East Tennessee & Western North Carolina.....	448,000	20,000
Tennessee & Pacific.....	1,220,530	300,000
Knoxville & Charleston.....	816,500	150,000
Southern Railroad Company.....	553,790	.....
Totals.....	\$20,502,684	\$6,698,000
Loss on sale.....		\$13,804,684

Under the various internal improvement laws there was granted, or loaned to railroad companies, bonds to the amount of over \$29,000,000, for the whole of which the State became responsible. If the amount which the State received from these roads is alone considered, the investment must be regarded as a gigantic failure, but the benefits resulting indirectly from these roads should not be overlooked. Gov. Hawkins, in discussing this subject, used the following language: "Subsequent results demonstrate the wisdom and foresight of the projectors of this grand system of internal improvement in our State. Under the encouragement which was thus given, various railroads were projected and constructed within the borders of our State. As rapidly as the several companies could meet the conditions of the law, the bonds were issued, placed upon the market and sold. Our State immediately, as if awakened to a new life, took rapid strides in prosperity. The aggregate value of taxable property in the State, as shown by the comptroller's report for 1855, was \$219,012,051.81. In 1861 it had increased to \$368,202,050, a gain of \$149,189,998 in six years."

No bonds were granted to railroad companies after 1867, and the constitution of 1870 forbids the loaning or giving of the credit of the State to any corporation or company, although it reaffirms the section of the old constitution which declared that a well regulated system of internal improvement is calculated to develop the resources of the State and to promote the happiness and prosperity of the people, therefore it ought to be encouraged. The constitution of 1870 also prohibits the State



from becoming a stockholder in any company. This, however, does not interfere with the rights of counties or incorporated towns to vote aid to railroads or other enterprises of a like character. Previous to May 26, 1886, the principal railroads of the State, with the exception of the Illinois Central system and the Mobile & Ohio, were five feet gauge. The question of reducing them to a conformity with the standard gauge had been agitated for several years, but nothing in this direction was done until the spring of 1886, when a convention of railroad officials was held in Atlanta, Ga., and the matter taken up in earnest. It was decided by the convention to adopt the gauge of the Pennsylvania Road, which is four feet and nine inches, and during the last week in May the change was made. The Mobile & Ohio Road changed its gauge in the fall of 1885.

The following table shows the receipts and disbursements of the State government from 1837:

YEAR.	Receipts.	Disbursements.	Balances.
October 1, 1837.....	\$ 231,596 63	\$ 156,159 32	\$ 75,437 31
October 1, 1839.....	533,920 73	429,758 61	116,599 43
October 1, 1841.....	543,739 79	470,748 75	189,590 47
October 1, 1843.....	473,022 01	623,737 27	38,875 21
October 1, 1845.....	576,942 71	506,688 40	109,329 52
October 1, 1847.....	710,907 61	642,314 32	177,281 73
October 1, 1849.....	790,695 53	802,436 66	152,198 11
October 1, 1851.....	1,004,004 94	933,431 25	222,771 80
October 1, 1853.....	1,202,047 04	1,218,387 04	206,431 80
October 1, 1855.....	1,035,715 22	1,154,307 79	87,839 23
October 1, 1857.....	1,451,175 87	1,502,519 04	36,496 06
October 1, 1859.....	1,848,094 88	1,704,287 61	180,303 33
October 1, 1865*.....	129,991 38	130,670 15	.....
October 1, 1866.....	1,098,970 55	1,128,986 86	.....
October 1, 1867.....	3,508,586 91	2,948,652 68	589,950 54
October 1, 1869.....	5,386,537 56	5,858,004 06	28,649 42
October 1, 1871.....	3,590,926 95	3,142,282 01	159 44
October 1, 1871, to December 3, 1872.....	2,420,091 17	2,432,858 00	159 44
January 1, 1873, to December 20, 1874.....	3,618,703 52	3,290,158 41	328,704 55
December 20, 1876.....	4,526,422 76	4,715,795 12	139,332 19
December 20, 1878.....	2,000,883 64	1,661,869 79	478,346 04
December 20, 1880.....	1,144,349 82	1,400,316 47	222,424 39
December 20, 1882.....	1,870,224 02	1,584,633 33	508,015 08
December 20, 1884.....	2,194,886 98	1,765,072 38	645,214 83

\*From May to October 1.

The history of railroad enterprises in Tennessee is one of singular and absorbing interest. The movement toward awakening public interest in railroad construction, occurred as early as the year 1835, when in the language of Gov. Cannon, "the spirit of internal improvement was abroad in the land." During that year Col. Robert T. Hayne, of South Carolina, whose debate with Daniel Webster on the Foster resolutions gave him a world wide reputation, visited Nashville, and in an able address advocated the construction of a railway from Memphis to Knoxville, thence to Charleston, S. C., so as to connect the sea-board with

the Mississippi River, the great inland route of navigation. No attempt however, was made to put the plan into operation.

A second effort was made the next year by William Armour, representative to the Legislature from Shelby County, to unite the Mississippi with the sea-board by constructing a line "from the most eligible point on said river, as near the center of the State as practicable, to the Tennessee River; thence near the center of the State to a point on the Virginia line." October 10, 1836, a convention was held in the Federal court room at the capitol for the purpose of discussing the subject of internal improvement. Sixteen counties was represented, and Col. Robert Allen was chosen chairman. The session lasted four days, during which time a resolution advocating the construction of the above road was adopted. The subject was presented to the Legislature, which was in session at that time, and \$15,000 was appropriated for surveying a route for the "Central Railway." Albert M. Lea was appointed chief engineer, with instructions to survey the line through the State, and to estimate the cost of both a single and double-tracked railway; also, the comparative cost of a turnpike over the same route through Middle and East Tennessee. His estimate placed the cost of a single-tracked road from Perryville, on the Tennessee River, to the Virginia line, at \$6,421,718.60, and for the the entire distance, 500 miles, at \$7,841,718.60. A double-tracked road over the same route, he thought would cost \$11,154,968.60. He also estimated the receipts and expenditures of such a road. Through Middle and East Tennessee he placed the number of passengers to be carried at an average of 100 per day each way, which at 5 cents per mile would produce a yearly income of \$1,370,575. The same number of tons of freight, at 6 cents per mile, would produce \$1,644,690, a total of \$3,015,265. The cost of carrying the passengers at  $\frac{1}{2}$  cent per mile, and freight at 1 cent per mile, would amount to \$696,565, which added to the cost of repairs, \$659,298.11 makes a total annual expenditure of \$1,355,863.11, leaving a net revenue of \$1,659,401.49. The estimates for West Tennessee are made on the same scale, except that the rate for carrying freight is fixed at 3 cents per mile, and the amount of business is placed at only one-half that of the other division of the State. The net earnings of this part of the road would thus amount to \$214,615.96.

These estimates both as to the construction and operation of such a road, would scarcely coincide with those of an experienced railroad operator of to-day, and they serve to illustrate how little was then known about such enterprises. Railroads were projected on a grand scale, but seemingly with little regard to the demands of the trade and commerce of sections through which they were to pass, or the comparative cost of

construction over a less direct route. The engineer of the above road strongly advocated its construction, but the great financial crash of that year rendered a successful movement in that direction impossible.

During the same year that the Central Road was projected a charter was procured for the Hiwassee Railroad, through the influence of Gen. James H. Reagan, representative to the Legislature from McMinn County. The charter required that stock amounting to \$600,000 should be subscribed within two years. On July 4, 1836, a railroad convention composed of delegates from all the Northern States, Maryland and the Southern States met in Knoxville; Robert T. Hayne, of South Carolina, was made president. The convention adopted measures for the construction of a road from Cincinnati or Louisville, through Cumberland Gap, up the French Broad River and on to Charleston. This route was not satisfactory to the delegates from Georgia and lower East Tennessee. The delegates from McMinn County, one of whom was T. N. Vandyke, brought to the notice of the Georgia delegation the Hiwassee charter.

Upon a conference it was decided that by adopting this route, a road from Knoxville, through Georgia to Charleston, could be put into operation before the work would commence on the Cumberland Gap route, and it was agreed that the McMinn County delegation should go home, open books and secure subscriptions, while the members from Georgia should procure a charter from their State, and meet at the State line.

The delegates from McMinn, upon their return home, set immediately to work, but it was a new enterprise and one not well understood by the people. The taking of stock advanced so slowly that, in order to prevent the forfeiture of the charter, six residents of McMinn County, Gen. Nathaniel Smith, Onslow G. Murrell, Ashbury M. Coffey, James H. Tyffe, Alexander D. Keys and T. N. Vandyke, agreed to subscribe each \$100,000. Upon examination of the subscription books, it was found that \$120,000 of stock had been taken, so that the subscription of the six men named had to be reduced to \$80,000 each. These men refused to permit an organization of the company until they could distribute their stock in such a manner that the stockholders could meet the calls without embarrassment. This was accomplished within a year, and an organization was effected with Solomon P. Jacobs as president and Ashbury M. Coffey secretary and treasurer. J. C. Trautwine, of Philadelphia, was engaged as chief engineer. The road was surveyed and ground was broken two miles west of Athens, in 1837, being the first work ever done on a railroad in the State. With the exception of a few intervening gaps, the road was graded from the State line to Loudon, and a bridge built over the Hiwassee River. Meantime it was ascertained that



\$600,000 was insufficient to build the road, and upon application to the Legislature, the State agreed to subscribe stock to the amount of \$650,000 in 5 per cent State bonds to be paid upon call *pari passu*, with the payments of the individual stockholders. The financial embarrassments of 1837 compelled a suspension, and the company was forced to execute a deed of trust, authorizing the sale of the road. The State filed a bill enjoining the trustees from acting under the deed, and sought to amend the charter. The suit was carried to the supreme court and finally decided against the State. The debts amounted to about \$130,000, and the sum due from the State upward of \$80,000, but by skillful management the debts were all compromised and liquidated by the creditors taking one-half of the debt in 5 per cent State bonds; and the remainder in the stock of the company at par. After various unsuccessful attempts to procure money to complete the road, the company finally made a contract with Gen. Duff Green, who agreed upon certain conditions to build the road from Dalton, Ga., to Knoxville. Gen. Green after doing a considerable amount of work failed and surrendered his contract. The company then entered into a contract with William, Grant & Co., who finished the road from Dalton to the Hiwassee River. J. G. Dent & Co. built the road from there to Loudon in 1852, and in 1856 the portion from Loudon to Knoxville was completed. Through repeated failures, delays and litigations the name "Hiwassee" became so obnoxious that in 1848 it was changed to East Tennessee & Georgia.

In 1852 the East Tennessee & Virginia Railroad was chartered. The portion of this road in Tennessee extended from Knoxville to Bristol on the Virginia line, and formed a connecting link between the two great systems of roads those in the Northeast, and those of Alabama, Georgia and South Carolina. It was completed in 1858, and later was consolidated with the East Tennessee & Georgia, under the name of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia.

The first railroad chartered by the Legislature was the La Grange & Memphis. The company was incorporated in December, 1835, and was soon after organized. Subscriptions to the amount of \$250,000 were made by individuals, and, in accordance with the act of 1835, the governor subscribed \$125,000 on behalf of the State. The road was located in September following, and during 1837 the grading of the track was begun. Owing to financial embarrassments and inexperience on the part of the management, the work progressed slowly, and after dragging along for several years, was finally abandoned. February 2, 1846, a charter was granted to the Memphis & Charleston Railroad, authorizing a capital stock of \$800,000, and under the persevering efforts of Ex-Gov.

James C. Jones, the first president, Col. Sam Tate, Joseph Lenow, Minor Meriwether and others, was brought to a successful completion in 1857. In constructing the road the old road bed of the La Grange & Memphis was purchased and utilized.

The Nashville & Chattanooga Railroad was constructed simultaneously with the building of the Memphis & Charleston. This enterprise originated with Dr. James Overton, a man of remarkable sagacity and undaunted resolution. During a contest for legislative honors in 1843, he advocated the building of a road from Nashville to Chattanooga to connect with the Western Atlantic, a road chartered about ten years previous to that time. He failed to enlist any considerable support in what was then looked upon as a visionary scheme, and on account of his enthusiastic advocacy of the project, he was dubbed "old Chattanooga." Although the efforts of Overton were barren of any immediate results, yet they served to direct public attention to the advantages of railroads. About 1845 the depression which had prevailed so long in business circles began to be relieved. The growing trade of Nashville demanded other outlets than that afforded by the Cumberland River. Other portions of the State began to awaken to the necessity of providing better means of transportation, and in this they were stimulated somewhat by the action of Georgia in chartering a road to run from Augusta to Chattanooga. The subject was brought before the Legislature, and under the pressure of influential citizens of Nashville, an act was passed December 11, 1845, to incorporate "a railroad from Nashville on the Cumberland River, to Chattanooga on the Tennessee River." The internal improvement laws having been repealed, no State aid was granted to this road at that time, but an act passed by the next Legislature authorized the mayor and aldermen of Nashville to subscribe \$500,000 to the enterprise. This measure met with considerable opposition, and a bill was filed in chancery to enjoin the subscription to the road or the issuing of bonds by the corporation. On appeal it was taken to the supreme court, and finally decided at the December term, 1848. The opinion delivered by Judge Turley decided that the Legislature of Tennessee had the constitutional power to authorize the corporation of Nashville to take stock in the Nashville & Chattanooga Railroad, and that the making of this road was a legitimate corporate purpose of the corporation, acting under the authority of the act; thus sustained by the court's decision, the city voted the \$500,000 to be expended in the construction of the road. During the two years previous the subject had been thoroughly canvassed throughout the city and a strong public sentiment had been enacted in favor of the enterprise. Most prominent among those to whom this result was

due was Vernon K. Stevenson, and upon the organization of the company in 1848 he was elected its president, which position he held until the breaking out of the civil war. In addition to the amount obtained from the corporation of Nashville, he secured a subscription of an equal amount from Charleston, S. C., \$250,000 from the Georgia Railroad & Banking Company, and \$30,000 from the corporation of Murfreesboro. which enabled him with the private subscriptions that were afterward received, and the aid which the State rendered by endorsing the company's bonds, to enter upon the work of construction. The first passenger train on the road was run out as far as Antioch, April 13, 1851, and the first through train ran into Chattanooga January 18, 1853. In 1869 the company leased the Nashville & North-Western Railroad for a term of six years, but before the lease expired, a two-thirds interest in the road was purchased from the commissioners appointed by the Legislature and the chancery court to sell delinquent railroads in the State, individuals in Tennessee and New York taking the other one-third. Subsequently the directors of the Nashville & Chattanooga bought the one-third interest held by individuals, and that company now owns the entire road from Chattanooga to Hickman, Ky., together with its branches. The name of the consolidated road is the Nashville, Chattanooga & St. Louis.

The Nashville & North-Western was chartered as early as 1852, but subscriptions to it were secured with difficulty, and the work of construction was not begun for several years. When the war opened only a little over thirty miles had been graded, and only that portion between Nashville and Kingston Springs was in operation. During the war the United States Government, for military purposes, built the road to the Tennessee River at Johnsonville. At the close of hostilities application was made to the Legislature for the amount due the road under the then existing laws. This was granted, and the road was completed during the latter part of 1868.

The Nashville, Chattanooga & St. Louis Railroad has several branches. The Winchester & Alabama, and the McMinnville & Manchester were both chartered in 1850, but neither was completed for several years. In 1872, upon their failure to pay the interest on the bonds issued by the State in aid of their construction, they were sold to the Memphis & Charleston Railroad. The Tennessee & Pacific, another branch, was projected to run from Nashville to Knoxville, but financial embarrassments checked its progress, and it was completed only to Lebanon, a distance of thirty-one miles. It was incorporated in 1866, and work of construction was begun in 1869.



One of the largest corporations in the South at the present time is the Louisville, Nashville & Great Southern Railroad. The lines forming this system were built under separate charters, and afterward consolidated. The road connecting Louisville and Nashville, which forms the main stem, was chartered in 1851, and was opened for business in 1859, the first train through from Louisville having passed over the bridge into Nashville on September 28 of that year. The Memphis branch, extending from Bowling Green, Ky., to Memphis, embraces the Memphis & Ohio, and the Memphis, Clarksville & Louisville Railroads. The former was chartered February 4, 1852, under the name of the Nashville & Memphis Railroad. Two years later, by Legislative authority, the name was changed to the Memphis & Ohio, and in May, 1860, the road was completed from Memphis to Paris. In 1871, in order to prevent the sale of the road by the State the Louisville & Nashville Company loaned to the Memphis & Ohio State bonds sufficient to pay off its debt to the State, and the two roads were then consolidated. The Memphis, Clarksville & Louisville Railroad received its charter January 28, 1852, and the road was opened in September, 1861. July 1, 1865, the company having defaulted on the interest on the State bonds loaned to them, a receiver was appointed, and the road continued to be operated by receivers from that time until 1871, when it was purchased by the Louisville & Nashville Company for the sum of \$1,700,000.

The Edgefield & Kentucky Railroad, extending from Nashville to Guthrie, Ky., was chartered February 13, 1852, and finished in 1860. This road formed a part of the Evansville, Henderson & Nashville Road which was not entirely completed until 1872. The line was then consolidated with the Nashville, Chicago & St. Louis Railroad into what was known as the St. Louis & Southeastern. In 1879 the Louisville & Nashville Company purchased the whole line, and it is now operated as the St. Louis division of that company's system. Another important division is the Nashville & Decatur. This was formed in 1866 by the consolidation of the Tennessee & Alabama, the Tennessee & Alabama Central, and the Central Southern Roads. The Tennessee & Alabama was chartered in 1852 to run from Nashville by the way of Franklin to the Alabama State line, in the direction of Florence, but in 1858 the company asked authority to terminate the road at Mt. Pleasant, which request was granted. In 1853 the Central Southern Railroad Company was incorporated for the purpose of constructing a line from Columbia, Tenn., to the Alabama State line in the direction of Decatur. This line was completed November 20, 1860. May 4, 1871, the consolidated roads were leased by the Louisville & Nashville Railroad Company for a period of thirty years.

The Mobile & Ohio Railroad extends from Mobile, Ala., to the Ohio River at Cairo, entering Tennessee from the south near Corinth, Miss. It was originally projected to strike some point on the Tennessee River, and run thence to the mouth of the Ohio. The company was organized in Alabama, and in 1848 received a charter from Tennessee. At the time of its inception this was the greatest railroad enterprise that had been inaugurated on either continent; and it was not until 1859, after many years of the most persistent effort, that the road was completed. During the war the road suffered greatly, and at the close of the conflict it was a splendid wreck. Sixty-five per cent of its original cost was lost; but by skillful and economical management, the road in a few years was put into a prosperous condition. The indebtedness to the State was paid off, and in 1870 the company resumed the payment of interest on all classes of its bonds.

On January 29, 1858, the Tennessee Legislature authorized the Mississippi River Railroad to be constructed from Memphis to the Kentucky State line in the direction of Cairo. The work of grading was not commenced until 1869, and was then soon after suspended. In 1871 it was consolidated with the Paducah & Gulf Railroad, a Kentucky corporation, under the name of the Memphis & Paducah. The whole line was afterward sold under mortgage, and reorganized as the Memphis, Paducah & Northern. It is now known as the Chesapeake, Ohio & Southwestern, extending from Cecilia, Ky., by way of Paducah to Memphis, a distance of about 345 miles.

Another important road in West Tennessee forms a part of a great system extending from Chicago to New Orleans and known as the Chicago, St. Louis & New Orleans Railroad, the entire length of which is about 1,700 miles. The part in Tennessee was chartered as two separate companies, the Mississippi Central, and the New Orleans, Jackson & Northern. These roads were consolidated in November, 1877. Running arrangements were then made with the Illinois Central Railroad Company by which the entire system is practically placed under one management, though operated by two charters.

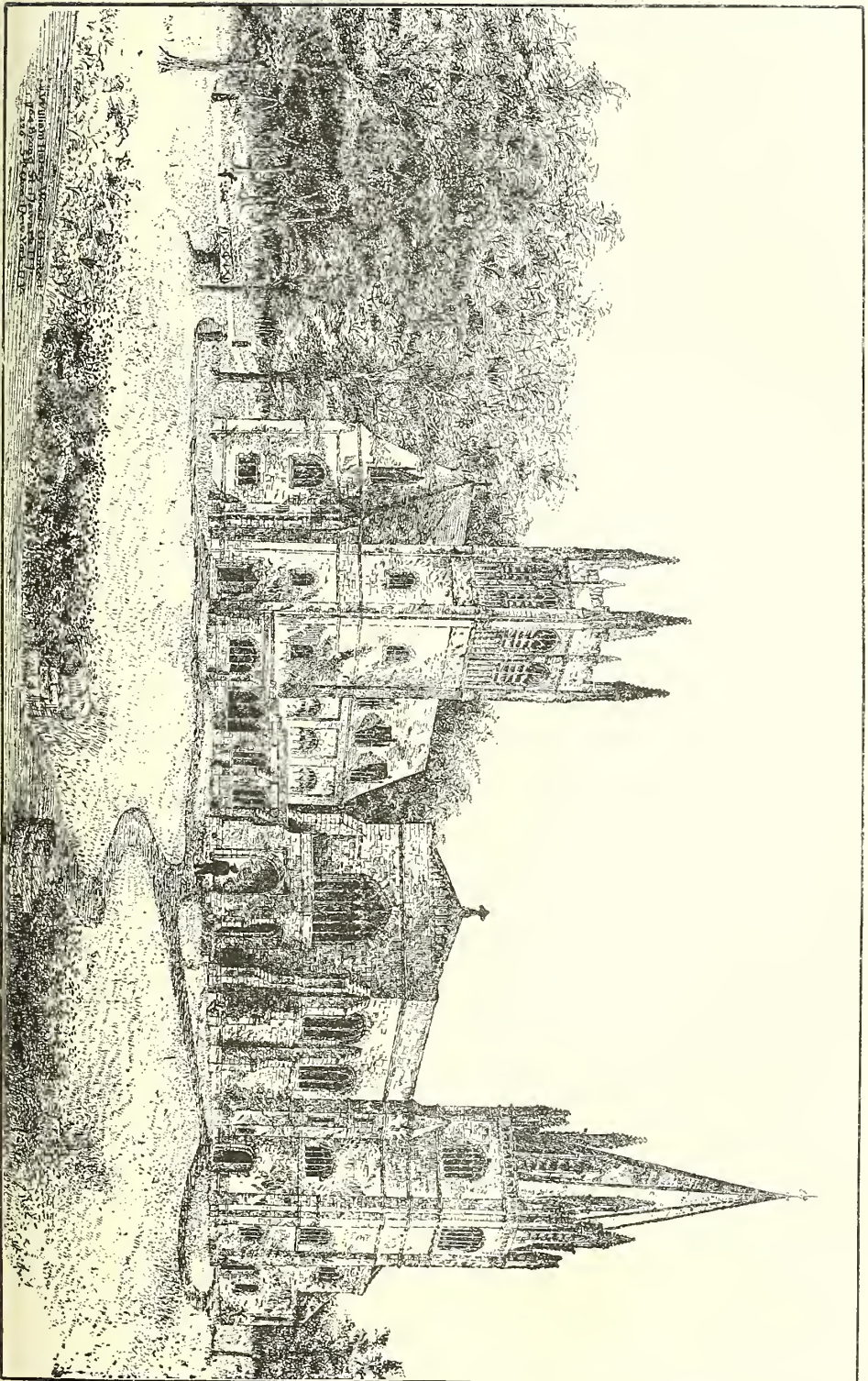
One of the most important roads passing through Tennessee is the Cincinnati Southern, extending from Cincinnati to Chattanooga. The company was incorporated by the General Assembly of Ohio in 1869, and received a charter from the Legislature of Tennessee January 20, 1870. The road was completed and opened for business in 1880, and now forms a part of the system known as the Cincinnati, New Orleans & Texas Pacific. Several other roads besides those mentioned have been constructed and are now successfully operated, but the greater number of them are narrow gauge roads, or are of but limited extent.

The General Assembly, in March, 1883, passed an act for the regulation of railroad companies, to prevent unjust discrimination in tariffs and rates, and to this end provided for the appointment of a railroad commission to consist of three persons, one for each grand division of the State. To this commission was given general supervision of all railroads in Tennessee, with power to revise all tariffs of charges for transportation, and to reduce the rate of charges if in any case they were found to be unjust or to discriminate against any person, corporation or locality. It was made the duty of the several companies operating railroads in the State to make annual returns of their business to the commissioners in such manner as the latter might prescribe.

In April, 1883, the governor appointed John H. Savage, J. A. Turley and G. W. Gordon as commissioners, who immediately qualified and entered upon the discharge of their official duties. Letters were addressed to the representatives of the various railroads requesting them to make out and deliver to the commission for revision a schedule of the rates of charges for transportation. This several of the companies refused to do, and two of the leading roads obtained from John Baxter, United States Circuit Judge, an order restraining the commissioners from interfering in any way with the tariffs of their roads. After the motion for an injunction was heard Judge Baxter pronounced certain sections of the act creating the commission unconstitutional, and granted the injunctions. The cases were then appealed to the Federal Supreme Court, and were then pending when the Legislature of 1885 convened. Gov. Bates in his message advised that the commission bill of 1883 be not repealed, but that it be revised and made to conform to the constitution. The bill, however, had never been very popular, and it was repealed and the commission abolished. The following figures show the growth of railroads in Tennessee: In 1850 there was no road in operation; from 1850 to 1860 1,253 miles of railroad were constructed; the decade which follows shows an increase of only 239 miles, making a total in 1870 of 1,492 miles; in 1880 there were 1,872 miles of completed road, with an assessed valuation of \$16,375,894.50. The comptroller's report for 1885 places the whole number of miles of road at 2,094.5, with an assessed valuation of \$34,350,170.84.

The history of steam-boat navigation on the Western rivers dates back to 1812. In the winter of that year the steamer "Orleans," built at Pittsburgh, made the first trip from that city to New Orleans. The success of this venture revolutionized river navigation and efforts were at once made to place steam-boats upon the Mississippi and all of its navigable tributaries. The message of Willie Blount to the Legislature





CATHEDRAL OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, AND UNIVERSITY OF THE SOUTH.



of 1812 contains the following: "The petition of Messrs. Fulton & Livingstone, of New York, addressed to the Legislature of Tennessee, proposing to bring the steam-boats into use in our waters in aid of our present usual boats employed in navigation, if encouraged by your honorable body, is herewith laid before you, together with their letters to me touching their petition." No action seems to have been taken upon the petition by the Legislature, and it was not until the spring of 1818 that the first steam-boat, the "General Jackson," arrived at Nashville. It was built at Pittsburgh for Gov. Cannon. During the next two or three years the steam-boat business increased rapidly. Wharves and landing place were built at all the leading towns along the rivers, and commission and forwarding houses were opened. In 1825 there were from fifteen to twenty steam-boats plying between Nashville and New Orleans, and during that year over \$1,000,000 worth of cotton was shipped from the former port. The steamers "General Robertson," "Rifleman," "James Ross," "Fayette" and "Feliciana" were all running on the Cumberland as early as 1821. The pioneer boat, "General Jackson," was snagged and sunk on Harpeth Shoals, on January 20, of that year, and on May 3, the "Feliciana" exploded with a loss of six or seven lives. During the following years great improvement was made in the construction of boats, both as to speed and safety. May 15, 1820, the "Rifleman" arrived at Nashville from New Orleans, having made the trip in thirty days, which was considered very fast time. In May, 1843, the steamer "Nashville" made the same trip in six days and thirteen hours. The "Tallyrand" a short time after made it in five days and twenty-three hours, and the "Nashville" on the next trip, in five days and nineteen hours. The steam-boat has been an important factor in the material development of the State, and although in a measure it has been superseded by the railroad, its value has been little diminished. In 1873 the total trade of the Tennessee River approximated \$5,000,000, while that of the Cumberland for the same time was estimated at about double that amount.

The first steam-boat to navigate the Hatchie River was the "Rover," which made its appearance at the Brownsville Landing in the fall of 1827. Not one in twenty of the vast crowd assembled on the banks of the river had ever seen a steam-boat, and when the "puff" of the boat was heard all were on tiptoe; as it hove in sight the excitement became intense, and as it moved to shore with banners flying, amid the shouts of the multitude, the engineer turned off steam, scaring men, women and children nearly out of their wits. Several of them ran for their lives, shrieking and screaming amid the deafening noise. Horses took fright, broke loose and scampered off through the woods in every direction.



The orator of the day delivered an address of welcome to the commander of the "Rover," Capt. Newman, who, with his officers, was feasted and toasted the next day at Brownsville<sup>1</sup>. The first steam-boat to pass up the Forked Deer was the "Grey Eagle," in 1836.

#### STATE OFFICERS.

*Governors.*—William Blount, 1792–96; John Sevier, 1796–1801; Archibald Roane, 1801–03; John Sevier, 1803–09; Willie Blount, 1809–15; Joseph McMinn, 1815–21; William Carroll, 1821–27; Samuel Houston, 1827–29<sup>2</sup>; William Hall, 1829<sup>3</sup>; William Carroll, 1829–35; Newton Cannon, 1835–39; James K. Polk, 1839–41; James C. Jones, 1841–45; Aaron V. Brown, 1845–47; Neill S. Brown, 1847–49; William Trousdale, 1849–51; William B. Campbell, 1851–53; Andrew Johnson, 1853–57; Isham G. Harris<sup>4</sup>, 1857–62<sup>5</sup>; Andrew Johnson<sup>6</sup>, 1862–65; William G. Brownlow, 1865–68; D. W. C. Senter, 1868–71; John C. Brown, 1871–75; James D. Porter, 1875–79; Albert S. Marks, 1879–81; Alvin Hawkins, 1881–83; William B. Bate, 1883.

*Secretaries of State.*—William Maclin, 1796–1807; Robert Houston, 1807–11; William G. Blount, 1811–15; William Alexander, 1815–19; David Graham, 1819–30; Thomas H. Fletcher, 1830–31; Samuel G. Smith, 1831–33; David Graham, 1833–35; Luke Lea, 1835–39; John S. Young, 1839–47; W. B. A. Ramsey, 1847–55; F. N. W. Burton, 1855–59; John E. R. Ray, 1859–62; A. J. Fletcher, 1865–70; Thomas H. Butler, 1870–73; Charles N. Gibbs, 1873–81; David A. Nunn, 1881–85; John Allison, 1885.

*Treasurers.*—William Black, Mero District, 1796–99; Landon Carter, Washington and Hamilton Districts, 1796–1800; Robert Searcy, Mero District, 1799–1803; John Maclin, Washington and Hamilton Districts, 1800–03; Thomas Crutcher, West Tennessee, 1803–29; Thomas McCorry, East Tennessee, 1803–13; Matthew Nelson, East Tennessee, 1813–27; Thomas Crutcher, Middle Tennessee, 1829–36; Miller Francis, East Tennessee, 1827–36; James Caruthers, Western District, 1829–36<sup>7</sup>; Miller Francis, 1836–43; Matthew Nelson, 1843–45; Robert B. Turner, 1845–47; A. Dibrell, 1847–55; G. C. Torbett, 1855–59; W. F. McGregor, 1859; R. L. Stanford, 1865–67; John R. Henry, 1867–68; James E. Rust, 1868–70; W. Morrow, 1870–77; M. T. Polk, 1877–1883<sup>8</sup>; Atha Thomas, 1883–85; J. W. Thomas, 1885.

*Comptrollers of the Treasury.*—F. K. Zollicoffer, 1843–49; B. H.

<sup>1</sup> MSS. in possession of Tennessee Historical Society. <sup>2</sup> Resigned in April, 1829. <sup>3</sup> Served out the unexpired term of Gov. Houston. <sup>4</sup> Governor of the Confederate State Government to March 4, 1862. <sup>5</sup> Robert L. Caruthers was elected in 1863 by the Confederate Army, but did not take his seat. <sup>6</sup> Military Governor. <sup>7</sup> Treasuries consolidated. <sup>8</sup> Absconded January 5, 1883.

Sheppard, 1849-51; Arthur R. Crozier, 1851-55; James C. Luttrell, 1855-57; James T. Dunlap, 1857-61; Joseph S. Fowler, — 1865; S. W. Hatchett, 1865-66<sup>1</sup>; G. W. Blackburn, 1866-70; E. R. Pennebaker, 1870-73; W. W. Hobbs<sup>2</sup>, 1873; John C. Burch, 1873-75; James L. Gaines, 1875-81; James N. Nolan, 1881-83; P. P. Pickard, 1883.

*Librarians.*—W. B. A. Ramsey<sup>3</sup>, 1854-56; Return J. Meigs, 1856-61; Joseph S. Fowler, 1861-64<sup>4</sup>; A. G. Gattinger, 1864-69<sup>5</sup>; Dr. Wharton, 1869-71; Mrs. Paralee Haskell, 1871-79; Mrs S. K. Hatton, 1879.

*Commissioners of Agriculture, Statistics and Mines.*—J. B. Killbrew, 1875-81; Alvin W. Hawkins, 1881-83; A. J. McWhirter, 1883.

*State Geologists.*—Gerard Troost, 1831-50; James M. Safford, 1854<sup>6</sup>.

*Superintendents of Public Instruction.*—Robert H. McEwen, 1836-40; R. P. Currin, 1840-44<sup>7</sup>; John M. Fleming, 1873-75; Leon Trousdale, 1875-81; W. S. Doak, 1881-82; G. S. W. Crawford, July 1, 1882-83; Julia A. Doak, May 23 to July 1, 1882<sup>8</sup>; Thomas H. Paine, 1883.

*Judges, Territorial.*—David Campbell, 1790-96; Joseph Anderson, 1791-96; John McNairy, 1790-96.

*Superior Court of Law and Equity.*—John McNairy, 1796<sup>9</sup>; Willie Blount, 1796<sup>10</sup>; Archibald Roane, 1796-1801; Howell Tatum, 1797-98; W. C. C. Claiborne, 1796-97; Andrew Jackson, 1798-1804; Hugh L. White, 1801-07; John Overton, 1804-10; Thomas Emmerson, 1807<sup>11</sup>; Parry W. Humphreys, 1807-10; Samuel Powell, 1807-10.

*Supreme Court of Errors and Appeals.*—George W. Campbell, 1809-11; Hugh L. White, 1809-14; John Overton, 1811-16; William W. Cooke, 1815-16<sup>12</sup>; Archibald Roane, 1816<sup>13</sup>; Robert Whyte, 1816-34; John Haywood, 1816-26<sup>14</sup>; Thomas Emmerson, 1818-22; Jacob Peck, 1822-34; William L. Brown, 1822-34; John Catron, 1824-34; Henry Crabb, 1827<sup>15</sup>; Nathan Green, 1831-34.

*Supreme Court.*—William B. Turley, 1834-50; William B. Reese, 1834-48; Nathan Green, 1834-52; Robert J. McKinney, 1848; A. W. O. Totten, 1850-55; Robert L. Caruthers, 1852-41; William R. Harris, 1855-58; Archibald Wright, 1858; William F. Cooper, 1861; Samuel Milligan, 1865-68; J. O. Shackelford, 1865-67; Alvin Hawkins, 1865-68; Horace H. Harrison, 1867-68; Henry G. Smith, 1868-69; George Andrews, 1868-70; Andrew McClain, 1869-70; Alvin Hawkins, 1869-70; Alfred O. P. Nicholson, 1870-76; James W. Deaderick,

1 Elected in May, 1865. T. R. Dillon was elected April 25, but was found to be ineligible. 2 From January to May. 3 Secretary of State; *ex officio* Librarian. 4 Acting. 5 Appointed Aug. 14, 1864. 6 After the death of Gerard Troost, no geologist was appointed until February, 1854. 7 Office abolished January 12, 1844; created again 1871 and state treasurer made superintendent, *ex officio*. 8 Acting. 9 Declined the appointment. 10 Appointed in April, resigned in September. 11 Resigned during the year. 12 Died July 20, 1816. 13 The vacancy had been tendered to Samuel Powell, Enoch Parsons, George Duffield and John Williams, but all declined. 14 Died December 22, 1826. 15 Died the same year.

1870; Peter Turney, 1870; Thomas A. R. Nelson, 1870-71; John L. T. Sneed, 1870-78; Thomas J. Freeman, 1870; Robert McFarland, 1871-84; J. B. Cooke, 1884; W. F. Cooper, 1878.

*Court of Referees.*—At Nashville, W. L. Eakin, 1883-86; W. C. Caldwell, 1883-86; John A. Tinnon, 1883-86. At Knoxville, John Frizzell, 1883-85; John L. T. Sneed, 1883-85; R. T. Kirkpatrick, 1883-85. At Jackson, David L. Snodgrass, 1883-85; David Bright, 1883-85; John E. Garner, from April to July, 1883; E. L. Gardenhire, 1883-85.

*Attorney-Generals.*—George S. Yerger, 1835-39; W. H. Humphreys, 1839-51; William G. Swann, 1851-53; John L. T. Sneed, 1853-58; John W. Head, 1858-61; Horace Maynard, 1863-65; Thomas H. Caldwell, 1865-70; Joseph B. Heiskell, 1870-75; B. J. Lea, 1875.

*Representatives.*—IV Congress, 1796-97, Andrew Jackson; V Congress, 1797-99, William C. C. Claiborne; VI Congress, 1799-1801, same; VII Congress, 1801-03, William Dickson; VIII Congress, 1803-05, George W. Campbell, William Dickson and John Rhea; IX Congress, 1805-07, same; X Congress, 1807-09, George W. Campbell, John Rhea and Jesse Wharton; XI Congress, 1809-11, Pleasant M. Miller, John Rhea and Robert Weakley; XII Congress, 1811-13, Felix Grundy, John Rhea and John Sevier; XIII Congress, 1813-15, John H. Bowen, Newton Cannon, Felix Grundy\*, Thomas K. Harris, John Rhea, Parry W. Humphreys and John Sevier; XIV Congress, 1815-17, William G. Blount, Bennet H. Henderson, James B. Reynolds, Samuel Powell, Isaac Thomas and Newton Cannon; XV Congress, 1817-19, William G. Blount, Thomas Claiborne, Samuel Hogg, Francis Jones, George W. L. Marr and John Rhea; XVI Congress, 1819-21, Robert Allen, Henry H. Bryan, Newton Cannon, John Cocke, John Rhea and Francis Jones; XVII Congress, 1821-23, Robert Allen, Henry H. Bryan,† Newton Cannon, John Cocke, Francis Jones and John Rhea; XVIII Congress, 1823-25, A. R. Alexander, Robert Allen, John Blair, John Cocke, Samuel Houston, Jacob C. Isacks, James B. Reynolds, James T. Sandford and James Standifer; XIX Congress, 1825-27, A. R. Alexander, Robert Allen, John Blair, John Cocke, Samuel Houston, Jacob C. Isacks, John H. Marable, James C. Mitchell and James K. Polk; XX Congress, 1827-29, John Bell, John Blair, David Crockett, Robert Desha, Jacob C. Isacks, Pryor Lea, John H. Marable, James C. Mitchell and James K. Polk; XXI Congress, 1829-31, John Bell, John Blair, David Crockett, Robert Desha, Jacob C. Isacks, Cave Johnson, Pryor Lea, James K. Polk and James Standifer; XXII Congress, 1831-33, Thomas D. Arnold, John

\*Resigned in 1814.

†Is said not to have taken his seat.



Bell, John Blair, William Fitzgerald, William Hall, Jacob C. Isacks, Cave Johnson, James K. Polk and James Standifer; XXIII Congress, 1833-35, John Bell, John Blair, Samuel Bunch, David Crockett, David W. Dickinson, William C. Dunlap, John B. Forester, William M. Inge, Cave Johnson, Luke Lea, Bailie Peyton, James K. Polk and James Standifer; XXIV Congress, 1835-37, John Bell, Samuel Bunch, William B. Carter, William C. Dunlap, John B. Forester, Adam Huntsman, Cave Johnson, Luke Lea, Abraham P. Maury, Bailie Peyton, James K. Polk, Ebenezer J. Shields and James Standifer; XXV Congress, 1837-39, John Bell, William B. Campbell, William B. Carter, Richard Cheatham, John W. Crockett, Abraham P. Maury, Abraham McLellan, James K. Polk, Ebenezer J. Shields, William Stone, Hopkins L. Turney, C. H. Williams and Joseph L. Williams; XXVI Congress, 1839-41, John Bell, Julius W. Blackwell, Aaron V. Brown, William B. Campbell, William B. Carter, John W. Crockett, Meredith P. Gentry, Cave Johnson, Abraham McLellan, Hopkins L. Turney, Harvey M. Watterson, C. H. Williams and Joseph L. Williams; XXVII Congress, 1841-43, Thomas Arnold, Aaron V. Brown, Milton Brown, Thomas J. Campbell, William B. Campbell, Robert L. Caruthers, Meredith P. Gentry, Cave Johnson, Abraham McLellan, Hopkins L. Turney, Harvey M. Watterson, C. H. Williams and Joseph L. Williams; XXVIII Congress, 1843-45, John B. Ashe, Julius W. Blackwell, Aaron V. Brown, Milton Brown, Alvan Cullom, D. W. Dickinson, Andrew Johnson, Cave Johnson, George W. Jones, Joseph H. Peyton and William T. Senter; XXIX Congress, 1845-47, Milton Brown, Lucien B. Chase, William M. Cocke, John H. Crozier, Alvan Cullom, Edwin H. Ewing, Meredith P. Gentry, Andrew Johnson, George W. Jones, Barclay Martin, Frederick P. Stanton; XXX Congress, 1847-49, Washington Barrow, Lucien B. Chase, William M. Cocke, John H. Crozier, Meredith P. Gentry, William T. Haskell, Hugh L. W. Hill, Andrew Johnson, George W. Jones, Frederick P. Stanton and James H. Thomas; XXXI Congress, 1849-51, Josiah M. Anderson, Andrew Ewing, Meredith P. Gentry, Isham G. Harris, Andrew Johnson, George W. Jones, John H. Savage, Frederick P. Stanton, James H. Thomas, Albert G. Watkins and C. H. Williams; XXXII Congress, 1851-53, William M. Churchwell, William Cullom, Meredith P. Gentry, Isham G. Harris, Andrew Johnson, George W. Jones, William H. Polk, John H. Savage, Frederick P. Stanton, Albert G. Watkins and C. H. Williams; XXXIII Congress, 1853-55, Robert M. Bugg, William M. Churchwell, William Cullom, Emerson Etheridge, George W. Jones, Charles Ready, Samuel A. Smith, Frederick P. Stanton, Nathaniel G. Taylor and Felix K. Zollicoffer; XXXIV Congress, 1855-57, Emerson Etheridge, George W.

Jones, Charles Ready, Thomas Rivers, John H. Savage, Samuel A. Smith, William H. Sneed, A. G. Watkins, John V. Wright and Felix K. Zollicoffer; XXXV Congress, 1857-59, John D. C. Atkins, William T. Avery, George W. Jones, Horace Maynard, Charles Ready, John H. Savage, Samuel A. Smith, A. G. Watkins, John V. Wright and Felix K. Zollicoffer; XXXVI Congress, 1859-61, William T. Avery, Reese B. Brabson, Emerson Etheridge, Robert Hatton, Horace Maynard, Thomas A. R. Nelson, James M. Quarles, William B. Stokes, James H. Thomas and John V. Wright; XXXVII Congress, 1861-63, George W. Bridges,\* Andrew J. Clements† and Horace Maynard; XXXVIII Congress, 1863-65, vacant; XXXIX Congress, 1865-67, Samuel M. Arnell, William B. Campbell, Edmund Cooper, Isaac R. Hawkins, John W. Leftwich, Horace Maynard, William B. Stokes and Nathaniel J. Taylor; XL Congress, 1867-69, Samuel M. Arnell, Roderick R. Butler, Isaac R. Hawkins, Horace Maynard, James Mullins, David A. Nunn, William B. Stokes and John Trimble; XLI Congress, 1869-71, Samuel M. Arnell, Roderick R. Butler, Isaac R. Hawkins, Horace Maynard, William F. Prosser, William J. Smith, William B. Stokes and Lewis Tillman; XLII Congress, 1871-73, John M. Bright, Roderick R. Butler, Robert P. Caldwell, Abraham E. Garrett, Edward L. Galladay, Horace Maynard, William W. Vaughan and W. C. Whitthorne; XLIII Congress, 1873-75, John D. C. Atkins, John M. Bright, Roderick R. Butler, William Crutchfield, Horace H. Harrison, Barbour Lewis, Horace Maynard, David A. Nunn, Jacob M. Thornburgh and W. C. Whitthorne; XLIV Congress, 1875-77, John D. C. Atkins, John M. Bright, William P. Caldwell, G. G. Dibrell, John F. House, William McFarland, Haywood Y. Riddle, Jacob M. Thornburgh, W. C. Whitthorne and Casey Young; XLV Congress, 1877-79, J. D. C. Atkins, John M. Bright, W. P. Caldwell, George G. Dibrell, John F. House, James H. Randolph, W. M. Randolph, H. T. Riddle, J. M. Thornburgh, W. C. Whitthorne and Casey Young; XLVI Congress, 1879-81, R. L. Taylor, L. C. Houk, George G. Dibrell, Benton McMillin, John M. Bright, John F. House, W. C. Whitthorne, John D. C. Atkins, Charles B. Simonton and Casey Young; XLVII Congress, 1881-83, A. H. Pettibone, Leonidas C. Houk, George G. Dibrell, Benton McMillin, Richard Warner, John F. House, W. C. Whitthorne, John D. C. Atkins, Charles B. Simonton and William R. Moore; XLVIII Congress, 1883-85, A. H. Pettibone, L. C. Houk, George G. Dibrell, Benton McMillin, Richard Warner, A. J. Caldwell, John M. Taylor, Rice A. Pierce, Casey Young and John G. Ballentine; XLIX Congress, 1885-87, A. H. Pettibone, L. C. Houk, J. R. Neal, Benton McMillin,

\*Took his seat February 25, 1863.

†Took his seat January 13, 1862.

James D. Richardson, A. J. Caldwell, J. G. Ballentine, J. M. Taylor, P. G. Glass and Zachariah Taylor.

*Senators.*—IV Congress, 1796-97, William Blount and William Cocke; V Congress, 1797-99, William Blount<sup>1</sup>, William Cocke, Joseph Anderson, Andrew Jackson<sup>2</sup>, Daniel Smith; VI Congress, 1799-1801, Joseph Anderson and William Cocke; VII Congress, 1801-03, same; VIII Congress, 1803-05, same; IX Congress, 1805-07, Joseph Anderson and Daniel Smith; X Congress, 1807-09, same; XI Congress, 1809-11, Joseph Anderson, Daniel Smith<sup>3</sup> and Jenkin Whiteside<sup>4</sup>; XII Congress, 1811-13, Joseph Anderson and George W. Campbell; XIII Congress, 1813-15, Joseph Anderson, George W. Campbell<sup>5</sup> and Jesse Wharton; XIV Congress, 1815-17, George W. Campbell and John Williams; XV Congress, 1817-19, George W. Campbell<sup>6</sup>, John Williams and John H. Eaton; XVI Congress, 1819-21, John H. Eaton and John Williams; XVII Congress, 1821-23, same; XVIII Congress, 1823-25, John H. Eaton and Andrew Jackson; XIX Congress, 1825-27, John H. Eaton, Andrew Jackson<sup>7</sup> and Hugh Lawson White; XX Congress, 1827-29, John H. Eaton and Hugh L. White; XXI Congress, 1829-31, John H. Eaton<sup>8</sup>, Hugh L. White and Felix Grundy; XXII Congress, 1831-33, Felix Grundy and Hugh L. White; XXIII Congress, 1833-35, same; XXIV Congress, 1835-37, same; XXV Congress, 1837-39, Hugh L. White, Felix Grundy<sup>9</sup> and Ephraim H. Foster; XXVI Congress, 1839-41, Hugh L. White<sup>10</sup>, Felix Grundy<sup>11</sup>, Alexander Anderson and A. O. P. Nicholson; XXVII Congress, 1841-43, A. O. P. Nicholson<sup>12</sup>; XXVIII Congress, 1843-45, Ephraim H. Foster and Spencer Jarnagin; XXIX Congress, 1845-47, Spencer Jarnagin and Hopkins L. Turney; XXX Congress, 1847-49, John Bell and Hopkins L. Turney; XXXI Congress, 1849-51, same; XXXII Congress, 1851-53, John Bell and James C. Jones; XXXIII Congress, 1853-55, same; XXXIV Congress, 1855-57, same; XXXV Congress, 1857-59, John Bell and Andrew Johnson; XXXVI Congress, 1859-61, Andrew Johnson and A. O. P. Nicholson; XXXVII Congress, 1861-63, Andrew Johnson<sup>13</sup>; XXXVIII Congress, 1863-65, vacant; XXXIX Congress, 1865-67, Joseph S. Fowler and David T. Patterson; XL Congress, 1867-69, same; XLI Congress, 1869-71, William G. Brownlow and Joseph S. Fowler; XLII Congress, 1871-73, William G. Brownlow and Henry Cooper; XLIII Congress, 1873-75, same; XLIV Congress, 1875-77, James E. Bailey, Henry Cooper, Andrew Johnson<sup>14</sup> and David M. Key<sup>15</sup>;

1 Expelled for high misdemeanors, July 8, 1797. 2 Resigned in 1798. 3 Resigned in 1809. 4 Resigned in 1811. 5 Resigned in 1814. 6 Resigned in 1818. 7 Resigned in 1825. 8 Resigned in 1829. 9 Resigned in 1838. 10 Resigned in 1840. 11 Died December 19, 1840. 12 Other seat vacant. 13 Other seat vacant. 14 Died July 31, 1875. 15 Appointed *pro tem.* in place of Andrew Johnson.



XLV Congress, 1877-79, James E. Bailey and Isham G. Harris; XLVI Congress, 1879-81, same; XLVII Congress, 1881-83, Isham G. Harris and Howell E. Jackson; XLVIII Congress, 1883-85, same; XLIX Congress, 1885-87, same.

#### GUBERNATORIAL ELECTION RETURNS.

1815, Robert Weakley, 6,028; Joseph McMinn, 14,980<sup>1</sup>. 1817, Robert C. Foster, 15,460; Joseph McMinn, 28,402. 1819, Enoch Parsons, 8,079; Joseph McMinn, 33,524. 1821, Edward Ward, 7,294; William Carroll, 31,029. 1823, No opposition; William Carroll, 32,597. 1825, no opposition; William Carroll. 1827, Newton Cannon; Samuel Houston<sup>2</sup>. 1829, no opposition; William Carroll, 57,551. 1831, no opposition; William Carroll. 1833, no opposition; William Carroll, 51,184. 1835, Newton Cannon, 42,795; William Carroll, 35,247. 1837, Newton Cannon, 52,660; — Armstrong, 32,695. 1839, Newton Cannon, 50,841; James K. Polk, 52,899. 1841, James C. Jones, 53,586; James K. Polk, 50,313. 1843, James C. Jones, 57,491; James K. Polk, 52,692. 1845, Ephraim H. Foster, 56,646; Aaron V. Brown, 58,269. 1847, Niell S. Brown, 61,372; Aaron V. Brown, 60,004. 1849, Niell S. Brown, 60,350; William Trousdale, 61,740. 1851, William B. Campbell, 63,333; William Trousdale, 61,673. 1853, Gustav A. Henry, 61,163; Andrew Johnson, 63,413. 1855, Meredith P. Gentry, 65,343; Andrew Johnson, 67,499. 1857, Robert Hatton, 59,807; Isham G. Harris, 71,178. 1859, John Netherland, 68,042; Isham G. Harris, 76,073. 1861, Isham G. Harris, 70,273 (Confederate); W. H. Polk, 37,915. 1865, William G. Brownlow, 23,222 (Republican); William B. Campbell, 25. 1867, William G. Brownlow, 74,034; Emerson Etheridge, 22,250. 1869, D. W. C. Senter, 120,234; — Stokes, 55,046. 1870, W. H. Wisener, 41,500; J. C. Brown, 78,979. 1872, A. A. Freeman, 84,089; John C. Brown, 97,700. 1874, Horace Maynard, 55,847; James D. Porter, 105,061; — Brooks, 222. 1876, George Maney, 10,436; James D. Porter, 123,740; Dorsey B. Thomas, 73,693<sup>3</sup>; W. F. Yardley, 2,165<sup>4</sup>. 1878, E. M. Wight, 42,328; A. S. Marks, 89,018; R. M. Edwards, 15,196<sup>5</sup>. 1880, Alvin Hawkins, 102,969; John V. Wright, 79,191; S. F. Wilson, 57,424<sup>6</sup>; R. M. Edwards, 3,641<sup>5</sup>. 1882, Alvin Hawkins, 90,660; William B. Bate, 118,821; Joseph H. Fussell, 4,599<sup>7</sup>; John R. Beasley, 9,572<sup>5</sup>. 1884, Frank T. Ried, 125,276; William B. Bate, 132,201; W. J. Buchanan, 636<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Also Jesse Wharton, 5,918; Robert C. Foster, 3,626, and Gen. Johnson, 2,417. <sup>2</sup> Houston's majority, 12,000. <sup>3</sup> Independent Democrat. <sup>4</sup> Independent Republican. <sup>5</sup> Greenback. <sup>6</sup> "Low-Tax" Democrat. <sup>7</sup> "State Credit" or "Sky-blue" Democrat.

The following table shows the total number and amount of bonds issued by the State from 1832 to 1881, the rate of interest, and the purpose for which they were issued.

	Number.	Rate.	Amount.
Union Bank of Tennessee.....	500	5	\$500,000 00
*Bank of Tennessee.....	2,500	6	2,500,000 00
Nashville, Murfreesboro & Shelbyville Turnpike Company.....	67	5 $\frac{1}{4}$	66,666 66
Gallatin Turnpike Company.....	132	5 $\frac{1}{4}$	132,500 00
Chambers & Purdy Turnpike Company.....	7	5	7,000 00
Franklin & Columbia Turnpike Company.....	75	5	75,900 00
Columbia Central Turnpike Company.....	150	5	150,000 00
Nashville & Charlotte Turnpike Company.....	30	5	30,000 00
Fayetteville & Shelbyville Turnpike Company.....	16	5	16,000 00
Pelham & Jasper Turnpike Company.....	44	5	44,000 00
Columbia, Pulaski & Elkton Turnpike Company.....	127	5	127,600 00
Clarksville & Russellville Turnpike Company.....	37	5	37,500 00
Forked Deer Turnpike Company.....	7	5	7,000 00
Big Hatchie Turnpike Company.....	14	5	14,000 00
Gallatin & Cumberland Turnpike Company.....	6	5	6,000 00
Nolensville Turnpike Company.....	49	5	49,000 00
Ashport Turnpike Company.....	35	6	35,000 00
Fulton Turnpike Company.....	6	5	6,000 00
Lebanon & Sparta Turnpike Company.....	85	5	85,000 00
Nashville & Kentucky Turnpike Company.....	50	5	50,000 00
Central Southern Railroad Company.....	596	6	596,000 00
Memphis & Ohio Railroad Company.....	1,999	6	1,999,000 00
Mississippi & Tennessee Railroad Company.....	398	6	398,000 00
Winchester & Alabama Railroad Company.....	1,289	6	1,289,000 00
Memphis, Clarksville & Louisville Railroad Company.....	1,582	6	1,582,000 00
Edgeland & Kentucky Railroad Company.....	1,180	6	1,180,000 00
Rogersville & Jefferson Railroad Company.....	385	6	385,000 00
Mobile & Ohio Railroad Company.....	1,296	6	1,296,000 00
Knoxville & Kentucky Railroad Company.....	2,350	6	2,350,000 00
Cincinnati, Cumberland Gap & Charleston Railroad Company.....	1,373	6	1,373,000 00
Knoxville & Charleston Railroad Company.....	710	6	710,000 00
Nashville & Northwestern Railroad Company.....	3,222	6	3,222,000 00
Nashville & Chattanooga Railroad Company.....	395	6	395,000 00
Tennessee & Pacific Railroad Company.....	1,185	6	1,185,000 00
Mississippi Central Railroad Company.....	1,124	6	1,124,000 00
Southern Railroad Company (Southwestern).....	503	6	503,000 00
East Tennessee & Western North Carolina Railroad Company.....	400	6	400,000 00
†Mineral Home Railroad Company.....	100	6	100,000 00
Evansville, Henderson & Nashville Railroad Company.....	200	6	200,000 00
Nashville & Decatur Railroad Company.....	350	6	350,000 00
Louisville, Cincinnati & Charleston Railroad Company.....	32	6	32,000 00
Capitol bonds.....	1,166	6	866,000 00
Agricultural Bureau bonds.....	30	6	30,000 00
Murfreesboro & Manchester Turnpike Company.....	49	5	49,000 00
Harpeth Turnpike Company.....	39	5	39,000 00
Cumberland & Stone's River Turnpike Company.....	107	5	107,000 00
Lebanon & Nashville Turnpike Company.....	81	5 $\frac{1}{4}$	81,000 00
Jefferson Turnpike Company.....	45	5	45,000 00
Carthage & Hartsville Turnpike Company.....	6	6	6,000 00
Carthage & Rome Turnpike Company.....	8	6	8,000 00
Carthage, Alexander & Red Sulphur Turnpike Company.....	16	6	16,000 00
Dyersburg & Mississippi Turnpike Company.....	25	6	25,000 00
Bristol & Kendrick's Creek Turnpike Company.....	20	6	20,000 00
Rogersville & Little War Gap Turnpike Company.....	20	6	20,000 00
New Market Turnpike Company.....	15	6	15,000 00
Jacksboro & Powell's Valley Turnpike Company.....	8	6	8,000 00
Mulberry & Rogersville Turnpike Company.....	50	6	50,000 00
Mansker's Creek & Springfield Turnpike Company.....	10	6	10,000 00
East Tennessee & Georgia Railroad Company.....	1,614	5	1,614,000 00
Hiwassee Railroad Company.....	449	5	449,000 00
Memphis & Charleston Railroad Company.....	1,700	6	1,700,000 00
East Tennessee & Virginia Railroad Company.....	2,202	6	2,202,000 00
Louisville & Nashville Railroad Company.....	445	6	445,000 00
La Grange & Memphis Railroad Company.....	200	5 $\frac{1}{4}$	217,250 00
McMinnville & Manchester Railroad Company.....	772	6	772,000 00
Tennessee & Alabama Railroad Company.....	1,173	6	1,173,000 00
Hermitage bonds.....	48	6	48,000 00
Funding bonds, act of 1866.....	4,941	6	4,941,000 00
Funding bonds, act of 1868.....	2,200	6	2,200,000 00
New series funding bonds, act of 1873.....	6,657	6	6,641,000 00
Renewal bonds.....	697	6	697,000 00
Grand total.....			\$49,102,416.66

\* Only 1,000 of these bonds were sold.

† Rejected

COUNTIES.	1832.		1836.		1840.		1844.		1848.		1852.		1856.		1860.		1868.		1872.		1876.		1880.		1884.	
	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.	Democrat.	Whig.
Anderson	261	16	81	221	626	325	620	250	60	267	602	348	649	339	614	30	143	503	343	638	643	782	574	1058	604	1456
Bedford	1342	46	1014	1500	1878	1326	1455	1381	1497	1356	1390	1788	1557	1389	1506	35	31	1064	1449	1782	1635	2568	1734	2504	2053	1883
Benton	176	4	153	381	301	481	293	459	392	485	340	632	453	731	452	31	31	175	175	737	226	1021	771	383	1091	590
Bledsoe	1342	46	1014	1500	1878	1326	1455	1381	1497	1356	1390	1788	1557	1389	1506	35	31	1064	1449	1782	1635	2568	1734	2504	2053	1883
Bland	652	36	153	564	640	1198	735	1046	663	905	566	827	623	1246	566	426	47	112	1361	570	1184	866	1248	872	1506	419
Boyd	380	.....	.....	467	958	577	760	778	547	1078	658	759	710	901	265	1084	580	779	709	937	665	932	141	892	154	1394
Campbell	.....	147	137	328	481	318	337	279	473	251	313	434	345	271	345	20	40	550	142	604	379	709	314	1038	300	
Cannon	577	74	202	862	332	1361	524	1356	560	1493	863	1710	727	453	922	445	20	177	131	958	310	1113	1035	300	1031	515
Carroll	509	7	46	495	99	837	177	739	129	745	130	585	728	205	859	15	30	761	165	1174	359	1186	405	1644	180	2319
Chatham	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	465	424	.....	.....	80	73	703	284	899	267	794	291	86	959	335
Chester	338	3	90	329	733	631	857	744	700	519	503	735	513	718	614	10	48	591	425	730	762	948	927	1212	921	1330
Clay	86	.....	7	309	80	917	187	844	189	815	196	743	439	795	473	933	13	.....	389	389	168	614	130	567	177	148
Cocke	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	205	990	307	1101	361	7	297	110	1027	223	1355	172	1766	198	115
Coffee	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Crockett	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Cumberland	827	156	983	1334	1274	1083	2266	1976	2628	2068	2617	2074	3259	2432	3850	383	6	242	153	213	249	287	371	20	312	485
Davidson	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
De Kalb	450	12	426	203	396	491	488	573	571	588	559	795	554	882	677	13	262	626	759	638	1050	391	1325	867	734	1117
Dickson	116	6	55	146	290	445	272	356	271	383	411	508	599	666	450	798	154	144	292	391	1441	446	1169	497	292	1330
Dyer	536	26	79	886	902	1140	1151	1205	1050	1217	1084	1006	1082	364	933	588	672	821	1309	351	1403	110	1060	248	265	1542
Fayette	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Fentress	946	29	1199	448	1461	643	1123	362	1207	390	1133	330	1427	331	1526	388	26	118	82	1747	256	2071	362	314	511	2920
Franklin	183	2	152	702	418	1272	611	1320	688	1423	901	1370	1832	1039	1909	241	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Gibson	1020	3	796	908	1242	1190	1387	1301	1511	1389	1447	1303	1584	1236	1511	1313	86	611	561	1924	2039	3782	1867	2809	2040	77
Giles	345	1	16	601	449	1095	548	998	489	1094	477	852	736	1117	667	1047	17	129	920	540	689	782	1045	870	1197	35
Granger	686	4	724	695	1559	1032	1701	1483	993	1301	1825	880	2034	1048	1048	38	656	1616	1259	1358	1809	1836	2060	2303	241	2507
Greene	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Grundy	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Hamilton	100	.....	158	215	473	606	624	644	685	648	774	1051	1064	820	1074	165	393	1273	1098	1630	1613	1888	1965	1060	117	585
Hancock	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Hardin	451	14	531	459	860	676	1077	689	501	723	1024	1117	1333	691	555	767	754	810	506	734	1248	988	1418	1566	1409	185
Harden	200	7	141	252	581	562	732	505	770	621	808	643	905	718	671	142	236	698	695	973	988	1071	972	1345	6	1087
Hawkins	487	4	481	770	1251	1053	1388	1173	1243	1252	831	778	1144	916	1155	1067	167	84	950	934	1113	1333	1473	1389	1942	181
Haywood	416	25	266	551	576	807	668	756	672	800	732	790	842	338	885	453	811	1382	1345	2992	1894	3018	1766	3557	131	1529
Henderson	662	99	498	645	1092	862	1212	835	1349	860	899	1827	897	1087	887	24	164	168	1940	648	2025	800	2305	1013	165	1478
Henry	164	1	621	149	959	293	1034	255	988	301	839	241	1086	238	1087	273	16	104	97	891	235	1757	1157	392	62	1135
Hickman	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Houston	253	2	175	124	333	191	523	305	482	309	471	263	695	280	654	350	14	119	102	1011	175	1502	197	325	245	72
Humphreys	238	.....	263	710	591	1392	807	1211	801	1269	823	1170	1180	1261	1050	1182	33	513	436	58	1357	58	1299	136	27	1484
Humphreys	258	.....	283	710	591	1392	807	1211	801	1269	823	1170	1180	1261	1050	1182	33	513	436	58	1357	58	1299	136	27	1484





## AGGREGATE POPULATION OF THE STATE.

COUNTIES.	1790.	1800.	1810.	1820.	1830.	1840.	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Anderson.....			3959	4668	5310	5638	6938	7068	8704	10820
Bedford.....			8242	16012	30396	20546	21511	21584	24333	26025
Benton.....						4772	6315	8463	8234	9780
Bledsoe.....			3259	5005	4648	5676	5959	4459	4870	5617
Blount.....		5587	8839	11258	11028	11745	12424	13270	14237	15985
Bradley.....						7385	12259	11701	11652	12124
Campbell.....			2668	4224	5110	6149	6068	6712	7445	10065
Cannon.....						7163	8982	9509	10502	11859
Carroll.....					9397	12362	15967	17437	19447	22102
Carters.....		4813	4190	4835	6414	5372	6296	7124	7909	10019
Cheatham.....								7258	6678	7956
Chestnut.....										
Claiborne.....			4798	5508	8470	9474	9369	9643	9321	9373
Clay.....										6987
Cooke.....			5154	4392	6017	6992	8300	10408	12458	14808
Coffee.....						8184	8351	9689	10237	12894
Crockett.....										14109
Cumberland.....								3460	3461	4538
Davidson.....	3459	9965	15608	20154	28122	30500	38882	47055	62897	79026
Decatur.....							6003	6276	7772	8498
De Kalb.....						5868	8016	10573	11425	14813
Dickson.....			4516	5190	7265	7074	8404	9982	9340	12460
Dyer.....					1904	4484	6361	10536	13706	15118
Fayette.....					8652	21501	26719	24327	26145	31871
Fentress.....					2748	3550	4454	5054	4717	5941
Franklin.....			5730	16571	15620	12033	13763	13848	14970	17178
Gibson.....					5801	13689	19548	21777	25666	32685
Giles.....			4546	12558	18703	21494	25949	26166	32413	36014
Grainger.....		7367	6397	7651	10066	10572	17824	19004	21668	12384
Greene.....	7741	7610	9713	11324	14410	16076	17824	19004	21668	24005
Grundy.....							2773	3093	3250	4592
Hamblen.....										10187
Hamilton.....				821	2276	8175	10075	13258	17241	23642
Hancock.....							5660	7020	7148	9098
Hardeman.....					11655	14563	17456	17769	18074	22921
Hardin.....			1462	4868	8245	10328	11214	11768	14793	14793
Hawkins.....	6970	6563	7643	10949	13683	15635	13370	16162	15837	20610
Haywood.....					5334	13870	17259	19232	25094	26053
Henderson.....					8748	11875	13164	14491	14217	17430
Henry.....					12249	14906	18233	19133	20380	22142
Hickman.....			2583	6080	8119	8618	9397	9312	9856	12095
Houston.....										4295
Humphreys.....			1511	4067	6187	5195	6422	9096	9326	11379
Jackson.....			5401	7593	9698	12872	15673	11725	12583	12098
James.....										5187
Jefferson.....		9017	7309	8953	11801	12076	13204	16043	19476	15846
Johnson.....						2658	3705	5018	5852	7766
Knox.....		12446	10171	13034	14598	15485	18807	22813	28990	39124
Lake.....									2428	3965
Lauderdale.....						3435	5169	7559	10838	14913
Lawrence.....				3271	5411	7121	9280	9320	7601	10383
Lewis.....							4438	2241	1986	2181
Lincoln.....			6104	14761	22075	21493	23492	22828	28050	26960
Loudon.....										9148
Macon.....							6948	7290	6633	9321
Madison.....					11594	16530	21470	21535	23480	30874
Marion.....				3888	5508	6070	6314	6190	6841	10910
Marshall.....						14555	15616	14592	16207	19259
Maury.....			10359	22089	27665	28186	29520	32498	36289	39904
McMinn.....			1623	14460	12719	13006	13555	13969	13969	15064
McNairy.....				5697	9385	12864	14732	12726	12726	17271
Meigs.....					4794	4879	4667	4511	7117	
Monroe.....				2529	13708	12056	11874	12607	12589	14283
* Montgomery.....	13-7	2899	8021	12219	14349	16927	21045	20895	24747	28461
Moore.....										6233
Morgan.....				1076	2582	2050	3430	3353	2969	5136
Obion.....					2099	4814	7633	12817	15584	22912
Overton.....			5643	7128	8242	9279	11211	12637	11297	12133
Perry.....				2384	7094	7419	5821	6042	6925	7174
Pickett.....										
Polk.....										
Putnam.....						3570	6338			
Rhea.....								8726	7369	7263
Roane.....			2504	4215	8186	3385	4415	4991	5538	7073
Robertson.....			5581	7895	11341	10948	12185	13583	15622	15237
Rutherford.....		4280	7270	9938	13872	13801	16145	15265	16166	18862
Scott.....			10265	19552	26134	14280	29122	27918	33289	36741
Sequatchie.....						1905	3519	4054	6021	6021
Sevier.....								2120	2335	2565
Shelby.....	3619	3419	4595	4772	5717	6442	6920	9122	11028	15541
				364	5648	14721	31157	48092	76378	78430

\*Tennessee County.

## AGGREGATE POPULATION OF THE STATE.

COUNTIES.	1790.	1800.	1810.	1820.	1830.	1840.	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Smith.....		4294	11649	17580	19906	21179	18412	16357	15994	17799
Stewart.....			4262	8397	6968	8587	9719	9896	12019	12690
Sullivan.....	4447	10218	6847	7015	10073	10736	11742	13552	13136	18321
Sumner.....	2196	4616	13729	19211	20569	22445	22717	22030	23711	23625
Tipton.....					5317	6800	8887	10705	14884	21033
Trousdale.....										6646
Unicoi.....										3645
Union.....								6117	7605	10260
Van Buren.....							2674	2581	2725	2933
Warren.....			5725	10384	15210	10803	10179	11147	12714	14079
Washington.....	5872	6379	7740	9557	10995	11751	13861	14829	16317	16181
Wayne.....				2459	6013	7705	8170	9115	10209	11301
Weakley.....					4797	9870	14608	18216	20755	24538
White.....			4028	8701	9967	10747	11444	9381	9375	11176
Williamson.....		2868	13153	20640	26638	27006	27201	23827	25328	28313
Wilson.....		3261	11952	18730	25472	24460	27443	26072	25881	28747
Totals.....	35691	105602	261727	422771	681904	829210	1002717	1109801	1258520	1542359

## THE FORMATION OF COUNTIES.

NAMES.	Date of Crea- tion.	FROM WHAT FORMED.	IN WHOSE HONOR NAMED.
Washington .....	1777	Wilkes and Burke Cos., N. C.....	Gen. Geo. Washington.
Sullivan.....	1779	Washington Co.....	Gen. John Sullivan.
Greene.....	1783	Washington Co.....	Gen. Nathaniel Greene.
Davidson.....	1783	Greene Co.....	Gen. William Davidson.
Sumner.....	1786	Davidson Co.....	Col. Jethro Sumner.
Hawkins.....	1786	Sullivan Co.....	
Tennessee .....	1788	Davidson Co.....	Indian name Tennessee:
Jefferson.....	1792	Greene and Hawkins Cos.....	Thomas Jefferson.
Knox.....	1792	Greene and Hawkins Cos.....	Gen. Henry Knox.
Sevier.....	1794	Jefferson Co.....	Gov. John Sevier.
Blount.....	1795	Knox Co.....	Gov. William Blount.
Carter.....	1796	Washington Co.....	Gen. Landon Carter.
Grainger.....	1796	Hawkins and Knox Cos.....	Mary Grainger (Mrs. Blount).
Montgomery.....	1796	Tennessee Co.....	Col. John Montgomery.
Robertson.....	1796	Tennessee Co.....	Gen. James Robertson.
Cocke.....	1797	Jefferson Co.....	Gen. William Cocke.
Smith.....	1799	Sumner Co.....	Gen. Daniel Smith.
Wilson.....	1799	Sumner Co.....	Maj. David Wilson.
Williamson.....	1799	Davidson Co.....	Gen. Williamson, of N. C.
Anderson.....	1801	Knox and Grainger Cos.....	Hon. Joseph Anderson.
Roane.....	1801	Knox Co.....	Gov. Archibald Roane.
Claiborne.....	1801	Grainger and Hawkins Cos. ....	
Jackson.....	1801	Smith Co.....	Gen. Andrew Jackson.
Dickson.....	1803	Robertson and Montgomery Cos.....	William Dickson.
Stewart.....	1803	Montgomery Co.....	Duncan Stewart.
Rutherford.....	1803	Davidson Co.....	Gen. Rutherford of N. C.
Campbell.....	1806	Anderson and Claiborne Cos.....	Col. Arthur Campbell.
Overton.....	1806	Jackson Co.....	
White.....	1806	Wilson, Smith, Jackson & Overton Cos.....	
Hickman.....	1807	Dickson Co.....	Edmund Hickman, surveyor.
Rhea.....	1807	Roane Co.....	
Bledsoe.....	1807	Roane Co.....	
Franklin.....	1807	Warren and Bedford Cos.....	
Bedford.....	1807	Rutherford Co.....	Thomas Bedford.
Warren.....	1807	White Co.....	
Maury.....	1807	Williamson Co.....	Abram Maury.
Humphreys.....	1809	Stewart Co.....	Parry W. Humphreys.
Lincoln.....	1809	Bedford Co.....	Gen. Benjamin Lincoln.
Giles.....	1809	Maury Co.....	Gen. William B. Giles, of Va.
Morgan.....	1817	Roane Co.....	Gen. Daniel Morgan.
Lawrence.....	1817	Hickman and Maury Cos.....	Com. James Lawrence.
Marion.....	1817	Cherokee Lands .....	Gen. Francis Marion.
Wayne.....	1817	Hickman and Humphreys Cos.....	Gen. Anthony Wayne.
Hardin.....	1819	Western Dist. under control of Stewart and Wayne Cos.....	Col. Joseph Hardin.
Monroe.....	1819	Cherokee Lands .....	James Monroe.
McMinn.....	1819	Cherokee Lands .....	Gov. Joseph McMinn.
Perry.....	1819	Hickman Co.....	Com. Oliver H. Perry.
Shelby.....	1819	Hardin Co.....	Isaac Shelby.
Hamilton.....	1819	Rhea Co.....	Alexander Hamilton.
Henry.....	1821	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co.	Patrick Henry.



## THE FORMATION OF COUNTIES.

NAMES.	Date of Crea- tion.	FROM WHAT FORMED.	IN WHOSE HONOR NAMED.
Carroll.....	1821	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co	Gov. William Carroll.
Madison.....	1821	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co.	James Madison.
Henderson.....	1821	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co	
Hardeman.....	1823	Hardin Co., .....	Col. Thomas J. Hardeman.
Haywood.....	1823	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co	Judge John Haywood.
Dyer.....	1823	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co.	Col. Henry Dyer.
Gibson.....	1823	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co.	Col. Thomas Gibson.
Weakley.....	1823	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co.	
Fentress.....	1823	Overton and Morgan Cos.....	
Obion.....	1823	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co.	From Obion River.
Tipton.....	1823	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co.	Jacob Tipton.
McNairy.....	1823	Western Dist. under control of Stewart Co.	Judge John McNairy
Fayette.....	1824	Hardeman and Shelby Cos.....	
Coffee.....	1835	Warren, Franklin and Bedford Cos.....	
Lauderdale.....	1835		Col. James Lauderdale.
Benton.....	1835	Humphreys and Henry Cos.....	Thomas H. Benton.
Johnson.....	1835	Carter Co.....	
Meigs.....	1835		Return J. Meigs.
Cannon.....	1835		Gov. Newton Cannon.
Marshall.....	1835	Bedford, Maury, Lincoln and Giles Cos....	
Bradley.....	1835		
DeKalb.....	1837	White, Warren, Cannon, Wilson, Jackson.	Baron De Kalb.
Polk.....	1839	Bradley and McMinn Cos.....	James K. Polk.
Van Buren.....	1840	White, Warren and Bledsoe Cos.....	Martin Van Buren.
Putnam.....	1842	White, Overton, Jackson, Smith, DeKalb..	Israel Putnam.
Macon.....	1842	Smith and Sumner Cos.....	
Lewis.....	1843	Maury, Lawrence, Wayne and Hickman...	Meriwether Lewis.
Grundy.....	1844	Franklin, Coffee and Warren Cos.....	Felix Grundy.
Hancock.....	1844	Claiborne and Hawkins Cos.....	John Hancock.
Decatur.....	1845	Perry Co.....	Com. Stephen Decatur
Scott.....	1849	Anderson, Campbell, Fentress and Morgan	Gen. Winfield Scott.
*Union.....	1850	Grainger, Claiborne, Campbell, Anderson and Knox Cos.....	
Cumberland.....	1855	White, Van Buren, Bledsoe, Rhea, Roane, Morgan and Putnam Cos.....	
Cheatham.....	1856	Davidson, Robertson and Montgomery Cos.	
Sequatchie.....	1857	Hamilton Co.....	
Crockett.....	1870	Gibson, Haywood, Dyer and Madison Cos.	David Crockett.
Hamblen.....	1870	Grainger, Jefferson and Hawkins Cos.....	Hezekiah Hamblen.
Trousdale.....	1870	Sumner, Macon, Smith and Williamson Cos.	Gov. William Trousdale.
Clay.....	1870	Jackson and Overton Cos.....	Henry Clay.
Lake.....	1870	Obion Co.....	For Obion Lake.
Loudon.....	1870	Roane, Monroe and Blount Cos.....	Fort Loudon.
Houston.....	1871	Dickson, Humphreys, Stewart and Mont- gomery Cos.....	Gen. Sam Houston.
James.....	1871	Hamilton and Bradley Cos.....	Jesse J. James.
Moore.....	1872	Lincoln and Franklin Cos.....	
Unicoi.....	1875	Washington and Carter Cos.....	
Pickett.....	1879	Overton and Fentress Cos.....	
Chester.....	1879	Madison, Henderson, McNairy and Har- deman Cos.....	

\*This, as well as several other counties, was not organized for a few years after the passage of the act creating it.

## CHAPTER XII.

THE BENCH AND BAR OF TENNESSEE—THE JUDICIAL SYSTEM OF THE WATAUGA ASSOCIATION—THE COURTS ESTABLISHED BY NORTH CAROLINA—EXTRACTS FROM THE EARLY RECORDS—JURISDICTION—THE CONFLICT OF AUTHORITY AT WATAUGA—COUNTY, DISTRICT, SUPREME AND UNITED STATES COURTS—JUDICIAL PROCEDURE UNDER THE TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENT—THE ADMINISTRATION OF JUSTICE UNDER THE CONSTITUTIONS—EXPENSES OF THE JUDICIARY—ILLUSTRATIVE ANECDOTES—EQUITY AND APPELLATE TRIBUNALS—FORMATION OF CIRCUITS—PROFESSIONAL CHARACTER OF THE MORE EMINENT PRACTITIONERS.

THE early judicial system of Tennessee was modeled after that of North Carolina. In fact the system was established while the Territory was still under the jurisdiction of that State. But the first court established in what is now Tennessee was an entirely original creation of the Watauga settlers, and was formed to meet the exigencies of that frontier colony. It consisted of five members, embracing, it is believed, the following persons: John Carter, Charles Robertson, James Robertson, Zach Isbell and John Sevier, with W. Tatham, as clerk. The jurisdiction of this court included the legislative, the judicial and the executive functions of the infant government. All of the judges, or commissioners as they were sometimes called, were men of distinguished ability, and under their rule the colony experienced a peace and prosperity which it did not again know for many years. This court continued to exercise its authority until 1777, when in April of that year the General Assembly of North Carolina passed an act for the establishment of courts of pleas and quarter sessions, and also for appointing and commissioning justices of the peace and sheriffs for the several courts in the district of Washington. In the following November the district of Washington was organized into a county. The act and its amendments establishing the court of pleas and quarter session defined their jurisdiction as follows: "The court of pleas and quarter session shall have original jurisdiction to hear all cases whatsoever at the common law within their respective counties when the debt exceeds £5, breaches of the peace and other misdemeanors of what kind soever of an inferior nature, and all actions of detinue, trover, suits for filial portions, legacies and distributive shares of intestate estates and all other matters relating thereto." In addition to this they were invested with the powers and duties of a court of probate, and later the establishment of roads, ferries and the like was imposed upon them. They also had appellate jurisdiction in all cases tried before a

single justice. This court was composed of all the magistrates within its jurisdiction, all of whom sat together, but any three of whom were a sufficient number to transact business. A single justice had original jurisdiction to hear all cases brought for debt of £5 or under, and could also try all misdemeanor cases coming under the jurisdiction of the court of pleas and quarter sessions. Superior courts were established by the General Assembly of North Carolina in 1767. They were composed of three judges, two of whom were sufficient to hold court. They had original jurisdiction in cases brought for debts of £100 or more, where the parties to the suit lived in the same district. If the parties lived in different districts the limit was placed at £50. These courts also had original jurisdiction over all crimes of a serious nature, and appellate jurisdiction in all cases from the courts of pleas and quarter sessions.

The first court of pleas and quarter sessions in Washington County met in February, 1778. The following extract is from the journal of that court at its first session, Washington County, February 23. "*Court Journal*: At a court begun and held for the county of Washington, February 23, 1778; Present, John Carter, chairman; John Sevier, Jacob Womack, Robert Lucas, Andrew Greer, John Shelby, George Russell, William Bean, Zachariah Isbell, John McNabb, Thomas Houghton, William Clark, John McMahan, Benjamin Gist, John Chisholm, Joseph Willson, William Cobb, James Stuart, Michael Woods, Richard White, Benjamin Willson, James Robertson and Valentine Sevier, Esquires. On Tuesday, next day, John Sevier was chosen clerk of the county; Valentine Sevier, sheriff; James Stuart, surveyor; John Carter, entry taker; John McMahan, register; Jacob Womack, stray master, and John McNabb, coroner. William Cocke, by W. Avery, moved to be admitted clerk of Washington County, which motion was rejected by the court, knowing that John Sevier is entitled to the office. The following extracts serve to show the prompt and vigorous manner in which this court dispensed justice:

THE STATE, }  
     *vs.*        }  
     —        } IN TORYISM.

It is the opinion of the court that the defendant be imprisoned during the present war with Great Britain, and the sheriff take the whole of his estate into custody, which must be valued by a jury at the next court, one-half of said estate to be kept by said sheriff for the use of the State, and the other half to be remitted to the family of defendant.

The following also appears upon the records of the Washington County Court:

On motion of E. Dunlap, State's attorney, that J. H., for his ill practices in harboring and abetting disorderly persons who are prejudicial, and inimical to the common cause of liberty, and frequently disturbing our tranquility in general, be imprisoned for a term of



one year. The court, duly considering the allegations alleged and objected against the said J. H., are of opinion that for his disorderly practices as aforesaid, from time to time, and to prevent the further and future practice of the same pernicious nature, do order him to be imprisoned for the term of one year, and is, accordingly, ordered into the custody of the sheriff. On motion of E. Dunlap, Esq., that a sum of money of £1,500 current money due from R. C. to said J. H. for two negroes, be retained in the hands of said R. C., as there is sufficient reason to believe that the said J. H.'s estate will be confiscated to the use of the State for his misdemeanors, etc. The court, considering the case, are of opinion that the said moneys ought to be retained. On motion that commissioners ought to be appointed to take into possession such property as shall be confiscated. The court, on taking the same under consideration, do nominate and appoint John Sevier, Jesse Walton and Zachariah Isbell, Esqs., for the aforesaid purpose.

In some instances the action of these courts may have assumed or encroached upon the legislative prerogative, but these were stormy times and rigorous and energetic measures were necessary. In 1782 the district of Salisbury was divided, and the district of Morgan, which included Washington and Sullivan Counties, was established. Section 5 of the act creating the district is as follows:

AND WHEREAS, The extensive mountains that lie desolate between the inhabited parts of Washington and the inhabited parts of Berke Counties make the transportation of criminals from the former to the latter difficult, and on the way many frequently find means to break custody and escape; *Wherefore*, that offenders in said counties of Washington and Sullivan may be more easily and certainly brought to justice, *Be it enacted by the authority aforesaid*, that one of the judges of the superior court and some other gentleman commissioned for the purpose, or one of them, twice in every year at the court house in Washington County, sit and hold a court of oyer and terminer and general gaol delivery for the trial of all criminal cases whatsoever within the limits of the courts of Washington and Sullivan Counties, one session thereof, beginning on the 15th day of February, and the other on the 15th day of August, and every session shall be continued by adjournment for five days exclusive of Sunday, unless the business shall be sooner finished, and said court shall possess and exercise as full and ample power and authority in all criminal matters within the limits aforesaid as the judges of the superior court of law possess and exercise in other districts, and shall also have power to receive and try appeals from the county courts of Washington and Sullivan Counties.

The first session of this court was begun and held on August 15, 1782, the Hon. Spruce McCay, presiding. Waightstill Avery, was appointed attorney for the State, and John Sevier, clerk. How long this court continued is not definitely known, but if it continued until the establishment of a superior court in Washington District, it failed to accomplish the purpose for which it was created. In writing of this period, Ramsey, who followed Haywood, says that violations of law were permitted to pass unpunished, except by the summary process of the regulators appointed for that purpose by the people themselves, and this is assigned as one of the causes for the organization of the State of Franklin. It is certain that soon after that act of the colonies had taken place, the General Assembly of North Carolina taking notice of the disaffection existing in the western counties passed an act organizing the counties of Washington, Sullivan, Davidson, and Greene into a judicial district, and ap-

pointed an assistant judge and an attorney-general for the Superior Court, which was directed to be held at Jonesboro. This with the other acts passed for the redress of their grievances were not sufficient to restore confidence to the disaffected colonists, and one of the first acts passed by the Legislature chosen for the State of Franklin established a judicial system. David Campbell was elected judge of the superior court and Joshua Gist and John Anderson, assistant judges. Soon after Gov. Sevier, by proclamation, announced the appointment of F. A. Ramsey, Esq., as clerk of the superior court. County courts were also established, and justices of the peace appointed. The salary of the judge of the superior court was fixed at £150 per annum, and that of the assistant judges £25 for each court. By the early part of 1786 these courts were all organized. At the same time commissions had been sent to, and accepted by, several in Washington, Sullivan, and Hawkins counties as justices of the peace, under the authority of North Carolina, and by them courts were held and law administered as though the State of Franklin did not exist. In Greene County, and the new counties below it, men could not be found willing to accept the offered commissions.\* Then the authority of Franklin was supreme and no conflict of jurisdiction occurred. It was very different elsewhere, and especially in Washington County, when those who adhered to the government of North Carolina were nearly, if not quite equal in numbers to the friends of the new State. Col. John Tipton refused obedience to the new government, and under the authority of North Carolina held courts at Davis', ten miles above Jonesboro, on Buffalo Creek. Both superior and county courts were also held in Jonesboro by the judges commissioned by the State of Franklin. As the process of these courts frequently required the sheriffs to pass within the jurisdiction of each other, in the discharge of their official duties, collisions were sure to occur. But they did not confine themselves to these casual encounters. Whilst a county court was sitting at Jonesboro, for the county of Washington, Col. Tipton with a party of men entered the court house, took away the papers from the clerk and turned the justices out of court. Not long after a party of adherents to the new government went to the house where a county court was sitting under the authority of North Carolina and took away the clerk's papers, and turned the court out of doors.† The like acts were several times repeated during the existence of the Franklin government. Frequently records were taken and retaken several times, and in that way many valuable papers were lost, causing much annoyance and loss to persons interested in them.

In 1788 the government of Franklin came to an end and the authority of North Carolina was again undisputed. In May of that year

\*Ramsey. †Haywood.

courts under the authority of that State were held in Greeneville without interruption, and Andrew Jackson, John McNairy, David Allison, Archibald Roane and Joseph Hamilton, who were licensed by North Carolina, were admitted as attorneys. The General Assembly of the previous year had elected David Campbell, a former adherent of Franklin, to be judge of the superior court for the district of Washington.

Whilst this conflict between the State of Franklin and North Carolina was going on, the people of the Cumberland settlement remained undisturbed in their loyalty to the latter government. In 1783 the county of Davidson was organized and provision was made for the establishment of a court of pleas and quarter sessions. The governor of North Carolina commissioned Anthony Bledsoe, Daniel Smith, James Robertson, Thomas Mulloy, Isaac Bledsoe, Samuel Barton, Francis Prince and Isaac Lindsey as justices to organize the court. The four last mentioned accordingly met at Nashville October 6, 1783, and qualified in the following manner: "The next junior to the senior member present mentioned in the commission administered the oath of office prescribed for the qualification of public officers to the senior member, and then he to the others present." The remainder of the justices appeared and qualified at the next term of the court. Two years later an act was passed establishing a superior court of law and equity for the county of Davidson to be held twice in each year and to have exclusive jurisdiction west of the Cumberland Mountains. The first session of this court was to have been held on the first Monday in May, 1786, but a young man only twenty-four years of age was appointed to be judge, who upon more mature reflection becoming fearful that his small experience and stock of legal acquirements were inadequate to the performance of those great duties which the office devolved upon him, chose rather to resign than to risk the injustice to suitors which others of better qualification might certainly avoid.\* This delayed the organization of the court, and it was not until November, 1788, that Judge McNairy, who was appointed to fill the vacancy, arrived in Nashville. The following is the first entry in the journal of the supreme court:

North Carolina—At a superior court of law and equity begun and held for the counties Davidson and Sumner, at the court house in Nashville, on the first Monday in November, 1788. Present, the Honorable John McNairy, judge. Proclamation was made commanding silence under pain of imprisonment, while the judge proceeded in the public business.

The Court then appointed John McCay, clerk and Andrew Jackson, attorneys in behalf of the State for that term. During this year Tennessee County was created and with Davidson and Sumner Counties were

---

\*Haywood.



organized into the district of Mero,\* at the same time the jurisdiction of the superior court was somewhat enlarged, and the salary of the judge increased.

A somewhat peculiar and yet wholesome regulation of legal practice was made by the General Assembly of North Carolina in 1786. An act was passed making it unlawful for either the plaintiff or defendant to employ more than one attorney "to speak to any suit in court." It also made it lawful for any plaintiff or defendant to enter his own plea or defend his own cause, and, to encourage this practice, it was provided that "no instrument of writing which contained the substance should be lost or destroyed for want of form, any law to the contrary notwithstanding." A scale of attorneys fees in various cases was fixed by this act and any attorney convicted of taking more or greater fees than those established by law was suspended from practice for a term of one year.

Upon the organization of the Territory of the United States of America south of the River Ohio, no material change was made in the courts. Those holding office under the authority of North Carolina generally continued to serve in the same capacity under the Territorial Government, though a new constitution and a new oath of office were required. The two judges of the superior court, David Campbell and John McNairy, were re-appointed by the President. Joseph Anderson was added as the third judge required by the ordinance establishing the Territory. That ordinance also provided that previous to the organization of the Legislative Assembly, the three judges of the superior court, or two of them, should be associated with the governor in administering both the legislative and executive departments of the government. Judges Campbell and Anderson seem to have been the only ones who served in this capacity, Judge McNairy's name not appearing in any of their proceedings.

The Territorial Assembly, soon after its organization in 1794, passed an act establishing courts, but it was little more than a confirmation of those already in existence, with the exception that provision was made for the appointment of a State's attorney in each county. No change was made in the judges, and they continued to hold their office until the admission of Tennessee as a State, 1796. The constitution adopted in that year did not establish any courts, but left the matter entirely to the Legislature. The following is the article relating to the judiciary:

#### ARTICLE V.

SECTION 1. The judicial power of the State shall be vested in such superior and inferior courts of law and equity as the Legislature shall from time to time direct and establish.

\*This district, for some reason not satisfactorily known, was named for a Spanish officer residing in the "Mississippi Country," with whom the Cumberland settlements had some sort of dealings and disagreements.

SEC. 2. The General Assembly shall by joint ballot of both houses appoint judges of the several courts of law and equity, also an attorney or attorneys for the State who shall hold their respective offices during good behavior.

SEC. 3. The judges of the superior courts shall at stated times receive a compensation for their services to be ascertained by law, but shall not be allowed any fees of office, nor shall they hold any other office of trust or profit under this State, or the United States.

SEC. 4. The judges of the superior courts shall be justices of oyer and terminer, and general jail delivery throughout the State.

SEC. 5. The judges of the superior and inferior courts shall not charge juries with respect to matters of fact, but may state the testimony and declare the law.

SEC. 6. The judges of the superior court shall have power in all civil cases to issue writs of *certiorari* to remove any case or transcript thereof, from any inferior court of record into the superior, on sufficient cause supported by oath or affirmation.

SEC. 7. The judges or justices of the inferior courts of law shall have power in all cases to issue writs of *certiorari* to remove any case or a transcript thereof from any inferior jurisdiction, into their court on sufficient cause supported by oath or affirmation,

SEC. 8. No judge shall sit on the trial of any cause wherein the parties shall be connected with him by affinity or consanguinity, except by consent of the parties. In case all the judges of the superior court interested in the event of any cause, or related to all or either of the parties, the governor of the State shall in such case specially commission three men of law knowledge for the determination thereof.

SEC. 9. All writs and other processes shall run in the name of the State of Tennessee and bear test and be signed by the respective clerks. Indictments shall conclude "against the peace and dignity of the State."

SEC. 10. Each court shall appoint its own clerk, who may hold office during good behavior.

SEC. 11. No fine shall be laid on any citizen of the State that shall exceed fifty dollars, unless it be assessed by a jury of his peers, who shall assess the fine at the time they find the fact, if they think the fine ought to be more than fifty dollars.

SEC. 12. There shall be justices of the peace appointed for each county, two for each captain's company, except the company which includes the county town, which shall not exceed three, who shall hold their office during good behavior.

The failure of this constitution to establish any court may justly be considered as one of its weakest points. A supreme court which owes its existence to the legislative body, and which at any time by the repeal or the amendment of a single act might be altered or abolished, could scarcely be expected to retain its independence, nor could it be expected to endanger its own life by calling into question the validity of a law. For such a court to pronounce an act unconstitutional would be useless, as the Legislature, having a sufficient majority to pass such an act, would upon any question of importance, have a majority to repeal the law creating the court itself. The danger from this was manifested in several instances, and was one of the strongest arguments in favor of the adoption of the new constitution in 1834. In 1829 a controversy arose between the judiciary and the Legislature, and the result was the introduction of a bill which, had it become a law, would have abolished the then existing supreme court. The bill failed to pass by a single vote.

The first General Assembly convened on the 28th of March, 1796,

and soon after passed an act establishing a superior court of law and equity, and a court of pleas and quarter sessions, and defining their jurisdiction and mode of procedure, which did not differ materially from that of the courts under the authority of North Carolina and the Territory. In 1806 the district of Mero was divided into three separate and distinct judicial districts. The counties of Robertson, Montgomery, Dickson and Stewart were constituted one district by the name of Robertson, for which the courts were held at Clarksville. Jackson, Smith and Wilson Counties were organized into the district of Winchester, and courts were held at Carthage. The remaining counties, Davidson, Sumner, Williamson and Rutherford constituted the district of Mero, with the seat of justice at Nashville. The district of Hamilton had been formed in 1793 from the counties of Jefferson and Knox.

On November 16, 1809, an act was passed abolishing the superior court and establishing circuit courts, a supreme court of errors and appeals in its stead. The former was made to consist of one judge, and was to be held twice annually in each county. It was given the same jurisdiction in all matters in common law and equity as belonged to the former superior court, exclusive jurisdiction in all criminal causes and appellate jurisdiction in all cases from the court of pleas and quarter sessions. A solicitor-general and a judge for each circuit were elected by a joint vote of both houses of the General Assembly. The State was divided into five judicial circuits, as follows: First Circuit, Greene, Washington, Carter, Sullivan, Hawkins, Grainger, Claiborne and Campbell. Second Circuit, Cocke, Jefferson, Sevier, Blount, Knox, Anderson, Roane, Rhea and Bledsoe. Third Circuit, Smith, Warren, Franklin, Sumner, Overton, White and Jackson. Fourth Circuit, Davidson, Wilson, Rutherford, Williamson, Maury, Giles, Lincoln and Bedford. Fifth Circuit, Montgomery, Dickson, Hickman, Humphreys, Stewart and Robertson.

The supreme court of errors and appeals was made to consist of two judges in error and one circuit judge, and was to be held annually at the following places: Jonesboro, Knoxville, Carthage, Nashville and Clarksville. The jurisdiction of this court was appellate only. The act creating these courts went into effect January 1, 1810, and Hugh L. White and George W. Campbell were appointed judges of the supreme court. In 1811 that part of the act which required the attendance of a circuit judge in the court of errors and appeals was rescinded, and it was provided that when the two judges of that court differed, the judgment of the circuit court was to be sustained. By the same act the supreme court was given exclusive jurisdiction in all cases in equity arising in the circuit courts. In 1813 a change was made in the court of pleas



and quarter sessions, by which five justices were appointed to hold the court, although the county business was transacted as before by all the magistrates on the first day of the session. New judicial circuits were formed from time to time as new counties were organized. In 1817 the Sixth Circuit was established from the counties of Lincoln, Giles, Maury, Bedford and Lawrence. Two years later the counties of Roane, Rhea, Bledsoe, Marion, McMinn, Hamilton and Monroe were constituted the Seventh Circuit. The counties of Henry, Carroll, Madison, Shelby, Wayne, Hardeman, Hardin and Perry were erected into the Eighth Circuit in 1821. The Ninth Circuit was formed in 1823, from the counties of Perry, Henderson, Carroll and Henry, and all the counties to be established west of Carroll and Henry. The Tenth Circuit, composed of Wayne, Hardin, McNairy, Hardeman, Fayette and Shelby was formed in 1830. At the same time Warren, Franklin, Bedford, Rutherford and Wilson Counties were constituted the Eleventh Circuit, and Henderson and Perry were attached to the eighth. In 1815 the number of judges of the supreme court was increased to three, and Archibald Roane was appointed as the third judge. A fourth judge was added in 1823, and the following year a fifth. In a few months, however, it was again reduced to four and so continued until the change in the constitution was made. In 1831 the office of chief justice was created.

As has been stated, the Legislature of 1829 discussed and voted upon a bill amending the judiciary system. The Senate committee in reporting upon a bill from the House making some changes in the inferior courts, stated that they considered the judiciary system of Tennessee the most expensive and the least efficient of any in the United States. The objections to it as stated by them were "the multiplicity of courts which, either as original or appellate, can take jurisdiction of the same subject matter, the defective mode by which these courts are governed, the great delay of common right to the parties, and the unnecessary expense incurred by the number of courts in which the same cause may be investigated."

The following description of the "law's delay," as given by this committee, leads one to infer that modern law courts are not so degenerate as they are usually considered: "A suit may be commenced before a justice of the peace for a sum not exceeding 50 cents, trial be had thereon, and an appeal taken to the county court: and notwithstanding the small sum in dispute, ambition, spite and other malicious motives frequently operate so as to influence one or both of the parties into a determination to run his adversary into as much cost and trouble as possible. For this purpose lawyers are employed on either side, witnesses are summoned by

neighborhoods to attend court, often at the most busy season of the year, much to their inconvenience and greatly to the injury of their private affairs. The cause may be continued from term to term for years, during which time ill-will, strife, and party animosity prevail, not only between the parties litigant, but unfortunately, the surrounding neighborhood often engages in feuds in consequence of it. At length the cause is tried in the county court where, in all well regulated governments, it should end so far as relates to matters of fact. But instead of ending there, and restoring tranquillity to the neighborhood and relieving a host of witnesses who have been drawn from the cultivation of their farms or from pursuit of their ordinary employment, an appeal is taken to the circuit court, where additional fees must be given to lawyers, clerks, sheriffs, constables and jurymen, and the parties have not gained one inch of ground toward terminating their controversy, but must travel over the same ground in relation to law and facts in the circuit court, and if their purses have not increased in size their animosity toward each other has increased threefold. An appeal then is taken to the supreme court. Lawyers' and clerks' fees are again to be paid, and should judgment be obtained for the plaintiff he may conclude that notwithstanding his road to justice has been tedious, yet he has at length reached the end of his trouble. But even here his hopes, perhaps, are succeeded by disappointment. A bill in equity may be filed in the circuit court or district chancery court and the neighborhood again be disturbed in the taking of depositions. The parties are again compelled to give additional fees to lawyers, clerks and sheriffs. At length the cause is tried before the fifth tribunal. An appeal is again taken to the supreme court from the decree of the chancellor where it is tried a sixth time with additional fees to clerks and other officers."

In estimating the expense of the courts to the State, the committee placed the cost of jurors in the county courts alone at \$58,652 per annum, "an amount more than sufficient to defray the whole expense of our government, including a session of the Legislature each year." The costs in cases taken by appeal to the circuit court are estimated at \$46,500 annually, and the cost of grand jurors at \$30,876.

Previous to 1834 the finding of articles of impeachment against judges and other officers was of quite frequent occurrence. The first case of the kind was that of David Campbell, one of the judges of the superior court of law and equity, impeached in 1803. The articles as presented by the House of Representatives charged him with taking a bribe to the value of \$50 from one James Miller, for which he agreed to procure a favorable decision for the latter in a case brought by John Den

to recover the possession of two tracts of land situated in the county of Knox. The managers on the part of the House were Wharton, Kennedy and Claiborne, who procured Jenkin Whiteside as counsel for the prosecution. The counsel for the defense was Edward Scott, John Williams and Robert Whyte. The oath was administered to the senators by Hugh L. White, and Senator McMinn was chosen to preside. After hearing the evidence and the arguments by the counsel a ballot was taken, which resulted in a verdict of not guilty, the vote standing three for conviction and nine for acquittal. Leave was then given to the senators to have the reasons for their votes recorded, when the following were given by John Gass: "My reasons for saying not guilty on the articles of impeachment exhibited against David Campbell, one of the judges of the superior court of law and equity in this State, are because, if the witness in behalf of the prosecution could have such a corrupted heart as to attempt to bribe a judge to the injury of another man, it is a doubtful case whether the evidence ought to be taken in such latitude as to convict any person, therefore as it appears to me to be a doubtful case, if I should err at all, I wish to err on the side of mercy."

In 1811 articles of impeachment were exhibited by the House against William Cocke, judge of the First Circuit. The first two articles charged him with neglecting to hold court on various occasions, and with failing to open and close the sessions of the court properly. The third article charged that "for the corrupt purpose of partiality to his friend," he had refused on one occasion to issue certain writs, to the great injury of the defendant. The case was continued until the next session of the Legislature, when the defendant was acquitted on the first two articles but convicted on the third by a vote of ten to three, and was accordingly removed from his office. One of the most ably contested cases of impeachment in the history of the State was that of Samuel H. Williams, surveyor of the Seventh District of the Congressional Reservation. He was charged with having demanded and taken extortionate fees, and with having allowed false entries to be made. The trial was begun during the session of 1821, but was continued at the request of the defendant until the next session of the Legislature in 1822. It was taken up again on July 24, of that year, and continued for nearly a month, when he was found guilty upon four of the eleven articles. The attorneys for the defense were Jenkin Whiteside, Samuel Houston, Thomas Washington, Alfred Balch and Charles G. Olmstead, while one of the managers on the part of the House was Felix Grundy.

In 1829 articles of impeachment were found against Joshua Haskell, a judge of the Eighth Circuit, charging him with having, on several oc-



casions, left the court house during the progress of a trial to engage in conversation, business and amusement. The testimony given at these trials throws some light on the character of the courts of those early times and of the houses in which they were held. During the trial of Judge Haskell a witness testified that the house in which the court was held in one of the counties was a very uncomfortable one—"occupied by hogs during the recess of the court and infested with fleas." Another witness, an attorney, stated that during the progress of a certain trial the judge was off the bench from between 9 and 10 o'clock until 12 o'clock, and that upon another occasion during the argument of the counsel, the judge went with him outside of the court house and ate a part of a watermelon—a doubtful example of judicial dignity. Gabriel Fowlkes testified that at one time during a trial he was sent for the judge, and found him "either at the show or in the court house yard;" he was not positive at which place. During the progress of this trial a difficulty arose between the counsel employed as to the admissibility of testimony; the question was referred to a disinterested attorney, the judge being absent, who gave a decision, and the cause progressed. Judge Haskell, however, seems to have been a universal favorite on his circuit; and notwithstanding the testimony he was acquitted of the charge, the vote of the Senate being equally divided.

In 1829 N. W. Williams, judge of the Third Judicial Circuit, was tried upon charges of neglect of official duty. One of the articles of impeachment charged that "while Hopkins L. Turney, an attorney of that court, was arguing before him a certain civil suit concerning an Indian reservation, which suit then and there was and had been on trial for one day, he, the said judge, unmindful of the duties of his office and his obligation to perform them faithfully and impartially to the best of his skill and ability, did carelessly, negligently and unlawfully go to sleep and continue asleep for the space of one hour; waking from his sleep he inquired what suit it was, and being told by said attorney, said he was related to some of the parties, and could not sit in that case." Charges of partiality were also preferred against him. He was acquitted, and it was generally believed that the prosecution was inspired by the animosity of some of the attorneys who practiced before him.

The new constitution of 1834 made no radical change in the judicial system then in existence, but the supreme court was rendered independent of the Legislature by embodying provision for its establishment in that constitution. For the purpose of comparison, the article relating to the judiciary is given in full:

## ARTICLE VI.

SECTION 1. The judicial power of this State shall be vested in one supreme court, in such inferior courts as the Legislature shall from time to time ordain and establish, and the judges thereof, and in justices of the peace. The Legislature may also vest such jurisdiction as may be deemed necessary in corporation courts.

SEC. 2. The supreme court shall be composed of three judges, one of whom shall reside in each of the three grand divisions of the State; the concurrence of two of said judges shall in every case be necessary to a decision. The jurisdiction of this court shall be appellate only, under such restrictions and regulations as may from time to time be prescribed by law; but it may possess such other jurisdiction as is now conferred by law on the present supreme court. Said court shall be held at one place, at one place only, in each of the three grand divisions in the State.

SEC. 3. The General Assembly shall, by joint vote of both houses, appoint judges of the several courts of law and equity; but courts may be established to be holden by justices of the peace. Judges of the supreme court shall be thirty-five years of age, and shall be elected for the term of twelve years.

SEC. 4. The judges of such inferior courts as the Legislature may establish shall be thirty years of age, and shall be elected for the term of eight years.

SEC. 5. The Legislature shall elect attorneys for the State by joint vote of both houses of the General Assembly, who shall hold their offices for the term of six years. In all cases when an attorney for any district fails or refuses to attend and prosecute according to law, the court shall have power to appoint an attorney *pro tempore*.

SEC. 6. Judges and attorneys for the State may be removed from office by a concurrent vote of both houses of the General Assembly, each house voting separately, but two-thirds of all the members elected to each house must concur in such vote; the vote shall be determined by ayes and noes, and the names of the members voting for or against the judge or attorney for the State, together with the cause or causes of removal, shall be entered on the journals of each house, respectively. The judge or attorney for the State, against whom the Legislature may be about to proceed, shall receive notice thereof, accompanied with a copy of the cause alleged for his removal, at least ten days before the day on which either house of the General Assembly shall act thereupon.

SEC. 7. The judges of the supreme and inferior courts shall, at stated times, receive a compensation for their services, to be ascertained by law, which shall not be increased or diminished during the term for which they are elected. They shall not be allowed any fees or perquisites of office, nor hold any other office of trust or profit under this State or the United States.

SEC. 8. The jurisdiction of such inferior courts as the Legislature may from time to time establish shall be regulated by law.

SEC. 9. Judges shall not charge juries with respect to matters of fact, but may state the testimony and declare the law.

SEC. 10. The judges or justices of such inferior courts of law as the Legislature may establish shall have power in all civil cases to issue writs of *certiorari* to remove any cause or transcript thereof, from any inferior jurisdiction, into said court on sufficient cause, supported by oath or affirmation.

SEC. 11. No judge of the supreme or inferior courts shall preside in the trial of any cause in the event of which he may be interested or where either of the parties shall be connected with him by affinity or consanguinity within such degrees as may be prescribed by law, or in which he may have been of counsel or in which he may have presided in any inferior court, except by consent of all the parties. In case all or any of the judges of the supreme court shall be thus disqualified from presiding on the trial of any cause or causes the court or the judges thereof shall certify the same to the governor of the State, and he shall forthwith specially commission the requisite number of men of law knowledge for the trial and determination thereof. In case of sickness of any of the judges of the supreme or inferior court so that they, or any of them, are unable to attend, the Legisla-

ture shall be authorized to make provision by general laws that special judges may be appointed to attend said courts.

SEC. 12. All writs and other processes shall run in the name of the State of Tennessee, and bear test and be signed by the respective clerks. Indictments shall conclude "against the peace and dignity of the State."

SEC. 13. Judges of the supreme court shall appoint their clerks, who shall hold their offices for the period of six years. Chancellors (if courts of chancery shall be established) shall appoint their clerks and masters, who shall hold their offices for a period of six years. Clerks of such inferior courts as may be hereafter established, which shall be required to be holden in the respective counties of the State, shall be elected by the qualified voters thereof for the term of four years. They shall be removed from office for malfeasance, incompetency or neglect of duty in such manner as may be prescribed by law.

SEC. 14. No fine shall be laid on any citizen of the State that shall exceed fifty dollars, unless it shall be assessed by a jury of his peers, who shall assess the fine at the time they find the fact, if they think the fine should be more than fifty dollars.

SEC. 15. The different counties in the State shall be laid off, as the General Assembly may direct, into districts of convenient size, so that the whole number in each county shall not be more than twenty-five, or four for every one hundred square miles. There shall be two justices of the peace and one constable elected in each district by the qualified voters therein, except districts including county towns, which shall elect three justices and two constables. The jurisdiction of said officers shall be co-extensive with the county. Justices of the peace shall be elected for the term of two years. Upon the removal of either of said officers from the district in which he was elected his office shall become vacant from the time of such removal. Justices of the peace shall be commissioned by the governor. The Legislature shall have power to provide for the appointment of an additional number of justices of the peace in incorporated towns.

The General Assembly, which convened after the adoption of the constitution in 1835, passed an act establishing a supreme court with the same jurisdiction it had previously possessed; also chancery, circuit and county courts. The State was divided into three chancery divisions, for each of which a chancellor was appointed. These divisions were in turn divided into chancery districts, there being nine in East Tennessee, fifteen in Middle Tennessee and six in West Tennessee. Chancery courts, however, were not held in many of the counties until several years after the passage of this act.

The circuit courts were made courts of general jurisdiction, and were given exclusive jurisdiction in all cases triable by jury, both criminal and civil, which had previously come before the county court. The State was divided into eleven judicial circuits as follows: First Circuit, Greene, Washington, Sullivan, Johnson, Hawkins, Grainger and Claiborne Counties. Second, Cooke, Jefferson, Sevier, Blount, Knox, Campbell, Anderson and Morgan. Third, Roane, Rhea, Meigs, Bledsoe, Marion, Hamilton, McMinn and Monroe. Fourth, Smith, Overton, White, Jackson, Fentress and Warren. Fifth, Wilson, Rutherford, Bedford, Coffee and Franklin. Sixth, Williamson, Davidson and Sumner. Seventh, Dickson, Hickman, Humphreys, Stewart, Montgomery and Robertson. Eighth, Lincoln, Giles, Maury and Lawrence. Ninth, Henry, Weakley, Obion, Dyer, Gib-



son, Carroll and Benton. Tenth, Perry, Henderson, Madison, Haywood, Tipton and Lauderdale. Eleventh, Shelby, Fayette, Hardeman, McNairy, Hardin and Wayne. County courts were established to be held by all the magistrates in the county, but one-third of them were made a quorum to transact all business except the levying of taxes and the appropriating of sums amounting to more than \$50. The same jurisdiction was given to the single justice that he had previously exercised.

In 1837 three new judicial circuits were established, the Twelfth consisting of Cocke, Sevier, Jefferson, Grainger, Claiborne and Campbell; the Thirteenth, of Warren, Lincoln, Franklin and Coffee; and the Fourteenth of Lawrence, Wayne, Hardin, Perry, Carroll and Benton. At the same time the counties of Monroe and Roane were attached to the Second Circuit. In 1843 criminal courts were established in Shelby and Davidson Counties, and were given exclusive jurisdiction over all crimes and misdemeanors. Similar courts were established in Montgomery, Rutherford and Wilson Counties in 1848. Sections 3 and 5 of Article VI of the constitution were amended to read as follows:

SEC. 3. The judges of the Supreme Court shall be elected by the qualified voters of the State at large, and the judges of such inferior courts as the Legislature may establish shall be elected by the qualified voters residing within the bounds of any district or circuit to which such inferior judge, or judges, either of law or equity may be assigned, by ballot, in the same manner that members of the General Assembly are elected. Courts may be established to be holden by Justices of the Peace. Judges of the Supreme Court shall be thirty-five years of age, and shall be elected for the term of eight years.

SEC. 5. An Attorney-General for the State shall be elected by the qualified voters of the State at large, and the Attorney for the State, for any circuit or district to which a judge of an inferior court may be assigned, shall be elected by the qualified voters within the bounds of such district or circuit in the same manner that members of the General Assembly are elected; all said attorneys, both for the State and circuit or district, shall hold their offices for the term of six years. In all cases where the attorney for any district fails or refuses to attend and prosecute according to law, the court shall have power to appoint an attorney *pro tempore*.

Upon the reorganization of the supreme court in 1835, William B. Turley, William B. Reese and Nathan Green were elected judges, all of whom had resigned previous to the adoption of the above amendment, Judge Reese in 1848, Turley in 1850, and Green in 1852. Their places were supplied by the election of Robert J. McKinney, A. W. O. Totten and Robert L. Caruthers. At the election in 1853, these men were all re-elected by the people. Judge Totten resigned two years later and William R. Harris was elected to succeed him. The latter continued to hold the office until his death on June 19, 1858, when Archibald Wright was chosen to fill the vacancy. In 1861 Judge Caruthers resigned, and was succeeded by William F. Cooper. During the civil war no term of this court was held, and nearly all of the inferior courts were also sus-

pended. At the close of hostilities Gov. Brownlow declared the supreme bench vacant and appointed Samuel Milligan, J. O. Shackelford and Alvin Hawkins as judges. In 1867 Judge Shackelford resigned, but during the following year was reappointed, Horace H. Harrison having held the office during the interim. During 1868 both Hawkins and Milligan presented their resignations, and their places were filled by the appointment of Henry G. Smith and George Andrews. In May of the next year there was an election by the people under the restricted suffrages which then prevailed, and George Andrews, Andrew McLain and Alvin Hawkins were chosen judges.

The new constitution of 1870 made but little change in the judicial system, except to increase the number of judges of the supreme court to five; a large number of cases had accumulated, owing to the immense amount of litigation immediately following the war; and to expedite business, it was provided, that at the first election six judges should be chosen, and that they should be divided into two sections, who should hold court simultaneously in the same division of the State. It was further provided, should any vacancy occur after January 1, 1873, it should remain unfilled. An election was held in August, 1870, at which the judges chosen were Alfred O. P. Nicholson, James W. Deaderick, Peter Turney, Thomas A. R. Nelson, John L. T. Sneed, and Thomas J. Freeman. The first named was chosen chief justice, which position he held until his death, in 1876, when James W. Deaderick, the present incumbent, succeeded him. In 1871 Judge Nelson resigned and was succeeded by Robert McFarland. At the election in August, 1878, all of the judges then on the bench were re-elected, with the exception of J. L. T. Sneed, whose place was filled by William F. Cooper. The large number of cases coming before the supreme court impelled the Legislature, in 1875, to pass an act providing for the appointment of a special commission, to try causes referred to them, upon the written agreement of all the parties to the suit, or of their attorneys. Their decisions were made final, but were submitted to the supreme court for approval. This commission was appointed to sit for a few months only, at Jackson and Memphis. By a similar act passed two years later, two commissions were appointed, one to sit at Nashville, and the other at Jackson, from May until December of that year. In 1883 a court of referees was established for each of the three grand divisions of the State, to hear civil causes, and to present a statement of each to the supreme court for a final decision, privilege being given to either party to the suit, dissatisfied with the decree of the referees, to file objection to it. The judges appointed for Middle Tennessee were W. L. Eakin, W. C. Caldwell and

John Tinnon; for East Tennessee, John Frizzell, John L. T. Sneed and R. T. Kirkpatrick; for West Tennessee, D. A. Snodgrass, David Bright and John E. Garner. Judge Garner resigned in July, 1883 and was succeeded by E. L. Gardenhire. The court of referees for the eastern and western divisions of the State expired by limitation January 1, 1885, and the one for Middle Tennessee, April 30, 1886. The present supreme court consists of the following judges: James W. Deaderick, Peter Turney, Thomas J. Freeman, W. F. Cooper and J. B. Cooke.

In many of the States within the past few years, the distinction between law and equity courts has been abolished, and equity jurisdiction given to the law courts. The same has been done in Tennessee, to some extent, with this difference, that law jurisdiction has been given to equity courts. In 1877 an act was passed conferring upon the chancery court concurrent jurisdiction with the circuit court of all civil cases, except for injuries to person, property or character, involving unliquidated damages. A large number of suits are, therefore, brought in the chancery court, since upon appeal they are tried *de novo* by the supreme court. In 1870 the State was divided into twelve chancery districts, for each of which a chancellor is elected. Several special courts, probate, criminal and others, have been established to meet the wants of towns, and the more populous counties. In 1870 the law court of Nashville was established to have concurrent jurisdiction with the circuit court of Davidson County, and to be held quarterly. It continued until 1877, when it was abolished.

The jurisdiction of the circuit courts has not been materially changed since the adoption of the constitution of 1834; but owing to the creation of new counties, the judicial circuits have been subject to frequent alterations. As now constituted they are as follows: First Circuit—Carter, Greene, Hancock, Hawkins, Johnson, Sullivan, Unicoi and Washington. Second Circuit—Claiborne, Campbell, Grainger, Union, Hamblen, Jefferson, Cocke, Anderson and Sevier. Third Circuit—Blount, Monroe, Loudon, Roane, Morgan and Scott. Fourth Circuit—Bradley, Polk, Meigs, Rhea, Bledsoe, Sequatchie, Marion, Hamilton, McMinn and James. Fifth Circuit—Pickett, Fentress, Cumberland, Putnam, Overton, Clay, Jackson, Smith, Macon and Trousdale. Sixth Circuit—Van Buren, Grundy, Franklin, Coffee, Warren, Moore, Lincoln, De Kalb and White. Seventh Circuit—Davidson, Williamson and Cheatham. Eighth Circuit—Wilson, Rutherford, Cannon, Bedford and Marshal. Ninth Circuit—Maury, Giles, Lawrence, Wayne, Hardin, Lewis and Hickman. Tenth Circuit—Sumner, Robertson, Montgomery, Stewart, Houston, Dickson and Humphreys. Eleventh Circuit—McNairy, Chester, Madison, Henderson, Decatur and



Perry. Twelfth Circuit—Obion, Weakley, Henry, Carroll, Gibson, Crockett, Haywood and Benton. Thirteenth Circuit—Hardeman, Fayette, Tipton, Lauderdale, Dyer and Lake. Shelby County constitutes the Fourteenth Circuit; it also has a criminal court. Knox County has a criminal court, the judge of which presides over the circuit court of that county. Davidson and Rutherford, each have a criminal court; but both are presided over by the same judge. Montgomery County also has a criminal court.

By the act of 1885, the State is also divided into eleven chancery divisions as follows: First—Johnson, Carter, Washington, Sullivan, Hawkins, Greene, Hancock, Claiborne, Jefferson, Cocke, Hamblen, Unicoi and Grainger. Second—Knox, Campbell, Sevier, Union, Anderson, Blount, Roane, Loudon, Morgan, Scott. Third—Bradley, Polk, Rhea, Marion, McMinn, Hamilton, Monroe, Meigs, Bledsoe, Sequatchie, Van Buren, Coffee, Grundy. Fourth—Warren, Cammon, Rutherford, Bedford, Franklin, Lincoln, Moore and Marshall. Fifth—Cumberland, Fentress, Pickett, Overton, Clay, Jackson, Putnam, White, De Kalb, Smith and Macon. Sixth—Davidson, Williamson. Seventh—Maury, Giles, Lawrence, Lewis, Wayne, Hickman, Hardin, Perry, Decatur, Dickson, Benton. Eighth—Sumner, Robertson, Montgomery, Wilson, Stewart, Houston, Cheatham, Humphreys and Trousdale. Ninth—Hardin, McNairy, Chester, Madison, Crockett, Henderson, Carroll and Henry. Tenth—Fayette, Tipton, Haywood, Lauderdale, Dyer, Obion, Weakley, Gibson. Eleventh—Shelby.

The act creating Tennessee a judicial district was passed by the Fifth Congress, and was approved January 31, 1797. The first session of the court was ordered to be held at Nashville, on the first Monday of the following April, and thereafter, quarterly, at Knoxville and Nashville, alternately. For some reason the court was not organized until July. The following is the first entry in the records of this court: "Be it remembered that on the third day of July, 1797, a commission from the President of the United States, and under seal thereof, directed to John McNairy, Esq., to be judge of the court of the United States for the district of Tennessee, bearing date the twentieth of February, 1797, was produced and read, whereupon Archibald Roane, a judge of the superior court of law and equity, in and for the State of Tennessee, administered to the said John McNairy the oath to support the Constitution of the United States and the oath of office." Robert Hays produced his commission as marshal and qualified, giving James White and Willie Blount as his securities; Thomas Gray, qualified as United States Attorney, and appointed Henry Brazeale his deputy. Randal McGavock was appointed



FROM PHOTO BY THUSS KOELLEIN & GIERG, NASHVILLE

FELIX GRUNDY





clerk of the court. No other business was transacted at this session except to admit W. C. C. Claiborne to practice, and nothing more was done except to open and adjourn the court until April, 1798, at which time the following grand jury was empaneled: Daniel Smith, foreman; Joel Rice, Thomas James, Abram Maury, John Nichols, John Hoggatt, William Turnbull, John Donelson, Thomas Smith, George Ridley, Edmund Gamble, John Childress, Sr., Alexander Ewing, James Mulherin, and Jones Manifee. The jury brought in bills of indictment against Robert Trimble and Archibald Lackey for entering the Cherokee country without obtaining a pass. They were tried at the October term and fined \$25 and \$10, respectively. In 1801 Tennessee was divided into two districts, and at the same time the Sixth Judicial Circuit was established to consist of the districts of East and West Tennessee, Kentucky and Ohio. The court was made to consist of one circuit judge, and the judges of the districts of Kentucky and Tennessee, two of whom constituted a quorum. The first session of this court was begun and held at Nashville, April 20, 1802. James Robertson administered the oath of office to Henry Innis, of Kentucky, and John McNairy, of Tennessee, as judges of the circuit court. Robert Hays qualified as marshal, and Randal McGavock, as clerk. At the October term William McClung was admitted as judge of the circuit court and presiding judge. The act of 1802 was repealed in 1807, and the Seventh Circuit, embracing Ohio, Kentucky and Tennessee, was established. The court convened June 13, 1808, Thomas Todd, associate justice, and John McNairy, district judge, being present. Robert Searcy was elected clerk, and John Childress qualified as marshal. But little business of importance was transacted by this court for several years. In 1827 Judge Todd was succeeded by Robert Trimble as associate justice.

John McNairy continued judge of the district of Tennessee until 1834, when he was succeeded by Morgan W. Brown, who held the office until 1853. In 1838 an act was passed requiring a session of the district court to be held at Jackson in September of each year. The following year the territory west of the Tennessee River was constituted a separate district. One judge continued to preside over the courts of the three districts of the State until 1877, when E. S. Hammond was appointed judge for the district of West Tennessee. In 1853 West H. Humphreys was appointed district judge for Tennessee by President Pierce. He continued to hold the office until 1861, when he accepted a commission as judge under the Confederate Government. He was then convicted on a trial of impeachment by the United States Senate, and Connolly F. Trigg was appointed to succeed him. No session of the district court was held at

Nashville from April, 1861, until June 3, 1862. The following is in the records at the opening of the court on that day: "Be it remembered that on the third day of June, eighteen hundred and sixty-two, the District Court of the United States for the district of Middle Tennessee, was opened for the transaction of business. Present, the Hon. John Catron associate justice of the Supreme Court of the United States, assigned to hold court in the Eighth Circuit, and authorized by law to hold the United States District Court for this district in the absence of the district judge. Present, also, H. H. Harrison, clerk, and E. R. Glascock, marshal." At the March term, 1863, it was ordered by the court that no attorney be allowed to practice who had not taken the oath to support the constitution, since the restoration of Federal authority in the district. Accordingly several attorneys appeared and took the oath. During the three or four years following the attention of the court was chiefly occupied with cases of conspiracy and confiscation. On July 15, 1862, an act was passed increasing the number of associate justices of the United States Supreme Court, which also increased the number of judicial circuits, the States of Louisiana, Texas, Arkansas, Kentucky and Tennessee being constituted the Sixth Circuit. In 1866 the circuits were again changed, and Ohio, Michigan, Kentucky and Tennessee have since formed the Sixth Circuit. H. H. Emmons was appointed circuit judge in 1869, and continued in the office until 1877, when he was succeeded by John Baxter. Judge Baxter died in April, 1886, and was succeeded by Howell E. Jackson.

The bench and bar of Tennessee have always been able to challenge comparison with that of any other State in the Union in point of ability, and especially was this true during the early part of the present century. The data for the characterization of some of the most eminent lawyers and jurists has been obtained from personal recollection and from various publications. Of those who were identified with the courts while they were yet under the authority of North Carolina, and later under the Territorial government, none occupied a higher position in the estimation of the people than Col. David Campbell, who, it has been said, "left the savor of a good name wherever he was known." For some twenty-five years of his life, he was in the public service, either as judge or legislator, and was ever distinguished for his wise council, and sound judgment. He was a judge of the superior court under the authority of North Carolina, both before and after the existence of the State of Franklin, under which he also held the same position. In the spring of 1790 he was appointed Territorial judge by the President, which office he held until the organization of the State. Upon the resignation of

W. C. C. Claiborne, a judge of the superior court in 1797, he was appointed to fill the vacancy, and continued on the bench until the abolition of the court. He was soon after made one of the judges of the Mississippi Territory, and died in the fall of 1812. Associated with him upon the bench of the Superior Court of North Carolina, and also as a Territorial judge, was John McNairy, a man some years his junior, but not his inferior in point of ability. Judge McNairy organized the first superior court west of the Cumberland Mountains, and on his journeys through the wilderness from Jonesboro to Nashville he had several narrow escapes from the Indians, and on one occasion lost his horses, camp equipage and clothing. He continued upon the bench of the superior court after the organization of the State for about a year, when he was appointed district judge of the Federal courts for Tennessee, which office he held until 1834. He died three years later at an advanced age, having served upon the bench for the extraordinary period of forty-six years. His whole judicial service was distinguished by a disregard of persons and parties, and an unswerving devotion to truth and justice. The following epitaph, written by his nephew, is very appropriate:

In council wise, of artless mind,  
 E'er honest he and passing kind;  
 Fair Peace through life her smiles did lend;  
 None knew but loved this gentle friend.

Accompanying Judge McNairy on his first trip to hold court at Nashville in 1788 was a young man just entering upon the practice of law, and who subscribed himself A. Jackson.\* It proved to be a most opportune arrival for the young advocate, as his peculiar talents were in demand at that time. "The only licensed lawyer in West Tennessee being engaged in the service of the debtors, who, it seems, made common cause against their common enemy, the creditors,†" Attorney Jackson was made public prosecutor, and immediately secured a large patronage from the creditor class, whose rights he fearlessly championed. He continued the practice of his profession without interruption until the organization of the State, after which he was almost continuously in the public service until the close of his presidential term. He was upon the bench of the supreme court for a period of six years, but neither as a lawyer nor as a jurist can he be said to have exhibited any great ability, although there is

\*Previous to the appointment of John McNairy to be judge of the superior court, the office, in 1784, as stated by Haywood, was tendered to a "young man of the age of twenty-four years." Putnam, in his history of Middle Tennessee, page 235, quotes the passage referred to and adds: "This same 'young man' advanced in years, increased in qualifications, attained to honors and office, until he received for eight consecutive years from the people of the United States and the national treasury a salary of twenty-five thousand dollars per annum. Such was the career of Judge Jackson, the 'young man,' and Gen. Jackson, hero of New Orleans and President of the United States." As Gen. Jackson was born in 1767, at the time the appointment to the office was made he was only seventeen years of age, which would clearly indicate that Putnam was mistaken as to the identity of the "young man."

†Parton's Life of Jackson.



little doubt that, had he chosen to devote himself to the study of his profession with the unremitting diligence necessary to the acquisition of deep and varied legal knowledge, he might have attained very high rank. His temper, however, was too fiery and impetuous and his inclination to an over-hasty avowal of expressions, which had not solidified into opinions, too great to have secured for him the reputation of a sound and impartial judge. Gen. Jackson and Judge McNairy were closely associated for many years, but the removal of Gen. Robertson from the Chickasaw agency through the influence of the latter, produced a breach between them which was never entirely healed.

John Overton, the successor of Gen. Jackson upon the bench of the superior court, was a native of Virginia, where he received his education. Before attaining his majority he removed to Kentucky, and there began the study of law. After completing his legal education he came to Tennessee and opened an office at Nashville in 1798. The litigation at that time was chiefly concerning the titles to real estate, and the best lawyers made that part of their practice a specialty. Judge Overton at once obtained a large practice, which he held until he was transferred to the bench in 1804. "During the protracted period of his service upon the bench he delivered many able and luminous opinions, which are yet held in high respect in the courts of Tennessee and the adjoining States; opinions bearing conclusive evidence of deep legal learning, of unsurpassed labor and research, and of a vigorous and elastic intellect. Judge Overton's knowledge of the common law was such as few of his contemporaries had succeeded in acquiring, and his mind seemed to be singularly adapted to the disentangling of complex questions of mixed law and fact, and to the attainment of sure and satisfactory conclusions by processes which owed their effectiveness far more to the exercise of a solid and penetrating common sense than to the often misapplied rules of a subtle and artificial logic."\* After his retirement from the bench in 1816 he again entered into the field of litigation, where he continued to add to the already high reputation which he had acquired as a judge.

The successor of Judge Overton was Robert Whyte, a native of Scotland, and a very excellent lawyer and judge. He continued to serve upon the bench of the supreme court until the adoption of the new constitution, in 1834, when he retired from public life. He was a laborious and accurate lawyer, and, like most of his countrymen, exceedingly tenacious of his views and opinions.

George W. Campbell was an early member of the bar at Nashville, and at different times during his long and varied career enjoyed a large

---

\*Bench and Bar of the South and Southwest.

and lucrative practice. He was a native of Scotland and possessed all the indomitable perseverance of his race. He was reared in poverty, and at an early age was thrown upon his own resources by the death of his father. By teaching school he worked his way through Princeton College, taking the junior and senior courses in one year and yet graduating with third honors. He then resumed teaching school in New Jersey, and meanwhile began the study of law. He completed his legal education in North Carolina and soon after located at Knoxville, where he immediately took rank with the best lawyers in Tennessee. He was not what is usually termed a ready debater, and rarely spoke upon any important question without previous preparation. During his brief career upon the bench he exhibited the same untiring diligence which characterized him in every other sphere. He removed to Nashville in 1810 and served as judge of the supreme court. For about a year after his resignation he filled successively the offices of United States senator, Secretary of the Treasury and Minister to Russia.

Parry W. Humphreys was appointed a judge of the superior court in 1807 and continued to act as such for three years. He was afterward elected a member of the XIII Congress, and was also one of the commissioners elected to settle the disputed boundary line between Kentucky and Tennessee. He was finally appointed by the Legislature to be judge of what was then the Fourth Judicial Circuit, which position he filled for a period of fifteen years. He is still remembered for the courtesy and urbanity of his deportment to the bar and for his incorruptible integrity.

One of the best known and most highly esteemed members of the legal profession in East Tennessee during the early times was Pleasant M. Miller. He was born and reared in Virginia, but immigrated to Tennessee in 1796, locating at Rogersville. Four years later he removed to Knoxville, where he remained until 1824, when he again removed, locating this time in West Tennessee. He is said to have been a most civil and affable gentleman, easy and unaffected in conversation, and a great lover of wit. He was consequently a general favorite with other members of the bar, as well as with the public.

In making mention of the early members of the profession in Tennessee, the name of Gen. Sam Houston must not be omitted, although he never won much distinction at the bar. After the war of 1812 he read law for a short time with James Trimble and was admitted to practice. His legal knowledge was not very extensive, nor was the profession much suited to his taste. He consequently soon abandoned it for the more congenial sphere of politics, where his native ability, strong

force of character and fine personal appearance gave him great influence with the people. With his entrance into political life his connection with the profession ended.

Of the many illustrious names in the history of the bar of Tennessee during the early part of the century none is more conspicuous than that of Jenkin Whiteside.\* Jenkin Whiteside has come down to the men of this generation exclusively as a great land lawyer. No one was more familiar than he with all that Coke and Blackstone and the other English writers have said in their labored and profoundly reasoned treatises upon the laws of real property. No one had mastered more fully than himself the principles involved in the doctrine of executory devises and contingent remainders. No lawyer of his time could talk more learnedly and luminously upon the celebrated rule in Shelley's case, and he manifested a steady energy and masterly dexterity in the management of all the sharp points and subtle devices that appertain to the trial of actions of ejectment, which things gave him many advantages over a sluggish and less wily adversary. No man could be more conversant than was Jenkin Whiteside with the whole history of land titles in Tennessee, as well as with the operations of the land offices both in that State and North Carolina—a species of knowledge quite indispensable to success in the arduous but profitable vocation in which he had enlisted and upon which his attention had been concentrated in a manner rarely exemplified. He was undoubtedly a man of vigorous understanding, of wonderful sagacity and acuteness, devoted much to money-making, and especially delighting in what was known as speculation in uncultivated lands, of which he had, in one way and another, at different times accumulated large bodies, the titles to which were not rarely involved in troublesome and expensive litigation.

Personally he is described as a man of rough and unimposing exterior, of awkward and ungainly manners, and had no relish whatever for those elegant and refined pursuits which are understood to distinguish polished and aristocratic communities. He was, however, civil and unobtrusive in his general demeanor, not deficient in public spirit, and of a coarse and unpretending cordiality which made him many friends and no enemies.

Contemporary with this great land lawyer was Felix Grundy, the greatest criminal advocate that ever practiced in the courts of Tennessee. As a more extended sketch of him is given in another chapter, only a brief characterization by Judge Guild is here inserted. "Judge Grundy was not what may be called a book man or a book lawyer. To his fine

---

\*Bench and bar of the South and Southwest.



voice and inimitable action there was added a brilliant intellect, through which ran a vein of strong common sense. He was good at repartee, and his wit fairly sparkled. He possessed in a marked degree the power to arouse and sway the passions of the heart, to excite sympathy or indignation, to parry the blows of an adversary, and to carry his point by brilliant charge. He was a consummate judge of human nature, and this rendered him unrivaled in the selection of a jury. He was unsurpassed in developing the facts of a case, and wonderful in the cross-examination of a witness introduced against his client. He generally relied upon his associate counsel to bring into court the books containing the law of the case on which they were employed, and the law was read and commented upon by those associates, and then when Mr. Grundy came to close the case, so clear were his deductions, so striking his illustrations, so systematically would he tear to pieces the superstructure of the opposing counsel, and so vividly portray the right and justice for which he contended, that all who heard him regarded him as the finest lawyer of that or any other age. So thoroughly did he carry the crowd with him that he may be aptly likened to Paul when he made his great speech before King Agrippa, and extorted from that monarch the expression "almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian."

Another contemporary, in many respects the opposite of Judge Grundy, was Hugh Lawson White, a man remarkable alike for his eccentricities, and for the very high order of his mental and moral endowments. He had but little taste for general literature, but in all that pertains to his profession he was well versed, and there was no one for whom he had greater contempt than for the "case lawyer," except it was a mere "case judge." His incorruptible integrity, and his straightforward contempt for any advantage obtained from legal quibbles gave him so strong a hold upon the esteem and confidence of the community, that it would have been difficult to empanel a jury not biased in his favor. He was a deep and comprehensive thinker, was remarkable for his powers of comparison, had an acute sense of the ludicrous and was a lover of wit. His sentences were generally short, and so selected and arranged that whatever he said could be readily followed. He was appointed a judge of the superior court of law and equity in the fall of 1801, and continued on the bench until April, 1807. Two years later he was elected a judge of the supreme court of errors and appeals, which office he held until December, 1814. While on the bench his intercourse with the members of the bar was marked by that kindness and genuine courtesy which characterized him in every relation in life. The perspicuity, accuracy and uncompromising honesty of his opinions raised him into such high

and universal estimation that his final resignation of his seat was received with great regret.

Another member of this galaxy of brilliant legal minds was, for a time, Thomas H. Benton, who removed from the State in 1810. He began the practice of law in Franklin, and it is said that from the first he was "much fonder of political pursuits than of the study of law books, and greatly preferred the making of stump speeches to the argument of legal cases." He seems not to have applied himself with diligence to his profession, and his practice as a lawyer was never large. But he was destined for a broader field of usefulness. Possessed of a commanding intellect, of large and liberal culture, industrious, temperate, resolute and endowed with a memory whose tenacity was marvelous, he soon placed himself in the front rank of those who shaped the councils of the nation, and for many years he exercised almost unbounded control over the politics of not only his own State but the entire West, where he molded public opinion to suit himself. His history, however, belongs rather to Missouri than to Tennessee.

Without doubt the greatest jurist ever upon the bench in Tennessee was John Haywood,\* who, previous to his coming to the State in 1807, had already secured the highest judicial and professional honor in the courts of North Carolina. That he was especially adapted to his chosen profession is evident from the fact that without the advantages of a library, or the benefit of legal tuition in a lawyer's office, he fitted himself for the practice of law, and so thorough was his preparation that when at the age of twenty-four years he made his first argument before the supreme court, he is said to have displayed as much learning and as comprehensive a view of the great landmarks of the law as any argument that had ever been made before it. The following characterization of him by a contemporary is an eminently correct one: "Judge Haywood was a fine genius and a most powerful and unrivaled advocate. In tact and eloquence—such eloquence as reaches the heart and convinces the judgment—he had no equal in Tennessee. He was often employed with and against the late Felix Grundy in the most critical criminal cases, and it would not be saying too much, perhaps, to say that as an orator he was equal if not superior to that distinguished advocate. Both had been on the supreme bench of their respective States, and both came to Tennessee preceded by the most brilliant reputations. Both were men of great learning and attainments, but in all the learning which pertained to his profession Judge Haywood stood far in advance of his great rival. He possessed inexhaustible stores of imagination; was quick and ready

\*The publishers designed to have the portrait of Judge Haywood appear in this work, but notwithstanding while inquiries were made, no likeness of him of any description could be found.—Ed.

in argument, and prompt in reply. But withal his judgment was too much under the dominion of imaginative faculty, which gave to some of his opinions too great an air of eccentricity and uncertainty. He had many sympathies in common with his fellow-men, and highly cherished their good opinion, particularly of his own fame. He was ambitious in the highest degree, somewhat overbearing in his desire to be considered 'the court,' and perhaps thought too highly of his own and too little of his brother judges' opinions, and felt that he was the master-spirit in the settlement and determination of all leading questions of jurisprudence. I do not think I should do him injustice if I should say he never delivered an opinion without desiring the presence of a large audience."

Associated with Judge Haywood for a time, upon the bench of the supreme court of Tennessee, was William L. Brown, a man possessing many traits of character in common with that eminent jurist. He began the practice of his profession in Clarksville, Tenn., but considering that field too narrow for his abilities he removed to Nashville. He was ambitious in the highest degree, and his tenacity of purpose was such that no difficulty, however great, could deter him from an undertaking. His knowledge of the law was such as few men succeed in acquiring, and his scholarly attainments, although not so extensive, were yet respectable. Gov. Foote says of him: "A man of a more fervid and insatiable ambition has never lived, though the purity and elevation of his nature effectually held him from all those low and debasing arts by which a meretricious fame is so often acquired. A legitimate and honest celebrity he sought for with all the earnestness of a zealous and hopeful temperament; he toiled for it with exhaustless assiduity. He meditated upon the means by which it was to be realized through many an anxious day and many a restless night. He seemed to have been born with an indomitable confidence in his own capacity for self-advancement, and his ultimate realization of a splendid destiny commensurate with his aspirations and indispensable to his earthly happiness." In 1822 he was appointed a judge of the supreme court, but remained upon the bench only two years. The duties of the office were distasteful to him, and he preferred the excitement of the advocate rather than the calm dignity of the judge. The chief cause of his resignation, however, is said to have been that "he was not content to occupy a place where the overshadowing influence of Judge Haywood's long established fame necessarily held him in secondary dignity." His retirement was a subject of universal regret.

In striking contrast with this remarkable man was his successor, John Catron, a man as "simple minded and as simple manueered as a child." Yet with all his innocence and generous simplicity he had a mind of



wonderful vigor and acuteness, and his powers of judicial analysis have rarely been excelled. His capacity for labor was enormous, and his incorruptible integrity as a judge was never questioned. Born of obscure parentage and reared in poverty his early education was somewhat limited, and he was never able in later years to entirely supply its deficiency. He began his legal career in the town of Sparta, where he soon gained a reputation for ability, but like many other ambitious young men he longed for a broader field of activity, and accordingly, in a short time, removed to Nashville, where his superior talents in a few years elevated him to the highest judicial position in the State. He remained on the bench of the supreme court until the change of the judicial system by the constitution of 1834, when he again resumed the practice of his profession. President Jackson, on the last day of his second term, appointed him as a judge of the Supreme Court of the United States, which office he held until his death, a period of more than thirty years.

Henry Crabb, the successor of Judge Haywood upon the bench of the supreme court, was for many years a member of the Nashville bar, and a rival of William L. Brown, in opposition to whom he often appeared in the most important cases. He was a well-balanced, dignified, imperturbable, polished gentleman, of more than ordinary talents and of considerable learning. He had a decided advantage over his more excitable rival whenever they were thrown into professional antagonism. His calm self-possession, quiet sarcasm, and half-concealed raillery so excited the feelings of his adversary that on more than one occasion an appeal to "the code" seemed imminent. The opinions delivered by him during the brief period that he occupied his seat upon the bench show him to have possessed a thoroughly judicial mind. Cave Johnson, a sketch of whom appears in another chapter, was for many years a practitioner of law, and accumulated a handsome fortune by his energy, shrewdness and practical intelligence. He was always a persuasive, earnest and eloquent speaker, and thoroughly skilled in debate, but for some thirty years of his life he was too deeply immersed in politics to achieve the highest distinction in his profession.

William E. Anderson, who came to Nashville about 1825, was a man who attracted universal attention, not only on account of his gigantic stature, but from his otherwise commanding appearance. His distinguishing characteristic was strength, both physical and mental. He was not, however, a very diligent student, and was somewhat inclined to excessive self-indulgence and conviviality. He stood high at the bar and his services were eagerly sought, but he was too negligent in the preparation of his cases to be a truly successful lawyer. He was for a time a

judge of the circuit court, and removed to Mississippi about 1845. Several other members of the profession of this period possessed scarcely less ability than those already noticed, but perhaps through force of circumstance or lack of ambition did not attain the eminent distinction accorded to their more fortunate contemporaries. In this class may be mentioned James Trimble, who practiced his profession in Knoxville and Nashville for nearly twenty years, and for a time was upon the bench of the circuit court. He was well acquainted with all that pertained to his profession, and was also a thorough student of general literature. In his law cases he was laborious, and was indefatigable in his efforts for his clients. His style of speaking was conversational, but the zeal and interest which was manifested by the tone of his voice and the flash of his eye carried conviction to the minds of a jury. His energy, however, proved too much for his strength, and while yet in the prime of life he died from the effects of overwork.

Another talented member of the profession at this time who was cut off in early manhood was John Dickinson. Born and educated in Massachusetts he came to Nashville a young man, and while serving as deputy clerk of the United States Court prosecuted the study of law. His energy and industry soon qualified him for his profession, in which he soon rose to distinction and took his place by the side of the ablest advocates of the time. He was faithful to his business, and manifested the most unswerving honesty in all his dealings. He was one of the ablest lawyers of his day, and acquired a large and remunerative practice. Had a longer life been granted him it is doubtful if his fame would have been circumscribed by the narrow limits of the State.

"Toward the close of the last century a very worthy Dutch family was residing in the town of Lebanon, Tenn., now so celebrated for its institution of learning and specially for its law school. The Yerger mansion is still standing and in a comfortable state of preservation. In this house were born eight worthy gentlemen, all brothers, and all but one of them practitioners of law."\* None of the brothers remained permanently in Tennessee, but at least two of them won high reputations before removing from the State. George S. Yerger, the eldest brother, officiated for some years as reporter of the judicial decisions of the Supreme Court of Tennessee, at first alone and afterward with his younger brother. His early education was somewhat limited, but this deficiency was more than supplied by his great store of legal knowledge, which, although it had been obtained in a somewhat irregular manner, was thoroughly digested and ready for use at any moment it might be wished. He possessed in-

---

\*Bench and Bar of the South and Southwest.

tellectual faculties of a high order, was kind and generous in all his impulses, and was alike "devoid of envy, of low selfishness, of narrow and irrational prejudices and of overweening ambition." He moved to Mississippi in 1839, and in the courts of that State he succeeded in maintaining his high reputation unimpaired to the end of his life. J. S. Yerger possessed many qualities of mind in common with his elder brother, but was perhaps of a more sociable disposition, and possessed conversational powers of a most entertaining and instructive order. He was widely read, and his general education was thorough and complete. He was a good judge of both men and their motives of action, and consequently was unsurpassed in the selection of a jury. He, too, removed to Mississippi, where he became eminent both as a judge and an advocate.

Thomas H. Fletcher began life as a merchant, but becoming involved financially during the crisis of 1818-19, he was led to the study of law, and soon came to be recognized as one of the leading members of the bar. "Although he had a large and general practice, he stood pre-eminently high as a criminal advocate, and possessed all the requirements for success in that special forensic field. A good judge of human nature, knowing its strong and its weak side, he selected his jury with great discrimination, and having a heart as tender as a woman's his feelings were naturally with his clients in their distress, and he always made their cause his own. There have been great criminal lawyers in Tennessee, but few his equal and none his superior. His voice was clear and strong, his manner earnest and excited but never rude and boisterous; pathetic or humorous as the occasion suggested, he always spoke with good taste and made perhaps fewer failures than almost any other lawyer at the bar. He was very popular with the profession, especially among the younger lawyers, whom he always treated with the utmost kindness and courtesy. His reading was extensive, and not confined to professional works, and often beguiled his leisure hours in composition for the newspapers on the ephemeral subjects of the day. There was in his manner no rudeness, in his speech no coarseness or invective, and his sympathy for the misfortunes of his fellow-men was unbounded."\* His death, which occurred from apoplexy brought on by over-exertion, was the subject of universal regret.

Jacob Peck, for twelve years a judge of the supreme court of errors and appeals, and at the time of his death one of the oldest attorneys in the State, was licensed to practice in 1808. He was a native of Virginia, but removed to Tennessee at a very early period of his life. He was a man of varied talents and extensive knowledge, and his genius was

---

\*John M. Lea in *Nashville Banner*.



of a high order. He had an especial fondness for painting, poetry, and music, and also took much delight in the study of zoology and mineralogy, in which sciences he was looked upon as an authority.

Edward Scott, who presided on the bench of the Knoxville Circuit for nearly thirty years, was a man of great eccentricities, and many amusing stories are told of him. He was a native of Virginia, but came at an early day to Tennessee. He was a hard student of text-books and reports, but failed to get down to the broad, underlying principles of the law, and was consequently looked upon as a case lawyer. While on the bench, he administered the law as he remembered it, and seldom threw himself upon his own mental resources. He was never partial to young lawyers either in manner or speech, but was frequently rude and uncivil, though he was a man of kindness and tender sensibilities. In 1820 he published his revision of the laws of Tennessee in two large volumes. This served the lawyers and judges of the State for their principal reference until the compilation of Caruthers & Nicholson was published in 1838.

Pryor Lea was a prominent member of the early bar of East Tennessee. He was a native of Grainger County, and attended Blount College while under the presidency of Samuel Carrick. He was an indefatigable student, and at the bar his *forte* was special pleading. He removed to Mississippi about 1836 or 1837, and later went to Texas, where he recently died at a very advanced age.

Col. John Williams was one of the pioneer lawyers of East Tennessee, but his career as a politician eclipsed his legal career. He served as a member of the General Assembly, as a United States Senator, and was sent as minister to Guatemala by President Adams. He was a brother of Thomas L. Williams, who rather excelled him as a lawyer. He was most courtly and fascinating in his manners, and although not an eloquent speaker, possessed a wonderful personal magnetism.

If it be possible to divide the history of the legal profession in Tennessee into eras, it may be said that the reorganization of the courts in 1834 marks the beginning of a new era. At that time those intellectual giants Whiteside, Grundy, Haywood, White and others, around whom the events of the first two or three decades of the century cluster, had almost without exception retired from practice or had been removed to the higher courts above. But as they disappeared, one by one, their places were filled by men of scarcely less ability and renown. The new supreme court was organized with Nathan Green, William B. Reese and William B. Turley, as judges, and it is doubtful if the bench of that court has ever been filled by men of more uniformly distinguished ability. Judge

Green was a native of Virginia. He possessed but few advantages of education, but with a strong will, a vigorous intellect and an eager thirst for distinction, he soon placed himself upon a level with those who had been favored by higher opportunities. He began his career as a lawyer in the Mountain District where he soon took a prominent stand among the members of the bar. In his practice he preferred the chancery department, and loved especially to deal with the great and broad principles of the law. For nearly a quarter of a century he occupied a place upon the bench, and was ever distinguished for his amenity and courtesy, his learning and ability, his truth and integrity. His opinions do not abound with brilliant passages like some of Judge Turley's, nor are they marked by the pure and elegant though somewhat involved style of Judge Reese, but are always clear and discriminating and logical. Personally he is described as a man of majestic stature, of a highly commanding aspect, and of sedate and gentlemanly manners. After his retirement from the bench he was associated with Judge Caruthers as professor of the law department of Cumberland County, at Lebanon. Judge Reese was a man of unquestioned uprightness, and of the most ample legal attainments. His general scholarship and literary culture probably excelled that of either of his colleagues. His style as exhibited in his opinions is marked by elegance, and is in full keeping with his excellence of reasoning. He was eminently qualified by nature and education for the duties of the bench. "An impartiality that knew no bias, an inborn love of justice that experienced no abatement, an almost instinctive perception of the truth joined to his profound knowledge of the law, his patience and industry in research, his enlargement of mind by a general and varied learning, his solidity of judgment, combined to make him one of the first judges that Tennessee has yet produced;" as an attorney he possessed scarcely less ability. His care in the preparation of cases, his logical reasoning and terrible sarcasm, and his thorough acquaintance with legal science, made him a formidable adversary to even the distinguished men who adorned the bar of East Tennessee when he practiced in her courts.

William B. Turley was at one time, a member of the Clarksville bar, where he laid the foundations for a brilliant career. Previous to his elevation to the supreme bench he served for many years as a judge of the circuit court, where he was distinguished for an uncommon facility in the dispatch of business. He brought to the discharge of his duties an enlightened mind, well stored with legal knowledge, and his temper, without being imperious or irascible, was firm and decided. His opinions are distinguished for their perspicuity, polished language and exact and logical reasoning. He was an industrious student, very fond of reading,

extensively informed and had a memory of wonderful tenacity; but he was not remarkable for close and persevering application to business. After his retirement from the supreme court, in 1850, he was judge of the common law and chancery court of Memphis until his death about eighteen months later.

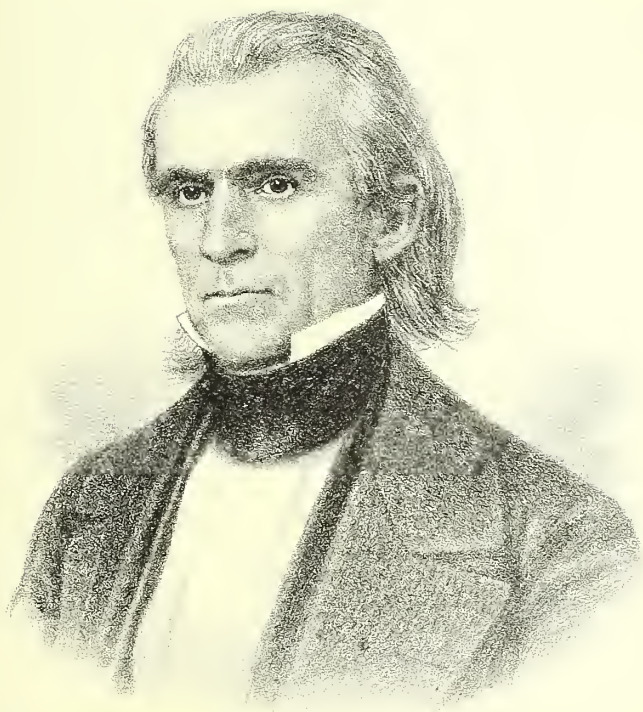
The bar of East Tennessee has always been distinguished for its superior ability, but of the long list of illustrious names engraven in its temple of fame, none occupy a higher position than that of Robert J. McKinney, the successor of Judge Reese. He was a native of Ireland, but spent the greater part of his life in Tennessee. His arguments at the bar were always remarkable for their logical force and precision, their freedom from all circumlocution or mere parade of words, and were occasionally tinged with something approaching sarcasm and irony. On the bench he was diligent, painstaking and unrelaxing in his labors, as his reported opinions so satisfactorily attest. He was accused of being occasionally a little too stern and austere in his demeanor toward members of the bar, and was not a little inclined to caution attorneys to avoid anything at all approaching a superfluity of illustration.

Robert Looney Caruthers, the successor of Judge Green, has been said, by those who knew him, to have been the best advocate that Tennessee ever produced. That he was a most remarkable man is evident from the fact that reared in comparative poverty, without influential friends, he raised himself by his own efforts to the foremost place in the estimation of the people. Although he held several official positions he had but little fondness for political life, and it was in the law that he found what was most congenial to his taste, and which best occupied his great intellect. His marked characteristic as a lawyer was persuasive logic, based upon a substratum of common sense. His powers as a declaimer merely were not of the first order. He perhaps despised the mere tinsel and glare of what is frequently mistaken for true eloquence. Gentle of nature, both in manner and feeling, he preferred to carry with him the conviction of the audience by soft and mild leading rather than bold assertion and overwhelming dominance. But to attain his ends, success in his profession and success in his courses, he never condescended to trickery or unworthy arts of any description. He was laborious in the preparation of cases; he trusted nothing to chance or inspiration; he left down no gaps; he tightened up the loose joints, and always came to the battle fully armed and equipped. He had great power of labor, which if not genius or talent is yet their necessary concomitant, if success is to follow. But above all things perhaps his most available means, especially before juries, was he "knew what was in man," motive,



probable action, influence of surroundings, the strength and weakness of man, varieties of character, and upon a knowledge of these he built up his argument. There is a variety of opinion whether Judge Caruthers shone more brilliantly at the bar or on the bench; the opinion is unanimous, however, that he was an able, upright, laborious and conscientious expounder of the laws in his official capacity. He brought to the bench the same broad common sense, the same effective learning, the same comprehensive mind that had characterized him throughout his previous life; and all through his opinions there is apparent a careful judicial search for truth, and a firm determination to uphold the right in morals and in law. The last years of his life were spent as the leading professor of the law department of Cumberland University, of which he was one of the principal founders.

Archibald W. O. Totten, the successor of Judge Turley, was born in Middle Tennessee, but at an early age removed with his father to the western division of the State. He studied law, and was admitted to practice in Gibson County. His temperate and regular habits, his laborious investigations of the cases intrusted to his care, and his fidelity to all his professional engagements, secured to him a full and lucrative practice, and he rose rapidly to independence and distinction. His person was tall, manly and striking; his manners bland and courteous in a high degree, and his general deportment dignified, without stiffness or reserve. In the most exciting debates at the bar, he never descended to wrangling or lost the serenity of his temper, or the tranquillity of his manner. He retired from the supreme bench in August, 1855, and was succeeded by William R. Harris, of Memphis. Judge Harris was born in North Carolina, but was reared chiefly in Bedford County, Tenn. His educational advantages were somewhat meager, but, notwithstanding this hindrance, his strong, native talents enabled him to reach high rank in his profession. He began the practice of law in Paris, Henry County, where, in a few years, he evinced so much ability that he was made judge of the circuit court, a position which he held until 1845. Six years later he removed to Memphis, where he presided over the common law and chancery court until his elevation to the supreme bench. As an advocate he was earnest and forcible, and neither in his oral or written productions was he ever known to affect mere ornaments of speech. In his judicial capacity he was cautious, laborious and circumspect in arriving at his conclusions, and inflexible in maintaining them. Judge Harris was killed in a steam-boat explosion on the Mississippi River in 1858. The vacancy occasioned by his death was filled by the appointment of Archibald Wright, also of Memphis,



FROM PHOTO BY THUSS, KOELEN & GIER, NASHVILLE

JAMES K. POLK





but a native of Maury County. He obtained a fairly good education before entering upon his career as a lawyer, which he did in 1832. He possessed great capacity for labor, and by sheer strength and directness, attention to business and tenacity of purpose, he won his way to distinction. During his brief career upon the supreme bench he manifested his eminent fitness for that high position. His opinions are models of judicial style—clear, forcible, direct, tersely stating the points and deciding the matter before him, briefly reaching his conclusions without verbiage or over-argumentation. In both his physical and mental qualities he was a man of striking individuality. He possessed a magnificent physique, and a constitution equal to any strain upon its powers of endurance. The salient traits of his character were his originality, strength and clearness of intellect, tenacity of purpose and indomitable energy.

These were all the men who occupied a position upon the supreme bench previous to the civil war. W. F. Cooper was appointed to succeed Robert L. Caruthers in 1861, but the suspension of the court prevented his taking his seat. It now remains to notice some of the distinguished members of the bar during the period from 1834 to 1861.

One of the most talented men whom Tennessee has given to the world was John Bell, whose career as a politician and statesman, however, over-towers his reputation as an advocate. As a sketch of his life appears elsewhere, only brief mention of him is made in this connection. He began his career as a lawyer in Williamson County, but soon after removed to Nashville and formed a partnership with Judge Crabb. Although he entered Congress when he was little more than thirty years of age, he had acquired a high standing at the bar as a lawyer of great acuteness, research and ability, and as a speaker of no ordinary merit.

James K. Polk was a contemporary of Bell, both having been born in the same year. The former, not quite so precocious as his rival, did not begin the practice of law until about twenty-five years of age, but when he did begin he was thoroughly equipped for his forensic struggles. He opened an office at Columbia, where almost from the first he occupied a front rank in the profession. His naturally strong intellect, disciplined by years of study to close and accurate reasoning, together with his known moral integrity, made him a most powerful adversary before the bar. His early entrance into the field of politics, however, practically closed his legal career.

Ephraim H. Foster, a prominent contemporary of the above, was a native of Kentucky, but when a small child came with his father's family

to Tennessee. He received as good an education as the times afforded, graduating with the first class matriculated in Cumberland College in 1813. He then studied law with John Trimble. Very soon after beginning its practice, his close application to business, together with his natural ability and prepossessing appearance, placed him in the front rank of his profession. His practice becoming too large for one person, he formed a partnership with William L. Brown, with whom he remained until the latter's elevation to the bench of the supreme court. From that time until his retirement from practice he was associated with Francis B. Fogg. Col. Foster was a fine speaker, but he had by nature a quick and violent temper which he did not always control. It is said that on one occasion, while arguing a case in which he was greatly interested, he became angry at some remark made by the judge, and threw a book at him. The judge, unmindful of his position, sprang at Col. Foster, with a heavy walking stick in his hand, and but for the interference of friends a serious difficulty would have been the result. "Peace, however, was restored without bloodshed. The offender made the proper apology, paid a heavy fine for his rashness, and the honorable but belligerent court adjourned." Col. Foster lived in elegant style, and entertained in a princely manner. This, with his vivacity, wit and brilliant conversation, made him a universal favorite in society. During the last twenty years of his life, he gave the greater part of his attention to political matters, into which he entered with great spirit. He was twice elected to the United States senate, the first time in 1837, to fill out the unexpired term of Felix Grundy. He was again chosen in 1843, but resigned two years later. In 1845 he was the Whig candidate for governor, but was defeated by A. V. Brown, by a small majority. He then withdrew from active life, and died in 1854.

Francis B. Fogg, for many years a partner of the above, was a native of Connecticut, where he received a thorough literary education, and also prepared himself for his chosen profession. He then, in 1818, came to Tennessee and located at Columbia, but in less than a year removed to Nashville, where he spent the remainder of a long life. "Upon his settlement in Tennessee he commenced the practice of law which he pursued with unremitting diligence for half a century, until age and disease disqualified him for labor. It is no disparagement to his many distinguished contemporaries in the profession during that long and eventful period to say that he had few rivals and no superiors. His success was eminent. He commanded the confidence of the community in a remarkable degree. To a mind naturally strong and vigorous he united rare industry, and with original scholarship of a high order he was able to

amass stores of learning on all subjects. He possessed a wonderful memory, by which he could recall cases and incidents that most others had forgotten. He was familiar not only with the history of the law, but with the history of this and other countries. Mr. Fogg was not ambitious for office and never sought promotion, but in 1834 he was, by the voluntary action of the community, elected a member of the Constitutional Convention and took a prominent part in its deliberations. In 1851-52 he was elected to the State Senate from Davidson County and aided efficiently in inaugurating the system of internal improvements which has done so much for the State." "It is impossible now to tell how many of the statutes that adorn our code and measure and regulate the rights of persons and property, he was the author of. It was the habit of Legislatures to call upon him on all occasions for aid in the preparation of bills."\*

No member of the Nashville bar is remembered with a feeling of greater kindness and respect than Josephus C. Guild. Of his early professional life he has given many interesting incidents in his "Old Times in Tennessee," which are told in his inimitable style. He was a man of strong and vigorous intellect, and at the bar, especially before a jury, he had but few equals. He was not a student of books nor a finished scholar, but was a close observer of human nature and possessed a fund of practical knowledge which was always ready for use. As a judge he was distinguished for his strong sense of justice and his deep love of natural equity, which made suitors feel that their causes would be impartially tried. There was also a natural cheerfulness and liveliness of his disposition which would crop out even in the midst of the decorum of the bench, and a lively sally of wit or a gleam of humor from him often brightened the otherwise dull tedium of legal procedure. Judge Guild began the practice of law in 1822, in Sumner County, where he remained until the close of the civil war. He was three times elected to the House of Representatives, and twice to the State Senate, was a presidential elector for James K. Polk in 1844 and for Franklin Pierce in 1852; was elected chancellor for the Seventh Chancery Division in 1860, and in 1870 was made judge of the law court of Nashville, which position he held until the abolition of the court in 1878. He died January 8, 1883, after sixty years of active professional life.

Bailie Peyton, a contemporary and intimate personal friend of Judge Guild, was associated with him in his early practice. He was born in Sumner County in 1803. At the age of twenty-one he was admitted to the bar, and soon after formed a partnership with Henry A. Wise, a

---

\*The above extracts are taken from the resolutions passed by the bar at his death in April, 1880.



young man, also just entering upon the practice of law. Being of similar disposition they at once became intimate friends, but neither possessed much taste for the arduous duties of the profession, and soon drifted into the more congenial sphere of politics. The partnership continued for two years, when the latter returned to his native State. His subsequent career is familiar to all students of history. Peyton did not rank very high as a lawyer, but as a political speaker he had few superiors, possessing in a high degree that peculiar quality known as personal magnetism. He was elected to Congress on the Whig ticket when barely thirty years of age, and was twice returned, serving from 1833 to 1839. He was appointed United States District Attorney at New Orleans by President Taylor, and soon after was sent as minister to Chili. He afterward practiced law for a time in California, but later returned to his old home at Gallatin, where he died in 1878.

For several years one of the leading law firms in Nashville was composed of Edwin H. and Andrew Ewing, sons of Nathan Ewing and grandsons of Andrew Ewing, the first clerk of the Davidson County Court. Edwin H. Ewing graduated at the Nashville University in 1827, and was admitted to the bar in 1831. He then formed a partnership with James Grundy, which continued until 1837, when he associated himself with his younger brother. For a number of years he took an active interest in politics, serving one term in the State Legislature and one term in Congress. Meanwhile he kept up the practice of law, and added to his already high reputation. He sat frequently upon the bench of the supreme court as special judge, and delivered opinions in several important cases. In 1851 the partnership with his brother was dissolved, and he did but little practice thereafter until the close of the war, at which time he resumed his professional labors and has only recently entirely withdrawn from active life.

Andrew Ewing also received a collegiate education and, in point of ability, was not inferior to his brother. He was an easy, graceful and persuasive speaker, a thorough and diligent student, and an energetic and active advocate. While in partnership he performed the law practice, leaving the chancery business to his associate. He made a careful study of each case, but he was too thoroughly imbued with a knowledge of the elements and principles of law to be classed as a mere case lawyer. While giving diligent attention to professional business he also mingled considerably in the politics of the day as a speaker and counselor. While his brother was a Whig he was a moderate Democrat, and in 1849 was elected to Congress in the face of a strong opposition. He was appointed one of a permanent court-martial of lawyers by the Confederate Govern-

ment in 1862, and two years later died from exposure and overwork at Atlanta, Ga.

One of the best educated and most brilliant men ever at the bar in Tennessee was Return J. Meigs, who practiced law for many years in Athens, McMinn County, and afterward removed to Nashville. He was the author of a voluminous digest of the judicial decisions of the State, and was one of the compilers of a "Code of Tennessee." He was not only learned in the law, but in ancient and modern languages, and was a comparative philologist of no ordinary attainments. Indeed, there seemed to be no branch of human knowledge with which he was not in some degree familiar. At the beginning of the war, being a strong Union man, he was compelled to leave Nashville, and he afterward made his home in Washington, where, for a number of years, he held a responsible position under the Government.

William T. Haskell, at one time a prominent member of the bar of Tennessee, was almost diametrically opposite in character to Meigs. He was a brilliant and effective speaker, possessing a mind of much quickness and energy, and an imagination of exceeding fertility. He had great powers of ridicule, and, when opportunity afforded, could use invective with crushing effect. He was not, however, a thorough and diligent student, and was somewhat too fond of social pleasure to attain to that high rank to which, with proper application, his talents would have raised him.

Spencer Jarnagin, a student at law under Hugh L. White, was born and reared in East Tennessee, where he attained to considerable distinction in his profession. He was a plain unimaginative man with a clear head and sound judgment. His language was simple, well chosen and straightforward, and he rarely indulged in impassioned flights of oratory, yet he never failed to elicit the closest attention from his hearers. His success as a jury lawyer has rarely been excelled, and litigants always felt confident of success when they had secured him to advocate their cause.

One of the leading lawyers in the western division of the State for many years was Milton Brown, a native of Ohio, who located in Tennessee in early manhood. During his long practice in the various courts of the State he maintained a high reputation for industry, probity and legal acumen, and succeeded in accumulating an ample fortune. His knowledge of the law was full and accurate, his reasoning powers much above mediocrity, and his astuteness and skill in the management of cases were universally acknowledged.

John A. Nooe was at one time prominently identified with the Memphis bar. He was a man of high character, mild, affable, benignant and

of unimpeachable integrity. He was thoroughly well read in the law, and could effectively apply the learning which he had acquired. Although he always expressed himself with fluency and in elegant language, his diffidence in public was a serious drawback upon his complete success as a forensic advocate.

Neill Smith Brown, the thirteenth governor of Tennessee, was a native of Giles County and a descendant of Scotch Presbyterians. His parents were poor, and unable to give him more than the rudiments of an education. At the age of seventeen he was thrown upon his own resources, and took to teaching school to enable him to secure a more thorough education. After completing a college course he studied law, and began the practice at Matagorda, Tex., then a part of Mexico. Not finding the society congenial, he soon after returned to his native State, where he took an active part in politics until the beginning of the war, serving as a member of the General Assembly, governor, minister to Russia, and as presidential elector on the Whig ticket in 1856. His career as a lawyer began in 1835, and except for his frequent diversion in the field of politics, he practiced his profession for a period of fifty years. It could not perhaps be said that his legal acquirements were the most comprehensive, or that in grasp of thought and aggressive force of character he was not excelled, but his native talents were of a high order, and had been well cultivated for the part he essayed in life, and they won for him just and deserved distinction.

John Trimble, a son of James Trimble, who has been previously mentioned, attained a high degree of eminence in the profession. At the age of twenty-four he was elected attorney-general for the Nashville District, a position which he held for six years. In 1843 he was elected a member of the lower house of the General Assembly, and two years later to the Senate. He refused a renomination, and for the next few years devoted himself to his professional labors, acquiring a large practice. In 1859 he again entered politics, being elected to the State Senate. He was a stanch Union man, and during the extra session of 1861 did all in his power to defeat the passage of the ordinances of secession. In 1862 he was commissioned United States district attorney, which office he held for two years. In 1865 he was again elected to the State Senate, and two years afterward was chosen to represent his district in the XL Congress. He had a taste for literary pursuits, which at times became almost a passion, and for several years of his life he devoted himself almost entirely to study. Had he been ambitious to rise either in his profession or in the political world, he could have attained to the highest position in either.



Judge Thomas L. Williams, for a long time chancellor of East Tennessee, was one of the most highly respected members of the profession who ever practiced in the courts of the State. He was a man of strong constitution and of great energy and force. He scorned all effeminate self-indulgence, and his powers of endurance seemed almost unlimited. He held thirty-eight courts in nineteen different counties in a year, and in going from one point to another had to travel over rough mountain roads, at times almost impassable. His judicial career presents an example of industry and adherence to official duty rarely excelled. Although he possessed highly respectable attainments in his profession, he was not a learned lawyer nor an accomplished scholar; but he possessed in an eminent degree that highest and most valuable of all intellectual gifts, strong, vigorous, practical, common sense. He retired from the chancellorship in 1854, and died at Nashville, December 2, 1856.

Thomas C. Lyon, of the Knoxville bar, was a native of Roane County, born in 1810. He enjoyed the reputation of an able and successful lawyer, and a thorough and profound jurist. He was a man of fine sensibilities and a high sense of honor. He sat frequently upon the supreme bench as a special judge, and his opinions are generally regarded as not inferior to those of the most learned jurists. He was a fine linguist and an accomplished scholar, with considerable taste for poetical composition. When he was quite young his father removed to Knoxville, where he received his education, graduating from East Tennessee College. During the Mexican war he served on the staff of Gen. Wool, with the rank of major. He died in Richmond, Va., October 1, 1864.

William H. Sneed, another prominent member of the Knoxville bar, was born in Davidson County in 1812, and soon after attaining his majority began the practice of law at Murfreesboro. He early attained a high standing, which he fully maintained to the end of his life. In 1843 he was chosen to the State Senate, and soon after the expiration of his term of office married the only daughter of Alexander Williams, of Greeneville, where he then located, and in partnership with Robert J. McKinney practiced his profession for about a year. In 1845 he removed to Knoxville, where he at once took a prominent position, and in 1855 was elected to represent his district in Congress. He died at his home in 1869.

Horace Maynard, for many years a leading lawyer and politician of East Tennessee, was born in Massachusetts in 1814. He received his early education in Charleston, S. C., but graduated from Amherst College in 1838. He soon after removed to East Tennessee, locating at Knoxville, where he was employed as a professor in the University of

East Tennessee until 1844. He then entered upon the practice of law and soon was recognized as one of the leading attorneys in that division of the State. In 1857 he took his seat as a member of the XXXV Congress, and continued as a member of that body until the expiration of the XLIII Congress, with the exception of from 1863 to 1865, when he was attorney-general of Tennessee. Having with Andrew Johnson espoused the principles of the Republican party, he remained faithful to them. He served during the greater portion of President Hayes' administration as minister to Turkey, and also for a short time as Postmaster-General. He was a man of distinguished ability, was a forcible and clear speaker and always entertaining. He died May 3, 1882.

At the close of the civil war, the supreme court was reorganized with Samuel Milligan, J. O. Shackelford and Alvin Hawkins, as judges appointed by the governor. Frequent changes occasioned by resignation occurred, until the adoption of the new constitution in 1870.

Samuel Milligan was born in Greene County, Tenn., "of poor but respectable parents." His father was unable to give him a better education than could be obtained at an old field school; but being possessed of a well balanced and indomitable energy he determined to take a college course. In this he was successful and graduated from Tusculum College. He studied law with Robert J. McKinney, but before beginning practice he was elected to the General Assembly, serving two terms. He was admitted to the bar in 1846, but soon after joined the army and served as a major in the Mexican war. After his return home he practiced his profession until the civil war. In 1868 he resigned his seat upon the supreme bench, and was made one of the judges of the court of claims at Washington, a position he held until his death in 1874. He was an able advocate, and an impartial and incorruptible judge.

Alvin Hawkins entered the profession of the law as a student under Judge Totten at the age of nineteen. About two years later he located at Camden, Benton County, where he remained only a short time, when he returned to Huntington. In 1854 he was chosen to represent his county in the General Assembly, and in 1862 was elected to Congress but did not take his seat. He remained loyal to the Union, however, and in 1864 was appointed United States District Attorney for West Tennessee, by President Lincoln, a position which he resigned the following year to accept a seat upon the Supreme Bench. As an advocate he has few superiors, and is especially strong before a jury. He is an effective speaker at all times, and possesses oratorical powers of a high order. His native talents are of a high order and have been well cultivated, and they have won for him just and deserved distinction.

James O. Shackelford was a native of Kentucky, but at an early age removed with his parents to Missouri. During his early manhood he was engaged in trapping in New Mexico and other parts of the Southwest. After his return he studied law and began practice at Dover, Stewart County. Later he removed to Clarksville, and formed a partnership with James Rivers, with whom he practiced for a time. He afterward was associated with Gustav A. Henry, continuing until the beginning of the civil war. During that struggle he espoused the Union cause, yet he always sympathized with the misfortunes of his neighbors on the other side, and through his influence prevented much suffering. In 1865, with Hawkins and Milligan, he was placed upon the supreme bench by appointment of Gov. Brownlow. He resigned in 1867, but was reappointed the following year. In 1869 he resumed the practice of his profession in Nashville; there he continued until about 1875, when he moved to Colorado. Judge Shackelford was a man of good ability and considerable learning. He was not an eloquent speaker, but possessed reasoning powers of a high order.

Andrew McLain, one of the supreme judges elected in 1869, was born in Smith County and began his career as a lawyer at Carthage. He soon became one of the leading attorneys in that county and was made judge of the circuit court. After his retirement from the supreme bench in 1870 he practiced law in Nashville until February, 1882, when he received the appointment to the office of United States District Attorney. Upon the change in the administration of the Federal Government in 1885 he was retired, and now resides in San Diego, Cal. He is well read in his profession, but is not a successful advocate, being somewhat lacking in tact and skill. He is a man, however, of unquestioned integrity, and of the strictest moral rectitude.

George Andrews was born in Putney, Vt., in 1826. His boyhood was spent in his native State, in western New York and in Michigan. He studied law in Detroit, where he was admitted to the bar in 1857, and continued to practice his profession until 1865, when he came to Tennessee. In December, 1868, he was appointed by Gov. Brownlow a judge of the supreme court, to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Judge Milligan. He was elected to the same position at the judicial election in May, 1869, and continued upon the bench until the adoption of the new constitution in 1870. In December, 1871, he was appointed United States District Attorney for the eastern district of Tennessee, which position he continued to hold until his resignation in February, 1879. Since that time he has practiced his profession in Knoxville; since January 1, 1881, in partnership with J. M. Thornburgh.



Henry Gratton Smith, the successor of Judge Hawkins upon the supreme bench, was for a long time a distinguished member of the bar of Tennessee. His entire career was marked by a love of truth and uprightness, a scrupulous fairness toward adversary counsel and parties, and a laborious, painstaking attention to ascertain the true principle of law. It could not be claimed for him, perhaps, that he had no superiors in the profession, yet his learning and ability were decidedly above mediocrity. During the civil war he remained loyal to the National Government, yet he conducted himself with such rare discretion and dignity as to win the esteem of even his enemies. His opinions and judgments as they are found in the official reports attest to his ability and his devotion to the duties of his high office.

Horace H. Harrison was born in Lebanon, Wilson County, August 7, 1829. In 1841 the family removed to McMinnville, having meanwhile resided in Sumner and Robertson Counties. The father died in 1845, leaving young Harrison, at the age of fifteen, the sole support of his mother. Up to that time he had received a liberal education, but this event prevented him from completing his college course. He entered the office of the county clerk, and during the next seven years served in that office, the office of the clerk and master of the chancery court, and that of the register of deeds. In 1853 he was elected a director of the McMinnville & Manchester Railroad, and two years later began the practice of law in the Mountain Circuit, where he enjoyed a large practice from the first. In 1859 he removed to Nashville. In 1862 he was appointed clerk of the Federal courts for Middle Tennessee. August 15, 1863, he was commissioned United States District Attorney, a position he held until 1866. He was then appointed chancellor by Brownlow, and the following year was elected to the supreme bench. In 1872 he was again appointed United States District Attorney, and afterward was elected to Congress from the Nashville District. At the end of his time he resumed the practice of law, continuing until his death, which occurred December 20, 1885. Judge Harrison was able and scholarly, and even his political opponents always conceded his purity and honesty. As a speaker and writer he was noted for clearness of statement and earnestness of manner.

Robert McFarland was for many years an able member of the East Tennessee bar, ranking with Reese and McKinney. He was a born lawyer and a judge by nature. He had a logical mind, patient of investigation and trained by reflection rather than much reading. He was singularly free from prejudices, and if as a judge he was not famed for erudition, he fully compensated for its absence by an accurate discrimin-

ation, sound judgment and rare practical wisdom. His opinions are not distinguished for beauty of style or wealth of illustration, but they are always clear and convincing. In correctness of decision, the highest test of a supreme judge, he had no superior. He was not as learned a lawyer as Reese, nor as exact and precise as McKinney, but in clearness of perception, soundness of judgment and correctness of decision he rivalled either\*. He served upon the supreme bench for a period of eleven years, retiring on account of failing health in December, 1882. He died in 1884.

Thomas A. R. Nelson, one of the supreme judges elected in 1870, was a native of Roane County, Tenn. He graduated from East Tennessee College in 1828, and was admitted to the bar before he attained his majority. He was one of the most brilliant and versatile of men and soon won his way to distinction. He figured quite prominently in politics, and while in Congress delivered a speech which was published in full by the *London Times*, and which that paper pronounced to be "one of the finest forensic efforts of modern American lawgivers." His reasoning powers were of a very high order, his imagination uncommonly fertile, and his power of satire unexcelled. During all the years of his long life, while not engaged in politics, he was vigorously prosecuting his professional labors, and in everything he undertook he was earnest, laborious and indefatigable. During his short term of service as a supreme judge he delivered a number of opinions which give evidence of his eminent ability as a jurist.

John Louis Taylor Sneed, one of the six supreme judges elected under the revised constitution in 1870, is a native of North Carolina. His mother died when he was quite a child and he was taken in charge and educated by his uncle, then living in Granville County, N. C., but who soon after removed to West Tennessee. There young Sneed, after receiving an academic education, began the study of law with V. D. Barry. In 1843 he settled in Memphis for the practice of his profession, and two years later he was elected to the General Assembly. In 1846 and 1847 he was a captain of volunteers in the Mexican war, and served with distinction until its close. In 1851 he was elected attorney-general of the Memphis Judicial District, but resigned three years later to become a candidate for the office of attorney-general of Tennessee. He was elected and held the office for five years, during which time he published the five volumes of reports known as Sneed's Reports. After his retirement from that office he became a candidate for Congress on the Whig ticket, but was defeated, the district being overwhelmingly Democratic. He then re-

\*Tribute to his memory from the Supreme Court Bar of East Tennessee.

turned to the practice of law and was so engaged when the civil war began. A Union man at first, like many others, he was made a rebel "by the tramp of an invading army," and although he never held office in the Confederate Army, yet he was thoroughly identified with its interests, and devoted to its cause. On his retirement from the supreme bench in 1878 a feeling of general regret was expressed. He afterward served as judge of the court of arbitration and also of the court of referees. As a judge he was patient, courteous, discriminately just and capable. In careful consideration, scholarly composition, lucidity of argument and thorough interpretation of the law, his opinions compare favorably with any of his predecessors. He is an especially brilliant speaker, and a forcible and ready orator. Personally he is very popular, being a man of commanding presence, easy and graceful in his manners, and possessing rare conversational powers.

Alfred Osborne Pope Nicholson, the first chief justice under the constitution of 1870, was born in Williamson County, Tenn, in 1808. He received a collegiate education, graduating from the University of North Carolina in 1827. He then began the study of medicine, but soon abandoned it for the law, and was licensed to practice in 1831. The following year he became the editor of the *Western Mercury*, at Columbia. From that time until the war he was too thoroughly engrossed in politics to achieve very great success at the bar, although he combined in a remarkable degree the application and acumen of the jurist and the sagacity of the politician. He was, however, too retiring in his disposition and by nature too prudent and timid to be a great leader; yet he was frequently elected to office, serving three terms in the lower house of the General Assembly and one term in the State Senate. In 1840 he was appointed to fill out the unexpired term of Felix Grundy in the United States Senate, and was elected to represent the State in that body for the term beginning in December, 1859. Upon the secession of the Southern States he resigned his seat, and was not again in office until elected to the bench of the supreme court. Although he was perhaps not the peer of Haywood and some others of the profession in the depth and grasp of his intellect, yet he possessed the power of concentration to a high degree, and had the faculty of elucidating a subject and bringing forth great results from his cool and deliberate judgment. Whether at the bar, on the bench, or in political life, he always gave his views in such plain words that the humblest hearer could understand them.

William Frierson Cooper, at one time a partner of Judge Nicholson, as a chancery lawyer, jurist and thorough literary scholar, has no superior in the State. During his practice of the law he devoted himself al-



most exclusively to the chancery department, which, with his experience of nearly seven years as chancellor, has made him the leading authority in the State in that branch of jurisprudence. His decisions while upon the bench of the chancery court have been published in three volumes, and are exceedingly valuable. His knowledge of law in other departments is also thorough and extensive. With Return J. Meigs he prepared the present "Code of Tennessee," and afterward edited forty volumes of the "Tennessee Reports" upon their republication. He has also re-edited an edition of "Daniels' Chancery Practice," bringing down the references and annotations to the present time. January 1, 1879, he took his seat upon the bench of the supreme court, and has since discharged the duties of the office with that fidelity and ability which has characterized him in all his official and professional relations.

Peter Turney received his knowledge of the law under the direction of his father, the late Hopkins L. Turney, and was admitted to the bar in 1848, at the age of twenty-one years. For the first two or three years he obtained few cases, but after that time he did a good practice until the beginning of the civil war. He then entered the Confederate Army as colonel of the First Confederate Tennessee Regiment, in which position and elsewhere he made a gallant record during four years' service. At the close of hostilities he resumed the practice of his profession, which he continued with success until 1870, when he took his seat upon the supreme bench. He is a man of great native ability and strong individuality, is firm and positive in his opinions, and as a judge is not at all subject to the influence or domination of any other member of the court. He is perhaps not as widely read in his profession, nor in general literature, as some of his colleagues, yet his opinions are as generally accurate as those of any other judge.

James W. Deaderick, the present chief justice of the Supreme Court of Tennessee, was born in Jonesborough, Washington County, in 1812. He received a thorough education, having attended East Tennessee College and Central College at Danville, Ky. He married before completing his course at the latter school, and soon after, in 1833, began merchandising in what is now Hamblen County. Not being very successful in that business, about 1842 he took up the study of law, and in due time was admitted to the bar of his native town. He there opened an office and continued to practice with reasonable success until the close of the civil war. In 1866 he removed to Bristol, and the following year to Knoxville, where he remained until his election to the supreme bench in 1870. Judge Deaderick, while not a learned jurist, is a man of fine practical sense, of sterling probity and of persistent energy. He is mod-

est, even to diffidence, and his unobtrusive, kindly demeanor, united with his uniform fairness, has won for him a host of friends among the members of the bar.

Thomas J. Freeman is a native of West Tennessee, having been born in Gibson County, in 1827. His early education was limited to the country schools and the county academy, yet at the age of seventeen he had completed a course of medical reading. Not finding that profession to his liking, he turned his attention to the law, and at the age of twenty-one was admitted to the bar. He at once opened an office in Trenton, where he practiced until 1861, when he removed to Haywood County. After the close of the war he removed to Brownsville, where he continued to practice his profession until his elevation to the Supreme Bench in 1870. Judge Freeman has always been a close student not only in his profession but of general literature, and is considered one of the most broadly cultured men in the State. He possesses what may be denominated a metaphysical mind—reasons logically and, in general, accurately. His written opinions are usually quite long, but are clearly stated. As a lawyer he was eminently successful in practice. He was critically careful in the preparation of his cases and was a skillful and eloquent advocate and a thorough master of technical pleading.

John B. Cooke, the successor of Judge McFarland upon the supreme bench, was appointed in 1883 to fill out the unexpired term of the latter. He is a resident of Chattanooga, and is a lawyer and jurist of excellent judgment and high ability.

Morgan W. Brown, the successor of John McNairy as judge of the Federal court for the District of Tennessee, was a brother of William L. Brown, one of the judges of the supreme court. He was a man of considerable reading and correct literary taste, a fine miscellaneous writer, and was for some time editor of a Nashville paper. He was appointed to a seat upon the bench of the Federal court in 1834, and continued to hold that position until his death in 1853.

West H. Humphreys, the successor of Judge Brown, was born in Montgomery County, in 1805. Soon after preparing himself for the law, he located in Somerville, Fayette County, where he began his professional career, and in a very short time rose to distinction. So great was his popularity that he was sent as a delegate to the Constitutional Convention of 1834, and the following year was elected to the General Assembly, in which body he occupied a prominent position. In 1839 he was elected attorney-general and reporter of the supreme court, and re-elected in 1844. From the date of his appointment to be judge of the Federal court, he held the position until the opening of the war, when he

received a commission to the same office from the Confederate Government. After the war he returned to his practice and continued until within a few years of his death which occurred in October, 1882. He was a man of large acquirements not only in his profession, but in general knowledge. He was industrious and painstaking in the preparation of his cases, and earnest and vehement in his advocacy. As a judge he was just, and exceedingly courteous to the bar and to all with whom he came in contact.

Connolly F. Trigg was appointed United States District Judge for the District of Tennessee by President Lincoln, in July, 1862. He was a native of Virginia, where he received his education and where he practiced law until near middle life. He then came to Tennessee and here spent several years of useful and successful toil in his profession, before and up to the war. During that trying period, although a Southerner in his sentiments and dearest relations, he clung to the Union with unswerving devotion, and at the close of hostilities he was the sole Federal judge in Tennessee to administer and enforce the penal laws of the United States. It was a time to test the courage and integrity of a judge to the utmost. The excitement and animosities of the war had not yet begun to subside, and the courts were filled with proscription, confiscation and test-oath cases. It now lay in his power to revenge himself upon his former enemies, but "Judge Trigg, with the same undaunted courage that he displayed in turning his back on secession, now calmly and serenely opposed and drove from the temple of justice the spirit of hate and revenge. Indictments for treason, libels for confiscation and test-oaths all disappeared at his rebuke, and the people resumed their wonted callings with a cheerful confidence in the ample protection of the laws of the United States." It has been truly said that the State owes to Judge Trigg a debt of gratitude greater than to any other man who has exercised judicial functions within her boundaries. He was not a great man, nor was he an accomplished jurist, but he had an abiding faith in the rudimental truths of jurisprudence, and his decisions always bear the test of right and justice.

John Baxter, a judge of the Federal Circuit Court, was a native of North Carolina, where he was reared upon the farm, and enjoyed only the educational advantages of the country schools of that sparsely settled State. At the age of twenty he began the study of law, and in due time was admitted to practice. He located in western North Carolina, where he immediately rose to prominence, and was several times elected to the General Assembly. In 1856 he removed to Knoxville, where he ever after made his home. He was appointed judge of the United States Cir-



cuit Court in 1877, and continued upon the bench until his death in 1886. "Gifted by nature with an intellect of extraordinary vigor and comprehension, of untiring energy and diligence, he rose from the humblest and most adverse condition to commanding power and influence as an advocate. When he came upon the Federal bench the massive proportions of his mind, the force and sweep of his faculties developed and strengthened like the trunk of a giant oak, though the struggle of many years and the buffeting of many a storm enabled him to grapple with just confidence with the many new and difficult questions which confronted him. Lawyers soon found throughout the circuit that they had before them one who was the equal, if not the superior in many respects, of the greatest of them, and one who was determined to dispose of the cases in court with as much dispatch as possible. He elevated the tone of the bar; he put new life and energy in those who practiced before him; he infused into them something of his own spirit, and the courts in his circuit became moving and active in the performance of the functions belonging to them as organs of the Government. Business was disposed of, the rights of litigants settled promptly and with able discrimination."\*

Howell E. Jackson, the successor of Judge Baxter, is a native of Paris, Tenn., born in 1832. He received his early education in the country, after which he attended the West Tennessee College and the University of Virginia. He then read law for two years with Judges Totten and Brown, of Jackson, and finally graduated from the Lebanon Law School in 1855. From that time until 1859 he practiced the profession at Jackson, after which removed to Memphis, where he remained until 1876. He then returned to Jackson. He took his seat in the United States Senate in 1881, where he remained until receiving his present appointment. He is a man of unquestioned character and ability as a lawyer, ranking with the best in the State. He has a thoroughly judicial mind, and although he has been upon the Federal bench but a short time, he has heard two or three important cases, in all of which he has displayed conspicuous ability.

David McKendree Key, judge of the Federal Court for the Districts of East and Middle Tennessee, was born in Greene County in 1824. He obtained his early education while laboring upon the farm, and afterward made his way through college. He came to the bar in 1853 at Chattanooga, where he has since resided. In 1870 he was elected chancellor of his district, which position he continued to hold until appointed to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Andrew Johnson. Upon the formation of a cabinet by President Hayes, in 1876, he was made Postmaster-General,

---

\*Memorial resolution adopted by the Nashville bar.

which position he resigned in 1880, and succeeded Connolly F. Trigg as judge of the Federal District Court. As a lawyer he was distinguished for clear insight and remarkable comprehension of the facts of the case. Upon the bench he is characterized by an unerring instinct in grasping the equities of the cause before him, and in presenting a sound decision. Although not especially active and energetic, he disposes of cases rapidly, and the docket is never allowed to become crowded.

## CHAPTER XIII.

EDUCATIONAL HISTORY—THE UNIVERSITY OF NORTH CAROLINA—THE ESTABLISHMENT OF ACADEMIES—PIONEER TEACHERS—EARLY COLLEGES AND UNIVERSITIES—EDUCATIONAL ENDOWMENTS—THE FOUNDATION OF THE COUNTY SYSTEM OF ACADEMIES—PRIVATE OR TUITION SCHOOLS—COMPARISON OF INSTRUCTIVE SYSTEMS—CONGRESSIONAL SCHOOL LANDS—THE PAUPER SCHOOLS—RENAISSANCE OF LEARNING—THE FOUNDING OF THE COMMON SCHOOLS—CREATION OF THE PUBLIC EDUCATIONAL FUNDS—THEIR PERMANENT INVESTMENT—DEFALCATION—THE INFANCY OF THE COMMON SCHOOLS—THEIR IMPROVEMENT—SPECIFIC TAXATION FOR EDUCATIONAL SUPPORT—THE PUBLIC GRADED SCHOOLS—THE CONFLICT OF THE PUBLIC AND THE PRIVATE SYSTEMS—THE LAW OF 1867 AND ITS PRACTICAL WORKING—THE PEABODY DONATION—EDUCATION OF THE COLORED RACE—THE LAW OF 1870—THE STATE TEACHERS' ASSOCIATION—THE PRESENT COMMON SCHOOL SYSTEM AND FUNDS—SCHOLASTIC TAXATION—THE SUPERINTENDENTS OF PUBLIC INSTRUCTION—STATE ACADEMIES, COLLEGES, UNIVERSITIES AND NORMAL SCHOOLS—STATISTICS, ETC.

TENNESSEE was the pioneer in the dissemination and promotion of learning in the Southwest. Considering that up to 1790 she formed a part of North Carolina, in educational matters the most backward of the States, this is a remarkable fact. From the earliest settlement of that colony down to the Revolutionary war we find many acts for the establishment of an orthodox ministry and vestries; provisions for court houses, jails, stocks, prisons and pillories, and very few for the encouragement of institutions of learning, not above ten in all. About the beginning of the eighteenth century when there was not a church nor more than one, if there was one, schoolhouse in the province, the efforts of Blair, aided by Bishop Compton, of London, with an offer of £20 to teachers and preachers of the province induced a few to enter the field where the harvest was ripe and the laborers few.\* But at the end of the colonial government literature was hardly known. There were within the whole province but two schools—those of Newbern and Edenton.†

\*Address of H. M. Doak. †Martin.

Outside of the Scotch Presbyterian the great mass of the community did not possess even the rudiments of an education. The wealthier members of society, however, especially among the Scotch, must have made considerable advances, since even before the Revolution they were sending their sons to complete their education at Princeton.

The constitution adopted at Halifax December 18, 1776, declared that a school or schools should be established, and "all useful learning shall be duly encouraged and promoted in one or more universities." The unsettled condition of the country, however, during the Revolutionary war, and for several years subsequent, prevented compliance, and it was not until 1789 that the act establishing the University of North Carolina was passed. It was still six years later before the university was opened to receive pupils. This college, with the possible exception of Princeton, has exerted a greater influence upon the culture and education of Tennessee than any other foreign institution of learning. It has educated many of her most illustrious sons, among whom were James K. Polk, Aaron V. Brown, A. O. P. Nicholson and many others of scarcely less distinction.

That the ignorance and lack of educational facilities which existed during the colonial days was not in accord with the wish of the people is manifest in the vigorous interest in educational matters which immediately sprang up after the overthrow of those proprietary and royal governments which for more than a century had rested like an incubus upon all the colonies. From the formation of the Federal Union to the close of the century numerous acts establishing academies and other schools were passed by the Legislature of North Carolina, and more was done for the encouragement of learning than had been accomplished in the last hundred years.

In the matter of colleges and academies Virginia was somewhat more fortunate, but with her the popular diffusion of knowledge by schools previous to the Revolution was almost unknown, although domestic instruction among those capable of affording it was almost universal. "Every man," said Sir William Berkely, in 1671, "instructs his children according to his ability," a method which left the children of the ignorant in helpless ignorance.\* The only Virginian school which seems to have exerted much influence upon Tennessee was Augusta Academy, which after undergoing many changes in organization and name is now known as the Washington and Lee College. At that school two of the educational pioneers, Carrick and Doak, laid the foundation of their careers. The most potent of all the influences on the early education in both

---

\* Bancroft.



North Carolina and Tennessee was the college of New Jersey at Princeton, from which graduated Doak, Balch, Craighead and many other eminent educators and divines.

The first school established in Tennessee, and, it is believed, the first west of the Alleghany Mountains, was Martin Academy, founded under an act "for the promotion of learning in the county of Washington," passed by the General Assembly of North Carolina in 1785. Rev. Samuel Doak, mentioned above as the graduate of Princeton College, or as it was then known Nassau Hall, was the founder and first president. He was a member of the Franklin Assembly, and, it is said, was the author of the clause concerning education in the rejected constitution.\* He was a man of great ability and force of character and of great learning, especially in the classics. His schoolhouse, a plain log building erected on his farm, stood a little west of the site afterward selected for Washington Academy. For many years it was the only, and for still more the principal, seat of classical education for the western country.†

During the same year but at the next session of the General Assembly, through the influence of Gen. Robertson, "an act for the promotion of learning in Davidson County" was passed. Rev. Thomas Craighead, Hugh Williamson, Daniel Smith, William Polk, Anthony Bledsoe, Lardner Clarke, Ephraim McLean, Robert Hays and James Robertson were appointed trustees and constituted a body politic under the name of the "President and Trustees of Davidson Academy." Two hundred and forty acres of land adjoining the town of Nashville, on the Cumberland River, were granted by this act, which also encouraged private "bequests, gifts and purchases." It was further provided that all the "lands, tenements or hereditaments" vested in the trustees of the academy should be exempt from taxation for a period of ninety-nine years.

At the first meeting of the trustees, which was held in August, 1786, Rev. Thomas Craighead was elected president, and at the next meeting it was decided that the school should be taught at "Spring Hill Meeting House," in the town of Haysborough, six miles east of Nashville. It was also ordered "that five pounds hard money, or the value thereof in other money, be paid for each scholar per annum." The lands belonging to the institution for a number of years were rented out, and the proceeds

\*The clause referred to is as follows:

SEC. 32. All kinds of useful learning shall be encouraged by the commonwealth, *that is to say*, the future Legislature shall erect before the year seventeen hundred and eighty-seven, one university, which shall be near the center of the State, and not in any city or town. And for endowing the same, there shall be appropriated such lands as may be judged necessary, one-fourth of all the moneys arising from the surveys of land hereafter to be made, one half-penny upon every pound of inspected tobacco, forever; and if the fund thence arising shall be found insufficient, the Legislature shall provide for such additions as may be necessary. And if experience shall make it appear to be useful to the interest of learning in this State, a grammar school shall be erected in each county, and such sums paid by the public as shall enable the trustees to employ a

†Ramsey.

used in their improvement and in support of the academy. A ferry was established, which in time yielded an income of from \$100 to \$650 per annum.

One of the acts passed by the Legislature of the new State in April, 1796, added ten new trustees to the old board, and also appointed three persons to audit the accounts of the old trustees, with directions to institute suit against the latter if they failed to comply with the law. The act provided further that the buildings of the academy should be erected "on the most convenient situation on the hill immediately above Nashville, and near the road leading to Buchanan's Mill." This act was not altogether satisfactory to the old board, and they refused to receive the new trustees and auditors; but the difficulty was settled after some delay, and they were finally admitted. Although some steps were taken toward the erection of a building as provided in the act, it was nearly ten years before it was completed. On October 25, 1803, an act was passed reorganizing the institution, and constituting it a college. Eighteen trustees, of whom Thomas Craighead was the first mentioned, were constituted "a body politic and corporate by the name of the Trustees of Davidson College." This act was repealed, however, on the 4th of the following March, and thus ended the existence of Davidson College.

At the session of the Territorial Assembly of 1794 two new colleges, Blount and Greeneville, were chartered. The bill incorporating the former institution was introduced on the 4th of September, by William Cocke, of Hawkins County, and on the 10th of the same month it became a law. The act begins as follows:

WHEREAS, The Legislature of this Territory are disposed to promote the happiness of the people at large, and especially of the rising generation, by instituting seminaries of education, where youth may be habituated to an amiable, moral and virtuous conduct, and accurately instructed in the various branches of useful science, and in the principles of ancient and modern languages; therefore

SECTION 1. *Be it enacted by the Governor, Legislative Council and House of Representatives of the Territory of the United States of America, south of the River Ohio,* That the Rev. Samuel Carrick, president, and his Excellency, William Blount, the Hon. Daniel Smith, secretary of the Territory, the Hon. David Campbell, the Hon. Joseph Anderson, Gen. John Sevier, Col. James White, Col. Alexander Kelley, Col. William Cocke, Willie Blount, Joseph Hamilton, Archibald Roane, Francis A. Ramsey, Charles McClung, George Roulstone, George McNutt, John Adair and Robert Houston, Esquires, shall be, and they are hereby declared to be a body politic and corporate by the name of the president and trustees of Blount College, in the vicinity of Knoxville.

The college was declared opened to all denominations in the following words:

And the trustees shall take effectual care that students of all denominations may and shall be admitted to the equal advantages of a liberal education, and to the emoluments and honors of the college, and that they shall receive a like fair, generous and equal treatment during their residence.

1897-98

This was the first non-sectarian college chartered in the United States. Col. James White donated the town square to the trustees for the use of the college, and a two-story frame building was erected by subscription near the northwest corner of the square.\*

Rev. Samuel Carrick, the president, was a native of Pennsylvania. He removed in early life to Virginia, where he received his education and labored for many years. In 1787 he came to Tennessee and preached from the artificial mound, near the confluence of the Holston and French Broad Rivers. The next year he returned, and henceforth encountered all the hardships and dangers of pioneer life.

No authentic records of the first five years of the college exercises are in existence, but, according to tradition, great and general interest was taken in the institution, especially on examination occasions. The written records of the college begin with the year 1804. Among the students at that time were C. C. Clay, William Carter, Thomas Cocke, Lemuel P. Montgomery and William E. Parker. The last named graduated on the 18th of October, 1806, the first student to graduate from the college. Females were admitted to the college at this time. The first named are those of Polly McClung, Barbara Blount, Jenny Armstrong, Matty and Kitty Kain. As originally organized the college was dependent for its support solely upon the patronage of the public.

Greeneville College was founded by Hezekiah Balch, a native of Maryland, but reared from early childhood in Mecklenburg County, N. C. He graduated at Princeton College and soon after located in Greene County, where he served as a co-laborer in the church with Dr. Doak, of the adjoining county of Washington. But during nearly his entire life in the State he was harrassed by trials before presbyteries, synods and the general conference for some alleged heresies in the doctrines which he preached. So much of his time and money were spent in attendance upon these trials that his school was seriously injured, yet he patiently labored on until his death.

The first female academy in the State was founded by Moses Fisk, at Hilham, in Overton County, and was known as Fisk's Female Academy. It was chartered in 1806, and, according to the terms of the charter, Moses Fisk and Sampson Williams were to contribute 1,000 acres of land each toward the endowment of the institution. Fisk was a native of Massachusetts, a graduate of Harvard College and a man of great learning and of singular genius.

In 1806 Congress passed an act of great importance to the educational interests of Tennessee. It was entitled "an act to authorize the

\*For the sketch of Blount College and the University of Tennessee this chapter is indebted to the address of Col. Mose White, delivered in 1879.



State of Tennessee to issue grants and perfect titles to certain lands therein described; and to settle the claims to the vacant and unappropriated lands within the same." This act provided "that the State of Tennessee shall appropriate one hundred thousand acres, which shall be located in one entire tract, within the limits of the lands reserved to the Cherokee Indians by an act of the State of North Carolina entitled 'An act for opening the land office for the redemption of specie and other certificates, and discharging the arrears due to the army,' passed in the year one thousand, seven hundred and eighty-three, and shall be for the use of two colleges, one in East and one in West Tennessee, to be established by the Legislature thereof. And one hundred thousand acres in one tract within the limits last aforesaid for the use of academies, one in each county in said State to be established by the Legislature thereof; which said several tracts shall be located on lands to which the Indian title has been extinguished, and subject to the disposition of the Legislature of the State; but shall not be granted nor sold for less than two dollars per acre, and the proceeds of the sales of the lands aforesaid shall be vested in funds for the respective uses aforesaid forever, and the State of Tennessee shall, moreover, in issuing grants and perfecting titles, locate six hundred and forty acres to every six miles square in the territory hereby ceded, where existing claims will allow the same, which shall be appropriated for the use of schools for the instruction of children forever."

The General Assembly, at the next session after the passage of this act, was flooded with memorials and petitions from the people of several counties, and from the president and trustees of each of the colleges in East Tennessee, praying for the grant and setting forth the advantages of their particular localities for the establishment of the college. Greenville College urged the numerous advantages peculiar to that institution, "its local situation, extensive library, philosophical apparatus, ample funds and other circumstances." A resolution was received from the trustees of Blount College, expressing a willingness to unite their funds with those of the college to be established, provided it should be situated within two miles of Knoxville. The people of Blount County wished the college located at Marysville, while Hawkins County recommended Rogersville. The question of locating the college, however, was not settled until the next session of the Legislature, when thirty persons were appointed trustees of East Tennessee College, "to be located on ten acres of land within two miles of Knoxville, conveyed in trust for the use of said college by Moses White at a place called the Rocky or Poplar Spring." The trustees, with the exception of seven, were apportioned

among the several counties of East Tennessee according to their population. The seven trustees were selected from among men living in the vicinity of the college that they might have a more direct oversight of the institution. The following were the trustees appointed: For Hawkins County, Richard Mitchell and Andrew Galbreathy; Sullivan, John Rhea and James King; Greene, Augustus P. Fore and John Gass; Washington, Mathew Stephenson and John Kennedy; Carter, George Duffield; Jefferson, James Rice and Joseph Hamilton; Grainger, John Cocke and Maj. Lea; Cocke, Alexander Smith; Sevier, Hopkins Lacy; Blount, Joseph B. Lapsly and Dr. Robert Gant; Claiborne, William Graham; Anderson, Arthur Crozier; Roane, Thomas I. Vandyke; Knox, George W. Campbell, John Sevier and Thomas Emmerson. John Crozier, John Williams, Archibald Roane, Francis A. Ramsey, David Deaderick, George Doherty and John Lowry were appointed as the special trustees. Until buildings could be erected the trustees were authorized to use the buildings of Blount College, and the funds of that institution were declared incorporated with those of East Tennessee College.

In 1806, after the passage by Congress of the act already referred to, the trustees of Davidson Academy petitioned the General Assembly for the endowment provided for in that act, and the academy being the only institution of the kind in West Tennessee\* the petition was granted, and a body of nineteen trustees was incorporated under the name of the "Trustees of Cumberland College." All the property, both personal and real, belonging to Davidson Academy was transferred to the college. At a meeting of the board of trustees held in July, 1807, it was decided to open the college for the reception of students on the 1st of the next September, and books and apparatus to the amount of \$1,000 were purchased. Rev. Thomas Craighead was continued as president of the institution until October 24, 1809, when Dr. James Priestly was elected. The former continued one of the trustees till the autumn of 1813, when his connection with the college finally ceased.

The management of the endowment fund proved to be a source of considerable difficulty. Various acts were passed providing for its investment, none of which proved satisfactory in its results. In 1807 John Russell, James Park, Josiah Nichol, Edward Douglass, John Overton and William Tate were appointed commissioners to manage the fund, and were authorized "to purchase stock in some reputable bank in the United States, and to pay over the dividends arising from the same to the colleges." Two years later Thomas McCorry, John Crozier and Thomas Emmerson were appointed to loan out the money in the treasury belong-

---

\*What is now Middle Tennessee was then called West Tennessee.

ing to the college. In 1813 an act was passed requiring all moneys collected for the use of Cumberland College to be turned over to the trustees of that institution, and by them to be invested either in Nashville bank stock or stock of the Bank of the State of Tennessee. The treasurer of East Tennessee was required to invest the money belonging to East Tennessee College in the same way. All the moneys loaned out to individuals were called in.

In 1806 the General Assembly, in compliance with the act of Congress, made provisions for county academies, and appointed five trustees for each county. These trustees were empowered "to fix upon and purchase a site, and to take and receive subscriptions for the same." As the amount of funds available for each county was quite small, it was necessary that the people provide the buildings, and, also, in a great measure support the schools by subscriptions and donations. It was, consequently, several years before academies were established in all of the counties.

Thus it is seen that after more than thirty years of dependent, and twenty years of independent, State government, no legislative action had been taken for the support and encouragement of common schools in Tennessee. Acts and grants for the benefit of academies and higher institutions of learning are numerous, but the idea of a system of popular education maintained at public expense does not seem to have entered the minds of legislators. In this may be found one of the most striking contrasts between Virginia, North Carolina and other Southern colonies and those of New England—a contrast which is yet apparent. So early as 1637, in all of the Puritan colonies it was ordered: "To the end that learning may not be buried in the graves of our forefathers, that every township after the Lord hath increased them to the number of fifty householders, shall appoint one to teach all children to write and read, and when any town shall be increased to the number of one hundred families, they shall set up a grammar school, the master thereof being able to instruct youth so far as they may be fitted for the university." The establishment of Harvard College followed soon after.

In these colonies the fundamental idea was universal education, beginning with the common school and ending with the university. In North Carolina, Tennessee and the other Southern States, the system was reversed. The college was first provided for, leaving the individual to prepare himself for receiving its benefits. The idea is expressed in the preamble to the act establishing the University of North Carolina: "WHEREAS in all regulated governments it is the duty of every legislature to consult the happiness of the rising generation, and endeavor to



fit them for an honorable discharge of the social duties of life by paying strict attention to their education, and, whereas, an university supported by permanent funds and well endowed would have the most direct tendency to arrive at the above purpose; *Be it enacted, etc.*" The cause for this difference in the educational systems was due partly to the dissimilar character of the people of the two sections, but more to the peculiar condition of society in each. In New England even in the earlier days there were but comparatively few slaves, and it was found that the laborer is valuable just in proportion to his knowledge and skill, and therefore that it is economy to educate him. This, with the democratic spirit inherent in the colonists, produced the common school, the great preserver of democracy. In the Southern colonies the educational system was based upon "the theory that labor should be absolutely under control, and needed no intelligence; that culture, that knowledge of letters on the part of the slaves was especially dangerous to the system, that the only need of culture was on the part of the master, and this he was amply able to secure for himself. The intermediate class of persons—those who did not own slaves and who were not owned as slaves—occupied a most unfortunate position. The richer class had not the property interest in them, and did not consider them part of the same classification, because they were not slave owners."\* These general ideas, modified by local influences, shaped education for more than two centuries. It is true that systems of common schools were established in nearly every State, but in no instance did such a system flourish in company with the institution of slavery. The wealthy expected no advantage to their children from it, for they sent them to pay-schools or provided private tutors. This gave the public schools the name of pauper schools, and they were looked upon in that light alone. The public sentiment in Virginia with regard to a State school system supported by taxation—and this sentiment was common to the other Southern States—is clearly stated in the following extract from the autobiography of Thomas Jefferson. He was called upon to formulate a plan of general education for that State. He says: "I accordingly prepared three bills, proposing three distinct grades of education, reaching all classes: First, elementary schools for all children generally, rich and poor; Second, colleges for a middle degree of instruction, calculated for the common purposes of life, and such as would be desirable for all who were in easy circumstances; and third, an ultimate grade for teaching sciences generally, and in their highest degree. The first bill proposed to lay off every county in hundreds, or wards of a proper size and population for a school, in which reading,

---

\* Gen. John Eaton.

writing and common arithmetic should be taught: and that the whole State should be divided into twenty-four districts, in each of which should be a school for classical learning, grammar, geography and the higher branches of numerical arithmetic. The second bill proposed to amend the constitution of William and Mary College, to enlarge its sphere of science, and to make it in fact a university. The third was for the establishment of a library. Into the elementary bill they inserted a provision which completely defeated it, for they left it to the court of each county to determine for itself when this act should be carried into execution within their county. One provision of the bill was, that the expense of these schools was to be borne by the inhabitants of the county, every one in proportion to his general tax rate. This would throw on wealth the education of the poor, and the justices, being generally of the more wealthy class, were unwilling to incur the burden, and I believe it was not suffered to commence in a single county."

From this treatment of Mr. Jefferson's wise plan it is seen that although the popularity of a common school system demanded its enactment, it was, so far as possible, rendered inoperative. This may be said to have been the attitude of Tennessee on this subject, from the organization of the State to the civil war. But while the common schools were thus neglected and ignored, these other great agencies in the dissemination of knowledge and the formation of character, the private school seminary and university in a great measure supplied their place, and in many respects were superior to the best public schools. In fact, among the educated class of the South there was, perhaps, a larger percentage who were thoroughly well educated, than in the North. The church and the hustings also were potent factors in education. Through their influence intelligent citizens were made though they did not, and many of them could not, read the newspapers.

The first tax for educational purposes was levied under an act passed in 1816 "to provide for the education of orphans of those persons who have died in the service of their country." The act provided "that it shall be the duty of each county court in the State at each and every court after the first day of January, 1816, to lay such a tax upon all taxable property as shall be sufficient to educate the poor orphans who have no property to support and educate them and whose fathers were killed or have died in the service of their country in the late war." The county court was also empowered "to make such contract with any person or persons as they may think best calculated for that purpose, to board and educate such children as far as to attain the art of reading, writing and arithmetic so far as the rule of three."

In 1817 an act was passed to provide for the leasing of the school lands, laid off under the act of Congress in 1806. It was made the duty of each county court of the State to appoint as many commissioners as they might think necessary whose duty it was to lease out the school lands and receive and pay over the proceeds to the county trustee for the use of the schools in the respective counties. It was also made the duty of the commissioners, when sufficient funds had been received, "to build a comfortable house for a common English school to be taught in, and to employ and pay a good teacher of English to instruct all children that may be sent thereto." It was further provided that when \$100 or more, for which there was no immediate use, had accumulated in the hands of the county trustee, that officer should loan the money out upon good security. Some interest in popular education was aroused by the passage of this act, but it was of short duration, and only a few schools were established. Various acts, some of them local in their application, were passed during the next ten years, but no changes of great importance were made.

By provision of an act passed in 1823, five commissioners for each county were appointed, whose duty it was to appropriate "all the moneys received by them to the education of the poor, either by establishing poor schools, or by paying the tuition of poor children in schools which are, or may be established in their respective counties." From this act, establishing pauper schools, it is evident that no material advance toward a system of popular education had been made. The common school fund, collected from the lands set apart by the act of 1806, amounted to little better than nothing. In fact, from the report of a committee of which James K. Polk was chairman, it is stated that only 22,705 acres of school land had been laid off, while according to the provision of the act, granting 640 acres for each thirty-six square miles, the number of acres located should have been nearly 450,000. In 1823 Congress repealed that portion of the act of 1806, fixing the price at which the land could be sold, and the General Assembly at its next session made provision to dispose of it at  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents per acre. The title to the Indian lands embracing what is now West Tennessee, was extinguished in 1818, but no provision was made for the support of schools.

About 1830 there began what has been termed a revival in education which in spirit, if not in practice, extended throughout the United States. It was found that the schools were too dependent upon the teachers, or the presence or absence of a school man in the neighborhood; that the system lacked uniformity and effectiveness; that even in the most advanced States, it was insufficient to meet the demands of the rapidly increasing population and to resist the influx of ignorance from the Old



World. Eminent educators, Horace Mann, Dr. C. E. Stowe, and others, gave the subject a thorough study, published books, and delivered addresses until a conviction resulted that not only public welfare demanded a better educational machinery, but that it was the duty of the State to provide it. It resulted in establishing State supervision, graded schools, city and county supervision, normal schools and teacher's institutes, educational journals and literature, and perhaps the most important of all, the abolition of all rate bills, and the entire support of the schools by tax.\* Many States adopted the new system, the efficiency of which soon became apparent.

The spirit of this revival extended to Tennessee, and the popularity of some system of State education rendered legislation upon it imperative. But although many of the best men in the State labored earnestly to secure an efficient system, the idea that free schools were established only for the benefit of the indigent portion of the community could not be eradicated, and failure was the result. As has been stated, the idea of a system of schools, as a measure of economy, for the benefit of the rich as well as the poor, could not under the then existing state of society become general.

In 1827 the General Assembly passed an act creating a school fund, to be composed of all the capital and interest of the State bank, except one-half of the principal sum already received; the proceeds of the sales of the Hiwassee lands; all lands in the State which had been appropriated to the use of schools; all the vacant and unappropriated lands to which the State had, or might thereafter obtain title; all the rents and mesne profits of all the school lands which had accrued and had not already been appropriated; all the funds denominated school or common school funds which had accrued from the sale of lands; the donations made by various parties to the State; all the stock owned by the State in the old bank of the State at Knoxville, amounting to 400 shares, and the property of all persons dying intestate and without legal heirs. No provision was then made for applying this fund to its intended use. Two years later an act was passed establishing a system of public schools. Under this system the counties were divided into school districts of convenient size, in each of which five trustees were elected, whose duty it was to meet at the court house on the first Saturday of June in each year, for the purpose of electing not less than five, nor more than seven "discreet and intelligent citizens" for common school commissioners. The trustees were also given full power to employ and dismiss teachers, and to judge of their qualifications, capacity and character. The com-

---

\*John Eaton.—Report of 1869.

missioners were given control of all moneys for the use of schools. They were to divide the county into five districts, over each of which one commissioner was to exercise general supervision. The interest arising from the school fund was to be distributed among the school districts in proportion to the number of children in each, between the years of five and fifteen, but before any district should be entitled to its share it was compelled to provide a comfortable schoolhouse. It was made the duty of the president and directors of the State bank to equalize and distribute the fund. The commissioners were authorized to expend a sum not exceeding \$20 annually in the purchase of books, to be distributed to children whose parents were not able to provide them. The act also provided that "it shall be the duty of the trustees to induce all children under the age of fifteen years to be sent to school, and no distinction shall be made between the rich and poor, but said school shall be open and free to all."

Although the system as presented in this act embraced many excellent features, it lacked several essentials. The funds were not sufficient to support the schools without resort to rate bills, and the houses were to be provided by private subscription. There were also too many executive officers and no controlling and supervising head, either for the counties or for the State. The system was established in several of the counties, and in a few it met with some success. The commissioners for Maury County, in 1832, reported twenty-two teachers employed for terms ranging from one and one-half to eleven months with an average of four months. The wages ranged from \$8 to \$49 dollars per month, averaging \$17. The total number of pupils enrolled during the year was 904. As the scholastic population of Maury County at that time exceeded 4,000, less than 25 per cent were enrolled in the public schools. The report from this county was one of the most satisfactory.

The total funds which had been received for the support of academies up to this date amounted to \$70,665.12. Thus the apparently munificent grant of 100,000 acres of land had yielded an aggregate of \$1,139.76 to each county during a period of twenty-five years. While some of the counties had received the full amount, others had established no academy, and their portion of the fund remained in the State bank.

In 1831 the profits arising from the State's stock in the Union Bank was set apart for the use of common schools; and upon the chartering of the Planters Bank of Tennessee and the Farmers & Merchants Bank of Memphis in 1833, the bonus of one-half of 1 per cent on the capital stock, payable annually to the State, was appropriated for the same purpose. A similar disposition was made of a bonus of 5 per cent of the net

profits of the Tennessee Fire & Marine Insurance Company. This was the condition of the public schools and the school fund at the adoption of the constitution of 1834. That instrument contains the following section concerning education:

#### ARTICLE XI.

SEC. 10. Knowledge, learning and virtue being essential to the preservation of republican institutions, and the diffusion of the opportunities and advantages of education throughout the different portions of the State being highly conducive to the promotion of this end, it shall be the duty of the General Assembly in all future periods of this government to cherish literature and science. And the fund called the "Common School Fund" and all the lands and proceeds thereof, dividends, stocks, and all other property of every description whatever heretofore by law appropriated by the General Assembly of this State for the use of common schools, and all such as shall hereafter be appropriated, shall remain a perpetual fund, the principal of which shall never be diminished by legislative appropriation, and the interest thereof shall be inviolably appropriated to the support and encouragement of common schools throughout the State, and for the equal benefit of the people thereof; and no law shall be made authorizing said fund, or any part thereof, to be diverted to any other use than the support and encouragement of common schools; and it shall be the duty of the General Assembly to appoint a board of commissioners, for such term of time as they may think proper, who shall have the general superintendence of said fund, and who shall make a report of the condition of the same from time to time under such rules, regulations and restrictions as may be required by law; *Provided*, that if at any time hereafter a division of the public lands of the United States, or of the money arising from the sale of such lands, shall be made among the individual States, the part of such land or money coming to this State shall be devoted to the purpose of education and internal improvements, and shall never be applied to any other purpose.

The following section affirms "that the above provisions shall not be construed to prevent the Legislature from carrying into effect any laws that have been passed in favor of the colleges, universities or academies."

At the following session of the Legislature an act in accordance with the provisions of the constitution was passed, appointing a board of common school commissioners consisting of the treasurer, comptroller and a superintendent of public instruction. The last named officer was to be elected by a joint ballot of both houses of the General Assembly for a term of two years, and was to receive a salary of \$1,500 per year. He was to collect the moneys, notes and other securities belonging to the common school fund, and in conjunction with the other members of the board he was to appoint an agent in each county. These agents were to perform the duties of the former bank agents and county school commissioners. They were to renew the securities for the debts due to the school fund every six months, calling in a certain per cent of the debt each time until the whole should be collected. It was then to be invested in bank stock by the superintendent.

During the session of 1839-40 the General Assembly passed an act to establish a system of public schools. The report of a committee appointed to inquire into the condition of the common schools, and to re-



port a plan for the reorganization of the system, contains the following: "The subject of education has never yet received in Tennessee that attention which it so richly merits. Appropriation after appropriation, it is true, has been made to the support of common schools, but the system adopted under that name has heretofore proved inefficient and by no means equal to the expectation of those who first established it. While this has been the case with the common school system, a prejudice has prevailed against the higher institutions of learning, academies and colleges, neither of which consequently has received much from the munificence of the State."

The committee proposed to add to the existing school fund, amounting to a little more than \$1,500,000, about \$500,000 of the surplus revenue, the interest on the whole of which it was thought would amount to \$100,000 per annum. To the academy fund amounting to \$50,000 it was proposed to add \$600,000 of the surplus revenue, and to divide \$300,000 of the same fund among three universities, one for each division of the State. The system as adopted did not differ materially from that of 1829, except that the county trustee performed the duties which had previously devolved upon the county commissioners, and the superintendent of public instruction had control of the distribution of the annual fund. The apportionment was fixed upon a ratio of white children between the ages of six and sixteen years, instead of five and fifteen as before. The duties of the district trustees remained the same as under the old system.

The school fund had already been constituted a portion of the capital of the newly chartered State Bank, and of its dividends the faith of the State was pledged to the annual appropriation of \$100,000 to school purposes. This annual revenue was increased by bonuses, taxes, fines and penalties. On the same conditions \$18,000 was appropriated annually for a period of thirty years for the use of county academies, provided the trustees would relinquish all claims against the State for debts due from citizens south of the French Broad and Holston Rivers. For the benefit of East Tennessee College and Nashville University, two half townships of land in the Ocoee District were granted on condition that they relinquish their claims, as had been provided in the case of academies.

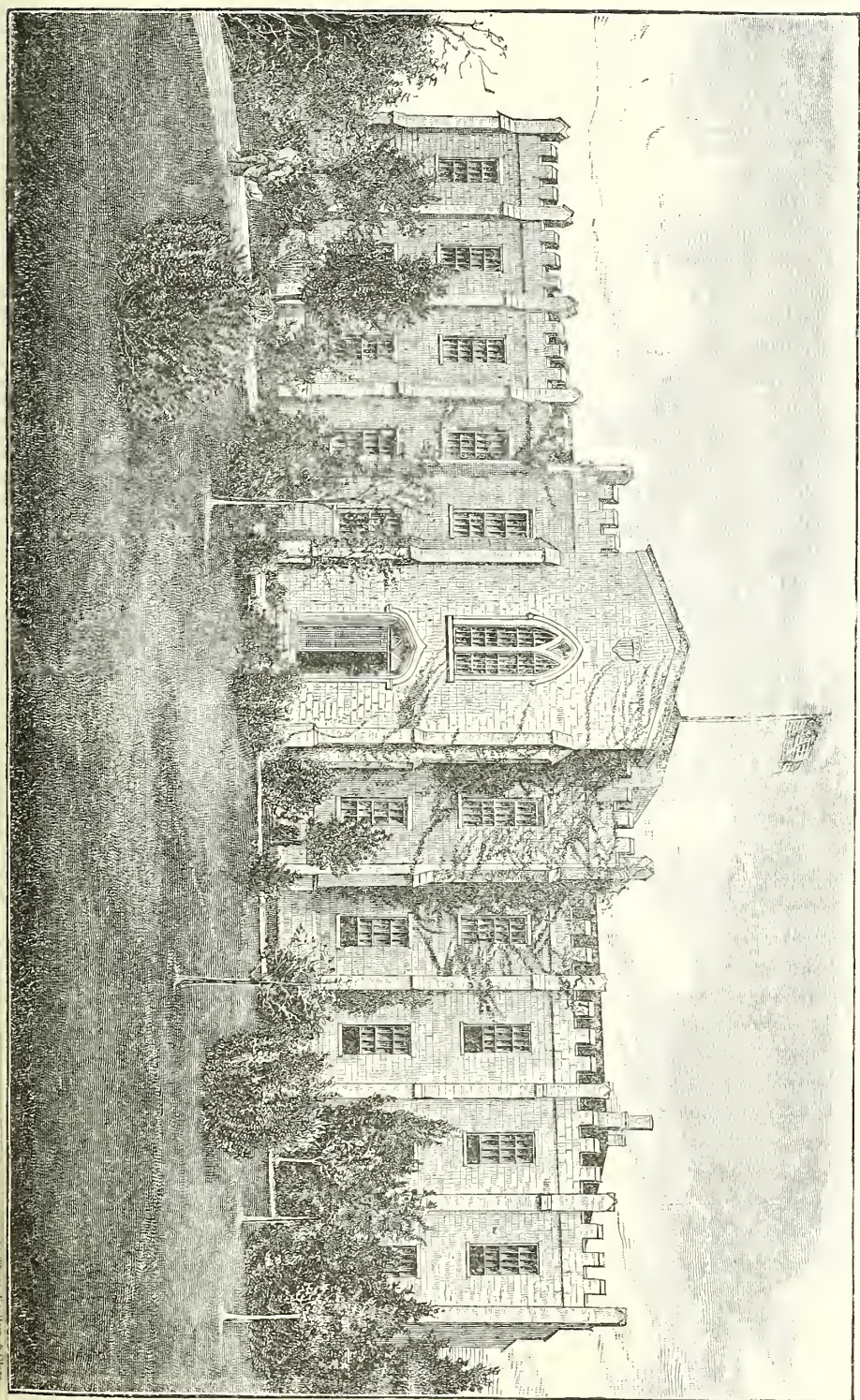
The new system of common schools went into effect in 1838, and by the close of the following year 911 of the 987 districts in the State had chosen trustees and the majority of them had opened schools. The first apportionment of school funds was made in 1839, at a rate of  $62\frac{1}{2}$  cents for each child of school age, the scholastic population being 185,432.

Upon the passage of the act creating the office of superintendent of public instruction, Col. Robert H. McEwen was elected thereto, and continued to hold the office until 1840. He was extensively engaged in business, being the principal member in two or three different firms. At the session of the Legislature of 1839-40, a joint committee of both houses was appointed to investigate the affairs of his office. After a careful examination they reported that he had speculated with the funds and mismanaged them, and that he was a defaulter to the amount of \$121,169.05. His term of office expired soon after, and R. P. Currin was elected to succeed him. At the following April term of the Chancery Court of Franklin, a suit was instituted against McEwen and his securities to recover the amount of the defalcation. A decree having been obtained against the defendants, the case was appealed to the supreme court where the decree was affirmed. Upon a petition from the securities for relief, January 19, 1844, the General Assembly adopted a resolution appointing William Carroll, Nicholas Hobson, Willoughby Williams and John Marshall, commissioners, to compromise and settle the suit, declaring that their decision should be final. The last two declined to serve and John Waters and M. W. Brown were appointed in their place. The commissioners decided that the securities should pay the sum of \$10,797.86 as a settlement in full of the claims against them. The attorneys for the State objected to this settlement on the grounds that the resolution of the General Assembly making it final was unconstitutional. The objection was overruled by the supreme court, Judge Turley delivering the opinion.

In 1844 the office of superintendent of public instruction was abolished, and the duties of the superintendent transferred to the state treasurer. In 1848 the president and directors of the State Bank were constituted the board of common school commissioners.

On April 19, 1847, a common school convention was held at Knoxville at which were present representatives from Greene, Cocke, Hawkins, Claiborne, Jefferson, Blount, Knox, Roane, Marion and Anderson Counties. A memorial to the Legislature was adopted, recommending the appointment of a board of education for each county, whose duty it should be to examine applicants and to grant licenses to teachers; the publication of a monthly state journal devoted exclusively to the cause of education throughout the State; the appointment of a superintendent of public instruction, and the taxation of property for the support of schools. The memorial closed with a reference to the illiteracy in the State as shown by the census of 1840. The following is an extract: "At no period perhaps in the existence of our State, and by no means was the pride of our









people of all parties, denominations and classes more deeply wounded than when the returns of the census of 1840 were promulgated. \* \* The humiliating fact that there were in the State 58,531 white persons over twenty years of age who could neither read nor write, was heralded over this broad Union, and made the subject of sneering remark in almost every newspaper in the country. Our State stood within one of the bottom of the list in point of universal intelligence; the number of ignorant in North Carolina being a fraction greater." The number of white persons over twenty years of age in the State at that time was 249,008. Consequently the proportion of illiterates was a little more than  $23\frac{1}{2}$  per cent. The census of 1850 shows no improvement in the educational *status* of the State. At that time there were 316,409 white persons over twenty years of age, and of that number 77,522, or  $24\frac{1}{2}$  per cent could neither read nor write. According to the census of 1860 the proportion of illiterates was  $19\frac{7}{10}$  per cent, a gratifying improvement which was probably due in a great measure to the increased efficiency of the common schools. During the preceding decade two laws were passed both of which did much to improve the school system. The first, passed in 1854, authorized the county court of each county to levy a tax of 25 cents on each poll, and  $2\frac{1}{2}$  cents on each \$100 worth of property, for the use of common schools. If two-thirds of the justices of any county were not in favor of levying such a tax, it was made the duty of the court to order an election to be held to ascertain the wishes of the people. Under the provision of this law the school fund was nearly doubled. The following are the items which made up the fund in 1856 as reported by the treasurer:

From the State treasury.....	\$100,000 00
In lieu of land tax.....	2,000 00
School tax on property.....	60,427 71
School tax on polls.....	25,469 70
Bonuses from banks and insurance companies.....	12,260 88
Proceeds of escheated lands....	1,617 34
Interest on school bonds in Bank of Tennessee..	951 37
Total.....	\$202,727 00

The scholastic population at that date being 289,609, the allowance for each child amounted to 70 cents, while previous to the passage of the act of 1854 it averaged about 40 cents.

In 1856 it was enacted that each county court of the State, on the first Monday in January of each year, should appoint one or more commissioners, whose duty it was "to examine all applicants to teach free schools." Another law of some importance was passed in 1851, authorizing commissioners to employ female teachers in any school, and to pay them in the same manner as was provided for male teachers.

The first public graded school in the State was established in Nashville in 1855. Three years previous to that time Alfred Hume, long an eminent teacher in Nashville, was engaged by the city council to visit various cities in other States where public schools were in operation to investigate their practical works. From the information thus obtained he made a thorough and exhaustive report, which was favorably received, and preparations for the erection of a school building were soon after begun. Upon its completion six teachers, all gentlemen, were employed, and the schools formally opened for pupils February 26, 1855. The schools were popular and successful from the first. Other buildings were soon after provided and the facilities greatly increased.

March 20, 1858, an act was passed incorporating the Memphis city schools. It placed them under the control of a board of visitors consisting of one member from each ward elected on the first Saturday in June of each year. They were authorized to levy a tax for school purposes not to exceed a ratio of \$10 for every youth between the ages of eight and sixteen years. The act was amended two years later, and the limit of the tax levy increased to \$15 for each white youth between the ages of six and eighteen years. The board was authorized to erect buildings at a cost not to exceed \$75,000, except by a vote of the citizens. Permission was also given to the city council to issue bonds for the whole or a portion of the amount expended. Thus the two leading cities were supplied with efficient public schools, whose success and popularity did much to encourage the cause of education throughout the State, and the period from 1855 to 1861 was the most prosperous in the history of the common schools previous to the civil war. But, taken as a whole, the more than forty years of experimenting, altering, abolishing, amending and repealing, must be regarded as a stupendous failure when it is remembered that in 1860 one adult white person out of every five had never seen the inside of a school-room.

The same causes, however, which prevented the success of popular education promoted the cause of the private schools, academies and seminaries. These institutions sprang up all over the State, and many of them obtained a wide reputation for the excellence of their discipline and instruction. Indeed it is doubtful if any other State in the Union, according to its population, possessed a greater number of schools of high character. The result was that those persons able to avail themselves of the advantages of these institutions were as a rule thoroughly educated.

During the war education was almost at a stand-still. The public schools were suspended, private schools, academies and seminaries were closed, many of them never to be reopened. The buildings, too, suffered



in the general devastation. Many were entirely destroyed, while others were used in turn by the opposing armies for hospitals and camps.

At the close of hostilities the educational problem confronting the people of Tennessee was one of the most appalling ever presented to any people. With over 70,000 illiterate adult white persons at the beginning of the war, augmented by thousands, deprived of schools during the succeeding four years, in addition to nearly 300,000 helplessly illiterate freedmen; the situation was not only overwhelmingly discouraging, but positively dangerous. Under the most favorable circumstances to educate such a population and fit it for intelligent citizenship, was an almost hopeless undertaking, but how much more so when impoverished by war and demoralized by a social revolution. The first step toward the reorganization of the common schools was taken in April, 1865, when the following resolution was presented to the Senate by John Trimble:

*Resolved*, That it be referred to the committee on comon schools and education to take into early and earnest consideration the whole matter of free common schools, and at as early a date as practicable, report a system of free common schools to be put into operation throughout the State. That it also report what tax is necessary, and how the same may be raised.

This resolution, under a suspension of the rules, was referred to the designated committee, of which W. Bosson was chairman. The committee asked that the time to make the report be postponed until the next session, which was granted. The summer of 1865 was employed in reading the school laws of other States, corresponding with state superintendents, receiving their reports and suggestions, and perfecting the original bill. It was then sent to eminent educators in various States for criticism. On October 25, 1865, the bill, accompanied by a petition, was presented to the Senate. After undergoing many amendments, rejections and reconsiderations in both houses, it finally became a law in March, 1867. Under its provisions the territorial divisions remained the same as under the old law. The officers provided were a state superintendent, county superintendents, a board of education for each civil district, and three directors for each subdistrict. The money appropriated consisted of the proceeds of the school fund, a property tax of 2 mills upon the dollar, a poll tax of 25 cents, and a railroad tax, one-fourth of 1 per cent a mile for each passenger. The annual income from all these sources was paid on the warrant of the comptroller to the state superintendent, and by him distributed to the county superintendents, who acted as county treasurers, and paid all orders of the board of education both for the civil districts and subdistricts. It was made obligatory upon the directors, or in case of their neglect, upon the board of directors, to maintain a free school in every subdistrict for a period of

five months every year. If the school fund were insufficient to defray the expenses of such school the subdistricts were required to levy a tax sufficient to make up the deficiency. The benefits of the schools were free to all of legal age, both white and black without restriction, except that they were to be taught separately.

Although the law was to go into effect with the election of school directors, on the first Saturday in June, 1867, so great was the opposition to it, and so many the obstacles to be overcome that it was nearly two years before it became generally established. The state superintendent's office, with Gen. John Eaton, Jr., at its head, was opened in October, 1867, at which time, as he reported, only here and there had any community complied with any of the requirements of the law. With characteristic energy and devotion to the cause he set to work to put in motion the machinery of the new system. County superintendents were appointed, meetings of teachers and superintendents held, addresses delivered, and all possible means used to arouse the educational sentiment of the people. The law, however, was too far in advance of public opinion. The support of the schools, by a tax upon property, met with little favor, while the granting of equal educational advantages to the colored children met with the most violent opposition. The following extract from county superintendents' report for 1868 and 1869 illustrates the popular sentiment: "Monroe County has a strong element that is hostile to popular education, and sticks at nothing to embarrass the working of free schools." The superintendent of Davidson County reported that among the great difficulties to be overcome, one of the greatest, was the organization of colored schools. There were no houses for that purpose, and there was a general prejudice against negro education, so that there were only a few white people who would, and dared assist, the colored people in building schoolhouses. "Most of the directors in this county (Weakley) shake their heads when I talk to them about colored schools, and say this is not the time for such schools. Others are willing to do all they can for them, but are afraid of public opinion." The following extract is from the report of the state superintendent: "Superintendents, directors and teachers resigned their positions on account of threats of personal violence. In July, 1869, sixty-three counties reported thirty-seven schoolhouses had been burned. Teachers were mobbed and whipped; ropes were put around their necks, accompanied with threats of hanging; ladies were insulted. Not a few teachers were dissuaded from teaching out their schools, after they had commenced them, by the reports widely circulated and emphatically repeated, that the State would not disburse any money for schools. In addition to these difficulties super-

intendents and directors often had to employ those not so well qualified as they desired; instead of comfortable schoolhouses teachers often taught in a mere shell of a building; indeed, schools in the summer were reported to be taught under the shade of trees. Colored schools found most pupils compelled to begin with the alphabet. White schools sometimes exhibited a hardly less deplorable lack of knowledge of letters. One school reported, out of seventy-five enrolled, sixty-eight beginning the alphabet."

One of the most serious difficulties encountered was in securing a distribution of the school fund. The money raised for school purposes, in 1866, was employed by the State as a loan to liquidate the interest claims upon the railroad, for the payment of which the faith and credit of the State stood pledged, consequently the apportionment and distribution of the fund for that year did not take place until the fall of 1868, the amount being 48 and seven one-hundredths cents for each child. The distribution of the fund for 1867 was made in February, 1869, and amounted to about \$400,000, or \$1.15 for each child. Under the act of 1867 there was raised for that year, by several cities, counties and civil districts, by voluntary local taxation, and paid out for the use of their public schools an amount aggregating about \$130,000. All educational efforts, in the State, however, were soon after almost paralyzed by a decision of the supreme court, declaring that portion of the act providing for civil district taxation unconstitutional. The work of organization, however, was pushed on, and taking into consideration the unsettled condition of the country, the progress was exceedingly rapid. The state superintendent's report of the work up to September, 1869, gives the following results:

	White.	Colored.	Total.
Number of schoolhouses built.....	456	172	628
Number of schoolhouse sites procured....	226	63	289
Number of schools opened.....	3,405	498	3,903
Number of teachers employed.....	.....	.....	4,614
Number of different pupils in attendance.....	160,027	25,818	185,845

The work of establishing systems of public schools in the South after the war was greatly aided by the munificence of George Peabody, who, in 1867, placed in the hands of a board of trustees over \$2,000,000. in money and securities, for the encouragement of education in the Southern States. This sum two years later he increased by nearly \$1,500,000. To the donation of Mr. Peabody was added a gift of 130,000 volumes of school books from D. Appleton & Co. and A. S. Barnes & Co. These donations were made for the benefit of both races, white and colored,



without distinction. In November, 1867, Rev. Dr. Sears, the general agent of the trustees of the fund, visited Tennessee, and made arrangements to assist normal school instruction and to aid in the establishment of public schools in towns and cities after a certain amount had been done by the citizens. In this way graded schools were opened in Knoxville, Chattanooga, Cleveland, Clarksville, and other localities "where schools of that quality would otherwise have been impossible."

Some mention has been made of the attempt to establish colored schools. It was one of the most difficult tasks in the reorganization of the educational system. It was impossible that it should be otherwise. No matter what system or what set of men attempted it, the old prejudices were not ready to witness its progress in quiet. The general judgment that it must be done—that it was better that it should be done—for the whites as well as the blacks, did not suffice to prevent opposition, although it gradually overcame it. The first attempt toward the education of the colored people was made in the autumn of 1862, when Miss Lucinda Humphrey, a hospital nurse, opened an evening school for the colored employes of the hospital at Memphis. Others followed, increasing from year to year, until in the winter of 1864–65 a method was provided for the colored people to enter actively into the work of supporting their own schools, and after which, in about five months, they paid for the purpose some \$4,000, and the attendance was reported in and around Memphis as high as 1,949 in April, 1865, before the organization of the Freedmen's Bureau.

In Clarksville schools were established for them in 1864, and by the spring of 1865 had realized an attendance of some 300. During the same period Rev. J. G. McKee and his associates opened similarly flourishing schools in Nashville, and others did the same in Murfreesboro, Chattanooga, Knoxville, and other points.\*

In the spring of 1865 the Freedmen's Bureau was established, and during the next four years disbursed over \$150,000 in the State, the greater part of which was bestowed upon colored schools. Indeed a large part of the colored schoolhouses would not have been built without the aid thus obtained. In connection with this bureau various organizations operated efficiently, both in sustaining schools and in supplying well qualified and competent teachers. Several of these organizations expended large amounts of money, estimated in 1869 at an aggregate of \$300,000. At the close of the seventh decade popular education in Tennessee was higher than at any previous period in the history of the State. The school law of 1867 was the first legislative attempt to-

---

\*Report of Superintendent of Public Instruction, 1869.

ward a thoroughly appointed state system of public instruction in Tennessee, and a great work had been accomplished under it; yet in a little more than two years after its enactment it was repealed. The cause of its failure to sustain itself is explained in the following extract from the report of the state superintendent for 1874:

"It is enough to say that the experiment was inopportunately made, and the projected system was ill-adapted to the prevailing condition of our people. The echoes of the war had not died away. Political and social disorder still prevailed throughout the State, and a people, not yet assured of their civil *status*, were not in a favorable condition to be very profitably concerned about a costly system of popular education, or to be cheerfully taxed for its support. Thus, lacking popular favor and confidence, the experiment failed, and may be now advantageously cited, in contrast with the *ante bellum* 'system,' as demonstrating that in public school enterprises, as in all other matters, as much harm may often result from attempting too much as from being content with too little; and further, that an active popular sympathy is essential to the success of any system of public instruction."

The repeal of the act of 1867 took place December 14, 1869. The state superintendent and county superintendents were ordered to turn over all the funds remaining in their hands to the comptroller of the State, and the former was given ninety days to wind up the affairs of his office. During the ten years from 1860 to 1870 no county in the State had more than three sessions of public schools, while many had no more than one. The private schools too were not so numerous, and many who had previously been able to pay tuition for their children were rendered unable to do so by the misfortunes of the war. It is little to be wondered at that illiteracy increased most lamentably. While the white population increased but 13 per cent during the decade the increase in the number of white illiterates was 50 per cent. Upon the adoption of the constitution of 1870 the clause in the old constitution concerning education was reaffirmed. It was further provided that "no school established or aided under this section shall allow white and negro children to be received as scholars together in the same school."

In July, 1870, an act to reorganize the public schools was passed. By this law the whole subject of popular education was virtually remitted to the counties, without imposing any obligations upon them to take action in the premises. No State levies upon property for school purposes were made, and a tax of 50 cents was imposed upon polls. The only officers provided for were three commissioners for each civil district, who collectively constituted a county board of education, and into whose

hands was placed the entire management of the schools. A subsequent act made the state treasurer superintendent of public instruction, *ex officio*, but no special duties were imposed upon him, and "he was a superintendent without a charge and without authority." The absolute failure of this system, if it can be called a system, induced the State Teachers' Association to recommend to the agent of the Peabody Fund the propriety of appropriating \$1,500 during the year 1872 toward the support of an agent to co-operate with the state treasurer, and to work under the immediate supervision of the association. This recommendation was adopted, and J. B. Killebrew appointed agent. He was soon after made assistant superintendent of public instruction, and in March, 1872, made a report which was published. It was found that less than thirty counties had levied a tax for school purposes, and in the remainder no action whatever had been taken. "In many of the counties where a school tax has been levied, commissioners have been elected who are opposed to any system of public instruction and feel a greater desire to make public schools unpopular by making them inefficient and of but little value, than to see them gaining ground and winning their way to public favor by educating, elevating and refining the public heart and mind. In neighborhoods where a high order of intelligence prevails, and where a decided interest has been manifested by the best citizens, good schools exist under the county system. On the other hand, where these conditions do not exist, free schools of the most worthless character are kept up a few weeks in the year, and taught by men whose chief distinction or fitness for the position lies in the severity and cruelty of their discipline and their adhesion to text-books used half a century ago."\* It was estimated by the assistant superintendent that during the year 1872 not one-fifth of the scholastic population of the State had any means of education. In some counties visited by him there was not a single school, public or private, in operation, "nor were there any efforts being made by the citizens to remedy the deficiency." He justly pronounced the system then in operation "a farcè and utterly devoid of vitality." At this time the trustees of the Peabody Fund rendered valuable assistance to many cities, towns and districts in maintaining schools. In 1871 an aggregate of \$24,900 was furnished to fifty-five schools; in 1872 a similar amount was granted.

No organization has done more to promote the educational interests of Tennessee than the State Teachers' Association, which was organized in July, 1865. Aside from the various measures of practical importance that owe their projection to this body, its meetings have awakened the

---

\*Report of J. B. Killebrew.



public mind to the great need of better educational facilities. To this association the present school law owes its existence. At their meeting in 1872 a committee was appointed to prepare a draft of a school law, and present it to the Legislature with a memorial asking for its adoption. In their communication to the Legislature the committee said:

"The friends of popular education from every part of Tennessee united together under the name of 'The Tennessee State Teachers' Association' have been laboring for years past, and labor without money and without price, to procure the adoption of a system of public free schools to which the sons of the poor and the rich shall come with feelings of equality and independence; schools whose excellence shall attract all the children of our State, and which shall become the objects of pride and affection to every one of our citizens." "The system recommended by the association is one combining the State, the county and the district systems, retaining the valuable features of all and thus harmonizing all conflicting views as to different systems."

The form of the school law presented with the memorial was amended in a few particulars, and finally passed both houses in March, 1873. This law has since suffered but little modification. It provides for the appointment of a state superintendent, county superintendent and district school directors. The state superintendent is nominated by the governor and confirmed by the Senate. He is allowed an annual salary of \$1,995, and is required to devote his entire time and attention to his duties. His duties are to collect and disseminate information in relation to public schools; to make tours of inspection among the public schools throughout the State; to see that the school laws and regulations are faithfully executed; to prepare and distribute blanks, blank forms for all returns required by law; to appoint inspectors of schools; to require reports from county superintendents, or some one appointed in his place; to prescribe the mode of examining and licensing teachers; to report to the comptroller on the 1st of December of each year the scholastic population, and to report to the governor annually all information regarding the schools.

The county superintendents are elected biennially by the county courts of each county, which also fixes their salaries. They are required to visit the schools, confer with teachers and directors, to examine teachers and issue certificates, to report to the county trustee the scholastic population of their respective counties, and to report to the state superintendent whenever required.

The law provides for the election of three directors for each school district for a term of three years, one going out each year. The election

is held on the first Thursday in August by the sheriff of each county. The directors are required to explain and enforce the school law, and for this purpose to visit the schools within the district from time to time; to employ teachers and, if necessary, to dismiss them; to suspend or dismiss pupils when the prosperity of the school makes it necessary; to use the school fund in such manner as will best promote the interest of public schools in their respective districts; to hold regular meetings and call meetings of the people of the districts for consultation; to keep separate and apart the schools for white and colored children; to disburse the school funds; to take care of the public school property, and to report to county superintendents.

The clerk and treasurer of the district, who is elected from the board of directors, is required to take the census of all persons between six and eighteen years of age, in the month of July, to gather statistics and to keep a report of proceedings. He is allowed 2 cents per capita for taking the scholastic population, and that constitutes his compensation for his year's service as clerk. Public school officers and teachers are enjoined, under a penalty of not less than \$200 nor more than \$500 and removal, for having any pecuniary interest in the sale of school books, furniture or apparatus, or from acting as agent for the sale of such, or from receiving any gift for their influence in recommending or procuring the use in the school of any of the articles mentioned.

A certificate of qualification is required of every teacher. Teachers are required to keep a daily register of facts pertaining to their respective schools. Written contracts must be made with teachers, and for like services of male and female teachers like salaries shall be paid. The schools are open to all persons between the ages of six and twenty-one years residing within the school district, and in special cases those residing in different districts, provided that white and colored persons shall not be taught in the same school. Orthography, reading, writing, arithmetic, grammar, geography, elementary geology of Tennessee, history of the United States and the elementary principles of agriculture are the prescribed branches, while vocal music may also be taught. No other branches are to be introduced except as provided for by local taxation, or allowed by special regulations upon the payment of such rates of tuition as may be prescribed.

The district directors are given power to make contracts of consolidation with the trustees, teachers or other authorities of academies, seminaries, colleges or private schools, by which the public schools may be taught in such institutions, provided that the branches of study designated as the studies of public schools shall be taught free of any charge in such

consolidated schools. The permanent school fund of the State, as recognized by the constitution, was declared to be \$1,500,000, to which was added the unpaid interest amounting, January 1, 1873, to \$1,012,500. For the entire amount, \$2,512,500, a certificate of indebtedness was issued, signed by the governor, under the great seal of the State, and deposited with the comptroller of the treasury. Interest is paid on this amount at the rate of 6 per cent, the payments being made on the 1st of July and the 1st of January each year. To the permanent state fund is added from time to time the proceeds of all escheated property, of all property accruing to the State by forfeiture, of all lands sold and bought in for taxes, of the personal effects of intestates having no kindred entitled thereto by the laws of distribution, and donations made to the State for the support of public schools, unless otherwise directed by the donors.

The annual school fund is composed of the annual proceeds of the permanent school fund, any money that may come into the state treasury for that purpose from any source whatever, the poll tax of \$1 on every male inhabitant of the State subject thereto, and a tax of 1 mill on the dollar's worth of property subject to taxation. This last tax, together with the poll tax, is paid over to the county trustee in the county where collected, and distributed to each school district, according to scholastic population. When the money derived from the school fund and taxes imposed by the State on the counties is not sufficient to keep up a public school for five months in the year in the school districts in the county, the county court may levy an additional tax sufficient for this purpose, or submit the proposition to a vote of the people; and a tax to prolong the schools beyond the five months may also be levied. This tax must be levied on all property, polls and privileges liable to taxation, but shall not exceed the entire State tax. Taxes so levied by the county are collected in the same manner as other county taxes, and paid over to the county trustee for distribution. The State treasurer and county trustee are required to keep the school moneys separate from State and county funds. All school moneys in the treasury on the first Monday in October and April of every year, are apportioned by the comptroller among the several counties according to the population. The warrant for the amount due each county is drawn in the favor of the county trustee. The money received by him he is required to report immediately to the county superintendent and to the directors of each school district.

The law further provides for schools in incorporated cities and towns, the boards of mayor and aldermen of which are authorized to levy and collect an additional tax to that imposed by the general provisions of the



school law, upon all taxable polls, privileges and property within the corporate limits. Where such schools are established authority is given for the appointment of a board of education. The law also requires the governor to appoint a State Board of Education consisting of six members, holding their office for a term of six years, two retiring each year. The governor is *ex officio* president of the board. The principal duty of this board is to provide for and manage the State Normal School.

The law went into effect immediately after its passage, and extraordinary efforts for the multiplication and elevation of the public schools were made during the succeeding year. John M. Fleming was appointed superintendent of public instruction, and made his first report in December, 1874. From this report it is found that in 1873 there were thirty-six counties which levied no property tax, and thirty-two which levied no poll tax. The remaining counties levied a poll tax of from 5 cents to \$1, and property tax from  $2\frac{1}{2}$  to 30 cents. Sixty-five counties levied no privilege tax. The tax levies for 1874 were about the same as for the year before. The total amount of school money received by the counties for the year ending August 31, 1874, was \$998,459.10, of which \$265,951.53 was from the State, \$522,453.17 from the counties, \$112,636.17 from districts, and \$97,418.23 from other sources. During the same time \$34,300 was received from the Peabody Fund, and distributed among sixty-two schools. The scholastic population in 1874 numbered 420,384, of which 103,856 were colored. The number of white teachers employed was 4,630, colored 921.\* The average number of months taught during the year for the State was 3.85. The average pay of teachers per month was \$33.03.

Thus a State school system was once more inaugurated, and this time with better prospects of success, yet many difficulties and considerable opposition were yet to be overcome. The financial distress of the State rendered retrenchment in the State expenditures a necessity, and many persons friendly to the cause of popular education, in their desire to extricate the State from her difficulties favored the reduction of the appropriation for schools. In 1877 the Legislature went so far as to pass an act abolishing the office of county superintendent and practically abolished that of the state superintendent also. This false step was arrested only by the governor's veto.

The superintendent's report for the year ending August 31, 1880, shows a marked improvement not only in the number of schools, but also in the character of the instruction afforded. The scholastic population at that time numbered 544,862, of whom 290,141 were enrolled in the

\*Marion County not reporting.

public schools, and 41,068 in private schools. The number of teachers employed was white, 3,506, and colored 1,247. The aggregate receipts from all sources for school purposes amounted to \$930,734.33. Out of the ninety-four counties in the State only ten failed to levy a school tax.

The census reports of 1880 present conclusive evidence of increased efficiency in the schools of the State. During the preceding decade the increase in the number of white illiterates was only eleven and four-tenths per cent, while the increase in white population was twenty-one and seven-tenths per cent. This in contrast with the report of 1870 is a gratifying improvement. The following statistics for the year ending August 31, 1885, afford still further proof that the public schools throughout the State are steadily advancing. The scholastic population numbered 609,028, of whom 156,143 were colored; 7,214 teachers taught in 6,605 schools, with an aggregate enrollment of 373,877, and an average daily attendance of 150,502 white, and 41,901 colored pupils. Total amount of school money received, including the balance on hand at the beginning of the year, was \$1,308,839.17. The number of school-houses in the State was 5,066, of which 289 were erected during the year. A great improvement in the character of the houses is noticed. While ten years before a large part of the houses built were logs, out of 289 built in 1880 only fifty-nine were of that kind. The estimated value of school property at that time was \$1,375,780.86. The following table shows the average number of days in which the schools were in session for each year since the establishment of the present system:

1874.....	77	1880.....	68
1875.....	67	1881.....	86
1876.....	71.9	1882.....	73
1877.....	70	1883.....	78
1878.....	77	1884.....	78
1879.....	69	1885.....	80

For the past three years the office of superintendent of public instruction has been filled with marked ability by Thomas H. Paine, who is doing much to sustain and advance the educational interests of the State. Although the condition of the public schools is not entirely satisfactory, the progress that has been made during the past ten years has assured their permanency. Heretofore one of the greatest impediments to efficient schools has been the lack of competent teachers, but this obstacle is gradually being removed. The normal schools are annually sending out increased numbers of trained teachers, while institutes and associations are doing much to improve those already in the work. It can hardly be expected, however, that the best results will be attained until the school revenue is in some way sufficiently increased to furnish

the youth of the State an average of more than seventy-five days of school in a year. During the winter of 1884-85 an educational exhibit was made at the World's Industrial and Cotton Centennial Exposition at New Orleans. This department was placed under the direction of Prof. Frank Goodman, of Nashville, who by energy and persistency succeeded in presenting an exhibit which did not suffer in comparison with any other State. All the leading colleges, seminaries and high schools in the State were represented.

In the early part of this chapter the history of Cumberland College was traced to the election of Dr. Priestly as president of the board of trustees in 1810. The exercises of the institution were conducted by him until 1816, when they were suspended and so continued until his reelection for a second term in 1820. The college was then re-opened, but was soon compelled to suspend again on account of the death of Dr. Priestly, which occurred in February, 1821. The institution then remained closed until the autumn of 1824, when Dr. Phillip Lindsley, who had just refused the presidency of Princeton College, was prevailed upon to take charge of it. At that time, of the 240 acres originally granted to the college, only about six remained. This formed the old college campus and included the site of the present medical college. In 1825 a farm of 120 acres near the college was purchased at \$60 per acre. Portions of this land were soon after sold for about \$17,000, leaving thirty acres. Dr. Lindsley reorganized the institution, and it was opened for the winter session of 1824-25 with thirty-five students. It was his aim and desire to make Nashville the great educational center of the Southwest. He planned the building of a university to consist of several colleges, like those of Oxford and Cambridge. Accordingly on November 27, 1826, the Legislature passed an act to incorporate the trustees and officers of Cumberland College under the name of the University of Nashville. The following is the preamble to the act:

WHEREAS, it is represented to be the wish of the trustees of Cumberland College to erect several additional halls and colleges besides that heretofore known and still to be known by the name of Cumberland College on their grounds near Nashville, and to establish additional schools thereon, and by a union of the whole to build up a university and thereby to enlarge their sphere of operations and increase their means of usefulness.

This change, however, proved to be only in name, as the university continued with the same departments and under the same organization as the college. The number of students gradually increased until the summer of 1836, when the attendance reached 126. From that time until 1850, when the institution was suspended, the attendance decreased. This was owing in a great measure to the large number of similar institutions which had been established in the State. In an address delivered



in 1847, Dr. Lindsley says: "When this college was revived and reorganized at the close of 1824, there were no similar institutions in actual operation within 200 miles of Nashville. There were none in Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana, Arkansas, Middle or West Tennessee. There are now some thirty or more within that distance, and nine within fifty miles of our city."

A report on the university made in 1850 by a committee consisting of L. P. Cheatham, F. B. Fogg, E. H. Ewing, John M. Bass and R. J. Meigs, has the following concerning the attendance: "During the whole of this time (1824-50) the number of students has been larger than that of any other institution in Tennessee, when the following facts are taken into consideration. There is no preparatory school attached to the university, and the students have usually been members of the college classes proper. Most students when they come to enter the University of Nashville, come to enter the junior class, and usually two-thirds of the whole number of students are members of the junior and senior classes."

The whole number of regular graduates with the degree of Bachelor of Arts from 1813 to 1824 were 18; from 1824 to 1850, 414. The total number of students matriculated in the regular college classes during the latter period was 1,059.

Dr. Lindsley was a thorough scholar, and under his management the college maintained a high standard. "Under its influence grew up a cultivated, liberal community; through its influence and by the efforts of the young men sent forth to engage in and to encourage education, sprang up twenty colleges within fifty miles of Nashville, to divide, distract and compete with the university, and at the same time to accomplish much good. It was the inevitable conflict of localities which had to demonstrate that every village cannot be a seat of learning. It prepared the soil in which great institutions take deep root and flourish—the soil which has developed the public school system and attracted hither Vanderbilt University, the Normal School, and brought here the Fisk, Tennessee Central and Baptist Normal and Theological Colleges to engage in the great work of the elevation of the African race of America."\*

The university exercises were suspended in 1850, the old college building being transferred to the medical department, which was then organized. For several years previous the organization of a medical department of the university had been under contemplation. So early as 1843 a committee of the board of trustees reported it advisable to at once establish a medical school. The subject continued to be agitated

---

\*H. M. Doak.

by medical men, but nothing definite was accomplished until the latter part of 1850, when an address was presented to the trustees of the university by prominent physicians of Nashville asking privilege to establish a medical department with entire independence of management. This was granted. The board then elected the following corps of instructors: John M. Watson, M. D., obstetrics and diseases of women and children; A. H. Buchanan, M. D., surgery; W. K. Bowling, M. D., institutes and practice of medicine; C. K. Winston, M. D., *materia medica* and pharmacy; Robert M. Porter, M. D., anatomy and physiology; J. Berrien Lindsley, M. D., chemistry and pharmacy. Winston was chosen president of the faculty, and Lindsley, dean. A lease of the university building was made for a term of twenty-two years, which has since been twice extended, the last time in 1875, making the lease expire in October, 1905.

The first class, numbering thirty-three, was graduated in February, 1852. The institution immediately took rank with the first medical schools in the United States, both as to the excellence of its training, and the number of students. In 1857 there were 137 graduates, and in 1861, 141. Its alumni in 1880 numbered 2,200. In 1874 the Vanderbilt University adopted the faculty of the medical department of Nashville University with the agreement that students matriculating in the former institution shall be graduated under its auspices, and receive its diploma, while the matriculates of the latter shall be graduated as before.

In 1853-54 a portion of the land still remaining was sold and new buildings were erected a short distance from the old college. In the fall of the latter year the literary department was re-opened with an attendance of forty pupils, and three graduates at the end of the year. In 1855 it was united with the Western Military Institute, of which Gen. Bushrod R. Johnson was superintendent. It was conducted on the military plan until the breaking out of the civil war, when the buildings were used as a hospital.

After the close of the war the trustees of the university located the Montgomery Bell Academy in the buildings of the literary department of the university. This school was founded by the bequest of Montgomery Bell, a prominent iron manufacturer, who left \$20,000 for that purpose. "By the will of the founder, gratuitous instruction is given to twenty-five boys, not less than ten nor more than fourteen years of age, 'who are unable to support and educate themselves, and whose parents are unable to do so,' from the counties of Davidson, Dickson, Montgomery and Williamson, Tennessee." The academy continued to occupy a portion of the university building until 1881, when a separate building was









erected for it, to make room for the increasing attendance of the normal college.

This latter institution was the re-habilitation in a more vital form of the literary and scientific departments of the university, giving them a larger and more comprehensive sphere in the direction of popular education in the South. Its establishment was accomplished through the aid granted by the trustees of the Peabody Fund, whose aim it had been from the first to assist the cause of education in the South by providing trained teachers rather than by direct support of schools. It was therefore determined to establish one or more thoroughly equipped normal colleges. In 1867 Dr. Lewis proposed to give \$2,000 to aid a normal school in Tennessee, if one should be established. For various reasons this could not then be accomplished, but \$800 and \$1,000 was granted to Fisk University and the Lookout Mountain school, respectively, both of which organized normal departments.

In 1873 a bill for the establishment of a State normal school was presented to the Legislature, and passed three readings in the Senate and two in the House, but was defeated for want of time at the close of the session. This bill made provision for supplementing \$6,000 annually from the Peabody Fund by an appropriation of an equal amount from the treasury of the State. At the next session of the General Assembly a similar bill was introduced, but it failed in the Senate. A bill without an appropriation clause was then prepared; this became a law in March, 1875. It merely provided for the appointment of a State board of education with authority to establish a normal school or schools, but without any means of accomplishing it. The University of Nashville, however, promptly tendered to the board its buildings, grounds and funds, with the exception of those appropriated to the medical college; which proposition the trustees of the Peabody Fund supplemented by an offer of \$6,000 a year for two years. These offers were accepted.

With a temporary fund of \$1,200 thus secured the normal college was formally opened by the State board of education at the capital December 1, 1875, with Eben S. Stearns, LL.D., as president, assisted by a corps of teachers of the highest qualification. Although the school opened late in the season and the project was wholly new to most of the people, no less than fifteen candidates presented themselves for examination, and before the first term of ten weeks had closed forty-seven had been admitted. At the end of the school year the number had increased to sixty. It continued to grow in popularity and flourished beyond expectation. The State, however, failed to make any appropriation for its support.

In his report in 1879 Dr. Sears says of the institution: "The funds on which we relied for its support from the State, and in part, also, from the university, have failed us. Besides, as a part of the college building is still occupied by the Montgomery Bell Academy, which is in charge of the university trustees, the normal college has already outgrown its narrow accommodations, and its numbers are rapidly increasing. Representations of our necessities were made during a visit of three weeks last year, both to the same board of education and to the trustees of the university, neither of which felt authorized to give any hope of relief. Since that time the Legislature has met and declined to make any appropriation. It has, therefore, become a serious question whether some change, possibly involving a removal, shall not be made, to secure ample accommodations and better support for the future."

The State of Georgia was desirous of securing the normal college, and made liberal offers to the trustees of the Peabody Fund. Arrangements for the transfer of the institution had been nearly completed, when the trustees of the University of Nashville made the following proposition: To remove the Montgomery Bell Academy and turn over the buildings occupied by it to the normal school; to appropriate \$10,000, to be raised by mortgage on the property, or otherwise, and to be expended in improvements or the purchase of apparatus; and to appropriate the interest on \$50,000 of Tennessee bonds held by the university, provided enough be reserved to pay the interest on the \$10,000 borrowed. The citizens of Nashville also raised by subscription a fund of \$4,000 as a guarantee that the Legislature of 1881 should make an appropriation for the benefit of the college. These efforts prevented the removal of the institution and secured its permanent location at Nashville.

On April 6, 1881, \$10,000 was appropriated for its support by the General Assembly. It was provided that one pupil for each senatorial district in the State should be admitted upon proper recommendation, and that such pupil shall receive at least \$100 per annum for two years out of the funds of the school; \$2,500 was at the same time appropriated for scholarships for colored students. Two years later this amount was increased to \$3,300, and that part of the former act requiring a portion of the annual appropriation to be used in paying scholarships was repealed. The colored students are educated in the normal departments of Fisk University, Roger Williams University, Knoxville College and the Central Tennessee College. The normal school is now known as the Tennessee State Normal College of the University of Nashville, the chancellor of the university being the president of the college. The college buildings, situated in the center of the campus sixteen acres



in extent, are among the finest and best appointed in the South. The college proper is a stone structure, having a center building and two wings about 225 feet front and 110 feet depth in the center, and 60 feet depth in each of the wings. The building is two stories high. An elegant chancellor's residence was added a few years ago.

Since its organization the institution has been under the direction of Dr. Stearns, who has conducted it with signal ability, and has retained the implicit confidence of all interested in its success. The following is the present faculty: Eben S. Stearns, D.D., LL.D., president; Julia A. Sears, L.I.; Lizzie Bloomstein, L.I.; Benjamin B. Penfield, A.M.; Mary L. Cook, L.I., B.A.; Julia A. Doak, John L. Lampson, A.M.; William C. Day, Ph.D.; John E. Bailey, teacher of vocal music; Mary E.W. Jones, lady director of gymnasium; George H. Hammersley, gentleman director of gymnasium; Hon. William B. Reese, lecturer on common and civil law; Julia A. Sears, librarian.

The first State board of education consisted of Gov. Porter, *ex officio* president; J. B. Lindsley, secretary; Edwin H. Ewing, Samuel Watson, R. W. Mitchell, L. G. Tarbox and J. J. Reese. The present board is as follows: Gov. William B. Bate, *ex officio* president; Dr. J. Berrien Lindsley, secretary and treasurer; Hon. W. P. Jones, M.D., Supt. F. M. Smith, Prof. Frank Goodman, Hon. Leon Trousdale, Hon. Thomas H. Paine.

The establishment of East Tennessee College\* in the place of Blount College has already been noticed. The trustees of the new institution met in 1808 and organized, retaining Carrick as president. His term of service, however, was short, as he died the following year. No immediate steps were taken to supply his place, nor was anything done toward the erection of a new college building, from the fact, doubtless, that the trustees had no available funds and that there was no immediate prospect of realizing a revenue from the land grants. Lotteries were popular institutions in Tennessee at that time, and the Legislature of 1810 authorized a lottery scheme for the benefit of East Tennessee College, appointing Hugh L. White, Thomas McCorry, James Campbell, Robert Craighead and John N. Gamble trustees for the purpose. The trustees put forth an advertisement in which they "flatter themselves that the scheme will be satisfactory to all who wish to become adventurers\* with a view to better their circumstances. When the object to be attained by the lottery is considered, it is believed every individual will be anxious to become an adventurer. It is not designed to retrieve a shattered fortune, nor to convert into cash at an extravagant price property that is

---

\*Condensed from the historical sketch by Col. Moses White.

of Trans on Study of words p. 78.

of no use, but it is intended to aid the funds of a seminary of education, where youth of the present and succeeding generations may have their minds prepared in such a manner as to make them ornaments to their families and useful to their country as will enable them to understand their rights as citizens, and duties as servants of the people."

This scheme proved a failure. A sufficient number of tickets were not sold, and no drawing occurred. Meanwhile, Hampden Sidney Academy had been established for Knox County, and its trustees, by private subscription, had succeeded in raising sufficient funds to justify effecting an organization. However, it was not until January 1, 1817, that the academy opened its doors for the reception of pupils. In October, 1820, the trustees of East Tennessee College decided to put that institution into operation again, and an agreement was entered into whereby the academy and college were united, D. A. Sherman, the principal of the academy, becoming president of the college. He was a graduate of Yale, of the class of 1802, and for several years afterward a tutor in that institution. During his presidency of the college, he was assisted by Daniel E. Watrous, James McBath and David S. Hart, the last named, the first graduate of East Tennessee College, taking his degree in 1821. Mr. Sherman, on account of failing health, withdrew from the college in 1825, and Samuel R. Rodgers and James McBath continued the exercises as tutors in charge for one year.

In 1826 the trustees, having obtained permission to select another and more eligible site than the Poplar Spring, purchased of Pleasant M. Miller, for the sum of \$600, Barbara Hill, so named, in honor of Barbara Blount, the daughter of William Blount. They proceeded to erect the center college building and three one-story dormitories back of the college, so arranged as to make a square of the campus. The trustees then succeeded in securing as president the Rev. Charles Coffin, of Greeneville College, a man of great worth and elegant classical attainments. About this time considerable popular opposition toward colleges was manifested, and those institutions suffered accordingly. Dr. Coffin, however, prosecuted his labors for several years in the face of the greatest difficulties and embarrassments, with unremitting energy and assiduity, but popular prejudice increased. In 1832, worn down with excessive labor and anxious care, he was compelled to resign the presidency, and the next year was succeeded by James H. Piper, of Virginia, an *alumnus* of the college of the class of 1830. At the end of one year he resigned the presidency in despair. It is said that he was the ambitious youth who aspired to carve his name above that of the father of his country, on the natural bridge.

He was immediately succeeded by Joseph Estabrook, a graduate of Dartmouth. He at once secured a corps of able assistants, and soon succeeded in raising the college from almost total prostration to a respectable rank among the educational institutions of the country. In 1837 the college was organized into regular classes, and the first catalogue was published. By an act of the Legislature in 1840, the name of East Tennessee College was changed to that of East Tennessee University, and greater power and more extended privileges were granted. Soon after the sale of a part of the land belonging to the institution enabled the trustees to make some important and long needed improvements. They contracted with Thomas Crutchfield, Esq., of Athens, who had built the main edifice, to erect the two three-story dormitories, and the two houses and appurtenances on the right and left slopes, originally intended to be used as dwellings by the professors, but which an increasing demand for room has required to be appropriated to other purposes. The final settlement of the commissioners, James H. Cowan and Drury P. Armstrong, with the contractor, July, 1848, exhibits as the total cost of the improvement the sum of \$20,965.18.

At this time the college was just entering upon a decline, which was hastened by the resignation of President Estabrook, in 1850. This decline was due to the same causes that compelled the suspension of the University of Nashville—the multiplication of colleges and denominational schools throughout Tennessee and the entire South. The trustees, appreciating the necessity, called into requisition the great name and extensive personal popularity of the Hon. W. B. Reese, who had a short time before resigned his seat upon the supreme bench. Judge Reese assumed the presidency in the fall of 1850, but even his great learning, industry, and influence were not sufficient to stay the decline; and after having graduated an even dozen students, he resigned at the end of the third year of his presidency. The trustees experienced considerable difficulty in securing a satisfactory successor. Rev. George Cook was finally elected and accepted. He was a native of New Hampshire, a graduate of Dartmouth, and had been for several years the principal of a flourishing female seminary in Knoxville. As a majority of the professors had resigned with the president, the vacancies had to be filled, and the formal opening of the university was postponed from the fall of 1853 until the beginning of the summer session of 1854. The cholera prevailed with considerable violence and fatality in Knoxville in the following September, and the fear of its recurrence deterred the students from returning at the opening of the winter session.

An attempt was then made to organize a medical department, but a



sufficient number of competent physicians could not be obtained to fill the chairs. After this failure an agreement was entered into with the Western Military Institute to consolidate that institution with the university, but Nashville offered greater inducements, and it went there. President Cook next recommended the establishment of an agricultural department, but before the result of his last proposition was learned, he resigned in despair in 1857. During the following year the exercises of the university were suspended, and another unsuccessful attempt was made to establish a medical department.

On the 20th of March, 1858, the head of Burritt College, Van Buren County, Tenn., was elected, president of the university, and under his charge the university was formally reopened in September following. At the close of his second year he resigned, and the vacancy thus caused was filled by the election of Rev. J. J. Ridley, of Clarksville. Owing to the untiring efforts of the retiring president the next session opened with a largely increased attendance. The first important action taken by the new president was to secure the adoption of a resolution extending gratuitous education to candidates for the ministry of all religious denominations.

A military department was again organized and rigid discipline adopted in the management of the university. But just as the institution was again in successful operation the civil war came on. Students enlisted and instructors resigned. In a short time general demoralization pervaded the whole institution. A portion of the university buildings was soon demanded by the military. On February 7, 1862, the president unconditionally resigned. The buildings and grounds were used by the Confederates and Federals in turn; and after the close of the war the United States Government paid to the trustees, in the way of rents and damages, the sum of \$15,000.

July 10, 1865, the board of trustees, as a preparatory step toward reorganizing the university and resuming exercises therein, unanimously elected the Rev. Thomas Humes president, who at once addressed himself to the task before him. The university buildings, in consequence of their having been occupied for several years by the army, were not in a condition to be used for college purposes. Without waiting for the necessary repairs to be made, in the spring of 1866 President Humes resumed exercises in the buildings of the Deaf and Dumb Asylum. In September, 1867, the work of instruction was resumed in the college buildings.

In accordance with the provisions of an act of Congress, approved July 2, 1862, making endowments for industrial colleges to the several

States, the Legislature of the State in January, 1869, appropriated, upon certain conditions, the agricultural fund to East Tennessee University. In June, 1869, the trustees organized the Tennessee Industrial College, and in September of the same year it went into operation. Its endowment from the United States was invested in 396 State of Tennessee bonds of \$1,000 each, bearing 6 per cent interest, the payment of which for several years was much delayed. Notwithstanding this serious obstacle, the success of the institution was very gratifying. A fine farm situated about three-fourths of a mile from the university was purchased for its use; new buildings were erected, and an excellent chemical laboratory was provided and equipped. In 1879 the name of East Tennessee University was changed, by an act of the Legislature, to the University of Tennessee. At the same time the governor was authorized to appoint a board of visitors to the university, three from each grand division of the State, and other legislation connecting the university intimately with the public school system of the State. Since that time a full university organization has been adopted. The courses of instruction have been enlarged and multiplied, and the university now offers excellent advantages for both general and special study.

The medical department was organized as the Nashville Medical College in the summer of 1876. It was founded by Drs. Duncan Eve and W. F. Glenn, who drew from the faculty of the medical department of the University of Nashville and Vanderbilt University Drs. Paul F. Eve, T. B. Buchanan, George S. Blackie, W. P. Jones and J. J. Abernethy. The first session of this institution commenced on March 5, 1877, and was attended with brilliant success from the first. In the spring of 1879 a dental department was established, being the first dental school in the South. During the same year an overture was received from the trustees of the University of Tennessee to become their medical department, and such an agreement was effected.

The following is the present faculty: Hon. William P. Jones, M. D., president of faculty, professor of mental diseases and public hygiene; Duncan Eve, M. D., dean of the faculty, professor of surgery and clinical surgery; William F. Glenn, M. D., professor of physiology, genito-urinary and venereal diseases; J. Bunyan Stephens, M. D., professor of obstetrics and clinical midwifery; Deering J. Roberts, M. D., professor of theory and practice of medicine and clinical medicine; Paul F. Eve, M. D., professor of general, descriptive and surgical anatomy; William D. Haggard, M. D., professor of gynecology and diseases of children; Woodford M. Vertrees, M. D., professor of *materia medica* and therapeutics; William E. McCampbell, M. D., professor of medical

chemistry and toxicology; William G. Brien, M. D., LL. D., professor of medical jurisprudence; John G. Sinclair, M. D., professor of diseases of the eye, ear and throat; James Y. Crawford, M. D., D. D. S., professor of prophylactic dentistry and oral surgery; Paul F. Eve, M. D., William E. McCampbell, M. D., demonstrators of anatomy.

At the close of the session of 1882-83 Dr. Humes resigned the presidency of the university. The trustees thereupon determined to leave the presidency unfilled for the ensuing year, and gave power to the faculty to elect from their body a chairman clothed with the authority and charged with the duties of a president. So satisfactory was this arrangement that it has since been continued. The following are the faculty and officers of the university: Eben Alexander, B. A., chairman of the faculty; Hunter Nicholson, A. M., professor of natural history and geology; Eben Alexander, B. A., professor of ancient languages and literature; Samuel B. Crawford, M. A., professor of military science and commandant of cadets; Rodes Massie, A. M., D. L., professor of English and modern languages; John W. Glenn, A. M., professor of agriculture, horticulture and botany; William Albert Noys, Ph. D., professor of chemistry and mineralogy; William W. Carson, C. E., M. E., professor of mathematics; William Everett Moses, B. S., adjunct professor of chemistry; Samuel B. Crawford, M. A., adjunct professor of mathematics; Thomas Oakley Deaderick, M. A., adjunct professor of ancient languages; William Gibbs McAdoo, M. A., adjunct professor of English and history; Lewis Conner Carter, C. E., instructor in applied mathematics; John Newton Bogart, M. A., instructor in sub-collegiate classes; William Isaac Thomas, M. A., instructor in modern languages and natural history; Gustav Robert Knabe, Mus. D., instructor in vocal and instrumental music; Hunter Nicholson, A. M., librarian; Robert James Cummings, farm superintendent; Hon. John L. Moses, president of the board of trustees; Robert Craighead, secretary and treasurer. Trustees: Hon. William B. Bate, governor of Tennessee, *ex officio*; Hon. John Allison, secretary of State, *ex officio*; Hon. Thomas H. Paine, superintendent of public instruction, *ex officio*; Rev. Thomas W. Humes, S. T. D., Hugh L. McClung, William K. Eckle, Hon. O. P. Temple, Frank A. R. Scott, Robert H. Armstrong, Hon. John Baxter\*, B. Frazier, M. D., William Rule, S. H. Smith, M. D., R. P. Eaton, M. D., H. L. W. Mynatt, Charles M. McGhee, Hon. D. A. Nunn, Edward J. Sanford, W. A. Henderson, Esq., Hon. J. M. Coulter, Rev. James Park, D. D., James D. Cowan, C. Deaderick, M. D., John M. Boyd, M. D., Hon. John L. Moses, Hon. George Brown, A. Caldwell, Esq., John M. Fleming, Esq., J. W.

---

\*Deceased.



Gaut, Samuel J. McKinney, William Morrow, M. D., William B. Reese, Esq., Moses White, Esq., Hon. W. C. Whitthorne, Samuel B. Luttrell, Robert Craighead, James Comfort, Esq., J. B. Killebrew.

By an act of Congress, passed in 1846, extinguishing the title to the unappropriated lands south and west of the congressional reservation line, it was required that \$40,000 arising from the sale of said lands be set apart for the endowment of a college to be located at Jackson. Accordingly, the institution known as West Tennessee College was chartered in—. Before the war it was a prosperous and successful institution, under the administration of able and accomplished presidents and professors, and many of the most distinguished citizens of the State claim West Tennessee College as their *alma mater*. In 1865, immediately after the close of the war, Dr. William Shelton was elected president of the college, with B. W. Arnold as professor of ancient languages, and B. L. Arnold as professor of mathematics and natural science. Under the administration of Dr. Shelton and his faculty of instruction, West Tennessee College was built up to a high degree of prosperity, so that it had a larger number of students than at any previous period in its history. In 1869 the entire faculty resigned, and a new faculty was employed, with Rev. E. L. Patton as president. In August, 1874, the buildings, grounds, and endowments of West Tennessee College, estimated at \$90,000, were donated to the trustees of the Southwestern Baptist University, on condition that an interest bearing endowment of \$300,000 be raised for the university within a period of ten years from the time of transfer. A meeting of the Tennessee Baptist Convention was immediately called, the plan accepted, and preliminary steps were taken toward obtaining a charter under the name of the Southwestern Baptist University. On September 14, 1874, the academic department of the new institution was opened, and at the beginning of the next school year the collegiate department was organized. Under the new name and management the university has been eminently prosperous, and now ranks as one of the best institutions in the State.

## CHAPTER XIV.

HISTORY OF THE EARLY WARS—THE MILITARY TRAINING OF THE "VOLUNTEER STATE"—THE TORIES OF EAST TENNESSEE—THE PART BORNE BY THE STATE IN THE REVOLUTION—THE BRILLIANT STRATEGY AND PROWESS OF SEVIER AND SHELBY—ACTIONS AT KING'S MOUNTAIN AND ELSEWHERE—THE WAR OF 1812—JACKSON'S CAMPAIGNS AGAINST THE CREEKS—THE MEMORABLE BATTLE AT NEW ORLEANS—THE SEMINOLE WAR—ITS HARDSHIPS AND LONG CONTINUANCE—TENNESSEANS CONCERNED IN THE ACHIEVEMENT OF THE INDEPENDENCE OF TEXAS—THE WAR WITH MEXICO—THE VOLUNTEERS—SKETCH OF THE CAMPAIGNS.

ALTHOUGH a peace-loving and law-abiding people, Tennessee has achieved a record in all the wars of the Government or State that is the pride of descendants and the admiration of all beholders. What with the Indian wars, and what with the Revolution, the beginning of the present century finds the inhabitants of the State comparatively a war-like people. The settlers of the mountain region of East Tennessee found it necessary to defend themselves against the Indians at a very early date. Fort Loudon was built by the British, one mile above the mouth of the Tellico River, in 1756. Stimulated by French influence, the Cherokees attacked this fort in 1760, and starved it into surrender on August 8th of that year. The garrison consisted of between 200 and 300 Scotch Highlanders, who surrendered on the promise of Oconostota that they should be allowed a safe return to the Carolinas. They were followed, and on the second day were overtaken and cut to pieces, except a few, and a fence built of their bones. Other forts were built, which served the colonists a good purpose during the troublous times of the Revolution, not only against the British Tories, but against the Indians, whom British intrigue stirred up to revolt. The hardy mountaineers of East Tennessee were not numerous, but were intensely loyal to the cause of independence, and were the terror of Tories and British. Owing to danger from the Indians the mountaineers dared not leave home but for a short time. In 1777 a party of forty men went to Boonesborough, Ky., for the relief of the settlement then besieged by the Indians. The condition of the people became so desperate that Capt. Logan and a select party undertook the perilous journey of 200 miles through an enemy's country to ask relief of the pioneers of Tennessee. The appeal was not in vain, for in a short time 100 riflemen\* were on their way with supplies to relieve the beleaguered garrison. The fall

---

\*Monette.

of Charleston on May 12, 1780, exposed the whole of the Carolinas and Tennessee to the attacks of the British and the Indians.

On March 19, 1780, John Sevier, colonel of Washington County militia, under a call of Samuel Rutherford, united with John Willson, William Trimble, James Stinson, John McNabb, Jonathan Tipton and Godfrey Isbell in raising 100 men. The captains of Col. Sevier's regiment were McNabb, Sevier, Hoskins, Bean, Brown, Isbell, Trimble, Willson, Gist, Stinson, Davis, Patterson and Williams. A similar call was made upon Isaac Shelby, colonel of Sullivan County, who was then absent surveying lands in Kentucky, but a message brought him hurriedly home. Fortunately for these commanders their forces were not ready soon enough, in consequence of which they were not in the disastrous defeat at Camden. Many who before this time were pretended friends now became open enemies to the country. It was determined by the British commander, Cornwallis, to carry the war into the Whig settlements beyond the Alleghanies and thence conquer and lay waste North Carolina as he had South Carolina, and advance into Virginia.

Col. Sevier soon issued another call for volunteers, and in a few days found himself at the head of 200 men. Col. Shelby, who received word of the impending danger on the 16th of June, was in command of 200 men in the first part of July. The forces of Sevier and Shelby arrived at Col. McDowell's camp at Cherokee Ford on Broad River, about the same time. Col. Moore, who was assembling a large body of Tories, took post at a strong fort built by Gen. Williamson on the Pacolet River. The successes of the British led many disaffected to his standard. The rapid advance of the main force of the British led Col. McDowell to strike a blow at once. Cols. Sevier, Shelby and Clarke were detached with 600 men to attack Moore forthwith. These riflemen took up their line of march at sunset and by daylight had marched twenty miles and had surrounded the fort. Lines were deployed and ready to assault; Col. Shelby sent William Cocke to demand the surrender of the fort. Moore refused and declared he would defend the place to the last extremity. The American lines were drawn closely around the fort and anxiously awaited the order for assault, when a second demand was made, intimating that if they were compelled to assault it might be difficult to restrain the mountaineers from acts of violence. Moore acceded to the terms of surrender on condition that the garrison should be paroled not to serve again during the war. The forces surrendered, consisting of ninety-three Loyalists and a British sergeant-major, who was the drill-master. Besides the men, there was a large supply of arms and other supplies. Col. Ferguson, who commanded the British, determined to



crush the forces of McDowell. The only hope of the latter was to annoy and cut off straggling forces of the enemy, now amounting to about 6,000 men. Ferguson's plan was to surprise McDowell. Cols. Shelby and Clarke, with 600 men, were attacked at Cedar Springs in August by a large British force. They maintained the fight for half an hour, when Ferguson's whole force arrived and compelled the Americans to withdraw, taking with them twenty prisoners, including two British officers. The American loss was ten or twelve killed and wounded, including Col. Clarke, who received a sabre cut in the neck.

The next stroke of the Americans was at a band of 400 or 500 Tories encamped on the south side of the Enoree River at Musgrove's mill, about forty miles distant from the Americans. Ferguson's main force lay between the Americans and their prize. Col. McDowell, the American commander, detached Cols. Shelby, Clarke and Williams, of South Carolina, to surprise and capture these Tories. They started on the 18th of August and after a hard night's ride reached the object of their search. In the march they had been compelled to make a detour of several miles to avoid Ferguson's men. About a half mile from the enemy's camp they met a patrol and a skirmish ensued and the enemy gave way. It was now learned that the enemy had received a re-enforcement of 600 regulars. The Americans were in a dilemma. To fight these seemed desperate; to retreat was impossible, being worn as they were. The sound of drums and bugles indicated the advance of the British. Capt. Inman was sent forward to fight the advancing line and retreat at discretion. He met the British gallantly and retreated slowly to within range of the main forces. These maintained their ground for more than an hour; just as the Americans were about to give way Col. Ennes, the British commander, was wounded; nearly all of his subalterns had already been killed or wounded. The British gave way. Capt. Inman was killed while gallantly leading his men; only six or seven others were lost. The British regulars fought bravely, but over 200 were captured.

The next point the Americans aimed at was Ninety-Six, thirty miles away. At the moment of starting a message was received from Col. McDowell, stating that Gen. Gates had been overwhelmed at Camden and advising the Americans to save themselves as best they could. The 200 prisoners, the spoils of the victory, were divided among the men, giving one to each of the three Americans. Thus encumbered they started for their mountain fastnesses, and by a ride of all that day, the following night and the next day, arrived at a place of safety, not, however, without having been pursued by a strong force under Maj. Dupont, sent by Ferguson. Their forces were for a time scattered. The

near approach of the British and threatening of Ferguson to cross the mountains to attack the Tennesseans in their homes, called them together again. News reached Col. Shelby of the danger in August, and he immediately rode fifty or sixty miles to consult with Sevier. In two days they determined to raise all the forces they could, and if possible surprise Ferguson in his camp. They appointed September 25 as the day of meeting, and Sycamore Shoals on the Watauga as the place. The whole fighting population of the district was considerably less than 5,000, and at least half of these were deemed necessary to guard the forts and the frontier. Only the strong and vigorous were allowed to go. The whole population met at the camp on the Watauga. Here they were met by Col. Campbell, of Virginia, with 400 men. Col. Sevier took 240 from Washington County, Col. Shelby the same number from Sullivan County; also a great many Whig refugees were assembled under Col. McDowell. Steadman, who served under Cornwallis, says: "The enemy was composed of the wild and fierce inhabitants of Kentucky and other settlements beyond the Alleghanies, who had assembled from different places and with different objects. They were under such leaders as Cleveland, Shelby, Sevier, Branden and Lacey; the men were well mounted on horseback and armed with rifles, and each carried his own provisions in a wallet, and were not encumbered by wagons." Each man, each officer set out with his trusty Deckhard on his shoulder. A shot-pouch, a tomahawk, a knife, a knapsack and a blanket completed his outfit. The earth was his bed, the heavens his covering, the mountain stream gave him drink and the forests yielded him food. These men started in rapid movement along mountain paths toward Gilbert Town where Ferguson was encamped. The desertion of two men caused them to change their course a little. When nearing the foot of the mountains they fell in with others bent on doing the British mischief. Some of these men were well armed, some not; some were on foot and some mounted. This motley crew chose a leader of their own and determined to attack the British.

Ferguson became alarmed at this "inundation of barbarians and dogs of mankind," and called loudly for the loyalists to rally to his standard. On October 4 the Americans reached Gilbert Town to find that Ferguson had decamped and was earnestly soliciting Cornwallis for reinforcements. It was soon agreed among the American commanders to select the best men, horses and arms and follow Ferguson with all speed. Nine hundred and ten men out of nearly 3,000 were chosen to lead the pursuit, the others to follow as rapidly as possible. Several bands of Tories offered tempting baits for these brave mountaineers, but these they

did not care to disturb, well knowing if the British regulars were disposed of the Tories would be an easy prey. For thirty-six hours these men rode with but one hour's rest, and the day of battle was hot and so wet that the men were compelled to wrap their guns with their blankets or hunting-shirts to keep them dry. The men were now within three miles of the British camp. It was learned the British intended to join Cornwallis next day, and the Americans determined not to allow the chance for victory to slip, so without food or rest they prepared for the onset. The touch-holes of their guns were cleaned and fresh priming was put in, bullets were examined and a plan of the battle was hastily formed. Ferguson had taken post on an eminence, which in loyalty to his sovereign he called King's Mountain. The Americans dismounted and began the attack. Their plan was to surround the mountain. Cols. McDowell, Shelby, Sevier and Campbell passed to the right, and Ham-bright, Chronicle, Cleveland and Williams to the left, so as to join the wings in the rear of the mountain. All things being ready, they raised the Indian war-whoop and advanced upon the enemy. The battle was of the most desperate character. As the British regulars charged bayonets, the Americans, by an understanding, slowly yielded on that side, but advanced on the other, and then the British were called to resist the great pressure elsewhere, when the Americans again advanced their lines. The Americans fought as only American mountaineers could fight, the British regulars with the desperation of despair. Prodigies of valor were performed by Sevier, Shelby and, in fact, all the officers and men. No less valorous was Ferguson of the British. Courting danger and disdaining death, he seemed everywhere present. Twice was the white flag raised and twice pulled down or cut down by his own hands. He had sworn that all the rebels out of — could not drive him from his position, and no — band of banditti could intimidate him or the British regulars. The fight continued hot and desperate. At last Ferguson fell, and the animating spirit of the British was gone. Dupoister, second in command, seeing resistance useless, raised the white flag.

In the hour's engagement the enemy lost 225 killed and 180 wounded, and 700 prisoners and all their stores. Not one of the British escaped. The prisoners were more numerous than the whole force to guard them. The loss to the Americans was 1 colonel, 1 major, 1 captain, 2 lieutenants, 4 ensigns and 19 privates killed; and 1 major, 3 captains, 3 lieutenants and 53 privates wounded. In Col. Shelby's regiment from Sullivan County his brother Moses was wounded in a bold attempt to storm the enemy. The captains of his regiment were Elliott, Maxwell and Webb. The Washington County troops were

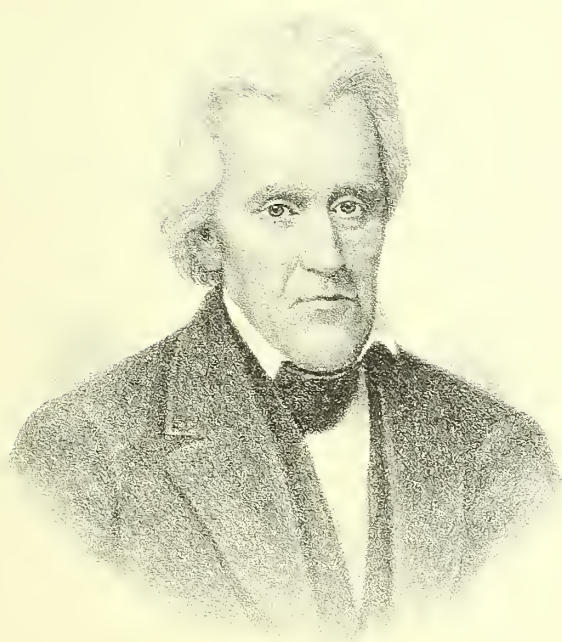


commanded by Col. Sevier, whose captains were his brothers Valentine and Robert Sevier, Joel Callahan, George Doherty and George Russell; lieutenant, Isaac Lane. Capt. Robert Sevier was mortally wounded in the engagement. There were four privates of the Sevier family present, Abraham and Joseph Sevier; also James and Joseph Sevier, sons of Col. Sevier. Swords were voted to Cols. Sevier and Shelby by the State of North Carolina in honor of the signal victory. Steadman quotes Gen. Bernard, an officer under Napoleon, as saying: "The Americans, by their victory in that engagement, erected a monument to perpetuate the memory of the brave men, who had fallen there; and the shape of the hill itself would be an eternal monument of the military genius and skill of Col. Ferguson in selecting a position so well adapted for defense; and that no other plan of assault but that pursued by the mountain men, could have succeeded against him." The effect of this victory could not be over-estimated. The Sabbath following the battle was employed in the solemn burial of the dead and rapid retreat to the remaining forces of the army. The wagons of the enemy were burned, the badly wounded were left on the ground and the able bodied were compelled to carry the arms they had surrendered. The prisoners were turned over to Gen. Greene at Hillsboro and Col. Sevier and most of the militia returned to defend their homes against the Indians. Soon after followed the victory of Gen. Morgan over Tarleton at Cowpens, scarcely less decisive than the one at King's Mountain.

The Legislature of North Carolina, Gov. Caswell of the same State and Gen. Greene, all besought Cols. Shelby and Sevier to come to the relief of the State, that was now (1781) invaded by the British under Cornwallis, and the country laid waste by the tories. Neither of the leaders, Shelby or Sevier, could go, as it took them and the militia to defend the settlements of Watauga and Nollichucky against the Cherokees. A few only were engaged at Guilford Court House on March 15, 1781. It is thought if these men could have gone in force the same fate would have befallen Cornwallis at that place that awaited him at Yorktown. On the advance of Gen. Greene into South Carolina the forces of Shelby and Sevier were again called upon, and they assembled at Fort Granby in the last of August, 1781. They were well on their way when it was learned that Cornwallis and the main British forces had left North Carolina and taken post at Yorktown, Va. The various successes led the Americans—Shelby and Sevier—to believe their services would no longer be needed, in consequence of which they again returned home. The battle of Eutaw Spring was fought in the absence of the gallant Tennessee mountaineers, and they were not permitted to gain new laurels. The

straits to which Cornwallis had been reduced by the allied armies led Gen. Greene to believe that he contemplated a retreat through the Carolinas. Gen. Greene, on September 16, again called upon Col. Sevier for assistance. Shelby was also called upon and responded with his regiment. Sevier raised 200 men from Washington County. On October 19 Cornwallis surrendered his whole force, and thus danger from that quarter was no longer apprehended.

At the request of Gen. Greene the forces of Shelby and Sevier joined the forces under Gen. Marion. Notwithstanding these men had been enrolled for only sixty days they proceeded into South Carolina. It was learned that a force of several hundred Hessians stationed at Monk's Corner was in a state of mutiny. The main force of the British was at Ferguson's Swamp, eight or ten miles away on the main road leading to Charleston. It was determined to surprise the British force. Cols. Shelby and Sevier asked to be a part of the detachment of 500 or 600 men to be sent against it. Col. Mayhem commanded the forces, consisting of 180 of his own dragoons, a few militia and the men under Shelby and Sevier. The march began in the morning and a long march brought them two miles below the post they intended to attack, on the evening of the second day. In gaining this post they had avoided the main British force and were now between the Hessians and Charleston. The men rested on their arms till daylight the next morning, when they appeared before the British post and Col. Mayhem sent a messenger demanding the immediate surrender of the place. Answer was returned in a few minutes that the post would be defended to the last extremity. Shelby then asked permission to go himself and demand the surrender. He told the British commander that if they were compelled to storm the post, every soul within would be killed, as the mountaineers would soon be upon them with their tomahawks. The British officer inquired of Shelby if he had any artillery, to which he replied that he had guns that would blow them to atoms in a minute. The British officer then gracefully yielded and threw open the gates, and the Americans marched up and took possession. At this moment another strong post was discovered 500 or 600 yards distant. It was a brick house surrounded by a strong abatis and defended by 100 soldiers and from 40 to 50 dragoons. These made a demonstration as if to attack the Americans, who deployed and boldly advanced toward the British and demanded a surrender. This post also surrendered without resistance. Although well fortified, 150 men capitulated. Ninety of the prisoners were mounted behind their captors and were taken to Marion's camp sixty miles distant; the remainder were paroled and the post and supplies de-



ANDREW JACKSON





stroyed. The Americans reached camp next morning at 3 o'clock. Before day it was reported that Stewart with the whole British force was in a few miles of camp. Shelby and Sevier's men were to interfere and retreat at discretion. A report spread that Marion had received a large re-enforcement of riflemen. The British became alarmed and fled in disorder almost to Charleston. About the 28th of November Shelby left the army to take a seat in the Legislature of North Carolina, of which he was a member. Col. Sevier remained with the mountain men. Little more was done until peace ended the strife. The troops of Shelby and Sevier "came home enriched with no spoils, stained with no dishonor, enriched only by an imperishable fame, an undying renown and an unquestionable claim to the admiration and gratitude of their countrymen and of posterity."

Hard upon the war with the British and Tories came the war with the Cherokees. The second struggle for independence, that of 1812, was the occasion of the Creek war. As soon as there was a prospect for hostilities, Great Britain sent her emissaries among the Indians to induce them to "dig up the hatchet." Tecumseh, the great Shawanee chieftain, with about thirty of his warriors visited the Southern Indians in his efforts to unite all the various tribes in one grand union against the whites. He established among the Southern Indians the custom of celebrating the scalp and war dance before battle. The speech of Tecumseh, his power of organization, and the message of the prophet, Tecumseh's brother, stirred the Creeks to a frenzy, and caused them to plunge into a religious war, neither asking nor giving quarter. Numerous outrages had been committed, and the massacre of Fort Mimms, on August 30, 1813, spread alarm throughout Tennessee. A meeting was called in Nashville of which Rev. Mr. Craighead was made chairman and Gen. Coffee was a member. This meeting urged the Legislature to call out the militia to take vengeance upon the Creeks. That body responded at once, and on September 13, 1813, a call was made for 3,500 volunteers in addition to 1,500, who had already hastily entered the field and appropriated \$300,000 to defray the expenses of the war. Gov. Blount commissioned Gen. Cocke to command the troops from East Tennessee, and Gen. Jackson those from West Tennessee (now called Middle Tennessee). Although suffering from the wounds received in the encounter with the Bentons, Gen. Jackson issued one of his characteristic addresses to the people on September 25, ordering the men to rendezvous at Fayetteville on October 4. On September 26 Gen. Coffee was sent to Huntsville in advance of the main body for the purpose of protecting the citizens of the valley of the Tennessee against the threatened attack by the Indians. Gen. Jackson

himself did not arrive at Fayetteville till the 7th, owing to his disability. He, however, sent his aid, Maj. Reid, in advance to read his orders and to put the men under discipline. On the 11th a dispatch was received by Jackson that 1,000 Creek warriors were approaching to attack Huntsville. News was received at 1 o'clock, and at 3 the army was in motion. By a forced march the army reached Huntsville, a distance of thirty-two miles, in about five hours. On their arrival the rumor was found to be untrue, but the army continued its march, but more leisurely to Ditto's Landing, on the Tennessee. Jackson's forces consisted of two brigades: one of volunteers under Gen. William Hall, and the other of militia under Gen. Isaac Roberts. Jackson marched up the river to Thompson's Creek, cutting out roads as he went. He was greatly disappointed at not receiving supplies that were to be sent from East Tennessee. The low stage of the water above prevented, but this was not indicated below and led to some bitterness.

Jackson built and entrenched a camp, and called it Fort Deposit. While awaiting supplies he drilled his men, and wrote letters to Gov. Blount, Judge Hugh L. White, and other prominent men urging the necessity of rapid movements. The army was reduced to the greatest straits, and it was with great difficulty that discipline was maintained. Col. Coffee was sent to scour the country for supplies, and returned in a short time with a quantity of corn. Gen. Jackson broke camp at Fort Deposit October 25, and advanced into the country and built Fort Strother. He learned that the friendly Indians at Two Islands of the Coosa were in danger, and went to their rescue. He learned there was a large body of Indians at Tallushatches, thirteen miles distant, on the south side of the Coosa; thither he sent Col. Coffee with 1,000 mounted men to attack them. They were piloted by friendly Indians. The Indians were surprised and defeated with great slaughter. The attack began on the morning of the 3d. Col. Allen, who commanded the right wing, managed to get to the rear of the Indians. They fought with the desperation of despair, and not a warrior was captured. They left 186 warriors upon the field, and doubtless more were killed. A number of women and children were killed and 84 were captured. The Indians fired their guns and then used bows and arrows. Jackson's loss was 5 killed and 41 wounded; among whom were Capts. Smith, Bradley and Winston. An Indian infant was found upon its dead mother's breast. The other women refused to nourish it. Gen. Jackson had the child cared for and took it into his own family. Young Lincolyer was given a practical education, and found a warm friend in the General and his family. He was taken away by consumption at the age of seventeen.



Gen. Jackson began again with great energy and next struck the Indians at Talladega, about thirty miles from his camp, at Fort Strother. Here he left his sick and wounded with a small guard, having made the place as secure as possible. He expected a junction of a part of the force of Gen. Cocke, who was operating in concert with him with the East Tennessee troops. Gen. White, with a brigade of these troops, had arrived at Turkey Town, twenty-five miles from Jackson's camp. These were ordered by Gen. Jackson to join him in the advance upon Talladega. When near Fort Strother White received an order from Gen. Cocke to join him. Jackson advanced upon Talladega on December 8, and when within six miles of the place he learned that White had been ordered to join Gen. Cocke. His sick and wounded men being in danger, he determined to fight alone the next morning. Talladega was a fortified place, and was filled with friendly Indians who were being besieged by the hostile Creeks. It was for their relief that the battle was fought. The Indians were on the point of starvation. One disguised as a hog crept through the hostile lines, and brought Jackson word as to their condition. Scouts brought him information as to the number and position of the enemy. The march was resumed at 4 o'clock on the morning of the 9th; when within a mile of the enemy the line of battle was formed. Hall's brigade was on the right and Roberts' on the left, and Coffee's cavalry covered the wings, with a portion in the rear for reserve. When Capt. Deaderick's men arrived within eighty yards of the enemy they rose and with a yell opened fire and began an advance. Some of the militia under Gen. Roberts began to give way, frightened by the terrible yells of the Indians. The reserve under Col. Dyer boldly advanced and restored the line, when the militia again returned to the fight. A general advance along the whole line was now made. The Indians were slaughtered unmercifully; a gap in the lines alone allowed any to escape. They lost 280 killed; Gen. Coffee says 299. The loss of the whites was 15 killed and 85 wounded. The Indians numbered 1,000; Jackson's forces numbered about 2,000, not more than half of whom were engaged. Great was the joy of the besieged Indians when they were relieved.

Jackson now returned to Fort Strother, but to find no supplies. A week's starvation brought the army to a state of mutiny. The troops threatened to march home in a body, but Jackson persuaded them to delay two days longer, in which case, if there were no supplies, he would allow them to go. The time came but no supplies. The men started home but Jackson went with them. On the way provisions were met with, but it required the utmost firmness to force them to return. There was a difference of opinion as to when the term of enlistment expired.

The 10th of December was set as the time for their departure for home. Col. William Martin was commander of one of the mutinous regiments. Gen. Jackson had the men brought out in front of the army, with men on either flank and the artillery in front, ready to fire in case the men moved. After a sharp dispute between Gen. Jackson and Col. Martin the matter was dropped for the time being. Gen. Cocke joined Gen. Jackson's forces at Fort Strother with 2,000 East Tennessee troops on December 13, 1813. The time of the men having expired, all except about 800 were discharged. In the meantime Gen. Coffee, Col. Carroll and Rev. Gideon Blackburn had been very active in raising recruits for the army to support Gen. Jackson at Fort Strother. The new troops were under Cols. Higgins and Perkins and amounted to about 900 men; there were two spy companies under Cpts. Russell and Gordon and one artillery company under Lieut. Robert Armstrong. Besides these there was a body of the old riflemen under Gen. Coffee. A large force of friendly Indians accompanied the expedition. The force started on the 13th of January. The object was not only to defeat the Indians, but particularly to keep up the spirits of the men. On the 20th they encamped at Enotochopeco, twelve miles from Emuckfau Creek, near a bend in the Tallapoosa. On the 21st Jackson found himself in the vicinity of a large force of Indians. The army encamped in a hollow square, ready to receive a night attack which was made upon them. The expected attack fell upon Jackson's left before day, but the line was maintained till sunrise, when re-enforcements were sent to their relief. A charge along the whole line drove the Indians two miles. The friendly Indians joined vigorously in the pursuit. An effort was made by Gen. Coffee to burn their fortifications, but did not succeed. An attack was made upon Jackson's right, which was sustained by Gen. Coffee and some friendly Indians. This was only a preliminary to a heavy assault upon the left which Jackson had anticipated and for which he was prepared. After a vigorous fight the Americans were able to sustain their lines, when a charge was made and the Indians were driven a mile, with a loss of forty-three killed. The loss of the whites was four killed, including Maj. Alexander Donelson. Gen. Coffee was wounded in the last charge.

Fearing for the sick and wounded, Gen. Jackson began his movement for his return to Fort Strother. On the 23d he arrived again at Enotochopeco Creek, where it was evident that the Indians were meditating a night attack. He crossed the stream a short distance below the intended ford to avoid an ambuscade that had been laid for him. While the artillery was crossing the Enotochopeco the Indians suddenly fell upon the rear guard, they having detected Jackson's movement. Nearly the whole line

was thrown into confusion; a part, however, remained firm, and Capt. Russell's spy company was sent to assist till the artillery could be placed in position, when it opened upon the Indians with grape, which held them in check. Col. Higgins soon led his regiment across the stream. A charge along the whole line drove the enemy two miles. The Indians left twenty-six dead upon the field. Among the American killed were Capts. Hamilton and Quarles. Jackson now returned to Fort Strother, where the men whose time had expired were discharged with flattering encomiums by the General.

A dispute arose between Gen. Jackson and Gen. Cocke as to the latter's action in the campaign. Crimination and recrimination followed. Gen. Cocke was arrested and brought to Nashville for trial, but was triumphantly acquitted. In March Gen. Jackson was made major-general. He was now re-enforced by 2,000 men from East Tennessee, under Gen. George Doherty. Seventeen hundred men joined him from West Tennessee (Middle Tennessee), under Gen. Thomas Johnson; another regiment of East Tennessees, under Col. John Brown; Gen. Coffee's cavalry, under Col. Dyer, and the Thirty-ninth Infantry, under Col. John Williams. The whole force amounted to nearly 4,000 men, about 1,000 of which were friendly Indians, under Maj. McIntosh, a half-breed. The supplies for the expedition were collected at Fort Deposit and hauled to Fort Strother. Most rigid discipline was enforced by Jackson. The execution of John Woods, a lad of eighteen, who had belonged to the army but a few weeks, was considered harsh. His offense was a refusal to obey an order from a superior, and his execution took place March 14, the day the army started. On the 26th Jackson reached Cedar Creek, where Fort William was built.

The Indians had concentrated their forces at a bend in the Tallapoosa, from its shape called Tohopeka—horseshoe. Here they had collected about 900 of their warriors and about 300 women and children. They had been well supplied with weapons by the British. They had been taught that this was holy ground, and to tread upon it would be death to the whites. The space enclosed about 100 acres, and the distance across the neck was only about 350 yards, which had been pretty well fortified by logs and brush. The place was fifty-five miles south of Jackson's camp. Toward this Jackson put his column in motion, and after eleven days arrived on March 27. The cavalry under Coffee and some of the friendly Indians surrounded the place from the river, and the main force attacked from the peninsula, first by artillery, but were compelled to charge. Col. L. P. Montgomery was first to leap upon the works, but was killed; Ensign Houston (Gen. Sam Houston) was shot



with an arrow in the thigh, but after several attempts tore it out and continued to fight. The friendly Indians slipped across and cut loose the boats of the enemy, which were tied next to the town. No Indian asked for quarter; 557 dead were left upon the peninsula, and about 200 more were killed by Gen. Coffee's men and Indians at the river and in the woods. Only a few escaped under cover of the night. An Indian chief lay under the water and breathed through a long reed till darkness gave him a favorable opportunity to escape; 4 warriors only surrendered besides 400 women and children. Jackson lost 25 killed, among whom were Maj. Montgomery, who was of the Thirty-ninth Regulars, and Lieutenant Somerville; the wounded amounted to 105. The loss to the friendly Indians was 29 killed and 54 wounded. Jackson sunk his killed in the river to prevent their being scalped by the Indians, and returned to Fort Williams with his sick and wounded. On April 7 he started for the junction of the Coosa and Tallapoosa, their "Holy of Holies." Most of the Indians were destroyed and their power was forever broken. Among the chiefs who came in to surrender was William Weatherford, an intelligent half-breed, who had planned the attack upon Fort Mimms. He rode boldly into the American lines and up to Gen. Jackson's quarters. He was mounted upon a magnificent charger, and carried with him a large buck, which he presented to the General. With the bearing of a king he said: "I am in your power; do with me as you please. I am a soldier. I have done the white people all the harm I could; I have fought them, and I have fought them bravely. If I had an army I would fight you longer and contend to the last, but I have none; my people are all gone. I can now do no more than weep over the misfortunes of my nation." All I ask is for the women and children." He was treated with great civility, and lived to show his good faith afterward. Fort Jackson, in addition to Fort William, was built to protect the conquered country, the former near the junction of Coosa and Tallapoosa. A treaty was signed at Fort Jackson on August 9, 1814, by which the Indians ceded all the lands east of the Tombigbee and west of the Coosa to the United States. The time of enlistment of the men having expired, they were discharged. Many of the Creeks never joined in the treaty, but their power being broken they joined the Seminoles, with whom a war was waged later. The burning of the Hillabee towns by Gen. Cocke made that tribe the most furious and implacable of foes. They were thought to be kindly disposed but for this unfortunate act. The Creeks or Muscogeas were the most powerful of the Southern Indians, and before the war their limits extended from the Chattahoochee on the east to the Tombigbee on the west; from the Tennessee on the

north to Florida on the south. Among them was a tradition that they "came out of the ground."

Gen. Jackson determined to reach the cause of the war, and strike at both the Spanish and the British. The threatened condition of the gulf coast led him to urge forward new lines from the States. On September 10 a British fleet of ninety guns and a large land force of Spanish and Indians made an attack upon Fort Boyer at Mobile Harbor, but met with a bloody repulse. The levies under Gen. Coffee left New Orleans October 1 to join Jackson at Mobile. Jackson determined to reduce Pensacola, and determined to take possession of the forts there. The march for the place began on November 2, and the vicinity of Pensacola was reached on the 6th. A flag of truce was sent to the Spanish governor demanding the surrender of the forts to the Americans, to prevent the British from using them to the detriment of the Americans. The flag was fired on and compelled to return. Another effort was made the next day by sending a Spanish corporal to the governor with a letter demanding possession of the forts. A very polite note was sent to Jackson, stating that the firing upon the flag had been done by the British. Jackson then demanded the surrender of the forts within an hour. This was refused. Jackson then sent a force of 500 men to draw the fire of the British fleet, while with the remaining force he attacked the Spanish in the streets and forts. The white flag was soon displayed, and the British fleet was driven off. Fort Barrancos, fourteen miles west, was abandoned and blown up by the British the next day to prevent its capture. Jackson then hastened to Mobile to ward off a threatened attack on that place, but the place being relieved, he hurried on to the defense of New Orleans on November 22, where he arrived on December 1. Gen. Coffee moved with the cavalry toward the Mississippi, striking that at Baton Rouge. After suffering almost untold hardships from rains, cypress swamps and other difficulties from traveling through an uninhabited country of pine forests, he reached there with his men and horses in a sad plight. Jackson himself turned to New Orleans on horseback, which he reached after an eight days' ride. Sickness and the hardships of the campaign had almost reduced him to the grave. He was agreeably entertained at breakfast at Mr. J. K. Smith's on the morning of his arrival.

The accomplished Mrs. Smith was greatly disappointed in his appearance. She saw nothing in him but "an ugly old Kentucky flat-boat man," instead of "your grand general with his plumes, epaulettes and long handsome mustache." To oppose the British forces, consisting of over 10,000 soldiers and 50 heavy war vessels of 1,000 guns and 10,000

sailors, their officers being in gay uniform and fresh from the war with Napoleon, Jackson had only about 2,000 men dispirited and poorly clad. Re-enforcements were hurried forward from every quarter. The new levies from Tennessee, under Gen. Carroll, were sent down the river; not more than one in ten were armed when they started. The high stage of the river enabled them to make rapid progress. Fortunately they fell in with a vessel that was loaded with arms, and they were thus supplied.

So many went for the defense of New Orleans that the venerable Peter Cartwright said his congregation was small, but he deemed it best that they should go with Gen. Jackson. The danger being so imminent Jackson sent a message to Gen. Coffee, who was now at Baton Rouge, 129 miles away, to hurry with all speed with his riflemen, who now numbered 1,250. Leaving about 300, who could not travel so rapidly, he started with the remainder and marched fifty miles the first day. Here he left 400 or 500, but with the remainder he marched seventy miles, which brought him within four miles of headquarters. He himself rode on and reported orders. The others came on in due time. These were dressed in hunting shirts, copperas-dyed pantaloons made by wife, mother or sister. They wore slouched woolen hats or coon-skin caps, adorned with a fox tail. They carried a knife and a tomahawk in a leather belt. Their hair and whiskers were long and unkempt.

Such was their appearance that the British declared them to be a *posse comitatus*. Gen. Carroll's men arrived in season. A night attack was planned by Jackson upon the British, on December 23, at Gen. Villere's plantation. The cavalry was led by Gen. Coffee and the infantry by Jackson. It was only a partial success; Coffee and Col. Lauderdale both distinguished themselves. The American loss was 24 killed, 115 wounded and 74 prisoners. The British loss was estimated at 400. The British attacked the Americans on December 28, and after a seven hours' bombardment drew off. In this engagement the Americans lost 7 men killed and 10 wounded; among the killed was Col. Henderson, of Tennessee. On January 1 there was an engagement between the British and the Tennessee troops, in which there were 11 killed and 23 of the latter wounded. On the 8th of January, 1815, was fought the battle that will ever be memorable for the great disparity of losses if nothing more. The British attacked in heavy columns and with great determination, and were met by the Americans with great spirit. Gens. Packenham and Gibbs, of the British, were both mortally wounded. A regiment of Scotch Highlanders charged in front of Gen. Carroll's Tennesseans and left 544 of their number on the field. Maj. Wilkinson mounted the American works and fell mortally wounded. His admiring



enemies bore him tenderly within the works and said: "Bear up, dear fellow, you are too brave to die." In twenty-five minutes' time the British lost 700 killed, 1,400 wounded and 500 prisoners. The American loss was but 8 killed and 7 wounded. The British, disconcerted, returned to their ships and in a few days sailed away. Peace came and Jackson and his men received the plaudits of the nation for a victory that was useless, yet none the less brilliant. On March 15 he dismissed his men with: "Go, then, my brave companions, to your homes; to those tender connections and those blissful scenes which render life so dear, full of honor and crowned with laurels which shall never fade." Whether the British had promised their soldiers, as is generally believed, the license of "beauty and booty" or not, the Americans believed it and so fought.

Trouble began with the Seminole Indians in 1817. The name Seminole is said to mean vagrant, reckless, and they are supposed to have sprung from the Creeks. The Seminoles, Creeks and escaped negroes began ravages in Georgia. The difficulty grew out of the treaty of Ghent made with Great Britain at the close of the war of 1812. By that treaty it was stipulated that the previous boundaries should be confirmed, and the Creeks being allies of Great Britain claimed their old boundaries, thus not recognizing the treaty made between them and Gen. Jackson. This the American Government refused to grant. Gen. Gaines sent Col. Twiggs from Fort Scott to Fowltown, thirteen miles distant, to demand of the chief some Indians who had been committing depredations. The party was fired upon, when the fire was returned and a woman and two warriors were killed and the town burned by order of Gen. Gaines. Supplies were brought up the Appalachicola, by permission from the Spanish, to forts in the Creek country. On November 30, as Lieut. Scott was proceeding up the river with a boat of supplies, forty soldiers, seven women and four children, he was fired on by a party of concealed Indians, and every one (except four who leaped out and swam ashore) was killed and one woman was carried off. Gen. Jackson was sent to conduct the war. He was instructed by the Secretary of War, Mr. Calhoun, to call on the adjacent States for such additional troops as he might need. He was not long in construing this order to mean Tennessee. He issued a call and set January 11, 1818, as the day of rendezvous at Fayetteville. Two regiments of 1,000 men assembled under Cols. Dyer and Williamson, and a body of 100 men under Capt. Dunlap; the whole were under Inspector-Gen. Hayne. Jackson himself left Nashville on January 22 and joined his forces. He started with twenty days' rations. He experienced the same difficulties as in 1813-14. Supplies were ordered to be shipped from New Orleans to Fort Scott,

where he arrived on March 9, a distance of 450 miles, with 1,100 hungry men. This was accomplished in forty-six days. Before arriving at Fort Scott he was joined by McIntosh, now a brigadier-general in the United States Army, with 2,000 Indians.

Perceiving the Spanish were giving aid to the Indians, Jackson determined to capture Fort St. Mark's, a Spanish fort. He left Negro Fort, now rebuilt and called Fort Gadsden, on March 26, and arrived before St. Mark's April 7. On his way he destroyed several Indian towns. On the 8th Jackson entered St. Mark's, and hauled down the Spanish flag and ran up the American flag, notwithstanding the protest of the Spanish governor. Here was captured Alexander Arbuthnot, a Scotch trader, who was aiding the Indians. On his way to St. Mark's Capt. McKeever, of the navy, who was going to the assistance of Jackson, lured the prophet Francis and his head chief on board his vessel by displaying an English flag, and held them as prisoners. They were executed by Gen. Jackson for being at the massacre at Fort Mimms. On the 11th he started for the Suwanee Old Towns, 107 miles distant. After a tiresome march through snows and bogs he arrived to find the towns deserted, the Indian chief, Bowlegs, and his warriors having fled. Here was captured R. C. Ambrister, an Englishman of rank, who had been suspended from the army for sending a challenge for a duel. He was assisting the Indians against the Americans. Jackson returned to St. Mark's on the 26th. A court martial was called to try Arbuthnot and Ambrister, which ended in two days in their conviction. The sentence was approved by Jackson and they were executed, the former having been hung and the latter shot. Jackson returned to Fort Gadsden, where he remained a few days, when he started for Pensacola. The Indians were committing depredations in that vicinity, and were receiving protection from the Spaniards. Jackson seized the place in spite of the governor's protest, and placed thereon an American garrison. The execution of Ambrister and Arbuthnot and the invasion of Spanish territory came near involving the United States in war with England and Spain. Fort Gadsden, formerly called Negro Fort, was built about seventeen miles above the coast, on the Appalachicola, by Col. Nichols during the war of 1812, and was a store-house for the Indians. After the war the Indians neglected it and Garçon took possession of it with several hundred runaway negroes. They refused to allow supplies to go up the river, when it was determined to destroy the fort. It was surrounded by settlers and friendly Indians, but they were unable to make any impression on it. A gunboat was ordered up the river to assist in its destruction. This was in 1816. The fort was defended by ten or twelve cannon, and had stored

in the magazine 700 barrels of powder. A red-hot shell fired from the gun-boat lodged in the magazine and a terrific explosion followed. Of 334 inmates only three were unhurt. The explosion is said to have been felt for 100 miles. A treaty was signed at Moultrie Creek September 18, 1823, by which the Seminoles were to be kept in the interior, and were paid the sum of \$5,000 a year for twenty years.

The pressure of the whites upon the Indians to take possession of their rich lands led to frequent difficulties, and not unfrequently were persons killed by the Indians. To avoid these growing evils it was determined by the Government if possible to send the Seminoles to a reservation west of the Mississippi River. The Indian chiefs were sent to the Indian Nation to examine the situation and report. Arriving there in the winter they were not favorably impressed, but were at last induced to sign a treaty. Through the influence of Col. Gadsden this treaty was made at Payne's Landing, May 9, 1832, by which it was stipulated that the Indians, for a small consideration, should within three years move to a new reservation west of the Mississippi River. Osceola and other chiefs bitterly opposed this. Gen. Thompson, who had wronged Osceola, was killed December 23, 1835, and on the same day Maj. Dade and 110 men were waylaid and massacred in Wahoo Swamp. Volunteers were called for in June, 1836, the apportionment of Tennessee being 2,000, more than double the number offered. The East Tennessee troops rendezvoused at Athens and elected R. G. Dunlap brigadier-general over their brigade. Troops of Middle Tennessee assembled at Fayetteville, the old place of rendezvous. Here met the companies of Capt. Rodgers, of Warren County; Capts. Jetton and Yoakum, of Rutherford; Turney and Roberts, of Franklin; Terry, of Bledsoe; Cronck, of Williamson; Henry, of Robertson; Grundy, Washington and Battles, of Davidson; and Trousdale and Guilt, of Sumner. These were organized into a brigade, of which Robert Armstrong was elected general; Washington Barron, adjutant; A. M. Upsham, inspector-general, and W. G. Dickson, surgeon. Of the First Regiment A. M. Bradford was colonel; T. H. Cahal, lieutenant-colonel; — Goff, first major; Powhatan Gordon, second major. Of the Second Regiment W. Trousdale was colonel; J. C. Guilt, lieutenant-colonel; — Meddow, first major; W. L. Washington, second major, and J. P. Grundy, adjutant.

The force moved in due time following near Jackson's old route to the Creek Nation. The army was little encumbered by baggage, as what little was carried was placed upon Sumter mules and the necessity of wheeled vehicles was in a great measure avoided. The army moved from Huntsville by way of Elyton, Montgomery, to Watumpka or Camp



Jordan, where it remained till the 1st of September. It then crossed the Coosa at Fort Meigs, the Appalachicola at the confluence of the Flint and Chattahoochee, thence by way of Quincy, Marietta to Tallahassee. From Tallahassee the army moved through the wilderness to the Suwannee Old Towns, thence to Fort Drane. On October 13, a battle was fought on the Withlacoochee with no great loss on either side. The forces were compelled to withdraw for supplies but returned, and another engagement was fought on November 13 near the same place. Battles were fought at the Wahoo Swamp on the 18th and 21st of November. Osceola, Sam Jones, and Alligator are said to have been present on the side of the Indians. After a stubbornly contested engagement, the Indians retreated into their fastnesses. This was the last fighting done by the Tennesseans. The army marched to Tampa Bay, thence by ship to New Orleans, and from there went home. The war was finally brought to a close by Gen. Taylor. With 600 regulars he left Fort Gardner, and on December 19 gained the most decisive victory of the war at Lake Okechobee. He was made a brigadier-general for his success at Okechobee, and on the resignation of Gen. Jessup the whole conduct of the war was entrusted to him. His policy was to carry out the stipulations of the existing treaty. As fast as a sufficient number of Indians were captured or gave themselves up, they were sent to the reservation. By 1839 he had sent 1,900 to their future homes. The war could not be said to be closed till 1842, with a loss of 1,466 lives by disease, such as yellow fever and other diseases peculiar to that climate, and by Indian bullets and scalping knives, and an expense of \$10,000,000.

Texas was early an inviting field for adventurous speculators and persons seeking homes. Many, after the Creek and Seminole wars, went there from a spirit of adventure alone. The disturbed condition of that unfortunate republic, with its periodical revolutions, compelled those living in Texas to protect themselves against the aggressions of the Mexican Government. Among the most distinguished men living in Texas was Gen. Sam Houston, of Tennessee, who had won renown in the Creek war, also had been distinguished as a political leader. The settlers of Texas were largely American, and the tyranny of Mexico led them to revolution. Many old friends and companions in arms of Houston flocked to his standard, he at this time being at the head of the revolution. After varying turns of fortune, a decisive victory was gained at San Jacinto on April 21, 1836, which resulted in the complete discomfiture of the Mexican forces and the capture of Santa Anna, the Mexican president. While a prisoner, he signed with the Texans their treaty of independence. The State maintained its independence for ten years, though after

the release of Santa Anna, he disavowed the act done by himself, on the ground of its being done while a prisoner of war. Texas made application for admission into the American Union. This was bitterly opposed by the Mexican authorities on the ground that she had never acknowledged the independence of Texas, and that Texas was still a part of the Mexican Government. This became a question in American politics. The elections of 1844 were favorable to the issue of the Texan admission. Mexico claimed sovereignty not only over all Texas, but particularly that part lying between the Nueces and the Rio Grande Rivers. A threatened invasion of this territory on the part of the Mexican authorities, led the American Government to send Gen. Taylor with a large force of United States troops into the disputed territory to take post at Corpus Christi, at the mouth of the Nueces. After some negotiations for peace, on March 8, 1846, Gen. Taylor advanced to Point Isabel, thence in a few days to the point on the Rio Grande opposite Matamoras. On his arrival there Ampudia notified Gen. Taylor that his forces must quit the territory between the Rio Grande and the Nueces within twenty-four hours, or risk the consequences. Taylor's communications with Point Isabel, his base of supplies, were threatened by Mexican cavalry. He went with his main force to open communications, and in his absence, his works at Matamoras were attacked and Maj. Brown was killed. In honor of him the American work was called Fort Brown.

On May 8 Gen. Taylor in his return to Matamoras encountered Gen. Ampudia at Palo Alto. An engagement ensued and the Mexicans were forced to retreat with a loss of 600 men. The American loss was 6 killed and 44 wounded. Another battle was fought on the 9th at Resaca de la Palma, in which the Mexicans were again defeated, with a loss of 1,000 men, the American loss being only 110. On the announcement of these engagements, it was stated that American blood had been shed on American soil.

The President declared that war existed between the United States and Mexico, and called for 50,000 volunteers. Congress immediately appropriated \$10,000,000 for carrying on the war. The apportionment of volunteers for Tennessee was 2,000, and Gov. A. V. Brown called for that number. It was finally agreed to accept 2,400 men, 1,600 infantry, and 800 cavalry. Such was the spirit for volunteering, that it became a question, not as to who must go, but who may go. It was remarked that a draft would be necessary to compel men to stay at home. The State was divided into four military districts: one in East, two in Middle and one in West Tennessee. The volunteers of the middle division consisted of the Harrison Guards—Captain R. C. Foster; Lieutenants A. Heiman and

George Maney; the Nashville Blues—Captain B. F. Cheatham; Lieutenants William R. Bradfute, and E. Eastman; Shelbyville Guards—Captain Edward Frierson; Lieutenants J. L. Scudder and G. W. Buchanan; the Polk Guards—Captain R. A. Bennett; Lieutenants J. M. Shaver and Patrick Duffey; Tenth Legion—Captain S. R. Anderson; Lieutenants William M. Blackmore and P. L. Solmon; Union Boys—Captain W. B. Walton; Lieutenants Samuel High and C. W. Dixon; Dixon Spring Guards—Captain L. P. McMurray; Lieutenants W. Bradley and James Lanahan; Lincoln Guards—Captain Pryor Buchanan; Lieutenants A. L. Fulton and J. V. Myers. Lawrenceville Blues—Captain A. S. Alexander; Lieutenants James Burkitt and G. H. Nixon. Hickory Guards—Captain J. Whitfield; Lieutenants J. B. Easley and L. P. Totty. Richland Guards—Captain H. Mauldin; Lieutenants W. P. Davis and W. H. McCrory. Mountain Blues—Captain A. Northcutt; Lieutenants E. M. Mercer and J. J. Hill. These men rendezvoused at the race course near Nashville. The regiment was organized June 3, 1846; William B. Campbell, of Smith County, colonel; Samuel R. Anderson, of Sumner County, lieutenant-colonel; Richard Alexander, of Smith County, first major, and Robert Farquharson, of Lincoln County, second major; Adolphus Heiman was made adjutant; Dr. McPhail, surgeon, and W. D. Morris, assistant surgeon. These companies were constituted the First Regiment. Before leaving for the seat of war a beautiful flag was presented to the regiment by Miss Irene C. Taylor, in behalf of the young ladies of the Nashville Female Academy. On the 4th and 5th of June they left Nashville for New Orleans. The Second Regiment was ordered to assemble at Camp Carroll, near Memphis, on June 15, 1846. These men were sworn into the service by Gen. Hay. The forces consisted of the Tennessee Guards, Capt. H. P. Maney; Avengers, Capt. T. P. Jones; Memphis Rifle Guards, Capt. E. F. Ruth; Gaines Guards, Capt. M. B. Cook. In addition to these were the following cavalry companies: Fayette Cavalry, Capt. J. Lenow, and the Eagle Guards, Capt. W. N. Porter. From East Tennessee came the Knoxville Dragoons, under Capt. Caswell; Claiborne Blues, Capt. Evans, and the Rhea County Cavalry, Capt. Waterhouse. The infantry companies from this section were Capt. Standifer, from Hamilton; Capt. Lowery, from McMinn; Capt. McCown, from Sevier, and Capt. R. L. Kilpatrick, from Anderson, instead of Capt. Barnett, of Sullivan. The officers of the Second Tennessee were J. E. Thomas, colonel; R. D. Allison, lieutenant-colonel, and Richard Waterhouse, major.

The cavalry of this division moved by way of Little Rock, Fulton, San Antonio and joined Gen. Taylor at Matamoras. Each regiment and company was given an ovation on their departure. The First Regiment,



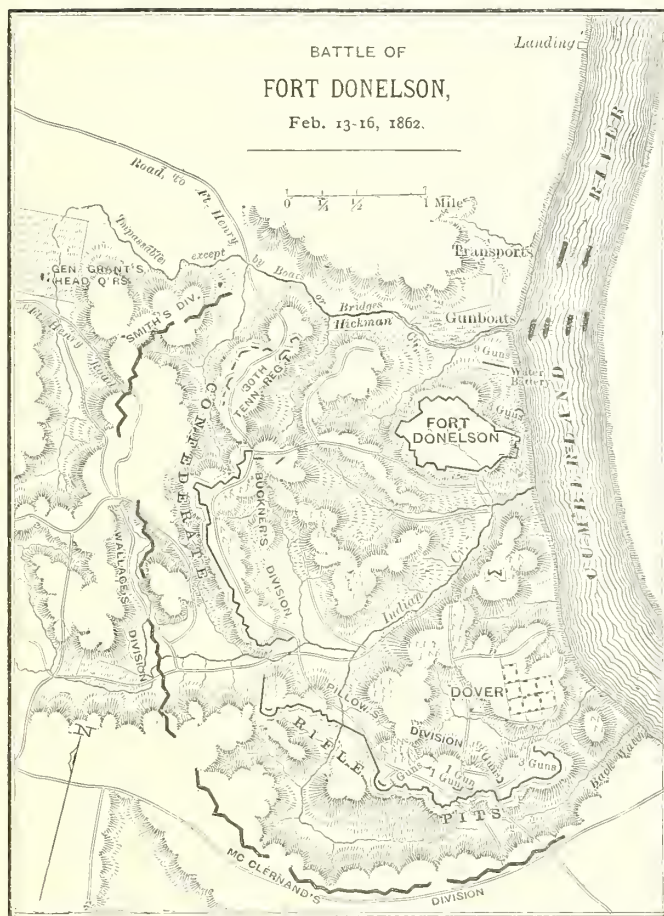
consisting of twelve companies, embarked at New Orleans on June 17, and arrived on the Brazos early in July, and were stationed at Camargo till August 29, when the rest of the men were called to assist in the capture of Monterey. The hot weather and climatic causes made a worse havoc in the ranks than Mexican bullets. The regiments were soon sadly depleted before seeing any active service. The First Regiment was attached to Gen. Quitman's brigade and the Second to Gen. Gideon J. Pillow's brigade. The line of march for Monterey was taken up on September 7, and on the 19th the army was within five miles of the city. The 20th was employed in preparing for battle. The American forces consisted of about 6,000 troops, the city was defended by about 10,000 Mexicans. The battle was fought on the 21st. The city was strongly fortified and stood at the foot of the Sierra Nevada. The points of defense were Taneria and the Black Fort on the east and Bishop's Palace on the west. The Tennessee troops were to the left on the east. Their eagerness to measure strength with their enemies was intense. The guns from Fort Taneria greeted them with both musketry and artillery fire and the bloody work began. They were within eighty yards of the works before they fired on the Mexicans, although they were suffering terribly. As the fire of the Americans opened the fire of the Mexicans slackened. A rush was made for the parapets and the flag of the First was the first planted on the battlements of Monterey. Of 350 men in the charge 105 were lost. Among these 26 were killed, 77 were wounded and 2 were missing. From private to colonel every man acted gallantly. The city of Monterey capitulated on the 25th. After the surrender of the city an armistice of four months followed, during which time efforts for peace were made. The truce having ended a large portion of Taylor's men were withdrawn and given to Gen. Scott, who was meditating a descent upon Vera Cruz. The movement began December 14.

In the meantime the two Tennessee regiments had been placed in the brigade of Gen. Pillow. On December 14 the troops started for Tampico, the place of embarkation. They were finally landed at Vera Cruz on March 9, 1847, and approaches were begun. The siege guns opened on the city on the 22d, and continued till the 27th. On the 26th a detachment of six companies of the First and Second Tennessee Regiments was assigned the duty of assaulting a barricade defending Madeline Bridge. The battalion was led by Col. Haskell. Capt. Foster was the first to leap upon the work. The place was carried with little loss. The city of Vera Cruz and the strong castle of San Juan de Ulloa surrendered on the 29th. Gen. Scott's army began its march toward the City of Mexico April 9, and on the 18th, his progress was disputed at Cerro Gordo. In

the assault that followed the Tennesseans were on the left of the line. The assault was vigorous but the Second, entangled in the chapparal in front of the works, suffered terribly. The loss in the two regiments was 79, 8 being from the First and the remainder being from the Second. Gen. Pillow was among the wounded. The army then moved forward to Jalapa. The time of service of the Tennesseans having expired the remaining portion of the regiments were sent to New Orleans, where they were mustered out. Gen. Scott moved his army on to Pueblo, where he was compelled to await re-enforcements to fill his much depleted ranks. A call was made on Tennessee for two additional regiments, the Third and the Fourth, and a battalion of six companies called the Fourteenth. Capt. B. F. Cheatham was largely instrumental in raising the Third. It was composed of the companies of Capt. Chambliss, from Giles and Marshall Counties, Capt. Solomon, of Sumner; Capt. Whitfield, of Hickman; Capts. Trigg and Bradfute, of Davidson; Capt. Collyer, of Franklin; Capt. Douley, of Rutherford and Coffee; Capt.——, of De Kalb; Capt. Anderson, of Coffee, and Capt. Leftnick of Maury and Lewis Counties. Capt. Cheatham was elected colonel of the Third and it was mustered into the service on October 8, 1847. Their place of rendezvous was about two and a half miles from Nashville on the Nolensville pike. The Fourth Regiment was composed of the companies of Capt. H. Dill, of McMinn; Capt. C. J. Flagg, of Blount; Capt. R. Oliver, of Anderson; Capt. J. B. Collins, of Bradley; Capt. E. Thomason, of Grainger; Capt. J. C. Vaughn, of Monroe; Capt. J. J. Reese, of Jefferson; Capt. G. W. Bounds, of Hawkins; Capt. G. W. Kenzie, of Meigs; Capt. McClellan, of Sullivan; Capt. Waterhouse, of Rhea, and Capts. Parson and Council, of Knox. Capt. Waterhouse, of Rhea, was elected colonel. The remaining forces of the State rendezvoused at Camp Carroll or Carrollton under Col. Trousdale.

These forces were all taken to New Orleans by boat, thence by vessel to Vera Cruz. Here they were formed into a brigade, but did not arrive at the City of Mexico until the work of capture was done. However, Gen. Pillow paid a visit to Tennessee in the summer of 1847, and returned in July and joined Scott's army at Pueblo. He was in the advance upon the City of Mexico and engaged in the battles of Churubusco, Chapultepec, Molino del Ray and the siege of the city. He was one of the commissioners to negotiate the surrender. Some very distinguished men were developed by this war; among them may be mentioned Govs. Trousdale and Campbell, and Gens. B. F. Cheatham and Pillow. On settlement of the Mexican question the soldiers of Tennessee returned to their homes to enjoy the full measure of praise their valor upon the field had won.

BATTLE OF  
FORT DONELSON,  
Feb. 13-16, 1862.







## CHAPTER XV.

FEDERAL MILITARY HISTORY—CAUSE OF THE LOYALTY OF EAST TENNESSEE—ARRAIGNMENT OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY AND OF THE EXECUTIVE BY THE UNION CONVENTIONS—THE CONCENTRATION OF THE CONFEDERATE FORCES AT KNOXVILLE—ORGANIZATION OF THE UNIONISTS—THE HELPLESS SITUATION OF LOYAL CITIZENS—ACTIVE MILITARY OPERATIONS—SELECTED ILLUSTRATIVE CORRESPONDENCE—THE EXECUTION OF THE BRIDGE BURNERS—ARREST OF THE UNION LEADERS—AN OUTLINE OF THE PRINCIPAL MILITARY MOVEMENTS—BURNSIDES' OCCUPATION—SIEGE OF KNOXVILLE—THE CONCLUDING SKIRMISHES—SKETCHES OF THE REGIMENTS.

NO fact connected with the late civil war, abounding in striking events and gigantic achievements, is more remarkable than the number of troops furnished by Tennessee to the Federal Army. It is scarcely credible that a State with a voting population of only about 140,000, raising nearly 100,000 troops for the Confederate Army, should also have furnished 30,000 men to fight for the Union. It becomes still more remarkable to consider that a very large proportion of this 30,000 came from a division of the State, having a male population between the ages of twenty and fifty, of only 45,000; and that unlike the volunteer from the Northern States, the Union soldier from Tennessee was not tempted to enlist by a munificent State bounty, nor impelled by the force of public opinion, but on the contrary, to do so, he was forced to escape from an enemy's watchful guard at night and, leaving his home and all he held dear to the mercy of a hostile foe, make his way across the bleak and cheerless mountains, to the Union camps in Kentucky.

For an explanation of this remarkable adherence to the Union on the part of the people of East Tennessee, it is necessary to look to the origin of the war. As many as have been its alleged causes, all may be traced to the one prime cause, slavery; all others were the result of or incident to slavery, as has been shown by Dr. Draper, in his history of the war. The difference in climate, soil and physical features between the North and the South, through its effect upon the growth of slavery, was a remote agency in producing strife between the two sections. On the other hand, the dissimilarity in character, occupation and political sentiments of the people was largely the result of their different systems of labor. It is true, the difference in character of the original colonists was a more or less important factor, but its effect was not great.

East Tennessee was settled by the same class of people as that part of the State west of the Cumberland Mountains, and at one time the people

of the two sections were homogeneous; but owing to the peculiar topography of the former, however, slave labor was not very profitable, and comparatively few slaves were owned—the proportion of the free men being about as one to twenty. The same divergence of interest grew up between East Tennessee and the middle and western divisions of the State, as between the North and South as a whole. Consequently upon all questions of political and domestic economy, East Tennessee was usually identified with the Northern States. Since 1836, as a whole, it had been strongly Whig, and in some sections for many years, a strong abolition sentiment had existed: when therefore, it was proposed to sacrifice the Union to perpetuate slavery, the majority of the people of East Tennessee joined with the freemen of the North, to prevent its consummation. They foresaw that should a Confederacy of the slave States become established, the person who owned no slaves, as a factor in politics and in society, would be a cipher. It is undoubtedly true that the great body of the people did not see this result, but their leaders did, and perhaps in no State were the masses more submissive to leadership than in Tennessee.

In addition to this the State, as a whole, had always been intensely patriotic. The readiness with which she had come to the defense of the country, when threatened by an alien or a savage foe, had won for her the name of "The Volunteer State." It was the greatest of Tennesseans who said: "The Union! It must and shall be preserved." Even the majority of those who joined in the support of the Confederacy, did so, only when they felt it to be their highest duty, and it was with no feigned grief that they left the old "stars and stripes," to rally around a new and strange flag. As has been stated, the preponderance of Union sentiment in Tennessee was in the eastern division of the State, yet at the election in 1860 the majority for the "Union" electors was quite large throughout the State. Even after the secession of South Carolina and other more Southern States, the entire State remained firmly for the Union, as was shown by a vote of 24,749 for, to 91,803 against calling a convention. But after the attack upon Fort Sumter, and the call for troops by President Lincoln, which worked such a change in the sentiment of the people of this State, the stronghold of the Unionists was in East Tennessee. At the election held in June, to vote on the question of separation or no separation, while the total number of votes in the State against that measure was 47,274, 32,962 of them were cast in East Tennessee.\*

This result was due in a great measure to the position taken by the political leaders Andrew Johnson, T. A. R. Nelson, William G.

\*See elsewhere for the full returns of these elections.



Brownlow, Horace Maynard, Connolly F. Trigg, William B. Carter and others, who took a determined stand against secession and did all in their power to prevent Tennessee from going out of the Union. To determine the relative amount of influence exerted by each individual would be an impossibility. Mr. Johnson has by many been accorded the credit for the loyalty of East Tennessee, and it was in part due to his influence. He was very popular with the Democracy of the State, and especially of his congressional district, and his powerful pleas for the Union carried many of his party with him. But with the Whig element he could have had but little influence, since he had advocated the election of Breckinridge at the preceding presidential election, and had otherwise rendered himself obnoxious to them. In fact, as has been stated, the Whigs of East Tennessee were naturally attached to the Union, and diametrically opposed to the principles of the extreme Democracy, which had inaugurated the Rebellion. It, therefore, required only the eloquence and zeal of the old leaders Nelson, Maynard, Brownlow and others to fire them with an enthusiasm for the Union and the "old flag," which not even the hardships of four years of war served to abate. On the 30th of May preceding that election, about 500 delegates, representing nearly every county in East Tennessee, assembled at Knoxville in pursuance of the following call:

The undersigned, a portion of the people of East Tennessee, disapproving the hasty and inconsiderate action of our General Assembly, and sincerely desirous to do, in the midst of the trouble which surrounds us, what will be best for our country, and for all classes of our citizens, respectfully appoint a convention to be held in Knoxville on Thursday, the 30th of May inst.; and we urge every county in East Tennessee to send delegates to this convention, that the conservative element of our whole section may be represented, and that wise and judicious counsels may prevail—looking to peace and harmony among ourselves.

F. S. HEISKELL,  
JOHN J. CRAIG,  
DR. W. ROGERS,  
JOAN TUNNELL,  
C. H. BAKER,

JOHN WILLIAMS,  
S. R. ROGERS,  
O. P. TEMPLE,  
C. F. TRIGG,  
DAVID BURNETT,

W. H. ROGERS,  
JOHN BAXTER,  
W. G. BROWNLOW,  
[and others.]

The convention met at Temperance Hall, and was called to order by Connolly F. Trigg, upon whose motion John Baxter was chosen temporary president, and John M. Fleming, temporary secretary. Prayer was offered by Rev. Thomas W. Humes, after which Thomas A. R. Nelson was chosen president, and John M. Fleming, secretary. After addresses by the president and Gen. Thomas D. Arnold, and the appointment of a general committee representing the various counties, the convention adjourned to meet the next morning. On the next day the committee, through their chairman, Col. Trigg, submitted their report which, after considerable debate, was amended and finally adopted. The following

are some of the resolutions, which were preceded by a preamble of considerable length:

We, therefore, the delegates here assembled, representing and reflecting, as we verily believe, the opinions and wishes of a large majority of the people of East Tennessee, do resolve and declare:

First. That the evil which now afflicts our beloved country in our opinion is the legitimate result of the ruinous and heretical doctrine of secession; that the people of East Tennessee have ever been, and we believe still are opposed to it by a very large majority.

Second. That while the country is upon the very threshold of a most ruinous and desolating civil war, it may with truth be said, and we protest before God, that the people (so far as we can see) have done nothing to produce it.

\* \* \* \* \*

Sixth. That the Legislature of the State, without having first obtained the consent of the people, had no authority to enter into a "military league" with the "Confederate States" against the General Government, and by so doing to put the State of Tennessee in hostile array against the government of which it then was and still is a member. Such legislation in advance of the expressed will of the people to change their governmental relations was an act of usurpation, and should be visited with the severest condemnation of the people.

Seventh. That the forming of such "military league," and thus practically assuming the attitude of an enemy towards the General Government (this, too, in the absence of any hostile demonstration against the State) has afforded the pretext for raising, arming and equipping a large military force, the expense of which must be enormous, and will have to be paid by the people. And to do this, the taxes, already onerous enough, will necessarily have to be very greatly increased, and probably to an extent beyond the ability to pay.

Eighth. That the General Assembly by passing a law authorizing the volunteers to vote wherever they may be on the day of election, whether in or out of the State, and in offering to the "Confederate States" the capitol of Tennessee, together with other acts, have exercised powers and stretched their authority to an extent not within their constitutional limits, and not justified by the usages of the country.

Ninth. That government being instituted for the common benefit, the doctrine of non-resistance against arbitrary power and oppression is absurd, slavish and destructive of the good and happiness of mankind.

Tenth. That the position which the people of our sister State of Kentucky have assumed in this momentous crisis, commands our highest admiration. Their interests are our interests. Their policy is the true policy, as we believe, of Tennessee and all the border States. And in the spirit of freemen, with an anxious desire to avoid the waste of the blood and the treasure of our State, we appeal to the people of Tennessee, while it is yet in their power, to come up in the majesty of their strength and restore Tennessee to her true position.

Eleventh. We shall await with the utmost anxiety the decision of the people of Tennessee on the 8th day of next month\*, and sincerely trust that wiser counsels will pervade the great fountain of freedom (the people) than seem to have actuated their constituted agent.

Twelfth. For the promotion of the peace and harmony of the people of East Tennessee, it is deemed expedient that this convention should again assemble, therefore: *Resolved*, That when this convention adjourns, it adjourns to meet again at such time and place as the president or vice-president in his absence may determine and publish.

After the adoption of the above resolution an eloquent and effective address was delivered by Andrew Johnson. This convention was com-

---

\*Reference made to the election to be held June 8, 1861.

posed of representative men of East Tennessee, men of influence and ability. They foresaw the result of the coming election, but not wishing to anticipate it by any act, made provision for a future meeting. The number of delegates in attendance is evidence of the intense interest in the question before the people; 5,000 copies of the proceedings of the convention were printed and distributed over the State, but it was of little avail in stemming the tide of secession which swept over Middle and West Tennessee. The leaders in those divisions, with few exceptions, notably among whom was Emerson Etheridge, had been carried away by it. So strong was the influence that such men as Niell S. Brown, Judge R. L. Caruthers, Felix K. Zollicoffer and many others, who at the previous election had voted against a convention, were now among the strongest advocates of disunion. The election on the 8th of June resulted as shown elsewhere, and three days later Judge Nelson issued a call for the East Tennessee Convention to meet on the 17th of that month at Greeneville. Delegates from all of the counties except Rhea assembled at the appointed time, and continued in session four days. Their labors resulted in the preparation of the declaration of grievances, of which the following is an extract, and the adoption of the resolutions succeeding:

We, the people of East Tennessee, again assembled in a convention of our delegates, make the following declaration in addition to that heretofore promulgated by us at Knoxville on the 30th and 31st of May last. So far as we can learn, the election held in this State on the 8th day of the present month was free, with but few exceptions, in no other part of the State than East Tennessee. In the larger part of Middle and West Tennessee no speeches or discussion in favor of the Union were permitted. Union papers were not allowed to circulate. Measures were taken in some parts of West Tennessee in defiance of the constitution and laws which allow folded tickets, to have the ballots numbered in such a manner as to mark and expose the Union voter.

A disunion paper, *The Nashville Gazette*, in urging the people to vote an open ticket, declared that "a thief takes a pocket-book or effects an entrance into forbidden places by stealthy means; a Tory, in voting, usually adopts pretty much the same mode of procedure." Disunionists in many places had charge of the polls, and Union men when voting were denounced as Lincolnites and abolitionists. The unanimity of the votes in many large counties where but a few weeks ago the Union sentiment was so strong, proves beyond a doubt that Union men were overawed by the tyranny of the military law, and the still greater tyranny of a corrupt and subsidized press. Volunteers were allowed to vote in and out of the State in flagrant violation of the constitution. From the moment the election was over, and before any detailed statement of the vote in the different counties had been published, and before it was possible to ascertain the result, it was exultingly proclaimed that separation had been carried by from fifty to seventy-five thousand votes. This was to prepare the public mind to enable the secessionists to hold possession of the State, though they should be in the minority. The final result is to be announced by a disunion governor, whose existence depends upon the success of secession, and no provision is made by law for an examination of the votes by disinterested persons, or even for contesting the election. For these and other causes we do not regard the result of the election expressive of the will of the majority of the people of Tennessee.

No effort has been spared to deter the Union men of East Tennessee from the expression of their free thoughts. The penalties of treason have been threatened against them,



and murder and assassination have been openly encouraged by leading secession journals. As secession has thus been overbearing and intolerant while in the minority in East Tennessee, nothing better can be expected of the pretended majority than wild, unconstitutional and oppressive legislation, an utter contempt and disregard of law, a determination to force every Union man in the State to swear to the support of a constitution he abhors, to yield his money and property to aid a cause he detests, and to become the object of scorn and derision as well as the victim of intolerable and relentless oppression.

In view of these considerations, and of the fact that the people of East Tennessee have declared their fidelity to the Union by a majority of about 20,000 votes, therefore we do resolve and declare

First. That we do earnestly desire the restoration of peace to our whole country, and most especially that our own section of the State of Tennessee should not be involved in civil war.

Second. That the action of our State Legislature in passing the so-called "Declaration of Independence," and in forming the "Military League" with the Confederate States, and in adopting other acts looking to a separation of the State of Tennessee from the Government of the United States, is unconstitutional and illegal, and, therefore, not binding upon us as loyal citizens.

Third. That in order to avert a conflict with our brethren in other parts of the State, and desiring that every constitutional means shall be resorted to for the preservation of peace, we do, therefore, constitute and appoint O. P. Temple, of Knox; John Netherland, of Hawkins, and James P. McDowell, of Greene, commissioners, whose duty it shall be to prepare a memorial and cause the same to be presented to the General Assembly of Tennessee, now in session, asking its consent that the counties composing East Tennessee and such counties in Middle Tennessee as desire to co-operate with them, may form and erect a separate State.

Fourth. Desiring in good faith that the General Assembly will grant this our reasonable request, and still claiming the right to determine our own destiny, we do further resolve that an election be held in all the counties of East Tennessee, and such other counties in Middle Tennessee adjacent thereto as may desire to co-operate with us, for the choice of delegates to represent them in a general convention to be held in the town of Kingston, at such time as the president of this convention, or in case of his absence or inability, any one of the vice-presidents, or in like case with them the secretary of this convention may designate, and the officer so designating the day for the assembling of said convention shall also fix the time for holding the election herein provided for, and give reasonable notice thereof.

Fifth. In order to carry out the foregoing resolution the sheriffs of the different counties are hereby requested to open and hold said election or cause the same to be done, the coroner of such county is requested to do so, and should such coroner fail or refuse, then any constable of such county is hereby authorized to open and hold said election or cause the same to be done, and if in any county none of the above named officers will hold said election, then any justice of the peace or freeholder in such county is authorized to hold the same or cause it to be done. The officer or other person holding said election shall certify the result to the president of this convention or to such officer as may have directed the same to be held, at as early a day thereafter as practicable, and the officer to whom said returns may be made shall open and compare the polls, and issue certificates to the delegates elected.

Sixth. That in said convention, the several counties shall be represented as follows: The county of Knox shall elect three delegates; the counties of Washington, Greene and Jefferson two delegates each, and the remaining counties shall each elect one delegate.

Twenty thousand copies of the proceedings of this convention, together with the proceedings of the session at Knoxville, were ordered to be published in pamphlet form for general distribution. The excite-

ment in East Tennessee soon became intense. The proceedings of this convention, together with speeches denunciatory of the new government, fanned the already glowing fires of insurrection among the Unionists. Brownlow's *Knoxville Whig*, a paper which had a very large circulation in this part of the State, did much to arouse the people. Every number contained articles filled with the bitterest invective against the "bogus Confederacy." Landon C. Haynes, a Confederate leader, in writing to L. P. Walker, Confederate Secretary of War, concerning the condition of affairs in East Tennessee, on July 6, 1861, said: "Thomas A. R. Nelson, William G. Brownlow, Connolly F. Trigg and William B. Carter are the leaders. Moral power cannot longer be relied on to crush the rebellion. No man possesses that power. Bell had more than any other man, but he is as helpless as a child." Three days later Secretary Walker requested Gov. Harris to send immediately two regiments to East Tennessee, which was accordingly done, and on July 26, "Gen. Zollicoffer was ordered to assume command of that district, to preserve peace, protect the railroad and repel invasion." On August 26 he issued General Order No. 11, in which he states: "The following are the names of the Lincoln leaders in Johnson County: Lewis Venable, of Laurel Creek; Northington, hotel-keeper at Taylorsville; R. R. Butler, of Taylorsville, representative of the county; John G. Johnson and J. W. Merrick, captains of Lincoln companies. Joseph P. Edoms, of Elizabethton, Carter County, and A. Evans, of Washington County, are also among the ring-leaders of them." On July 10, 1861, Judge Nelson issued a proclamation for an election to be held on the 31st of August, to choose delegates as provided in the resolutions of the Greeneville Convention. Owing to succeeding events, however, this election did not take place. At the election held the first week in August, Horace Maynard, Thomas A. R. Nelson and G. W. Bridges were elected representatives to the United States Congress by the Unionists, who refused to vote for representatives to the Confederate Congress. A day or two later Judge Nelson started for Washington, by the way of Cumberland Gap, but was arrested in Lee County, Va., and taken to Richmond. He was soon after paroled and returned to his home. At about the same time Bridges was arrested in Morgan County, and was also released upon taking the oath of allegiance to the Confederacy.

During the summer and early fall Union men were quietly organizing and drilling. In most places this was done secretly, but in some localities the Union sentiment was so unanimous that there was no need of concealment. Singly and in squads they began crossing the mountains into Kentucky, where they were organized into companies and regi-

ments. Those who remained behind were constantly urging and expecting an advance upon East Tennessee by the Federal troops, and they held themselves in readiness for a general uprising when that should take place. John F. Fisk, in writing to R. Buckner, on September 22, 1861, says: "The mountaineers will whip Zollicoffer as soon as they get ammunition. By all means send them *lead, lead, lead!*" William B. Carter wrote to Gen. Thomas on October 27 and earnestly called for an advance upon East Tennessee. In speaking of Zollicoffer's forces he said: "Zollicoffer has 6,000 men all told; 1,000 of them are sick, 600 or 800 are not arrived; 1,600 of the 6,000 are at Cumberland Gap, the balance beyond the Gap." This force proved to be too small to suppress the constantly growing power of the Unionists and the leading Confederates in East Tennessee began to call for re-enforcements. Gen. A. S. Johnston, on November 4, 1861, sent a despatch to Secretary Benjamin, in which he said: "Herewith I transmit for your information a letter from Gov. Harris, inclosing one from Mr. C. Wallace, imparting information in regard to the political sentiments of the people of East Tennessee, which he represents as extremely hostile to the Confederate Government, and that there is among them a large and well-armed force ready to act at an opportune moment. I have already ordered Stanton's and Murray's regiments and some cavalry companies from their stations in Fentress, Overton and Jackson Counties to Jamestown to join some cavalry companies at that place, thence to report and await the orders of Gen. Zollicoffer, who has been notified." The letter referred to above was written at Knoxville, October 29, and is as follows:

*Dear Governor:* I don't like to meddle in things that are in keeping of men so much more vigilant and wise than I, but I am constrained by the circumstances about me to believe that Zollicoffer and the railroads of East Tennessee are in a dangerous condition at present. I am well aware that the views of the "original panel" in East Tennessee are not much heeded abroad, but I am well satisfied that there is to-day a larger Lincoln force, well armed in East Tennessee, than Zollicoffer has of Southern men under his command. \* \* There is no giving way in the hostile feeling in East Tennessee. This you may rely on, and time will convince you. Truly your friend,

C. WALLACE.

On November 1 Col. W. B. Wood, commanding the post at Knoxville, wrote to Secretary Benjamin: "There can be no doubt of the fact that large parties, numbering from twenty to a hundred, are every day passing through the narrow and unfrequented gaps of the mountains into Kentucky. I do not believe that the Unionists are in the least reconciled to the Government, but, on the contrary, are as hostile to it as the people of Ohio, and will be ready to take up arms as soon as they believe the Lincoln forces are near enough to sustain them." These opinions proved to be well founded, and on the night of the 8th of



November the excitement culminated in the burning of three or four railroad bridges on the road between Bristol and Chattanooga. This created great alarm, and more vigorous measures were adopted to subdue the Unionists, and crush out the insurrection against the Confederate Government. Many arrests were made, not only upon charges of complicity in the bridge burning, but for encouraging the Unionist movement.

Col. D. Leadbetter was immediately ordered to East Tennessee with an engineer corps to repair and protect the railroads. Letters and despatches from all points in East Tennessee were poured in upon the Confederate authorities, all telling of the imminent danger from a general uprising of the Unionists. Maj. T. J. Cannon, stationed at Loudon, wrote: "The Union feeling of this country is very bitter, and all they want, in my opinion, to induce a general uprising, is encouragement from the Federal authorities by the introduction or advance of Lincoln armies. They have a great many arms, and are actually manufacturing Union flags to receive the refugee Tennesseans when they return. They are getting bold enough to avow their purpose." Col. Wood wrote from Knoxville to Adj.-Gen. Cooper: "Five hundred Union men are now threatening Strawberry Plains, fifteen hundred are assembling in Hamilton County, and there is a general uprising in all the counties. The whole country is now in a state of rebellion. I learn from two gentlemen just arrived that another camp is being formed about ten miles from here, in Sevier County, and already three hundred are in camp. They are being re-enforced from Blount, Roane, Johnson, Greene, Carter and other counties." The writer of the letter of which the following is an extract, advised the removal of the Union sympathizers from East Tennessee:

JONESBORO, TENN., November 12, 1861.

HIS EXCELLENCY JEFFERSON DAVIS:

*Sir:* Civil war has broken out at length in East Tennessee. In the late election scarcely a so-called Union man voted. Neither Mr. Nelson nor any of the released men who had been sworn to be faithful to the Southern Confederacy voted upon the occasion, and there appeared a simultaneous assault upon our line of railroads from Virginia to the Georgia line. In this county the secession strength is about equal to the Union force, but our force is much weakened by five volunteer companies now in the service. In Carter and Johnson Counties, northeast of this, the Union strength is not only as formidable but it is as violent as that of any of the northwestern counties of Virginia. Had they the power not a secessionist would live in this region. The hostile element in those counties, and also in Greene, is so strong that I give it as my firm conviction that it will neither abate nor be conciliated. They look for the re-establishment of the Federal authority with as much confidence as the Jews look for the coming of Messiah, and I feel quite sure when I assert it that no event or circumstance can change or modify their hope. \* \* We will crush out the rebellion here in a week or ten days, but to prevent its recurrence should be a matter of anxious consideration. \* \* There are now camped in and about Elizabeth-

ton, in Carter County, some twelve or fifteen hundred men armed with a motley assortment of guns, in open defiance of the Confederate States of America, and who are awaiting a movement of the Federal troops from Kentucky to march forward and take possession of the railroad. These men are gathered up from three or five counties in this region, and comprise the hostile Union element of this section, and never will be appeased, conciliated or quieted in a Southern Confederacy. I make this assertion positively, and you may take it for what it is worth. We can and will in a few days disperse them, but when will they break out again? I am satisfied the only hope for our quiet and repose, and our co-operation without hindrance in the present revolution, is the expatriation, voluntarily or by force, of this hostile element.

I am respectfully your obedient servant,

A. G. GRAHAM.

Gov. Harris telegraphed President Davis that he should send immediately about 10,000 men into East Tennessee. November 20, 1861, Col. Wood wrote to Secretary Benjamin: "The rebellion in East Tennessee has been put down in some of the counties, and will be effectually suppressed in less than two weeks in all the counties. The camps in Sevier and Hamilton Counties have been broken and a large number of them made prisoners. Some are confined in jail at this place and others sent to Nashville. In a former communication I inquired what I shall do with them. It is a mere farce to arrest them and turn them over to the courts. Instead of having the effect to intimidate, it really emboldens them in their traitorous conduct. We have now in custody some of their leaders, Judge Patterson, the son-in-law of Andrew Johnson, Col. Pickens, the senator from Sevier, and others of influence and some distinction in their counties. These men have encouraged this rebellion, but have so managed as not to be found in arms. Nevertheless, their actions and words have been unfriendly to the Government of the Confederate States. The influence of their wealth, position and connection has been exerted in favor of the Lincoln government, and they are the persons most to blame for the trouble in East Tennessee. They really deserve the gallows, and, if consistent with the laws, ought speedily to receive their deserts; but there is such a gentle spirit of reconciliation in the South, and especially here, that I have no idea that one of them will receive such a sentence at the hands of any jury impaneled to try them.

\* \* I have to request at least that the prisoners I have taken be held, if not as traitors, as prisoners of war. To release them is ruinous; to convict them before a court at this time next to an impossibility; but if they are kept in prison for six months it will have a good effect. The bridge-burners and spies ought to be tried at once, and I respectfully request that instruction be forwarded at as early a day as practicable, as it needs prompt action to dispose of the cases." The following reply was received:

WAR DEPARTMENT, RICHMOND, November 25, 1861.

COLONEL W. B. WOOD:

*Sir:* Your report of the 20th instant is received, and I now proceed to give you the desired instruction in relation to the prisoners of war taken by you among the traitors of East Tennessee.

First. All such as can be identified in having been engaged in bridge-burning are to be tried summarily by drum-head court-martial, and, if found guilty, executed on the spot by hanging in the vicinity of the burned bridges.

Second. All such as have not been so engaged are to be treated as prisoners of war, and sent with an armed guard to Tuscaloosa, Alabama, there to be kept imprisoned at the depot selected by the Government for prisoners of war.

Whenever you can discover that arms are concentrated by these traitors, you will send out detachments to search for and seize the arms. In no case is one of the men known to have been up in arms against the Government to be released on any pledge or oath of allegiance. The time for such measures is past. They are all to be held as prisoners of war. Such as come in voluntarily, take the oath of allegiance and surrender their arms, are alone to be treated with leniency. Very vigilant execution of these orders is earnestly urged by the Government.

Your obedient servant,

J. P. BENJAMIN,  
*Secretary of War.*

P. S. Judge Patterson (Andy Johnson's son-in-law), Colonel Pickens and other ring-leaders of the same class, must be sent at once to Tuscaloosa to jail as prisoners of war.

At this time Johuson, Maynard, Etheridge, Meigs, and most other Union leaders throughout Tennessee had left the State. William G. Brownlow, whose newspaper had been suppressed about the 1st of November, had sought personal safety by retiring to the mountains. On December 4, he received notice from the commander of the department, that should he return and deliver himself up, he would be given a passport to go into Kentucky accompanied by a military escort. He accordingly returned, but was immediately arrested and placed in jail upon the charge of treason. He was kept in confinement at the jail until January 1, 1862, when he became sick, and afterward at his home under guard until March 3, when he was sent with a military escort to Nashville. On November 30, 1862, three men: Henry Frey, Jacob M. Henshaw and Hugh A. Self, were tried at Greeneville by drum-head court-martial, for bridge-burning, and sentenced to be hung. The sentence with respect to the first two, was executed on the same day; that of Self was commuted to imprisonment. On the same day Col. Leadbetter issued the following conciliatory proclamation:

GREENEVILLE, EAST TENN., November 30, 1861.

TO THE CITIZENS OF EAST TENNESSEE:

So long as the question of Union or Disunion was debatable, so long you did well to debate it and vote on it. You had a clear right to vote for Union, but when secession was established by the voice of the people, you did ill to disturb the country by angry words and insurrectionary tumult. In doing this you commit the highest crime known to the laws. Out of the Southern Confederacy no people possesses such elements of prosperity and happiness as those of Tennessee. The Southern market which you have hitherto enjoyed, only in competition with a host of eager Northern rivals, will now be



shared with a few States of the Confederacy equally fortunate politically and geographically. Every product of your agriculture and workshops will now find a prompt sale at high prices, and so long as cotton grows on Confederate soil, so long will the money which it brings flow from the South through all your channels of trade. At this moment you might be at war with the United States, or any foreign nation, and yet not suffer one-tenth part of the evil which pursues you in this domestic strife. No man's life or property is safe; no woman or child can sleep in quiet. You are deluded by selfish demagogues, who care for their own personal safety. You are citizens of Tennessee, and your State one of the Confederate States. So long as you are up in arms against these States can you look for any thing but the invasion of your homes and the wasting of your substance? This condition of things must be ended. The Government demands peace and sends troops to enforce order. I proclaim that any man who comes in promptly, and gives up his arms will be pardoned on taking the oath of allegiance. All men taken in arms against the Government will be transported to the military prison at Tuscaloosa, and be confined there during the war. Bridge burners and destroyers of railroad tracks are excepted from among the pardonable. They will be tried by drum-head court-martial and hung on the spot.

D. LEADBETTER,  
*Colonel Commanding.*

Col. Leadbetter evidently did not understand the steadfast loyalty of the Unionists of East Tennessee, or he would have saved himself the trouble of issuing this proclamation. Very few took advantage of the proffered clemency. Meanwhile Brig.-Gen. W. H. Carroll had been placed in command at Knoxville, and on December 11, he issued a proclamation declaring martial law, and suspending the writ of *habeas corpus*. On the same day C. A. Haun, who had been confined in the jail at that place, was hanged on the charge of bridge burning. About a week later Jacob Harmon and his son, Henry Harmon, were hanged on a similar charge. These vigorous measures had the effect of driving many of the Unionists to Kentucky, and of silencing the most of the remainder for the time being.

In December, 1861, Gen. George B. Crittenden was assigned to the command of the Confederate forces in a portion of East Tennessee, and southeastern Kentucky, which included the troops then at Mill Springs under Gen. Zollicoffer, who had been stationed at that point to prevent Gen. Schoepf from penetrating Tennessee. The latter was stationed at Somerset on Fishing Creek, a small tributary of the Cumberland. January 18, 1862, Gen. Thomas, with the remainder of his forces came up, and in the battle which ensued on the following day Gen. Zollicoffer was killed, and his force driven back in great confusion. In this action the First and Second Union Regiments of Tennessee Infantry, under Gen. S. P. Carter, took a conspicuous part, fighting with great spirit against, among others, several Tennessee regiments on the Confederate side.

By the death of Gen. Zollicoffer the forces in East Tennessee lost a valuable officer, and on February 25, 1862, Gen. E. Kirby Smith was assigned to the command of the troops in that district. He arrived

at Knoxville on March 9, and on the following day reported to the War Department that the troops then in East Tennessee numbered less than 8,000 effective men, 4,000 of whom were at Cumberland Gap, 2,000 at Knoxville, and the remainder distributed over neighboring counties. In a report a few days later he refers to the capture, without the fire of a gun, of a large number of two companies of the First East Tennessee Confederate Cavalry, near Jacksboro, and states that, in his opinion, "East Tennessee troops can not be trusted, and should be removed to some other field." On March 28, 1862, an expedition was sent into Morgan and Scott Counties to chastise the Unionists, who had been gathering there in considerable force. A skirmish took place near Montgomery, lasting about thirty minutes, in which the Unionists were dispersed with a loss of fifteen killed and a large number of wounded. During the latter part of the same month, Gen. George W. Morgan was assigned to the command of an expedition against Cumberland Gap. His force consisted of four brigades, under the command of Gens. Carter, Spears, and Baird, and Col. DeCourey. Carter's brigade consisted of the First, Second and Fourth (Union) Tennessee,\* Third and Nineteenth Kentucky, and the Forty-ninth Indiana, all infantry. Spear's brigade consisted of the Third, Fifth, and Sixth (Union) Tennessee Infantry. The two other brigades contained no Tennessee regiments. After considerable preliminary skirmishing a general advance was made about the 10th of June, and on the 18th the post was evacuated by the Confederates without firing a gun. Gen. Morgan remained at Cumberland Gap until the 17th of the September following, when he was forced to retreat or be cut off from his line of supplies, as Gen. Stevenson with a force estimated at 20,000 had taken position in front of the Gap, and Gen. Smith with a still larger force was at Barboursville, Ky. After an arduous march of several days he reached the Ohio River at Wheelersburg. In his report of the evacuation and retreat Gen. Morgan complimented the gallantry of the Sixth Tennessee. He says: "We resumed the march from Manchester, Ky., on the 21st. The enemy's cavalry appeared on our rear and endeavored to cut off one of our trains, but was gallantly repulsed by the Sixth Tennessee under Col. Cooper, who had before rendered good service in attacking the enemy's force near Big Creek Gap."

Several of the regiments had been poorly equipped, especially the Second and Fourth Cavalry, both of which regiments had been organized at Cumberland Gap. Consequently, several weeks were spent in equipping and refitting, and in recovering from the demoralization incident.

---

\*Col. Robert Johnson afterward re-enlisted, and the Fourth was organized as First Tennessee Cavalry.

to so long and difficult a retreat. As soon as this had been accomplished, they were ordered to report to Rosecrans at Nashville. The battle of Stone's River was fought almost immediately after their arrival at that place, and was participated in by Gen. Spear's brigade, including the Third, Fifth, and Sixth Tennessee Infantry, and a portion of the Third Cavalry, then not fully organized; also by Carter's brigade, including the First and Second Tennessee Infantry. The Second and Fifth Tennessee Cavalry were also actively engaged, with the exception of the First and Fourth Regiments of cavalry, which did not arrive until after the battle; these included all the Tennessee regiments which had then been mustered into service.

But to trace the movements and record the achievements of Tennessee troops in all the numerous campaigns, raids and battles in which they participated would require a volume; therefore only a few of the most important, and especially those of East Tennessee, will be noted. The troops of no other State were more active, untiring and intrepid. Their service was chiefly performed within their own State and the territory immediately surrounding it. As this was disputed ground from first to last "eternal vigilance" was required of the troops within its borders, and it seems to have fallen to the lot of the Tennessee regiments to do more than their share of the arduous work of scouting, raiding and skirmishing. Indeed the mounted infantry regiments, all of which were organized during the last eighteen months of the war, saw no other kind of service.

The campaign for the deliverance of East Tennessee was entered upon in August, 1863, simultaneously with the advance of Rosecrans upon Chattanooga. Gen. Burnside's army, numbering about 18,000 men, consisted of the Twenty-third and Ninth Army Corps, together with new troops raised in Kentucky. The Tennessee troops were attached to the Twenty-third Corps, and included the First, Second and Eighth Regiments of Infantry, the Ninth Cavalry, and the Eighth and Tenth East Tennessee Cavalry, afterward consolidated and known as the Eighth Tennessee Cavalry.

By the use of pack mules Gen. Burnside succeeded in pushing his army across the mountains west of Cumberland Gap, and after a tedious and difficult march approached Knoxville. The first regiment, the Sixty-fifth Indiana, entered the town on the 3d of September. The small Confederate force which had previously occupied the post had been quietly evacuating it for several days, moving supplies and railroad equipments to the South. About three days later Gen. Burnside with the main part of the army arrived, and soon after detachments were stationed at various places along the railroad.



Col. DeCourcy with his brigade had already been ordered to Cumberland Gap, which place he reached on September 8, and on the following day received its surrender.

About the 1st of October a considerable force of Confederates from Virginia entered upper East Tennessee and threatened the left wing of Burnside's army. Nothing was done by the latter, however, until October 10, when an advance in force was made. The enemy were encountered at the village of Blue Springs, and after a spirited skirmish were driven back. During the succeeding night they retreated, and the next day were pursued by Gen. Shackelford and driven back into Virginia.

On the 22d of October Gen. Burnside began concentrating his force at Loudon to meet Longstreet, who with a force of 20,000 men was approaching from Chattanooga. Six days later the Union troops were withdrawn from the south side of the river at Loudon, and the next morning marched to Lenoirs, where they went into camp. There they remained until the morning of November 14, when the entire force was ordered under arms, as Longstreet was at last coming, and had thrown his advance across the Tennessee six miles west of Loudon. No fighting, however, was done, except by the cavalry, until two days later. Meanwhile Burnside had fallen back to Campbell's Station, closely followed by Longstreet's infantry, who were hastening up to cut his line of retreat. Here he resolved to make a stand in order to protect his wagon trains, which were straggling in toward Knoxville. A battle ensued which lasted nearly all day, and which has been rated as the decisive battle of the campaign. Longstreet's veterans made two furious assaults, but were repulsed each time by Burnside's infantry and artillery. About 5 o'clock the former withdrew, and as soon as it was dark the Union Army resumed its retreat to Knoxville unmolested. Capt. O. M. Poe, chief engineer of the Army of the Ohio, had already selected the lines of defense, and the next day the work of fortification was carried forward with the utmost rapidity not only by the troops, but by citizens impressed into service, so that by the morning of the 18th the city was strongly fortified.

Had Longstreet pushed on his forces to Knoxville during the night of November 17, and been ready to make an attack the next morning, while the retreating troops were demoralized, and the town without the protection of a single rifle pit, he could have captured the entire force without so much as a skirmish. During the next day his advance was considerably impeded by the Federal cavalry under Gen. William P. Sanders, who was unfortunately killed on the evening of the same day just outside of the earthworks, afterward named Fort Sanders in honor of his memory. Longstreet immediately invested the town, but made

no attack until Sunday, November 29, eleven days after the beginning of the siege. He had evidently intended to starve Burnside into a surrender, but learning that Sherman was coming from Chattanooga, decided to make an assault. His delay had given the besieged time to strengthen their defenses, and proved fatal to his hopes of success.

At daylight on the 29th the famous "Barksdale Brigade," composed of Mississippi troops, made an attack upon Fort Sanders, then under command of Gen. Ferrero, but was repulsed with a loss of about 1,100 killed and 300 taken prisoners, while the Union loss was only 8 killed, 5 wounded and 30 prisoners. Fort Sanders, on the southwest part of town, was the strongest point in the fortifications. A deep ditch had been dug all around it, and in front of this trees had been cut down, and telegraph wires stretched from stump to stump about eight inches from the ground, in order to trip the men and break the lines.\* These served their intended purpose, but the charge was made by veterans, and they pushed on, filled the ditch, climbed up the parapet and planted three Confederate flags on the top. The fort would then, undoubtedly, have been taken had it not been for the action of Lieut. Benjamin, commander of the battery. The guns could not reach those in the ditch, and he, taking the shells in his hand, cut the fuse, and lighting them with his cigar threw them over the parapet, when they exploded, doing terrible execution.†

The assault was not renewed, and on the following Friday, December 4, the last of Longstreet's troops withdrew from in front of the city. The next day Sherman sent a despatch to Burnside from Maryville, saying that he was at that point with 25,000 men, and would leave them there unless needed at Knoxville. In a short time he returned with his forces to Chattanooga, leaving the Fourth Army Corps under Gen. Granger to re-enforce the garrison at Knoxville.

Gen. Longstreet retreated slowly up the north bank of the Holston River, followed by the Ninth and Twenty-third Corps, under Gen. Parke, and about 4,000 cavalry. As soon as the former had learned that Sherman had returned to Chattanooga with the main part of his command, he turned upon his pursuers, then at Bean's Station, and administered to them a decided defeat. Owing to the inclemency of the weather, however, and the bad condition of both armies, active operations were soon after suspended. Longstreet went into winter quarters at Morristown and Russellville, and Gen. Foster, who had succeeded Gen. Burnside in

---

\*This plan was suggested to the engineer by Mr. J. B. Hoxie, of Knoxville, who had been master mechanic on the East Tennessee & Virginia Railroad. Upon the occupation of Knoxville Burnside made him a member of his staff, and placed him in charge of transportation, in which position he rendered valuable assistance.

† History of the Twenty-first Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.

— BATTLE OF —  
**MISSIONARY RIDGE.**

1 Mile

N



Line of  
Supplies

Supplies

CRANE'S HILL

Pontoon  
Route

Pontoon

Chickamauga Cr.

Furness Id.

SHERMAN

ATLANTIC

Ry.

& C.

Ry.

CHATTANOOGA

Cameron Hall

Brown's Ferry

MOCCASIN R.

Federal Works

THOMAS

First Position of  
Federals

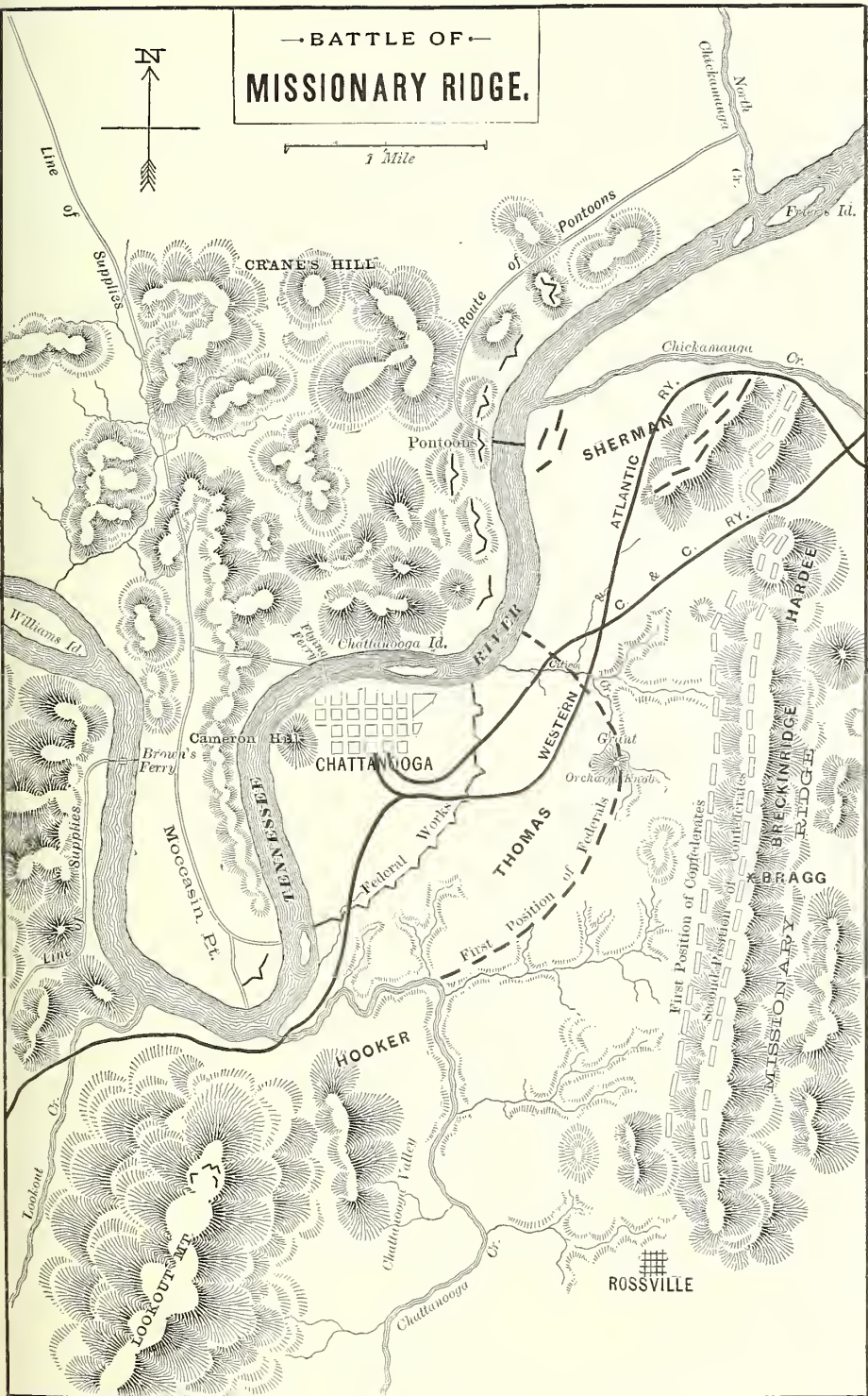
KBRAGG

BRECKINRIDGE  
HARDEE  
MISSIONARY RIDGE

HOOVER

LOOKOUT Mt.

ROSSVILLE







command of the Army of the Ohio, withdrew the greater part of his forces to Knoxville.

When Burnside retreated to Knoxville a portion of his command was stationed in detachments at various points above that city and were consequently shut out during the siege. Among these detachments were several Tennessee regiments. The Tennessee troops that participated in the defense of Knoxville were the Eighth Infantry and the Eighth and Ninth Cavalry, and others.

During the June previous to the siege Gen. Sanders, with about 2,000 men, including the First Tennessee Infantry, made a successful raid into East Tennessee from Kentucky. He reached Knoxville on the evening of June 20, 1863. The next day he planted a battery on the north side of the town and began an artillery duel with the Confederates on the opposite ridge, during which only one person was injured. Pleasant M. McClung was shot, it is said, by the last gun fired by Sanders' men. Gen. Buckner, in command of the post, was absent with his life guard, leaving only Kain's artillery and parts of two Florida regiments to defend it. Had Gen. Sanders made an immediate assault he could probably have captured the town. During the day, however, a Virginia regiment arrived and Sanders retreated to Strawberry Plains and Mossy Creek and thence back into Kentucky.

February 9, 1864, Gen. J. M. Schofield superseded Gen. Foster in command of the Army of the Ohio. No movement of importance was made until April, when, Gen. Longstreet having gone to rejoin Lee in Virginia, preparations were made for the Georgia campaign. The Ninth Corps having been returned to the Army of the Potomac, Gen. Schofield was assigned to the command of the Twenty-third Corps, and O. O. Howard succeeded Gen. Granger in command of the Fourth Corps. About the last of April, 1864, after tearing up the railroad for a considerable distance above Bull's Gap, the entire force, with the exception of small garrisons at Knoxville and Loudon, moved to join Sherman. The Tennessee Infantry, which participated in this campaign, formed a part of the Twenty-third Corps, and included the Third and Sixth Regiments, Cooper's brigade; Fifth Regiment, Manson's brigade, and the First and Eighth Regiments, ——— brigade. The history of the Georgia campaign and the part performed by the Twenty-third Corps is too well known to require mention here. October 31, 1864, Gen. Schofield, who was at Resaca with the Twenty-third Corps, was ordered by Gen. Thomas to Pulaski. He arrived at Nashville November 5, and was immediately sent to Johnsonville. Finding that the enemy had already retreated he left a force for the defense of that part and moved to join the Fourth

Corps at Atlanta. Among the troops left at Johnsonville were the Third and Sixth Tennessee Infantry, Cooper's brigade. Several regiments of Tennessee cavalry were also employed in that vicinity. When Hood reached Columbia Gen. Cooper was ordered to join Gen. Schofield at Franklin, for which place he immediately started. "Owing to delays in receiving his orders, however, he could not reach Franklin before its occupation by the enemy, and turned his column direct for Nashville, and arrived at the Brentwood Hill, by the Charlotte pike, on the night of December 2, and again found the enemy between him and the army. He then marched to Clarksville, where he arrived in safety on the 5th, and rejoined his command on the 8th of December. Gen. Cooper deserves great credit for the skill and judgment displayed in conducting his retreat."\*

The fight which took place before Nashville was participated in by more Tennessee troops than any other one battle of the war. All the infantry regiments then in the field, with the exception of the Fourth, and all the cavalry, except three regiments under Gen. Gillem, were present. All conducted themselves gallantly, and several received especial mention from the commanding officer in his report of the battle.

August 4, 1864, what was known as the "Brigade of Governor's Guards" was organized in accordance with the following order:

STATE OF TENNESSEE, EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT,  
NASHVILLE, TENN., August 1, 1864.

ORDERED 1. That Gen. A. C. Gillem, adjutant-general of Tennessee, be assigned to the command of the troops known as the "Governor's Guards."

2. That First Lieut. Ed S. Richards is announced as assistant adjutant-general of the State of Tennessee, and must be obeyed and respected accordingly. Lieut. Richards will establish his office in this city.

3. It is further ordered that Gen. Alvan C. Gillem proceed with the Ninth and Thirteenth Regiments of Tennessee Cavalry, and Batteries E and G, First Tennessee Light Artillery, to East Tennessee, and, under such orders as he shall from time to time receive from this office, kill or drive out all bands of lawless persons or bands which now infest that portion of the State. It is not to be understood that this order shall prevent Gen. Gillem, whenever he shall deem it feasible or expedient, from pursuing said bands of outlaws beyond the limits of the State. Gen. Gillem is further authorized, under such instruction as he shall receive from this office, to take such measures as are deemed expedient to re-establish order and enforce civil law, to which end Gen. Gillem will lend every assistance in his power to the regularly constituted civil authorities. All the organized regiments of Tennessee troops being raised in East Tennessee to serve one year or longer will obey the orders of Gen. Gillem, who is authorized to organize such new regiments as may be deemed expedient. Officers of the commissary and quartermaster departments will furnish the necessary supplies upon the requisition of Gen. Gillem.

ANDREW JOHNSON,  
*Brigadier-General and Military Governor of Tennessee.*

Immediately after its organization the brigade began its march to

---

\*Report of Gen. Schofield.



East Tennessee, where it arrived about the middle of the same month. August 22 a skirmish occurred at Rogersville, soon after which the command took position at Bull's Gap. While there it was learned that Gen. Morgan with his command were at Greeneville, and an immediate advance was made upon that place.

"On the evening\* of September 3, at 6 o'clock a courier reported to Col. Miller, then in command of the brigade, that the enemy, in heavy force, were advancing and were in camp about two miles west of Greeneville. After a short consultation of the commanding officers it was decided to move at once, and at 11 o'clock the Thirteenth Tennessee Cavalry was ordered to proceed to Greeneville, passing around the enemy's flank. At 12 o'clock the remainder of the command moved out. The night was very dark and the rain fell in torrents, but the troops pushed on and at 6 o'clock in the morning they came upon the pickets of the enemy, who were attacked by the Tenth Michigan Cavalry, then in advance, and with the whole force driven back about three miles. By that time the Thirteenth had joined the rear and began an attack, which, with a charge made by the Ninth, scattered them in all directions; some forty being taken prisoners. Meanwhile two companies, I and G, of the Thirteenth, had been sent into the town; there they surprised Gen. Morgan and his staff, who were at a Mrs. Williams'. Morgan ran out and attempted to escape, but was shot and instantly killed by Andrew Campbell, a private of Company G. The two companies captured the staff, and taking the body of Morgan upon a horse, returned to their command without having lost a man. The entire column then moved into the town, where they found the enemy's artillery planted upon College Hill. A flank movement by the Ninth and Thirteenth Regiments soon dislodged it, and the entire command fled in confusion, leaving two pieces of artillery, several wagons, and other equipments. They were driven about four miles, when the pursuit was abandoned. On September 27 a sharp fight occurred at Watauga, in which the command lost 15, killed and wounded. Another skirmish took place at Greeneville, on October 12. On October 27, the brigade left New Market, and during the day met the enemy and drove them back. On the next day the command moved forward until within one mile of Morristown, where they found the enemy in line ready to receive them, with the Ninth and Thirteenth Regiment in front and the Eighth in the rear to support the artillery; a charge was made, but it failed to break the Confederate line, a sabre charge was then ordered. This proved more successful; the line was broken, and

\*This description of the battle at Greeneville is taken from an account of it written at the time by a Tennessee officer.

McClung's battery captured with a loss to the enemy of about 300 killed, wounded and captured."

From this time nothing but scout and guard duty was done until November 9, when the brigade assembled at Bull's Gap, where two days later it was confronted by the Confederates under Gen. Breckinridge, by whom, on the 12th, an unsuccessful assault was made. At nightfall on the following day the brigade withdrew from the Gap. After having proceeded about ten miles an attack was made upon the rear, causing a stampede among the pack-mules and wagon-trains, and producing the greatest confusion. The artillery and several hundred men were captured, and the remainder of the force driven back to Strawberry Plains and thence to Knoxville. As soon as the report of Gillem's defeat reached Gen. Thomas he ordered Gen. Stoneman from Louisville, to take command of the forces in East Tennessee. The latter immediately ordered Gen. Burbidge to march with all his available force in Kentucky, by the way of the Cumberland Gap, to join Gillem. At the same time Gen. Ammon, who had been co-operating with Gen. Gillem, received a re-enforcement of 1,500 men from Chattanooga, and at once occupied Strawberry Plains.

Having quickly concentrated the commands of Gens. Burbidge and Gillem at Bean's Station, on the 12th of December Gen. Stoneman started for Bristol, his advance under Gillem striking the enemy under Duke at Kingsport, killing, capturing, or dispersing the whole command. The entire force then pushed on to Wytheville, meeting and completely routing the enemy under Vaughn, at Marion, Va. Having destroyed a large amount of supplies of all kinds at Wytheville, Gen. Stoneman turned his attention to Saltville and its important salt works, which were captured and destroyed.\* The command then returned to Knoxville, where it arrived on December 29, having marched an average of forty-two miles every twenty-four hours since its departure. It remained in camp until March 21, when such portion as was mounted joined Gen. Stoneman upon his great raid. The vote for governor, at the election March 4, 1865, indicates the relative strength of the regiments at that time. It was as follows: Eighth, 384; Ninth, 606; Thirteenth, 259; Battery E, 79.

After the close of hostilities many Confederates who returned to their homes in East Tennessee suffered violence at the hands of Union men in retaliation for outrages committed at the beginning of the war. This soon ceased, however; and at the present time there is no place perhaps in the United States where there is a more fraternal spirit existing between the Unionist and the ex-Confederate than in East Tennessee. Ten-

\*In his report of the expedition, Gen. Stoneman gives the Thirteenth Tennessee Cavalry the honor of having acted the most conspicuous part in the capture of Saltville.

nessee furnished about 30,000 troops to the Federal Army. They were mustered as follows: Eight regiments of infantry, eight regiments of mounted infantry, thirteen regiments of cavalry and five battalions of light artillery. But in addition to these regiments there were also enlisted, within the limits of the State, about 17,000 colored troops, the precise number of which cannot be ascertained, as they were enrolled as United States troops without regard to State boundaries.

The State also contributed to the Federal Army a large number of efficient officers. In addition to those colonels and lieutenant-colonels who from time to time commanded brigades, Tennessee furnished the following brigadier-generals: Samuel P. Carter, Joseph A. Cooper, Alvan C. Gillem, James G. Spears, William B. Campbell and Andrew Johnson, the military governor, the first three of whom were also major-generals by brevet. The colonels who were brevetted brigadier-generals were William J. Smith, George Spalding and James P. Brownlow. Gov. Johnson, upon the organization of the State government in 1862, appointed Alvan C. Gillem adjutant-general, a position which he continued to hold until the election of Gov. Brownlow, when he was succeeded by James P. Brownlow. On August 1, 1864, Lieut. Edward S. Richards was appointed assistant adjutant-general.

The first Union regiment of Tennessee Infantry was organized by Col. R. K. Byrd, at Camp Dick Robinson, Ky., in August, 1861. The other regimental officers at that time were James G. Spears, lieutenant-colonel; James T. Shelley, major; Leonard C. Houk, quartermaster; Edward Maynard, adjutant; Robert L. Stanford, surgeon; William A. Rogers, assistant surgeon, and Samuel L. Williams, chaplain. This regiment was first under fire in the engagement at Wild Cat, and was afterward present at the battle of Mill Springs. It also assisted in the capture of Cumberland Gap, where it remained until the evacuation of that post by Gen. Morgan. It then retreated with the remainder of the command to Ohio, and thence went on an expedition up the Kanawha Valley. Returning, it went by the way of Louisville to Nashville, arriving in time to participate in the battle at Stone River, after which it returned to Lexington, Ky. It then entered East Tennessee under Burnside's command and was present at the siege of Knoxville. During the winter of 1864 it was stationed at Kingston, and in the spring entered upon the Atlanta campaign, participating in all of the engagements until just previous to the surrender of the city, when the greater portion of the regiment was discharged on account of the expiration of their term of service.

While at Cumberland Gap a detachment of this and the Second Regiment, consisting of sixty-nine men, led by Capt. Meyers and Lieut.



Rogers, captured an important outpost of the Confederates without the loss of a man. For this exploit a complimentary notice was read on dress parade, by order of Gen. Morgan.

The Second Union Tennessee Volunteer Infantry was recruited and organized at Camp Dick Robinson, Ky., with James P. Carter\* as colonel; D. C. Trewhitt, lieutenant-colonel; M. Cleaveland, major; A. Neat, surgeon; D. A. Carpenter, lieutenant and adjutant; George W. Keith, quartermaster, and W. J. Keith, commissary sergeant. The regiment was mustered into service to date from the 28th of September, 1861, and on the 18th of October following marched to meet the Confederate forces under Gen. Zollicoffer. From that time until the evacuation of Cumberland Gap by the Federal forces under Gen. George W. Morgan in September, 1862, the regiment was employed in eastern Kentucky, participating in the battles of Mill Springs and many lesser engagements. It then marched through northeastern Kentucky, crossed into Ohio and thence entered the Kanawha Valley, W. Va. Returning by the way of Point Pleasant, Ohio, it went from there to Louisville by river, thence by land to Murfreesboro, where it was engaged in the battle of Stone's River. It remained there until March 10, 1863, when it returned to Kentucky for the purpose of being mounted, which was done about June 1, 1863. It remained in Kentucky, participating in various minor engagements with the Confederate forces under Pegram and Scott, until July 4, when it started in pursuit of Gen. Morgan in his raid through Kentucky, Indiana and Ohio, and was present at his capture. It then returned to Stanford, Ky., and joined the force under Gen. Burnside for the campaign in East Tennessee. It was in the advance of Burnside's forces at Wolf Creek and Loudon, Tenn., and was present at the surrender of Cumberland Gap by the Confederate Gen. Frazier. It also took the advance of the column which moved into upper East Tennessee from Knoxville, and brought on and participated in the battle of Blue Springs. After pursuing the retreating forces to Abingdon, Va., and destroying a large amount of stores, it returned to Rogersville, Tenn., where, on November 6, 1863, the regiment was captured by Gen. Jones. One hundred and seventeen men, most of whom had been captured, but soon after made their escape, reported at Knoxville and were on duty there during the siege up to the 31st of November. Soon after the remnants of the regiment were gathered up and were detailed, as provost guards, to duty at Sevierville, Maryville, Clinton and Maynardsville. In September, 1864, the garrison at Maryville, consisting of twenty-eight men, was captured. The remaining detachments were then ordered immedi-

---

\*Resigned March 2, 1864; succeeded by J. M. Melton.

ately to Lee's Ferry, on the Clinch River, to harrass Wheeler's forces, who were then on a raid through East Tennessee. After this expedition the regiment returned to Knoxville, where, on October 6, 1864, it was mustered out of service, there being at that time only 106 of the original number.

The Third Union Regiment of Tennessee Infantry was organized at Flat Lick, Ky., by Col. Leonidas C. Houk and Lieut. John C. Childs in March, 1862. The other field and staff officers were William Cross, major; Daniel M. Ray, adjutant; John D. Lewis, quartermaster; William A. Rodgers, surgeon; John P. Blankinship, assistant surgeon; William F. Dowell, chaplain; John L. Shipe, sergeant-major; Elijah W. Adkins, quartermaster-sergeant. It remained near Flat Lick until June, then, with Spear's Brigade, went to Cumberland Gap, but was subsequently ordered to London, Ky. Here the regiment was divided, five companies under Col. Houk remaining at that place, and the other five companies under Lieut.-Col. Childs going to Richmond. Houk having been attacked by a superior force under Gen. Scott retreated to Cumberland Gap, and subsequently, with Morgan, to Ohio. The five companies under Childs while on their way to rejoin Houk at Loudon, were attacked by Scott's cavalry at Big Hill, and the greater part of the command captured. The remainder made their way to Richmond, Ky., where, on August 23, 1862, all but about 100 were taken prisoners and paroled. The few who escaped retreated to Louisville, and were temporarily attached to the Third Kentucky Infantry, with which command they took part in the battle of Perryville. They were then ordered to Gallipolis, Ohio, where the regiment was reunited. It then went to Nashville, and thence to Murfreesboro. In April, 1863, Col. Houk and Lieut.-Col. Childs resigned, and the regiment then stationed at Carthage was placed under the command of Maj. William Cross, who, a short time after, was commissioned colonel. In August the regiment left Carthage, and marched by the way of Alexandria and McMinnville to a point on the Tennessee River below Chattanooga. It remained in the vicinity of Chattanooga until November, when it proceeded to Knoxville to the relief of Burnside. April 26, 1864, it left Strawberry Plains to enter upon the Atlanta campaign, in which it took an active part. After the surrender of Atlanta it was ordered to Johnsonville, thence to Duck River, and finally to Columbia. Before reaching the latter place, however, the approach of Hood forced it back to Nashville, which it reached by the way of Charlotte and Clarksville, arriving in time to participate in the battles before that city. After pursuing the enemy to Clifton, Tenn., it returned to Nashville, and was there mustered out February 23, 1865,

the regiment at that time numbering about 340 of the original command. During its existence it numbered 990 enlisted men.

The Fourth Union Regiment of Tennessee Infantry was recruited under the direction of Col. Daniel Stover, of Carter County, Tenn., at Louisville, in the spring of 1863. It was composed wholly of exiles from East Tennessee, who were brought out of the Confederate lines by officers and pilots sent in for that purpose. May 29 the regiment left Louisville, and was mustered into service in the following June. September 9, 1863, under the command of Maj. M. L. Patterson, it marched to McMinnville, Tenn., where, on the 3d of October, after two hours' hard fighting against a greatly superior force under Gen. Wheeler, it was captured and paroled. Maj. Patterson, with forty men, returned to Nashville, and the remainder of the regiment, with few exceptions, returned to their homes in East Tennessee. Upon the arrival of Maj. Patterson in Nashville a court of inquiry was appointed to examine into the circumstances connected with the surrender of the post at McMinnville, which resulted in his complete exoneration from all charges. He then proceeded to Camp Nelson, Ky., to reorganize the regiment, where many of the soldiers reported immediately for duty, the paroles being invalid, having been given in violation of the cartel. January 20, 1864, the regiment was assigned to the First Brigade, Third Division, Twenty-third Army Corps. On the withdrawal of Gen. Schofield's army from upper East Tennessee, the regiment was sent to Loudon, and three companies, under Maj. Reeves, to Kingston, Maj. Patterson having been promoted to the lieutenant-colonelcy, was detached to command the brigade with headquarters at Loudon. The regiment remained there until November, 1864, when the troops were ordered to Knoxville. Lieut.-Col. Patterson was then put in command of a brigade consisting of the Fourth Tennessee and Third North Carolina Infantry for an expedition to Paint Rock, N. C., to cut off the retreat of the Confederates from Gen. Stoneman. This expedition ended about January 10, 1865. The regiment remained in upper East Tennessee and vicinity until July, when it was ordered to Nashville to be mustered out. Col. Stover, who organized the regiment, was early attacked by consumption and saw no service in the field.

The Fifth Union Regiment of Tennessee Infantry was organized at Barboursville, Ky., by Col. James T. Shelley, of Roane County, in March, 1862. As a part of Spear's brigade it participated in the operations around Cumberland Gap during the summer of 1862, also in the retreat from that place, and subsequently in the battle of Stone River. It was present at Chickamauga, and took an active part in the battle of Mission



Ridge. In the Georgia campaign it formed a part of Manson's brigade, and with the remainder of the Twenty-third Corps returned to fight Hood before Nashville.

The organization of the Sixth Union Regiment of Tennessee Infantry was begun in the early part of March, 1862, by Col. Joseph A. Cooper, at Barbourville, Ky., and, like most of the other regiments from Tennessee, was composed mainly of Unionist refugees. On April 23, four companies being completed, a lieutenant-colonel, Edward Maynard, was appointed. By May 1 three other companies were completed and the following field and staff officers had been appointed: William C. Pickens, major; Henry H. Wiley, quartermaster; William Cary, quartermaster-sergeant; Ayres Maupin, surgeon, and Henry W. Parker, adjutant. The regiment actively participated in the opening movements of the Seventh Division of the Army of the Ohio, under Gen. G. W. Morgan, in the vicinity of Cumberland Gap, where it remained until September 17, 1862, when it took up the line of march in Morgan's famous retreat to the Ohio River. After being refitted it remained at Gallipolis, Ohio, until November 11, when the brigade to which it was attached was ordered to Nashville. During the battle of Stone River it was detailed as an escort for an ammunition train for Rosecrans' army. A short distance from Nashville it was attacked by the Confederate cavalry under Wheeler, who was immediately repulsed with considerable loss. It remained at Murfreesboro until April, 1863, when it was attached to the First Brigade, Second Division, Fourteenth Army Corps, and from that time until September, was employed in drilling and scouting in the vicinities of Carthage, Alexandria and McMinnville. About September 10, it crossed the mountains and moved toward Chattanooga, arriving in time to participate in the close of the battle of Chickamauga, as a part of Granger's reserve corps. The regiment was then stationed on the river above Chattanooga until it joined the forces that moved to the relief of Burnside at Knoxville. It was engaged in the campaign of East Tennessee during the following winter. In April, 1864, having been transferred to the Second Division, Twenty-Third Army Corps, Department of the Ohio, it moved to join Sherman in his campaign to Atlanta. In this it took an active part, losing heavily at Resaca. After the capture of Atlanta the brigade was ordered to report to Gen. Thomas at Nashville, and was located at Johnsonville and Duck River until the advance of Hood compelled a retreat. The regiment reached Nashville by the way of Charlotte and Clarksville, and participated in the battles around that city on the 15th and 16th of December. It was then transferred to North Carolina and joined Sherman's forces

at Goldsboro, where it remained until March 3, 1865. The regiment was then returned to Nashville and was mustered out on April 27, 1865, having served a few days over three years.

The Seventh Union Regiment of Tennessee Infantry was never organized, and the companies raised for it were transferred to other regiments.

The Eighth Union Regiment of Tennessee Infantry was recruited from East Tennessee exiles and refugees at Nicholasville, Lexington, Camp Dick Robinson and other points in Kentucky, by Col. Felix A. Reeve, assisted by John B. Brownlow and H. H. Thomas. The work of recruiting was begun in the fall of 1862, but owing to the fact that several cavalry regiments, which were more popular with the foot-sore refugees, were proposed at the same time, volunteers for infantry service were not numerous, and it was not until August 1863, that the regiment numbering about 700 men was organized. It was then assigned to the Second Brigade, Second Division, Twenty-Third Army Corps, Department of the Ohio, and was present at Knoxville during the siege of that place. In April, 1864, it marched to join Sherman on his Atlanta campaign, in which it took a very active part, participating in every engagement. At Utowah Creek, near Atlanta, it was in the advance, and about 100 men of the regiment were killed and wounded in less than fifteen minutes. The Eighth Regiment also bore an honorable part in the battles of Jonesboro, Ga., and Columbia, Franklin and Nashville, Tenn. In January, 1865, with the remainder of the Army of the Ohio, it was transferred to North Carolina, where it participated in the actions at Fort Anderson, Town Creek and Wilmington. Col. Reeve resigned command of the regiment in July, 1864. The major of the regiment when organized was George D. La Vergne, who was promoted to lieutenant-colonel in October, 1863, in place of Isham Young, resigned.

The Ninth Union Regiment of Tennessee Infantry was never mustered into service, it being transferred and merged into other regiments before it was completely organized.

The Tenth Union Regiment of Tennessee Infantry was organized at Nashville, about July, 1862, and was at first known as the First Tennessee Governor's Guards. It was recruited partly in Nashville, and partly in Rutherford, Wayne, Hardin and Lawrence Counties, and was composed of a mixture of Americans, Irish and Germans. Until the summer of 1863 the regiment did provost guard duty at Nashville, being encamped first at Fort Gillem, and afterward upon the Capitol grounds. It was then ordered out to guard the Nashville & North-western Railroad, where it remained until the spring of 1864. During the following

year the regiment was divided up considerably, detachments being detailed for various purposes. In the spring of 1865 it was ordered to Knoxville, at which place and at Greeneville, it remained until about July, when it was returned to Nashville and mustered out. It was commanded at first by Col. A. C. Gillem, and afterward by Col. James W. Scully.

The First Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was organized at Camp Dennison, Ohio, November 1, 1862, with Robert Johnson as colonel; James P. Brownlow, lieutenant-colonel; James O. Berry and William R. Tracy, majors; Pleasant M. Logan, surgeon; James H. Jones, assistant surgeon; John P. Hotsinger, chaplain; Charles H. Bentley adjutant; John H. James, quartermaster: McK. C. Williams and Franklin Highbarger, sergeant-majors. The regiment was then ordered to Tennessee, and in the organization of the cavalry, Department of the Cumberland was united with the First Brigade, First Division. The ensuing summer, with the forces of Gen. Rosecrans, it entered on the campaign which resulted in the occupation of Tullahoma and Chattanooga, participating in engagements at Rover, Middleton, Guyer's Gap, Shelbyville and Cowan's Station. After an expedition through northern Alabama and Georgia under Lieut.-Col. Brownlow, it reached Chickamauga, and participated in the three days' battle of September 18-20, 1863. It was then sent in pursuit of Gen. Wheeler, going by the way of McMinnville, Shelbyville and Murfreesboro, a detachment being sent to Sparta. The regiment afterward proceeded to Kingston, Knoxville, Strawberry Plains, New Market, Dandridge and Mossy Creek. At the last two places engagements with the Confederate cavalry, in greatly superior force, were had, but by gallant charges under skillful leadership the regiment succeeded in escaping with little injury. It then remained in that vicinity until April, 1864, when it began a march to Resaca, Cassville, Dallas and Pine Mountain, Ga., and thence to a raid on the Macon Railroad, where an engagement occurred. After some hard fighting it reached the Chattahoochee River on August 1, and while crossing the stream was attacked by the enemy, who succeeded in taking a large number of prisoners. Col. Brownlow reached Marietta two days later with a few men and there was joined by the more fortunate fugitives. During Gen. Wheeler's raid through Middle Tennessee the regiment was in engagements with him at La Vergne, Franklin and Campbellsville, and followed him upon his retreat to Florence. It then returned to Pulaski and had a skirmish with Gen. Forrest, after which it continued to scout along the Tennessee until after the defeat of Hood, when it went in pursuit of his forces. After a reconnoissance as far as Corinth, in January, 1865, the regiment returned to Nashville, where it was mustered out June 14, 1865.



The Second Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was organized at Cumberland Gap in the months of August and September, 1862, under Col. D. M. Ray and Lieut.-Col. W. R. Cook, and was composed of loyal citizens of Knox, Blount, Sevier and surrounding counties, numbering in the aggregate about 1,175 men. Shortly after the organization of the regiment Gen. Morgan began his retreat to the Ohio River, and the Second Cavalry, although dismounted, rendered efficient service in protecting the flank and rear of the retreating column. Not long after its arrival at Gallipolis, Ohio, it was ordered to Louisville where it was mounted and armed, and pushed on to join Rosecrans at Nashville. It arrived in time to participate in the battle of Stone River, where it lost several officers and men. From that time until the 23d of June, 1863, with the remainder of the Federal cavalry under Gen. Stanley, it was employed on the front and flanks of Rosecrans army, doing severe duty. At the latter date it moved with the army from Murfreesboro to Tullahoma pursuing Bragg across the Cumberland Mountains. About July 10 it was ordered to report to Gen. Sheridan for special duty, and was employed in the vicinity of Bridgeport, Alabama, and Chattanooga until the early part of September, when it rejoined the cavalry command under Gen. Stanley and participated in the battle of Chickamauga. After doing some escort duty it was ordered to Washington and Kingston, and assisted in the defense of the latter place against Gen. Wheeler. It was then ordered to Nashville, hastily refitted, and forwarded to Gen. William S. Smith at Memphis for an expedition into Mississippi, in the course of which it participated with credit in engagements at Okolona, West Point, Tallahatchie River and elsewhere. On its return to Nashville in March, 1864, Col. Ray having resigned, Maj. W. F. Prosser was commissioned lieutenant-colonel and placed in command. In the June following the Second, Third and Fourth Regiments of Tennessee Cavalry, with Battery A of the First Tennessee Light Artillery, were ordered to North Alabama and remained on duty in that district until the end of the year. In the numerous engagements with the Confederate cavalry during that time the Second Cavalry displayed great gallantry, and received the commendation of all the general officers under whom it served. In the pursuit of Hood's retreating army the command to which it was attached marched 280 miles in seven days and nights of unusually severe weather, and during that time were engaged in six different actions, capturing a large number of prisoners and material of every description. From January to July, 1865, when it was mustered out, the regiment was on duty at Vicksburg and New Orleans.

The organization of the Third Union Regiment of Tennessee Volun-

teer Cavalry was commenced at Cumberland Gap, by Maj. William C. Pickens, of Sevier County, acting under authority from Gov. Johnson. The first recruits were received August 10, 1862, and at the evacuation of that post by Gen. Morgan, only one company had been completed. This company shared in the retreat to Ohio and thence went to Louisville, where it was joined by the recruits of Companies B, C, D and E. These companies were ordered to Nashville as guards for government stores, arriving December 24, 1862, when they were temporarily attached to Gen. Spears' brigade. They were then ordered to the front and participated in the battle of Stone River. On January 27, 1863, the five companies were mustered into service at Murfreesboro, and the remainder of that year was spent in scouting and skirmishing with the enemy through various parts of Middle Tennessee. During that time four more companies were recruited and mustered into service. About December 25, 1863, the regiment under the command of Lieut.-Col. Duff G. Thornburgh was attached to a brigade of cavalry under Col. D. M. Ray, of the Second Tennessee Cavalry, and marched upon the expedition into Mississippi, participating in all the engagements of that campaign. While at Colliersville, Tenn., in February, 1864, Lieut.-Col. Thornburgh turned over the command of the regiment to Maj. John B. Minnis, and soon after tendered the resignation of his command, which was reluctantly accepted. The regiment returned to Nashville in March and remained there until April 10. From that time until September, as a whole or in detachments, it was engaged in scouting or skirmishing. On September 24 and 25, 1864, the entire regiment with the exception of 15 officers and some 200 men, were captured at Athens and Sulphur Brook Trestle, by the Confederates under Gen. Forrest. The captured officers were exchanged December 15. The privates were exchanged at Jackson, Miss., and on April 27, following, the steamer "Sultana," having them with a large number of other troops on board, blew up near Memphis, killing instantly 174 members of the regiment and mortally wounding a number of others. The remainder of the regiment was mustered out June 10, 1865.

The Fourth Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was organized from East Tennessee refugees, at Cumberland Gap, in July, 1862, and entered the field under the command of Lieut.-Col. J. M. Thornburgh. After leaving that place it followed the course of the other regiments of Gen. Morgan's command, and reached Nashville January 26, 1863. At that place and Murfreesboro, it did post and scout service during the remainder of the year. It then went with Gen. Smith on his expedition into Mississippi, returning to Nashville March 18, 1864. On June 19

it was ordered to Decatur, Ala., and in July marched with Gen. Rousseau on his raid through Alabama, reaching Marietta, Ga., on the 23d of that month. It then accompanied Gen. McCook on a raid south and west of Atlanta, in which it lost nearly all its horses and arms in crossing the Chattahoochee River. On the 10th of August it returned to Decatur, Ala., and was assigned to post and scout duty under Gen. Granger until the 19th of that month, when it was ordered to Nashville. On November 27, it advanced to meet Gen. Hood, and participated in nearly all the battles of that campaign. It was then ordered to the Gulf Department and accompanied Gen. Canby through the Mobile campaign, after which it went to Baton Rouge. It arrived at Nashville June 12, 1865. Company C, was detached from December, 1863, to April, 1864, for duty at the headquarters of the Twelfth Army Corps at Tullahoma. The other companies served without intermission with the regiment.

The Fifth Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was recruited and organized in Middle Tennessee by Col. William B. Stokes acting under authority from Gov. Johnson, in July, 1862. It was made up at Nashville principally, the recruits coming in from various counties in squads. It was first known as the First Middle Tennessee Cavalry, but was subsequently changed to the Fifth Tennessee. The regiment was in various battles and skirmishes during the latter part of 1862, actively participating in the battle of Stone River from first to last, closing the fight on the Manchester pike on Monday evening, January 5, 1863. From that time until the close of the war the regiment was employed mainly in detachments, in the eastern part of Middle Tennessee. One battalion was stationed at Shelbyville for some time, and did good service in a number of battles and skirmishes, for which it received high compliments from its superior officers. The other portion of the regiment under Col. Stokes was stationed at Carthage, and had frequent skirmishes; since, among other duties, it was required to carry the mail from that point to Gallatin. A portion of the regiment was in the battle of Lookout Mountain under command of Capt. Cain and Lieut. Carter. A post, also, was at Chickamauga and Chattanooga under Lieuts. Robinson and Nelson. The regiment was subsequently ordered to Sparta, Tenn., to break up the guerrilla bands which infested that region. The guerrilla chiefs, Hughes, Bledsoe and Ferguson declared a war of extermination against Col. Stokes' command, and then began a series of skirmishes and battles in which no quarter was given on either side. After completely subduing the guerrillas the regiment was ordered to Nashville, where, under the command of Lieut.-Col. William J. Clift, it participated in the battles in front of that city. Upon the removal of the regiment to Nashville



Col. Stokes was assigned to the command of the forces at Carthage, where he remained until honorably discharged in April, 1865.

The Sixth Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was partially recruited and organized at Bethel, W. Va., and was mustered into service November 13, 1862, under the command of Fielding Hurst. It entered upon arduous scouting duty in that region, and did valuable service in destroying guerrilla bands. It was subsequently ordered West, and, upon the retreat of Gen. Price from Corinth, it went in pursuit, capturing 250 prisoners without the loss of a man. While on this campaign it was also engaged with the enemy at Salem and Wyatt, Miss. It returned to West Tennessee in June, 1863, and was there employed in scouting and skirmishing until the following spring, when it entered upon a campaign in north Mississippi and Arkansas. November 26 it went to Nashville to participate in the memorable battle in front of that place, where it acquitted itself with credit. During its existence it mustered nearly 1,600 enlisted men.

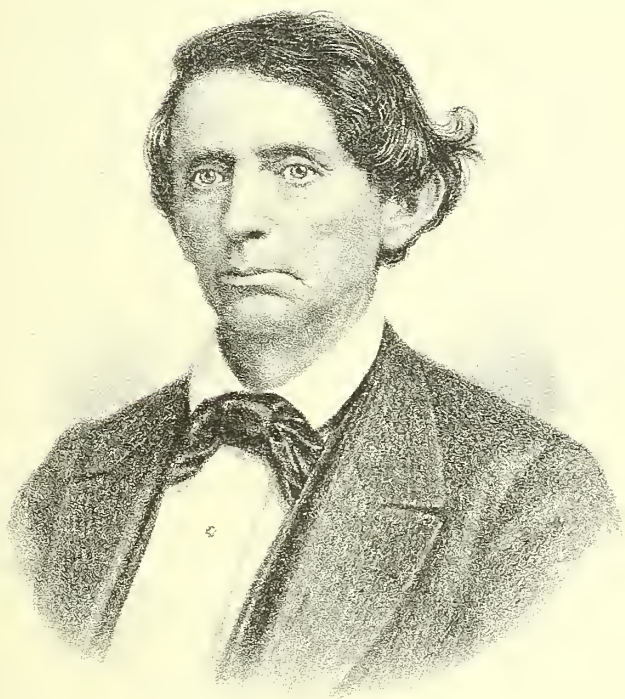
The Seventh Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was recruited in Carroll County and vicinity, and was mustered into service November 14, 1862, under the command of Lieut.-Col. I. R. Hawkins, of Huntingdon. Nothing could be obtained of the movements of this regiment except that it was captured March 24, 1864.

The Eighth Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was raised and commanded by Col. S. K. N. Patton, of Washington County, Tenn. It was composed of two fractions of regiments known as the Eighth and Tenth East Tennessee Cavalry. The Eighth Regiment was begun in Kentucky in June, 1863, under Lieut.-Col. Thomas J. Capps, and was first known as the Fifth Regiment East Tennessee Cavalry. It saw some active service in the field in both Kentucky and Tennessee under Gen. Burnside; was at the surrender of Cumberland Gap; took an active part in the fights at Blountsville and Rheatown; was besieged in Knoxville, and rendered material aid in defending that post. The Tenth Regiment had its origin in East Tennessee in September, 1863, by authority granted to Col. S. K. N. Patton by Gen. Burnside. It saw some active service in East Tennessee under Gens. Shackleford and Wilcox, Cols. Casement and Harney during the fall of that year. In December, 1863, it was sent to Camp Nelson, Ky., in charge of prisoners. February 6, 1864, these two fractions were consolidated by order of Gov. Johnson. Col. Patton completed the regiment, and assumed command of it at Columbia in the April following. It remained there and at Franklin guarding the railroad until June 19, when it was ordered to Gallatin, where it remained doing similar duty until September. It was then or-

dered to East Tennessee, where it joined command with the Ninth and Thirteenth Regiments, and during the remainder of the year was almost continuously engaged in marching and fighting. On March 21, 1865, such portions of the command as were mounted, joined Gen. Stoneman on his raid into Virginia, the Carolinas and Georgia. The command was finally reunited, and went into camp at Lenoir's Station in June, 1865. It was mustered out of service at Knoxville, September 11, 1865.

The Ninth Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was organized at Camp Nelson from East Tennessee refugees in the early part of 1863, with Joseph H. Parsons, of Knox County, as colonel. It assisted in the capture of Cumberland Gap, after which it escorted the prisoners to Lexington, Ky. Returning to Knoxville, it remained there until after the siege of that place. It was then detailed to escort prisoners to Camp Nelson, from which place it was ordered to Nashville, where it arrived in January and remained until about May 1. It was stationed at Gallatin from that time until August, when it was constituted a portion of the brigade known as the "Governor's Guards," under the command of Gen. Gillem, which then entered upon a campaign in East Tennessee. It participated with great gallantry in all the battles of that campaign, and at Bull's Gap a large portion of the regiment was taken prisoners. A large part of the Eleventh Cavalry having also been captured it was consolidated with the remainder of the Ninth. On March 21, 1865, it entered upon the raid through Virginia, North and South Carolina and Georgia under Gen. Stoneman. It returned to Tennessee in May, and was mustered out at Knoxville in September, 1865.

The organization of the Tenth Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was begun at Nashville under the supervision of Col. G. W. Bridges. Companies A, B, C, D, E, H and I were organized during the fall of 1863 and in the winter of 1864, and after having been organized into a regiment, were attached to the command of Col. George Spalding, Second Brigade, Fourth Division of Cavalry. During the summer and fall of 1864 it was engaged in arduous duty in Tennessee. About the close of the year it was sent to northern Alabama to watch the movements of Hood's army, and had an engagement with a largely superior force at Florence. Overpowered by numbers it was compelled to fall back to Nashville, where it was transferred to Gen. Hatch's command, and participated in the numerous engagements attending Hood's raid into Tennessee. On the first day's battle before Nashville it lost seventy in officers and men. The leader, Maj. William P. Story, was badly wounded, and the command devolved upon Maj. James T. Abernathy. At the close of the campaign the regiment was sent to New Orleans, where it remained



FROM PHOTO BY THUSS, MOELLEIN & GIER, NASHVILLE

WILLIAM G. BROWNLOW





until June 10, 1865. Companies F and G of this regiment were not organized until February, 1865. Company K was organized in June, 1865. Company L was never fully organized. It numbered fifty-one men, and was stationed as a guard on the Nashville & Northwestern Railroad. Sixty-three men comprising Company M were mustered into service in October, 1864, under William H. Hampton as first lieutenant. They served during the campaign against Hood as provost guard and escort company. Company A was detached from its regiment on April 26, 1864, and assigned to duty at Springfield, Tenn., where it remained until August, after which it was with Gen. Gillem in his campaign in East Tennessee.

The recruiting for the Eleventh Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was begun at Camp Nelson, Ky., where the greater part of five companies was raised. August 16, 1863, Isham Young, Reuben Davis and J. H. Johnson, the last two of whom had already organized the above companies, were commissioned by Gov. Johnson to raise a regiment of cavalry to be designated the Eleventh Tennessee Cavalry, and by October 21 all the companies except Company M, which numbered only forty-six men, had been filled and organized. On that date Col. Young received his commission, and the organization of the regiment, then at Knoxville, was completed, with R. A. Davis, lieutenant-colonel; James H. Johnson, first major; Alexander D. Rhea, second major, and Edward Black, third major. The regiment remained at Knoxville until after the siege, when it was ordered to upper East Tennessee. There five companies, under Maj. Black, were sent to Morristown, and the remaining five companies, under the command of Lieut.-Col. Davis, were stationed at Cumberland Gap. They did scout duty along the Virginia line until February, 1864, when nearly the entire command was captured. The remainder of the regiment remained in East Tennessee until consolidated with the Ninth Regiment.

The Twelfth Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was organized by companies, the first of which was mustered into service August 24, 1863. February 22, 1864, six companies had been mustered, and George Spalding was commissioned lieutenant-colonel. The regiment was then assigned to Gen. Gillem's division, and was placed on guard duty on the Nashville & Northwestern Railroad, where it remained until April, 1864. During the remainder of the year the regiment was in active service almost continuously. It was one of the most efficient regiments in opposing Wheeler on his raid through Middle Tennessee, and had several severe engagements with portions of his command. In the latter part of September it marched to contest the approach of Gen. Forrest, with

whom it was several times engaged with considerable loss. It was also active in the campaign against Hood, participating in the battles at Lawrenceburg, Campbellsville, Spring Hill, Franklin and Nashville. From Nashville the regiment was in the advance in pursuit of Hood, and fired the last shot at the enemy as he crossed the Tennessee River at Bainbridge. February 8, 1865, the regiment went into camp at Eastport, Miss., where it remained until May 11. It was then transferred from the Second to the First Brigade under the command of Vyt. Brig.-Gen. George Spalding, who had been commissioned colonel upon the completion of the regiment, August 16, 1864, and ordered to St. Louis. It was there remounted and refitted and sent to Fort Leavenworth, at which place, after having performed some escort and scout duty through northern Kansas and southern Nebraska, it was mustered out October 7. It returned to Nashville, and was there finally paid and discharged October 24, 1865.

The Thirteenth Union Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry was organized by Col. John K. Miller, of Carter County, at Strawberry Plains, Tenn., in September, 1863. It was not fully equipped, however, until it reached Camp Nelson, Kentucky, in the month of December. It was there mounted, and soon after ordered to Nashville, where it remained until the spring of 1864. It was then ordered to Gallatin, where it did post duty until August 4, when it was attached to what was known as the "Brigade of Governor Guards," commanded by Gen. Gillem. With this command it operated in East Tennessee against the Confederate cavalry under Gens. Morgan, Vaughn and Breckinridge; and under Lieut-Col. William H. Ingerton acted a conspicuous part in the killing of Morgan and the rout and capture of his force at Greeneville, Tenn. Morgan was killed by Andrew Campbell, of Company G, of this regiment. This regiment formed a part of the command under Gens. Stoneman and Gillem, which did such signal service in southwestern Virginia in December, 1864, and was also with the former general on his raid in the spring of 1865, participating with credit in the engagement at Salisbury, N. C. In June, 1865, it returned to Knoxville, moved from there to Lenoir's Station, then to Sweetwater, and finally back to Knoxville, where it was mustered out September 5, 1865.

Bradford's battalion of Union Tennessee Cavalry was raised by Maj. W. F. Bradford in December, 1863, and January, 1864. It consisted of four companies organized at Union City, Tenn., and was at first incorrectly designated the Thirteenth Cavalry. It remained at Union City until February 3, 1864, when it was ordered to Fort Pillow, where it arrived on the 8th. Recruiting at that point did not progress very rapidly, and it was not until April 1 that the fifth company was ready for



muster into the United States service. Before this was done, however, the fort was captured, and it together with the other four companies was nearly annihilated. With the capture of Fort Pillow the history of this battalion terminates. Hardly a nucleus of the command remained after the massacre. Only three commissioned officers were left, and two of them died soon after. A little detachment of men, who at the time of the fight were absent from the several companies on duty, were on August 18, 1864, consolidated in one company designated as Company A of the Fourteenth Tennessee Cavalry. This company on February 14, 1865, was consolidated with the Sixth Tennessee Cavalry, and was known as Company E.

The First Union Regiment of Tennessee Mounted Infantry was organized by Lieut.-Col. Abraham E. Garrett in the early part of 1864, although a portion of the companies were not completed until the end of the year. The regiment served principally in the northeastern part of Middle Tennessee, where it had frequent and severe encounters with guerrillas.

The Second Union Regiment of Tennessee Mounted Infantry was recruited principally in the vicinity of Wayne, Hardin, and Perry Counties. Company A was mustered October 2, 1863, and by February 1, 1864, the date of the organization of the regiment, seven companies had been completed. Two more companies were added in April, and Company K in June. John Murphy was commissioned lieutenant-colonel in February, and promoted to colonel upon the completion of the regiment.

The Third Union Regiment of Tennessee Mounted Infantry was a three months' regiment, and was never fully organized.

The recruiting of the Fourth Union Regiment of Tennessee Mounted Infantry was begun in August, 1864, and the last company was mustered into service the February following. Its members were principally from the eastern portion of Middle Tennessee. It was placed under the command of Joseph H. Blackburn, who was commissioned lieutenant-colonel November 26, 1864.

The Fifth Union Regiment of Tennessee Mounted Infantry was recruited and organized in the fall of 1864, at Cleveland, Tenn., by Col. Spencer B. Boyd, and Lieut.-Col. Stephen Beard. He was chiefly engaged in scouting through lower East Tennessee, northern Georgia, western North Carolina and northern Alabama. It had frequent encounters with Gatewood's and other guerrillas, one of which occurred at Spring Place, Ga., and another at Ducktown, Polk Co., Tenn. The regiment was mustered out at Nashville in July, 1865.

The Sixth Union Regiment of Tennessee Mounted Infantry was or-

ganized in Hamilton County, October 24, 1864, with George A. Gowin as lieutenant-colonel; William H. Bean, major; Eli T. Sawyers, adjutant, and William Rogers, quartermaster. It was employed for some time by Gen. Steadman, in scouting the Cumberland Mountains in Tennessee and northern Georgia, after the guerrilla bands which infested that region, and had several severe engagements with the bushwhackers. In March, 1865, the regiment was turned over to the commander of the department, and was soon after placed under Gen. Judah, commanding at Decatur, Ga., where it continued its scouting until the surrender of the Confederate Army. It was then ordered to Resaca. On June 18, 1865, it was ordered to Nashville, and on the 30th of that month was mustered out.

The Seventh Union Regiment of Tennessee Mounted Infantry was recruited during the latter part of 1864 in Anderson, Knox, Campbell, McMinn, Meigs and Monroe Counties. It was organized at Athens, Tenn., in the spring of 1865, with the following field and staff officers: James T. Shelley, colonel; James J. Dail, lieutenant-colonel; Oliver M. Dodson, major; George W. Ross, quartermaster; James R. Gettys, adjutant; Enoch Collins, assistant surgeon; Rufus Thompson, sergeant-major; John T. Rider, quartermaster-sergeant; James H. Baker, commissary-sergeant; T. L. Farrell, hospital steward. During the greater portion of its service it was stationed at Athens, and was actively employed in hunting guerillas, with whom it had frequent engagements.

The Eighth Union Regiment of Tennessee Mounted Infantry was not organized until April, 1865. It was recruited in the vicinity of Macon and Smith Counties, and was under the command of Lieut-Col. William J. Cleveland. Having been organized so late the regiment saw but little service.

Five Batteries of Light Artillery were also organized, but after the most persistent effort little could be learned concerning their movements. All were recruited and organized during 1863 and the early part of 1864. A few men were also recruited for Battery F, but the company was not completed, and they were transferred to Battery A, in April, 1864.

## CHAPTER XVI.

CONFEDERATE MILITARY HISTORY—VIEWS ON THE QUESTIONS OF STATE SOVEREIGNTY AND SECESSION—THE REFUSAL TO HOLD A STATE CONVENTION—THE GREAT LACK OF MUNITIONS OF WAR—THE CONSIDERATION OF THE QUESTION OF COERCION—THE EXCITEMENT ATTENDING THE SURRENDER OF FORT SUMTER—THE REFUSAL TO FURNISH FEDERAL TROOPS—THE EXTRAORDINARY CELERITY OF DEFENSIVE MEASURES—GOV. HARRIS AND THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY—THE ORGANIZATION OF THE MILITIA—THE ACT OF SECESSION—THE PROVISIONAL ARMY BILL—THE MILITARY LEAGUE—THE ADOPTION OF THE CONFEDERATE PROVISIONAL CONSTITUTION—MILITARY APPOINTMENTS—THE JUNE ELECTION—THE MANUFACTURE OF ORDNANCE, ETC.—SOLDIERS' AID SOCIETIES—THE TRANSFER OF THE STATE FORCES TO THE CONFEDERATE SERVICE—SKETCH OF THE FIELD CAMPAIGNS—THE NEUTRALITY QUESTION—FEDERAL INVASION OF THE STATE—COMPULSORY EVACUATION—OFFICIAL ARMY MUSTER ROLLS—THE HORRORS AND HARDSHIPS OF INTERNECINE WAR—GENERAL MOVEMENTS OF THE GREAT ARMIES—SKETCH OF THE PRINCIPAL ENGAGEMENTS—OUTLINE OF REGIMENTAL SERVICE—CLOSE OF THE WAR.

A MAJORITY of the people of Tennessee, prior to the fall of Fort Sumter and the call of President Lincoln for 75,000 volunteers, was warmly in favor of maintaining the Union of the States so long as it could be done without infringing the sovereign rights of any State. It had for years been the settled conviction of many Tennesseans that the individual States of the Union were sovereign under the constitution and would not, so long as their rights were not invaded, take any steps to sever their connection with their sister States; but they claimed the right, as a necessary consequence of the doctrine of State sovereignty,\* to withdraw peaceably and establish a separate and independent government, whenever it was demonstrated that their rights, liberties or institutions were in danger of limitation or abrogation. But notwithstanding these views, and notwithstanding the bitter hostility of the abolitionists of the North to the institution of slavery, the citizens of Tennessee looked with moistened eyes at the "Stars and Stripes," and remembered the ties of many bloody battles of the past in a common cause which bound the "Volunteer State" to the Federal Government. The utterances for maintaining the Union were widespread and sincere. As soon, however, as the Southern States began to enact ordinances of secession, and the severe views of the North in newspapers and public assemblies on the subject of coercion became known, many expressed the opinion that the only course for

\*"I have for many years advocated, as an essential attribute of State Sovereignty, the right of a State to secede from the Union."—*Speech of Jefferson Davis upon leaving the United States Senate.*



Tennessee to pursue was to sever her relations with the Union, and, as a means of security, enter into a league with the Confederate Government. Others opposed this course except as a last resort, while still others, particularly in East Tennessee, discountenanced every movement toward secession. Tennessee thus became a sea over which surged the wild waves of tumultuous emotions and conflicting opinions.

As early as February 27, 1860, the governor of Tennessee transmitted to the Legislature a special message, enclosing resolutions from the States of South Carolina and Mississippi, proposing a conference among the Southern States for the purpose of taking into consideration the relation of these States to the Federal Government. In the discussion of this proposal, the greatest divergence of opinion was developed in the General Assembly. The ideas of the times on State relations were undergoing a revolution. In November, 1860, Tennessee gave John Bell, the constitutional Union candidate for the Presidency, a plurality of 4,657 votes, which result was regarded as showing in a measure, the strength of the party which favored the Union. In December, 1860, Gov. Harris called a special session of the General Assembly to be held at Nashville, commencing January 7, 1861. In his message, among other important statements, the Governor said: "Previous to the adoption of the Federal Constitution, each State was a separate and independent Government—a complete sovereignty within itself—and in the compact of union, each reserved all the rights and powers incident to sovereignty, except such as were expressly delegated by the constitution to the General Government, or such as were clearly incident and necessary to the exercise of some expressly delegated power." After reciting at length the grievances of the South over the questions of slavery, state sovereignty, etc., he recommended the passage of an act calling for an election to determine whether delegates chosen at such election should meet in convention at the State capital, to ascertain the attitude of the State toward the Federal Government. As it was instinctively felt, if not positively understood, that the convention might follow the example of South Carolina and enact an ordinance of secession, it came to be recognized by tacit admission that those who should vote "convention," would favor disunion and *vice versa*, and, therefore, intense interest was felt in the result. The discussion of the question whether such a convention should be held, was conducted with fiery energy in the Legislature. On the 9th of January a resolution introduced against holding such a convention was lost by a vote of sixty-six to five. On the 19th of January, a bill was passed calling for an election to be held February 9, 1861, to determine whether such a convention should be held, and to select the necessary dele-

gates. It was also provided that the convention, if decided upon, should meet on the 25th of February "to adopt such measures for vindicating the sovereignty of the State and the protection of its institutions as shall appear to them to be demanded;" and it was further provided that no act of the convention, severing the State from the Federal Union, should have any binding force until ratified by a majority of the qualified voters of the State. The election was duly held, but the result was against holding the convention by a majority, according to the best accounts, of over 60,000.\* This was considered a strong victory for the Unionists.

The General Assembly at this session, pursuant to the recommendation of Gov. Harris to reorganize the militia of the State, passed an act for the formation of all white male inhabitants between the ages of eighteen and forty-five into companies, regiments, brigades and divisions; assigned numbers to the regiments of all the counties of the State, and made ample provision for musters, etc. This was thought necessary "in view of the present excited state of the public mind and unsettled condition of the country." The militia of the State, with the exception of a few volunteer companies in the thickly settled localities, had been disorganized by the recent repeal of the law requiring drills and public parades, so that the State was practically without military organization or equipment. There was not an arsenal or piece of ordnance in the State, and the poverty of the quantity of public arms was shown in the following report:

NASHVILLE, January 4, 1861.

HIS EXCELLENCY, ISHAM G. HARRIS, GOVERNOR OF TENNESSEE.

*Sir:* In obedience to your order I have the honor of submitting the following report of the number, character and condition of the public arms of the State. There are now on hand in the arsenal 4,152 flint-lock muskets, in good order; 2,100 flint-lock muskets, partially damaged; 2,228 flint-lock muskets, badly damaged; 185 percussion muskets, in good order; 96 percussion rifles, in good order; 54 percussion pistols, in good order; 350 Hall's carbines, flint-lock, badly damaged; 20 cavalry sabres, with damaged scabbards; 132 cavalry sabres, old patterns, badly damaged; 50 horse artillery sabres, in good order; 1 twelve-pound bronze gun, partially damaged; 2 six-pound bronze guns, in good order; 1 six-pound iron gun, unserviceable, and a large lot of old accoutrements mostly in bad order. Since having charge of the arms I have issued to volunteer companies, as per order, 80 flint-lock muskets; 664 percussion muskets; 230 rifle muskets, cadet; 841 percussion rifles; 228 percussion pistols; 170 cavalry sabres; 50 horse artillery sabres. The above arms were issued with the necessary accoutrements, with but small exceptions, and of them the 80 flint-lock muskets, 50 horse artillery sabres and 14 cavalry sabres have been returned to the arsenal. Respectfully,

JOHN HERIGES,

*Keeper of Public Arms.*

\*The newspapers published in Nashville at the time gave the majority at nearly 14,000; Greeley in *The American Conflict*, gave it at 67,054; the returns in the office of the Secretary of State give it at nearly 9,000; while in the new and imperfect work entitled *Military Annals of Tennessee* it is given at "nearly or quite 60,000." The majority is as various as the different accounts.

The Assembly also passed a joint resolution asking the President of the United States and the authorities of each of the Southern States to "reciprocally communicate assurances" to the Legislature of Tennessee of their peaceable designs; and also passed a resolution expressing profound regret as to the action of the Legislature of New York in tendering men and money "to be used in coercing certain sovereign States of the South into obedience to the Federal Government," and directing the Governor of Tennessee to inform the executive of New York "that it is the opinion of this General Assembly that whenever the authorities of that State shall send armed forces to the South for the purpose indicated in said resolutions (passed by the New York Legislature) the people of Tennessee, uniting with their brethren of the South, will, as one man, resist such invasion of the soil of the South at any hazard and to the last extremity." The expression of these resolutions was tantamount to the sentiment of secession, and illustrates the position of the Legislature and of the Executive.

Time passed and the Southern States one after another adopted ordinances of secession.\* Finally, early in February, 1861, seven of them, represented by delegates, met in convention at Montgomery, Ala., and established a Confederate States Government. This action was not lost upon those in Tennessee who favored a separation from the Federal Government, and who redoubled their efforts to induce Tennessee to follow the example of those States which had seceded from the Union. All felt that momentous events were transpiring, though few who knew the wisdom of calmness and moderation could successfully resist the wild and impetuous spirit of the hour. In the inaugural address of President Lincoln many saw coercion, an invasion of the sacred rights of state sovereignty, and a direct menace to slavery foreshadowed, and advocated the immediate passage of an ordinance of separation. Others sought diligently and vainly for a compromise that would preserve both the Union and the rights and established institutions of the South. The masses in the State were loth to dissolve the Union under which they had lived and loved so long, and were, in a great measure, in darkness as to the real issues pending and the real course to pursue. In this bewildering and doubtful maze of governmental relations, wherein a clear head and strong will could direct public action, Isham G. Harris, governor of Tennessee, proved to be the right man in the right place. This was the state of public affairs when the startling news came that Fort Sumter had surren-

\*Ordinances of secession were adopted as follows: South Carolina, December 20, 1860, without dissent; Mississippi, January 9, 1861, yeas 84, nays 15; Florida, January 10, 1861, yeas 62, nays 7; Alabama, January 11, 1861, yeas 61, nays 39; Georgia, January 18, 1861, yeas 208, nays 89; Louisiana, January 26, 1861, yeas 103, nays 7; Texas, February 1, 1861, yeas 166, nays 7; Arkansas, March 22, 1861, yeas 69, nays 1; Virginia, April 24, 1861; North Carolina, May 20, 1861; Tennessee, June 8, 1861. Confederate Government formed February 9, 1861.



dered and civil war commenced. Immediately succeeding this, while the public pulse was surging and public brain reeling, came the call of President Lincoln for 75,000 volunteers and the following telegram for Gov. Harris from the War Department:

WAR DEPARTMENT, WASHINGTON, April 15, 1861.

TO HIS EXCELLENCY ISHAM G. HARRIS, GOVERNOR OF TENNESSEE:

Call made on you by to-night's mail for two regiments of militia for immediate service.

SIMON CAMERON,

*Secretary of War*

Gov. Harris was absent from the city upon the receipt of this dispatch, but upon his return on the 17th he promptly wired the following reply:

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT, NASHVILLE, TENN., April 17, 1861.

HON. SIMON CAMERON, SECRETARY OF WAR, WASHINGTON, D. C.

*Sir:* Your dispatch of the 15th inst. informing me that Tennessee is called upon for two regiments of militia for immediate service is received. Tennessee will not furnish a single man for purposes of coercion, but 50,000, if necessary, for the defense of our rights and those of our Southern brothers.

ISHAM G. HARRIS,

*Governor of Tennessee.*

Immediately succeeding the fall of Sumter and the curt refusal of the Governor to furnish volunteers for the Federal Army, intense and long-continued excitement swept over the State. In almost every county the people assembled and, in mass-meetings and conventions, denounced the course of the administration in levying war upon the South and invading her sacred and sovereign rights. Many, who had previously expressed strong Union sentiments, were easily led to espouse the doctrine of secession, now that the policy of the Federal Administration was seen to be coercion. It became so evident at this period that the advocates of secession were in the ascendancy, that the Governor and his supporters resolved to adopt heroic measures to separate the State from the Union, set up an independent government, unite for greater security with the Confederate States, and place Tennessee in the best possible condition of defense, or to resist the encroachments of the Federal Army within her borders, thus anticipating the eventual adoption of the ordinance of secession. It had been hoped that, in case of a war between the Federal and the Confederate Governments, Tennessee might be permitted to maintain a neutral position, either as a member of the Federal Government or as an independent State in case of separation; and a correspondence, with that object in view, had been held between Gov. Magoffin of Kentucky and Gov. Harris; but the gigantic preparations for war by both the North and the South immediately succeeding the bombardment of Fort Sumter, unmasked the fact that the State would in all probability be overrun by the armies of both sections, would become a battle-ground

with all its accompanying horrors, and, therefore, could not remain neutral, engaged in the arts of peace. In this emergency Gov. Harris determined to convene the Legislature, and accordingly issued the following proclamation:

WHEREAS, An alarming and dangerous usurpation of power by the President of the United States has precipitated a state of war between the sovereign States of America,

Therefore, I, Isham G. Harris, governor of the State of Tennessee, by virtue of the power and authority in me vested by the constitution, do hereby require the senators and representatives of the two houses of the General Assembly of said State to convene at the Capitol in Nashville on the 25th of April, inst., 1861, at 12 o'clock, M., to legislate upon such subjects as may then be submitted to them.

In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and caused the great seal of the State to be affixed at the department at Nashville on this the 18th day of April, A. D. 1861.

ISHAM G. HARRIS.

On the 16th of April Gen. Cheatham, of the Second Division of Tennessee Militia, called for reports from all the organizations under his command to be made *instantly*. On the 18th Gideon J. Pillow issued an address to the "Freemen of Tennessee to organize rapidly to protect the State, its 'beauty and booty' from Northern vandalism, and the depopulating ravages of war," and asked such organizations to report promptly to Gen. Cheatham. A similar call was made at Memphis and in other portions of the State. At this time a majority of the people of Tennessee needed no encouragement to continue the formation of militia companies and regiments, to arm and otherwise equip themselves to repel an invasion of the State, and to thoroughly fit themselves for the art of war. In this course they were enthusiastically and loyally supported by the press, the church, the leading citizens and the Executive. The most serious drawback was the want of serviceable arms. It is singular, but true, that from private sources the State drew the greater portion of her first supplies of arms. Under the stern pressure of the times the volunteer militia were required to bring from their homes their flint-lock muskets, their squirrel rifles, their percussion guns, their shot-guns, their pistols, or any other firearms that could be used with effect in dealing death unsparingly to an invading foe. By the 26th of April sixteen companies were stationed at Nashville, engaged in drilling and other military preparations, and nearly as many more were assembled at Memphis. East Tennessee, through the influence of William G. Brownlow, Andrew Johnson, Thomas A. R. Nelson, Horace Maynard and others, and by reason of its lack of slave population, supported the Federal Government by a large majority, though even there volunteers for the Southern cause were not wanting. Late in April there was established at Nashville, Memphis, Jackson, Columbia and other cities, mainly through the loyalty of the ladies to the Southern cause, "Bureaus of Military Sup-

plies," where contributions of money, blankets, clothing, provisions and any necessary supplies for field or hospital were received. In all directions the stern and stirring preparations of a nation at war were steadily and rapidly advanced.

The Legislature convened on the 25th of April and determined to hold a secret session. The Governor in his message said that as the President of the United States had "wantonly inaugurated an internecine war upon the people of the slave and non-slave-holding States," etc., he would therefore "respectfully recommend the perfecting of an ordinance by the General Assembly formally declaring the independence of the State of Tennessee of the Federal Union, renouncing its authority and reassuming each and every function belonging to a separate sovereignty; and that said ordinance, when it shall have been thus perfected by the Legislature, shall at the earliest practicable time be submitted to a vote of the people to be by them adopted or rejected." He also advised such legislation as would put the State on a war footing—the raising of a volunteer force for immediate service and the perfect organization of the militia, the appropriation of a sufficient amount to provision and maintain such force, and the establishment of a military board. He also announced that since the last session of the Legislature 1,400 rifled muskets had been received by the keeper of public arms. By act of the Legislature, April 27, the Governor was authorized to have organized all the regiments that were tendered him; and his refusal to furnish volunteers under the call of the Federal Government was cordially approved. On the 1st of May the Legislature passed a joint resolution authorizing the Governor to appoint three commissioners to meet representatives of the Confederate Government in convention at Nashville, May 7, 1861, to enter into a league, military and otherwise, between the State and such Government; whereupon Gov. Harris appointed Gustavus A. Henry, of Montgomery County; Archibald W. O. Totten, of Madison County, and Washington Barrow, of Davidson County such commissioners. On the 30th of April the Confederate commissioner, Henry W. Hilliard, addressed the General Assembly on the subject of the league between the two governments and his address was ordered printed. May 1 the Governor was directed to open a correspondence with the governor of Illinois to demand of him the restitution of the cargo of the steamer "C. E. Hillman," which had been seized by the Federal troops at Cairo. He was also directed to station suitable guards at all the leading railroad depots and bridges of the State. April 26 there were appointed a joint select committee on Federal relations, a joint select committee on military affairs and a committee on ways and means. There were also incorporated at



this session the Powell River Lead Mining Company, the Bumpass Cove Lead Mining Company, the Hickman County Saltpeter Company, the Confederate Paper-Mill Company in Shelby County, the Nashville Gun Factory and the Memphis Arms Company. By the 4th of May there were stationed in West Tennessee, mainly at Memphis and Jackson, thirty-nine companies of infantry, two companies of cavalry, two companies of artillery and one company of sappers and miners.\* On the 6th of May the following bill was passed:

AN ACT TO SUBMIT TO A VOTE OF THE PEOPLE A DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE AND FOR OTHER PURPOSES.

SECTION 1. *Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the State of Tennessee*, That immediately after the passage of this act the governor of this State shall, by proclamation, direct the sheriffs of the several counties in this State to open and hold an election at the various voting precincts in their respective counties, on the 8th day of June, 1861. That said sheriffs, or in the absence of the sheriffs, the coroner of the county shall immediately advertise the election contemplated by this act. That said sheriffs appoint a deputy to hold said election for each voting precinct. And that said deputy appoint three judges and two clerks for each precinct, and if no officer shall from any cause, attend any voting precinct to open and hold said election, then any justice of the peace, or in the absence of a justice of the peace, any respectable freeholder may appoint an officer, judges and clerks to open and hold said election; said officers, judges and clerks shall be sworn as now required by law, and who, after being so sworn, shall open and hold an election, open and close at the time of day, and in the manner now required by law in elections for members to the General Assembly.

SEC. 2. *Be it further enacted*, That at said election the following declaration shall be submitted to a vote of the qualified voters of the State of Tennessee, for their ratification or rejection:

DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE AND ORDINANCE DISSOLVING THE FEDERAL RELATIONS BETWEEN THE STATE OF TENNESSEE AND THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

First, We, the people of the State of Tennessee, waiving any expression of opinion as to the abstract doctrine of secession, but asserting the right as a free and independent people, to alter, reform or abolish our form of government in such manner as we think proper, do ordain and declare that all the laws and ordinances by which the State of Tennessee became a member of the Federal Union of the United States of America are hereby abrogated and annulled, and that all obligations on our part be withdrawn therefrom; and we do hereby resume all the rights, functions and powers which by any of said laws and ordinances were conveyed to the Government of the United States, and absolve ourselves from all the obligations, restraints and duties incurred thereto; and do hereby henceforth become a free, sovereign and independent State.

Second, We furthermore declare and ordain that Article X, Sections 1 and 2 of the constitution of the State of Tennessee, which requires members of the General Assembly, and all officers, civil and military, to take an oath to support the Constitution of the United States (be and the same are hereby abrogated and annulled, and all parts of the Constitution of the State of Tennessee, making citizenship of the United States a qualification for office, and recognizing the Constitution of the United States) as the supreme law of the State, are in like manner abrogated and annulled.

Third, We furthermore ordain and declare that all rights acquired and vested under the Constitution of the United States, or under any act of Congress passed in pursuance thereof, or under any laws of this State and not incompatible with this ordinance, shall remain in force and have the same effect as if this ordinance had not been passed.

\*Report of Gen. S. R. Anderson, who, April 26, 1861, had been appointed by Gov. Harris to oversee the organization of the volunteer militia forces of West Tennessee.

SEC. 3. *Be it further enacted*, That said election shall be by ballot: that those voting for the declaration and ordinance shall have written or printed on their ballots "Separation," and those voting against it shall have written or printed on their ballots "No Separation." That the clerks holding said election shall keep regular scrolls of the voters, as now required by law in the election of members to the General Assembly; that the clerks and judges shall certify the same with the number of votes for "Separation" and the number of votes "No Separation." The officer holding the election shall return the same to the sheriff of the county, at the county seat, on the Monday next after the election. The sheriff shall immediately make out, certify and send to the governor the number of votes polled, and the number of votes for "Separation" and the number "No Separation," and file one of the original scrolls with the clerk of the county court; that upon comparing the vote by the governor in the office of the secretary of State, which shall be at least by the 24th day of June, 1861—and may be sooner if the returns are all received by the governor—if a majority of the votes polled shall be for "Separation" the governor shall by his proclamation make it known and declare all connection by the State of Tennessee with the Federal Union dissolved, and that Tennessee is a free, independent government, free from all obligations to or connection with the Federal Government; and that the governor shall cause the vote by counties to be published, the number for "Separation" and the number "No Separation," whether a majority votes for "Separation" or "No Separation."

SEC. 4. *Be it further enacted*, That in the election to be held under the provisions of this act upon the declaration submitted to the people, all volunteers and other persons connected with the service of the State, qualified to vote for members of the Legislature in the counties where they reside, shall be entitled to vote in any county in the State where they may be in active service, or under orders, or on parole at the time of said election; and all other voters shall vote in the county where they reside, as now required by law in voting for members to the General Assembly.

SEC. 5. *Be it further enacted*, That at the same time and under the rules and regulations prescribed for the election herein before ordered, the following ordinance shall be submitted to the popular vote, to wit:

AN ORDINANCE FOR THE ADOPTION OF THE CONSTITUTION OF THE PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES OF AMERICA.

We, the people of Tennessee, solemnly impressed by the perils which surround us, do hereby adopt and ratify the constitution of the provisional government of the Confederate States of America, ordained and established at Montgomery, Ala., on the 8th day of February, 1861, to be in force during the existence thereof, or until such time as we may supersede it by the adoption of a permanent constitution.

SEC. 6. *Be it further enacted*, That those in favor of the adoption of said provisional constitution and thereby securing to Tennessee equal representation in the deliberations and councils of the Confederate States shall have written or printed on their ballots the word "Representation," those opposed the words "No Representation."

SEC. 7. *Be it further enacted*, That in the event the people shall adopt the constitution of the provisional government of the Confederate States at the election herein ordered, it shall be the duty of the governor forthwith to issue writs of election for delegates to represent the State of Tennessee in the said provisional government. That the State shall be represented by as many delegates as it was entitled to members of Congress to the recent Congress of the United States of America, who shall be elected from the several congressional districts as now established by law, in the mode and manner now prescribed for the election of members to the Congress of the United States.

SEC. 8. *Be it further enacted*, That this act take effect from and after its passage.

W. C. WHITTHORNE,

*Speaker of the House of Representatives.*

B. L. STOVALL,

*Speaker of the Senate.*

Passed May 6, 1861.

The following military bill was also passed:

AN ACT TO RAISE, ORGANIZE AND EQUIP A PROVISIONAL FORCE AND FOR OTHER PURPOSES.

SECTION 1. *Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the State of Tennessee*, That it shall be the duty of the governor of the State to raise, organize and equip a provisional force of volunteers for the defense of the State, to consist of 55,000 volunteers, 25,000 of whom, or any less number which the wants of the service may demand, shall be fitted for the field at the earliest practicable moment, and the remainder of which shall be held in reserve, ready to march at short notice. And should it become necessary for the safety of the State, the governor may call out the whole available military strength of the State.

SEC. 2. *Be it further enacted*, That in the performance of this duty, the governor shall take charge of the military, direct the military defense of the State, organize the different arms, and with the concurrence of the military and financial board, hereinafter provided for, control the military fund, make contracts for arms, ordnance, ordnance stores, procure material for the construction of arms, employ artificers, organize one or more armories for the construction of arms, and do all other things necessary for the speedy and efficient organization of a force adequate for the public safety. And he shall organize a military and financial board, to consist of three persons of which he shall be *ex officio* president, and who shall discharge such duties as he may assign them in effecting the objects and purposes of this act, and appoint such number of clerks as may be necessary under such rules and regulations as they may adopt.

SEC. 3. *Be it further enacted*, That the force provided for by this act, shall be organized into regiments, brigades and divisions, and the whole to be commanded by the senior major-general, who shall immediately enter upon the duty of organizing the entire force for the field, the force authorized by this act, shall be mustered into service for the period of twelve months, unless sooner discharged.

SEC. 4. *Be it further enacted*, That the staff of said force shall consist of one adjutant-general, one inspector-general, one paymaster-general, one commissary-general, one quartermaster-general and one surgeon-general with such number of assistants of each as the wants of the service may require; and that the rank of quartermaster-general, inspector-general, adjutant-general and commissary-general shall be that of colonel of cavalry, and the rank of their assistants shall be that of lieutenant-colonel and major of infantry and captain of cavalry, all of whom shall be appointed by the governor, subject to the confirmation of the General Assembly in joint session; *Provided*, That the governor may fill vacancies in said offices, occurring when the Legislature may not be in session, and the appointees shall at once enter upon the discharge of their duties, subject to the confirmation of the Legislature when thereafter in session. There shall likewise be appointed by the governor, subject to like confirmation, one ordnance officer, with the rank of colonel of infantry, who shall take charge of the ordnance bureau of the State, direct the construction of arms, under the governor and military and finance board, receive or reject the same, certify the fulfillment of contracts, and have the general supervision of the armory of the State, with such assistants as the service may require, not exceeding three, who shall have the rank and pay of captain of infantry. The members of the military and financial board shall be nominated by the governor and confirmed by the General Assembly.

SEC. 5. *Be it further enacted*, That there shall be organized by the governor, a medical department, consisting of the surgeon-general, and two other surgeons, the members of which department shall be nominated by the governor and confirmed by the General Assembly, who shall examine all applicants for surgeon and assistant surgeon, and certify their qualifications to the governor for commission in said service, and which department shall be subject to field service as other surgeons of the army. And the said department are hereby directed, other things being equal, to recommend from volunteer forces such regimental surgeons and assistants as the service may require.

SEC. 6. *Be it further enacted*, That there shall be two major-generals, and such number of brigadier-generals as the proper and efficient command of said force may require, who shall be nominated by the governor and confirmed by the General Assembly.



with power to appoint their own staff; and a chief of engineers with such assistants as the service may require, to be nominated and confirmed in the same manner.

SEC. 7. *Be it further enacted*, That the senior major-general shall immediately enter upon the duty of organizing the whole force for the field.

SEC. 8. *Be it further enacted*, That the governor be authorized to determine the field of duty which the safety of the State may require, and direct said forces accordingly.

SEC. 9. *Be it further enacted*, That for the purpose of carrying out the provisions of this act, the governor of the State is hereby authorized to issue and dispose of five million dollars of the bonds of the State of Tennessee, similar in all respects to the bonds of the State heretofore issued, except that they shall not have more than ten years to run for maturity, and bear interest at the rate of eight per cent per annum, payable semi-annually at such point as may be therein designated; *Provided*, That three millions of said bonds shall be held as a contingent reserve fund, and not used unless in the opinion of the governor, by and with the concurrence and advice of the military and financial board, the exigencies of the service and the public safety imperatively demand it; and said bonds shall be in denomination of not less than one hundred, or greater than one thousand dollars.

SEC. 10. *Be it further enacted*, That the public faith and credit of the State is hereby pledged for the payment of the interest on said bonds and the final redemption of the same; and that an annual tax of eight cents on the one hundred dollars on the property, and *one-half cent* upon the dollar on the sales of merchandise or invoice cost, whether bought in or out of the State of Tennessee, which said one-half of one per cent is to be in lieu of the one-fourth of one per cent now levied, be assessed and set apart, and held sacred for the payment of the interest on said bonds, and the creation of a sinking fund for their final redemption; *Provided*, that no more of said tax than is sufficient to pay the interest on said bonds shall be collected, until the expiration of two years from the issuance of the same, and that the whole amount of said sinking fund shall from time to time, as the same may accumulate, be used by the governor in the purchase of said bonds; *Provided*, They can be had at a price not exceeding par rates.

SEC. 11. *Be it further enacted*, That banks and branches purchasing said bonds from the governor, shall have the privilege of classing the bonds so purchased, in the classification of their assets, as specie funds; and that the banks of the State are hereby authorized to invest their means in said bonds; *Provided*, That the State shall have the right to pay said bonds so purchased and held by said banks in their own notes; and individuals owning said bonds, having purchased the same previously of the State, shall hold the same free from taxation, either State, county, or otherwise.

SEC. 12. *Be it further enacted*, That in order to save expenses, so much of the act of the late extra session of the Legislature, as requires the supervisor to make monthly publications of bank movements, be, and the same is hereby repealed.

SEC. 13. *Be it further enacted*, That when peace shall be restored to the country, or the present danger pass away, that the governor of the State, or other rightful authority, under which said force may be at the time acting, shall issue a proclamation declaring the fact, and shall thereafter discharge the forces raised under this act, and from and after which this act shall cease to be in force.

SEC. 14. *Be it further enacted*, That the county courts of this State are empowered to assess and collect a tax on property and privileges in their respective counties; to provide a fund for the relief and support of families of volunteers whilst in actual service, when, from affliction or indigence, it may be necessary; *Provided*, That the said fund thus raised shall, in all cases, be expended for the benefit of the families of volunteers residing in the county where the same is raised; and the revenue collector, for collecting said tax, shall receive no compensation—and the same shall be paid by him, under order of the county court, to the persons to whom the same may be appropriated.

SEC. 15. *Be it further enacted*, That the county courts be authorized to issue county scrip anticipating the tax necessary in effecting the objects of the preceding section.

SEC. 16. *Be it further enacted*, That the county courts of this State are authorized and empowered to appoint and raise semi-annually a home guard of minute men, whose

term of service shall be three months, in their respective limits, to consist of companies of not less than ten for each civil district, whose officers, when elected by the companies respectively, shall be commissioned by the county courts, and whose duty it shall be to procure a warrant from some justice of the peace, and arrest all suspected persons, and bring them before the civil authorities for trial; to see that all slaves are disarmed; to prevent the assemblages of slaves in unusual numbers; to keep the slave population in proper subjection, and to see that peace and order is observed. The Home Guards or Minute Men shall be armed and equipped by each county at its own expense, and a tax may be assessed and collected for the purpose, as well as to compensate those engaged in this branch of duty, if, in their discretion, compensation should be made. The Home Guard shall assemble in their respective districts to take precautionary measures at least once in each week at the call of the commanding officer, and shall be momentarily ready for service at his call. Persons engaged in this branch of duty shall, upon failure to obey the call to duty by the commander, forfeit not less than one dollar, nor more than five for each offense, to be collected in the name of the chairman of the county court, before any justice of the peace, to be applied by the county court in defraying the expenses of this branch of the public service, unless such failure was the result of sickness or other good cause. A general commander shall be appointed for each county by the several county courts, whose duty it shall be, when necessary, to take charge of all the Home Guard or Minute Men in his county and direct their operations. And the county court is authorized to issue county bonds or scrip for the purpose of raising money immediately to meet the expenses contemplated by this section.

SEC. 17. *Be it further enacted*, That the property of all volunteers raised under the provisions of this act shall be exempt from execution and other civil process whilst in actual service; but this section shall not apply to the Home Guards.

SEC. 18. *Be it further enacted*, That the governor, in raising the volunteers provided for in this act, shall have the discretion to accept into the service volunteer companies tendered from other States and from the Confederate States, if, in his opinion, the exigencies of the service or the public safety requires it.

SEC. 19. *Be it further enacted*, That each regiment of infantry shall consist of one colonel, one lieutenant-colonel, one major and ten companies; each company shall consist of one captain, one first lieutenant, two second lieutenants, four sergeants, four corporals, two musicians, and not less than sixty-four nor more than ninety privates; and to each regiment there shall be attached one adjutant, to be selected from the lieutenants, and one sergeant-major to be selected from the enlisted men of the regiment by the colonel. The regiment of cavalry shall consist of one colonel, one lieutenant-colonel, one major and ten companies, each of which shall consist of one captain, one first lieutenant, two second lieutenants, four sergeants, four corporals, one farrier, one blacksmith, two musicians and sixty privates. There shall be one adjutant and one sergeant-major, to be selected as aforesaid.

SEC. 20. *Be it further enacted*, That each regiment shall elect its own colonel, lieutenant-colonel and major, and that each company shall elect its captain, its lieutenants, sergeants and corporals. Regimental musicians shall be appointed by the colonel, and the company musicians by the captains of companies. The colonel shall appoint his staff from his command.

SEC. 21. *Be it further enacted*, That the pay of major-general shall be three hundred dollars per month; of brigadier-general two hundred and fifty dollars per month. The aid-de-camp of a major-general, in addition to his pay as lieutenant, shall receive forty dollars per month, and the aid-de-camp of a brigadier-general shall receive, in addition to his pay as lieutenant, the sum of twenty-five dollars per month. The monthly pay of the officers of the corps of engineers shall be as follows: Of the colonel two hundred and ten dollars; of a major, one hundred and sixty-two dollars; of a captain, one hundred and forty dollars; lieutenants serving with a company of sappers and miners shall receive the pay of cavalry officers of the same grade. The monthly pay of the colonel of the corps of artillery shall be two hundred and ten dollars; of a lieutenant-colonel, one hundred and

eighty-five dollars; of a major, one hundred and fifty dollars; of a captain, one hundred and thirty dollars; of a first lieutenant, ninety dollars; of a second lieutenant, eighty dollars; and the adjutant shall receive, in addition to his pay as lieutenant, ten dollars per month. Officers of artillery serving in the light artillery, or performing ordnance duty, shall receive the same pay as officers of cavalry of the same grade. The monthly pay of the infantry shall be as follows: Of a colonel, one hundred and seventy-five dollars; of a lieutenant-colonel, one hundred and seventy dollars; of a major, one hundred and fifty dollars; of a captain, one hundred and thirty dollars; of a first lieutenant, ninety dollars; of a second lieutenant, eighty dollars; the adjutant ten dollars per month in addition to his pay as lieutenant. The monthly pay of the officers of cavalry shall be as follows: Of a colonel, two hundred dollars; of a lieutenant-colonel, one hundred and seventy-five dollars; of a major, one hundred and fifty-two dollars; of a captain, one hundred and thirty dollars; of a first lieutenant, ninety dollars; of a second lieutenant, eighty dollars; the adjutant, ten dollars per month in addition to his pay as lieutenant. The pay of the officers of the general staff, except those of the medical department, shall be the same as officers of the second grade. The surgeon-general shall receive an annual salary of twenty-five hundred dollars, which shall be in full of all pay and allowance. The pay per month of the major-general's staff shall be the same as officers of the same rank in the infantry service. The monthly pay of surgeon shall be the same as that of major of cavalry, and the pay of assistant surgeon shall be the same as the pay of first lieutenant of cavalry, and the rank of surgeon shall be that of major of cavalry, and that of assistant surgeon the same as of the first lieutenant of cavalry.

SEC. 22. *Be it further enacted*, That the pay of officers as herein established shall be in full of all allowances, except forage for horses actually in service, and the necessary traveling expenses while traveling under orders; *Provided*, that officers shall not be entitled in any case to draw forage for a greater number of horses, according to grade, than as follows: The major-general, five; the brigadier-general, four; the adjutant and inspector-general, quartermaster-general, commissary-general, and the colonel of engineers, artillery, infantry and cavalry, three each. All lieutenant-colonels, and majors, and captains of the general's staff, engineer corps, light artillery and cavalry, three each. Lieutenants serving in the corps of engineers, lieutenants of light artillery, and of cavalry, two each. No enlisted man in the service of the State shall be employed as a servant by any officer of the army. The monthly pay of the enlisted men of the army of the State shall be as follows: that of sergeant or master workman of the engineer corps, thirty dollars; that of corporal or overseer, twenty dollars; privates of the first-class, or artificers, seventeen dollars, and privates of the second class, or laborers and musicians, thirteen dollars. The sergeant-major of cavalry, twenty-one dollars; first sergeant, twenty dollars; sergeants, seventeen dollars; corporals, farriers and blacksmiths, thirteen dollars; musicians, thirteen dollars, and privates, twelve dollars. Sergeant-major of artillery and infantry, twenty-one dollars; first sergeants, twenty dollars each; sergeants, seventeen dollars; corporals and artificers, thirteen dollars; musicians, twelve dollars, and privates, eleven dollars each. The non-commissioned officers, artificers, musicians and privates serving in light batteries shall receive the same pay as those of cavalry.

SEC. 23. *Be it further enacted*, That each enlisted man of the army of the State shall receive one ration per day, and a yearly allowance of clothing; the quantity and kind of each to be established by regulation of the military and financial board, to be approved by the governor. Rations shall generally be issued in kind, unless under circumstances rendering a commutation necessary. The commutation value of the ration shall be fixed by regulation of the military and financial board to be appointed by the governor.

SEC. 24. *Be it further enacted*, That all the officers in the quartermaster's and commissary departments shall, previous to entering on the duties of their respective offices, give bonds with good and sufficient security, to the State of Tennessee, in such sum as the military and financial board shall direct, fully to account for all moneys and public property which they may receive. Neither the quartermaster-general, the commissary-gen-



eral, nor an other or either of their assistants, shall be concerned, directly or indirectly, in the purchase or sale of any articles intended for, making a part of, or appertaining to public supplies, except for and on account of the State of Tennessee; nor shall they, or either of them, take or apply to his or their own use, any gain or emolument for negotiating any business in their respective departments other than what is or may be allowed by law. The rules and articles of war established by the laws of the United States of America for the government of the army are hereby declared to be of force, except wherever the words "United States" occur, "State of Tennessee" shall be substituted therefor; and except that the articles of war numbers sixty-one and sixty-two are hereby abrogated, and the following substituted therefor:

ART. 61. Officers having brevets or commissions of a prior date to those of the corps in which they serve, will take place on courts martial or of inquiry, and on boards detailed for military purposes, when composed of different corps, according to the ranks given them in their brevet or former commissions, but in the regiment, corps or company to which such officers belong, they shall do duty and take the rank, both in courts and on boards, as aforesaid, which shall be composed of their own corps, according to the commission by which they are there mustered.

ART. 62. If upon marches, guards or in quarters, different corps shall happen to join or do duty together, the officer highest in rank, according to the commission by which he was mustered in the army, there on duty by orders from competent authority, shall command the whole, and give orders for what is needful for the service, unless otherwise directed by the governor of the State, in orders of special assignment providing for the case.

SEC. 25. *Be it further enacted*, That all mounted non-commissioned officers, privates, musicians and artificers shall be allowed forty cents per day for the use and risk of their horses; and if any mounted volunteer shall not keep himself provided with a serviceable horse, such volunteer shall serve on foot. For horses killed in action, or that die from injuries received in the service, or for want of forage, volunteers shall be allowed compensation according to their appraised value at the date of mustering into the service.

SEC. 26. *Be it further enacted*, That the military board shall procure for the service a supply of the army regulations of the United States, and provide by regulation a badge to designate the grade of officers in the service, and such flags and banners as may be necessary.

SEC. 27. *Be it further enacted*, That the pay of volunteers who have been enrolled for service before the passage of this act, if actually mustered into service, shall be counted from the time of their enrollment; and the commanding officer of artillery may appoint recruiting officers to muster into service recruits to be assigned to companies afterward, who shall receive pay and subsistence from time of enrollment.

SEC. 28. *Be it further enacted*, That any ten companies, with the requisite number of men, offering themselves in a body, shall be mustered into service as a regiment, may immediately organize by electing their field officers, and be commissioned by the governor. The seniority of captain shall be fixed by the brigadier-general regularly in command; *Provided*, that in all cases where regiments shall have previously organized and elected their officers, such organization and election may be treated by the governor as good and valid.

SEC. 29. *Be it further enacted*, That each of the members of the military and financial board shall receive compensation at the rate of fifteen hundred dollars per annum.

SEC. 30. *Be it further enacted*, That officers of artillery, from colonel to captain inclusive, shall be nominated by the governor and confirmed by the General Assembly.

SEC. 31. *Be it further enacted*, That all persons against whom indictments or pre-sentments for misdemeanors may be pending, and who have enlisted under this act in the service of the State, the same may be dismissed in the discretion of the judge before whom the same is pending, as well as for forfeitures against the defendant and his securities.

SEC. 32. *Be it further enacted*, That the keeper of the public arms be, and he is hereby directed to make suitable and proper arrangements for the convenience and protection of the arsenal of the State; and that for the expenses incurred for such purposes, the sum of twelve hundred dollars is hereby appropriated, for which the comptroller will issue his warrant upon the treasury, upon the certificate of such keeper, and approved of by the military board.

SEC. 33. *Be it further enacted*, That the municipal authorities of all incorporated towns in this State be authorized to borrow money by issuing the bonds of such corporation, or otherwise, for the military defense of such town; and in all cases where corporate authorities of said towns have already issued their bonds for the purpose aforesaid, the same is hereby declared legal and valid.

SEC. 34. *Be it further enacted*, That to enable the county court to carry into effect without delay the provisions of the fourteenth, fifteenth and sixteenth section of this act, the chairman of the county court is empowered to assemble at any time the members of the quarterly court, who, when assembled, shall have all the powers exercised by them at the regular quarterly sessions.

SEC. 35. *Be it further enacted*, That the corporate authorities of towns and cities are hereby empowered and authorized to levy a military tax upon personal and real estate, not to exceed the one-half of one per cent, and on privileges not greater than one-half the amount now paid to the State; such money to be raised shall be used for military purposes under the direction of the authority so levying and collecting the same.

SEC. 36. *Be it further enacted*, That it shall be the duty of the inspector-general of the State, to be appointed under this act, and such assistants as the governor may appoint to muster into the service of the State of Tennessee each company and regiment after the same are inspected, at such times and places as the governor shall designate, and when said troops are so mustered into the service of the State, they shall be subject to all the rules and articles of war as adopted by this act.

SEC. 37. *Be it further enacted*, That it shall be the duty of each captain upon being mustered into the service to furnish a complete roll of the officers and men in his company to the inspector-general, who shall file one copy of the same in the adjutant-general's office, and one copy to be delivered to the colonel of each regiment then formed, and it shall be the duty of the adjutant-general to furnish blank forms to the captains of companies.

SEC. 38. *Be it further enacted*, That the governor, by and with the consent of the military and financial board or bureau, shall be authorized to purchase and carry on any manufactory or manufactories of gunpowder, which may be deemed necessary for the use of the State, purchase or lease any interest in any lead, saltpetre, or other mines, and work the same for the use of the State, and may also in the name of the State make contracts for the manufacture of fire-arms or any other munitions of war, to be manufactured in the State, and make such advancements in payment for the same as may be deemed advisable to insure the ready and speedy supply thereof for the use of the State. *Provided*, that when such contract is made or entered into the individual or company making the same shall give bond and security for the repayment thereof, if the arms or other munitions of war for which such advancement may be made shall not be furnished within the time agreed upon for their delivery, or shall not be of the character contracted for.

SEC. 39. *Be it further enacted*, That for the purpose of aiding in supplying the State with arms for the public defense, that the act of January 30, 1861, incorporating the Memphis Arms Company, be and the same is hereby confirmed, and the corporators declared to be entitled to exercise all the rights and privileges intended to be given by said act; and it is further enacted, that M. Clusky, John Overton, Robert C. Brinkley, Sam. Tate, M. J. Vicks, Roberson Topp, William R. Hunt, Fred. W. Smith, J. E. R. Ray, Moses White and Ed. Munford be added to the list of corporators.

SEC. 40. *Be it further enacted*, That the governor and all other authorities having charge of finances in the movement contemplated by this act shall make full reports to

the General Assembly of the State to the amount expended, as well as the various purposes for which such expenditures may have been made.

SEC. 41. *Be it further enacted*, That this act take effect from and after its passage.

W. C. WHITTHORNE,

*Speaker of the House of Representatives*

B. R. STOVALL,

*Speaker of the Senate*

Passed May 6, 1861.

A true copy. J. E. R. RAY, *Secretary of State*.

On the 7th of May the following message was communicated to the Legislature:

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT, NASHVILLE, May 7, 1861.

*Gentlemen of the Senate and House of Representatives:*

By virtue of the authority of your joint resolution, adopted on the 1st day of May inst., I appointed Gustavus A. Henry, of the county of Montgomery; Archibald W. O. Totten, of the county of Madison, and Washington Barrow, of the county of Davidson "commissioners on the part of Tennessee, to enter into a military league with the authorities of the Confederate States, and with the authorities of such other slave-holding States as may wish to enter into it; having in view the protection and defense of the entire South against the war that is now being carried on against it."

The said commissioners met the Hon. Henry W. Hilliard, the accredited representative of the Confederate States, at Nashville, on this day, and have agreed upon and executed a military league between the State of Tennessee and the Confederate States of America, subject, however, to the ratification of the two governments, one of the duplicate originals of which I herewith transmit for your ratification or rejection. For many cogent and obvious reasons, unnecessary to be rehearsed to you, I respectfully recommend the ratification of this League at the earliest practicable moment.

Very Respectfully,

ISHAM G. HARRIS.

#### CONVENTION BETWEEN THE STATE OF TENNESSEE AND THE CONFEDERATE STATES OF AMERICA.

The State of Tennessee, looking to a speedy admission into the Confederacy established by the Confederate States of America, in accordance with the Constitution for the provisional government of said States, enters into the following temporary convention agreement and military league with the Confederate States, for the purpose of meeting pressing exigencies affecting the common rights, interests and safety of said States and said Confederacy. First, until the said State shall become a member of said Confederacy according to the constitution of both powers, the whole military force and military operations, offensive and defensive, of said State, in the impending conflict with the United States, shall be under the chief control and direction of the President of the Confederate States, upon the same basis, principles and footing as if said State was now, and during the interval, a member of said Confederacy, said force, together with that of the Confederate States, to be employed for the common defense. Second, the State of Tennessee will, upon becoming a member of said Confederacy under the permanent constitution of said Confederate States, if the same shall occur, turn over to said Confederate States all the public property acquired from the United States, on the same terms and in the same manner as the other States of said Confederacy have done in like cases. Third, whatever expenditures of money, if any, the said State of Tennessee shall make before she becomes a member of said Confederacy, shall be met and provided for by the Confederate States. This convention entered into and agreed in the city of Nashville, Tennessee, on the seventh day of May, A. D. 1861, by Henry W. Hilliard, the duly authorized commissioner to act in the matter of the Confederate States, and Gustavus A. Henry



Archibald W. O. Totten and Washington Barrow, commissioners duly authorized to act in like manner for the State of Tennessee, the whole subject to the approval and ratification of the proper authorities of both governments, respectively.

In testimony whereof the parties aforesaid have herewith set their hands and seals, the day and year aforesaid; duplicate originals.

[SEAL.] HENRY W. HILLIARD,  
*Commissioner for the Confederate States of America.*  
 [SEAL.] GUSTAVUS A. HENRY,  
 [SEAL.] A. W. O. TOTTEN,  
 [SEAL.] WASHINGTON BARROW,  
*Commissioners on the Part of Tennessee.*

Immediately upon receiving the report of the commissioners the Legislature passed the following joint resolution:

WHEREAS, A military league, offensive and defensive, was formed on this the 7th of May, 1861, by and between A. W. O. Totten, Gustavus A. Henry and Washington Barrow, commissioners on the part of the State of Tennessee, and H. W. Hilliard, commissioner on the part of the Confederate States of America, subject to the confirmation of the two governments;

*Be it therefore resolved by the General Assembly of the State of Tennessee,* That said league be in all respects ratified and confirmed; and the said General Assembly hereby pledges the faith and honor of the State of Tennessee to the faithful observance of the terms and conditions of said league.

The following is the vote in the Senate on the adoption of the league:  
 Ayes: Messrs. Allen, Horn, Hunter, Johnson, Lane, Minnis, McClellan, McNeilly, Payne, Peters, Stanton, Thompson, Wood and Speaker Stovall—14. Nays: Messrs. Boyd, Bradford, Hildreth, Nash, Richardson and Stokes—6. Absent and not voting: Messrs. Bumpass, Mickley, Newman, Stokely and Trimble—5.

The following is the vote in the House: Ayes: Messrs. Baker, of Perry; Baker, of Weakley; Bayless, Bicknell, Bledsoe, Cheatham, Cowden, Davidson, Davis, Dudley, Ewing, Farley, Farrelly, Ford, Frazier, Gantt, Guy, Havron, Hurt, Ingram, Jones, Kenner, Kennedy, Lea, Lockhart, Martin, Mayfield, McCabe, Morphies, Nall, Pickett, Porter, Richardson, Roberts, Sheid, Smith, Sowell, Trevitt, Vaughn, Whitmore, Woods and Speaker Whitthorne—42. Nays: Messrs. Armstrong, Brzelton, Butler, Caldwell, Gorman, Greene, Morris, Norman, Russell, Senter, Strewsbury, White, of Davidson; Williams, of Knox; Wisener and Woodward—15. Absent and not voting: Messrs. Barksdale, Beaty, Bennett, Britton, Critz, Doak, East, Gillespie, Harris, Hebb, Johnson, Kincaid, of Anderson; Kincaid, of Claiborne; Trewhitt; White, of Dickson; Williams, of Franklin; Williams, of Hickman, and Williamson—18.

The action of the Legislature in passing the ordinance of secession, in adopting the provisional constitution of the Confederacy, in passing the army bill and in ratifying the league between Tennessee and the Confederate Government, all subject to adoption or rejection by the people of the State, and all done amid great excitement within a few days,

met the heartiest and wildest reception from all portions of the State. The only opposition encountered was in East Tennessee; but the Governor, as commander-in-chief of the provisional army, determined to occupy that portion of the State immediately with troops in the hope of subjecting it to the Confederate cause. As soon as possible, by virtue of the authority vested in him by the army bill, he made the following military appointments, all of which were ratified by the General Assembly:

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT, NASHVILLE, May 9, 1861.

*Gentlemen of the Senate and House of Representatives:*

I have nominated and herewith submit for your confirmation the following gentlemen:

For major-generals, Gideon J. Pillow, Samuel R. Anderson. For brigadier-generals, Felix K. Zollicoffer, Benjamin F. Cheatham, Robert C. Foster, third; John L. T. Sneed, W. R. Caswell. For adjutant-general, Daniel S. Donelson. For inspector-general, William H. Carroll. For quarter-master general, Vernon K. Stevenson. For commissary-general, R. G. Fain. For paymaster-general, William Williams. For surgeon-general, Dr. Paul F. Eve. For assistant surgeon-generals, Dr. Joseph C. Newnan, Dr. John D. Winston. For assistant adjutant-generals, W. C. Whitthorne, James D. Porter, Jr., Hiram S. Bradford, D. M. Key. For assistant inspector-generals, J. W. Gillespie, James L. Scudder, John C. Brown, Alexander W. Campbell. For assistant quartermaster-generals, Paulding Anderson, George W. Cunningham, Samuel T. Bicknell, George W. Fisher, Thomas L. Marshall, Thomas Peters, John G. Finnie, W. P. Davis, J. H. McMahon. For assistant commissary-generals, Calvin M. Fackler, John L. Brown, Miles Draughn, Madison Stratton, James S. Patton, W. W. Guy, P. T. Glass. For assistant paymaster-generals, Claiborne Deloach, William B. Reese, Jr., Thomas Boyers. For lieutenant-colonel of artillery, John P. McCown. For military and financial board, Neill S. Brown, James E. Bailey, William G. Harding.

By reference to your act of the 6th of May, and the army regulations, it will be seen that there are additional nominations yet to be submitted, the number of which it is impossible for me to determine until it is ascertained, with at least some degree of certainty, the number of troops that it may be necessary to call into active service. I have, therefore, nominated the heads of departments with such assistants as I considered necessary to the work of immediate organization, leaving the developments of the future to determine the additional appointments it may be proper to make.

Very Respectfully,

ISHAM G. HARRIS.

Later the following appointments were made:

*Gentlemen of the Senate and House of Representatives:*

Under the act of the General Assembly of the 6th of May, 1861, I have made the following nominations for the consideration and confirmation of the General Assembly, to wit:

On the 10th instant—Dr. B. W. Avent, surgeon-general, *vice* Dr. Paul F. Eve, resigned. On the 10th instant—For surgeon of Col. Preston Smith's regiment, Dr. Emmett Woodward and Dr. Richard Butt, assistant-surgeon. On the 15th instant—For surgeon of Col. J. Knox Walker's regiment, Dr. James D. Lindsay. On the 17th instant—For surgeon of Col. George Maney's regiment, Dr. William Nichol and J. R. Buist, assistant-surgeon. On the 17th instant—For surgeon of Col. John C. Brown's regiment, Dr. Samuel H. Stout. On the 13th instant—For captains of the artillery corps, Arthur N. Rutledge, Marshall T. Polk, William H. Jackson, Andrew Jackson, Jr. On the 17th instant—Reuben Ross, James H. Wilson, Smith P. Bankhead, Robert M. Russell. On the 17th instant—For colonel commandant of the artillery corps, John P. McCown. For

lieutenant-colonel, Milton A. Haynes. For major, Alexander P. Stewart. On the 15th instant—For captain of ordnance, Moses H. Wright. On the 16th instant—For assistant adjutant-generals, Pallok B. Lee and Adolphus Nicman. On the 15th instant—For assistant inspector-general, Henry Wall, *vice* John C. Brown, declined. Jo. G. Pickett and C. H. Williams. On the 16th instant—For major of engineer corps, B. R. Johnson. For the captains of said corps, W. D. Pickett, Montgomery Lynch and W. A. Forbes. On the 16th instant—For assistant quartermaster-general, Jesse B. Clements, *vice* Paulding Anderson, declined, John L. Schon, E. Foster Cheatham, James Glover, John W. Eldridge, A. J. Vaughn, John S. Bransford, John S. Hill, A. L. McClellan, Nathan Adams, H. T. Massengale, John W. Gorham, Frank M. Paul, S. H. Whitthorne. On the 17th instant—For assistant commissary-generals, Frank W. Green, John R. Wood, Daniel P. Cocke, John W. Crisp, O. B. Caldwell, Lee M. Gardner, William C. Bryan, Jerome Ridley, William H. Stover, R. H. Williamson, John D. Allen, Albert G. Eiring, G. W. Menees, Samuel E. Barbee. The rank of the various appointees will be determined upon the issuance of commissions, after confirmation by the General Assembly. In the meantime they will enter upon the duties of their respective positions as they may be ordered to do by their superior officers.

In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and caused the great seal of the State to be affixed at the department at Nashville, this the 18th of May, 1861.

ISHAM G. HARRIS.

By the Governor:

J. E. R. RAY, *Secretary of State*.

After the passage of the army bill the formation and thorough discipline of regiments for the field rapidly took place. Memphis and Nashville became stirring military centers. Every county seat was a camp. Almost every pursuit was dropped except the popular art of making war. As a result great progress was made, and soon more than the number of volunteers called for were ready, and as fast as they could be supplied with arms were mustered into the provisional army of Tennessee. Herculean efforts were made to supply the regiments as fast as possible with arms, and calls were issued by the authorities for guns of any description that could be used with effect—shot-guns, flint-lock and percussion rifles, squirrel and bear guns, pistols, etc. On the 18th of June the Legislature again met, pursuant to the call of the Governor, who, in his message, recommended that, owing to the difficulty of converting the bonds ordered issued under the army bill of May 6 into money, three-fifths (\$3,000,000) of the amount (\$5,000,000) should be issued in treasury notes in lieu of an equivalent amount of such bonds: that the interest on the internal improvement bonds of the State, payable in New York, should be made payable at Nashville, Charleston or New Orleans; and that all necessary legislation to regulate the currency of the State should be made. He also submitted a statement of the progress made in placing the State in an attitude of defense. Twenty-one regiments of infantry had been organized and were in the field; ten artillery companies were in progress of completion; enough cavalry companies to form a regiment were also well advanced, and an engineers



corps was nearly ready for service. Besides these three regiments from the State were with the Confederate Army in Virginia, and a small squad was with the army at Pensacola. In addition, many of the militia regiments were as ready for the field as several which had been accepted and mustered in.

In accordance with the provisions of the act of May 6 an election was held throughout the State June 8, for the people to decide upon the question of secession or separation, and the question of representation in the Confederate States Congress, and the adoption of the provisional constitution of the Confederate Government. It was well assured at the start that both "separation" and "representation" would carry by handsome majorities, and this assurance was well sustained as the returns began to come in. The following proclamation by the Governor officially announced the result:

#### PROCLAMATION.

*To all whom these Presents shall come—Greeting:*

WHEREAS, By an act of the General Assembly of the State of Tennessee, passed on the 6th of May, 1861, an election on the 8th of June, 1861, was held in the several counties of the State in accordance therewith, upon the Ordinance of Separation and Representation; and also, whereas, it appears from the official returns of said election (hereto appended) that the people of the State of Tennessee have in their sovereign will and capacity, by an overwhelming majority, cast their votes for "Separation," dissolving all political connection with the late United States Government, and adopted the provisional government of the Confederate States of America:

*Now, therefore*, I, Isham G. Harris, governor of the State of Tennessee, do "make it known and declare all connection of the State of Tennessee with the Federal Union dissolved, and that Tennessee is a free, independent government, free from all obligation to, or connection with, the Federal Government of the United States of America.

In testimony whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and caused the great seal of the State to be affixed at the department in Nashville, on this, the 24th day of June, A. D., 1861.

ISHAM G. HARRIS.

By the Governor:

J. E. R. RAY, *Secretary of State*.

#### OFFICIAL ELECTION RETURNS.

##### EAST TENNESSEE.

COUNTIES.	Separation.	Representation.	No Sep'n.	No Rep'n.
Anderson .....	97	97	1,278	1,278
Bledsoe .....	197	186	500	455
Bradley .....	507	505	1,382	1,380
Blount .....	418	414	1,766	1,768
Campbell .....	59	60	1,000	1,000
Carter .....	86	86	1,343	1,343
Claiborne .....	250	246	1,243	1,247
Cocke .....	518	517	1,185	1,185
Grainger .....	586	582	1,492	1,489
Greene .....	744	738	2,691	2,702
Hamilton .....	854	837	1,260	1,271

COUNTIES.	Separation.	Representation.	No Sep'n.	No Rep'n.
Hancock.....	279	278	630	630
Hawkins.....	908	886	1,460	1,463
Jefferson.....	603	597	1,987	1,990
Johnson.....	111	111	787	786
Knox.....	1,226	1,214	3,196	3,201
McMinn.....	904	892	1,144	1,152
Marion.....	414	413	600	601
Meigs.....	481	478	267	268
Monroe.....	1,096	1,089	774	775
Morgan.....	50	50	630	632
Polk.....	738	731	317	319
Scott.....	19	19	521	521
Sequatchie.....	153	151	100	100
Rhea.....	360	336	202	217
Roane.....	454	436	1,568	1,580
Sevier.....	60	60	1,528	1,528
Sullivan.....	1,586	1,576	627	637
Washington.....	1,022	1,016	1,445	1,444
Totals.....	14,780	14,601	32,923	32,962

## MIDDLE TENNESSEE.

COUNTIES.	Separation.	Representation.	No Sep'n.	No Rep'n.
Bedford.....	1,595	1,544	727	737
Cannon.....	1,149	1,145	127	118
Cheatham.....	702	697	55	59
Coffee.....	1,276	1,268	26	28
Davidson.....	5,635	5,572	402	441
DeKalb.....	833	823	642	655
Dickson.....	1,141	1,133	72	75
Fentress.....	128	120	651	657
Franklin.....	1,652	1,650	0	1
Giles.....	2,458	2,464	11	5
Grundy.....	528	528	9	9
Hardin.....	498	493	1,051	1,052
Hickman.....	1,400	1,400	3	3
Humphreys.....	1,042	1,042	0	0
Jackson.....	1,483	1,480	714	710
Lawrence.....	1,124	1,122	75	64
Lewis.....	223	216	14	17
Lincoln.....	2,912	2,892	0	9
Macon.....	447	446	697	697
Marshall.....	1,642	1,638	101	104
Maury.....	2,731	2,693	58	78
Montgomery.....	2,631	2,630	33	29
Overton.....	1,471	1,471	364	365
Robertson.....	3,839	3,835	17	12
Rutherford.....	2,392	2,377	73	93
Smith.....	1,249	1,247	676	675
Stewart.....	1,839	1,839	99	73
Sumner.....	6,465	6,441	69	82
Van Buren.....	308	308	13	13
Warren.....	1,419	1,400	12	15
Wayne.....	409	361	905	905
White.....	1,370	1,367	121	121
Williamson.....	1,945	1,918	28	35
Wilson.....	2,329	2,298	353	361
Totals.....	58,265	57,858	8,298	8,298

## WEST TENNESSEE.

COUNTIES.	Separation.	Representation.	No Sep'n.	No Rep'n.
Benton.....	798	796	228	226
Carroll.....	967	952	1,349	1,351
Deatur.....	310	293	550	537
Dyer.....	811	779	116	133
Fayette.....	1,364	1,364	23	23
Gibson.....	1,999	1,954	286	219
Hardeman.....	1,526	1,508	29	50
Haywood.....	930	924	139	143
Henderson.....	801	790	1,013	1,013
Henry.....	1,746	1,734	317	317
Lauderdale.....	763	759	7	0
McNairy.....	1,318	1,365	586	591
Madison.....	2,754	2,751	20	21
Obion.....	2,996	2,957	64	88
Perry.....	780	779	168	169
Shelby.....	7,132	7,127	5	5
Tipton.....	943	941	16	18
Weakley.....	1,189	1,189	1,201	1,200
Totals.....	29,127	28,962	6,117	6,114

## MILITARY CAMPS.

CAMPS.	Separation.	Representation.	No Sep'n.	No Rep'n.
Camp Davis, Va.....	506	506	00	00
Camp Duncan, Tenn.....	111	111	00	00
Harper's Ferry, Va.....	575	575	00	00
Fort Pickens, Fla.....	737	737	00	00
Fort Harris, Tenn.....	159	159	00	00
Camp De Soto, Tenn.....	15	15	00	00
Hermitage Camp, Va.....	16	16	00	00
Camp Jackson, Va.....	622	622	00	00
Fort Randolph, Tenn.*.....	3,598	3,598	00	00
Total.....	6,339	6,339	00	00

\*Reported.

## AGGREGATES.

DIVISIONS.	Separation.	Representation.	No Sep'n.	No Rep'n.
East Tennessee.....	14,780	14,601	32,923	32,962
Middle Tennessee.....	58,265	57,858	8,298	8,298
West Tennessee.....	29,127	28,962	6,117	6,114
Military Camps.....	6,339	6,339	0,000	0,000
	108,511	107,760	47,338	47,374
	47,338	47,374		
Majorities.....	61,173	60,386		

The Confederate Congress had, May 17, anticipated the action of Tennessee in separating herself from the Federal Government, and had,



before adjournment, and before the result of the election of June 8 became known, passed the following act:

AN ACT TO ADMIT THE STATE OF TENNESSEE INTO THE CONFEDERACY, ON A CERTAIN CONDITION.

The State of Tennessee having adopted measures looking to an early withdrawal from the United States, and to becoming, in the future, a member of this Confederacy, which measures may not be consummated before the approaching recess of Congress; therefore, *The Congress of the Confederate States of America do enact*, That the State of Tennessee shall be admitted a member of the Confederate States of America, upon an equal footing with the other States, under the constitution for the provisional government of the same, upon the condition that the said constitution for the provisional government of the Confederate States shall be adopted and ratified by the properly and legally constituted authorities of said State, and the governor of said State shall transmit to the President of the Confederate States, before the reassembling of Congress after the recess aforesaid, an authentic copy of the proceedings touching said adoption and ratification by said State of said provisional constitution; upon the receipt whereof, the President, by proclamation, shall announce the fact, whereupon and without any further proceeding on the part of Congress, the admission of said State of Tennessee into the Confederacy, under said Constitution for the provisional government of the Confederate States, shall be considered as complete; and the laws of this Confederacy shall be thereby extended over said State as fully and completely as over the States now composing the same.

HOWELL COBB,

*President of the Congress.*

Approved May 17, 1861.

JEFFERSON DAVIS.

The following was the provisional government of the Confederate States of America: Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, president; Alexander H. Stephens, of Georgia, vice-president. Cabinet Officers: Robert Toombs, of Georgia, secretary of state; C. G. Memminger, of South Carolina, secretary of the treasury; L. P. Walker, of Alabama, secretary of war; S. B. Mallory, of Florida, secretary of navy; J. H. Reagan, of Texas, postmaster-general; J. P. Benjamin, of Louisiana, attorney-general. Congress: Hon. Howell Cobb, of Georgia, president; J. J. Hooper, of Alabama, secretary. Standing Committees: Executive Department—Stephens, Conrad, Boyce, Shorter, Brooke; Foreign Affairs—Rhett, Nisbet, Perkins, Walker, Keitt; Military Affairs—Bartow, Miles, Sparrow, Kenan, Anderson; Naval Affairs—Conrad, Chestnut, Smith, Wright, Owens; Finance—Toombs, Barnwell, Kenner, Barry, McRae; Commerce—Memminger, Crawford, DeClouet, Morton, Curry; Judiciary—Clayton, Withers, Hale, Cobb, Harris; Postal—Chilton, Boyce, Hill, Harris, Curry; Patents—Brooke, Wilson, Lewis, Hill, Kenner; Territories—Chestnut, Campbell, Marshall, Nisbet, Fearne; Public Lands—Marshall, Harris, Fearne; Indian Affairs—Morton, Hale, Sparrow, Lewis, Keitt; Printing—Cobb, Harris, Miles, Chilton, Perkins; Accounts—Owens, Crawford, Campbell, DeClouet, Smith; Engrossment—Shorter, Wilson, Kenan, McRae, Bartow.

The ratification of the governor's military appointments had no

sooner been made by the Legislature than the assignment of officers to their commands was officially announced. Prior to this, on the 25th of April, Gov. Harris had directed Gen. S. R. Anderson to proceed to Memphis to organize the various volunteer forces at that point and throughout West Tennessee. He remained at Memphis, engaged in active and valuable military work, until about May 3, when he transferred the completion of the organizations there to Gen. J. L. T. Sneed and returned to Nashville. On the 3d of May ten companies at Nashville were mustered into the State service and became the First Tennessee Regiment, commanded by Col. George Maney. About the same time another regiment, which became the First Confederate Tennessee, was organized at Winchester, with Peter Turney, colonel. By the 5th of the same month 171 companies had reported themselves ready for the field to the adjutant-general. On the 9th of May Gov. Harris appointed his staff as follows: James W. McHenry, adjutant-general; David R. Smith, quartermaster-general; John H. Crozier, inspector-general; John V. Wright, first aide-de-camp; Preston Smith, second aide-de-camp; Gideon J. Pillow, senior major-general, was placed in command of the provisional army of the State, with headquarters at Memphis. Samuel R. Anderson, junior major-general, was assigned to the command of the Department of Middle Tennessee, with headquarters at Nashville, and, May 14, appointed William A. Quarles and Granville P. Smith his aides-de-camp and W. C. Whitthorne, his assistant adjutant-general. On the 17th Brig.-Gen. R. C. Foster, by order of Gen. Anderson, took command of the forces at Camp Cheatham, Robertson County, and about the same time Brig.-Gen. F. K. Zollicoffer was assigned to the command of the militia at Camp Trousdale, Sumner County, and Brig.-Gen. W. R. Caswell to the command of the forces of East Tennessee with headquarters at Knoxville. Gen. B. F. Cheatham was assigned to command at Union City, and Gen. John L. T. Sneed at Randolph. The military and financial board appointed by the governor under the army bill consisted of Neill S. Brown, William G. Harding and James E. Bailey. Gov. Harris was *ex-officio* a member of this board. The members were appointed immediately after the passage of the army bill, and soon had established in active working order all the military departments created by that instrument. Although no formal call was issued by the governor for troops until June 21, the rapid mustering of militia for the provisional army and the concentration at important points and along the northern boundary of the State, were steadily, yet informally, pursued by virtue of the popular belief that the State was in imminent danger of invasion. May 19 the Nashville *Patriot* stated that up to that date about

25,000 volunteers had been tendered the governor. On the 20th of May Gen. Pillow at Memphis ordered reprisals taken of Northern property passing that city on the river, railroads or otherwise, and required all vessels and shipments to be examined with the view of ascertaining the ownership of cargoes, etc. About May 22 Gen. Zollicoffer succeeded in securing, via Chattanooga, several thousand stands of arms from the Confederate Government. Two days later news was received at Memphis that 15,000 Federal troops were on the eve of departing down the river from Cairo to capture and sack the former city, which report occasioned great bustle and excitement. By the 25th of May about 17,000 stands of arms had been received by the State authorities from the Confederate Government. Three days later several six-pound cannons, which had been manufactured by Ellis & Moore, Nashville, were tested and found serviceable. By the 29th there were encamped at Knoxville between twenty-five and thirty companies, and from them Col. Churchwell's regiment had been organized. Eight or ten companies had been rendezvoused at Chattanooga and vicinity and were encamped there ready for service. Late in May the county court at Memphis appropriated \$12 for the wife and \$6 for each child, per month, of each volunteer who should enter the Confederate service. At this time Whitfield, Bradley & Co., of Clarksville, were making serviceable cannon. At the election of June 8 Tennessee troops to the number of 737 polled their votes for "separation" at Pensacola, Fla.

Early in June much had been done with the means at hand, to place the State in an attitude of defense. Five or six batteries were posted along the Mississippi River, from Memphis to the Kentucky line, commanding the leading strategic points, and consisting of mortars, columbiads and twenty-four and thirty-two pounders, and were manned by a corps of ten fairly well organized companies of Tennessee artillery, under the command of Cols. J. P. McCown and M. A. Haynes. About 15,000 volunteers were concentrated at Memphis, Jackson and other principal points in West Tennessee, and were under the command of Maj.-Gen. Gideon J. Pillow, of the provisional army. Considerable action had been taken to prepare defenses along or near the northern boundary of the State, to be in readiness for any invasion from the North. The importance of constructing fortifications along the Tennessee and the Cumberland Rivers, as well as along the Mississippi, had been seriously considered, and energetic steps had been taken in that direction. The concentration of Federal forces at Cairo, Ill., late in April, had aroused the apprehension of the authorities of the State and of the Confederate Government, that an advance of the enemy was contemplated down the Mississippi, and doubt-



lessly up the Tennessee and the Cumberland Rivers. It was deemed important to have the militia in such a state of readiness that it could be called into the field at a moment's warning, and Gov. Harris, June 21, issued General Order, No. 1, to that effect. June 3 Gen. Anderson, in command of the Department of Middle Tennessee, called for 2,000 riflemen, the companies to furnish their own rifles, and for five companies of cavalry, all to furnish their own double-barreled shot-guns. June 1 the Confederate law which prohibited the exportation of cotton, except through Southern ports, came into operation, and Gen. Pillow, commander at Memphis, ordered that none should be sent North through Tennessee or out of Tennessee. Pursuant to the provisions of the army bill, home guards were organized, and a committee of safety appointed in almost every county of the State. Early in June the city authorities of Memphis had, at their own expense, purchased commissary, quartermaster and ordnance stores and armament for fortifications along the Mississippi, and an agent was appointed by the Legislature to settle with them for such expense. The strategic importance of the location of Memphis was early recognized by the authorities of that city, who received great praise for their prompt action to secure control of the Mississippi. Early in June a force of about 8,000 Mississippians, under the command of Maj.-Gen. Clark, passed northward through West Tennessee, to co-operate with the latter State against the threatened advance southward of the Federals from Cairo.

On the 27th of June the military bill was amended. The bonds to be issued under the act of May 6, were exempted from taxation, and further an ample provision was made for the organization, equipment and discipline of volunteers and militia. Provision was made for the support of the families of such volunteers as should become insane in the service; and all moneys or property owing by citizens of the State to citizens of any non-slave-holding State were declared non-collectable during hostilities between Tennessee and the Federal Government; that such moneys could be paid into the State treasury and upon the cessation of hostilities should be refunded with interest. It was enacted, June 27, that treasury notes to the amount of \$3,000,000, in whole or in part, in lieu of the \$3,000,000 of the bonds authorized to be issued under the act of May 6, should be circulated, and that such notes should bear interest not to exceed 6 per centum. July 1, it was made lawful for the banks of the State to receive and pay out the treasury notes of the Confederate Government, and State officers were required to receive such notes in payment of money due the State. Banks were required to increase their circulation, to withhold dividends due stockholders in non-slave-holding States while the

war continued; and it was made unlawful to pay either interest or principal of the bonds of the State held by citizens in non-slave-holding States until the war should cease; or for bank officers to remove the assets of stockholders of non-slave-holding States from Tennessee. These provisions were deemed necessary in view of the probable future scarcity of money to carry on civil and military affairs. The authorities were not unmindful of the trials and tribulations of their Revolutionary fathers, and made careful estimates of chances to carry the State safely through the storm of war. June 28 it was enacted that the authorities of Giles County might assess and collect a tax for the manufacture of fire-arms, gunpowder and other munitions of war. June 28 the inspector of the State penitentiary was authorized to borrow of the State bank \$10,000, to be used in the purchase of material for making shoes, hats and army accoutrements. June 29 it was "resolved by the General Assembly of the State of Tennessee that the governor be authorized and requested to place at the disposal of the Confederate States the volunteer forces of the State of Tennessee, the same to be mustered into the service of said States subject to the rules and regulations adopted by the Confederate authorities for the government of the Confederate Army; and that in making the arrangements therefore we shall have in view the placing of the defense of the State under the immediate control and direction of the President of the Confederate States."

Within a few weeks after the formation of militia companies had commenced, the women of the State organized in all the leading cities to secure contributions of all kinds of supplies for camp, field and hospital. By the 19th of June the society at Nashville, comprising 231 ladies, had collected and sent to camp 4,745 pieces of wearing apparel, etc. Organizations at Memphis had done nearly as well. During the early months of the war the societies were often reorganized, and the result of their labors was highly appreciated by the sweltering militia in the various hot and uncomfortable camps. August 12 the State Soldier's Aid Society was formed at Nashville, with branches throughout Middle Tennessee. From that date until October 1 the society sent to the various camps over fifty large boxes of supplies of all descriptions, and collected in cash \$1,834.20. Nashville, Clarksville, Franklin, Pulaski, Columbia, Murfreesboro, Springfield, Harpeth and other cities donated the money and supplies. Mrs. F. G. Porter, of Nashville, was president of the State Society. A flourishing society at Memphis accomplished almost as much good as the one at Nashville. August 22 Gov. Harris issued a proclamation to the women of the State to permanently organize for the cold weather, which had the happy effect of multiplying the societies in all

directions and supplying necessities to many a poor soldier boy during the cold winter of 1861-62.

On the 6th of July Gov. Harris issued a proclamation calling for 3,000 volunteers to meet the requisition of the Confederate Government on the State of Tennessee. About the middle of July, pursuant to the offer of the Tennessee Legislature, the Confederate Government accepted the transfer of the provisional army of Tennessee to the Confederacy, and issued directions to have the troops received and mustered in. About this time Gens. Gideon J. Pillow, S. R. Anderson and D. S. Donelson were commissioned brigadier-generals in the Confederate States Army. July 12 Dr. S. McKissack, of Maury County, bought \$3,000 worth of Confederate Government bonds at par, the first purchase made in the State. Gens. B. F. Cheatham and F. K. Zollicoffer were commissioned brigadier-generals of the Confederate States Army about the 20th of July. About this time Gen. S. R. Anderson succeeded Gen. Caswell in command of the Confederate forces in East Tennessee. Col. Jo Pickett was his chief of staff. The following is the report of the military and financial board to Gov. Harris, bearing date July 18, 1861:

Quartermaster-general's department.....	\$918,775 94
Commissary-general's department.....	522,456 03
Paymaster-general's department.....	399,600 00
Medical department.....	8,500 00
Ordnance department.....	362,045 91
Contingencies.....	12,513 03
Total.....	<u>\$2,223,890 91</u>

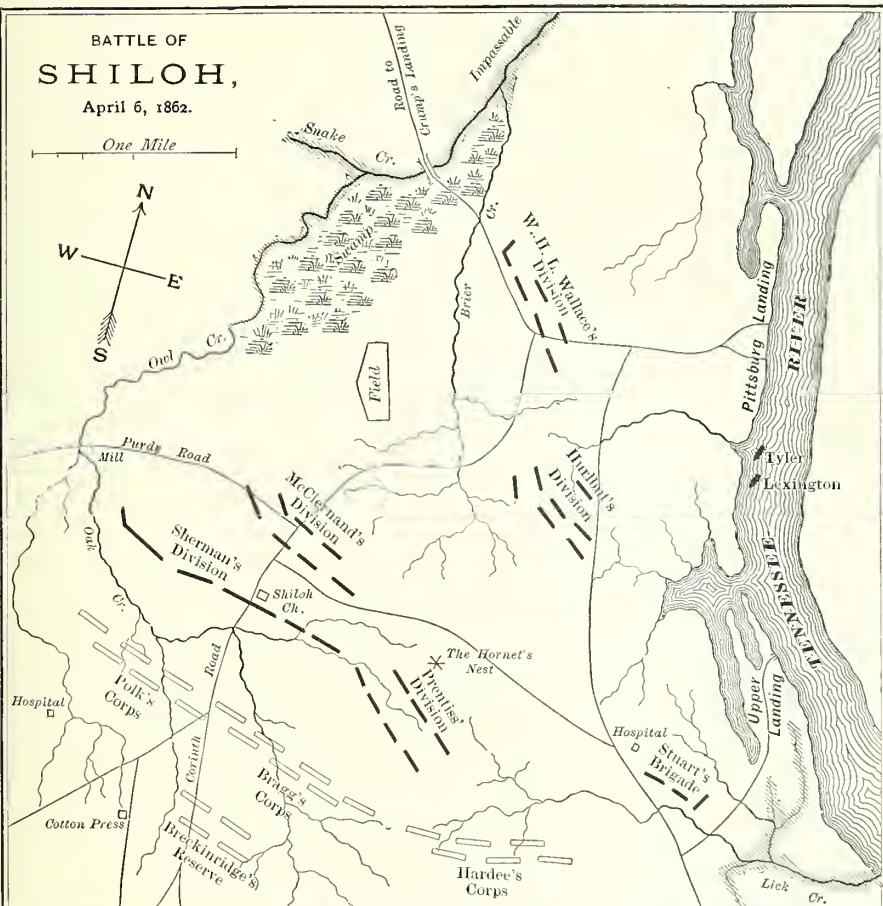
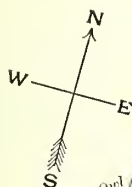
July 26 Gen. Pillow left Memphis with part of the troops designed for the contemplated campaign northward, moving to Randolph, thence to New Madrid, Mo., where he was joined by Gen. Cheatham with a force from Union City. On the 31st of July Gov. Harris issued a general order that the officers of the provisional army should muster their command for the inspection of representative military men of the Confederacy authorized to effect the transfer of the troops, and should prepare revised rolls of their companies and regiments to be handed to the Confederate inspector, which acts would operate as a transfer of the State forces to the Southern army. By the 7th of August the transfer was completed. This almost stripped the State of its defensive army, whereupon Gov. Harris issued a call for 30,000 volunteers to serve as a "Reserve Corps of Tennessee." On the 1st of August the State voted on the question of the adoption of the permanent constitution of the Confederacy and gave a majority of about 30,000 in its favor. Col. Heiman commanding the troops at Fort Henry on the Tennessee, issued an order to seize all property of the North passing down the river. Au-



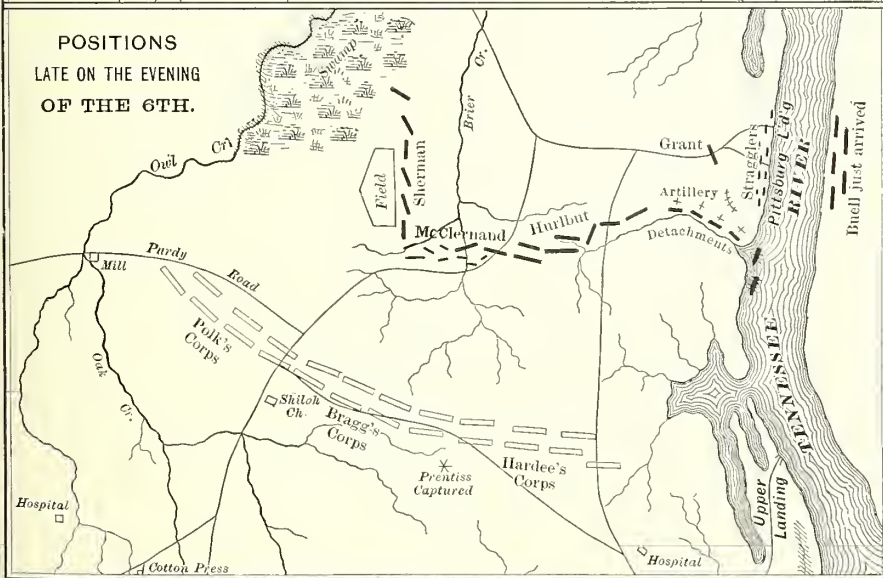
# BATTLE OF SHILOH,

April 6, 1862.

One Mile



## POSITIONS LATE ON THE EVENING OF THE 6TH.





gust 1 Gov. Harris was re-elected over his Union competitor, W. H. Polk, of East Tennessee, by a majority of about 30,000. August 22 Gen. Foster, who had succeeded Gen. Anderson in command of the post at Nashville, ordered that thereafter no person would be permitted to leave Tennessee without a passport. About this time there were several bloody encounters in East Tennessee between Federal and Confederate residents. About the middle of September Gen. Foster resigned his command at Nashville. At this time, also, the Confederate Government called upon Tennessee for 30,000 volunteers.

During the summer and autumn of 1861 great advancement was made in mustering regiments for the field and in preparing arms, ordnance and equipments. By the 17th of July the factories at Nashville were manufacturing 100,000 percussion caps daily, and two foundries at Memphis were molding strong and serviceable cannons. A little later muskets and cannons, shot and shell, saddles and harness, knapsacks, etc., were manufactured in considerable quantity at Nashville. There were cannon factories at Memphis, Clarksville, Murfreesboro, Lebanon, Pulaski, Shelbyville, Franklin and elsewhere, and small-arm factories on a limited scale were scattered throughout the State. The Governor's message to the Legislature October 7, 1861, summed up the military record of the State: In about two months 30,000 volunteers had been placed on the field, many having been declined; the provisional army had been transferred, July 31, to the Confederacy; a total of thirty-eight regiments of infantry, seven battalions of cavalry and sixteen artillery companies had been raised; all supplies necessary had been furnished by the "Military and Financial Board," despite the blockade of the Southern ports and the almost utter lack of sources of supplies at home; factories had been so encouraged that by the 1st of October 250 guns were made weekly in the State and 1,300,000 percussion caps; and lead and powder companies, particularly the latter, had done a creditable part in preparing the State for war. The Governor submitted the following report of military expenses prior to October 1:

Quartermaster-general's department.....	\$1,657,706 65
Commissary-general's department.....	627,064 87
Paymaster-general's department.....	1,104,800 00
Medical department.....	24,761 21
Ordnance department ..	990,291 20
Recruiting service.....	723 25
Advance on gun, saltpeter and powder contracts, etc.....	456,826 08
Advance to Gen. Pillow for the Missouri campaign.....	200,000 00
Contingent expense .....	31,850 59

---

Total..... \$5,094,023 85



All army supplies had been transferred to the Confederate Government, which assumed the payment of all Tennessee military obligations. Property had depreciated to such an extent as to make it appear necessary to raise the rate of taxation, which was accordingly done. In November strong Union forces began to concentrate at Elizabethton, near Bristol, and at Strawberry Plains in East Tennessee, and several skirmishes occurred. On the 19th of November the Governor issued a proclamation declaring that there was great danger of an invasion of the State by the Federal forces and calling out the "Reserve Corps" for service in the field. This was in response to the request of Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston, Confederate commander of the Department of Tennessee, whose headquarters were at Memphis, and whose clear discernment of strategic art detected the coming advance of the Federals down the Mississippi and up the Tennessee and the Cumberland Rivers. At this time great difficulty was experienced by the Confederate Government in furnishing its troops with arms. The Governor, though herculean exertions had been made, found it impossible to arm the "Reserve Corps," and accordingly, November 2, issued an appeal to the citizens of the State to deliver to their county clerks "every effective double-barreled shot-gun and sporting rifle which they may have, to be immediately shipped to the arsenal at Nashville, Knoxville or Memphis, where the same will be valued by a competent ordnance officer and the value paid to the owner by the Confederate Government. I urge you to give me your aid in the important work of arming our troops, with which we can repel the invaders; but if you refuse prepare to take the field, for I am resolved to exhaust all resources before the foot of the invader shall pollute the soil of Tennessee." But although almost every citizen possessed a fire-arm of some kind, many hesitated, in view of probable personal needs of defense at home within a short time, to transfer their guns, and large numbers did not.

During the summer and autumn of 1861 it became apparent to observant Tennesseans that should the State be invaded by the Federal Army the advance would come via the Mississippi, or the Tennessee and Cumberland Rivers, or south from Louisville, Ky., toward Nashville, or through Cumberland Gap into East Tennessee. To be in readiness to repel these advances masses of the provisional army were concentrated at Memphis, Randolph, Union City and elsewhere in West Tennessee; Forts Henry and Donelson were constructed on the Tennessee and the Cumberland Rivers in Stewart County, and could be garrisoned, if necessary, on short notice by large forces of infantry, and several regiments were stationed at or near Clarksville; a few thousand troops were located at Camp Cheatham, in Robertson County, and at Camp Trousdale,

in Sumner County, to guard the approaches from Louisville or Cincinnati to Nashville and Middle Tennessee; and a considerable force was concentrated at Knoxville to guard Cumberland Gap or other routes that might pour the enemy upon East Tennessee, and to bind that portion of the State, which had strong Federal following, to the cause of the South. Maj.-Gen. G. J. Pillow, at Memphis, commanded the provisional army of the State, with Maj.-Gen. S. R. Anderson second in command at Nashville. Brig.-Gen. B. F. Cheatham was stationed at Union City; Brig.-Gen. John L. T. Sneed at Randolph; Brig.-Gen. R. C. Foster at Camp Cheatham; Brig.-Gen. Felix K. Zollicoffer and later, senior Col. John C. Brown, at Camp Trousdale, and Brig.-Gen. W. R. Caswell and later, Gen. S. R. Anderson at Knoxville. Later, Gen. Zollicoffer assumed command at Knoxville and Gen. Foster at Nashville.

The State seceded June 8, 1861, and as soon as the returns established the fact of secession beyond doubt, Gov. Harris, although he did not formally transfer the army to the Confederacy until July 31, no longer hesitated to place the forces of the State under the command of officers appointed by the Confederate Government. July 13, under appointment of President Davis, Maj.-Gen. Leonidas Polk took command of the forces along the Mississippi, with headquarters at Memphis. About the same time Gideon J. Pillow, Samuel R. Anderson and Daniel S. Donelson, and a few days later B. F. Cheatham and F. K. Zollicoffer, were commissioned brigadier-generals of the Confederate Army. Gens. Pillow and Cheatham were assigned to commands in West Tennessee, Gen. Zollicoffer in East Tennessee, and Gen. Anderson was transferred to the field in Virginia. On July 26 Gen. Pillow, under orders from Gen. Polk, moved north from Memphis to Randolph with a considerable force, and a few days later advanced to New Madrid and was joined by Gen. Cheatham from Union City with additional troops. About September 1 it was communicated to Gen. Polk that Gen. Grant, with a large body of troops at Cairo, intended an advance upon Columbus and other points; whereupon, September 7, he moved a large force, soon afterward increased to nearly 10,000 men, and occupied that city and vicinity. This movement met with a prompt demand from Gov. Magoffin, of Kentucky, for the immediate removal of the Tennessee troops, to which Gen. Polk responded agreeing to do so provided the same requirement was placed upon the Federal troops which, under Gen. Smith September 6, had occupied Paducah and advanced under Gens. Grant, Sherman, McCook, Thomas and others far into Kentucky. This reply of Gen. Polk met the approval of the Confederate Congress, and was sustained by Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston, who, upon the earnest request of Gen. Polk, was ap-

pointed, September 10, to succeed him in command of Department No. 2. The demand to withdraw was also made upon Gen. Zollicoffer, who, September 10, had advanced five or six regiments across the line to Cumberland Ford, in Kentucky, or on the way, and who, with Gen. Polk, had protested against compliance until the Federal forces, advancing across Kentucky, should likewise be withdrawn. The South respected the declared neutrality of Kentucky until bodies of Federal troops were permitted to concentrate within her borders with the manifest intention of invading Tennessee and the territory farther south; but when it became certain that such neutrality was working serious injury to the cause of the South, the State having been occupied from east to west by rapidly accumulating Federal forces, the demands of Gov. Magoffin were rightly disregarded, and the Confederate troops were not withdrawn. Soon the rumors of war became so alarming that all consideration of the neutrality question was voluntarily abandoned. On September 18, Gen. S. B. Buckner with 4,500 troops took possession of Bowling Green, Ky., and immediately sent forward a force of 500 to occupy Munfordsville. On October 11 Maj.-Gen. William J. Hardee assumed command of the force at Bowling Green, which, by October 19, had been increased to 9,956 men. Brig.-Gen. Lloyd Tilghman was placed in command of a small force at Hopkinsville, Ky.

The army of Gen. Zollicoffer, comprising from four to six regiments, (two from Tennessee, but varying greatly from time to time), encountered during its advance into Kentucky in September small bands of Federals, with whom light skirmishing was held with some loss. On the 21st of October, at Rockcastle Hills, Ky., 350 Federal troops were found strongly intrenched in an almost inaccessible position. Two Tennessee regiments, under Cols. Newman and Cummings, were ordered to assault, which they did with great gallantry; but the enemy having been re-enforced by 250 men and soon afterward by four more companies, the Confederate troops were repulsed with a loss of 11 killed and 42 wounded, after having inflicted upon the enemy a loss of 4 killed, 18 wounded and 21 captured. An attack by night upon the Federal position was repulsed, owing to heavy re-enforcements which, without the knowledge of the Confederates, had joined the enemy. Gen. Zollicoffer slowly fell back before the superior force before him to Camp Buckner, at Cumberland Ford. He finally moved back and established his headquarters at Jacksborough, taking care to blockade the mountain roads approaching Knoxville or East Tennessee, and to post at Cumberland Gap, under Col. Churchwell, a force sufficient to hold it against great opposition. He also placed sufficient troops at Knoxville, under Col. W.



B. Wood, to repel any probable movement upon that city by the Unionists of East Tennessee or by an invasion from abroad. For some time after this the perilous position of Gen. Zollicoffer was well understood by Gen. Johnston and the Confederate Government. Advancing steadily upon East Tennessee from Louisville, under the immediate command of Gen. Thomas, were twice or thrice as many troops, better armed and equipped than Gen. Zollicoffer commanded; and northeast of Knoxville, in East Tennessee, concentrating at several important strategic points were from 2,000 to 5,000 resident Unionists, thoroughly familiar with the country, well armed and resolute. Accordingly, great efforts were made to materially increase the size of this army and to furnish it with effective arms.

On the 25th of October Col. R. D. Allison, with about half of the Twenty-fourth Tennessee Regiment and a squadron of cavalry, moved out of Cave City, Ky., and routed a few hundred of the enemy twenty-five miles distant. Considerable skirmishing occurred about this time north of Bowling Green, Ky. Many valuable railroad bridges were burned in East Tennessee. Late in October great anxiety was felt at Clarksville, Nashville and other points along the Cumberland, that, inasmuch as only the incomplete Fort Donelson, near Dover, was prepared to oppose the advance of the enemy by water, Federal gun-boats could move up the river with impunity and reduce all the cities within reach of their guns. November 4 Gen. Johnston ordered Gen. Polk at Columbus to detach 5,000 troops from that point under Gen. Pillow, with orders to move at once to Clarksville. Ere long Fort Donelson was strongly equipped with suitable ordnance. November 3 Gen. Johnston requested Gov. Harris to so far annul his call for 30,000 twelve-months' men, except such as were efficiently armed, as to have all troops in camp without arms and who would not volunteer for three years or during the war, disbanded and sent home, to which Gov. Harris protested, owing to the demoralizing effect such an order would have upon volunteering. Gen. Johnston accordingly reconsidered the matter and modified his request by granting fifteen days to complete the arming of the volunteers, but soon afterward revoked this and the former order. About 9 o'clock on the morning of the 7th of November a small force under Col. Tappan, which had been stationed across the river from Columbus, Ky., by Gen. Polk to check the inroad of Federal cavalry, was attacked at Belmont, Mo., by 3,114 men under Gen. Grant; but being re-enforced by three regiments under Gen. Pillow, checked the rapid advance of the enemy somewhat and gradually fell back, fighting gallantly and desperately against superior numbers until re-enforced by three more regiments under

Gen. Cheatham, when, after a furious contest, the enemy was forced back but recovered, and was forced back again and routed, barely escaping capture by a flank movement of two other regiments under the immediate command of Gen. Polk.\* The Confederate troops actually engaged were about equal numerically to those of the Federals, but were divided by the river. Large quantities of field supplies, cast aside and abandoned by the flying enemy, fell into the hands of the victors. The battle was characterized by hot and desperate charges and counter-charges on both sides. The enemy escaped to his boats. Beltzhoover's battery, fought over, lost and recaptured, was used with splendid effect.

On the 6th of November Gen. Polk tendered his resignation, which President Davis refused to accept, giving reasons sufficient to induce Gen. Polk to remain in the service. November 16 his army numbered 13,866. About the middle of November Col. Forrest, with six companies of cavalry, was ordered forward to Hopkinsville, Ky. At this time Gen. Tilghman was transferred to the command of Forts Henry and Donelson. So imminent became the danger of an invasion of Tennessee, at this period that Gen. Pillow made urgent appeals for reinforcements, and Gen. Johnston requested Gov. Harris to place in the field every member of the militia that could be armed, and the Confederate Secretary of War authorized Gen. Johnston to call out every armed man he could get from Mississippi, northern Alabama and Kentucky. Late in November Gen. Zollicoffer with his army moved into Kentucky again, and established himself at Mill Springs and Beech Grove. About the middle of December Maj. Gen. G. B. Crittenden assumed command of the eastern district, with headquarters at Knoxville.

The following is the consolidated report of the armies of Gens. Hardee and Zollicoffer, officially prepared December 31, 1861.†

	Present for Duty.						Aggregate Present.	Aggregate Present and Absent.
	Infantry.		Cavalry.		Artillery.			
	Officers.	Men.	Officers.	Men.	Officers.	Men.		
Hardee's Division.....	412	5537	52	544	19	395	6959	11429
Buckner's Division.....	407	5972	53	655	37	688	7812	11761
Bowen's Division.....	203	3493	.....	.....	.....	.....	3696	4806
Clark's Brigade.....	145	1617	38	495	.....	.....	2295	3550
Davis' Brigade.....	53	1164	.....	.....	.....	.....	1217	1636
Miscellaneous.....	17	257	.....	.....	.....	.....	274	615
Zollicoffer's Division.....	238	4515	70	1095	10	226	6154	8451
Totals.....	1475	22555	213	2789	66	1309	28407	42248

\*War of the Rebellion; Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies. Reports of Gens. Polk and Grant.

†On the 7th of January, 1862, Gen. Leonidas Polk's report showed 869 officers and 11,161 men present for duty; aggregate present, 12,030; aggregate present and absent, 18,675. ‡Sixty days' Volunteers.

On the evening of January 18, 1862, Gen. Crittenden with about 4,000 effective troops was at Beech Grove, Ky., on the Cumberland River, opposite Mill Springs. Having held a council of war with Gens. Zollicoffer and Carroll and his regimental commanders, whereby it appeared that two large Union forces, one at Somerset, and the other at or near Webb's Cross Roads, under Gen. G. H. Thomas, were intending to unite and together attack the Confederate forces, and whereby it appeared that, owing to heavy rains, Fishing Creek dividing the two forces could not be crossed in less than two days, the council therefore determined without dissent to attack Gen. Thomas early the next morning and, if possible, annihilate him, and then fall upon the other Federal force approaching from Somerset and also effect its ruin. Accordingly about midnight the forward movement was commenced. After a rapid march of nine miles the enemy was encountered in force about 7 o'clock on the morning of the 19th and the battle sharply commenced. Gen. Zollicoffer fell dead upon the field quite early in the action. The gallant Confederates, poorly armed and handled, though fighting stubbornly and holding their ground for several hours, were finally driven back by superior numbers and severely defeated, the defeat ending in much of a rout. Their loss was 125 killed, 309 wounded and 99 missing. They retreated to Gainesborough and then to Camp Fogg, in Tennessee. The Seventeenth, Nineteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-fifth, Twenty-eighth, and Twenty-ninth Tennessee Regiments participated in this engagement. About noon on the 6th of February, 1862, Fort Henry on the Tennessee, with an armament of sixteen guns and a garrison of 2,985 men,\* commanded by Gen. Lloyd Tilghman, was invested by seven Federal gun-boats carrying fifty-five guns and an overwhelming force of infantry, all under Gen. Grant, and in a few hours was surrendered. The Confederate forces escaped to Fort Donelson, except about eighty who were surrendered with Gen. Tilghman and the fort. It was clearly evident at this time that the enemy was advancing all along the line east and west across Kentucky with far superior forces, and as soon as Fort Henry fell, Gen. Johnston, at Bowling Green, perceived that should Fort Donelson also fall, his position would become at once untenable, and the Confederate line would have to be established somewhere south of Nashville, as the Federal gun-boats would have no difficulty in capturing Clarksville, Nashville and other points along the rivers Cumberland and Tennessee. As it seemed evident, owing to the superior forces of the Federals, that Fort Donelson would fall sooner or later, Gen. Hardee, with his forces at Bowling Green, was ordered to move south to Nashville and cross the

---

\*Official Report of Col. A. Heiman.



river. At this time there was intense excitement at Clarksville and Nashville. The enemy had entered the State and Tennessee was sure to become a battle-ground. The Tennessee regiments at Fort Henry were the Tenth, Forty-eighth and Fifty-first, and Gantt's battalion of cavalry and several small miscellaneous commands, including the batteries.

As soon as possible after the fall of Fort Henry, re-enforcements were hurried to Fort Donelson. Late on the 12th of February a large infantry force of Federals, assisted by six gun-boats, appeared before the fort and the next morning began a combined attack. Re-enforcements arrived under Gen. Floyd all infantry attacks of the 13th were handsomely repulsed. The gun-boats effected no serious damage upon the fort. It turned cold, and intense suffering resulted to the wearied troops. On the afternoon of the 14th the gun-boats were defeated, several disabled and all driven away without injury to the fort. Sharp skirmishes occurred between the infantry, and heavy re-enforcements of the enemy were extended, having in view the complete investment of the fort. Early on the 15th Gen. Pillow, in force, on the left, attacked the enemy's right with great fury, driving it slowly from the field. A sharp attack on the right was re-enforced by Gen. B. R. Johnson, and generally the whole Federal line was driven back after stubborn resistance, but rallied upon being heavily re-enforced, and with artillery renewed the attack. The Confederates took the defensive and fell back to their lines. Heavy masses of the Federals threw themselves upon the right flank, encountering desperate resistance, and finally effected a lodgment which could not be moved. Night closed the bloody day. A council of Gens. Pillow, Floyd, Buckner, Johnson, *et al*, decided to surrender early the next morning. The command was transferred to Gen. Buckner, who surrendered the next morning nearly 15,000 troops, Gens. Pillow and Floyd and their escort, and Gen. Forrest and his cavalry escaping. This was a serious loss to the Confederacy and an unnecessary one. The result was a total abandonment of the Confederate line and the establishment of an irregular new one, extending from Columbus, Ky., south through West Tennessee to northern Mississippi; thence to northern Alabama, and thence to northeast Tennessee. Nashville was abandoned by the troops, the Governor and many others retreating south with the army of Gen. Johnston. Clarksville and Nashville were in a fever of fear and excitement. The large Federal Army moved forward and successively took possession of those two cities and others farther south in Middle Tennessee, and the Federal line was correspondingly advanced throughout the State. At Murfreesboro Gen. Johnston, with about 11,000 men, was joined by Gen. Crittenden, and the fugitives from Donel-

son and other miscellaneous forces, and an army of about 17,000 men was formed capable of offering battle. Gen. Floyd, with 2,500 troops, was sent to Chattanooga. Columbus, Ky., was evacuated March 4, that army moving south to Jackson. Gen. Johnston moved to Decatur, Ala., thence to Corinth, Miss., where, after great exertion, and with the assistance of Gen. Beauregard, he succeeded in organizing a strong army of about 50,000 men. The Confederate line at this time extended from New Madrid, Mo., to Island No. 10; thence to Humboldt, Tenn.; thence to Corinth, Miss.; thence along the Memphis & Charleston Railroad to East Tennessee.

On the 19th of February Commodore A. H. Foote, of the United States Navy, reached Clarksville with the gun-boats Conestoga and Cairo meeting with no resistance from the small forts in that vicinity, and, after issuing a proclamation, at the instance of Hon. Cave Johnson, Judge Wisdom, the mayor and others, announcing his intention to respect the private rights of all citizens peacefully disposed who should not parade their hostile sentiments, and to take possession of all military supplies and stores, none of which must be destroyed, took military possession of the city. Gen. Grant arrived on the 21st. On the 19th Gov. Harris issued a proclamation calling out the entire effective military force of the State. He had left Nashville accompanied by the other State officers to save the public archives and property, and to establish a temporary capital within the Confederate lines. He moved to Memphis, but soon afterward personally took the field. On the 20th, at Memphis, having convened the Legislature, he gave in his message his reasons for the temporary removal of the seat of government, the archives and the State property from Nashville. The defeat of Crittenden at Fishing Creek had flanked Gen. Johnston's line of defense, and no opposing force was left to prevent the army of Gen. Buell from moving upon the capital. The fall of Fort Henry opened the Tennessee up to Alabama to the enemy, and the fall of Fort Donelson left Nashville an easy prey for the large army of Gen. Grant, which was sure to move upon it within a few days, Gen. Johnston, with the small force left him, being utterly unable to hold the place. He announced that since the act of May 6, 1861, he had raised, organized and put into the field fifty-nine regiments of infantry, one regiment of cavalry, eleven cavalry battalions, and over twenty independent companies, mostly artillery. Of these the Confederate Government had armed only about 15,000. The Governor advised the passage of a bill raising, arming and equipping a provisional army of volunteers. On the 24th of February Gen. Buell and his advance, Mitchell's division, arrived at Edgefield, and in the evening were waited upon by

the mayor and city authorities of Nashville, to whom assurance of personal safety and uninterrupted business relations were given. On the morning of February 25 seven gun-boats, bearing a considerable force of Federal troops under Brig.-Gen. Nelson, reached Nashville, landed without opposition and took possession of the city. News of the surrender of Fort Donelson had reached Nashville Sunday morning, February 17, when the citizens were anticipating reports of a great victory. Scores immediately started for the south; the bridges across the Cumberland were destroyed, the military stores were thrown open to the populace, and panic and chaos for a time reigned. A similar state of affairs had transpired at Clarksville. Time quieted the apprehensions of the citizens, though the Federal troops saw few smiling faces. On the 5th of March Gen. G. T. Beauregard assumed command of the Army of the Mississippi, with headquarters at Jackson, Tenn. February 24 Gen. J. K. Jackson was placed in command of the forces at Chattanooga. About this time, or soon afterward, Gen. E. K. Smith was assigned to the command of the Confederate forces of East Tennessee, with headquarters at Knoxville.

After the fall of Donelson and the evacuation of Middle Tennessee, the Confederate Army concentrated along the railroad from Iuka to Corinth and from Corinth to Bethel, and hurriedly organized, being re-enforced by two divisions from Gen. Polk's command at Columbus, and later by the remainder of the corps, and an entire corps from Alabama and Mississippi under Gen. Bragg. Thus re-enforced and equipped under Gens. Johnston and Beauregard, two of the ablest generals of the war, this magnificent army of heroes (about 60,000 strong) prepared to take the offensive. The army of Gen. Grant had concentrated at Pittsburgh Landing on the Tennessee, and Buell from Nashville was hastening to re-enforce him. Gen. Johnston determined, if possible, to crush Grant before the arrival of Buell. The advance began on the 3d of April, but, owing to severe rainstorms, the heavy roads and the inexperience of the troops in marching, did not reach the enemy, as was hoped and expected, on the morning of the 5th, and not until late in the afternoon. It was then determined to wait until the following (Sunday) morning to begin the attack. The army was divided into four corps: The first under Gen. Polk on the left; the second under Gen. Bragg in the center; the third, under Gen. Hardee on the right; and the reserve corps, under Gen. J. C. Breckinridge—a total of about 40,000 effective troops.\* The attack began at daylight on the morning of the 6th, with all the fury of that fine army, burning with a desire to retrieve the losses of Henry

---

\*Gen. Johnston telegraphed President Davis that the army consisted of about 40,000 effective men.



and Donelson. The enemy was completely surprised as regards a general attack, and this fact, combined with the furious impetuosity of the onset under skillful and competent leaders, awarded success to the Confederate arms in every part of the field. The enemy, though surprised, rallied, and with some exceptions fought with wonderful stubbornness; but the Confederate dash, intrepidity and rapid and adroit maneuvers on the field were irresistible. Large numbers of the enemy fled panic stricken back to the river. After ten hours of desperate fighting every encampment of the enemy was in possession of the Confederate forces. But one position had been held, that at the "Hornet's Nest" by Gen. Prentiss, and that had been surrounded, and the entire division with its commander captured. It was a splendid victory, corresponding with the genius of the General who conceived and inspired it; but in the moment of victory, late in the afternoon, this illustrious soldier was severely wounded, from the effects of which he soon died. His great worth was fully appreciated and his loss bitterly lamented by the entire South. The battle raged on until night closed the bloody scene. The victory was emphatic, but it remained for short, sharp work on the morrow to seal it with certainty. No sooner had the death of Gen. Johnston, which occurred about the middle of the afternoon, been announced to the struggling troops, than involuntarily a dispiriting check was thrown upon the entire army. Gen. Beauregard who immediately assumed command, was known to have not only opposed the attack from the start, but to have counseled withdrawal late on the night of the 5th. This fact produced the impression that the new commander would alter the tactics of the advance, if he did not absolutely order it checked, and accordingly, in doubt as to what was to be done, the victorious army throughout its entire length experienced a severe paralytic stroke, and hesitated for about an hour, until orders came from Gen. Beauregard to continue the attack. But the impression of the doubtful designs of the commander still prevailed, and served to unnerve the onset, and accordingly the headlong attack which had characterized the Confederate advance during the day and was designed to assure the victorious results within reach, was permitted to languish until too late to be remedied. The demoralized Federals were allowed to retire unmolested and to form a new line, while the exhausted Confederates also fell somewhat back, and spent the night in the abandoned camps of the enemy. During the night the enemy was heavily re-enforced, and on the following morning, instead of meeting the demoralized army of Gen. Grant, the weary, but elated Confederates encountered the fresh and powerful troops of Gen. Buell, and although desperate efforts were made to complete the victory, it was found impos-

sible before superior numbers of fresh troops, and the army slowly fell back and finally moved to Corinth. The entire loss of the Confederate Army in this engagement, was 1,728 killed, 8,012 wounded, and 959 missing.\* The loss of the enemy was 1,700 killed, 7,495 wounded, and 3,022 captured.† The effective force of the Confederates was nearly 40,000 men,‡ while that of the Federals, not counting the army of Gen. Buell, probably slightly exceeded that number.

About the middle of March, 1862, Andrew Johnson, who had been appointed military governor of Tennessee by President Lincoln, reached Nashville and issued an address to the people of the State, and took charge of the State property. From this date forward there was a constant conflict between the two governments of Govs. Harris and Johnson. Harris did everything possible for the cause of the South, and Johnson everything possible for the cause of the North. Despite the presence of troops in all portions of the State of either the Federal or Confederate Governments, recruiting continued for both armies. Skirmishes occurred almost daily in some portion of the State between citizens, organized or unorganized, or between small squads of either army stationed to guard railroads, supplies or important points. The citizens, Confederate or Federal, were forced through three long, dreary and memorable years to realize the horrors of the uninterrupted presence of an armed and powerful force of soldiery, who often took advantage of their power to riot and rob, and to menace and maltreat inoffensive non-combatants endeavoring to make a living by the arts of peace. Under the conscript law twelve-months' organizations were perpetuated. This worked great hardship upon many volunteers and kindled no little discontent, which time alone quenched.

On the 14th of March, 1862, nearly two companies of the First East Tennessee (Confederate) Cavalry, stationed at Jacksborough, were surprised through the treachery of Union residents and captured by a regiment of Federal troops, which had rapidly crossed the Cumberland Mountains. On the 19th of June, after a spirited and stubborn resistance against numerous attacks through several weeks, Col. J. E. Rains was forced to evacuate Cumberland Gap. January 21, 1862, his force at the Gap consisted of seventy-four officers and 1,523 men present and fit for duty. On the 11th of April Huntsville, Ala., was captured by Gen. O. M. Mitchell, who moved there from Murfreesboro, via Shelbyville and Fayetteville, under the order of Gen. Buell, with about 5,000 men. This

---

\*Official report of Gen. Beauregard, April 11, 1862.

†Official report of the War Department.

‡The official report prepared under Gen. Beauregard's orders, April 21, showed a total effective strength of 35,953 infantry and artillery and 4,382 cavalry or a total of 40,335. The official report of this battle prepared by Gen. Bragg in June, showed an effective strength of 33,270 infantry, 1,857 artillery, and 1,884 cavalry; total, 37,011. Another account shows 38,773 effective troops.

movement, menacing Chattanooga, the rear of the army at Corinth and the heart of the Confederacy, found only two regiments at Chattanooga; and orders were issued by Gen. Beauregard upon Pemberton's command for six regiments to move to that point at once. The enemy seized Stevenson, Decatur and Bridgeport, and menaced the right flank of Johnston's army at Corinth. At this time Brig-Gen. Danville Leadbetter commanded the forces in and around Chattanooga.

During the month of May the Confederate Army quietly held its position at Corinth until a general attack seemed imminent, when it silently evacuated the place. Several sharp conflicts occurred during the siege. Owing to the unhealthfulness of the locality, the impurity of the water and the bad food and inaction, an army which had been increased to a total effective strength of 112,092 was reduced to 52,706 upon its arrival at Tupelo, to which point it retreated. The Army of the West, under Gen. Earl Van Dorn, with a total effective strength of 17,000, had been added to the Army of the Mississippi. So great was the reduction in effective strength that a court of inquiry was appointed by the Confederate Government to investigate and report upon the conduct of the quarter-master's department of the army, but that department was exonerated from all blame. Late in June, 1862, Gen. Braxton Bragg succeeded Gen. Beauregard in command of the army. Island No. 10, on the Mississippi, fell April 7-8. On the 4th of June, Fort Pillow on the Mississippi, twelve miles above Randolph, was evacuated, and Randolph fell soon afterward. Memphis also, after a sharp resistance, was compelled to surrender to the enemy on the 6th. To the demand to surrender, Mayor John Park responded, "In reply I have only to say that as the civil authorities have no means of defense, by the force of circumstances the city is in your hands." The Confederate loss here was 82 killed and wounded, 75 prisoners, and 4 gun-boats sunk. The fall of the city was a most serious loss to the South, as it opened the way to Vicksburg. Jackson was occupied by the enemy June 7. Strong movements were made against Chattanooga by Mitchell's army. July 13 Murfreesboro was recaptured from the enemy by Gen. Forrest. He captured 800 prisoners.

On the 12th of May a Union convention was held at Nashville, when action was perfected to extend the civil authority of the Federal Government over the State. Tazewell in East Tennessee was taken by the enemy after a sharp battle on the 5th and 6th of August. Soon after this, about August 19, Clarksville was recaptured by Col. Woodward, of the Confederate Army, but in September again fell into the enemy's hands. Numerous small engagements occurred throughout the State,



with varying successes. Much of the State was reoccupied by Confederate forces, which were recruited within the Federal lines and which preyed upon the garrisons left to hold the leading localities. Forrest became famous as a daring and remarkably successful cavalry commander and raider. He destroyed enormous amounts of Federal stores, captured thousands of the enemy, and constantly recruited for the Confederate Army and particularly his own command. Guerrillas without any constituted authority preyed upon Federal or Confederate stores, and in many instances committed acts not justified even by the bloody code of war. This rendered residence in the State humiliating and dangerous, particularly to women without protectors.

After a short time spent at Tupelo in resting, recruiting and refitting Gen. Bragg moved with his fine army to Chattanooga, outmarching Gen. Buell, who had apparently started for the same point. Buell returned with his army to Nashville, and Grant assumed command of the Federal forces around Corinth. Bragg now determined to take the offensive and invade Kentucky, expecting by this strategy to either force Buell out of Tennessee or to capture Louisville and possibly invade Indiana and Ohio. He also hoped to arouse a large following in Kentucky, and intended to collect enormous quantities of supplies. He left Chattanooga August 28, and marched northward via Pikeville and Sparta. A few days before he began this movement Gen. Kirby Smith, aware of his intentions, advanced northward also, via Jacksborough, through Big Creek Gap, living mainly on green corn, and halted near Richmond for the arrival of Bragg. His movement flanked the Federal force at Cumberland Gap, which beat a precipitate retreat to the Ohio River. At London his cavalry killed and wounded 30 and captured 111 of the Federals. At Richmond the Federal troops under Gen. Manson, nearly equal to his own, moved forward and attacked him, but were routed and several thousand of them captured. He moved on to Cynthiana. At Munfordville, with trifling loss, Bragg captured several thousand prisoners. He reached Bardstown September 23. As soon as Buell saw the designs of Bragg he marched rapidly north to protect Louisville, and arrived there ahead of the latter. Bragg, finding he could not induce Kentucky to join the Confederacy, although he had gone through the ceremony of installing Richard Hawes provisional governor, turned to retrace his steps, meeting with no obstacle for some time to prevent his collecting enormous quantities of supplies. At Harrodsburg he formed a junction with Kirby Smith. Finally Buell, under pressure of the War Department, and with an army twice as strong, moved out to attack him. At Perryville, October 8, the two armies collided. About 15,000 of Bragg's army

fought McCook's division of nearly twice as many and routed them from the field, capturing several thousand prisoners. He then retreated slowly, passing Cumberland Gap, marching to Knoxville, and thence moving by rail to Tullahoma and marching up to Murfreesboro. Buell was superseded by Maj. Gen. W. S. Rosecrans, who concentrated his army at Nashville. Both armies were reorganized, the Confederate taking the name "Army of the Tennessee," which it retained during the remainder of the war. Bragg's army was weakened by the removal of Stevenson's division to Mississippi.

December 26 Rosecrans moved out to offer battle, and arrived before Murfreesboro late on the 30th. Bragg determined to anticipate the attack, and at daylight on the 31st threw a heavy force upon the Federal right flank. So furious was the onset that, although the enemy fought with great stubbornness, the entire flank was swept around upon the right center. Rosecrans had determined to adopt the same tactics, and accordingly early in the morning massed a heavy force on the Confederate right, but was too late. Before he could accomplish anything in that portion of the field, his right was routed and his entire army was in danger of destruction. The victorious Confederates were checked late in the afternoon. During the night the Federals formed and perfected a new line, and the Confederates strengthened their advanced position. The next day some skirmishing occurred, and a threatening movement was made upon the Confederate right and rear, but as a whole the two armies remained idle and watchful. On the 2d of January Bragg attacked the Federal force that had been thrown across the river and intrenched in a strong position, but after desperate fighting was repulsed, and the next day retreated to Shelbyville and Tullahoma. On the first day of the battle Hardee commanded the divisions of McCown and Cleburne on the left; Polk, those of Cheatham and Withers in the center, and Breckinridge the force on the right. Wheeler's and Wharton's cavalries, respectively, were on the right and the left flanks. On the Federal right was McCook, in the center Thomas, and on the left Crittenden. Accounts and returns differ, but each army had about 45,000 effective troops, the Federals toward the last being re-enforced. Bragg's total loss was 10,125; Rosecrans' 11,598. The former lost three pieces of artillery, the latter twenty-eight.\*

On the 30th of December, 1862, Wheeler's cavalry, in a daring raid, captured LaVergne, Rock Springs and Nolensville. About two weeks before that Forrest had cut loose from Bragg, crossed the Tennessee River at Clifton, captured Trenton, Humboldt, Union City and other

---

\*These figures were carefully prepared from official reports.

places, with large quantities of supplies and hundreds of prisoners, and rejoined Bragg without serious loss. March 5, 1863, Gen. Van Dorn captured 2,000 Federals under Col. John Coburn at Spring Hill. In April Col. Streight, Federal cavalry leader, invaded Georgia, did considerable damage, but was pursued and captured by Gen. Forrest. In June Gen. John Morgan started North and invaded Indiana and Ohio, but was finally captured and his command dispersed. Bragg passed the winter at Shelbyville, Tullahoma and vicinity, while Rosecrans remained at Murfreesboro. June 24, 1863, Rosecrans began an advance and endeavored to flank Bragg's right, but the latter being largely outnumbered, retreated slowly and finally crossed the mountains to Chattanooga. About the middle of August the Federal Army began to cross the mountains to confront Bragg.

In the meantime Vicksburg had fallen and Gettysburg had driven the Army of Northern Virginia south of the Potomac. Gen. Bragg, seeing that if he remained at Chattanooga his communications would be cut by flank movements of the large and rapidly increasing army before him, moved southward toward Lafayette, preparing to threaten the right flank of the enemy, or his rear via northern Alabama, or to fall upon him as he advanced southward from Chattanooga in detachments through the mountain passes and whip him in detail. The advance in detachments was really made, and had the re-enforcements expected arrived for Bragg, the division of McCook far out toward Alpine would have been crushed before Rosecrans perceived his danger. As it was the latter became alarmed and corrected his mistake before Bragg felt able to take advantage of it. Both armies had been heavily re-enforced and the anxious gaze of both nations was riveted upon them. A portion of Longstreet's corps from Virginia under Hood, and a considerable force from Johnston's army in the Mississippi had formed a junction with Bragg. The enemy concentrated somewhat near Crawfish Spring, near where, September 18, a few preliminary skirmishes occurred. McCook occupied the right of the enemy, Thomas the left, and Crittenden the center. Polk was on the Confederate right, Hood on the left and Hill in the center. The battle of Chickamauga began early on the morning of the 19th and raged furiously all day without decisive result. The following night brought Longstreet with the remainder of his corps. Bragg's aim had been to break and rout the Federal left, then crush the center and seize the Chattanooga road. Upon the arrival of Longstreet, Bragg summoned his generals in council. He divided the army into two commands—Longstreet with six divisions on the left and Polk with five divisions on the right. The latter was ordered to attack with all his







power at daylight, but it was nearly 9 o'clock before his troops were in motion. Had he complied with the order there is little doubt that Thomas would have been crushed before the arrival of Negley's division. As it was Thomas was the "Rock of Chickamauga" which the Confederate hosts failed to overturn. Thus do trifles serve to turn enormous tides.

The battle began about 9 o'clock and was continued with furious intensity for many hours, the Confederate cause on the whole advancing, until finally a gap was opened by a misunderstanding of orders, it was claimed, in the enemy's right center\* through which the vigilant Longstreet threw Hood's and other divisions like an avalanche. This movement was decisive, the whole right wing and part of the center of the enemy crumbling in pieces and rolling back in confusion toward Chattanooga, bearing their commanders, including Rosecrans, with them. Thomas on the left was re-enforced on a very strong ridge, and held his position until night, despite the utmost efforts of the Confederates to crush him, and thus saved the Federal Army from destruction. At night he withdrew toward Chattanooga, and left the field to the victorious Confederates. The battle was over. The losses were about equal (over 15,000) to each army.

Rosecrans remained at Chattanooga where he was besieged for several weeks succeeding the battle of Chickamauga. He was superseded in command by Gen. Grant October 19. Early in October Wheeler and Wharton entered the Federal lines with their cavalry forces, and in the Sequatchie Valley destroyed about 800 wagons of supplies designed for the starving army of the Federals. They did extensive damage, and finally rejoined Bragg via northern Alabama. October 27 Gen. Hooker managed to open the Federal line of supplies, which virtually raised the siege. Longstreet had been detached to move against Burnside at Knoxville. Bragg occupied Missionary Ridge with a weakened army too much extended, and Grant, in Chattanooga, received re-enforcements and supplies. On the 23d of November Grant advanced and drove back the Confederate advance lines and occupied and intrenched the ground. The next day Lookout Mountain was taken, and on the 25th the whole Federal Army in overwhelming force swept up to the top of the ridge, driving the Confederate lines, after sharp work, from the field.

Gen. Joseph E. Johnston succeeded Bragg in command of the army,

\*This order, written by an aid of Gen. Rosecrans at the latter's direction, read as follows: "The general commanding directs that you close up on Reynolds as fast as possible, and support him." As will be perceived, "closing up," and "supporting" are two widely different acts, and hence the order was contradictory. The officer to whom it was addressed, Gen. Wood, had been a short time before sharply reprimanded for neglect by Gen. Rosecrans, and now concluded to construe the order in the latter sense of "supporting" only, and accordingly withdrew his division, leaving a wide gap in the line of battle, which the vigilant eye of Longstreet at once detected with the results as above described.



the latter relinquishing at his own request. The winter of 1863-64 was passed in and around Dalton in receiving instruction and discipline.\* Late in February, to co-operate with a general movement of Federal troops in the west, Thomas attacked the Confederates at Dalton, in the absence of Hardee's corps, but was repulsed. Gen. W. T. Sherman took command of the Federals in March, and Gen. Grant was transferred to the chief command at Washington. About the middle of March, 1863, Gen. Forrest entered West Tennessee from Mississippi, captured Jackson, Union City, Hickman, Ky., Paducah and other places with large quantities of supplies and numerous prisoners; and April 18 captured Fort Pillow with 557 Federal troops, of whom 262 were colored. Later he dashed into Memphis but was compelled to leave almost immediately; and also defeated and routed the Federals in Arkansas.

About the middle of August, 1863, Gen. Burnside, with a force of nearly 20,000 men at Richmond, Ky., moved southward to cross the Cumberland Mountains and take possession of East Tennessee. Knoxville was reached September 3; about the same time Gen. Buckner, unable to resist, withdrew all the available force there to re-enforce Bragg. Gen. Frazier, who occupied Cumberland Gap, was forced to surrender 2,000 men on the 9th, Gen. Burnside then scattered his command to guard and protect East Tennessee. Gen. Sam Jones did excellent work against several of the small commands, cutting them in pieces and capturing prisoners and supplies. Suddenly, without warning, October 20, Gen. Longstreet moved up from Chattanooga. At Philadelphia, below Loudon, he fell upon a force of Federals 2,000 strong under Col. Wolford and routed them, capturing many prisoners. Moving onward Burnside in force was encountered November 6, near Campbell's Station, where a sharp battle was fought. The enemy was forced back, but rallied until night when he retreated to his intrenchments at Knoxville. Both commands were handled with conspicuous ability. November 17 Longstreet invested the city. Sharp fighting occurred, and at last having been joined by Gen. Sam Jones, Longstreet November 28 and 29 assaulted but was repulsed. December 5 the siege was raised, as heavy re-enforcements for Burnside approached from Chattanooga.

In December, 1863, Wheeler's cavalry had a sharp engagement with the enemy at Charlestown, East Tennessee, over a wagon train. About the same time John Morgan and Martin Armstrong had a sharp battle with Gen. S. D. Sturgis at Mossy Creek, near New Market. Gen. Vance, who entered East Tennessee in January, 1864, after doing considerable

---

\*As a detailed account of the Georgia campaign would carry the military history beyond the limits assigned it in this volume, only an outline will be given of the movements in which the Army of Tennessee participated.

damage, was defeated and captured by the Federals. In January and February, 1864, Morgan and Sturgis fought several sharp battles at Somersville, Dandridge, Strawberry Plains and elsewhere.

About the first of June, John Morgan started to invade Kentucky. He was routed near Cynthiana by Gen. Burbridge, and made his way into West Virginia, where he collected a small force and returned to East Tennessee, captured Greeneville, but was killed and his force dispersed in September by Gen. Gillem. In October Vaughn' and Palmer's forces were defeated at Morristown by Gen. Gillem; but in November the latter was routed by Breckinridge. In September Forrest invaded Middle Tennessee and gave the Federals much annoyance. In December the Federal forces under Stoneman, Burbridge, Gillem and others were united, and the Confederates in East Tennessee under Breckinridge, Vaughn and others were overpowered and dispersed.

In the spring of 1864 an offensive campaign was proposed for Gen. Johnston, to move suddenly into East Tennessee, cross the river at Kingston, where a junction would be formed with Longstreet, ordered there for that purpose, and thus with an army of about 75,000 men to threaten Sherman's rear and prevent him from invading the South, as well as to threaten Tennessee and Kentucky. But this was not to be. Early in May, 1864, the Federal Army under Sherman began its advance on Dalton, and successively, by flank movements, forced Johnston who had not been re-enforced as was designed should he undertake an offensive campaign, to retreat. Many have thought that this campaign from Dalton to Atlanta was not surpassed by any other of the war in brilliant and masterly movements, in furious and generally judicious battles, and in the splendid condition of both armies. From beginning to end it was a campaign of strategy. The overwhelming force of the Federal commander enabled him to face the Confederate Army with many more than its own number and to flank it with a large additional force. Vigilant as a tiger, Johnston watched the adroit coils of his wily adversary expanding and skillfully withdrew, inflicting upon him all the injury possible. At Rocky Face Ridge, Mill Creek Gap, Resaca, Cassville, New Hope Church, Dallas, Lost Mountain, Pine Mountain, Kenesaw Mountain, Nose Creek, Powder Spring, Peach Tree Creek (where Johnston was superseded by Gen. J. B. Hood), Cobb's Mills, around Atlanta, a campaign of about four months almost a continuous battle was fought and not once was the Confederate Army driven from its chosen position by the assaults of the enemy. At Lick Skillet road and Jonesboro sharp battles were fought.

Atlanta was evacuated by the army of Hood September 1. He

moved to Lovejoy's Station; thence on the 18th at right angles to near Palmetto; thence on the 29th, across the Chattahoochie at Pumpkin Town, threatening Sherman's rear, which forced the latter out of Atlanta. Hood continued to move north, expecting to be followed by Sherman, reached Dalton, thence marched to Lafayette, thence westward reaching Tuscumbia October 31. Sherman followed a short distance from Atlanta then detached Schofield and Stanley's corps to assist Thomas at Nashville and then returned to "march to the sea." Hood was delayed at Tuscumbia, but on the 21st of November started north into Tennessee. The Federal general, Schofield, marched rapidly from Pulaski where he had been stationed by Thomas, to reach Columbia before Hood, and succeeded, throwing up heavy intrenchments which were too strong to assault. He was flanked, however, and forced back toward Franklin where he constructed heavy intrenchments in a very strong position. Hood advanced with A. P. Stewart on the right, Cheatham on the left, and S. D. Lee in reserve behind, while Forrest's cavalry protected the flanks. So furious was the charge of the Confederates, and in such masses, that the first line and hill with eight guns were captured and the standard of the South was planted upon the enemy's works. But this was as far as the Confederate host could go. Charge after charge of the flower of the army was repulsed with fearful slaughter. The foemen intermingled throughout the whole line, which writhed and twisted like huge anacondas locked in the struggle of death. The attack began at 4 o'clock P. M. of the 30th, and continued with unabated fury until 9 o'clock, when it gradually subsided and finally ceased. Pat Cleburne, "the Stonewall Jackson of the West," the idol of his troops, lay dead upon the field within a few feet of the enemy's works. Strahl and Adams and Gist and Granbury lay stretched beside him, and Brown and Quarles and Carter and Cockrill and Manigault and Scott, all general officers, took with them from the bloody field severe and honorable scars. This battle is especially painful to contemplate by Tennesseans, owing to the fearful slaughter of the troops of the State (many of whom lived at Franklin and neighboring cities) and to the barren fruits of the result.

The night after the battle Schofield retreated to Nashville and united with Thomas, and on December 1, 1864, was promptly followed by Hood with his shattered, though gallant army, who on the 2d formed a line of battle and prepared to invest the place held by more than twice as many troops as he possessed. On the 15th the enemy moved out in overwhelming numbers and attacked his whole line, making special efforts to turn his left, which was not accomplished until night, and then only in part. A new line was formed and the next day a heavy attack on the whole line



was repulsed; but the artillery and infantry were concentrated on a weak point, a breach was made and soon the whole Confederate Army was thrown back in more or less of a rout, which was easily corrected. With sad hearts the heroic remnant of the grand old Army of Tennessee continued its retreat southward to join the army of Johnston in the Carolinas for the final struggle. None who participated in it will ever forget the suffering and anguish of that weary march. The cause for which they had fought through nearly four long years of sorrow and war was trembling and falling; but barefooted, ragged and pinched with the severest physical suffering, the gallant boys turned their faces from their desolate homes and with their tattered banners marched down to the Carolinas to die, if need be, "in the last ditch." A few more engagements, Bentonville and elsewhere, and all was over, and in April, 1865, having surrendered, they returned to their homes to repair the ravages of war, to reconstruct their social system and to take their places once more as useful citizens under the Federal Government.

Besides the regularly organized regiments and battalions of infantry, cavalry and artillery, Tennessee furnished for the independent Confederate service a large number of companies, which did effective work within the Federal lines during the last three years of the war. Recruits were constantly enlisted or conscripted for the older regiments, as the war progressed, notwithstanding the presence of Federal troops posted to prevent such procedure. It is safe to say that the State furnished for the Confederate service nearly if not quite 100,000 men. Its credits considerably exceeded that figure, as each man was counted as often as he enlisted, which was, in some cases, three or four times. The provisional army of the State was mustered in for one year, at the end of which period great efforts were made to secure a re-enlistment for three years or during the war. This in the main was successful. No better soldiers than the Tennesseans were found in either army. For gallantry, devotion to principle believed to be just, courage, hardihood and intelligence, they challenge and receive the admiration of their quondam foes. They have accepted in good faith the settlement of the questions of slavery, state sovereignty, secession, etc., and are now part of the warp and woof of the cloth of gold of the American Union.

#### REGIMENTAL SKETCHES.

The First Confederate (Tennessee) Regiment, probably the first raised in the State, was organized at Winchester April 27, 1861, and was raised in the counties of Franklin, Lincoln, Coffee and Grundy. Upon the organization Peter Turney was elected colonel. The regiment was

ordered to Virginia, where, at Lynchburg, May 7, it was mustered into the service of the Confederate Government. It saw active service from the start, and participated in the earlier engagements of the war in that department. About the middle of February, 1862, it was attached to Anderson's brigade, the other regiments being the Seventh and Fourteenth Tennessee. This was known as the "Tennessee Brigade." This regiment served in nearly all the battles of the Army of Northern Virginia: Cheat Mountain, Winchester, Manassas (under Gen. Joe Johnston, near Yorktown), Seven Pines (the first real battle, losing heavily, including its brigade commander, Gen. Hatton, who was succeeded by Gen. Archer), Mechanicsville, Gains' Mills, Frazier's Farm, Culpepper Court House, Second Bull Run, Centerville, Fredericksburg (where Col. Turney commanded the brigade and was severely wounded), Chancellorsville, Gettysburg (again losing heavily and displaying great gallantry in the famous charge on Cemetery Hill), Falling Water, Bristoe Station, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, Petersburg and many others, losing in the aggregate two-thirds of those engaged. It was surrendered at Appomattox in April, 1865. Col. Turney had been wounded, and was in Florida at the time of the surrender. This was one of the best regiments from the State.

The First Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Middle Tennessee, in April, 1861, immediately after the fall of Sumter, and was organized with George Maney as colonel, and was, July 10, transferred to Virginia, where, with the Seventh and Fourteenth Regiments, it was brigaded under Gen. Anderson. The trip to Mingo Flats was the first hardship, and near Cheat Pass the regiment was first under fire. It participated in the movement at Big Sewell Mountain, and prepared winter quarters at Huntersville, but December 8 moved to Winchester, and early in January, 1862, amid intense suffering and cold, moved to Romney; thence back to Winchester early in February. After the fall of Fort Donelson, the First was ordered to the command of Gen. A. S. Johnston. Part was left at Knoxville, and part joined Johnston. The latter, the left wing, participated in the battle of Shiloh on the second day, but the right wing had been detained for want of transportation. After Shiloh the wings were reunited and late in April the First was reorganized, H. R. Field becoming colonel, *vice* Maney promoted. Hawkins' battalion was added to the regiment as Company L. The First was in Maney's brigade of Cheatham's division. July 11, 1862, it left Tupelo, and via Chattanooga moved into Kentucky, reaching Harrodsburg October 6. It fought on the extreme right at Perryville, doing gallant service and losing over one-half its men killed and wounded. It captured four

twelve-pound guns and had fifty men killed. It retreated south with Bragg, and in December was consolidated with the Twenty-seventh Tennessee, and later was engaged in the battle of Murfreesboro, where it lost heavily. It moved south, and in September participated in the battle of Chickamauga with conspicuous daring. Late in November it was engaged in the battle of Missionary Ridge, and then retreated with the Confederate Army. From Dalton to Atlanta the regiment was constantly engaged in all the memorable movements of that campaign, fighting desperately at "Dead Angle." In front of the First were found 385 Federal dead. The First lost twenty-seven killed and wounded. It fought on the 20th and 22d of July, and at Jonesboro August 19 and 20. It moved north with Hood, fighting at Spring Hill, Franklin and Nashville, and then retreated, moving to North Carolina, where it participated at Bentonville, and finally surrendered April 26, 1865.

The Second Confederate (Tennessee) Regiment was organized May 5, 1861, with William B. Bate, colonel, and was mustered into the Confederate service at Lynchburg, Va., early in May, 1861. It was raised in Middle Tennessee. It occupied various positions until June 1, when, at Acquia Creek, it supported Confederate batteries in an engagement with Federal war ships. It made a forced march to assist Beauregard at Manassas, and on the 21st was marched seven miles at a double-quick, a portion of the time under a heavy artillery fire. It occupied Evansport and erected batteries, etc., until February, 1862, when it re-enlisted for three years and took a furlough of sixty days. It joined the Confederate forces at Huntsville, Ala., late in March, 1862; thence moved to Corinth, and April 6 and 7 was hotly engaged at Shiloh in the brigade of Gen. P. R. Cleburne, where it lost in killed and wounded the appalling number of 235 men. Col. Bate was severely wounded and was immediately promoted. After this sanguinary battle the regiment was reorganized. It skirmished around Corinth, retreated to Tupelo, and then with its brigade was moved to Knoxville, Tenn., thence through Wilson's Gap into Kentucky, to cut off Gen. Morgan's retreat from Cumberland Gap. August 30, 1862, it was desperately engaged at Richmond, Ky., losing many men. It then moved to Latonia Springs; thence to Shelbyville, threatening Louisville; thence fought at Perryville, its commander being Sr.-Capt. C. P. Moore. It then moved to Knoxville, where W. D. Robison was elected colonel. December 31, 1862, it fought at Murfreesboro, suffering heavily. It wintered at Tullahoma and in the spring of 1863 did guard duty, skirmishing several times. Later it moved to Bridgeport and was engaged at McLemore's Cove, Chickamauga, Missionary Ridge and Ringgold Gap. It did outpost duty during the winter



of 1863-64, and in the spring retreated with Johnston from Dalton to Atlanta, participating in the engagements at Resaca, New Hope Church, "Dead Angle" and Atlanta. At Peach Tree Creek two of its companies were captured. It fought at Jonesboro, where the dashing, gallant Maj. Driver was killed, and at Lovejoy's Station. It moved north with Gen. Hood and at the battles of Franklin and Nashville suffered heavy loss. It retreated to Tupelo, was transferred to North Carolina, fought at Bentonville, losing its commander, Wilkerson. April 26, 1865, it was surrendered by Gen. Johnston at Greensboro, N. C., to Gen. Sherman.

The Second Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Memphis and organized about the 1st of May, 1861, with J. K. Walker, colonel, and reported to Gen. J. L. T. Sneed at Randolph. Later it participated in the movement northward and fought in the battle of Belmont, November 7, with considerable loss. It returned southward occupying several points, and finally from Corinth, in April, 1862, moved up and engaged the enemy at Shiloh, in which bloody engagement it lost severely. Soon after this it was consolidated with the Twenty-first Tennessee Regiment to form the Fifth Confederate Regiment.

The Third Confederate (Tennessee) Regiment was organized at Knoxville, May 29, 1861, with John C. Vaughn, colonel, and July 2, 1861, left for the field in Virginia, and two days later was mustered into the Confederate service. The first engagement was June 19, when Companies I and K captured New River Bridge and two cannons. July 21 it was engaged at the first battle of Manassas, and then did picket duty. February 16, 1862, it moved to East Tennessee, and April 1 skirmished with guerrillas in Scott County, Tenn. May 1 it was reorganized at Big Creek Gap, Vaughn being re-elected colonel. August 6, 1862, the regiment defeated three regiments of Federals at Tazewell, Tenn., losing, 7 killed and 31 wounded. It participated in the siege of Cumberland Gap; thence moved with Bragg into Kentucky, and here N. J. Lillard became colonel, *vice* Vaughn promoted. In December, 1862, the regiment with three others of East Tennessee under Gen. Reynolds, started for Vicksburg, arriving January 5, 1863; took an active part in the surrounding engagements and surrendered with Pemberton July 4. July 10 the troops were paroled, and October 19 were formally exchanged. It was assigned to Longstreet's command and saw service around Knoxville. A portion of the regiment in Virginia, during the summer of 1864, lost at Piedmont forty-seven killed and wounded. It participated at Bull's Gap, Greeneville and Morristown, and surrendered May 9, 1865.

The Third Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was organized in Giles

County May 16, 1861, with five companies from Giles, three from Maury, one from Lawrence and one from Lewis, and was placed in command of Col. J. C. Brown. The Third, after occupying camp of instruction, was, about the middle of September, 1861, sent to Gen. Buckner's command at Bowling Green, Ky. February 8, 1862, it reached Fort Donelson where it began work. It was commanded by Lieut.-Col. Gordon, Col. Brown having charge of a brigade. During the siege of Fort Donelson the Third was prominently engaged. It made several sallies and charges with great spirit and considerable loss. It was surrendered with the fort, having lost 13 killed, 56 wounded and 722 captured. The prisoners were taken North September 23, 1862; 607 were exchanged and immediately (September 26, 1862, at Jackson, Miss.) reorganized with C. H. Walker, colonel. It took the field, skirmished at Springdale, Miss., fought at Chickasaw Bayou, losing 2 men, did good service at Port Hudson; thence in May, 1863, moved to Raymond, where, in the fiercest engagement of the war, it lost the appalling number of 32 killed on the field, 76 wounded and 68 captured. After this it was engaged at Chickamauga, losing 24 killed, 62 wounded and 7 prisoners; and at Missionary Ridge, losing 3 wounded and 1 captured. It participated at Resaca, New Hope Church, near Marietta, around Atlanta, at Jonesboro, and in numerous lesser engagements. It went north with Hood, to Franklin and Nashville, and then moved to North Carolina, where at Greensboro, April 26, 1865, it was surrendered. This was one of the best of the Tennessee regiments.

The Fourth Confederate (Tennessee) Regiment was organized at Camp Sneed, near Knoxville, in the month of July, 1861, and comprised companies from the counties of Davidson, Rutherford, Williamson and others, and from Alabama, and was commanded by Col. W. M. Churchwell. The lieutenant-colonel was James McMurray, and the major, Lewis. This regiment first saw service in East Tennessee. After various movements it joined Gen. Bragg on the campaign into Kentucky, where, at Perryville, it was engaged. It marched southward with the army and participated in the furious charges at Murfreesboro, sustaining severe loss, and later, at the splendid Confederate victory at Chickamauga, bore its full share of the bloody work. It was at Missionary Ridge and at all the various movements of Gen. Johnston in the Georgia campaign, fighting often and losing heavily. It marched back on Hood's Tennessee campaign and participated at Nashville and Franklin; thence marched to North Carolina with the gallant Army of the Tennessee, where it surrendered in the spring of 1865.

The Fourth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in the

counties of Dyer, Obion, Lauderdale, Gibson, Tipton and Hardeman, and was organized May 18, 1861, with R. P. Neely, colonel. It moved to Memphis May 20; thence up to Randolph; thence to Fort Pillow July 18; thence to New Madrid, and November 7, at Belmont, served as a reserve. February 4, 1862, at Island No. 10, it was under the fire of Federal gun-boats. It reached Memphis March 20; thence moved to Corinth, and on the 6th of April began the brilliant fight at Shiloh. In one charge, when it captured a fine battery, it lost 31 killed and 160 wounded, and during the battle nearly half of those engaged. The Fourth was reorganized April 25, with O. F. Strahl, colonel. In July it moved to Chattanooga and August 17 started on the Kentucky campaign, passing through Sparta, Gainesboro, Munfordville, Bardstown and Harrodsburg. At Perryville, in the afternoon of the 8th, it participated in a brilliant charge on the Federals, losing about one-third of those engaged. It moved south via Knoxville and Tullahoma to Murfreesboro, where it was hotly engaged December 31. In July, 1863, A. J. Kellar became colonel. At Chickamauga, September 18 and 19, the Fourth fought gallantly, and November 26 participated in the severe contest on Missionary Ridge, losing nearly one-third of its men. Beginning at Dalton in May, 1864, the Fourth was under fire sixty days in the movement toward Atlanta, fighting at Dug Gap, Mill Creek Gap, Resaca, Ellsberry Mountain, Kenesaw, Atlanta and Jonesboro, suffering severe loss. At Spring Hill and Franklin and Nashville the Fourth was gallantly engaged. After this the regiment moved to North Carolina, fought at Bentonville and April 26, 1865, surrendered at Greensboro.

The Fifth Confederate (Tennessee) Regiment was formed from the Second and the Twenty-first Tennessee Regiments at Tupelo, Miss., about the 1st of June, 1862, with J. A. Smith, colonel. About August 1 it moved to near Chattanooga. It moved north with Gen. Bragg on the Kentucky campaign, skirmishing several times and assisting in the capture of Fort Denham at Munfordville. Returning south from Bardstown the Fifth fought desperately at Perryville October 8, losing many valuable men. It continued on to Knoxville; thence to Tullahoma and Eagleville, and December 31 commenced in the brilliant Confederate achievement at Murfreesboro. The regiment displayed great gallantry and after the battle moved to Tullahoma, where it wintered; then to Wartrace and in June, 1863, to Hoover's Gap, and then to Chattanooga. In September it fought with conspicuous gallantry at bloody Chickamauga, losing heavily of its best and bravest. Later, at Missionary Ridge, the Fifth held its position on the right until left alone. From Dalton to Atlanta it was constantly engaged, losing many in killed,



wounded and prisoners. It moved north with Gen. Hood and fought as it never had before at Franklin in that hottest engagement of the war, where it was reduced to twenty-one men. At Nashville it fought on the right and then moved south. It was consolidated at Corinth with other skeleton regiments and moved to North Carolina, where it participated at Bentonville and was finally surrendered April 26, 1865. Much of the time of service the regiment was in the brigade of the gallant and beloved Cleburne.

The Fifth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Henry County (a few in Benton and in Carroll) and organized at Paris May 20, 1861, with W. E. Travis, colonel, with twelve companies. It occupied Humboldt and Union City until September 4, 1861; then moved to Columbus, Ky., and at the battle of Belmont supported the artillery. It formed part of Stewart's brigade, Cheatham's division, Polk's corps. When Donelson fell the regiment moved to New Madrid, where several skirmishes were had with the Federals. The Fifth marched to Corinth, and April 6 and 7 fought with notable bravery at Shiloh, losing heavily. It then moved to Tupelo; thence to Chattanooga. In September it moved on the Kentucky expedition, and at Perryville sustained a heavy loss. For the Fifth this was one of the sharpest fights of the war. It then moved via Knoxville to Murfreesboro, where it was consolidated with the Fourth under Col. Lamb, and was desperately engaged at the battle of the latter name. In the movement south it skirmished at Guy's Gap. The Fifth fought in the bloody battle of Chickamauga for two days, and at Missionary Ridge, in November, 1863, was one of the last to leave the ridge, and was then used to cover the retreat. It checked the victorious Federals until 2 A. M. the next morning, though overwhelmed with numbers. On the retreat it fought all the way to Ringgold Gap. It wintered at Dalton, and in the spring, on the Atlanta campaign, fought almost continuously to Atlanta. Col. Lamb was mortally wounded at Ellsbury Ridge, and was succeeded by A. J. Kellar. It moved north with Hood, fought at Franklin and Nashville, retreated south, and in the spring of 1865 a mere remnant was surrendered in North Carolina.

The Sixth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Madison, Fayette and Haywood, nine of the eleven companies in Madison, and was organized in May, 1861, by the election of W. H. Stephens, colonel, and was mustered in for one year on May 15. May 26 it moved to Union City, where it was thoroughly disciplined. It moved to Columbus, Ky., but was not engaged at Belmont. After the surrender of Fort Donelson the regiment moved south to Corinth. April 6 and 7, 1862, the Sixth

was first engaged at Shiloh, having to endure the trial of a severe artillery fire before being engaged. About 11 o'clock of the 6th it was ordered to charge a battery, which it did in gallant style, meeting with a terrific fire, which cut down 250 men. It did splendid work on both of those memorable days, losing over one-third of those engaged. It returned to Corinth, in the vicinity of which it participated in several hot skirmishes, losing severely. It then moved to Chattanooga, and in September started on the campaign into Kentucky. At Perryville, October 8, the Sixth, under Col. G. C. Porter, occupied the center of Maney's gallant brigade, and lost over 150 killed, wounded and missing. The regiment was next engaged at Murfreesboro, having previously been consolidated with the Ninth Tennessee, under Col. Hurt. It brought on the battle and was then held in reserve, but was rapidly moved from point to point, being much of the time under heavy artillery fire. Next at Chickamauga the Sixth, under Col. Porter, did noble work in the fiercest of the fight, losing over a third of its men. At Missionary Ridge it was prominently engaged, and was one of the last to leave the field. It wintered at Dalton, and in the spring of 1864 fought at Kenesaw, "Dead Angle," siege of Atlanta, Jonesboro, Lovejoy and Franklin, November 30, 1864, where it was immortalized. It fought at Nashville, Spring Hill, Elk River, and finally surrendered in North Carolina.

The Seventh Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Sumner, Wilson, Smith and DeKalb Counties, and was organized May 25, 1861, with Robert Hatton, colonel. It remained at Camp Trousdale, Sumner County, until in July, when it moved to Virginia, and with the First and Fourteenth Tennessee Regiments, was constituted Anderson's Brigade. It skirmished on the Parkersburg road as part of Loring's division of Jackson's corps, and at Hancock, Md., and later the First Confederate (Turney's Tennessee) took the place of the First Tennessee (Confederate), the whole being called the "First Tennessee Brigade." The Seventh participated in the Yorktown campaign, and later Goodner was commissioned colonel, Hatton brigadier, and G. W. Smith major-general. May 30, 1862, at Seven Pines, the Seventh, in a desperate charge, lost eight captains, half its privates, and Brig.-Gen. Hatton. In the "seven days" battles it fought with notable daring and dash at Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mills, Frazier's Farm, Malvern Hill and elsewhere, losing many valuable men. It lost heavily at Culpepper Court House, and at Bull Run Company H lost all its men killed or wounded, a remarkable circumstance. At Centerville, Bolivar Heights and Antietam the Seventh fought with conspicuous valor, losing at the latter battle over thirty of less than 100 engaged. At Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville it sus-

tained severe loss amid brilliant action on the field. At Gettysburg it commenced the attack, losing the first man on the Confederate side, being held in reserve the second day, and conjointly with Pickett's division, on the third day, forming the column which made the historic and headlong charge on Cemetery Hill. In the Wilderness, at Spottsylvania, at Petersburg, on Weldon Railroad, at Fort Archer and in a multitude of skirmishes, the Seventh bore an honorable and conspicuous part. Forty-seven sad-hearted, noble men surrendered at Appomattox.

The Eighth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in the counties of Marshall, Lincoln, Overton, Jackson and Smith, and was organized at Camp Harris, Lincoln County, in May, 1861, and was mustered into the provisional army of Tennessee by Col. D. R. Smythe. Later in May it moved to Camp Trousdale. Its colonel was Alfred S. Fulton. It moved first to West Virginia, where it operated for some time, skirmishing occasionally with some loss. Later it returned to Tennessee, and finally joined Bragg's Kentucky campaign, and was engaged October 8, 1862, at Perryville with loss. It moved south and participated in the hottest of the fight at Murfreesboro, losing nearly half the number engaged in killed and wounded. After this it participated in all the brilliant movements of the Army of the Tennessee—at Chickamauga, Missionary Ridge, on the Atlanta and Hood's Tennessee campaigns, fighting with distinguished valor, and losing its bravest and best. At Murfreesboro it was in Donelson's brigade of Cheatham's division. At Chickamauga it was in Wright's brigade, and was commanded by Col. John H. Anderson. After long and gallant service it was surrendered to Gen. Sherman in North Carolina.

The Ninth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment, was raised in Haywood, Fayette, Tipton, Hardeman, Shelby, Lauderdale, Weakley and Obion Counties, and was organized at Camp Beauregard, Jackson, May 22, 1861, with H. L. Douglas, colonel. It was disciplined at Union City where many died of measles. In August it moved to Columbus, Ky.; in October to Mayfield; thence back to Columbus, and in March, 1862, to Corinth. From Bethel Station it marched sixteen miles to engage the enemy at Shiloh, and was in the hottest of the fight, losing about sixty men. C. S. Hurt soon became colonel, and in August the Ninth marched to Chattanooga, and in September northward on the Kentucky campaign. At Perryville, October 8, it fought its severest and most desperate fight of the war, losing 52 killed and 76 wounded. It was then transferred via Knoxville to Murfreesboro, where it was consolidated with the Sixth, and where December 31, it sustained heavy loss on a bloody field. Soon after this, Col. Porter succeeded Col. Hurt. The Ninth fell



back with the army to Chattanooga; thence to Chickamauga, where September 19 and 20 it did brilliant service, losing 35 killed and 40 wounded. At Missionary Ridge it fought in reserve, and then fell slowly back to Dalton, where it wintered. On the Atlanta campaign, beginning in May, 1864, it fought at Resaca, Dallas, Kenesaw, Dead Angle, Peach Tree Creek and at Atlanta, where it lost many officers and was in numerous skirmishes. It participated in the engagements at Jonesboro, Lovejoy, Dalton and Decatur, without serious loss; and at bloody Franklin fought with great fierceness, sustaining a loss of one-fourth its men, and at Nashville suffered much amid gallant action before an overwhelming force. As Company E of the First Consolidated Tennessee Regiment, the Ninth marched to North Carolina, where April 26, 1865, it surrendered with forty men.

The Tenth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Davidson, Montgomery and Giles Counties, and was organized at Fort Henry, in May, 1861, with Adolphus Heiman, colonel. It was disciplined at Fort Henry, and during the investment lost seven men killed and wounded by the bursting of a 64-pounder. At Fort Donelson, where it retreated, it was under constant and destructive musketry and artillery fire for three days, and became prisoners of war February 16, 1862. Here it earned the designation "Bloody Tenth." September 24 it was exchanged, and October 2 reorganized at Clinton, Miss. R. W. McGavock succeeded Col. Heiman, who had died. In December, in Gregg's brigade, it helped defeat Sherman at Chickasaw Bayou. January 3 it moved to Port Hudson, where March 13, at night, it sustained a heavy bombardment by Federal gun-boats. May 7 it fought at Jackson, and May 12 brilliantly at Raymond, losing Col. McGavock. The Tenth was consolidated with the Thirtieth under Col. Turner. After the capitulation of Vicksburg it joined Bragg at Ringgold, and September 19 and 20 at fierce Chickamauga lost 224 men killed and wounded out of 328 engaged, a result with scarcely a parallel in the annals of war. The brigade was broken up on the death of Gen. Gregg, and the Tenth was transferred to Tyler's brigade. At Missionary Ridge the regiment fought hotly, being one of the last to leave the field. In May, 1864, it began the southward movement, fighting with conspicuous bravery at Rocky Face Ridge, Ringgold Gap, Buzzard Roost, Resaca, New Hope Church; Pine Mountain, Kenesaw Mountain, Peach Tree Creek, Decatur (July 22), Atlanta and Jonesboro, where Col. Grace was mortally wounded. In Hood's campaign into Tennessee it participated in the awful charges at Franklin and the stubborn fighting at Nashville. It then moved to Bentonville, N. C., and surrendered at Greensboro.

The Eleventh Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Davidson, Humphreys, Dickson, Robertson and Hickman Counties, and was organized May 22, 1861, at Camp Cheatham, with J. E. Rains as colonel. Late in July it was ordered into East Tennessee, and in October was moved into Kentucky with Gen. Zollicoffer. At "Wild Cat" it lost nine killed and wounded, and then guarded Cumberland Gap until the early summer of 1862. It moved south, skirmishing at Walden's Ridge, losing by capture its colonel, Gordon. After sundry movements it joined Bragg at Harrodsburg, thence moved south via Knoxville to Murfreesboro, where the Eleventh fought its first pitched battle with splendid dash and intrepidity, losing many men, among whom was Col. Gordon, severely wounded. Gen. Rains was killed on the field. After this the Eleventh was assigned to the Tennessee Brigade of Gen. Preston Smith, comprising the Twelfth, Thirteenth, Twenty-ninth, Forty-seventh and One Hundred and Fifty-fourth. It spent the summer of 1863 as Chattanooga, and in September participated in the bloody battle of Chickamauga with great bravery and severe loss. At Missionary Ridge it fought desperately, resisting the furious charges of the Federals for hours, and until flanked. Four regimental color-bearers were shot down and Maj. Green was mortally wounded. In the Atlanta campaign, in 1864, it was engaged at Resaca, Calhoun, New Hope Church, Dead Angle, Kenesaw, Peach Tree Creek, Sugar Creek and elsewhere, losing in the aggregate heavily, and invariably displaying wonderful dash and pluck. At Jonesboro it lost Col. Long. In the awful battle of Franklin and again at Nashville it bore a distinguished part. It was at Bentonville, N. C., and April 26, 1865, surrendered at Greensboro. About the beginning of Hood's Tennessee campaign it was consolidated with the Twenty-ninth Regiment.

The Twelfth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Gibson, Dyer, Carroll, Fulton and Hickman Counties, Tenn., and Graves County, Ky., and was mustered in at Jackson, May 28, 1861, R. M. Russell becoming colonel. It was thoroughly fitted for the field at Trenton and Union City, and in September moved to Columbus, Ky., and November 7 took active part in the battle of Belmont, T. H. Bell, commanding, losing about thirty killed and wounded. Soon after the surrender of Fort Donelson it was transferred to Corinth, and April 6 and 7 participated in the headlong victory at Shiloh with severe loss, Col. Bell receiving dangerous wounds. In May 1862, it was reorganized with Bell as colonel, and was consolidated with the Twenty-second. It was moved to Chattanooga; thence detached to Kirby Smith, at Knoxville; thence marched into Kentucky, where at Richmond it defeated the enemy

with loss. It joined Bragg at Harrodsburg, was in reserve at Perryville, returned to Knoxville and was consolidated with the Forty-seventh. It was then transferred to Murfreesboro where it bore a gallant part, leaving its gallant dead thick on the field. At Chickamauga, in September, and at Missionary Ridge, in November, it distinguished itself on the field by its impetuous charges and adamantine stands. Again in 1864 at Rocky Face Ridge, Resaca, Adairsville, New Hope Church, Kenesaw, "Dead Angle," Peach Tree Creek, Decatur and Atlanta, it bore its heroic part. At Jonesboro and Lovejoy Station it suffered severely, and in the dreadful slaughter at Franklin, and in the dogged and desperate fighting at Nashville it fought with its accustomed dash and courage. It made the dark and sorrowful march to the Carolinas, participated at Bentonville and surrendered at Greensboro, N. C., April 26, 1865, with fifty men.

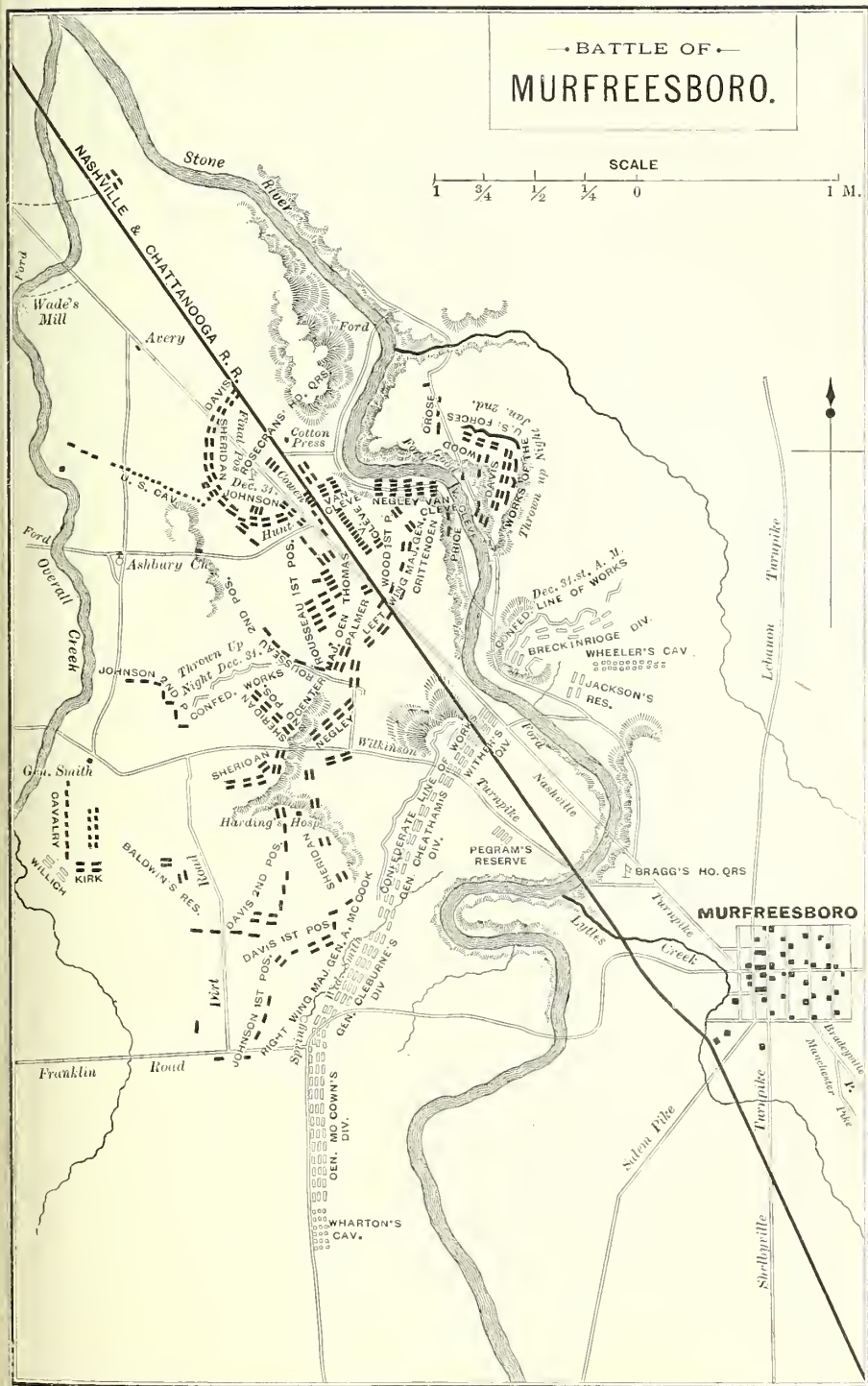
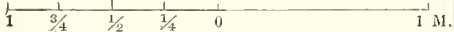
The Thirteenth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Fayette, Shelby, Gibson, McNairy and Dyer Counties, Tenn., and Marshall County, Miss., and was mustered in at Jackson June 3, 1861, J. V. Wright becoming colonel. It moved to Randolph and joined Sneed's brigade. After occupying various stations it moved in September to Columbus, Ky., where on the 10th it was brigaded with the Twelfth and Twenty-first Regiments, under Col. Russell. November 7, at Belmont, it was desperately engaged driving the enemy back to his boats, but losing the enormous number of 149 killed and wounded out of 400 engaged. Soon after this A. J. Vaughn succeeded Wright as colonel. March 19, 1862, it reach Corinth, and April 6 and 7 fought with desperate valor at Shiloh, losing 112 killed and wounded. It was then re-organized and a company from LaGrange was added. Early in August it moved to Chattanooga; was detached and sent to Gen. Cleburne, at Knoxville; thence marched into Kentucky and assisted in severely defeating the Federals at Richmond. It was in reserve at Perryville; thence moved to Murfreesboro via Knoxville and Tullahoma. At the furious battle of Murfreesboro it lost 110 killed and wounded out of 226 engaged. At Chickamauga in September, 1863, and Missionary Ridge in November, it displayed its usual desperation and valor. In the Georgia campaign it was honorably and gallantly engaged in all the principal battles to Atlanta, suffering in the aggregate severely, and in the Tennessee campaign, at Spring Hill, fierce Franklin and Nashville sustained further and sorrowful losses. Sadly the skeleton regiment joined Johnson's army in North Carolina, where at Bentonville it surrendered.

The Fourteenth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Montgomery, Robertson and Stewart Counties, and was organized at Camp



—• BATTLE OF •—  
MURFREESBORO.

SCALE





Duncan, Clarksville, in May, 1861, under Col. W. A. Forbes. About the middle of July it was transferred to Virginia, where it was brigaded with the First and the Seventh, under Gen. S. R. Anderson. In the harassing Cheat Mountain expedition, it suffered intensely and was first under fire. During the winter of 1861-62, it participated in the campaigns around Romney, Winchester, and the bombardment of Hancock. From this date it was in all the historical movements of the Army of Northern Virginia. May 31, 1862, it fought at Seven Pines with great bravery, losing heavily. At Chickahominy, Cold Harbor, Gaines' Mills, Malvern Hill, Frazier's Farm and elsewhere it left its gallant dead on the bloody fields. Again at Cedar Mountain, second Manassas (where Col. Forbes was killed), Chantilly, Harper's Ferry, Antietam, Shepardstown, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville (May, 1863) it bore a distinguished and honorable part, leaving its best blood on the ever memorable fields. Late in June, 1863, the army moved into Pennsylvania, where at Gettysburg, on the first day, the Fourteenth fought with desperate valor and heroic achievements, sustaining the loss of many of its best soldiers. On the 3d of July its brigade and pickets made the memorable and brilliant charge on Cemetery Ridge. This extraordinary charge has no superior in the annals of war. Again at Falling Waters, Bristow Station; in the bloody Wilderness, at fearful Spottsylvania, at Cold Harbor, Petersburg, the defenses of Richmond and elsewhere, it sustained its heroic record. In April, 1865, the remnant of this war-scarred regiment laid down its dripping arms at Appomattox.

The Fifteenth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised mainly in Shelby County and at McKenzie, and was organized at Jackson June 7, 1861, under Col. Charles M. Carroll. Later several companies withdrew and were succeeded by others from Shelby County and Paducah, Ky. After occupying various positions it finally participated in the battle of Belmont, where it suffered slight loss. In March, 1862, it moved south from Columbus, Ky., and finally, April 6 and 7, from Bethel Station, near Corinth, fought in the bloody battle of Shiloh where it lost the fearful number of nearly 200 killed and wounded, receiving high praise for its dash and daring. It then returned to Tupelo where it was reorganized, and later was moved via Chattanooga northward on the Kentucky campaign, fighting in the severe contest of Perryville, where in a hand-to-hand encounter it assisted in capturing a stone wall. It moved south via Knoxville to Murfreesboro, in which battle it further distinguished itself. Later it was consolidated with the Thirty-seventh Regiment, Tyler of the Fifteenth taking command, which occasioned much ill-feeling during the remainder of the war. It moved back to Chatta-



nooga, thence to Chickamauga, where in September, 1863, it was hotly engaged, thence to Missionary Ridge in November, sustaining in both actions heavy loss. It followed the fortunes of the Georgia campaign, fighting in all the principal battles with splendid courage and severe loss. In Hood's unfortunate campaign into Tennessee, it engaged fiercely in the actions of Franklin and Nashville, and finally marched to North Carolina, where it surrendered.

The Sixteenth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised mainly on the Cumberland Table-land, in and around Putnam County, and was mustered in June 9 at Camp Trousdale, Sumner County, with John H. Savage, colonel. Late in July it moved to Virginia, where it was brigaded with the Eighth under Gen. Donelson. The first severe hardship and the first engagement was on the Cheat Mountain expedition. It participated in the harrassing expedition to Little Sewell Mountain. In December, 1861, it was transferred to Port Royal, opposite Beaufort Island, where it did valuable guard duty until after Shiloh, when it reported at Corinth and joined Bragg's campaign into Kentucky, where at Perryville it fought its first severe battle with great pluck and intrepidity. It then returned and participated gallantly in the precipitous charges at Murfreesboro. It then moved south and in September fought with conspicuous courage at dreadful Chickamauga, and later sustained for hours the shock of the Federal Army at Missionary Ridge, losing heavily in both actions. In 1864, on the Georgia campaign, it fought at Rocky Face Ridge, Kenesaw, Resaca, Peach Tree Creek and around Atlanta, losing many in the aggregate and sustaining its fine record. Again at Jonesboro, and at that hottest battle of the civil war—Franklin—and again at Nashville, it poured the blood of its bravest on the ensanguined fields. With heavy hearts the skeleton remnant of the gallant Sixteenth marched down to North Carolina where it finally surrendered.

The Seventeenth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Bedford, Marshall, Franklin, Jackson and Putnam Counties, and with T. W. Newman, colonel, was mustered in May 5, 1861. It was disciplined at Camp Trousdale and late in July was transferred to Virginia, but in August returned to East Tennessee. It joined Zollicoffer's Kentucky campaign and at the battle of Rock Castle in half an hour lost 11 killed and 27 wounded. Again it participated in the battle of Fishing Creek (where Gen. Zollicoffer was killed), with the loss of 10 killed and 36 wounded. February 19, 1862, it reached Murfreesboro; thence moved to northern Mississippi, where it participated in the siege of Corinth. In May, T. C. H. Miller became colonel, but was soon succeeded by Albert S. Marks. It was transferred to Chattanooga early in August, and in September

moved into Kentucky with Bragg, fighting stubbornly at Perryville; thence moved south with the army and December 31 was engaged with magnificent courage at Murfreesboro, losing the extraordinary number of 246 killed and wounded. Later it was engaged at Hoover's Gap, and in September, 1863, at the fearful contest of Chickamauga lost 145 killed and wounded. It soon moved north with Longstreet against Knoxville; assisted in the assault on Fort Loudon; lost 10 men killed and wounded at Bean's Station; and passed the winter of 1863-64 in East Tennessee, suffering incredibly. In May, 1864, it moved to Petersburg, Va., and assaulted the enemy at Drury Bluff May 16, losing 12 killed and 50 wounded. It fought in numerous skirmishes around Richmond, and February 5, 1865, sustained considerable loss at Hatcher's Run. April 2 it fought its last battle on the defenses of Petersburg, losing severely, over half its men being captured. It surrendered at Appomattox April 9.

The Eighteenth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was formed at Camp Trousdale June 11, 1861, of companies from Rutherford, Bedford, Davidson, Wilson, Cannon, Sumner and Cheatham Counties, with J. B. Palmer, colonel. September 17 it moved to Bowling Green, Ky., and February 8, 1862, advanced to the relief of Fort Donelson. At the siege two companies of the Eighteenth were the first to engage the enemy. After hard fighting the regiment was surrendered February 16. After about six months it was exchanged and was reorganized at Jackson, Miss., with Palmer as colonel. It was soon transferred to Knoxville to invade Kentucky, but instead was moved to Murfreesboro and brigaded with the Twenty-sixth and the Thirty-second Regiments and others, which last were soon replaced with the Forty-fifth Tennessee. At Murfreesboro it participated in one of the most famous and brilliant charges of history with severe loss. Col. Palmer received three wounds. In September, 1863, at Chickamauga, it distinguished itself by its furious fighting and desperate losses. Col. Palmer was again dangerously wounded. Again at Missionary Ridge it fought with its accustomed gallantry and loss. It wintered at Dalton, and, in 1864, resisted the advance of the enemy on numerous bloody fields on the way to Atlanta. Palmer was commissioned brigadier-general and given a brigade of the Third, Eighteenth, Thirty-second and Forty-fifth Regiments. W. R. Butler became colonel of the Eighteenth. In a heroic encounter at Atlanta against vastly superior numbers the regiment was outflanked and a majority of its members captured. The regiment was consolidated with the Third under Col. Butler. It fought at Jonesboro and moved north, reaching Franklin too late for the battle; was detached to aid Forrest, and engaged the enemy near Murfreesboro and elsewhere; and after Hood's defeat at

Nashville moved to the Carolinas where it fought at Bentonville and surrendered at Greensboro.

The Nineteenth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Hamilton, Knox, Polk, Rhea, Hawkins, Washington and Sullivan Counties, and was organized in May, 1861, at Knoxville, with David M. Cummings, colonel. It was first distributed over East Tennessee to do guard duty, and about July 1 was united and stationed at Cumberland Gap. It marched north on the Kentucky campaign; lost one man killed at Barbourville; was in reserve at "Wild Cat;" fought bravely at Fishing Creek, losing about fifteen killed and wounded. Afterward terrible privations and sufferings were endured. It moved to Murfreesboro in February, 1862; thence to northern Mississippi; thence to Shiloh, where April 6 and 7 it was furiously engaged in the awful assaults on the "Hornet's Nest," losing over 100 killed and wounded, and assisted in the capture of Prentiss' division. It was then reorganized and moved to Vicksburg, where, in the swamps, it suffered terribly from disease, and later fought at Baton Rouge. It then moved north and joined Bragg's army and participated in the sweeping Confederate victory at Murfreesboro losing over 125 killed and wounded. It moved south and in September, 1863, at Chickamauga, fought with magnificent bravery, losing over one-third of those engaged. Again at Missionary Ridge, in November, it was hotly and stubbornly engaged, sustaining severe loss. In 1864, from Dalton to Atlanta, in all the bloody battles of that memorable campaign, it fought with conspicuous daring and sorrowful losses. Among the slain was the beloved Col. Walker. It did its duty at Jonesboro and Lovejoy, and in the awful assault at Franklin shed its best blood without stint all over the stricken field. It fought at Nashville, retreated sorrowfully south, skirmishing at Sugar Creek and Pulaski. It fought its last battle at Bentonville, and surrendered at High Point, N. C., with sixty-four men.

The Twentieth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Davidson, Williamson, Rutherford, Sumner, Perry and Smith Counties, and was organized at Camp Trousdale in June, 1861, with Joel A. Battle, colonel. Late in July it was ordered to Virginia, but returned after reaching Bristol, and marched north with Zollicoffer on the Kentucky campaign, skirmishing at Barbourville, participating in the action at "Wild Cat," fighting furiously at Fishing Creek, losing 33 killed on the field and about 100 wounded. It then moved to northern Mississippi and in April participated with splendid valor in the brilliant Confederate success at Shiloh, losing 187 men killed and wounded. The regiment was then reorganized, moved to Vicksburg, participated in the



movement there, fought at Baton Rouge, thence marched to Murfreesboro, in which memorable battle it was hotly and furiously engaged, sustaining a loss of 178 killed and wounded of 350 engaged. Later it fought desperately at Hoover's Gap, losing 45 killed and wounded. At bloody Chickamauga the Twentieth displayed wonderful dash and pluck, losing 98 killed and wounded of 140 engaged. At Missionary Ridge it fought brilliantly and retreated in good order. It wintered at Dalton and in 1864, in the famous Georgia campaign, fought with splendid courage at Resaca, Dalton, New Hope Church, Pine Mountain, Kenesaw, Peach Tree Creek, Jonesboro and the actions around Atlanta, losing heavily in the aggregate. Again at Franklin, in those awful assaults in the flaming teeth of death, it displayed heroic valor and suffered desperate loss. It bore its gallant but sorrowful part at Nashville and sadly retreated, marching to the Carolinas to almost literally "die in the last ditch." At Greensboro, N. C., thirty-four sad men surrendered and returned to blighted homes to repair the ravages of war.

The Twenty-first Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Shelby and Hardeman Counties about the last of April, 1861, and was soon organized with Ed. Pickett, colonel. It reported first to Gen. Cheatham at Union City, and later moved up to Columbus, Ky. It participated in the sharp action at Belmont, November 7, then moved back to Columbus and to Union City where it remained a short period; then moved southward and finally participated in the furious battle of Shiloh, and later was consolidated with the Second Regiment to form the Fifth Confederate Regiment.

The Twenty-second Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in the counties of Gibson, Carroll, Dyer, Hardeman and in Kentucky and Louisiana, and was organized at Trenton about July 1, 1861, with Thomas J. Freeman, colonel. It operated in West Tennessee and in the movement which culminated in the battle of Belmont, November 7, where it fought and lost about seventy-five killed and wounded. It returned south with the army and located near Corinth. It fought at Shiloh, losing nearly one-half of those engaged, and displayed great gallantry on the field, Col. Freeman being wounded. It then moved back to Corinth, where it was re-organized and consolidated with the Twelfth Regiment and thenceforward lost its identity. Col. Freeman served the one year of enlistment. The consolidation was commanded by Col. Bell, who became a brigadier under Forrest. Col. Freeman, at Shiloh, received the surrender of Gen. Prentiss, who handed him his sword.

The Twenty-third Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Bedford, Marshall, Rutherford and other counties of Middle Tennessee,

and was organized about the middle of July, 1861, with R. H. Keeble, colonel. It saw its first service in Virginia, and participated in the engagement at Drury's Bluff, with a loss of fifteen or twenty killed and wounded. After various movements it was engaged in the brilliant and furious battle of Shiloh, where it lost severely. It moved north with Bragg and fought at Perryville, then turned south and participated at Murfreesboro, after which it continued with the Army of the Tennessee during the remainder of the war. At Chickamauga it lost heavily. It was at Missionary Ridge and in the famous Georgia campaign, after which it marched back with Hood into Tennessee, and participated at Franklin and Nashville, then moved to North Carolina where it surrendered. At Murfreesboro it was in Johnson's brigade of Cleburne's division.

The Twenty-fourth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was organized in June, 1861, at Camp Anderson, near Murfreesboro, and comprised twelve companies raised in the counties of Williamson, Rutherford, Maury, Bedford, Coffee, Smith, DeKalb, Sumner, Hickman and Perry. It was first commanded by Col. R. D. Allison, and later by Col. Bratton and Col. John Wilson. It moved into Kentucky and was stationed at Cave City in October. At this time it was in Col. Shaver's brigade of Hardee's division. It was in Gen. Strahl's brigade during the most of the war. It participated in the pitched battle of Shiloh, losing many, and was reorganized at or near Corinth; thence moved via Chattanooga on the Kentucky campaign, and was severely engaged at Perryville. It then retreated with Bragg's army, and on December 31, 1862, participated in the splendid charge at Murfreesboro, losing again heavily. It moved south, and in September, 1863, was hotly engaged at bloody Chickamauga, and later participated at Missionary Ridge. In 1864 it was in all the leading engagements in the famous Georgia campaign, and in the aggregate lost heavily. It moved with Hood's army to Jonesboro; thence to Tennessee, where it participated at Franklin and Nashville; thence moved to North Carolina, and in the spring of 1865 surrendered at Greensboro.

The Twenty-fifth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Overton, White, Putnam and Jackson Counties, and was organized at Camp Zollicoffer, near Livingston, early in June, 1861, with S. S. Stanton, colonel. After several months of discipline it invaded Kentucky to break up organizations of Federal home guards, and in January, 1862, joined Gen. Zollicoffer at Mill Springs, Ky., and was engaged in the battle of Fishing Creek, suffering considerable loss and displaying great dash and pluck. It then moved to Murfreesboro, thence to northern Mississippi, where it did important provost duty, and after Shiloh was

reorganized, with Stanton, colonel, who was soon succeeded by John M. Hughes. It marched to Chattanooga, thence north on Bragg's Kentucky campaign; fought bravely at Perryville, with loss; thence marched to Murfreesboro, in which headlong battle it displayed magnificent fighting qualities and lost heavily in killed and wounded. It participated at Fairfield, Beach Grove and Hoover's Gap, losing heavily at the latter battle. At the fierce battle of Chickamauga it distinguished itself, capturing valuable ordnance and sweeping desperately everything from its course. It then moved with Longstreet against Knoxville, fighting at Fort Loudon, Bean's Station (twice), Clinch Valley and Fort Sanders, suffering severe loss. It passed a winter of intense suffering among the mountains of East Tennessee, and in February, 1864, moved to near Richmond, Va. It fought desperately at Drury Bluff and in numerous engagements around Petersburg and Richmond, displaying its habitual brilliancy, and was finally surrendered at Appomattox.

The Twenty-sixth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Washington, Sullivan, Meigs, Cocke, Grainger, Rhea, Hamilton, Knox and Roane Counties, and was organized at Camp Lillard, Knoxville, September 6, 1861, with John M. Lillard, colonel. Late in September it moved to Bowling Green; thence later to Russellville, Ky., and early in February to the relief of Fort Donelson. Here it did its first gallant fighting, amid severe loss and heroic personal achievements. It was captured, taken to Northern prisons, and exchanged at Vicksburg in September, 1862. It was reorganized at Knoxville, with Lillard, colonel, moved west, and in December, at brilliant Murfreesboro, fought in the furious charges of that famous battle. It moved south, and at Chickamauga fought with fiery energy, losing heavily, Col. Lillard falling mortally wounded. R. M. Saffell succeeded him in command. It also did meritorious and bloody work at Missionary Ridge, passed the winter of 1863-64 in northern Georgia, and fought brilliantly in all the leading engagements down to Atlanta, suffering severe loss. At Jonesboro and Lovejoy, and in the Tennessee campaign at bloody Franklin and stubborn Nashville, it displayed its accustomed dash and valor. It retreated south, and at Bentonville, N. C., lost Col. Saffell, whose successor on the field, Col. A. F. Boggess, fell in the same fight. The regiment surrendered in April, 1865.

The Twenty-seventh Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Benton, Obion, McNairy, Haywood, Weakley, Carroll, Decatur and Henderson Counties, and was organized at Trenton, late in July, 1861, with C. H. Williams, colonel. It occupied Camp of Instruction until after the battle of Belmont; then moved to Columbus, Ky., and later to Bowling



Green. Early in February, 1862, it moved to Nashville; then to Murfreesboro, then to northern Mississippi. In April it fought desperately at Shiloh, losing over 100 killed and wounded. It was transferred to Chattanooga, and then moved north on the Kentucky campaign. October 8, at Perryville, it left the bloody field proud of its splendid conduct. At Murfreesboro, in December, it assisted in the furious charges which swept the right wing of the Federals back several miles. At Chickamauga it fought with superb courage, forcing the enemy back at every point, and at Missionary Ridge held its ground long against overwhelming numbers. In the Georgia campaign of 1864 it fought with its usual brilliancy in all the leading engagements on the retrograde movement to Atlanta. Again at Jonesboro and Lovejoy it participated and marched north on the ill-fated Tennessee campaign. In the furious and brilliant charges at Franklin the gallant regiment steadily carried its streaming banner across the bloody field, losing nearly half of those engaged. In the stubborn contest for its capital city it bore a heroic part, but was overwhelmed and swept back, and then sadly marched down to the Carolinas, where at Bentonville it fought its last battle. It surrendered in April, 1865.

The Twenty-eighth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Wilson, Putnam, Jackson, White and Smith Counties, and was organized at Camp Zollicoffer, Overton County, in August, 1861, with John P. Murray, colonel. After destroying Federal supplies the regiment joined Gen. Zollicoffer and fought at Fishing Creek with the loss of 10 men. It then moved south to northern Mississippi, and in April, 1862, participated in the brilliant movements at Shiloh, with the loss of over 100 of its best men. It then moved south and finally fought at Baton Rouge and Port Hudson, displaying brilliant and meritorious courage. It then joined Bragg's campaign to Kentucky, and fought at Perryville; then moved south and engaged the enemy in the brilliant charge at Murfreesboro. It was reorganized with S. S. Stanton, colonel, and consolidated with the Eighty-fourth. At Chickamauga it fought its hardest and grandest battle, losing 230 killed and wounded, and covering itself with imperishable glory. It skirmished around Chattanooga and did guard duty in East Tennessee. In the Georgia campaign it was engaged in all the principal contests, losing heavily, and in Hood's Tennessee campaign distinguished itself for courage and hardihood, displaying rare daring and valor on Franklin's bloody field. After the battle of Nashville it moved south, and after Bentonville was surrendered in North Carolina.

The Twenty-ninth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was composed of companies from Greene, Bradley, Hawkins, Polk, Claiborne, Hancock

and Washington Counties, and was organized at Henderson's Mills, Greene County, in July, 1861, with Samuel Powell, colonel. It did guard duty in East Tennessee until December, and then joined Zollicoffer at Mill Springs, and January 19 met the enemy at the battle of Fishing Creek, where Col. Powell was permanently disabled. It marched to northern Mississippi via Murfreesboro, and remained at Iuka during the battle of Shiloh. It skirmished around Corinth, moved to Chattanooga; thence north on the Kentucky campaign, being commanded by Horace Rice, who had succeeded Arnold, met the enemy at Perryville; thence marched to Murfreesboro, where it exhibited splendid intrepidity and courage, losing 36 killed on the field and 136 wounded. At Chickamauga it was held much in reserve, but lost, killed and wounded 32. At Missionary Ridge it did gallant work and was complimented on the field by Gens. Cheatham and Hardee. In 1864 at Dalton, Rocky Face Ridge, Resaca, Kenesaw Mountain, Peach Tree Creek and around Atlanta it was prominently engaged. It participated at Jonesboro and Lovejoy; and in Hood's Tennessee campaign at Franklin its gallant action was surpassed by no other regiment, its dead and wounded lying scattered over its bloody path. It fought at Nashville, retreated south with the army, and fought late in the day at Bentonville. It surrendered at Greensboro April 26.

The Thirtieth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Davidson, Sumner, Robertson and Smith Counties, and was organized early in October with J. W. Head, colonel. In November it moved to Fort Donelson, and February 13 to 16 was prominently engaged and was surrendered on the 16th and taken to Northern prisons. They were exchanged the following July, were reorganized at Camp Jackson with J. J. Turner as colonel, moved to Holly Springs, thence to Grenada, thence to Vicksburg, fought bravely at Chickasaw Bayou, doing the enemy great damage. It then moved to Port Hudson, thence to Jackson. At Raymond May 12, 1863, the regiment fought with great skill and desperation against superior numbers, losing about seventy-five killed and wounded, and then retreated to Jackson. After various movements it participated, September 19 and 20, at the fearful contest at Chickamauga, displaying wonderful dash and staying qualities, and losing killed and wounded about half of those engaged. At Missionary Ridge it was hotly and gallantly engaged, losing severely. Winter was passed at Dalton. In 1864, from Dalton to Jonesboro, in all the bloody principal engagements, the Thirtieth sustained its high honor and courage and in the aggregate lost many splendid men. At Jonesboro the regiment in heroic action lost one-third of its troops. In the unfortunate campaign of Gen.

Hood into Tennessee the regiment participated at Murfreesboro, Franklin and Nashville further distinguishing itself in the bloody art of war. It marched down to the Carolinas to fight its last battle at Bentonville and surrendered April 26.

The Thirty-first Tennessee (Confederate, West Tennessee) Regiment was raised in Weakley, Haywood, Madison, McNairy and Decatur Counties, and was organized during the summer of 1861 with A. H. Bradford, colonel, and November 29 marched for Columbus, Ky., where it remained until the surrender of Fort Donelson in February, 1862; thence moved to Tiptonville, thence to Fort Pillow, and, after the battle of Shiloh, to Corinth. Later it was moved to Chattanooga, and then moved north campaigning through Kentucky with Bragg. At Perryville the regiment had its first heavy engagement, displaying great gallantry and losing many valuable soldiers. Egbert E. Tansil succeeded Bradford as colonel. It marched south with the army and December 31 fought with conspicuous courage at Murfreesboro, and retreated south with the army, and in September, 1863, fought in the awful battle of Chickamauga, losing nearly half its men. In 1864, in the Georgia campaign, it was engaged in nearly all the principal battles, losing heavily in the aggregate. In the Tennessee campaign of Hood it fought at Franklin, losing over half the number engaged. Col. Stafford was killed on the enemy's line, to which he had penetrated. Again it fought at Nashville, thence moved to North Carolina, where it surrendered.

The Thirty-first Tennessee (Confederate, East Tennessee) Regiment was raised in Jefferson, Blount and Knox Counties, and was organized March 28, 1862, with W. M. Bradford, colonel, and was reorganized May 3. It did guard duty in East Tennessee and at Cumberland Gap, joined Bragg at Harrodsburg after the battle of Perryville, and late in December moved to Vicksburg, in the vicinity of which it participated in numerous expeditions and skirmishes, and in the siege of that city where the soldiers were almost starved to death and finally captured. In September, 1863, the regiment was exchanged and late in that year was transformed into cavalry, and as such brigaded under Gen. Vaughn. It did service in East Tennessee, recruited in North Carolina, part was sent to Virginia and while there fought at Kernstown, Martinsburgh, Hagerstown, Winchester, Piedmont and elsewhere, losing heavily. Later the united regiment was engaged at Marion, Saltville, Morristown, Bull's Gap, Greeneville and elsewhere. Marching to join Lee in the spring of 1865, it was learned that he had surrendered and Gen. Echols disbanded his command, but this regiment with others refused, and marched to North Carolina and joined President Davis, and was his



escort when all were captured. The regiment was paroled at Washington, Ga.

The Thirty-second Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Giles, Lawrence, Williamson, Lincoln, Marshall and Franklin Counties, and was organized at Camp Trousdale during the summer of 1861 with Edmund E. Cook, colonel. About September it was moved to East Tennessee, where it did patrol duty around Chattanooga and Bridgeport, Ala. Late in December it moved to Bowling Green, Ky., thence in February, 1862, to Russellville; thence to Clarksville, and thence to Fort Donelson, where from the 13th to the 16th of February it participated in all the daring movements of the siege with severe loss, and was captured with the fort. After about six months the regiment was exchanged at Vicksburg. It was reorganized about October 1, with E. Cook, colonel, and moved to Murfreesboro via Knoxville, and during the battle was posted at Wartrace. It wintered at Tullahoma, endured a terrible forced march in June, moved to Chattanooga with Bragg in July, and fought with superb courage and coolness in the awful conflict at Chickamauga with heavy loss. Again it was engaged at Lookout Mountain, and in November at Missionary Ridge, where it fought with its accustomed gallantry. It wintered at Dalton, and in 1864 participated in the famous Georgia campaign, fighting in all the leading battles down to Atlanta with heavy loss in the aggregate. It fought desperately and with grievous loss at Jonesboro, and marched north to invade Tennessee under Hood, but reached bloody Franklin too late for the battle. It participated in the action at Nashville, retreated south skirmishing on the way, fought its last battle at Bentonville, N. C. and surrendered with Gen. Johnston.

The Thirty-third Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Weakley, Obion, Madison and other counties, and was organized at Union City October 18, 1861, with A. W. Campbell, colonel. In January, 1862 it marched to Columbus, Ky., where it wintered; then moved south into northern Mississippi, and in April met the enemy on the furious field of Shiloh, and attested its courage in its desperate charges and its loss of nearly 200 men killed and wounded out of about 500 engaged. The regiment moved back to Corinth, and later, via Chattanooga, invaded Kentucky under Gen. Bragg, and at Perryville, in October, fought with magnificent bravery, suffering heavy losses. After this it moved south with Bragg, and at Murfreesboro bore an honorable part, losing many noble men. At Chickamauga it assisted in the awful charges which beat back the Federal hosts. It fought at Missionary Ridge and retreated south, wintering at Dalton, and in 1864 participated in the series of bloody and

memorable battles from that point to Atlanta, shedding the blood of its bravest boys in defense of the cause which to them seemed right. It marched north with Hood; was at Franklin and Nashville; thence marched south, and finally surrendered in North Carolina in April, 1865.

The Thirty-fourth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised partly in Middle Tennessee and partly in East Tennessee, and was organized during the autumn of 1861, with William Churchwell, colonel. It first saw service in East Tennessee, where it remained for a considerable period engaged in outpost duty. It finally participated in the Kentucky campaign, and later joined the army of Bragg in time for the battle of Murfreesboro, in which desperate engagement it was conspicuously active, losing severely in killed and wounded. It moved south with the retreating army, and after various movements was engaged in the bloody battle of Chickamauga, in September, 1863, where it behaved gallantly and lost severely. In 1864 it participated in the actions of the Georgia campaign, terminating at Atlanta, and then moved back into Tennessee with Hood, taking part in his bloody battles. It then moved south with the army, and finally surrendered in North Carolina.

The Thirty-fifth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Grundy, Sequatchie, Warren, Cannon, Bledsoe and Van Buren, and was organized in the autumn of 1861, with B. J. Hill, colonel. About the first of the year 1863 it moved to Bowling Green, Ky., and after the surrender of Fort Donelson marched south with the army to northern Mississippi, and early in April participated in the battle of Shiloh, with heavy loss. Its charges were brilliant, sweeping and destructive. It then skirmished around Corinth, fighting with heroic desperation at Shelton Hill amid a terrible fire. It was complimented for this in general orders by Gen. Beauregard. It moved with Bragg on the Kentucky campaign, meeting the enemy again at Richmond and Perryville, displaying its usual heroism. At Murfreesboro it was hotly engaged, suffering severely, and again, in September, 1863, at brilliant Chickamauga sustained itself with distinguished valor. It did important provost or guard duty throughout northern Alabama, and finally surrendered at Chattanooga in the spring of 1865.

The Thirty-sixth, Thirty-ninth and Fortieth Tennessee Regiments were only partly organized, and in the main saw detached duty. The first was commanded by Col. Morgan, the second by Col. Avery. The last was at Fort Pillow in January, 1862. Col. Avery was at Bowling Green in December, 1861, and Col. Morgan at Cumberland Gap in March, 1862.

The Thirty-seventh Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Hamilton, Jefferson, Grainger, Blount, Sevier, Claiborne, Coffee and

Washington Counties, in northern Georgia and in Alabama, and was organized in October, 1861, at Camp Ramsey, near Knoxville, with W. H. Carroll, colonel. At Germantown, West Tennessee, to which point it was transferred, it drilled for about a month. In November it moved to Chattanooga. It marched north and was present at the battle of Fishing Creek, but did not participate in the main battle, losing only five or six killed and wounded. It then moved south via Murfreesboro to northern Mississippi, and occupied Burnsville during the battle of Shiloh. The regiment did valuable picket service around Corinth. In July it moved to Mobile, Montgomery, Atlanta, Dalton, Chickamauga Station, Chattanooga, and thence on the Kentucky campaign, and October 8, at Perryville, was hotly engaged. It then marched south, and in October reached Murfreesboro, where, December 31, it was engaged in that battle in the hottest part, losing about half its members killed and wounded. It then moved to Chattanooga. The following June it was consolidated with the Fifteenth under the latter name, and so lost its old existence.

The Thirty-eighth Tennessee Confederate Regiment was raised in Madison, Fayette, Shelby and other West Tennessee counties, in Wilson County, and in Georgia and Alabama, and was organized in September, 1861, with Robert F. Looney, of Memphis, colonel. It moved first to Chattanooga, thence later to Knoxville, where it was stationed at the date of the battle of Fishing Creek, Kentucky, having no arms with which to assist Gen. Zollicoffer. It was finally ordered to Iuka, Miss., thence to Eastport, thence to Corinth, and was brigaded first with Gen. Gladden, and later with Gen. Preston Pond, with Louisiana troops. It moved up and fought at Shiloh, losing ninety killed and wounded. It moved with Bragg to Perryville, where it fought, and was soon after reorganized, with John C. Carter, colonel. It moved back and fought at Murfreesboro; thence marched down to Chickamauga, where it distinguished itself. It was at Missionary Ridge, and in 1864 engaged in the Georgia campaign with heavy loss. It came north with Hood, fought at Franklin, where Gen. Carter was killed, and at Nashville, then marched south, and in 1865 surrendered in North Carolina.

The Forty-first Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Franklin, Lincoln, Bedford and Marshall Counties, and was organized at Camp Trousdale in November, 1861, with Robert Farquharson, colonel. In December it moved to Bowling Green; thence to Fort Donelson, where it fought gallantly and was captured by the enemy. In September, 1862, it was exchanged at Vicksburg, and was reorganized with Farquharson colonel. After various expeditions the regiment was transferred, in January, 1863, to Port Hudson. In May it moved north, where, at Ray-



mond, it met the enemy in a sharp battle, and afterward in that vicinity and around Jackson participated in several severe fights and numerous skirmishes. It was at Yazoo City when Vicksburg surrendered. Early in September it marched east to Chickamauga, and was in the hottest part of that gigantic and desperate battle. Many of its bravest were stretched dead upon the field. It wintered near Dalton, and in 1864, in the Georgia campaign, was engaged in all the principal engagements down to Atlanta, fighting gallantly and losing heavily. At Jonesboro it also fought, and on the Tennessee campaign at Franklin was not surpassed in desperate fighting by any other regiment. It finally surrendered in North Carolina. During the war it lost more men on picket duty than in battle.

The Forty-second Tennessee Confederate Regiment was raised under the first call in Cheatham, Montgomery and other counties, and five companies in Alabama, and was organized about the 1st of October, 1861, with W. A. Quarles, colonel. It occupied Camps Cheatham and Sevier, and in February reached Fort Donelson just in time for the battle, in which it distinguished itself and lost severely. It was captured, and in September, 1862, was exchanged at Vicksburg, and soon reorganized at Clinton, Miss. Quarles was re-elected colonel. Here five companies from West Tennessee took the place of the five Alabama companies. In March, 1863, I. N. Hulme became colonel, *vice* Quarles promoted. It participated in various movements in Mississippi before the surrender of Vicksburg and during the siege. It then moved on sundry expeditions, and in 1864 joined the campaign through Georgia, and was engaged at New Hope Church, Pine Mountain, Kenesaw, Smyrna Depot, Peach Tree Creek, Atlanta and Lick Skillet road, losing in the aggregate heavily. In Hood's bloody campaign the regiment at Franklin, in those awful assaults, left about half its numbers killed and wounded upon the field. This was its most desperate battle, and here it exhibited superb courage. It participated in the stubborn contest at Nashville, and moved south with the army, and finally surrendered in North Carolina in April, 1865.

The Forty-third Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in the counties of Hamilton, Rhea, Meigs, Polk, Bledsoe, Jefferson, Roane, Bradley, Hawkins and McMinn, and was organized in November, 1861, with J. W. Gillespie, colonel. Its first service was guard duty in East Tennessee until the reorganization in May, 1862. After various movements and thorough drill at Charleston, it was, in August, sent to Humphrey Marshall's brigade in Virginia. It soon afterward joined Bragg's Kentucky campaign, but was in no noteworthy engagement. In December it was transferred to Vicksburg and was subjected to hard service,

and in May, 1863, moved to Port Gibson to oppose Grant's advance. It fought at Champion Hill and covered the retreat to Vicksburg. It fought often during the siege, always with dash and daring, losing heavily in the aggregate. It surrendered early in July, and was soon exchanged and was ordered to re-enforce Longstreet, who was besieging Knoxville. During the winter the regiment was mounted, and in the spring of 1864 did outpost duty in East Tennessee, skirmishing often and losing severely. It was engaged at Piedmont, losing several men. In Virginia it was often engaged, moving with Early around Washington and fighting at Winchester, Monocacy, Cedar Creek, Fisherville, White Post, Kernstown, Darksville and Martinsburg. In the fall of 1864 it returned to East Tennessee. It fought at Morristown, losing heavily; raided Russelville with success; during the winter it did outpost duty. In the spring it learned of Lee's surrender and then moved south to join Johnson, but at Charlotte met President Davis and served as his escort until his capture. It was paroled in May, 1865.

The Forty-fourth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Bedford, Grundy, Lincoln, Franklin and Coffee Counties, and was organized at Camp Trousdale in December, 1861, with C. A. McDaniel, colonel. It soon moved to Bowling Green, and early in February, 1862, to Nashville, thence to Murfreesboro, thence to Corinth, where it arrived March 20. In April it marched north and fought gallantly at bloody Shiloh, losing 350 killed, wounded, captured and missing out of 470 engaged. It reorganized at Corinth and with it was consolidated the remnant of the Fifty-fifth Regiment. Late in July it moved to Chattanooga, thence north to invade Kentucky, and October 8 fought desperately at Perryville, losing 42 killed and wounded. It suffered in that awful retreat south. September 19 and 20, 1863, at Chattanooga the regiment fought heroically and charged the enemy with terrible effect, losing severely. It was soon detached and sent with Longstreet to besiege Knoxville. It fought at Bean's Station and elsewhere and went into winter quarters at Morristown. In May, 1864, it moved to Richmond Va., and was engaged at Drury's Bluff, Petersburg, Walthall's Junction and elsewhere besides numerous skirmishes, and was finally surrendered and paroled.

The Forty-fifth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in the counties of Wilson (Companies B, F, G and H), Williamson (A), and Rutherford (D, C, E and I), and was organized at Camp Trousdale, Sumner County in the autumn of 1861, with Addison Mitchell, colonel. After various movements, during which it did duty in Mississippi and Louisiana, it joined the army of Gen. A. S. Johnston and participated in the brilliant

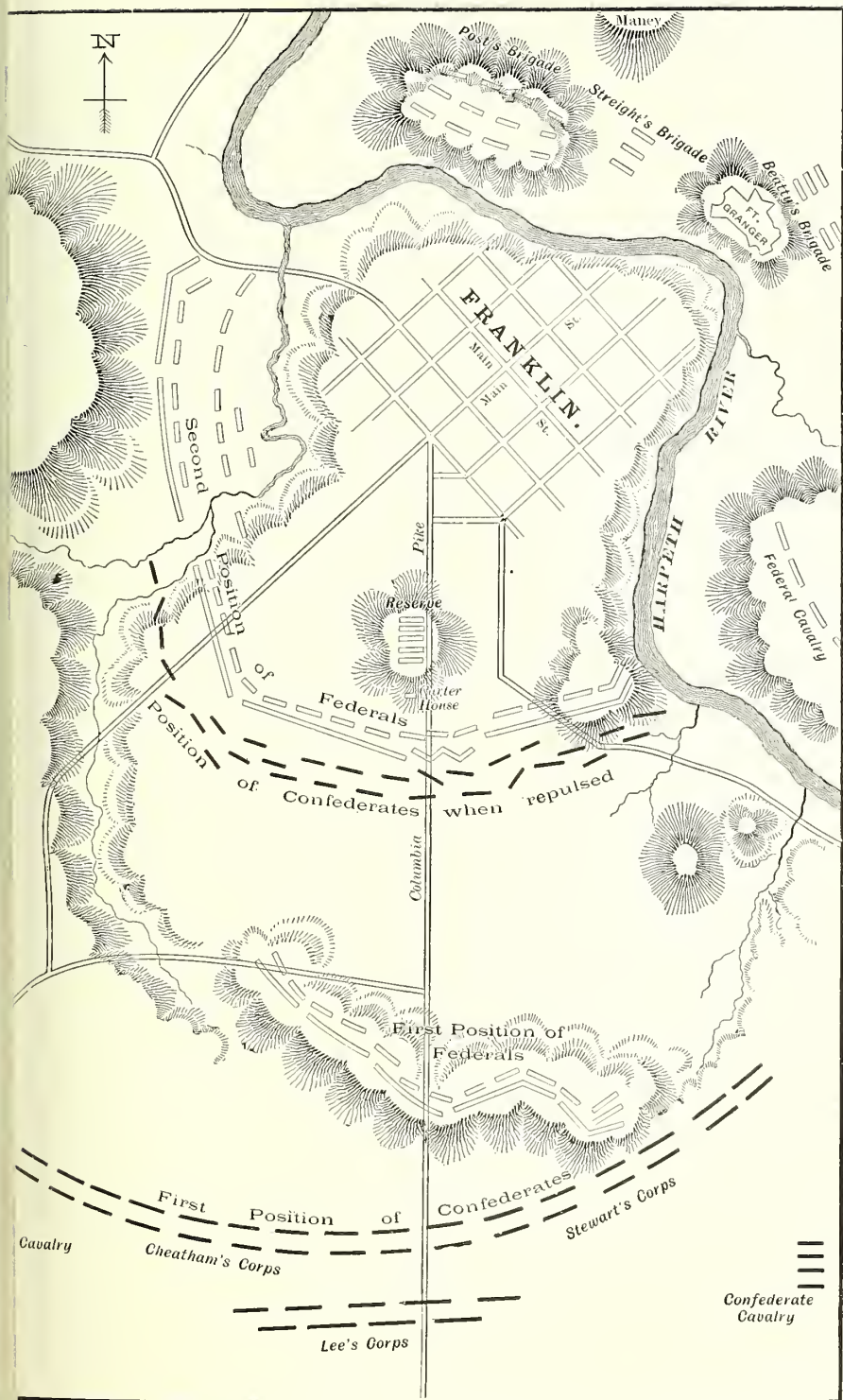
Confederate victory at Shiloh, losing heavily in killed and wounded. Company A suffered a loss of 7 killed and about twice as many wounded. It was reorganized at Corinth and was then placed on detached duty for some time, after which it participated in the Kentucky campaign, and later was engaged in the headlong charges at Murfreesboro, where it again lost severely. It moved southward; fought in the hottest of the awful battle of Chickamunga and again at Missionary Ridge, and in 1864, in many of the general engagements, on the movement to Atlanta, Rocky Face Ridge, Resaca (two) Powder Springs, Atlanta and Jonesboro and then at Columbia; second Murfreesboro, and in 1865, at Bentonville, N. C., where it surrendered.

The Forty-sixth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in West Tennessee, almost all the entire force going from Henry County, and was organized late in 1861, with J. M. Clarke, colonel. It participated in the movement of Gen. Pillow up the Mississippi, was at Columbus and Island No. 10, and later at Port Hudson, where it lost several men, killed and wounded. For a time it was part of Stewart's brigade. Many of the regiment were captured and died in prison at Camp Douglas and elsewhere. It participated in the Kentucky campaign under Gen. Bragg, losing a few men killed and wounded at Perryville. It participated with the Army of Tennessee in all the principal movements of that command, engaging the enemy in numerous places and losing in the aggregate heavily. It was finally consolidated with other regiments.

The Forty-seventh Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was organized late in 1861, with M. R. Hill, colonel, and was raised in the counties of Obion, Gibson and Dyer, and first participated in the movements of Gen. Polk's army succeeding the battle of Belmont. It moved southward and joined the army, and finally, in April, 1862, engaged the enemy at Shiloh. Later it participated in the actions around Corinth, and finally marched with Bragg into Kentucky, fighting at Richmond and skirmishing elsewhere. It returned to Tennessee, and just before the battle of Murfreesboro was consolidated with the Twelfth Regiment.

The Forty-eighth Tennessee (Confederate, Voorhees) Regiment was raised in Maury, Hickman and Lewis Counties, and was organized in December, 1861, with W. M. Voorhees, colonel. It moved to Clarks-ville, thence to Danville, thence to Fort Henry, and after the evacuation there, to Fort Donelson, where, after fighting in that historical action, it surrendered. After about six months it was exchanged at Vicksburg, was reorganized at Jackson with Voorhees again colonel. A portion of the regiment, on details, in hospitals and on furlough, had escaped the capture at Fort Donelson, and with five companies from Wayne and







Lawrence Counties, had served under Col. Nixon until December, 1862, when the old regiment was reunited, the portion that had been captured having been incorporated with the Third from the exchange in August until the reunion. It was at the bombardment of Post Hudson, in March, 1863, and at the engagements in and around Jackson about the middle of July. After various movements it reached Dalton, Ga., November 26. January, 1864, it moved to Mobile, thence joined Polk's army, thence to Meridian, thence to Mobile, thence joined Joe Johnston at New Hope Church, May 27, 1864. It fought at New Hope Church, Pine Mountain, Kenesaw, Peach Tree Creek, Atlanta, Lick Skillet Road, losing in the aggregate very heavily, particularly at the last named engagement, where it lost half its men. It was in all of Hood's engagements on his Tennessee campaign except Franklin. It was active and valiant at Nashville. In several small skirmishes detachments of the regiment fought with severe loss and great bravery. It was at Bentonville, N. C., and surrendered in the spring of 1865.

The Forty-eighth Tennessee (Confederate, Nixon) Regiment was raised in Middle Tennessee, and organized late in 1861, with G. H. Nixon, colonel. After various duties it participated in the campaign against Louisville, and was engaged at Richmond, where it lost several men killed and wounded. It continued with the army until it was found that the forces at Louisville had been heavily reinforced, then turned back, and October 8 fought at Perryville, losing several men. It was in various movements subsidiary to those of the Army of Tennessee, was at Murfreesboro, and in September, 1863, at Chickamauga, where it lost severely, and exhibited great gallantry on the field. After this it participated in all the principal movements of the Army of Tennessee—in many of the battles on the Georgia campaign, and finally took part in the actions around Atlanta and the invasion of Tennessee by Hood. After many vicissitudes, it finally surrendered in the spring of 1865 in North Carolina.

The Forty-ninth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Montgomery, Dickson, Robertson, Benton and Cheatham Counties, and was organized in December, 1861, with James E. Bailey, colonel. It moved to Fort Donelson where it was hotly engaged in the various desperate movements of that action, and was surrendered with the army. It was exchanged in September, 1862, at Vicksburg, was reorganized at Clinton with Bailey, colonel. It was at Port Hudson during the bombardment of March, 1863; thence moved to Jackson, where, in July, it fought in the several engagements there; thence moved to Mobile, where W. F. Young became colonel. It then moved north and joined Bragg



at Missionary Ridge, too late for the battle; thence marched to Dalton; thence back to Mobile and Mississippi, and back to Johnston's army, at New Hope Church, where it fought May 27, 1864. It was afterward engaged at Pine Mountain, Kenesaw Mountain, Smyrna Depot, Peach Tree Creek, Atlanta, Lick Skillet Road and elsewhere, losing at the last named battle 76 killed, 400 wounded and 19 missing. Here it was consolidated with the Forty-second Regiment. It moved north with Hood, engaging in all the battles and skirmishes of his disastrous campaign. At the awful charges of Franklin it fought with great nerve and desperation, losing 20 killed, 36 wounded and 36 missing out of 130 engaged. It was engaged at Nashville and then retreated south, fighting at Lynnville, Sugar Creek, Anthony's Hill and elsewhere, and joining Johnson's army in North Carolina, where, at Bentonville, it fought its last battle and was surrendered with the army.

The Fiftieth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Montgomery, Stewart, Cheatham and Humphreys Counties, and was organized on Christmas Day, 1861, at Fort Donelson, with G. W. Stacker, colonel. In January it moved over to assist Fort Henry, and February 6 returned to Fort Donelson and assisted in the contest there which resulted in the surrender. Nearly half of the regiment escaped capture. In September, 1862, the regiment was exchanged and was reorganized at Jackson, Miss.; C. A. Sugg became colonel. It then operated in Mississippi, skirmishing several times. In November it was consolidated with the First Tennessee Battalion. It was at the bombardment of Port Hudson. In May, 1863, it moved to Jackson, and May 12 took an active part in the battle of Raymond. It also fought at Jackson. In September it joined Bragg in Georgia. On the way, in a railroad accident, 13 men were killed, and 75 wounded. The regiment reached Chickamauga in time to take an active part. It was in the bloodiest part of that awful contest, losing 132 of 186 engaged. Col. T. W. Beaumont was killed, and Maj. C. W. Robertson took command, but was mortally wounded. November 25, at Mission Ridge, the regiment was again cut to pieces, Col. Sugg of the brigade being mortally wounded. The regiment was then consolidated with the Fourth Confederate Regiment (Tennessee). It wintered at Dalton, and in the spring and summer of 1864 fought at Resaca, Calhoun Station, Adairsville, Kingston, New Hope Church, "Dead Angle," Peach Tree Creek, Atlanta, Jonesboro and elsewhere, losing many valuable men. It moved north, fought at Franklin and Nashville, then marched to North Carolina, where, in April, 1865, it surrendered.

The Fifty-first Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was organized at

Henderson early in 1862, with eight companies, four from Shelby and Tipton Counties, and four from Madison and Henderson Counties. It was first commanded by Col. Browder. It participated in the siege of Forts Henry and Donelson, at which time it was only a battalion, and at the latter battle was assigned to artillery service, and consisted of only about sixty effective men. Col. Browder and part of the battalion were captured, but the lieutenant-colonel, John Chester, gathered the remainder together and with two other companies from Madison and Tipton, reorganized and moved to Corinth doing provost duty during the battle of Shiloh. It was then consolidated with the Fifty-second, with John Chester, colonel. On the Kentucky campaign it fought at Perryville, doing splendid execution, and losing 8 killed and about 30 wounded. At Murfreesboro it captured a battery and about 600 prisoners. At Shelbyville many of the men captured at Donelson rejoined the regiment. It was engaged at bloody Chickamauga with great gallantry, and again at Missionary Ridge. In many of the battles from Dalton to Atlanta it participated, and later at Franklin and Nashville lost very heavily. A small remnant was surrendered at Greensboro, N. C.

The Fifty-second Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in West Tennessee late in 1861, and was organized with B. J. Lea as colonel. In January, 1862, it was stationed to guard the Tennessee railroad bridge, by order of Gen. Polk. It participated in the battles at Fort Donelson, and was then stationed at Henderson's Station, in West Tennessee, where it remained until ordered to Corinth in March, 1862. It moved with the army to Shiloh, and of its action in that battle Gen. Chalmers, its brigade commander, reported as follows: "A few skirmishers of the enemy advanced secretly and fired upon the Fifty-second, which broke and fled in the most shameful confusion, and all efforts to rally it were without avail, and it was ordered out of the lines, where it remained during the balance of the engagement, except companies commanded by Russell and Wilson. which gallantly fought in the Fifth Mississippi Regiment." In many a bloody battle afterward it redeemed itself nobly. It was consolidated with the Fifty-first, and was at Perryville, Murfreesboro, Chickamauga and in all the general engagements of the Georgia campaign; came back with Hood and fought at Franklin, Nashville and elsewhere, and marched down to North Carolina, where it surrendered April, 1865.

The Fifty-third Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was organized late in the year 1861, into a battalion under the command of Col. Ed Abernathy. It was present at the battles and assaults of Fort Donelson and fought on the left wing, showing great gallantry, repulsing two headlong

charges. It had at this time about 200 effective men. It was captured and seems then to have lost its identity. It was probably consolidated with other commands.

The Fifty-fourth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was organized at Nashville during the autumn of 1861, and comprised companies from the counties of Lawrence, Wayne and probably others. Upon the organization William Dearing was chosen colonel. The regiment moved first into Kentucky to assist in repelling the Federal advance, but early in February, 1862, was ordered to Fort Donelson, in the siege of which it was actively engaged. It succeeded in making its escape, but became almost disbanded. The portion that remained was formed into a battalion at Corinth, and placed under the command of Col. Nixon. Later the battalion was consolidated with the Forty-eighth Regiment.

The Fifty-fifth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in the counties of Davidson, Williamson, Smith, Bedford and Lincoln, and was organized in November, 1861, under Col. A. J. Brown. It participated at Fort Donelson and was reorganized at Corinth. It was engaged at Shiloh, where it lost very heavily in killed and wounded. Col. McCoen was succeeded by Col. Reed, who was mortally wounded in December, 1862. After Shiloh it was consolidated with the Forty-fourth Regiment.

The Fifty-ninth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in East Tennessee during the winter of 1861-62, and was mustered into the service with J. B. Cooke, colonel. It did duty in various commands in Tennessee and Kentucky, and finally, about January 1, 1863, became connected with the Confederate force at Vicksburg, and was brigaded with the Third Confederate, the Thirty-first and the Forty-third under Gen. A. W. Reynolds in Stevenson's division. After this its record is the same as that of the Third Regiment. The regiment was commanded much of its term of service by Col. W. L. Eakin.

The Sixtieth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was organized in East Tennessee in the autumn of 1862, with John H. Crawford, colonel. Soon after its organization it was assigned to the brigade of John C. Vaughn and ordered to Mississippi and Louisiana, and thereafter, during the remainder of the war, its record is similar to that of Vaughn's brigade. It was engaged at Jackson, and against Sherman's movement on Vicksburg. During the siege of that city it garrisoned the Confederate works. It also assisted gallantly in opposing the advance of Gen. Grant from below Vicksburg. At Big Black Bridge it lost severely and fought against great odds. July 4, 1863, it was surrendered with Pemberton's



army, after having reached the point of starvation. It was finally exchanged, and then joined Gen. Longstreet in his movement against Knoxville. It was mounted in December, 1863, and spent the winter of 1863-64 guarding the front and in recruiting, and in the spring advanced into Virginia and fought at Piedmont. It was at Lynchburg, Williamsport, and along the Potomac and the Shenandoah Rivers, and was engaged in western Virginia when the news of Gen. Lee's surrender was received. The gallant regiment resolved to join Johnston, and accordingly rendezvoused at Charlotte, but finally surrendered with Vaughn's brigade.

The Sixty-first Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Hawkins, Sullivan, Greene, Jefferson, Washington, Grainger and Claiborne Counties, and was organized at Henderson Mills, in Greene County, in November, 1862, with F. E. Pitts, colonel. It almost immediately became part of Vaughn's brigade, with which it served during the remainder of the war. (See Sixtieth Regiment.)

The Sixty-second Tennessee Regiment was organized late in 1862, with John A. Rowan, colonel, and was soon assigned to Vaughn's brigade, with which it served during the rest of the war.

The Sixty-third Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was raised in Washington, Roane, Hancock, Claiborne, Loudon, Hawkins and Sullivan Counties, and was organized July 30, 1862, with R. G. Fain, colonel. It operated in East Tennessee and was under the active or immediate command of Lieut.-Col. W. H. Fulkerson. After various movements it joined Bragg in Middle Tennessee in June, 1863, but only to retreat with his army to Chattanooga. It was then ordered to Knoxville, thence to Strawberry Plains, but late in August it moved back in time to participate in the great battle of Chickamauga, which, though its first engagement, was fought with splendid daring and discipline. It lost 47 killed and 155 wounded, out of 404 engaged. It was then detached with Longstreet to operate against Knoxville. It fought at Fort Sanders, Bean's Station, where it lost 18 killed and wounded, and wintered in East Tennessee. It was moved to Virginia, fought at Drury Bluff, where it lost 150 men, at Walthall's Junction, at Petersburg, and elsewhere, losing many men. April 2, 1865, a portion was captured, and the remainder surrendered at Appomattox.

The Eighty-fourth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was organized at McMinnville during the early winter of 1862, with S. S. Stanton, colonel, and was raised in the counties of Smith, White, Jackson, Putnam, DeKalb, Overton and Lincoln. In three days after its organization and in twelve hours after reaching Murfreesboro, it participated in that

furious engagement, where the right wing of Rosecranz was routed from the field. It moved back to Tullahoma, and was here consolidated with the Twenty-eighth Regiment. (See sketch of the twenty-eighth.)

The One Hundred and Fifty-fourth Tennessee (Confederate) Regiment was organized at Memphis in 1860, before the war broke out, and was reorganized soon after the fall of Sumter with Preston Smith, colonel. Seven companies were raised in Memphis, one in Henry County, one in McNairy County, and one in Hardeman County. It first marched to Randolph in May, 1861, and after various movements marched north and participated in the battle of Belmont, and afterward moved south into Kentucky, and after the surrender of Fort Donelson to northern Mississippi, and in April fought at bloody Shiloh with severe loss. It was then at Corinth until the evacuation, then marched north with Bragg on the Kentucky campaign, fighting at Richmond, Ky., with great loss, and at Perryville, October 8. It marched south with the army, reaching Murfreesboro where, December 31, it was hotly engaged, losing over a third of those engaged. It retreated to Chattanooga, thence to Chickamauga, where it fought in that great battle in September, and later at Missionary Ridge. It wintered at Dalton, and in 1864, in the Georgia campaign, fought in all the principal battles down to Atlanta, losing in the aggregate many valuable men. It marched north with Hood and invaded Tennessee, fighting at Franklin, Nashville and elsewhere, and retreating south out of the State. It marched to the Carolinas, participated in the action at Bentonville, and surrendered in April, 1865.

In addition to the above organizations there were about twenty cavalry regiments whose movements it has been almost impossible to trace. About eighteen battalions of cavalry were in the Confederate service from Tennessee. Many of the battalions, which had first served as such and perhaps independently, were consolidated to form regiments. Aside from this there were numerous independent cavalry companies or squads organized in almost every county of the State to assist the Confederate cause. The leading cavalry organizations of the State served mainly with the commands of Gens. Wheeler, Wharton and Forrest.

The artillery organizations of the State were so often changed, and have left such obscure records, that no attempt will be made here to trace their movements. They were in nearly all the artillery duels of the Mississippi department. The following is an imperfect list of the Tennessee batteries: Colms' Battery, Capt. S. H. Colms; Appeal Battery, Capt. W. N. Hogg; Bankhead's Battery, Capt. S. P. Bankhead; Barry's Battery, Capt. R. L. Barry; Belmont Battery, Capt. J. G. Anglade; Brown's Battery, Capt. W. R. Marshall; Burrough's Battery, Capt. W. H. Bur-

roughs; Carnes' Battery, Capt. W. W. Carnes; Scott's Battery, Capt. W. L. Scott; Miller's Battery, Capt. William Miller; Rice's Battery, Capt. T. W. Rice; Kain's Battery, Capt. W. C. Kain; Anglade's Battery, Capt. J. G. Anglade; Mebane's Battery, Capt. J. W. Mebane; Wright's Battery, Capt. E. E. Wright; Morton's Battery, Capt. J. W. Morton; Jackson's Battery, Capt. W. H. Jackson; Freeman's Battery, Capt. S. L. Freeman; Hoxton's Battery, Capt. Lewis Hoxton; McAdoo's Battery, Capt. J. M. McAdoo; Huwald's Battery, Capt. G. A. Huwald; Krone's Battery, Capt. F. Krone; Taylor's Battery, Capt. J. W. Taylor; Dismukes' Battery, Capt. P. T. Dismukes; Griffith's Battery, Capt. R. P. Griffith; Maney's Battery, Capt. F. Maney; Calvert's Battery, Capt. J. H. Calvert; Eldridge's Battery, Capt. J. W. Eldridge; McClung's Battery, Capt. H. L. McClung; Tobin's Battery, Capt. Thomas Tobin; Stankienry's Battery, Capt. P. K. Stankienry; Bibb's Battery, Capt. R. W. Bibb; Wilson's Battery, Capt. W. O. Williams; Fisher's Battery, Capt. J. A. Fisher; McDonald's Battery, Capt. C. McDonald; Ramsey's Battery, Capt. D. B. Ramsey; Keys' Battery, Capt. T. J. Keys; Porter's Battery, Capt. T. K. Porter; Baxter's Battery, Capt. E. Baxter; Humes' Battery, Capt. W. Y. Humes; Jackson's Battery, W. H. Jackson; Lynch's Battery, Capt. J. P. Lynch, and others.

ORGANIZATION OF THE ARMY CORPS AT BOWLING GREEN, KY., OCTOBER 28  
1861, GEN. A. S. JOHNSTON, COMMANDING.\*

First Division, Maj.-Gen. W. J. Hardee. Infantry: First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Hindman—Second Arkansas Regiment, Lieut.-Col. Bocage; Second Arkansas Regiment, Col. A. T. Hawthorn; Arkansas Battalion, Lieut.-Col. Marmaduke. Second Brigade, Col. P. R. Cleburne—First Arkansas Regiment, Col. Cleburne; Fifth Arkansas Regiment, Col. D. C. Cross; Seventh Mississippi Regiment, Col. J. J. Thornton; Tennessee Mountain Rifles, Col. B. J. Hill. Third Brigade, Col. R. G. Shaver—Seventh Arkansas Regiment, Col. Shaver; Eighth Arkansas Regiment, Col. W. R. Patterson; Twenty-fourth Tennessee Regiment, Col. R. D. Allison; Ninth Arkansas Regiment, Lieut.-Col. S. J. Mason. Cavalry—Adams' Regiment and Phifer's Battalion. Artillery—Swett's, Trigg's, Hubbard's and Byrne's Batteries.

Second Division, Brig.-Gen. S. B. Buckner. Infantry: First Brigade, Col. Hanson—Hanson's, Thompson's, Trabue's, Hunt's, Lewis' and Cofer's Kentucky regiments. Second Brigade, Col. Baldwin—Fourteenth Mississippi, Col. Baldwin; Twenty-sixth Tennessee Regiment, Col. Lillard. Third Brigade, Col. J. C. Brown—Third Tennessee Reg-

\*Taken from the official report.



inent, Col. Brown; Twenty-third Tennessee Regiment, Col. Martin; Eighteenth Tennessee Regiment, Col. Palmer.

Reserve—Texas Regiment, Col. B. F. Terry; Tennessee Regiment, Col. Stanton; Harper's and Spencer's Batteries.

#### CONFEDERATE FORCES AND LOSS AT SHILOH.\*

First Corps, Maj.-Gen. Leonidas Polk. First Division, Brig.-Gen. Charles Clark; First Brigade, Col. R. M. Russell; Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. A. P. Stewart. Second Division, Brig.-Gen. B. F. Cheatham; First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. B. R. Johnson; Second Brigade, Col. W. H. Stephens. Second Corps, Maj.-Gen. Braxton Bragg. First Division, Brig.-Gen. Daniel Ruggles; First Brigade, Col. R. L. Gibson; Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Patton Anderson; Third Brigade, Col. Preston Pond. Second Division, Brig.-Gen. J. M. Withers; First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. A. H. Gladden; Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. R. Chalmers; Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. K. Jackson. Third Corps, Maj.-Gen. W. J. Hardee. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. T. C. Hindman; Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. P. R. Cleburne; Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. S. A. M. Wood. Reserve Corps, Maj.-Gen. J. C. Breckinridge; First (Kentucky) Brigade, Col. R. P. Trabue; Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. S. Bowen; Third Brigade, Col. W. S. Statham. Total loss, 1,728 killed, 8,012 wounded and 959 missing.

#### CONFEDERATE STATES FORCES, GEN. BRAXTON BRAGG, COMMANDING, ARMY OF THE MISSISSIPPI, JUNE 30, 1862.\*

First Army Corps, Maj.-Gen. Leonidas Polk, commanding.

First Division, Brig.-Gen. Clark. First Brigade, Col. Russell—Twelfth Tennessee, Thirteenth Tennessee, Forty-seventh Tennessee, One Hundred and Fifty-fourth Tennessee, Bankhead's Battery. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. A. P. Stewart—Thirteenth Arkansas, Fourth Tennessee, Fifth Tennessee, Thirty-first Tennessee, Thirty-third Tennessee, Stanford's Battery. Second Division, Brig.-Gen. B. F. Cheatham. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. D. S. Donelson—Eighth Tennessee, Fifteenth Tennessee, Sixteenth Tennessee, Fifty-first Tennessee, Carnes' Battery. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. George Maney—First Tennessee, Sixth Tennessee, Ninth Tennessee, Twenty-seventh Tennessee, Smith's Battery. Detached Brigade, Brig.-Gen. S. B. Maxey—Forty-first Georgia, Twenty-fourth Mississippi, Ninth Texas, Eldredge's Battery. Second Army Corps, Maj.-Gen. Samuel Jones. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Patton Anderson—

\*From the official reports.

Twenty-fifth Louisiana, Thirtieth Mississippi, Thirty-seventh Mississippi, Forty-first Mississippi, Florida and Confederate Battalion, Slo-cumb's Battery. Second Brigade, Col. A. Reichard—Forty-fifth Alabama, Eleventh Louisiana, Sixteenth Louisiana, Eighteenth Louisiana, Nineteenth Louisiana, Twentieth Louisiana, Barnett's Battery. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Walker—First Arkansas, Twenty-first Louisiana, Thirteenth Louisiana, Crescent (Louisiana), Independent Tennessee, Thirty-eighth Tennessee, Lumsden's Battery, Barrett's Battery. Third Army Corps, Maj.-Gen. W. J. Hardee. First Brigade, Col. St. J. R. Liddell—Second Arkansas, Fifth Arkansas, Sixth Arkansas, Seventh Arkansas, Eighth Arkansas, Pioneer Company, Robert's Battery. Second Brigade, Brig. Gen. P. R. Cleburne—Fifteenth Arkansas, Second Tennessee, Fifth (Thirty-fifth) Tennessee, Twenty-fourth Tennessee, Forty-eighth Tennessee, Calvert's Battery. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. S. A. M. Wood—Sixteenth Alabama, Thirty-second Mississippi, Thirty-third Mississippi, Forty-fourth Tennessee, Baxter's Battery. Fourth Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. S. Marmaduke—Third Confederate, Twenty-fifth Tennessee, Twenty-ninth Tennessee, Thirty-seventh Tennessee, Swett's battery. Fifth Brigade, Col. A. T. Hawthorn—Thirty-third Alabama, Seventeenth Tennessee, Twenty-first Tennessee, Twenty-third Tennessee, Austin's Battery. Reserve Corps, Brig.-Gen. J. M. Withers. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Frank Gardner—Nineteenth Alabama, Twenty-second Alabama, Twenty-fifth Alabama, Twenty-sixth Alabama, Thirty-ninth Alabama, Sharpshooters, Robertson's Battery. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. R. Chalmers—Fifth Mississippi, Seventh Mississippi, Ninth Mississippi, Tenth Mississippi, Twenty-ninth Mississippi, Blythe's Mississippi, Ketchum's Battery. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. K. Jackson—Seventeenth Alabama, Eighteenth Alabama, Twenty-first Alabama, Twenty-fourth Alabama, Fifth Georgia, Burtwell's Battery. Fourth Brigade, Col. A. M. Manigault—Twenty-eighth Alabama, Thirty-fourth Alabama, First Louisiana (detached), Tenth South Carolina, Nineteenth South Carolina, Water's Battery.

ARMY OF THE WEST, MAJ.-GEN. J. P. M'COWN, COMMANDING.

First Division, Brig.-Gen. Henry Little. First Brigade, Col. Elijah Gates—Sixteenth Arkansas, First Missouri (dismounted), Second Missouri, Third Missouri, Missouri Battalion, Wade's Battery. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. P. O. Hébert—Fourteenth Arkansas, Seventeenth Arkansas, Third Louisiana, Whitfield's Texas Cavalry (dismounted), Greer's Texas Cavalry (dismounted), McDonald's Battery. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. M. E. Green—Fourth Missouri, Missouri Battalion, Mis-

souri Cavalry Battalion (dismounted), Confederate Rangers (dismounted), King's Battery. Second Division, Maj.-Gen. J. P. McCown. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. W. L. Cobell—McCray's Arkansas, Fourteenth Texas Cavalry (dismounted), Tenth Texas Cavalry (dismounted), Eleventh Texas Cavalry (dismounted), Andrews' Texas, Good's Battery. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. T. J. Churchill—Fourth Arkansas, First Arkansas Riflemen (dismounted), Second Arkansas Riflemen (dismounted), Fourth Arkansas Battalion, Turnbull's Arkansas Battalion, Reve's Missouri Scouts, Humphrey's Battery. Third Division, Brig.-Gen. D. H. Maury. First Brigade, Col. T. P. Dockery, Eighteenth Arkansas, Nineteenth Arkansas, Twentieth Arkansas, McCairns' Arkansas Battalion, Jones' Arkansas Battalion, — Battery. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. C. Moore—Hobb's Arkansas, Adams' Arkansas, Thirty-fifth Mississippi, Second Texas, Bledsoe's Battery. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. C. W. Phifer—Third Arkansas Cavalry (dismounted), Sixth Texas Cavalry (dismounted), Ninth Texas Cavalry (dismounted), Brook's Battalion, McNally's Battery. Reserved Batteries: Hoxton's Landis', Guibor's and Brown's. Cavalry: Forrest's Regiment, Webb's Squadron, Savery's Company, McCulloch's Regiment and Price's Body Guard.

THE ARMY OF TENNESSEE AT MURFREESBORO, GEN. BRAXTON BRAGG,  
COMMANDING.\*

Polk's (First) Corps, Lieut.-Gen. Leonidas Polk, commanding.†

First Division, Maj.-Gen. B. F. Cheatham. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. D. S. Donelson: Eighth Tennessee, Col. W. L. Moore and Lieut.-Col. John H. Anderson; Sixteenth Tennessee, Col. John H. Savage; Thirty-eighth Tennessee, Col. John C. Carter; Fifty-first Tennessee, Col. John Chester: Eighty-fourth Tennessee, Col. S. S. Stanton; Carnes Battery (Steuben Artillery), Lieut. J. G. Marshall. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. A. P. Stewart; Fourth and Fifth Tennessee Volunteers (consolidated), Col. O. F. Strahl; Nineteenth Tennessee, Col. F. M. Walker; Twenty-fourth Tennessee, Maj. S. E. Shannon and Col. H. L. W. Bratton; Thirty-first and Thirty-third Tennessee (consolidated), Col. E. E. Transil; Stanford's Mississippi Battery, Capt. T. J. Stanford. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. George Maney: First and Twenty-seventh Tennessee (consolidated), Col. H. R. Field; Fourth Tennessee (Confederate), Col. J. A. McMurray; Sixth and Ninth Tennessee (consolidated), Col. C. S. Hurt and Maj. John L. Harris; Tennessee Sharpshooters, Maj. F. Maney; M. Smith's Battery, Lieut. W. B. Turner, commanding.

\*Organization at the Battle of Murfreesboro or Stone River, Tenn., December 31, 1862, to January 3, 1863.

†Copied by permission from *Military Annals of Tennessee*.



Fourth (Smith's) Brigade, Col. A. J. Vaughan, Jr.; Twelfth Tennessee, Maj. J. N. Wyatt; Thirteenth Tennessee, Capt. R. F. Lanier and Lieut.-Col. W. E. Morgan; Twenty-ninth Tennessee, Maj. J. B. Johnson; Forty-seventh Tennessee, Capt. W. M. Watkins; One Hundred and Fifty-fourth Tennessee (senior), Lieut.-Col. M. Magevney, Jr.; Ninth Texas, Col. W. H. Young; Sharpshooters (P. T. Allen's), Lieut. J. R. J. Creighton and Lieut. T. T. Pattison; Scott's Battery, Capt. W. L. Scott.

Second Division, Maj.-Gen. J. M. Withers. First (Deas') Brigade, Cols. J. Q. Loomis and J. G. Coltart: First Louisiana, Lieut.-Col. F. H. Farrar, Jr.; Nineteenth Alabama, Twenty-second Alabama, Twenty-fifth Alabama, Twenty-sixth Alabama, Thirty-ninth Alabama; Robertson's Battery (temporarily assigned on January 2, to Gen. Breckinridge), Capt. F. H. Robertson. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. James R. Chalmers and Col. T. W. White: Seventh Mississippi; Ninth Mississippi, Col. T. W. White; Tenth Mississippi; Forty-first Mississippi; Blythe's Forty-fourth Mississippi Regiment (battalion of sharpshooters), Capt. O. F. West; Garrity's (late Ketchum's) Battery (Company A, Alabama State Artillery), Capt. James Garrity. Third (Walthall's) Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. Patton Anderson: Forty-fifth Alabama, Col. James Gilchrist; Twenty-fourth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. R. P. McKelvaine; Twenty-seventh Mississippi, Col. T. M. Jones, Col. J. L. Autry, and Capt. E. R. Neilson; Twenty-ninth Mississippi, Col. W. F. Brantly and Lieut.-Col. J. B. Morgan; Thirtieth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. J. J. Scales; Thirty-ninth North Carolina (temporarily attached on the field), Capt. A. W. Bell; Missouri Battery, Capt. O. W. Barrett. Fourth Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. Patton Anderson (Col. A. M. Manigault, commanding): Twenty-fourth Alabama, Twenty-eighth Alabama, Thirty-fourth Alabama, Tenth and Nineteenth South Carolina (consolidated), Col. A. J. Lythgoe; Alabama Battery, Capt. D. D. Waters. [Note: McCown's Division, Smith's Corps, was temporarily attached to Polk's Corps, but was with Cleburne's Division, Hardee's Corps, under the immediate command of Gen. Hardee.]

Hardee's (Second) Corps, Lieut.-Gen. W. J. Hardee, commanding.

First Division, Maj.-Gen. J. C. Breckinridge. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. D. W. Adams, Col. R. L. Gibson: Thirty-second Alabama, Col. Alex McKinstry and Lieut.-Col. H. Maury; Thirteenth and Twentieth Louisiana (consolidated), Col. R. L. Gibson and Maj. Charles Guillet; Sixteenth and Twenty-fifth Louisiana (consolidated), Col. S. W. Fisk and Maj. F. C. Zacharie; Battalion of Sharpshooters, Maj. J. E. Austin; Fifth Company Washington Artillery of Louisiana, Lieut. W. C. D. Vaught. Second Brigade, Col. J. B. Palmer (Brig.-Gen. G. J. Pillow, commanding part

of January 2, 1863): Eighteenth Tennessee, Col. J. B. Palmer and Lieut.-Col. W. R. Butler; Twenty-sixth Tennessee, Col. John M. Lillard; Twenty-eighth Tennessee, Col. P. D. Cummings; Thirty-second Tennessee, Col. E. C. Cook; Forty-fifth Tennessee, Col. A. Searcy; Moses' Georgia Battery, Lieut. R. W. Anderson. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. William Preston: First and Third Florida (consolidated), Col. William Miller; Fourth Florida, Col. W. L. L. Bowen; Sixtieth North Carolina, Col. J. A. McDowell; Twentieth Tennessee, Col. T. B. Smith, Lieut.-Col. F. M. Lavender and Maj. F. Claybrooke; Wright's Tennessee Battery, Capt. E. E. Wright and Lieut. John W. Mebane. Fourth Brigade, Brig.-Gen. R. W. Hanson (Col. R. P. Trabue, commanding on January 2, 1863): Forty-first Alabama, Col. H. Talbird and Lieut.-Col. M. L. Stansel; Second Kentucky, Maj. James W. Hewitt; Fourth Kentucky, Col. Trabue and Capt. T. W. Thompson; Sixth Kentucky, Col. Joseph H. Lewis; Ninth Kentucky, Col. Thomas H. Hunt; Cobb's Battery, Capt. R. Cobb. Jackson's Brigade (Independent): Fifth Georgia, Col. W. T. Black and Maj. C. P. Daniel; Second Georgia Battalion (sharpshooters), Maj. J. J. Cox; Fifth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. W. L. Sykes; Eighth Mississippi, Col. John C. Wilkinson and Lieut.-Col. A. M. McNeill; E. E. Pritchard's Battery; C. L. Lumsden's Battery (temporary), Lieut. H. H. Cribbs.

Second Division, Maj.-Gen. P. R. Cleburne. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. L. E. Polk: First Arkansas, Col. John W. Colquitt; Thirteenth Arkansas, Fifteenth Arkansas, Fifth Confederate, Col. J. A. Smith; Second Tennessee, Col. W. D. Robison; Fifth Tennessee, Col. B. J. Hill; Helena Battery (J. H. Calvert's), Lieut. T. J. Key commanding. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. St. John R. Liddell; Second Arkansas, Col. D. C. Govan; Fifth Arkansas, Lieut.-Col. John E. Murray; Sixth and Seventh Arkansas (consolidated), Col. S. G. Smith, Lieut.-Col. F. J. Cameron and Maj. W. F. Douglass; Eighth Arkansas, Col. John H. Kelley and Lieut.-Col. G. F. Bancum; Charles Swett's Battery; (Warren Light Artillery, Mississippi), Lieut. H. Shannon, commanding. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. B. R. Johnson: Seventeenth Tennessee, Col. A. S. Marks and Lieut.-Col. W. W. Floyd; Twenty-third Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. R. H. Keeble; Twenty-fifth Tennessee, Col. J. M. Hughes and Lieut.-Col. Samuel Davis; Thirty-seventh Tennessee, Col. M. White, Maj. J. T. McReynolds and Capt. C. G. Jarnagin; Forty-fourth Tennessee, Col. John S. Fulton; Jefferson Artillery, Capt. Put Darden. Fourth Brigade, Brig.-Gen. S. A. M. Wood: Sixteenth Alabama, Col. W. B. Wood; Thirty-third Alabama, Col. Samuel Adams; Third Confederate, Maj. J. F. Cameron; Forty-fifth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. R. Charlton; two companies Sharpshooters, Capt. A. T. Hawkins; Semple's Battery (detached for

Hanson's Brigade, Breckinridge's Division, up to January 1, 1863, when it returned), Henry C. Semple.

Smith's (Third) Corps, Lieut.-Gen. E. K. Smith commanding.

Second Division,\* Maj.-Gen. J. P. McCown. First Brigade (dismounted cavalry) Brig.-Gen. M. D. Ector: Tenth Texas Cavalry, Col. M. F. Locke; Eleventh Texas Cavalry, Col. J. C. Burks and Lieut.-Col. J. M. Bounds; Fourteenth Texas Cavalry, Col. J. L. Camp; Fifteenth Texas Cavalry, Col. J. A. Andrews; Douglass Battery, Capt. J. P. Douglass. Second Brigade—Brig.-Gen. James E. Rains (Col. R. B. Vance commanding after the fall of Gen. Rains): Third Georgia Battalion, Lieut.-Col. M. A. Stovall; Ninth Georgia Battalion, Maj. Joseph T. Smith; Twenty-ninth North Carolina, Col. R. B. Vance part of time; Eleventh Tennessee, Col. G. W. Gordon and Lieut.-Col. William Thedford; Eu-  
faula Light Artillery, Lieut. W. A. McDuffie. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. E. McNair and Col. R. W. Harper, commanding: First Arkansas Mounted Rifles (dismounted), Col. R. W. Harper and Maj. L. M. Ramseur; Second Arkansas Mounted Rifles, Lieut.-Col. J. A. Williamson; Fourth Arkansas, Col. H. G. Bunn; Thirtieth Arkansas (the Thirty-first on return of Seventeenth), Maj. J. J. Franklin and Capt. W. A. Cotter; Fourth Arkansas Battalion, Maj. J. A. Ross; Humphrey's Battery, Capt. J. T. Humphreys.

Cavalry, Brig.-Gen. Joseph Wheeler. Wheeler's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Joseph Wheeler: First Alabama, Col. W. W. Allen; Third Alabama, Maj. F. G. Gaines and Capt. T. H. Mauldin; Fifty-first Alabama, Col. John T. Morgan, and Lieut.-Col. James D. Webb; Eighth Confederate, Col. W. B. Wade; First Tennessee, Col. James E. Carter; Tennessee Battalion, Maj. D. W. Holman; Arkansas Battery, Capt. J. H. Wiggins. Wharton's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. A. Wharton: Fourteenth Alabama Battalion, Lieut.-Col. James Malone; First Confederate, Col. John T. Cox; Third Confederate, Lieut.-Col. William N. Estes; Second Georgia, Lieut.-Col. J. E. Dunlap and Maj. F. M. Ison; Third Georgia (detachment), Maj. R. Thompson; Second Tennessee, Col. H. M. Ashby; Fourth Tennessee, Col. Baxter Smith; Tennessee Battalion, Maj. John R. Davis; Eighth Texas, Col. Thomas Harrison; Murray's Regiment, Maj. W. S. Bledsoe; Escort Company, Capt. Paul Henderson; McCown's Escort Company, Capt. J. J. Partin; White's Battery, Capt. B. F. White. Buford's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. A. Buford: Third Kentucky, Col. J. R. Butler; Fifth Kentucky, Col. D. H. Smith; Sixth Kentucky, Col. J. W. Grigsby. Pegram's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. John Pegram: First Georgia; First Louisiana.

---

\*There is no evidence that the First (Stevenson's) Division of Smith's Corps was engaged.



THE ARMY OF TENNESSEE, GEN. JOSEPH E. JOHNSTON, COMMANDING.\*

Hardee's Army Corps, Lieut-Gen. W. J. Hardee, commanding.

Cheatham's Division, Maj-Gen. B. F. Cheatham. Maney's Brigade: First and Twenty-seventh Tennessee, Col. H. R. Field; Fourth Tennessee (Confederate), Lieut.-Col. O. A. Bradshaw; Sixth and Ninth Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. J. W. Burford; Nineteenth Tennessee, Maj. J. G. Deaderick; Fiftieth Tennessee, Col. S. H. Colms. Wright's Brigade: Eighth Tennessee, Col. J. H. Anderson; Sixteenth Tennessee, Capt. B. Randals; Twenty-eighth Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. D. C. Crook; Thirty-eighth Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. A. D. Gwynne; Fifty-first and Fifty-second Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. J. W. Estes. Strahl's Brigade: Fourth and Fifth Tennessee, Maj. H. Hampton; Twenty-fourth Tennessee, Col. J. A. Wilson; Thirty-first Tennessee, Maj. Samuel Sharp; Thirty-third Tennessee, Col. W. P. Jones; Forty-first Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. James D. Tillman. Vaughan's Brigade: Eleventh Tennessee, Col. G. W. Gordon; Twelfth and Forty-seventh Tennessee, Col. W. M. Watkins; Twenty-ninth Tennessee, Col. Horace Rice; One Hundred and Fifty-fourth and Thirteenth Tennessee, Col. M. Magevney, Jr.

Cleburne's Division, Maj.-Gen. P. R. Cleburne. Polk's Brigade: First and Fifteenth Arkansas, Lieut.-Col. W. H. Martin; Fifth Confederate, Maj. R. J. Person; Second Tennessee, Col. W. D. Robison; Thirty-fifth and Forty-eighth Tennessee, Capt. H. G. Evans. Lowrey's Brigade: Sixteenth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. F. A. Ashford; Thirty-third Alabama, Col. Samuel Adams; Forty-fifth Alabama, Col. H. D. Lampley; Thirty-second Mississippi, Col. W. H. H. Tison; Forty-fifth Mississippi, Col. A. B. Harcastle. Govan's Brigade: Second and Twenty-fourth Arkansas, Col. E. Warfield; Fifth and Thirteenth Arkansas, Col. J. E. Murray; Sixth and Seventh Arkansas, Col. S. G. Smith; Eighth and Nineteenth Arkansas, Col. G. F. Baucum; Third Confederate, Capt. M. H. Dixon. Smith's Brigade: Sixth and Fifteenth Texas, Capt. R. Fisher; Seventh Texas, Capt. C. E. Talley; Tenth Texas, Col. R. Q. Mills; Seventeenth and Eighteenth Texas, Capt. G. D. Manion; Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth Texas, Maj. W. A. Taylor.

Bates' Division, Maj-Gen. William B. Bate. Tyler's Brigade: Thirty-seventh Georgia, Col. J. T. Smith; Fifteenth and Thirty-seventh Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. R. D. Frazier; Twentieth Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. W. M. Shy; Thirtieth Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. J. J. Turner; Fourth Battalion Georgia Sharpshooters, Maj. T. D. Caswell. Lewis' Brigade: Second Kentucky, Col. J. W. Moss; Fourth Kentucky, Lieut.-Col. T. W. Thompson; Fifth Kentucky, Lieut.-Col. H. Hawkins; Sixth Kentucky, Col. M. H. Cofer; Ninth Kentucky, Col. J. W. Caldwell. Finley's Bri-

\*Organization for the period ending June 30, 1864.

gade: First and Third Florida, Capt. M. H. Strain; First and Fourth Florida, Lieut.-Col. E. Badger; Sixth Florida, Lieut.-Col. D. L. Kenan; Seventh Florida, Col. R. Bullock.

Walker's Division, Maj.-Gen. W. H. T. Walker. Mercer's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. H. W. Mercer: First Georgia, Col. C. H. Olmstead; Fifty-fourth Georgia, Lieut.-Col. M. Rawles; Fifty-seventh Georgia, Lieut.-Col. C. S. Guyton; Sixty-third Georgia, Col. G. A. Gordon. Jackson's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. John K. Jackson: Forty-sixth Georgia, Col. A. C. Edwards; Sixty-fifth Georgia, Capt. W. G. Foster; Fifth Mississippi, Col. John Weir; Eighth Mississippi, Col. J. C. Wilkinson; Second Battalion Georgia Sharpshooters, Maj. R. H. Whiteley. Gist's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. S. R. Gist: Eighth Georgia Battalion, Lieut.-Col. Z. L. Waters; Forty-sixth Georgia, Capt. E. Taylor; Sixteenth South Carolina, Col. James McCullough; Twenty-fourth South Carolina, Col. E. Capers. Stevens' Brigade, Brig.-Gen. C. H. Stevens: First Georgia (Confederate), Col. G. A. Smith; Twenty-fifth Georgia, Col. W. J. Winn; Twenty-ninth Georgia, Maj. J. J. Owen; Thirtieth Georgia, Lieut.-Col. J. S. Boynton; Sixty-sixth Georgia, Col. J. C. Nisbett; First Battalion Georgia Sharpshooters, Maj. A. Shaaff.

Hood's Army Corps, Lieut.-Gen. John B. Hood, commanding.

Hindman's Division, Maj.-Gen. T. C. Hindman. Deas' Brigade, Col. J. G. Coltart: Nineteenth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. G. R. Kimbrough; Twenty-second Alabama, Col. B. R. Hart; Twenty-fifth Alabama, Col. G. D. Johnston; Thirty-ninth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. W. C. Clifton; Fiftieth Alabama, Capt. G. W. Arnold; Seventeenth Battalion Alabama Sharpshooters, Capt. J. F. Nabers. Manigault's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. A. M. Manigault: Twenty-fourth Alabama, Col. N. N. Davis; Twenty-eighth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. W. L. Butler; Thirty-fourth Alabama, Col. J. C. B. Mitchell; Tenth South Carolina, Capt. R. Z. Harlee; Nineteenth South Carolina, Maj. J. L. White. Tucker's Brigade, Col. J. H. Sharp: Seventh Mississippi, Col. W. H. Bishop; Ninth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. B. F. Johns; Tenth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. G. B. Myers; Forty-first Mississippi, Col. J. B. Williams; Forty-fourth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. R. G. Kelsey; Ninth Battalion Mississippi Sharpshooters, Maj. W. C. Richards. Walthall's Brigade, Col. Sam Benton: Twenty-fourth and Twenty-seventh Mississippi, Col. R. P. McKelvaine; Twenty-ninth and Thirtieth Mississippi, Col. W. F. Brantley; Thirty-fourth Mississippi, Capt. T. S. Hubbard.

Stevenson's Division, Maj.-Gen. C. L. Stevenson. Brown's Brigade: Third Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. C. J. Clack; Eighteenth Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. W. R. Butler; Twenty-sixth Tennessee, Capt. A. F. Boggess; Thirty-second Tennessee, Capt. C. G. Tucker; Forty-fifth Tennessee and

Twenty-third Battalion, Col. A. Searcy. Cummings' Brigade: Second Georgia (State), Col. James Wilson; Thirty-fourth Georgia, Capt. W. A. Walker; Thirty-sixth Georgia, Maj. C. E. Broyles; Thirty-ninth Georgia, Capt. W. P. Milton; Fifty-sixth Georgia, Col. E. P. Watkins. Reynold's Brigade—Fifty-eighth North Carolina, Capt. S. M. Silver; Sixtieth North Carolina, Col. W. M. Hardy; Fifty-fourth Virginia, Lieut.-Col. J. J. Wade; Sixty-third Virginia, Capt. C. H. Lynch. Pettus' Brigade: Twentieth Alabama, Capt. S. W. Davidson; Twenty-third Alabama, Lieut.-Col. J. B. Bibb; Thirtieth Alabama, Col. C. M. Shelley; Thirty-first Alabama, Capt. J. J. Nix; Forty-sixth Alabama, Capt. G. E. Brewer.

Stewart's Division, Maj.-Gen. A. P. Stewart. Stovall's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. M. A. Stovall: First Georgia (State line), Col. E. M. Galt; Fortieth Georgia, Capt. J. N. Dobbs; Forty-first Georgia, Maj. M. S. Nall; Forty-second Georgia, Maj. W. H. Hulsey; Forty-third Georgia, Capt. H. R. Howard; Fifty-second Georgia, Capt. John R. Russell. Clayton's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. H. D. Clayton: Eighteenth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. P. F. Hunley; Thirty-second and Fifty-eighth Alabama, Col. Bush Jones; Thirty-sixth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. T. H. Herndon; Thirty-eighth Alabama, Capt. D. Lee. Gibson's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. R. L. Gibson: First Louisiana, Capt. W. H. Sparks; Thirteenth Louisiana, Lieut.-Col. F. L. Campbell; Sixteenth and Twenty-fifth Louisiana, Lieut.-Col. R. H. Lindsay; Nineteenth Louisiana, Col. R. W. Turner; Twentieth Louisiana, Col. Leon Von Zinken; Fourth Louisiana Battalion, Maj. D. Buie: Fourteenth Battalion Louisiana Sharpshooters, Maj. J. E. Austin. Baker's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. A. Baker: Thirty-seventh Alabama, Lieut.-Col. A. A. Greene; Fortieth Alabama, Col. J. H. Higley; Forty-second Alabama, Capt. R. K. Wells; Fifty-fourth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. J. A. Minter.

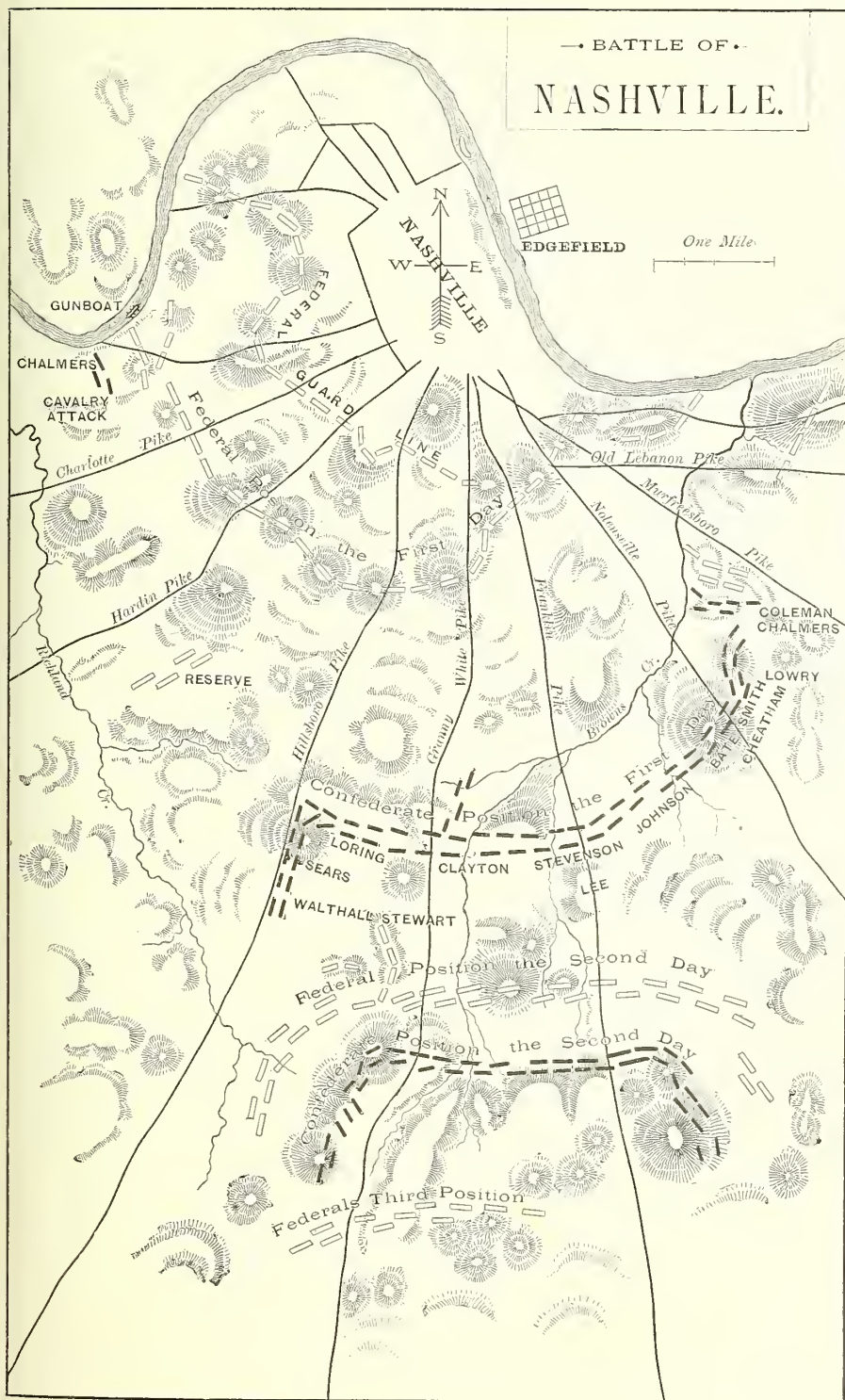
Wheeler's Cavalry Corps, Maj.-Gen. Joseph Wheeler, commanding.

Martin's Division, Maj.-Gen. W. T. Martin. Allen's Brigade: First Alabama, Lieut.-Col. D. T. Blakey; Third Alabama, Col. James Hagan; Fourth Alabama, Col. A. A. Russell; Seventh Alabama, Capt. G. Mason; Fifty-first Alabama, Col. M. L. Kirkpatrick; Twelfth Alabama Battalion, Capt. W. S. Reese. Iverson's Brigade: First Georgia, Col. S. W. Davitte; Second Georgia, Col. J. W. Mayo; Third Georgia, Col. R. Thompson; Fourth Georgia, Maj. A. R. Stewart; Sixth Georgia, Col. John R. Hart.

Kelly's Division. Anderson's Brigade, Col. R. H. Anderson: Third Confederate, Lieut.-Col. J. McCaskill; Eighth Confederate, Lieut.-Col. J. S. Prather; Tenth Confederate, Capt. W. J. Vason; Twelfth Confed-



→ BATTLE OF →  
**NASHVILLE.**





erate, Capt. C. H. Conner; Fifth Georgia, Maj. R. J. Davant, Jr. Dibrell's Brigade, Col. G. G. Dibrell: Fourth Tennessee, Col. W. S. McLemore; Eighth Tennessee, Capt. J. Leftwich; Ninth Tennessee, Capt. J. M. Reynolds; Tenth Tennessee, Maj. John Minor. Hannon's Brigade, Col. M. W. Hannon: Fifty-third Alabama, Lieut.-Col. J. F. Gaines; Twenty-fourth Alabama Battalion, Maj. R. B. Snodgrass.

Hume's Division. Ashby's Brigade, Col. H. M. Ashby: First East Tennessee (not reported); First Tennessee, Col. J. T. Wheeler; Second Tennessee, Capt. J. H. Kuhn; Fifth Tennessee, Col. G. W. McKenzie; Ninth Tennessee, Battalion, Capt. J. W. Greene. Harrison's Brigade, Col. Thomas Harrison: Arkansas, Col. A. W. Hobson; Sixty-sixth; North Carolina (not reported); Fourth Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. P. F. Anderson; Eighth Texas, Maj. S. P. Christian; Eleventh Texas, Col. G. R. Reeves. Williams' Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. S. Williams: First Kentucky, Lieut.-Col. J. W. Griffith; Second Kentucky, Maj. T. W. Lewis; Ninth Kentucky, Col. W. C. P. Breckinridge; Second Kentucky Battalion, Capt. J. B. Dartch; Allison's Squadron, Capt. J. S. Reese; detachment Hamilton's Battalion, Maj. James Shaw.

Artillery Corps, Brig.-Gen. F. A. Shoup, commanding.

Artillery of Hardee's Corps, Col. M. Smith. Hoxton's Battalion—Perry's Battery, Capt. T. J. Perry, Phelan's Battery, Lieut. N. Venable; Turner's Battery, Capt. H. B. Turner. Hotchkiss' Battalion—Goldthwait's Battery, Capt. R. W. Goldthwait; Key's Battery, Capt. T. J. Key; Swett's Battery, Lieut. H. Shannon. Martin's Battalion—Bledsoe's Battery, Lieut. C. W. Higgins; Ferguson's Battery, Lieut. J. A. Alston; Howell's Battery, Lieut. W. G. Robson. Cobb's Battalion—Gracey's Battery, Lieut. R. Matthews; Mebane's Battery, Lieut. J. W. Phillips; Slocomb's Battery, Capt. C. H. Slocomb.

Artillery of Hood's Corps, Col. R. F. Beckham. Courtney's Battalion—Dent's Battery, Capt. S. H. Dent; Douglass' Battery, Capt. J. P. Douglass; Garrity's Battery, Capt. J. Garrity. Eldridge's Battalion—Fenner's Battery, Capt. C. E. Fenner; Oliver's Battery, Capt. McD. Oliver; Stanford's Battery, Lieut. J. S. McCall. Johnston's Battalion—Corput's Battery, Lieut. W. S. Hoge; Marshall's Battery, Capt. L. G. Marshall; Rowan's Battery, Capt. J. B. Rowan.

Artillery of Wheeler's Corps, Lieut.-Col. F. W. Robertson. Ferrell's Battery, Lieut. — Davis; Huggins' Battery, Capt. A. L. Huggins; Ramsey's Battery, Lieut. D. B. Ramsey; White's Battery, Lieut. A. A. Pue; Wiggins' Battery, Lieut. J. P. Bryant.

Reserve Battalions, Lieut.-Col. J. H. Hallonquist. Williams' Battalion—Darden's Battery, Jeffree's Battery, Kolb's Battery. Palmer's Bat-



talion—Harris' Battery, Lumsden's Battery. Waddill's Battalion—Barrett's Battery, Bellamy's Battery, Emery's Battery.

Detachments: Escorts, Gen. J. E. Johnston's—Company A, Capt. Guy Dreux; Company B, Capt. E. M. Holloway. Gen. Cheatham's—Capt. T. M. Merritt. Gen. Cleburne's—Capt. C. F. Sanders. Gen. Walker's—Capt. T. G. Holt. Gen. Bates'—Lieut. James H. Buck. Gen. Hardee's—Capt. W. C. Baum. Gen. Hindman's—Capt. F. J. Billingslea. Gen. Stevenson's—Capt. T. B. Wilson. Gen. Stewart's—Capt. George T. Watts.

Engineer Troops, Maj. J. W. Green. Cheatham's Division, Capt. H. N. Pharr; Cleburne's Division, Capt. W. A. Ramsay; Stewart's Division, A. W. Gloster; Hindman's Division, Capt. R. L. Cobb; Buckner's Division, Capt. E. Winston (detached companies) Capt. R. C. McCalla; Detachment Sappers and Miners, Capt. A. W. Clarkson.

ARMY OF THE MISSISSIPPI, LIEUT.-GEN. LEONIDAS POLK, COMMANDING.\*

Loring's Division, Maj.-Gen. W. W. Loring. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. W. S. Featherston: Third Mississippi, Col. T. A. Mellon; Twenty-Second Mississippi, Maj. Martin A. Oatis; Thirty-first Mississippi, Col. M. D. L. Stevens; Thirty-third Mississippi, Col. J. L. Dake; Fortieth Mississippi, Col. W. Bruce Colbert; First Mississippi, Battalion Sharpshooters, Maj. J. M. Stigler. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. John Adams: Sixth Mississippi, Col. Robert Lowry; Fourteenth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. W. L. Doss; Fifteenth Mississippi, Col. M. Farrell; Twentieth Mississippi, Col. William N. Brown; Twenty-third Mississippi, Col. J. M. Wells; Forty-third Mississippi, Col. Richard Harrison. Third Brigade, Col. Thomas M. Scott: Twenty-seventh Alabama, Col. James Jackson; Thirty-fifth Alabama, Col. S. S. Ives; Forty-ninth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. J. D. Weedon; Fifty-fifth Alabama, Col. John Snodgrass; Fifty-seventh Alabama, Col. C. J. L. Cunningham; Twelfth Louisiana, Lieut.-Col. N. L. Nelson. Artillery Battalion, Maj. J. D. Myrick: Barry's Battery, Bouanchand's Battery, Cowan's Battery, Mississippi.

French's Division, Maj.-Gen. S. G. French. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. M. D. Ector: Twenty-ninth North Carolina, Thirty-ninth North Carolina, Ninth Texas, Col. William H. Young; Tenth Texas, Col. C. R. Earp; Fourteenth Texas, Col. J. L. Camp; Thirty-second Texas, Col. J. A. Andrews. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. F. M. Cockrell; First Missouri (the First and Fourth combined), Capt. — Keith; Second Missouri (the Second and Sixth combined), Col. P. C. Flournoy; Third Missouri (the Third and Fifth combined), Col. James McCown; Fourth

\*Organization June 10, 1864.

Missouri (the First and Fourth combined), Capt. — Keith; Fifth Missouri (Third and Fifth combined), Col. James McCown; Sixth Missouri (Third and Sixth combined), Col. P. C. Flournoy; First Missouri Cavalry, Third Missouri Cavalry, Maj. Elijah Yates. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. C. W. Sears; Fourth Mississippi, Col. T. N. Adair; Thirty-fifth Mississippi, Col. William S. Barney; Thirty-sixth Mississippi, Col. W. W. Witherspoon; Thirty-ninth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. W. E. Ross; Forty-sixth Mississippi, Col. W. H. Clark; Seventh Mississippi Battalion. Artillery Battalion, Maj. George S. Storrs; Guibor's Missouri Battery, Hoskin's Mississippi Battery, Ward's Alabama Battery.

Cantey's Division, Brig.-Gen. James Cantey. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. D. H. Reynolds: First Arkansas, Second Arkansas, Fourth Arkansas, Ninth Arkansas, Twenty-fifth Arkansas. Second Brigade (regimental commanders not indicated on original return), Col. V. S. Murphy; First Alabama, Seventeenth Alabama, Twenty-sixth Alabama, Twenty-ninth Alabama, Thirty-seventh Mississippi. Artillery Battalion, Maj. W. C. Preston. Gideon Nelson's Artillery, Selden's Alabama Battery, Tarrant's Alabama Battery, Yates' Mississippi Battery.

Cavalry Division, Brig.-Gen. W. H. Jackson. First Brigade, Brig.-Gen. F. C. Armstrong: Sixth Alabama, Col. C. H. Colvin (?); First Mississippi, Col. R. A. Pinson; Second Mississippi, Maj. J. J. Perry; Twenty-eighth Mississippi, Maj. J. T. McPall (?); Ballentine's Regiment, Capt. E. E. Porter. Second Brigade, Brig.-Gen. — Ross: Third Texas, Lieut.-Col. J. S. Bogges (?); Sixth Texas, Lieut.-Col. L. S. Ross; Ninth Texas, Col. D. W. Jones; Twenty-seventh Texas, Col. E. R. Hawkins. Third Brigade, Brig.-Gen. — Ferguson; Second Alabama Lieut.-Col. J. N. Carpenter; Twelfth Alabama, Col. W. M. Inge; Fifty-sixth Alabama, Col. W. Boyles; Miller's Mississippi Regiment, Perrin's Mississippi Regiment. Artillery Battalion, Croft's Georgia Battery, King's Missouri Battery, Waiter's South Carolina Battery (?).

THE ARMY OF TENNESSEE, GEN. BRAXTON BRAGG, COMMANDING.\*

Right Wing, Polk's Corps, Lieut.-Gen. Leonidas Polk commanding.

Cheatham's Division, Maj.-Gen. B. F. Cheatham. Escort: Second Georgia Cavalry, Company G, Capt. T. M. Merritt. Jackson's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. John K. Jackson: First Georgia (Confederate), Second Georgia Battalion, Maj. J. C. Gordon; Fifth Georgia, Col. C. P. Daniel; Second Georgia Battalion (sharpshooters), Maj. R. H. Whitley; Fifth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. W. L. Sykes and Maj. J. B. Herring; Eighth Missis-

\*Organization of the army at Chickamauga, September 19 and 20, 1863, compiled mainly from the official reports.

issippi, Col. J. C. Wilkinson. Maney's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. George Maney: First and Twenty-Seventh Tennessee, Col. H. R. Field; Fourth Tennessee (provisional army), Col. J. A. McMurray, Lieut.-Col. R. N. Lewis, Maj. O. A. Bradshaw and Capt. J. Bostick; Sixth and Ninth Tennessee, Col. George C. Porter; Twenty-fourth Tennessee Battalion (sharpshooters), Maj. Frank Maney. Smith's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Preston Smith, Col. A. J. Vaughan, Jr.: Eleventh Tennessee, Col. G. W. Gordon; Twelfth and Forty-seventh Tennessee, Col. W. M. Watkins; Thirteenth and One Hundred and Fifty-fourth Tennessee, Col. A. J. Vaughan, Jr., and Lieut.-Col. R. W. Pitman; Twenty-ninth Tennessee, Col. Horace Rice; Dawson's Battalion Sharpshooters (composed of two companies from the Eleventh Tennessee, two from the Twelfth and Forty-seventh Tennessee (consolidated), and one from the One Hundred and Fifty-fourth Senior Tennessee) Maj. J. W. Dawson and Maj. William Green. Wright's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Marcus J. Wright: Eighth Tennessee, Col. John H. Anderson; Sixteenth Tennessee, Col. D. M. Donnell; Twenty-eighth Tennessee, Col. S. S. Stanton; Thirty-eighth Tennessee and Murray's (Tennessee) Battalion, Col. J. C. Carter; Fifty-first and Fifty-second Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. John G. Hall. Strahl's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. O. F. Strahl: Fourth and Fifth Tennessee, Col. J. J. Lamb; Nineteenth Tennessee, Col. F. M. Walker; Twenty-fourth Tennessee, Col. J. A. Wilson; Thirty-first Tennessee, Col. E. E. Tansil; Thirty-third Tennessee. Artillery, Maj. Melancthon Smith: Carnes' (Tennessee) Battery, Capt. W. W. Carnes; Scogin's (Georgia) Battery, Capt. John Scogin; Scott's (Tennessee) Battery, Lieuts. J. H. Marsh and A. T. Watson; Smith's (Mississippi) Battery, Lieut. William B. Turner; Stanford's Battery, Capt. T. J. Stanford.

Center, Hill's Corps, Lieut.-Gen. Daniel H. Hill, commanding.

Cleburne's Division, Maj.-Gen. P. R. Cleburne. Wood's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. S. A. M. Wood: Sixteenth Alabama, Maj. J. H. McGaughey and Capt. F. A. Ashford; Thirty-third Alabama, Col. Samuel Adams; Forty-fifth Alabama, Col. E. B. Breedlove; Eighteenth Alabama Battalion, Maj. J. H. Gibson and Col. Samuel Adams; Thirty-third Alabama, Thirty-second and Forty-fifth Mississippi, Col. M. P. Lowery; Sharpshooters, Maj. A. T. Hawkins and Capt. Daniel Coleman. Polk's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. L. E. Polk. First Arkansas, Col. J. W. Colquitt: Third and Fifth Confederate, Col. J. A. Smith; Second Tennessee, Col. W. D. Robison; Thirty-fifth Tennessee, Col. B. J. Hill; Forty-eighth Tennessee, Col. G. H. Nixon. Deshler's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. James Deshler, Col. R. Q. Mills: Nineteenth and Twenty-fourth Arkansas, Lieut.-Col. A. S. Hutchinson; Sixth, Tenth and Fifteenth Texas, Col.



R. Q. Mills and Lieut.-Col. T. Scott Anderson; Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth Texas (dismounted cavalry), Col. F. C. Wilkes, Lieut.-Col. John T. Coit and Maj. W. A. Taylor. Artillery: Maj. T. R. Hotchkiss, Capt. H. C. Semple; Calvert's Battery, Lieut. Thomas J. Key; Douglas's Battery, Capt. J. P. Douglas; Semple's Battery, Capt. H. C. Semple and Lieut. R. W. Goldthwaite.

Breckinridge's Division, Maj.-Gen. John C. Breckinridge. Helm's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Benjamin H. Helm, Col. J. H. Lewis: Forty-first Alabama, Col. M. L. Stansel; Second Kentucky, Col. J. W. Hewitt and Lieut.-Col. J. W. Moss; Fourth Kentucky, Col. Joseph P. Nuckols, Jr., and Maj. T. W. Thompson; Sixth Kentucky, Col. J. H. Lewis and Lieut.-Col. M. H. Cofer; Ninth Kentucky, Col. J. W. Caldwell and Lieut.-Col. J. C. Wickliffe. Adam's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Daniel W. Adams, Col. R. L. Gibson: Thirty-second Alabama, Maj. J. C. Kimball; Thirteenth and Twentieth Louisiana, Cols. R. L. Gibson and Leon Von Zinken and Capt. E. M. Dubroca; Sixteenth and Twenty-fifth Louisiana, Col. D. Gober; Nineteenth Louisiana, Lieut.-Col. R. W. Turner, Maj. L. Butler and Capt. H. A. Kennedy; Fourteenth Louisiana Battalion, Maj. J. E. Austin. Stovall's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. M. A. Stovall: First and Third Florida, Col. W. S. Dilworth; Fourth Florida, Col. W. L. L. Bowen; Forty-seventh Georgia, Capts. William S. Phillips and Joseph S. Cone; Sixtieth North Carolina, Lieut.-Col. J. M. Ray and Capt. J. T. Weaver. Artillery, Maj. R. E. Graves: Cobb's Battery, Capt. Robert Cobb; Mebane's Battery, Capt. John W. Mebane; Slocomb's Battery, Capt. C. H. Slocomb.

Reserve Corps, Maj.-Gen. W. H. T. Walker, commanding.

Walker's Division, Brig.-Gen. S. R. Gist. Gist's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. S. R. Gist, Col. P. H. Colquitt, Lieut.-Col. L. Napier: Forty-sixth Georgia, Col. P. H. Colquitt and Maj. A. M. Speer: Eighth Georgia Battalion, Lieut.-Col. L. Napier; Sixteenth South Carolina (not engaged; at Rome), Col. J. McCullough; Twenty-fourth South Carolina, Col. C. H. Stevens and Lieut.-Col. E. Capers. Ector's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. M. D. Ector: Stone's Alabama Battalion, Pound's Mississippi Battalion, Twenty-ninth North Carolina, Ninth Texas, Tenth, Fourteenth and Thirty-second Texas Cavalry (serving as infantry). Wilson's Brigade, Col. C. C. Wilson: Twenty-fifth Georgia, Lieut.-Col. A. J. Williams; Twenty-ninth Georgia, Lieut. G. R. McRae; Thirtieth Georgia, Lieut.-Col. J. S. Boynton; First Georgia Battalion (sharpshooters), Fourth Louisiana Battalion. Artillery, Ferguson's Battery (not engaged; at Rome), Lieut. R. T. Beauregard; Martin's Battery.

Liddell's Division, Brig.-Gen. St. John R. Liddell. Liddell's Bri-

gade, Col. D. C. Govan: Second and Fifteenth Arkansas, Lieut.-Col. R. T. Harvey and Capt. A. T. Meek; Fifth and Thirteenth Arkansas, Col. L. Featherstone and Lieut.-Col. John E. Murray; Sixth and Seventh Arkansas, Col. D. A. Gillespie and Lieut.-Col. P. Snyder; Eighth Arkansas, Lieut.-Col. G. F. Baucum and Maj. A. Watkins; First Louisiana, Lieut.-Col. G. F. Baucum and Maj. A. Watkins. Walthall's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. E. C. Walthall: Twenty-fourth Mississippi, Lieut.-Col. R. P. McKelvaine, Maj. W. C. Staples and Capts. B. F. Toomer and J. D. Smith: Twenty-seventh Mississippi, Col. James A. Campbell; Twenty-ninth Mississippi, Col. W. F. Brantly: Thirtieth Mississippi, Col. J. I. Scales; Lieut.-Col. Hugh A. Reynolds and Maj. J. M. Johnson: Thirty-fourth Mississippi (Thirty-fourth Mississippi had four commanders at Chickamauga), Maj. W. G. Pegram, Capt. H. J. Bowen, Lieut.-Col. H. A. Reynolds and———. Artillery, Capt. Chas. Swett: Fowler's Battery, Capt. W. H. Fowler; Warren Light Artillery, Lieut. H. Shannon.

Left Wing, Lieut.-Gen. James Longstreet, commanding.

Hindman's Division, Maj.-Gen. T. C. Hindman, Brig.-Gen. J. Patton Anderson. Anderson's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. Patton Anderson: Col. J. H. Sharp, Seventh Mississippi; Col. W. H. Bishop; Ninth Mississippi, Maj. T. H. Lyman; Tenth Mississippi Lieut.-Col. James Barr; Forty-first Mississippi, Col. W. F. Tucker; Forty-fourth Mississippi, Col. J. H. Sharp and Lieut.-Col. R. G. Kelsey; Ninth Mississippi, Battalion (sharpshooters), Maj. W. C. Richards; Garrity's Battery, Capt. J. Garrity. Deas' Brigade, Brig.-Gen. Z. C. Deas: Nineteenth Alabama, Col. S. K. McSpadden; Twenty-second Alabama, Lieut. Col. John Weedon and Capt. H. T. Toulmin; Twenty-fifth Alabama, Col. George D. Johnston; Thirty-ninth Alabama, Col. W. Clark; Fiftieth Alabama, Col. J. G. Coltart; Seventeenth Alabama Battalion (sharpshooters), Capt. James F. Nabers; Robertson's Battery, Lieut. S. H. Dent. Manigault's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. A. M. Manigault: Twenty-fourth Alabama, Col. N. N. Davis; Twenty-eighth Alabama, Col. John C. Reid; Thirty-fourth Alabama, Maj. J. N. Slaughter; Tenth and Nineteenth South Carolina, Col. James F. Pressley; Waters' Battery, Lieut. Charles W. Watkins and George D. Turner.

Buckner's Corps, Maj. Gen.-Simon B. Buckner, commanding.

Stewart's Division, Maj.-Gen. A. P. Stewart. Johnson's Brigade (part of Johnson's provisional division), Brig.-Gen. B. R. Johnson, Col. J. S. Fulton: Seventeenth Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. Watt W. Floyd; Twenty-third Tennessee, Col. R. H. Keeble; Twenty-fifth Tennessee Lieut.-Col. R. B. Snowden; Forty-fourth Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. J. L. McEwen, Jr.,

and Maj. G. M. Crawford. Brown's Brigade: Brig.-Gen. J. C. Brown, Col. Edmund C. Cook: Eighteenth Tennessee, Col. J. B. Palmer; Lieut.-Col. W. R. Butler and Capt. Gideon H. Lowe; Twenty-sixth Tennessee, Col. J. M. Lillard and Maj. R. M. Saffell; Thirty-second Tennessee, Col. E. C. Cook and Capt. C. G. Tucker; Forty-fifth Tennessee, Col. A. Searcy; Twenty-third Tennessee Battalion, Maj. T. W. Newman and Capt. W. P. Simpson. Bate's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. W. B. Bate: Fifty-eighth Ala., Col. B. Jones; Thirty-seventh Georgia, Col. A. F. Rudler and Lieut.-Col. J. T. Smith; Fourth Georgia Battalion (sharpshooters), Maj. T. D. Caswell, Capt. B. M. Turner and Lieut. Joel Towers; Fifteenth and Thirty-seventh Tennessee, Col. R. C. Tyler, Lieut.-Col. R. D. Trayser, and Capt. R. M. Tankesley; Twentieth Tennessee, Col. T. B. Smith and Maj. W. M. Shy. Clayton's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. H. D. Clayton: Eighteenth Alabama, Col. J. T. Holtzelaw, Lieut.-Col. R. F. Inge and Maj. P. F. Hunley; Thirty-sixth Alabama, Col. L. T. Woodruff; Thirty-eighth Alabama, Lieut. Col. A. R. Lankford. Artillery, Maj. J. W. Eldridge: First Arkansas Battery, Capt. J. T. Humphreys; T. H. Dawson's Battery, Lieut. R. W. Anderson; Eufaula Artillery, Capt. McD. Oliver; Ninth Georgia Artillery Battalion, Company E, Lieut. W. S. Everett.

Preston's Division, Brig.-Gen. William Preston. Gracie's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. A. Gracie, Jr.: Forty-third Alabama, Col. Y. M. Moody; First Alabama, Battalion (Hilliard's Legion), Lieut.-Col. J. H. Holt and Capt. G. W. Huguley; Second Alabama Battalion, Lieut.-Col. B. Hall, Jr., and Capt. W. D. Walden; Third Alabama Battalion (all of Hilliard's Legion), Maj. J. W. A. Sanford; Fourth Alabama Battalion (Artillery battalion, Hilliard's Legion), Maj. J. D. McLennan; Sixty-third Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. A. Fulkerson and Maj. John A. Aiken. Trigg's Brigade, Col. R. C. Trigg: First Florida Cavalry (dismounted), Col. G. T. Maxwell; Sixth Florida, Col. J. J. Finley; Seventh Florida, Col. R. Bullock; Fifty-fourth Virginia, Lieut. Col. John J. Wade. Third Brigade, Col. J. H. Kelly: Sixty-fifth Georgia, Col. R. H. Moore; Fifth Kentucky, Col. H. Hawkins; Fifty-eighth North Carolina, Col. J. B. Palmer; Sixty-third Virginia, Maj. J. M. French. Artillery Battalion: Maj. A. Leyden; Jeffress's Battery, Puble's Battery, Wolihin's Battery, York's Battery. Reserve Corps Artillery: Maj. S. C. Williams; Baxter's Battery, Darden's Battery, Kolb's Battery, McCant's Battery.

Johnson's Division,\* Brig.-Gen. Bushrod R. Johnson. Gregg's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. John Gregg, Col. C. A. Sugg: Third Tennessee, Col. C. H. Walker; Tenth Tennessee, Col. Wm. Grace; Thirtieth Tennessee;

\*A provisional organization, embracing Johnson's and part of the time Robertson's Brigades, as well as Gregg's and McNair's, September 19, attached to Longstreet's Corps, under Maj.-Gen. Hood.



Forty-first Tennessee, Lieut.-Col. J. D. Tillman; Fiftieth Tennessee, Col. C. A. Sugg, Lieut.-Col. T. W. Beaumont, Maj. C. W. Robertson and Col. C. H. Walker; First Tennessee Battalion, Majs. S. H. Colms and C. W. Robertson; Seventh Texas, Maj. K. M. Vanzandt; Bledsoe's (Missouri) Battery, Lieut. R. L. Wood. McNair's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. E. McNair, Col. D. Coleman: First Arkansas Mounted Rifles, Col. Robert W. Harper; Second Arkansas Mounted Rifles, Col. James A. Williamson; Twenty-fifth Arkansas, Lieut.-Col. Eli Huffstetter; Fourth and Thirty-first Arkansas Infantry and Fourth Arkansas Battalion (consolidated), Maj. J. A. Ross; Thirty-ninth North Carolina, Col. D. Coleman; Culpepper's (South Carolina) Battalion, Capt. J. F. Culpepper.

Longstreet's Corps,\* Left Wing, Maj. John B. Hood, commanding.

McLaw's Division, Maj.-Gen. Lafayette McLaws, Brig.-Gen. J. B. Kershaw. Kershaw's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. B. Kershaw: Second South Carolina, Lieut.-Col. F. Gaillard; Third South Carolina, Col. J. D. Nance; Seventh South Carolina, Lieut.-Col. Elbert Bland, Maj. J. S. Hard and Capt. E. J. Goggans; Eighth South Carolina, Col. J. W. Hanagan; Fifteenth South Carolina, Col. Joseph F. Gist; Third South Carolina Battalion, Capt. J. M. Townsend. Wofford's Brigade (Longstreet's report indicates that these brigades did not arrive in time to take part in the battle), Brig.-Gen. W. T. Wofford: Sixteenth Georgia, Eighteenth Georgia, Twenty-fourth Georgia, Third Georgia Battalion (sharpshooters), Cobb's (Georgia) Legion, Phillip's (Georgia) Legion. Humphrey's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. B. G. Humphreys: Thirteenth Mississippi, Seventeenth Mississippi, Eighteenth Mississippi, Twenty-first Mississippi. Bryan's Brigade (Longstreet's report, etc., as above), Brig.-Gen. Goode Bryan: Tenth Georgia, Fiftieth Georgia, Fifty-first Georgia and Fifty-third Georgia,

Hood's Division, Maj.-Gen. John B. Hood, Brig.-Gen. E. M. Law. Jenkins' Brigade (did not arrive in time to take part in the battle; Jenkins' Brigade assigned to the division September 11, 1863), Brig.-Gen. M. Jenkins: First South Carolina, Second South Carolina Rifles, Fifth South Carolina, Sixth South Carolina, Hampton Legion, Palmetto Sharpshooters. Law's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. E. M. Law, Col. J. L. Sheffield: Fourth Alabama, Fifteenth Alabama, Col. W. C. Oates; Forty-fourth Alabama, Forty-seventh Alabama, Forty-eighth Alabama. Robertson's Brigade (served part of the time in Johnson's provisional division), Brig.-Gen. J. B. Robertson, Col. Van H. Manning: Third Arkansas, Col. Van H. Manning; First Texas, Capt. R. J. Harding; Fourth Texas, Col.

---

\* Army of Northern Virginia, organization taken from return of that army for August 31, 1863; Pickett's Division was left in Virginia.

John P. Bane and Capt. R. H. Bassett; Fifth Texas, Maj. J. C. Rogers and Capt. J. S. Cleveland and T. T. Clay. Anderson's Brigade (did not arrive in time to take part in the battle), Brig.-Gen. George T. Anderson: Seventh Georgia, Eighth Georgia, Ninth Georgia, Eleventh Georgia, Fifty-ninth Georgia. Benning's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. H. L. Benning: Second Georgia, Lieut.-Col. Wm. S. Shepherd and Maj. W. W. Charlton; Fifteenth Georgia, Col. D. M. Du Bose and Maj. P. J. Shannon; Seventeenth Georgia, Lieut.-Col. Charles W. Matthews; Twentieth Georgia, Col. J. D. Waddell. Artillery Corps (did not arrive in time to take part in the battle), Col. E. Porter Alexander: Fickling's (South Carolina) Battery, Jordan's (Virginia) Battery, Moody's (Louisiana) Battery, Parker's (Virginia) Battery, Taylor's (Virginia) Battery, Woolfolk's (Virginia) Battery. Artillery Reserve (Army of Tennessee), Maj. Felix Robertson: Barrett's (Missouri) Battery, Le Gardeur's (Louisiana) Battery (not mentioned in the reports, but in Reserve Artillery August 31, and Capt. Le Gardeur, etc., relieved from duty in the Army of the Tennesse, November 1, 1863), Havis' (Alabama) Battery, Lumsden's (Alabama) Battery, Massenburg's (Georgia) Battery.

Cavalry Corps, Maj.-Gen. Joseph Wheeler, commanding.

Wharton's Division, Brig.-Gen. John A. Wharton. First Brigade, Col. C. C. Crews; Seventh Alabama, Second Georgia, Third Georgia, Fourth Georgia, Col. I. W. Avery. Second Brigade, Col. T. Harrison; Third Confederate, Col. W. N. Estes; First Kentucky, Lieut.-Col. J. W. Griffith; Fourth Tennessee, Col. Paul F. Anderson; Eighth Texas, Eleventh Texas, White's (Georgia) Battery.

Martin's Division, Brig.-Gen. W. T. Martin. First Brigade, Col. J. T. Morgan: First Alabama, Third Alabama, Lieut.-Col. T. H. Mauldin; Fifty-first Alabama, Eighth Confederate. Second Brigade, Col. A. A. Russell: Fourth Alabama (two regiments of same designation, Lieut.-Col. Johnson commanded that in Roddey's Brigade), First Confederate, Col. W. B. Bate; Wiggin's (Arkansas) Battery. Roddey's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. P. D. Roddey: Fourth Alabama (two regiments, etc., as above), Lieut.-Col. Wm. A. Johnson; Fifth Alabama, Fifty-third Alabama, Forrest's (Tennessee) Regiment, Ferrell's (Georgia) Battery.

Forrest's Cavalry Corps, Brig.-Gen. N. B. Forrest, commanding.

Armstrong's Division (from returns of August 31, 1863, and reports), Brig.-Gen. F. C. Armstrong. Armstrong's Brigade, Col. J. T. Wheeler: Third Arkansas, First Tennessee, Eighteenth Tennessee Battalion, Maj. Charles McDonald. Forrest's Brigade, Col. G. G. Dibrell: Fourth Tennessee, Col. W. S. McLemore; Eighth Tennessee, Capt. Hamilton McGinnis; Ninth Tennessee, Col. J. B. Biffle; Tenth Tennessee, Col. N. N.

Cox; Eleventh Tennessee, Col. D. W. Holman; Shaw's (or Hamilton's) Battalion (?), Maj. J. Shaw; Freeman's (Tennessee) Battery, Capt. A. L. Huggins; Morton's (Tennessee) Battery, Capt. John W. Morton.

Pegram's Division (taken from Pegram's and Scott's reports and assignments; but the composition of this division is uncertain), Brig.-Gen. John Pegram. Davidson's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. H. B. Davidson: First Georgia, Sixth Georgia, Col. John R. Hart; Sixth North Carolina, Rucker's Legion, Huwald's (Tennessee) Battery. Scott's Brigade, Col. J. S. Scott: Tenth Confederate, Col. C. T. Goode; detachment of Morgan's command, Lieut.-Col. R. B. Martin; First Louisiana, Second Tennessee, Fifth Tennessee, Twelfth Tennessee Battalion; Sixteenth Tennessee Battalion, Capt. J. Q. Arnold; Louisiana Battery (one section).

THE ARMY OF TENNESSEE, GEN. JOSEPH E. JOHNSTON, COMMANDING.\*

Hardee's Army Corps, Lieut.-Gen. Wm. J. Hardee, commanding.

Brown's Division, Maj.-Gen. John C. Brown. Smith's Brigade—Brig.-Gen. James A. Smith; Florida Regiment, composed of First, Third, Sixth, Seventh and Fourth Infantry and First Cavalry, dismounted (consolidated), Lieut.-Col. E. Mashburn; Georgia Regiment, composed of First, Fifty-seventh and Sixty-third Georgia Regiments (consolidated), Col. C. H. Olmstead; Georgia Regiment, composed of Fifty-fourth and Thirty-seventh Georgia and Fourth Georgia Battalion Sharpshooters (consolidated), Col. T. D. Caswell. Govan's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. D. C. Govan: Arkansas Regiment, composed of First, Second, Fifth, Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, Thirteenth, Fifteenth, Nineteenth and Twenty-fourth Arkansas and Third Confederate (consolidated), Col. E. A. Howell; Texas Regiment, composed of Sixth, Seventh, Tenth, Fifteenth, Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth Texas (consolidated), Lieut.-Col. W. A. Ryan.

Hoke's Division, Maj.-Gen. R. F. Hoke. Clingman's Brigade: Eighth North Carolina, Lieut.-Col. R. A. Barrier; Thirty-first North Carolina, Col. C. W. Knight; Thirty-sixth and Fortieth North Carolina, Maj. W. A. Holland; Fifty-first North Carolina, Capt. J. W. Lippitt; Sixty-first North Carolina, Capt. S. W. Noble. Colquitt's Brigade: Sixth Georgia, Maj. J. M. Culpepper; Nineteenth Georgia, Lieut.-Col. R. B. Hogan; Twenty-third Georgia, Col. M. R. Ballinger; Twenty-seventh Georgia, Lieut.-Col. H. Bussey; Twenty-eighth Georgia, Capt. G. W. Warthen. Haygood's Brigade: Eleventh South Carolina, Capt. B. F. Wyman; Twenty-first South Carolina, Capt. J. W. Thomas (probably Lieut.-Col. J. A. W. Thomas); Twenty-fifth South Carolina, Capt.

\*Organization for period ending April 17, 1865.



E. R. Lesesne; Twenty-seventh South Carolina, Capt. T. Y. Simons; Seventh South Carolina Battalion, Capt. Wm. Clyburn. Kirkland's Brigade: Seventeenth North Carolina, Lieut.-Col. T. H. Sharp; Forty-second North Carolina, Col. J. E. Brown; Fiftieth North Carolina, Col. Geo. Wortham; Sixty-sixth North Carolina, Col. J. H. Nethercutt. First Brigade Junior Reserves: First North Carolina, Lieut.-Col. C. W. Broadfoot; Second North Carolina, Col. J. H. Anderson; Third North Carolina, Col. J. W. Hinsdale; First North Carolina Battalion, Capt. C. M. Hall.

Cheatham's Division, Maj.-Gen. B. F. Cheatham. Palmer's Brigade: Field's Regiment, First, Sixth, Eighth, Ninth, Sixteenth, Twenty-seventh, Twenty-eighth and Thirty-fourth Tennessee Regiments and Twenty-fourth Tennessee Battalion (consolidated), Lieut.-Col. O. A. Bradshaw; Rice's Regiment, Eleventh, Twelfth, Thirteenth, Twenty-ninth, Forty-seventh, Fiftieth, Fifty-first, Fifty-second and One Hundred and Fifty-fourth Tennessee (consolidated), Lieut.-Col. W. A. Pease (?); Searcy's Regiment, Second, Third, Tenth, Fifteenth, Eighteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-sixth, Thirtieth, Thirty-second, Thirty-seventh and Forty-fifth Tennessee Regiments and Twenty-third Tennessee Battalion (consolidated), Col. A. Searcy; Tillman's Regiment, Fourth, Fifth, Nineteenth, Twenty-fourth, Thirty-first, Thirty-third, Thirty-fifth, Thirty-eighth, and Forty-first Tennessee (consolidated), Col. J. D. Tillman. Gist's Brigade: Forty-sixth Georgia, Capt. A. Miles; Sixty-fifth Georgia and Second and Eighth Georgia Battalions (consolidated), Col. W. G. Foster; Sixteenth and Twenty-fourth South Carolina (consolidated), Maj. B. B. Smith.

Stewart's Army Corps, Lieut.-Gen. A. P. Stewart, commanding.

Loring's Division, Maj.-Gen. W. W. Loring. Featherston's Brigade. First Arkansas; First, Second, Fourth, Ninth and Twenty-fifth Arkansas (consolidated); Third, Thirty-first and Fortieth Mississippi (consolidated); First, Twenty-second and Thirty-third Mississippi and First Battalion (consolidated). Lowry's Brigade: Twelfth Louisiana, Capt. J. A. Dixon; Fifth, Fourteenth and Forty-third Mississippi (consolidated); Sixth, Fifteenth, Twentieth and Twenty-third Mississippi (consolidated). Shelley's Brigade: Sixteenth, Thirty-third and Forty-fifth Alabama (consolidated); Twenty-seventh Alabama; Twenty-seventh, Thirty-fifth, Forty-ninth, Fifty-fifth and Fifty-seventh Alabama (consolidated), Lieut.-Col. Daniel (probably J. W. L. Daniel, of the Fifteenth Alabama).

Anderson's Division, Maj.-Gen. Patton Anderson. Elliott's Brigade: Twenty-second Georgia Artillery Battalion, Maj. M. J. McMullen; Twenty-seventh Georgia Battalion, Maj. A. L. Hartridge; Second South

Carolina Artillery, Maj. F. F. Warley; Manigault's Battalion, Lieut. H. Klatte. Rhett's Brigade: First South Carolina, Maj. T. A. Huguenin; First South Carolina Artillery, Lieut.-Col. J. A. Yates; Lucas' Battalion, Maj. J. J. Lucas.

Walthall's Division, Maj.-Gen. E. C. Walthall. Harrison's Brigade: First Georgia Regulars, Fifth Georgia, Fifth Georgia Reserves, Maj. C. E. McGregor; Thirty-second Georgia, Lieut.-Col. E. H. Bacon, Jr., Forty-seventh Georgia and Bonaud's Battalion (consolidated). Conner's Brigade: Second South Carolina Volunteers, composed of Second and Twentieth South Carolina and Blanchard's Reserves (consolidated); Third South Carolina Volunteers, composed of Third and Eighth Regiments, Third South Carolina Battalion and Blanchard's Reserves (consolidated); Seventh South Carolina Volunteers, composed of Seventh and Fifteenth South Carolina and Blanchard's Reserves (consolidated).

Lee's Army Corps, Lieut.-Gen. S. D. Lee, commanding.

Hill's Division, Maj.-Gen. D. H. Hill. Sharp's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. J. H. Sharp: Fourteenth Alabama, composed of Twenty-fourth, Twenty-eighth and Thirty-fourth Alabama (consolidated), Col. J. C. Carter; Eighth Mississippi Battalion (?), composed of Third Mississippi Battalion, and Fifth, Eighth and Thirty-second Mississippi Regiments (consolidated), Capt. J. Y. Carmack; Ninth Mississippi, composed of Ninth Battalion Mississippi Sharpshooters, and Seventh, Ninth, Tenth, Forty-first and Forty-fourth Mississippi Regiments (consolidated), Col. W. C. Richards; Nineteenth South Carolina, composed of Tenth and Nineteenth South Carolina (consolidated), Maj. James O. Farrell. Brantley's Brigade, Brig.-Gen. W. F. Brantley: Twenty-second Alabama, composed of Twenty-second, Twenty-fifth, Thirty-ninth and Fiftieth Alabama (consolidated), Col. H. T. Toulmin; Thirty-seventh Alabama, composed of Thirty-seventh, Forty-second and Fifty-fourth Alabama (consolidated), Col. J. A. Minter; Twenty-fourth Mississippi, composed of Twenty-fourth, Twenty-seventh, Twenty-ninth, Thirtieth and Thirty-fourth Mississippi (consolidated), Col. R. W. Williamson; Fifty-eighth North Carolina, composed of Fiftieth and Sixtieth North Carolina (consolidated).

Stevenson's Division, Maj.-Gen. C. L. Stevenson. Henderson's Brigade: First Georgia (Confederate) Battalion, composed of First (Confederate) Georgia Regiment, First Battalion Georgia Sharpshooters, Twenty-fifth, Twenty-ninth, Thirtieth and Sixty-sixth Georgia (consolidated), Capt. W. J. Whitsitt; Thirty-ninth Georgia, composed of nine companies of Thirty-fourth Georgia, six companies of Fifty-sixth Georgia and all of Thirty-ninth Georgia, Lieut.-Col. W. P. Milton; Fortieth

Georgia Battalion, composed of Fortieth, Forty-First and Forty-third Georgia (consolidated), Lieut.-Col. W. H. Dunnall; Forty-second Georgia, composed of ten companies of Forty-second Georgia, ten companies of Thirty-sixth Georgia, two companies of Fifty-sixth Georgia and one company of Thirty-fourth and Thirty-sixth Georgia, Lieut.-Col. L. P. Thomas. Pettus' Brigade: Nineteenth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. E. S. Gulley; Twentieth Alabama, Lieut.-Col. J. K. Elliott (belonged to Thirtieth Alabama); Twenty-third Alabama, Maj. J. T. Hester; Fifty-fourth Virginia Battalion, Lieut.-Col. C. H. Lynch.

Stewart's Artillery Corps.

R. B. Rhett's Battalion; Anderson's Battery, Capt. R. W. (?) Anderson; Brook's Battery (probably Terrel Artillery); Le Gardeurs' Battery, Capt. G. Le Gardeur; Parker's Battery, Capt. Ed L. Parker; Stuart's Battery, Capt. H. M. Stuart; Wheaton's Battery, Capt. J. F. Wheaton. Lee's Corps: Kanapaux's Battery, Capt. J. T. Kanapaux.

---

## CHAPTER XVII.\*

TENNESSEE LITERATURE—A CATALOGUE OF THE LEADING LITERARY MEN AND WOMEN OF THE STATE, WITH THE TITLES OF THEIR PRODUCTIONS, AND WITH ANALYTICAL REVIEWS OF STYLES, METHODS AND GENERAL MERITS; TOGETHER WITH A COMPREHENSIVE PRESENTATION OF THE ORIGIN, SUCCESS AND VARIATION OF THE STATE PRESS.

THE activities of the pioneer intellect at the period of the earliest settlement of Tennessee were engrossed in what was of more immediate importance than the writing of history. Prior thereto a glimpse of the people and of the physical geography of the mountainous section of the State may be had in a rare and valuable old book published in London in 1775, "Adair's History of the American Indians." Adair, as an Indian trader, was among the Cherokees of East Tennessee a long time before the French and Indian War, when the fierce and haughty Cherokee warriors ruled the land "untrammelled and alone." A map accompanying the volume calls the Tennessee River the Tanase. The men of action—the heroes who planted the white race in this hot-bed of aboriginal hostility, in the latter part of the eighteenth and the earlier part of the nineteenth century, were too much engrossed by the sword to find much time for the pen.

The list of Tennessee authors found in works devoted to that subject

---

\*Prepared for this work by "Mary Faith Floyd" of Knoxville, and by others.



is not so large as that of other Southern States. It has been said, "The fame of a great man needs time to give it perspective." This is essentially true of authors, and it remains for the future biographer, after time has done its work in giving due perspective to the great minds of our State, to do justice to the merits and works of Tennessee's eminent literary laborers. Among writers historians may well be mentioned first. Judge John Haywood is earliest on the list. The son of a farmer of Halifax County, N. C., he had no opportunity for collegiate education, but learned some Latin and Greek and studied law, beginning with the study of "Reynolds' Reports," thence advancing from particulars to general principles. He became attorney-general of North Carolina in 1794, and soon afterward judge of the superior court of law and equity. In 1800 he returned to legal practice. Judge Haywood removed to Tennessee in 1807, and located seven miles south of Nashville. He was fond of applause; became judge of the Supreme Court of Tennessee in 1816. Mr. Hiram Barry (the oldest printer in the State), who was personally acquainted with Judge Haywood, says, "He was of low stature and very corpulent." He wrote a very difficult hand to read, and Mr. Barry who set the type in the printing of "Haywood's History," was the only printer who could decipher it. Judge Haywood was author of "Natural and Aboriginal History of Tennessee," "History of Tennessee from 1770 to 1795," "The Evidences of Christianity." "Haywood's History" is written in narrative style without rhetorical ornament, and it is not always as clear as the relation of historic events ought to be. It contains a mass of valuable materials relative to early events and it is now a rare book. The mistake is made of locating Fort Loudon on the north side of the Little Tennessee. It was situated on the south side of that stream.\*

Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey was of Scotch descent. His father was a gallant soldier of the Revolutionary war, fighting under Gen. Washington at Valley Forge, Trenton and Princeton. Dr. Ramsey was born in Knox County, six miles east of Knoxville, in 1797, and died in that place in 1884, in his eighty-eighth year. He lies buried at Mecklenburg, four miles east of Knoxville, at the confluence of the Tennessee and French Broad Rivers. He read medicine under Dr. Joseph Strong, was graduated in the University of Pennsylvania, and was a practitioner most of his life. In the late war, being an ardent secessionist, he was compelled to leave the State during Federal occupation in 1863-65. He went to North Carolina and remained there some years. In 1853 he brought out his "Annals of Tennessee," a valuable compend of history up to the close of the eighteenth century. He had the manuscripts of the second volume

---

\*See Aboriginal map accompanying this volume.

ready for the printer, but the family residence, while he was in exile, was burnt, and with it the manuscripts and many valuable papers. Dr. Ramsey ranks high as an author. He was a polished and fluent writer, and possessed a large fund of information on all subjects. "Annals of Tennessee" is a store-house of knowledge to the future historian. It evinces much research and is very accurate and reliable. He was also the author of many elegant addresses, essays and poems. For some years he was president of the Historical Society of Tennessee.

A. Waldo Putnam published in Nashville, in 1859, Putnam's "History of Middle Tennessee, or Life and Times of Gen. James Robertson." It appears from the title page that Mr. Putnam was president of the Tennessee Historical Society. He was born in Belfast, Ohio, in 1799, and was graduated at the University of Ohio. He wrote the sketch of Gen. John Sevier in "Wheeler's History of North Carolina," and a volume entitled "Life and Times of John Sevier." Mr. Putnam married a descendant of Gen. Sevier. The preface to "History of Middle Tennessee" is pleasing and somewhat fanciful. The work is a comprehensive account of the settlement of the Cumberland Valley, and abounds in the incidents and dangers that follow life in the wilderness. In addition to the historical works mentioned is Clayton's "History of Davidson County, Tennessee," an important and valuable work, giving much detailed and statistical information.

"Military Annals of Tennessee" is the title of an octavo volume containing 882 pages of closely printed matter, recently issued under the supervision of Dr. J. Berrien Lindsley. The first part comprises two very brief, generalized accounts of the war in Tennessee, ably written by J. M. Keating, of Memphis, and A. P. Stewart, of Mississippi. The remainder of the volume consists of regimental records so full of mistakes and so manifestly incomplete as to bar the volume from its probable design of representing fully the splendid Confederate history of the State. The preparation of the volume was apparently a financial enterprise.

As early as 1834 Eastin Morris brought out "Tennessee Gazetteer, or Topographical Dictionary" of the State of Tennessee. It is a valuable compendium of the history of the State, from earliest times to 1834, including the constitution of Tennessee framed by the convention of 1834. A second edition of this book was published in Nashville, accompanied by ample foot notes.

Paschall is the author of "Old Times, or Tennessee History," a work for schools. Knowing the love children have for "story-reading," Paschall has arranged historic facts in a most agreeable form. Each chapter, as far as possible, has a beginning and ending, and by this means

each fragment of history becomes a unit and fastens firmly in the mind of the juvenile reader. Mr. Paschall was an old school-teacher, and his excellent little book is the result of long experience in the best methods of enlisting interest in young people for grave study. Another book much valued is "Life as it is, or Matters and Things in General," published in Knoxville in 1844, by J. W. M. Brazeale. This book has many historic facts and comments on the customs of the early settlers of Tennessee. There is a good article on the battle of King's Mountain, and an account of the "Harps," two noted murderers who, without being robbers, went about the county committing atrocious murders, apparently as a pleasure. No doubt, De Quincy-like, they considered murder "one of the fine arts." Brazeale was a native of Roane County, and practiced law in Athens, Tenn.

Mr. Wilkins Tannehill is the author of "History of Literature," "Manual of Freemasonry" and several other works of ability. He was a distinguished light in the Masonic fraternity, and is said to have been a forcible and fluent writer. Clark's "Miscellany of Prose and Poetry" is something in the line of English literature.

"Jack Robinson" is the author of "The Savage," a book of pungent essays, criticising the life and usages of the civilized man, in contrast with those of the aboriginal savage. It purports to be written by "Piomingo, a chief of the Muscogulgee nation," published in Knoxville in 1833. The author was a Tennessean, born probably in Carter County, where he committed a homicide early in life; whence his after life was poisoned by remorse. He is said to have lived a veritable hermit's life, in which existence these essays were written. Robinson is accredited with the authorship of a forcible poem in the same solemn vein as Gray's *Elegy*, but any certain facts of his career seem lost.

Prior to 1804 Willie Blount's "Catechetical Exposition of the Constitution of the State of Tennessee" was published. This is a work for the use of schools written in conversational style. Abijah Fowler of Washington County, in 1838, brought out "Fowler's Arithmetic," a text-book of much popularity in this region at that period. "Biblical Nomenclature or Vocabulary of the Principal Part of the Proper Names Contained in the Bible, with their Signification, together with Scriptural Tables of Money, Weights and Measures, to which is added President Washington's Valedictory Address, Intended for the Use of Schools; by John Wilkinson. Heiskell & Brown, printers, Knoxville, Tenn., 1820." The book is recommended as one "of ability, judgment and care," and persons are urged to patronize it, by Isaac Anderson, John McCampbell, Robert Hardin. August, 1819.



Clerical writers are numerous. One of the most fluent and prolific is Rev. David Rice McAnally, D. D., of the Methodist Church, South; a native of Grainger County, born in 1810, and for some years a resident of Knoxville. He was president of the East Tennessee Female Institute in Knoxville for eight years. He removed to St. Louis in 1851, where he still edits the *St. Louis Christian Advocate*. He is a man of extensive reading and great charity of mind; is remarkable for clearness and vigor of style, and is perfectly fearless in advocating his convictions of right. He does not mince matters, but calls things by their right names and is bold in denouncing vice, while he is liberal and kind to all. His works are "Martha Laurens Ramsey," a biography of a lady of South Carolina; "Life and Times of Rev. William Patton;" "Life and Times of Rev. Samuel Patton, D. D.;" "A Hymn Book;" "A Sunday-school Manual;" "Annals of the Holston Conference."

Rev. J. B. McFerrin, D. D., the head of the Methodist Publishing House at Nashville, is the author of a learned and important work, "History of Methodism in Tennessee," published at Nashville in 1872 in three volumes. He was born in Rutherford County, Tenn., June 15, 1807; entered the ministry at eighteen and has filled many prominent positions in the Methodist Church ever since. His name is identified with the history of the church, and he has shared in its "deliberative assemblies, and pursued his life-work with a concentration of purpose seldom equaled." He ranks as a man of the rarest courage which is stimulated and increased when surrounded by difficulties, and he is never found wanting in any emergency. As an orator he possessed wit, humor, pathos, and his sermons "engage attention, command confidence and awaken conscience."

Among early clerical writers was Rev. Abel Pearson, author of "An Analysis of the Principles of Divine Government," in a series of conversations, and also "Conversations on Some Other Interesting Subjects, Particularly Relating to Same Principals, Between A. P. and N. P.;" and a Dissertation on the Prophecies in Reference to the Rise and Fall of the Beast; The Cleansing of the Sanctuary; The Beginning and Duration of the Millennium, and the Little Season; together with a Calculation Shewing the Exact Time of the Death of Christ; and, also, Calculations Shewing the Precise Time of the Rise and Fall of the Beast and the Beginning of the Millennium, etc.; by Abel Pearson, Minister of the Gospel, Athens, Tenn., 1833." The whole title of the book is given as a specimen of prolixity.

Rev. David Nelson, a man of fine attainments, published "The Cause and Cure of Infidelity." He married in Tennessee and resided in the

State many years. Rev. Robert A. Young, D. D., a native of Knox County, is the author of a book called "Reply to Ariel," written in answer to "Ariel," by J. B. Payne, and of "Personages." Dr. Young resides in Nashville, and is a prominent divine in the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. "Brief Biographical Sketches of Some of the Early Ministers of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church," is the production of Rev. Richard Baird, published in Nashville in 1867. Rev. W. T. Helms, an Episcopal clergyman, a native of Knoxville, Tenn., wrote a poem of twelve books, entitled "Moses Resisted." Two poems, "Smith and Pocahontas," "Centennial Poem," are the work of Rev. Joseph H. Martin, D. D.; Dr. Martin is a native of Dandridge, is a man of fine cultivation, and has written many popular hymns. Rev. Robert Mack, in 1834, published "Kyle Stuart, with other Poems," a remarkable book; and "The Moriad," another poem. Bishop H. N. McTyeire is the author of a little work called "Duties of Christian Masters," published in Nashville in 1859, and "History of Methodism" and "A Catechism of Church Government." He has been a constant writer for the press and was at one time editor of the *St. Louis Christian Advocate*. R. H. Rivers, D. D., wrote two valuable text books, "Mental Philosophy" and "Moral Philosophy." Father Ryan, author of the inimitable wail "The Conquered Banner," was for a long time a resident of Knoxville, and Tennesseans feel proud of his genius, although he is not a native of the State.

Rev. William G. Brownlow, governor of Tennessee, wrote quite a number of books. His first publication was "Helps to the Study of Presbyterianism;" 1834. It is theological and controversial, and contains an autobiographical sketch. In 1844 he published "Life of Henry Clay and Political Register." This was followed by "The Great Iron Wheel Examined." In 1858 appeared "Debate between W. G. Brownlow and Rev. A. Pryne," and in 1862 "Parson Brownlow's Own Book," an account of his maltreatment by the hated secessionists. Mr. Brownlow led a life of incessant activity as editor, politician and preacher. "He was," says a critic, "extreme in all things." In private life he was kind, charitable and helpful; was successively governor of Tennessee and Senator of the United States.

Rev. Frederick A. Ross, D. D., a resident of this State for many years, was the author of "Slavery Ordained by God," published in 1857. Dr. Ross was a most accomplished scholar and a man of genius. He lived to a very great age and was an eminent divine.

Medical writers were Dr. Isaac Wright, author of "Wright's Family Medicine, or System of Domestic Practice," and Dr. John C. Gunn,

author of "Gunn's Domestic Medicine," published in Knoxville in 1830. The essays on the passions in this book were written by a remarkable man named Charles Cassedy. Cassedy was said to be the "Milford Bard" in "Field's Scrap Book." Dr. Thomas A. Anderson wrote the "Practical Monitor, for the Preservation of Health and the Prevention of Disease." He considered blood-letting a cure for all diseases. He was a native of East Tennessee, and was a man of learning.

Authors of works on geology are James M. Safford, A. M., author of "Geology of Tennessee," published by the State at Nashville in 1869. This work was received by scientists and the general public with great favor. Dr. Safford and J. B. Killebrew, brought out a "School Geology of Tennessee," chiefly compiled from the foregoing. J. B. Killebrew published in Nashville a valuable volume entitled "Resources of Tennessee." William G. McAdoo is author of an "Elementary Geology of Tennessee," a briefer and simpler work than the preceding, adapted to less advanced pupils.

Hon. T. A. R. Nelson is author of "East Tennessee," and "Secession," and another very vigorous poem, a satire in the Hudibrastic style, an account of the canvass of the Legislature for the office of United States Senator, entitled "King Caucus." Mr. Nelson was a man of large talent, enriched by varied cultivation. He held many important offices, and was on the defense in the impeachment trial of President Johnson in 1868. He was a native of Roane County, born in 1812, and died of cholera in 1872 being then a judge of the supreme court.

"Life of Capt. William B. Allen," was from the pen of Hon. A. O. P. Nicholson, a very able jurist. A contemporary says, "His writings are characterized by a style so lucid, and argumentation so logical as to entitle him to rank among the masters of model English." "A Tennessean Abroad" is the work of Maj. Randall W. McGavock, in 1856. He was a gallant soldier and fell on the Confederate side. "The World's Wonder," a Masonic exposition, was the work of Johnson and Henderson. Capt. James Williams was author of "Old Line Whig Letters," which appeared in the *Nashville Union*, in 1846. Tennessee claims as one of her sons the distinguished author, Matthew Fontaine Maury. Commodore Maury's works and labors in the cause of science are so well known they need not be mentioned here.

The famous hunter and humorist, Col. David Crockett, is credited with the authorship of several works: "Exploits in Texas," "Tour Down East," "Autobiography," "Sketches and Eccentricities" and "Song Book." It is strange that this self-made and eccentric celebrity, who never had but two months' instruction in reading and writing,



should have produced by the native force of intellect so many readable books. Doubtless the notoriety he acquired by his singular manner and his odd turns of expression aided in the success of his productions.

Hon. Joseph C. Guild was the author of "Old Times in Tennessee." The works of J. R. Graves are "The Desire of all Nations," "The Watchman's Reply," "The Trilemma," "The First Baptist Church in America," "The Little Iron Wheel," "The Bible Doctrine of the Middle Life," "The Great Iron Wheel," "Exposition of Modern Spiritualism," "The New Hymn and Tune Book," "The Little Seraph," "Old Landmarkism; What it is." Mr. Graves is a native of Chester, Vt., born April 10, 1820. His father died when the child was three weeks old. He was converted at the age of fifteen, and made principal of Keysville (Ohio) Academy when nineteen; came to Nashville in 1845, where he taught school, had charge of a church and became the editor of *The Tennessee Baptist*, and still continues in that position.

"Woodville" is a novel of East Tennessee life, published in Knoxville. Many of the characters are supposed to have been taken from real life, and some of the scenes are laid at Montvale Springs. Mr. Todd, a theological student at Maryville many years ago, is said to be the author. Abram Caruthers wrote a text-book entitled "History of a Lawsuit." Dr. P. O. Fitzgerald is the author of "Life of Dr. T. O. Summers," "Glimpses of Truth" and "Centenary Cameos." He is a native of North Carolina.

Rev. W. P. Harrison, editor of the *Southern Methodist Review*, has published "Theophilus Walton," a reply to "Theodosia Ernest," 1858. "Lights and Shadows of Fifty Years," published under the nom de plume Henry Hartwell, in 1883. (This is a book of short sketches from real life.) "The Living Christ," 1884; "The High Churchman Disarmed," in 1886. Mr. Harrison has been connected with the Methodist Publishing House since 1882, and in that time has edited over 100 books.

"Biographical Sketches" of Tennessee Baptists, by Rev. Joseph H. Borum was published in 1880. It is a very flattering account of Baptist ministers, both past and present, who have labored in Tennessee, and is written in the form of sketches. Dr. A. H. Redford wrote "History of Methodism in Kentucky," "Western Cavaliers," "Fred Brennam," "Russell Morton," "A Preacher's Wife." The last three are religious novels.

Rev. Philip Lindsley, D. D., was born in New Jersey, in 1786; became a preacher in the Presbyterian Church and rose to such eminence that, in 1834, he was chosen unanimously moderator of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church of the United States, then holding its sessions at Philadelphia. He occupied distinguished positions, many of

them thrust upon him without solicitation. In 1825 he was inaugurated president of Dickenson College, Nashville, Tenn. The name of this institution was changed the next year to the University of Nashville. He was among the very foremost men of his day in the work of higher education. He was much esteemed by the public as a man of great genius, and his work in the educational department was nobly executed and productive of beneficial results. His publications were chiefly in the form of addresses on education. They were published in three large volumes, with a memoir, by Le Roy J. Halsey, D. D.

Samuel D. Baldwin is the author of "Armageddon, or the Overthrow of Romanism and Monarchy," and "Life of Mrs. Sarah Norton." Thomas O. Summers, D. D., editor of *Nashville Christian Advocate*, is author of a number of works: "Baptism," "Golden Censer," "Holiness," "Refutation of Payne," "Seasons, Months and Days," "Sunday-school Teacher," "Sunday-school Speaker," "Talks Pleasant and Profitable," "Scripture Catechism."

W. M. Baskerville, professor of English language and literature in Vanderbilt University, published first a piece of Anglo-Saxon prose for his doctor's degree at the University of Leipsic. This was followed by an "Anglo-Saxon Poem" in 1885. Mr. Baskerville then brought out a joint work with Prof. James A. Harrison, an "Anglo-Saxon Dictionary," also published in 1885. Mr. Baskerville was born in Fayette County, Tenn., April 1, 1850. After attending several prominent institutions of learning in the United States he went to the University of Leipsic, where he received the degree of Ph. D.

"Early Times in Middle Tennessee," by John Carr, was published in 1857. The preface is written by Dr. J. B. McFerrin. The book contains a series of sketches on the history of Middle Tennessee, which were first published in the *Nashville Christian Advocate*. Much of the book is given to early religious history, and it contains biographies of pioneer preachers and one of the author.

"Life and Times of Elder Reuben Ross," an interesting and well written book, by James Ross, with an introduction and notes by J. M. Pendleton, was published 1882. Elder Ross was born in North Carolina, in 1776. He came to Tennessee in 1807, after having been ordained to the ministry, and for fifty years was a noted preacher. The history of his life covers one of the most important periods in the religious history of the State.

J. H. Brunner, D. D., president of Hiwassee College, has published "Sunday Evening Talks" and "The Union of the Churches." The Rev. O. P. Fitzgerald, editor of the *Nashville Christian Advocate*, is the

author of "California Sketches," two volumes; "Christian Growth" and "The Class Meeting." "The Sunday-school and its Methods" is a volume published at Nashville, 1883, by Rev. James A. Lyons, a native of Knoxville, Tenn., a minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. George W. Harris, author of "Sut Lovingood's Yarns," a humorous book, was born in Knoxville, Tenn. His book had a wide popularity, especially among young readers.

Legal writers are Hon. William F. Cooper, author of "Cooper's Chancery Reports," reported and edited by himself; Wesley J. Hicks, author of "Hicks' Manual;" William C. Kain, author of "Tennessee Justice and Legal Adviser," and Henry S. Foote, author of "Foote's Bench and Bar of the Southwest."

"A Review of Uncle Tom's Cabin, or an Essay on Slavery," is the work of A. Woodward, M. D., published in Cincinnati in 1853. Dr. Woodward lived in Knoxville for many years where he practiced his profession, and has left a large family. His little book is very creditable, and the views on Southern customs and the estimate of character are just and impartial. "Old Times in West Tennessee," published in Memphis, 1873, and copyrighted by Joseph S. Williams in the same year, is a book by "A Descendant of One of the First Settlers."

The most prominent of the female authors of Tennessee is Miss Mary N. Murfree, whose pseudonym is Charles Egbert Craddock. Miss Murfree is a native of Murfreesboro, Tenn. Loss of property induced her father, who is a prominent lawyer, to live on the old Dickenson plantation. It was the isolated life there that led the young girl to reflection and introspection, and developed her keen observation of nature's mysteries, which plumed her pen for its exquisite descriptions of scenery. Miss Murfree touches the very core of nature and reveals all her hidden lore, presenting it to the reader in gorgeous coloring. Many visits to the mountains of East Tennessee made her familiar with the customs and dialect of the mountaineers. This practical knowledge, added to the wealth of imagination she possesses, formed the conjunction necessary to perfect the genius. All the prominent journals of the country accord the very highest praise to Miss Murfree. She is said to be the "most powerful and original of the 'southern school' of romanticists." Says the *Boston Traveller*: "Here is the positive, brilliant, glowing genius that has cut its own channel and made its own place." Her productions are "In the Tennessee Mountains," "Down the Ravine," "The Prophet of the Great Smoky Mountains" and many other contributions to periodicals; also "Where the Battle was Fought." The publication of her first work entitled her, justly, to the front rank among novelists, and her merit



is acknowledged by all lovers of the beautiful, who look on her productions as a new voice of delight in the world of fiction.

Mrs. L. Virginia French was by birth a Virginian. At an early age she was sent by her father to her maternal grandmother in Washington, Penn., where she was educated. In 1848, having finished her education, she became a teacher in Memphis. Her maiden *nom de plume* was *L'Inconnue*. She published, in 1856, "Wind Whispers," a book of fugitive poems; "Legends of the South," in verse; "Iztalixco, the Lady of Tala," a tragedy in five acts, the scene laid in Mexico; "My Roses," a novel of Southern life in 1872. In 1879, "Darlingtonia," a novel, ran as a serial in the *Detroit Free Press*. She occupied the position of editor to many prominent literary journals of the South. She is best known as a poet. Her verse is full of tone and imagination, and her drama has been compared to "Ion" and "The Lady of Lyons." She led a life of excessive literary activity and usefulness. She died at McMinnville, March 31, 1881. Since her death her sister, Mrs. Lide Meriweather, also an authoress, has published a volume of poems entitled "One or Two," the joint work of these gifted sisters. Mrs. Meriweather resided in Memphis for many years, and at that time published two books, "Soundings" and "Souls for Sale." "Soundings," a prose work, was written with the noble endeavor to elevate and restore to honest effort those who, by one false step, are tossed by custom into the bitter gulf of degradation, without one hope of repentance or of restoration to a more upright career, to which some might attain if the hand-grasp of pitying women was held out to them. Mrs. Meriweather is also a poet of ability. "October" is a handsome specimen of suggestive style.

Mrs. Annie Chambers Ketchum was born in Kentucky, and removed to Memphis after her marriage. While there, she became the editor of the *Lotos*, a literary magazine. In 1856 she brought out a novel, "Nelly Bracken" which was favorably received; "Rilla Motto," a romance written for the *Lotos* in 1860; "Lotos Flowers," a volume of miscellaneous poems. "Benny," a Christmas ballad which appeared in the *Home Journal*, attracted much attention. Besides literary ability and rare nobility of nature, Mrs. Ketchum is gifted with beauty, fine conversational powers and a voice of great compass and sweetness. Her teacher, Prof. Wright Merrick, says: "In the classics, in the sciences, she is equally at home; in modern languages, music and drawing she excels as well. I have never known her peer." She has traveled in Europe recently, and is still actively engaged in literary work.

Mrs. Adelia C. Graves, *nee* Spencer, wife of Z. C. Graves, president at that time of Kingsville Academy, and founder of Mary Sharpe Col-

lege, Winchester, Tenn., is an authoress. She was for some time professor of Latin and *belles-lettres* and afterward matron and professor of rhetoric in the Winchester College. She has written many fugitive poems and two prose tales, "Ruined Lives," published in the *Southern Repository*, Memphis, and a drama, "Jephtha's Daughter." She had also a work on "Woman; her Education, Aims, Sphere, Influence and Destiny."

Mrs. Mary E. Pope, Memphis, for some time principal of a flourishing school for young ladies, is the authoress of fugitive poems; one entitled "The Gift of Song." Martha W. Brown, who wrote under the pseudonym of Estelle, resided in Memphis. She contributed numerous poems to *The Southern Literary Messenger*; "Thou Art Growing Old, Mother," is said to be the very essence of the poetry of the heart.

Mrs. Amanda Bright was born in Alabama and removed early in life to Fayetteville, Tenn. Her eldest son was killed at the battle of Seven Pines. Soon thereafter her second and only remaining child died. In her great sorrow she wrote a book, hoping to realize a sufficient sum to erect a monument to her sons' memory. "The Three Bernices, or Ansermo of the Crag" was the outcome of this design, published in 1869. Mrs. Bright has vivid imagination, richness and exuberance of style, and she paints nature with the rare and delicate touches of a true artist. She wrote other stories, "The Prince of Seir" among them.

Miss Annie E. Law, long a resident of Tennessee, is of English birth and now lives in California. She is a woman of great force of will, strong intellect and unflinching courage. She gave valuable aid in the war to the Confederates, to whose cause she was a devoted adherent. She was tried as a spy at Knoxville in the war. She is authoress of many poems, one of the best being "Memories." Miss Law is also a learned conchologist, and has made many valuable contributions to that science.

In 1867 Miss Zoda G. Smith published from the Southern Methodist Publishing House at Nashville, under the *nom de plume* of "Elloie," a small volume of poems. Her verse is said to contain nothing morbid or insipid, but to elevate the heart, broken by earthly trials, into the purer atmosphere and brighter skies of heaven. Mrs. Bettie Meriwether, a great apostle of temperance, wrote a fine novel of much power, entitled "The Master of Redleaf," which was favorably received. She is a resident of Memphis. "A Memoir of Hugh Lawson White," judge of the Supreme Court of Tennessee, and United States Senator, with selections from his speeches and correspondence, was published in 1856, by his granddaughter, Miss Nancy N. Scott. Mrs. Emma M. Blake, *nee* Rutledge, native of Nashville, and was educated there. She married Mr.

Daniel Blake, an Englishman, a resident of Charleston, S. C. A volume of her poems was printed by her friends after her death, as a memorial of her, entitled "Reliquiæ." Mrs. W. G. McAdoo is the author of two novels, "The Nereid" and "Eagle-Bend," the scenes laid in East Tennessee, and a number of serial stories. Mrs. Annie S. Gilchrist, of Nashville, is authoress of two novels of considerable merit, "Rosehurst" and "Harcourt," both published in Nashville.

Mrs. Jane Tandy Chinn Cross was a native of Kentucky, but published her books in Nashville. She was twice married, and died in 1870. While on a European tour, she corresponded with *The Nashville Christian Advocate*. She began writing for publication in 1851. Wrote a book of four volumes for children, and "Duncan Adair, or Captured in Escaping" and "Azile, A Story," Nashville, 1868. "Azile" is a very interesting story, the scene of the first part laid in Dresden, and changing to the Southern States at the outbreak of the war. Her style is polished, sprightly and lucid. Her portraiture of life in the South is graphic, and there are some fine art touches on German customs and amusements. Mrs. Whitson, resident of Murfreesboro, has published general biographical works. The most important is a book of sketches of the last General Assembly, which contains very flattering accounts of its members.

#### JOURNALISM.\*

The first paper brought out in Tennessee was *The Knoxville Gazette*, which was published at Rogersville, November 5, 1791, by Mr. George Roulstone. *The Gazette* was a three-column paper of no great merit, and of little interest to the general reader; yet as the pioneer paper of the new region, it created quite an excitement among the rough settlers. It is supposed that Indian troubles prevented Mr. Roulstone from establishing his paper at once in Knoxville. Although this town was laid out in 1792, many people regarded it as a myth, and the editor of *The Gazette* may have shared this belief. He, however, removed his paper after the issuance of a few numbers at Rogersville, and continued to publish it in Knoxville until his death, in 1804. Roulstone was printer to the Territorial and State Legislatures, and published Willie Blount's "Catachetical Exposition of the Constitution of the State of Tennessee." He was public printer at the time of his death, and his wife was elected two successive terms to fill his place. She was Miss Gilliam, of Nashville, and has left many descendants in Middle Tennessee.

Knoxville's second paper was *The Knoxville Register*, a weekly issue founded by G. Roulstone in 1798. *The Register* was in existence about

\*Much of the fact contained in the above sketch on the subject of journalism was kindly furnished by Col. Moses White.



two years when its editors G. Roulstone and John Rivington Parrington, published another paper called *The Genius of Liberty*, a small paper not so large as either of the former, and by no means so sprightly in tone. This made Knoxville the mistress of three weeklies, a fine exhibition for a little frontier town in its babyhood. In 1804 George Wilson edited a paper known as *Wilson's Gazette*, a much larger paper than its predecessors. It had five columns and ruled lines while the earlier issues had three columns and no lines. This paper continued until 1818 when Wilson removed to Nashville and published *The Nashville Gazette*, a paper devoted to "Old Hickory's" service.

*The Knoxville Register*, "the one that became an institution of Knoxville," was established by F. S. Heiskill and Hu. Brown in August, 1816. Maj. Heiskill came to Knoxville, in 1814, where he served "as journeyman printer on *Wilson's Gazette*, then the only paper published in East Tennessee." He was a man of limited opportunities but strong native capacities and managed the political department of *The Register* with much ability. Hu. Brown was an accomplished scholar and fluent writer, and he conducted the miscellaneous and literary parts of the paper with skill and success. In the bitter party strife which rent the country in the presidential campaign of Gen. Jackson and John Q. Adams *The Register* entered with vigor and enthusiasm, and bore a prominent part in that political storm. It also supported Judge Hugh L. White for President in 1836. Between 1836 and 1839 *The Register* changed owners and editors several times, as well as names. Its existence continued, with many vicissitudes, until after 1863, when it succumbed to the exigencies of the war. Up to 1859 *The Register* had been a Whig paper. In that year it became a strong Democratic sheet.

Another paper, *The Enquirer*, began in Knoxville in 1823. Like other journals of this region it went through many changes of owners and editors. At one time Mr. Hiram Barry was its owner and publisher with J. J. Meredith as editor. Mr. Barry is a resident of Knoxville and the oldest printer in the State, he having come to that place in 1816. He is still an active citizen who can tell many interesting incidents of early affairs in Tennessee. As Knoxville grew other papers had their rise. The Hon. John R. Nelson, a distinguished lawyer, issued two papers, *The Republican* in 1831 and *Uncle Sam* in 1834. *The Post* was first brought out in Knoxville, in 1841, by Capt. James Williams. It was afterward removed to Athens and still continues there as *The Athens Post*, edited by Mr. Samuel P. Ivins. *The Argus* appeared in 1838. It was changed to *Standard* in 1844, and continued, with some changes, to 1855.

*The Plebeian* began as a Democratic weekly in 1850, and in 1851 was known as *The Daily Morning Plebeian*. This was the first daily ever published in Knoxville. Other minor papers flourished from 1853 to 1857; and in 1858 Mr. John Mitchel, the Irish patriot, and Mr. W. G. Swan, of Knoxville, established an ultra pro-slavery paper called *The Southern Citizen*. Mr. Mitchel was a man of liberal education, polite address and keen wit, added to much boldness and independence of character. Says a critic, "*The Southern Citizen* was conducted with ability, arrogance and intolerance seldom equaled."

The war journals of Knoxville were *The East Tennessean*, published by the Hon. John Baxter, as principal, in February, 1862, and *The Southern Chronicle*. *The East Tennessean* was devoted to the support of the Confederate States in their war for independence. It had but one issue. *The Southern Chronicle* fell in 1863, on Federal occupation. Rogersville, in 1816, had a newspaper called *The Rogersville Gazette*, and in 1850, *The Rogersville Times* was a lively and enterprising journal. Other towns in East Tennessee were not behind in publishing papers. Greenville had, in 1822, an eight-paged paper entitled *The American Economist and Weekly Political Recorder*, followed by *The Miscellany* and *The Greenville Spy*, which continued until the war.

The first paper ever published southwest of Knoxville, was *The Valley Farmer*, in Washington, Rhea County. This was removed subsequently to Athens, under the name of *Athens Gazette*. In 1833 J. W. M. Brazeale, the author of "Life as it is," edited *The Tennessee Journal* at this place. As early as 1838, New Market had a paper; and in 1832, Jonesboro issued a Whig paper, called *The Washington Republican and Farmers' Journal*, edited by Judge Emerson, of the supreme court, and *The Sentinel* by Dr. Thomas Anderson, author of a medical work on diseases peculiar to East Tennessee. W. G. Brownlow edited his well known *Whig* at that time in Jonesboro, and between the two papers a political and personal feud raged with unabated fury for a long period.

Chattanooga, then known as Ross's Landing, had a paper called *The Hamilton Gazette* as early as 1838. The name was changed afterward to *The Chattanooga Gazette*. This paper passed through some vicissitudes until 1864, when it became a daily issue. *Elizabethton Republican and Manufacturers' Advocate* was the first paper published in Elizabethton. This was succeeded by *Brownlow's Tennessee Whig*, begun at this place in 1839. *The Whig* was bold, intense, incisive, and continued one year, when it was removed to Jonesboro, and subsequently to Knoxville. In 1849 *Brownlow's Knoxville Whig* sent out its first issue and continued until suspended October 16, 1861, and revived November 11, 1863. In

1869 Brownlow dissolved connection with this paper and resumed editorship in 1875, at which time the paper bore the new name of *Daily Chronicle and Weekly Whig and Chronicle*. The motto of the *Whig*, "Cry aloud and spare not," gave full insight into the spirit of the paper. The *Whig* bore, at one time, the title *Independent Journal, and Brownlow's Knoxville Whig and Rebel Ventilator*. No paper ever had a wider circulation. It is said to have had a circulation of 10,000 in 1855. The *Knoxville Chronicle* was established in 1870, by Mr. William Rule, the present able editor of *The Journal*. Cleveland, Maryville, Madisonville, Kingston and Jasper had weekly papers from an early date. Besides these there were two literary journals published in the University of Tennessee, and a temperance organ existed for a short while in 1854, in Knoxville, published by Mr. Joe Lewis and J. A. Rayl.

Two papers deserve mention—*The Railroad Advocate* of Rogersville, in 1831, devoted to collecting all available information about the resources of this favored region, so as to arouse the people to the need of an outlet for the immense agricultural and mineral wealth of the State. Since then the riches have been developed beyond all expectation. The other was a veritable abolition paper, called *The Genius of Universal Emancipation*. This was published at Greeneville in 1821 by Benjamin Lundy, a native of New Jersey, of Quaker parentage, and showed that at the South existed the spark of what afterward proved to be one of the fiercest fires of fanaticism that ever swept over a nation. The paper advocated emancipation, and proposed several curious plans for effecting the liberation of slaves. A few religious papers finish the list of papers in East Tennessee.

Journalism began in Nashville in 1797, when a paper was published called *The Tennessee Gazette and Mero District Advertiser*, by a Kentucky printer named Henkle. In a year this paper was sold and the name changed to *The Clarion*. An issue of the date of 1801 is preserved by the State Historical Society. Its ragged condition shows its age. "It is a folio sheet, with pages 10x14 inches, and four columns to the page, printed in pica type." *The Clarion* was enlarged under the name of *Clarion and Tennessee Gazette*, and other changes of heading until December, 1821, when it resumed the name of *The Clarion*. "The price of subscription varied from \$2 to \$3 in advance, or \$3 to \$4, payable after six months." In 1824 *The Clarion* was discontinued, and its owners, Abram P. Maury and Carey A. Harris, brought out *The Nashville Republican*. Bradford, the long-time printer of *The Clarion*, issued from that office, in 1808, Bradford's *Tennessee Almanac*. *The Impartial Review and Cumberland Repository* appeared in the latter part of



1805. A number is in preservation bearing date February 1, 1806, in which is announced the death of Charles Dickenson, who fell in a duel fought with Gen. Jackson. *The Museum*, begun by Mr. G. Bradford, was a literary monthly, published in 1809, and existed for six months. It contained much valuable political and historical information, and was circulated at the low price of \$2 per year.

Rev. David Lowry published the first Cumberland Presbyterian organ in the United States. It bore the name of *The Religious and Literary Intelligencer*. It was a weekly brought out in 1830 and existed nearly two years. Following this was *The Nashville Herald*, in 1831, owned by Mr. W. Tannehill. This paper was of brief continuance. Next came a weekly literary paper in 1833 of quarto form, named *The Kaleidoscope*. Its tone was lofty and its influence elevating, but unfortunately its duration was short. *The Commercial Transcript*, a small commercial sheet, came out in 1835; and after two years it became *The Banner and Whig*. An "Association of Gentlemen" published in the years 1835-36 a Presbyterian paper named *The American Presbyterian*, which was not sustained. *The Cumberland Magazine*, a quarterly, was edited by the Rev. James Smith. This man was a Scotch Presbyterian, and wrote a history in defense of that church; a very able work. *The Revivalist*, a weekly, began in 1837, and changed to *The Cumberland Presbyterian*, but only a few numbers were issued. *Tennessee Baptist* of the First Baptist Church in Nashville, a monthly, existed from 1835 to 1837, when it changed owners and became a semi-monthly. *The Old Baptist Banner*, 1838, was published by the Rev. Washington Lowe. It was a monthly paper. *The Christian Review*, a monthly magazine, was the Campbellite organ, published between the years 1844-46. In 1840 *The Tennessee State Agriculturist* began and continued to 1846. A valuable law journal, called *The Southwestern Law Journal and Reporter*, was published in 1844 and edited by William Cameron and John T. S. Fall. E. Z. C. Judson and A. H. Kidd edited, in 1844, *The Southwestern Literary Journal and Monthly Review*. *The Baptist*, second paper of that name, a weekly, was published by C. K. Winston, J. H. Shepherd and J. H. Marshall January, 1844-47. *The Daily Orthopolitan* was edited by Mr. Wilkins Tannehill. This was a daily which began in 1845 and continued one year. *The Christian Record*, under the dominion of the Presbyterian Synod, began in 1846 and continued under changes until 1850, when it was removed to Kentucky.

A monthly, called *The Naturalist*, was issued in 1846 for one year, and was devoted to education and literature. *The Quarterly Review of the Methodist Episcopal Church South* began in 1846, in Louisville,

Ky. In 1851 it was removed to Richmond, Va., and to Nashville in 1858. Dr. T. O. Summers was the able editor of this periodical. *The Tennessee Farmer and Horticulturist*, a monthly, was edited by Charles Foster, in 1846. A temperance paper, *The Tennessee Organ*, was established in 1847, by Rev. John P. Campbell. After passing through several hands it was disposed of to Dr. R. Thompson, and Gen. William G. Brien, an eloquent speaker and scholar of much ability, who conducted it until it was discontinued in 1854. *The Southern Ladies' Companion*, a Methodist monthly, was successfully managed, and had a large circulation. It was edited by Mr. Henkle and Dr. J. B. McFerrin. *The Tennessee Baptist*, edited by Rev. Dr. Howell, and *The Portfolio*, a Freemason monthly, edited by Mr. W. Tannehill in 1847, were ably conducted. *The Christian Magazine*, edited in 1848 by Rev. Jesse B. Ferguson and J. K. Howard, and *The Western Boatman*, by Anson Nelson, *The Evening Reporter* in 1849-50, and *The Nashville Times* in 1849, were other publications of that period. *The Naturalist*, *The Southern Agriculturist*, *The Nashville Journal of Medicine and Surgery* and *The Southwestern Monthly*, went through brief life in Nashville in 1849-52. *The Ladies' Pearl*, a monthly, was edited between 1852-56 by Rev. W. S. Langdon and J. C. Provine, and afterward by Mrs. Langdon. *The Nashville Evening News* existed in 1851-53. *The Southern Medical Journal of Medical and Physical Sciences*, a bi-monthly was published 1853-57. *The Banner of Peace*, a Cumberland Presbyterian paper, continued from 1840 to the recent war. *The Parlor Visitor*, in 1854, a Baptist organ, edited by Dr. W. P. Jones; *The Gospel Advocate*, a weekly in the same year, edited by Elder Tolbert Fanning and Prof. William Lipscomb, and *The Southern Baptist Review* in 1855, were well conducted papers. *The Home Circle*, Rev. L. D. Houston, editor, and *The Sunday-School Visitor*, with Dr. T. O. Summers, editor, were other religious issues of 1855. Two agricultural papers, *The Farmer's Banner* and *The Agriculturist and Commercial Journal* appeared in 1855 and lasted a short time. *The Fountain* was a sprightly temperance paper in 1855, and *The Tennessee Farmer and Mechanic* lasted about one year.

*The Nashville Daily News* began in 1857, and discontinued in 1860. *The Baptist Family Visitor*, and *Harper's Theatrical Bulletin* issued a few numbers in 1857. *The Legislative Union and American* was said to be an important State organ between 1857 and 1859. *The Daily Christian Advocate*, a Methodist paper, and *The Christian Unionist*, another religious paper, existed a short while. Other papers, many of them religious, were *The Southern Magazine of Temperance*, *Young's Spirit of the South and Central American*, *The Nashville Monthly Record of*

*Medical and Physical Sciences, Southern Homestead*, whose literary department was edited by Mrs. L. Virginia French, and *The Baptist Standard* came out between 1858 and 1860. *The Temperance Monthly*, edited by Mrs. Emelie C. S. Chilton, a poet of high order, and *The Daily Evening Bulletin* were papers of 1859. *The Opposition* was a campaign paper in the struggle for governor between Col. John Netherland and Gov. Isham G. Harris. *The National Pathfinder* was edited by T. F. Hughes, Esq., in 1860. *The Nashville Christian Advocate* began in 1834. It was edited successively by many prominent divines. *The Louisville (Ky.) Christian Advocate* was merged in this paper in 1851. In 1858 Rev. Dr. McFerrin, who had been editor, resigned, and was succeeded by Rev. H. N. McTyeire. Dr. McFerrin was appointed agent of the Methodist Episcopal Publishing House at that time. *The Nashville True Whig* began in 1845, and was succeeded in 1856 by *The Nashville Patriot*.

*The Nashville Gazette*, the second paper of that name, was published in 1819 by Mr. George Wilson, the same who had conducted *Wilson's Knoxville Gazette* in 1804. *The Nashville Whig*, established by Moses and Joseph Norvell, began in 1812 and continued to 1816. *The Nashville Banner*, a weekly, existed between 1822 and 1826. It was then united with *The Whig*, under the name of *Nashville Banner and Whig*, a semi-weekly. It was not until 1831 that Nashville had a daily paper. This was *The National Banner and Nashville Advertiser*. This continued until 1834, when it was found that daily papers did not pay in Nashville, and it became a tri-weekly. *The Nashville Republican* grew out of the materials of the old *Clarion and Tennessee Gazette* in 1824. After some changes it became a daily issue in 1837.

*The Republican Banner* was begun in 1837, enlarged in 1839, and in 1842 Gen. F. K. Zollicoffer, who had learned the printer's trade in Mr. F. S. Heiskell's office at Knoxville, assumed the editorship. Gen. Zollicoffer earned a reputation as an able political writer, and kept up *The Banner* to the highest standard of newspaper excellence. *The Banner* had many editors who were men of distinguished merit and position. *The Nashville Gazette*, third paper of that name, was in existence from 1844 to 1862. About this time *The Republican Banner* was established, and continued to 1853, when it was united with *The American* under the title of *Nashville Union and American*. In 1848 was established *The Daily Centre-State American* and *Nashville Weekly American*. *The Nashville Union and American* began in 1853, and grew out of the consolidation of *The Union* and *The American*. *The Union* had been edited by Col. J. G. Harris, who was an editorial pupil of George D. Pren-



tice. Col. Harris had earned distinction as a political writer, and was an adherent of Gen. Andrew Jackson. Mr. John Miller McKee was commercial and city editor of *The Union and American* in 1858, and in 1860 Mr. John C. Burch became associate editor. Mr. Leon Trousdale was also one of the editors of this paper. *The Nashville Union and American* was suspended on the evacuation of Nashville by the Confederates in 1862.

Nashville, at the outbreak of the Rebellion, was considered the publishing center of the South, having more periodicals than any other city of her size. She had no less than nineteen journals and nine large publishing houses. At the fall of Fort Donelson, in 1862, the general panic induced every man to seek his own safety. Printing offices were abandoned by members of the press, their public position rendering them peculiarly obnoxious to the enemy. Many printers were without employment, and in the absence of better occupation engaged in what proved a lucrative business, that of selling newspapers. There were several war publications. The first made its appearance in February, 1862, under the name of *The Nashville Times*. This suspended after the issue of the thirteenth number. Six numbers of the *Evening Bulletin* followed. *The Nashville Daily Union* began in 1862 and had a short existence. Other papers were *The Nashville Dispatch*, April, 1862. *The Constitution*, with George Baber as editor, appeared in July, 1862, and *The Nashville Daily Press* began in May, 1863. It continued, with frequent change of editors, to May, 1865, when it was united with the *Times and Union*. Mr. S. C. Mercer edited in 1864 *The Nashville Times and True Union*. It was afterward merged with the *Press*, and bore the title of *Nashville Daily Press and Times*. A paper named *The Nashville Daily Journal* existed for a short time in 1863. Mr. L. C. Houk was editor.

After the war the publication of *The Union and American*, as a daily, tri-weekly and weekly, continued to the latter part of 1866, when it became, by consolidation with *The Dispatch*, *The Union and Dispatch*. In 1868 the paper was combined with *The Daily Gazette*, and resumed the name of *Union and American*. In 1875 *The Union and American* was consolidated with *The Republican Banner*, and became *The American*, a daily, semi-weekly and weekly issue. *The Tennessee Staats-Zeitung* is a German paper, and is said to be the only daily paper of that kind outside of New Orleans. Mr. John Ruhm edited the paper in 1866, when it was first issued. He has since become a prominent lawyer in Nashville. The Methodist Episcopal Publishing House has quite a number of journalistic publications, and does a large book business.



*FROM PHOTO BY TRUSS, KOELLEIN & GIER, NASHVILLE*

ANDREW JOHNSON





The colored people of Nashville are represented by some creditable newspapers, showing much enlightenment and progress on their part. Besides journalistic and periodical influence, Nashville is prominent for almanacs. This useful form of literature was begun in 1807, when *Bradford's Tennessee Almanac* appeared. *The Cumberland Almanac* for 1827 followed, and has had a regular publication since.

The first published Memphis paper was *The Memphis Advocate and Western District Intelligencer*, the first issue appearing January 13, 1827. It was a weekly publication, by Parron & Phœbus. *The Times* was established soon after, and later the two were consolidated and entitled *The Times and Advocate*. P. G. Gaines and Mr. Murray founded *The Memphis Gazette* in 1831, and it continued until 1837 or 1838. F. S. Lathan, publisher of *The Randolph Recorder*, established in 1836 a weekly paper known as *The Memphis Enquirer*, with Mr. J. H. McMahon, editor. The paper continued with many changes of owners and editors until 1850, when it united with *The Eagle*, and was published as *The Eagle and Enquirer* for ten years. *The Eagle* was established by T. S. Latham in January, 1842. Dr. Solon Borland began the publication of *The Western World and Memphis Banner of the Constitution*, a weekly, in 1839. The first number of *The Memphis Appeal*, edited by Henry Van Pelt, appeared April 21, 1841. It has changed proprietors several times since his death, and is still published as a daily and weekly. *Memphis Monitor*, which was founded by John C. Morrill in 1846, was merged into *The Appeal* soon after. Several other newspapers of a transitory nature were in existence between 1846 and 1860. Among these were *The Whig Commercial* and *Evening Herald*. *The Memphis Bulletin*, established in 1855, was published until 1867, when it was merged into *The Avalanche*. The latter was founded by M. C. Gallaway in 1858, and with the exception of three years during the war, has since been published both as a daily and as a weekly. There were several papers published in the war, among which were *The Public Ledger*, *Argus* and *Commercial*. The last two were united in 1866 or 1867. In addition to newspapers a number of periodicals have been published. The following is a list of the publications in 1884: Dailies—*Appeal*, *Avalanche*, *Public Ledger* and *Scimeter*. Each also publishes weekly editions. Weeklies and monthlies—*Living Way*, *Mississippi Valley Medical Monthly*, *Review*, *Southern Post Journal* (German), *Tennessee Baptist* and *Watchman*, a colored Baptist paper.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

RELIGIOUS HISTORY—THE RELATION BETWEEN RELIGION AND THE CONSTITUTION AND THE LAWS—THE GRADUAL DEVELOPMENT OF ECCLESIASTICAL TOLERATION—THE SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE—THE EARLIEST MINISTRATIONS IN TENNESSEE—THE METHODS OF THE CIRCUIT RIDERS, AND THE PHENOMENAL RESULTS—AN ANALYSIS OF THE CAUSES OF THE "JERKS" AND THE "POWER"—A SUMMARY OF THE CREEDS OF THE PRINCIPAL SECTARIAN ORGANIZATIONS—AN ACCOUNT OF THE ORIGIN, GROWTH AND SUCCESS OF THE VARIOUS CHURCHES—FAMOUS REVIVALS AND ILLUSTRATIVE ANECDOTES—THE IMPORTANCE OF THE ESTABLISHMENT OF CAMP MEETINGS—THE CONTROVERSIES OF THE CHURCHES UPON THE QUESTION OF SLAVERY—THE INTEREST TAKEN IN SUNDAY-SCHOOL WORK—THE RELIGIOUS STATUS OF THE COLORED RACE—BUILDINGS, FINANCES, PUBLICATIONS, CONVENTIONS, ETC.

THE progress a people has made, so far as intelligence and tolerance of opinion are concerned, is with tolerable accuracy ascertainable by a careful study of their constitution and laws. When the people of a State adopt an original or an amended constitution, that constitution may be taken as an expression of their sentiments, opinions or convictions as to what is essential to the welfare of the community. The same remark is applicable to the laws passed by that body endowed with the power of enactment. It is true that a constitution may be adopted by a mere majority of the voters; the minority may be more or less earnestly opposed to it; the minority may be in fact more intelligent than the majority, may gradually come to be the majority and may then amend the constitution under which they have lived in such manner that it shall conform to their sentiments, opinions and convictions. This new constitution in the particulars in which it has been amended indicates the change in the opinions of the people; it may be progression, it may be retrogression, but the old and amended constitutions when compared serve to mark the degrees on the scale of progress. Individuals may be, and sometimes are, centuries in advance of their contemporaries. Lord Bacon who died in 1626, said: "Divisions in religion are less dangerous than violent measures of prevention. The wound is not dangerous unless poisoned with remedies. Inquiry is not to be feared. Controversy is the wind by which the truth is winnowed."

Where the mind is free religion never has dangerous enemies. Atheism is the mistake of the metaphysician, not of human nature. Infidelity gains the victory when it wrestles with hypocrisy or superstition, not when its antagonist is reason. When an ecclesiastical establishment

requires universal conformity some consciences must necessarily be wronged and oppressed. In such cases, if the wrong be successful, the servitude is followed by consequences analogous to those which ensue on the civil enslavement of the people. The mind is burdened by a sense of injury; the judgment is confused, and in its zeal to throw off an intolerable tyranny, passion attempts to sweep away every form of religion. Bigotry commits the correlative error when it attempts to control opinion by positive statutes; to substitute the terrors of law for convincing argument. It is a gigantic crime from the commission of which in the past the world is still suffering, to enslave the human mind under the earnest desire or under the specious pretext of protecting religion. Religion of itself, pure and undefiled, never had an enemy. It has enemies only when coupled with bigotry, superstition and intolerance, and then only because it is so enveloped in these as to be indistinguishable from them. While their power and their tyranny have for centuries been employed to strengthen and defend religion, they have ever been, and are to-day, though in a far less degree than formerly, the worst enemy that religion has. The history of the world conclusively proves that positive enactments against irreligion, or prohibiting the denial of the truths of religion as they are conceived to be, provoke and cause the very evil they were designed to prevent. For to deny the truths of the propositions or dogmas of any form of religion is a right inherent in every man, for the exercise of which he is responsible to none but to himself and his Creator. Besides there are always those who have a desire for martyrdom, being unable in any other way to achieve distinction, and because to be a martyr evinces courage and excites sympathy, and there are always more people capable of extending sympathy to the persecuted and oppressed than there are of those capable of rendering an accurate judgment upon the question for which the martyr chooses to be impaled.

While such principles as these seem now to be generally admitted, yet at the time of the formation of the constitutions of most of the original thirteen States, the most intelligent of the people, law-makers, ministers and others, notwithstanding the fact that the Pilgrims abandoned England and sought the unknown and inhospitable shores of America for the sole purpose of finding an asylum in which they could themselves exercise and enjoy the sweets of religious freedom, and notwithstanding the fact that the Catholic colony of Maryland under Lord Baltimore, had found it expedient to extend to Protestants the religious liberty which they claimed for themselves, entertained and succeeded in having engrafted into most of those constitutions provisions embodying and enforcing sentiments similar to those expressed by the rugged and uncom-



promising Dudley, who was not softened even by old age, and many others of the leading religious thinkers of colonial times. Said Dudley: "God forbid our love of truth should thus grow cold—that we should tolerate error. I die no libertine."

"Let men of God, in courts and churches watch,  
All such as toleration hatch,  
Lest that ill egg bring forth a cockatrice,  
To poison all with heresy and vice;  
If men be left and otherwise combine,  
My epitaph's "I died no libertine."

Cotton affirmed that it is "better to tolerate hypocrites and tares, than thorns and briars;" thus recognizing the great principle that hypocrisy is one of the grave evils of intolerance. Ward's opinion was that "polypiety is the greatest impiety in the world. To say that man ought to have liberty of conscience is impious ignorance." Norton said: "Religion admits of no eccentric motions."

In consonance with these sentiments and the spirit which they indicate, Massachusetts adopted a constitution under which a particular form of worship was made a part of the civil establishment, and irreligion was punished as a civil offense. Treason against the civil government was treason against Christ, and reciprocally blasphemy was the highest offense in the catalogue of crimes. To deny that any book of the Old or New Testament was the infallible word of God was punishable by fine or by whipping, and in case of obstinacy by exile or by death. Absence from the "ministry of the Word" was punished by a fine. "The State was the model of Christ's kingdom on earth." Gradually the spirit of the established religion smothered nearly every form of independence and liberty. The creation of a national, uncompromising church led the Congregationalists of Massachusetts to the indulgence of passions which, exercised upon them by their English persecutors, had driven them across the sea, and thus was the Archbishop of Canterbury justified by the men he had wronged. Massachusetts, after a vain attempt to silence the Quakers, made a vain attempt to banish them. She was as strongly set against what appeared to her as ruinous heresy as a healthy city is against the plague. The second general court of Massachusetts, which met May 18, 1631, is chiefly remarkable for the adoption of the theocratic basis on which for fifty years the government of the State continued to rest. No man was thereafter recognized as a citizen and a voter who was not a member of some one of the colonial churches, and in order to obtain admission to one of them it was necessary to make an orthodox confession of faith, live conformably to Puritan decorum, and add to this a satisfactory religious experience, of which the substantial

part was an internal assurance of a change of heart and a lively sense of justification as one of God's elect.\* In 1649 it was deemed necessary to support the fundamental doctrines of the theocracy by civil penalties. "Albeit faith is not wrought by the sword, but by the Word, nevertheless seeing that blasphemy of the true God can not be excused by any ignorance or infirmity of human nature, no person in this jurisdiction, whether Christian or pagan, shall wittingly or willingly presume to blaspheme His holy name, either by willfully and obstinately denying the true God, or His creation and government of the world, or shall curse God, or reproach the holy religion of God, as if it were but an ingenious device to keep ignorant men in awe, nor shall utter any other eminent kind of blasphemy of like nature or degree under penalty of death."

Such was the nature of the relation in Massachusetts between Church and State. Every person was taxed for the support of the church in the same manner as he was to support the government, but was permitted to say to which individual church his money should be paid. And such laws disgraced the pages of the statutes of that State to a later date than were those of any other State similarly disfigured. On April 1, 1834, a bill was enacted into a law containing the following provisions:

No person shall hereafter become or be made a member of any parish or religious society so as to be liable to be taxed therein for the support of public worship, or for other parish charges without his express consent for that purpose first had and obtained.

No citizen shall be assessed or liable to pay any tax for the support of public worship or parish charges to any parish or religious society whatever other than that of which he is a member.

In 1649 sixteen acts were forwarded to Maryland to which the governor was to obtain the assent of the Assembly. One of these was entitled "An Act of Toleration." The first four sections of this celebrated act comprised but little of the tolerant spirit, as may be seen by a perusal of their provisions: "All who shall blaspheme God, that is, curse Him, or who shall deny our Saviour Jesus Christ to be the Son of God, or shall deny the Holy Trinity, the Father, Son and Holy Ghost, or the Godhead of any of the said three persons of the Trinity, or the unity of the Godhead, or shall use or utter any reproachful speeches against the Holy Trinity, shall suffer death with forfeiture of lands and goods." Strange as it may seem, this death penalty for this offense darkened the statutes of Maryland for 200 years. No one was permitted under the law to utter any reproachful words or speeches concerning the Virgin Mary or the holy apostles or evangelists without suffering the penalty of a fine, and banishment for the third offense. No one was permitted to reproachfully call any one "heretic, schismatic, idolator, Puritan, Pres-

---

\*Hildreth.

byterian," etc., without being compelled to submit to suitable punishment. "Liberty of conscience" was, however, provided for in the following words: "That the enforcing the conscience in matters of religion hath frequently fallen out to be of dangerous consequences in those commonwealths where it hath been practiced, and therefore for the more quiet and peaceful government of the province, and the better to preserve mutual love and unity, no person professing the religion of Jesus Christ shall be molested or discountenanced on account of his religion, nor interrupted in the free exercise thereof." It is clear, however, from a study of the history of the colony of Maryland that whatever liberty of conscience was here provided for to those who "believed the religion of Jesus Christ" was adopted for the sake of policy, for the reason that an exclusively Roman Catholic colony would not have been for a moment tolerated by the mother country, then under the domination of the Church of England.

The same idea is embodied in the Declaration of Rights prefixed to the constitution of 1776 in the following language: "All persons professing the Christian religion, are equally entitled to protection in their religious liberty," and while this declaration expressed the opinion that "no person ought to be compelled to frequent or maintain or contribute, unless on contract to maintain any particular place of worship, or particular ministry, yet," it said, "the Legislature may in their discretion lay a general and equal tax for the support of the Christian religion." Later this was all changed and liberty of conscience granted in the following words: "That, as it is the duty of every man to worship God in such manner as he thinks most acceptable to Him, all persons are equally entitled to protection in their religious liberty."

Chapter III of the laws of Virginia passed in 1661, provided that "no minister be admitted to officiate in this country but such as shall produce to the Governour a testimonial, that he hath received his ordination from some bishop in England, and shall then subscribe to be conformable to the orders and constitutions of the Church of England," etc. Chapter V provided that the liturgy of the Church of England should be read every Sunday, and no minister nor reader was permitted to teach any other catechism than that by the canons appointed and inserted in the book of common prayer, that no minister should expound any other than that, to the end "that our fundamentals at least be well laid," and that no reader upon presumption of his own abilities should attempt to expound that or any other catechism or the Scriptures. Chapter VI, of the laws of 1705, provided for the punishment of "atheism, deism or infidelity" as follows: "If any



person or persons brought up in the Christian religion shall by writing, printing, teaching or advisedly speaking, deny the being of a God, or the Holy Trinity, or shall deny the Christian religion to be true, or the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments to be of divine authority, and shall be thereof legally convicted upon indictment or information in a general court of this, Her Majesty's colony and dominion, such person or persons for this offense shall be incapable or disabled in law to all intents and purposes whatever to hold and enjoy any office or employment, ecclesiastical, civil or military, or any part of them or any profit or advantage to them appertaining or any of them." For the second offense "he, she or they shall from thenceforth be disabled to sue, prosecute, plead or use any action or information in any court of law or equity, or to be guardian to any child, or to be executor or administrator of any person, or capable of any deed or gift or legacy, or to bear any office, civil or military, within this, Her Majesty's colony or dominion, and shall also suffer from the time of such conviction three years' imprisonment without bail or mainprise."

A remarkable change in the attitude of Christianity toward infidelity occurred between this time and the adoption of the constitution of 1776. Section 16 of the Bill of Rights prefixed to this constitution reads as follows: "That religion, or the duty which we owe to our Creator, and the manner of discharging it, can be directed only by reason and conviction, not by force or violence; and, therefore, all men are entitled to the free exercise of religion, according to the dictates of conscience; and that it is the mutual duty of all to practice Christian forbearance, love and charity toward each other." This section has been incorporated into all the succeeding constitutions of Virginia, and still remains the embodiment of the sentiment of the people of that State as to religious toleration.

The celebrated "fundamental constitutions of Carolina," drawn up by John Locke, author of the "Essay on the Human Understanding," provides in Article XCV that "No man shall be permitted to be a free-man of Carolina, or to have any estate or habitation within it, that doth not acknowledge a God, and that God is publicly and solemnly to be worshiped." But when the constitution of North Carolina came to be adopted the sentiment of the people with reference to religious liberty found expression in the following language: "That all men have a natural and unalienable right to worship Almighty God according to the dictates of their own consciences." But "That no person who shall deny the being of God, or the truth of the Protestant religion, or the Divine authority either of the Old or New Testaments, or who shall hold relig-

ious principles incompatible with the freedom and safety of the State, shall be capable of holding any office or place of trust or profit in the civil department of this State."

By a careful comparison of these various *excerpta* from the colonial and State constitutions and laws, the general reader will have but little difficulty in forming a tolerably correct conception of the progress made in public opinion as to the proper attitude to be assumed toward religion by the State, during the century or two previous to the adoption of the first constitution of Tennessee. Neither will he be less gratified than surprised to find that very little of the spirit of intolerance can be found crystalized into the provisions of that venerable instrument. And his impartial judgment may be unable to conclude that it would have been better for the interests of the State if what little of intolerance that is included had been omitted. With reference to the religious liberty of the individual, Section 3 of the Declaration of Rights is sufficiently explicit: "All men have a natural and indefeasable right to worship Almighty God according to the dictates of their own consciences; that no man can of right be made to attend, erect or support any place of worship, or to maintain any minister against his consent; that no human authority can, in any case whatever, control or interfere with the rights of conscience, and that no preference shall ever be given by law to any religious establishment or mode of worship." This provision, as well as those relating to religious tests to office-holders, is in all the constitutions that have been adopted in Tennessee, in 1796, 1834 and in 1870, and stands as an admirable safeguard to the most cherished, if not the most valuable, of all kinds of freedom.

The little intolerance that the constitution contains applies only to office-holders, and is in the following words in the Declaration of Rights: "Section 4. That no religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under this State;" and is as follows in the constitution: "Article IX, Section 2. No person who denies the being of a God, or a future state of rewards and punishments, shall hold any office in the civil department of this State." The hypercritic might discover a slight contradiction in these two provisions, but perhaps the most able political philosopher would fail should he attempt to prove that evil has resulted to the body politic from its existence in the fundamental law of the State.

The special laws of North Carolina that were in operation in this Territory previous to the operation of the State constitution were simply those which granted some special privilege to certain sects afflicted with conscientious scruples regarding the taking of an oath, as the United

Brethren, Mennonites, Quakers, Dunkers, etc. In 1784 the Legislature of North Carolina passed an act by which the Quakers were permitted to "solemnly declare or affirm," instead of "to swear," and the same act provided that "it shall be lawful for the people called Quakers to wear their hats as well within the several courts of judicature in this State as elsewhere, unless otherwise ordered by the court." Thus it will be seen that under the constitution and laws in operation both before and after the adoption of the constitution, all the various opinions concerning religion, those unfavorable as well as favorable toward it were tolerated, and it will be seen also as this narrative proceeds that all kinds of opinions upon religious subjects not only were tolerated but found a home in this State, and still here abide.

It is generally admitted, perhaps nowhere seriously denied, that war is among the greatest demoralizers of the world, and the early settlement of this State was so nearly contemporaneous with the war of the Revolution, and war with various Indian tribes was so constantly present with the early settlers, that it is but reasonable to expect that an impartial inquiry into their condition must find that many of them were frequently in anything but a religious state of mind, and even where they were thus disposed, religious instruction and worship were neglected from the necessity of the case, and even forms of religion imperfectly maintained. Vice and immorality have always followed in the wake of armies, as also, though to a less degree, in that of the excitement attendant upon political faction. But when the excitement of war subsides and that of politics is not intense, the superabundant energies of the people naturally turn to the excitement of religious discussion and debate. When the morals and the minds of a community are in this impressionable condition it may be truthfully said that the harvest is indeed ready for the sickle, but in this early time the reapers were few; and the field is equally inviting to the circuit rider, missionary or preacher who labors for fame as to him who sincerely and earnestly labors for the salvation of souls. Happily, however, for the gratification of the lover of his State, the preachers of the latter class were far more numerous than those of the former in those early times.

One of the first to arrive within the limits of the State was the Rev. Charles Cummings, a Presbyterian minister, who preached regularly to a congregation in the Holston Valley not far from Abingdon, Va., as early as 1772. It was the custom of Mr. Cummings on Sunday morning to dress himself neatly, put on his shot pouch, shoulder his rifle, mount his horse and ride to church, where he would meet his congregation, each man with his rifle in his hand. Entering the church he would walk



gravely through the crowd, ascend his pulpit, and after depositing his rifle in one corner of it, so as to be ready for any emergency, commence the solemn services of the day. Indians were not scarce in those days, and frontier congregations consisted of armed men surrounded by their families. Also in the eastern part of the State in 1779 a Baptist preacher named Tidence Lane organized a congregation, a house of worship was built on Buffalo Ridge, and the Rev. Samuel Doak was preaching about this time in Washington and Sullivan Counties. When the little army under Campbell, Shelby and Sevier, was preparing to march to King's Mountain, a solemn and appropriate prayer for Divine protection and guidance was offered up by a clergyman whose name does not seem to have been preserved. In 1783 the Rev. Jeremiah Lambert was appointed to the Holston Circuit, and at the end of his year reported seventy-six members. In 1784 Rev. Henry Willis succeeded Mr. Lambert, but, although his services were valuable he did not increase the membership. In 1785 he was elder in the district embracing Holston, while Richard Swift and Michael Gilbert were on the circuit. The Presbyterians also made an early start in East Tennessee. Many of them were Scotch-Irish, and though doubtless of equal piety with the Methodist brethren, yet there was naturally an antagonism between the two sects on account of the incompatibility of the doctrines taught. In 1788, while tumult and discord were impending between North Carolina and the State of Franklin, the opportune arrival of the venerable Bishop Asbury, of the Methodist Episcopal Church, a man of quiet dignity, unpretending simplicity and exemplary piety, served to calm and soothe the excited masses.

A little before this visit of Bishop Asbury in East Tennessee, ministers began to arrive in what was then called Western Tennessee, now Middle Tennessee. In 1786 Rev. Benjamin Ogden was the first Methodist Episcopal minister to arrive on the Cumberland. After laboring one year he reported sixty members, four of them colored persons. In 1788 the Revs. Mr. Combs and Barnabas McHenry, both faithful and laborious men, came to the settlement. In 1789 the Rev. Francis Paythress was presiding elder, and Revs. Thomas Williamson and Joshua Hartley had charge of the local societies. Besides these there were the Revs. James Haw, Peter Mussie, Wilson Lee and O'Cull. In 1791 a church was organized by Elias Fort and other pioneer Baptists, in the neighborhood of Port Royal, known in history as the "Red River Baptist Church." At first, for want of a "meeting-house," meetings were held alternately at the houses of different members; but at length a rude meeting-house was erected on the left bank of Red River, from which stream the church received its name. During the next three or four

years there arrived in the Cumberland settlements the Revs. Stephen Brooks, Henry Burchett, Jacob Lurtin, Aquilla Suggs, John Ball, William Burke, Gwynn and Crane. These were all itinerant preachers, and all labored faithfully to warn the people to flee from the wrath to come. They were all Methodists, some of them coming before and some after the Baptists in Robertson and Montgomery Counties. Samuel Mason and Samuel Hollis, the first local preachers that were brought up in this country, commenced preaching in 1789 or 1790. The Rev. Thomas B. Craighead, a Presbyterian divine, preached to a congregation at Spring Hill, about six miles east of Nashville, and the Rev. William McGee, another Presbyterian, preached at Shiloh, near Gallatin, in Sumner County. Between 1795 and 1800 the Methodist Episcopal Church was represented by Rev. John Page, Rev. Thomas Wilkinson, Rev. John McGee and Rev. John Cobler. Besides these there were the Revs. James McGready, Hodge and Rankin, of the Presbyterian Church, and the Revs. William McKendree, John Sall and Benjamin Larkin, of the Methodist Episcopal Church. The Rev. Barton W. Stone, a Presbyterian, and, like Rev. Mr. McGready, from Kentucky, was also, like him, quite conspicuous in the work of the great revival which commenced in Southern Kentucky and Northern Tennessee, in 1799. Most of the preachers above mentioned were men of burning zeal and of a natural and boisterous eloquence; and hence to their sensitive and sympathetic hearers their preaching was of a novel and attractive kind. Their fame extended to far distant neighborhoods, and drew together, whenever a meeting was announced, thousands of curious, interested and earnest listeners. In 1789 or 1790 the Methodists erected a stone meeting-house in Nashville, between the public square and the river. In 1796 an act of Legislature authorized the town of Nashville to deed to five persons a lot of ground extending twenty feet in all directions from the building, except toward the river, in which direction it extended presumably to the river. In October, 1797, an act was passed establishing the "Stone Meeting-House," and reducing the size of the lot to fifteen feet, instead of twenty.

It was not long after ministers began to preach in this western country before discussions and controversies regarding Christian doctrines began to claim a large share of their, and the people's attention. The Presbyterians and Baptists, in those days, were generally very rigid Calvinists, while the Methodists were mostly Arminians. Calvinism is succinctly as follows: It is based upon the idea that the will of God is supreme. The human race, corrupted radically in the fall of Adam, has upon it the guilt and impotence of original sin; its redemption can only

be achieved through an incarnation and propitiation; of this redemption only electing grace can make the soul a participant, and the grace once given is never lost; this election can only come from God, and it only includes a part of the race, the rest being left to perdition; election and perdition are both predestinate in the Divine plan; that plan is a decree eternal and unchangeable; justification is by faith alone, and faith is the gift of God.

Arminianism may be briefly set forth as follows: 1. God, by an eternal and immutable decree, before the foundation of the world, determined to save in Christ, through Christ and for Christ, those who should believe in Christ. 2. Christ died for all, but no one will enjoy remission of sin except the believer. 3. Man must be born again and renewed in Christ by the Holy Spirit. 4. God's grace is the beginning, increase and perfection of everything good. 5. Man may fall from grace. (?)

For several years previous to the ushering in of the present century, these irreconcilable opinions—which after all in both systems are only opinions—clashed upon and with each other. Issues were joined; animated debates and acrimonious controversies were frequent, upon doctrinal points, none of which were or are demonstrably true. For this reason the animation manifested in the discussions, the earnestness in the appeals, often from the same platform or pulpit, to the unbeliever to accept the truth, by preachers who contradicted each other as to what was the truth, and the fact that acrimony was so often present in the controversy, all tended to prove that demonstration was not attainable; for where the truth of a proposition in philosophy, ethics, political economy or theology, no less than in physics and mathematics, is demonstrable, even though it be only to the most enlightened reason, controversy with reference thereto must necessarily cease ere long, and the bitterness with the controversy.

But there is another way of eliminating bitterness from controversy besides that of arriving at a demonstration, and that is to eliminate the controversy. This was practically exemplified in the great revival, which took place in the opening years of the nineteenth century, the cause, phenomena and results of which it is now the purpose of this sketch to trace. This great revival was of itself a wonderful phenomenon, worthy the most careful study of the religious philosopher. It was the natural result of a reaction from a very low ebb of religion and morality, the lowest ebb they have reached in this country. The war of the Revolution left the nation impoverished and prostrate. The influence of the French Revolution and of French infidelity were powerfully felt even among the more intelligent portions of the American people. But the



masses soon awakened to a sense of their condition, and flocked in great numbers to hear the gospel preached by such earnest, powerful and eloquent men as have been named above. No building then erected could accommodate the crowds that concentrated from all parts of the adjacent country, to distances of from ten to twenty, thirty and even fifty miles, hence the camp-meeting became a necessity of the times.

In 1799 a sacramental meeting was held in the old Red River Baptist Church, near Port Royal, which, considering the sparsely settled condition of the country, was quite largely attended. Elders McGready, Hodge and Rankin, of the Presbyterian Church, and Elder John McGee, of the Methodist Episcopal Church were present. After a remarkably powerful address by Elder Hodge, concerning the effect of which upon the congregation writers differ—some saying that the members of the congregation remained through its delivery silent and quiet; others, that their emotions were uncontrollable and that they gave vent to them in loud cries—Elder McGee arose, expressed his conviction that a greater than he was preaching, exhorted the people to let the Lord God Omnipotent reign in their hearts, and broke into the following song:

“Come Holy Spirit, Heavenly Dove,  
With all thy quickening powers,  
Kindle a flame of sacred love  
In these cold hearts of ours.”

Having sang thus far two aged ladies, Mrs. Pacely and Mrs. Clark, commenced tremendously vociferating sentiments of praise and thanksgiving to the Most High for His grace in providing redemption for a fallen world. For some time the preacher attempted to continue his singing, but the venerable ladies vociferated louder than before; others of the congregation united their voices with theirs in praise; the minister descending from the pulpit passed along the aisles vehemently shouting and exhorting; the clamor and confusion increased tenfold; screams for mercy were mingled with shouts of joy; a universal and powerful agitation pervaded the multitude; suddenly individuals began to fall prostrate to the floor as if dead, where they lay for some time unconscious and unable to rise. The Presbyterian elders were so surprised and even astonished at this confusion in the house of the Lord that they made their way outside and quietly queried among themselves “what is to be done?” Elder Hodge concluded that nothing could be done. If it were the work of Satan it could not last; if it were the work of God efforts to control or check the confusion would be vain. He thought it was of God, and decided to join in ascribing glory to God’s name. All three therefore re-entered the house and found nearly the entire congregation upon the floor. Soon two or more at a time began to rise, shouting

praise for the evidence felt for sins forgiven, for redeeming grace and undying love. The excitement was so intense that the ministers found their strength taxed to the utmost to supply the demands of the congregation. From thirty to forty professed to have been converted that day. Such was the beginning of the religious movement which on account of the strange bodily agitations attending upon, it was looked upon as the most wonderful event of the times.

The next meeting was held on the following Saturday and Sunday at the Beach Meeting-house, ten miles west of Gallatin, Sumner County, where was present a vast assembly and where were witnessed scenes similar to those above described.\* On the Sunday following this meeting a most wonderful meeting was held at Muddy River Church, a few miles north of Russellville, Ky. To this meeting the people came in in all kinds of vehicles, on horseback and on foot, from all distances up to 100 miles. Long before the hour for preaching came there were present three times as many as the house could seat, and still they came singly, and in companies of tens, fifties and hundreds. A temporary pulpit was erected in the woods, and seats for the multitude made by felling large trees and laying them on the ground. "Preaching commenced, and soon the presence of the all-pervading power was felt throughout the vast assembly. As night came on it was apparent the crowd did not intend to disperse. \* \* \* Some took wagons and hurried to bring in straw from barns and treading-yards. Some fell to sewing the wagon sheets together, and others to cutting forks and poles on which to spread them. Counterpanes, coverlets and sheets were also fastened together to make tents or camps. Others were dispatched to town and to the nearest houses to collect bacon, meal, flour, with cooking utensils to prepare food for the multitude. In a few hours it was a sight to see how much was gathered together for the encampment. Fires were made, cooking begun, and by dark candles were lighted and fixed to a hundred trees; and here was the first and perhaps the most beautiful camp-ground the world has ever seen."†

The Rev. Barton W. Stone, a Presbyterian clergyman, pastor of Cane Ridge and Concord congregations in Bourbon County, Ky., hearing of the religious excitement in the southern part of his own State and in Northern Tennessee, started early in the spring of 1801 to attend one of the camp-meetings in Logan County, Ky. Afterward he wrote a book describing what he had seen, and as no one has given a more minute description of

\*The meeting held at Red River Baptist Church is said to have been held in 1799, and this at the Beach Meeting-house in 1800. If this be correct the times of holding these two meetings are pretty accurately determined.

†Smith's Legends of the War of the Revolution.

the bodily agitations, otherwise known as "the jerks" or "epidemic epilepsy," the following extracts from his work are here introduced:

"On arriving I found the multitude assembled on the edge of a prairie, where they continued encamped many successive days and nights, during all which time worship was being conducted in some parts of the encampment. The scene to me was passing strange. It baffles description. Many, very many, fell down as men slain in battle, and continued for hours together in a comparatively breathless and motionless state, sometimes, for a few moments, reviving and exhibiting symptoms of life by a deep groan or piercing shriek, or by a prayer for mercy most fervently uttered. After lying thus for hours they obtained deliverance. The gloomy cloud that had covered their faces seemed gradually and visibly to disappear, and hope in smiles to brighten into joy. They would then arise shouting deliverance, and address the surrounding multitude in language truly eloquent and impressive. With astonishment did I hear women and children declaring the wonderful works of God and the glorious mysteries of the gospel. Their appeals were solemn, heart-rending, bold and free. Under such addresses many others would fall down in the same state from which the speakers had just been delivered.

"Two or three of my particular acquaintances from a distance were struck down. I sat patiently by one of them (whom I knew to be a careless sinner) for hours, and observed with critical attention everything that passed from beginning to end. I noticed the momentary revivings as from death, the humble confession, the fervent prayer and ultimate deliverance; then the solemn thanks and praise to God, the affectionate exhortation to companions and to the people around to repent and come to Jesus. I was astonished at the knowledge of the gospel truth displayed in these exhortations. The effect was that several sank down into the appearance of death. After attending to many such cases my conviction was complete that it was a good work, nor has my mind wavered since on the subject.

"The bodily agitations or exercises attending the excitement \* \* \*

\* were various and called by various names, as the falling exercise, the jerks, the dancing exercise, the barking exercise, the laughing and singing exercises, and so on. The falling exercise was very common among all classes, saints and sinners of every age and grade from the philosopher to the clown. The subject of this exercise would generally, with a piercing scream, fall like a log on the floor or earth and appear as dead. The jerks cannot be so easily described. Sometimes the subject of the jerks would be affected in one member of the body and sometimes in the whole system. When the head alone was affected it would jerk



backward and forward, or from side to side so quickly that the features could not be distinguished, when the whole person was affected. I have seen a person stand in one place and jerk backward and forward in quick succession, the head nearly touching the floor behind and before. All classes, saints as well as sinners, the strong as well as the weak, were thus affected. They could not account for it, but some have told me these were among the happiest moments of their lives.

"The dancing exercise generally began with the jerks and was peculiar to professors of religion. The subject after jerking awhile began to dance and then the jerks would cease. Such dancing was indeed heavenly to the spectators. There was nothing in it like levity, nor calculated to excite levity in the beholder. The smile of heaven shone on the countenance of the subject and assimilated to angels appeared the whole person. The barking exercise, as opposers contemptuously called it, was nothing but the jerks. A person afflicted with the jerks, especially in the head, would often make a grunt or bark from the suddenness of the jerk. This name of barking seems to have had its origin from an old Presbyterian preacher of East Tennessee. He had gone into the woods for private devotion and was seized with the jerks. Standing near a sapling he caught hold of it to prevent his falling, and as his head jerked back he gave a grunt, or a kind of noise similar to a bark, his face turned upward. Some wag discovered him in this position and reported that he had found the old preacher barking up a tree.

"The laughing exercise was frequent, confined solely to the religious. It was a loud, hearty laughter but it excited laughter in none that saw it. The subject appeared rapturously solemn, and his laughter excited solemnity in saints and sinners. It was truly indescribable. The running exercise was nothing more than that persons feeling something of these bodily agitations, through fear, attempted to run away and thus escape from them; but it commonly happened that they ran not far before they fell, where they became so agitated that they could not proceed any further. The singing exercise is more unaccountable than anything else I ever saw. The subject, in a very happy state of mind, would sing most melodiously, not from the mouth or nose, but entirely in the breast, the sound issuing thence. Such noise silenced everything and attracted the attention of all. It was most heavenly; none could ever be tired of hearing it."

Elder Stone has been described as a man of respectable bearing, of spotless character and childlike simplicity, and easily attracted to the strange and marvelous. The above extract would seem amply to justify the description, and also that his judgment was somewhat under the do-

minion of his imagination. Like Elder Hodge he evidently believed that the "jerks" were the work of God. He said that Dr. J. P. Campbell and himself "concluded it to be something beyond anything we had ever known in nature." Other writers besides Elder Stone have given descriptions of the jerks. The celebrated Peter Cartwright says:

"Just in the midst of our controversies on the subject of the powerful exercises among the people under preaching, a new exercise broke out among us, called the jerks, which was overwhelming in its effects upon the people. No matter whether they were saints or sinners they would be taken under a warm song or sermon and seized with a convulsive jerking all over, which they could not by any possibility avoid; the more they resisted the more they jerked. If they would not strive against it and would pray in good earnest the jerking would usually abate. I have seen more than 500 persons jerking at one time in my large congregations. Most usually persons taken with the jerks, to obtain relief, as they said, would rise up and dance. Some would run but could not get away. Some would resist; on such the jerks were very severe. To see these proud young gentlemen and young ladies dressed in silks, jewelry and prunella, from top to toe, take the jerks, would often excite my risibilities. The first jerk or so you would see their fine bonnets, caps and combs fly, and so sudden would be the jerking of the head that their long, loose hair would crack almost as loud as a waggoner's whip."

Besides other amusing experiences with the jerks, Peter Cartwright relates an account of a very different nature of a man who was jerked to death, which is probably the only case on record. A company of drunken rowdies attended a camp-meeting on what was called the Ridge. The jerks were very prevalent. The leader of the rowdies was a very large, drinking man, who cursed the jerks and all religion. Shortly afterward he himself took the jerks and started to run, but jerked so powerfully that he could not get away. Halting among some saplings he took a bottle of whisky out of his pocket and swore he would drink the — jerks to death, but he jerked so violently he could not get the bottle to his mouth. At length, on account of a sudden jerk, his bottle struck a sapling, was broken and his whisky spilled upon the ground. A great crowd gathered around him, and when he lost his whisky he became very much enraged and cursed and swore very profanely. At length he fetched a very violent jerk, snapped his neck, fell and soon expired.

Peter Cartwright looked upon the jerks as a judgment sent from God to bring sinners to repentance, and to show to professors of religion that God could work "with or without means, and over and above means, to the glory of His grace and the salvation of the world." Lorenzo Dow

has also left his account of the jerks. He preached in Knoxville, Tenn., in 1805, when about 150 of his congregation were affected with the jerks. He says: "I have seen all denominations of religion exercised with the jerks, gentleman and lady, black and white, young and old without exception. I have passed a meeting-house where I observed the undergrowth had been cut for camp-meeting, and from fifty to a hundred saplings were left, breast high, on purpose for the people to hold on by. I observed where they held on they had kicked up the earth as a horse stamping flies. I believe it does not effect those naturalists who try to get it to philosophize upon, and rarely those who are the most pious, but the lukewarm, lazy professor and the wicked are subject to it." His opinion was that the jerking was "entirely involuntary and not to be accounted for on any known principle."

It has been stated above that the first manifestations of this strange phenomenon were witnessed at the old Red River Baptist Church. Some authorities, however, say that they first appeared at a sacramental meeting in East Tennessee, where several hundreds of both sexes were seized with this strange affection. The numbers that were affected at different sacramental and camp-meetings were various. At Cabin Creek, May, 1801, so many fell that on the third night, to prevent their being trampled upon, they were collected together and laid out in order, in two squares of the meeting-house, covering the floor like so many corpses. At Paint Creek, 200 fell, at Pleasant Point, 300, and at Cane Ridge, in August, 1801, as many as 3,000 are computed to have fallen.

This great revival lasted through the years 1800, 1801, 1802 and 1803, and resulted in the conversion of many thousands of people, though probably no very accurate estimate of the number was ever made. Perhaps its most prominent peculiarity was that it was a spontaneous outburst of religious emotion among the masses. There was no great revival preacher like Wesley or Whitefield; there were no protracted meetings, at which by a long-continued and united effort, a revival was gradually brought about; but the camp-meetings were the result of the revival, which in an unusual manner came upon both preacher and people. Another characteristic of the revival was this: doctrinal and dogmatical discussions were dispensed with. Their value seems to have been for the time being entirely overlooked. The efforts for the ministers were chiefly, if not wholly devoted to the excitation of the emotions, to impressing upon the minds of the multitudes the great religious truth of the impossibility of escape from punishment for sin, except through repentance and the acceptance of Christ as the Savior of the world; hence, the people labored under a powerful conviction of the necessity of reformation



in their daily lives, which is always of infinitely greater importance than the doctrine of the decrees. The doctrines that were uttered were mainly those of Arminians and Pelagius rather than those of Calvin; doctrines which appeal more directly to the heart and the common intellect than those that were temporarily neglected. When the great excitement had died away, however, the discussion of doctrines was again renewed, to some of the features of which especially, such as were results of the revival itself, we shall refer after giving an explanation of the probable cause or causes of the jerks. These bodily agitations, which within the State of Tennessee were, strange as it may at first appear, confined almost exclusively to the Methodists and Presbyterians, although they were experienced to some extent by the Baptists. But to the Presbyterians belong the credit of first putting a check to and largely diminishing this wild extravagance. A minister of this denomination at a great camp-meeting at Paris, Ky., in 1803, arose, and in the strongest language denounced what he saw as extravagant and even monstrous, and immediately afterward, a part of the people under his leadership, took decided ground against the jerks. From that moment the wonderful movement began sensibly to decline.

Many good people of those times together with the leading divines, as has been seen above, unaccustomed as they were then to referring effects to natural causes, and supposing the church, as compared with the rest of the world, to be under the special care of Divine Providence, considered these bodily agitations to be manifestations of Divine power, looked upon them as miracles attesting the truth of religion as those on the day of Pentecost. Others believed them to be the result of the machinations of Satan, and designed by him to discredit religion generally, and camp-meetings and revivals in particular, which he feared would convert the world and destroy his power. But it does not necessarily follow that because good Christian people believed them to be the effect of Divine power that they really were so. Although generally supposed then to be so, they were not by any means new or peculiar to those times. Such agitations were common and remarkably violent in the days of Whitefield and the Wesleys. They bear a close resemblance to what was known as the jumping exercise in Wales, described by Dr. Haygarth in his treatise on "The Effect of the Imagination in the Cure of Bodily Diseases." Besides these instances of these exercises there were in France 200 years ago, more wonderful manifestations than any recorded as having been witnessed in Tennessee. A quaint old book written in 1741 by Rev. Charles Chauncey, a noted divine, entitled "A Wonderful Narrative and Faithful Account of the French Prophets, their

Agitations, Ecstasies and Inspirations," states that "an account of them would be almost incredible if they had not happened in view of all France, and been known all over Europe. From the month of June, 1688, to the February following, there arose in Dauphiny and then in Vivarias (an ancient district in France, now the departments of Ardeche and Haute-Loire) 500 or 600 Protestants of both sexes who gave themselves out as prophets, and inspired with the Holy Ghost. The sect soon became numerous; there were many thousands of them. They had strange fits, and these fits came on them with tremblings and faintings, as in a swoon, which made them stretch out their arms and legs and stagger several times before they dropped down. They remained awhile in trances, and uttered all that came into their mouths. They said they saw the heavens opened, the angels, paradise and hell. When the prophets had for awhile been under agitation of body they began to prophesy, the burden of their prophecies being 'Amend your lives, repent ye, for the end of all things draweth nigh.' Persons of good understanding knew not what to think of it—to hear little boys and young girls (of the dregs of mankind who could not so much as read) quote many texts of Holy Scripture. \* \* \* The child was thirteen or fourteen months old, and kept then in a cradle, and had not of itself spoken a word, nor could it go alone. When they came in where it was the child spoke distinctly in French, with a voice small like a child but loud enough to be well heard over the room. There were numerous children of from three, four and five years old, and so on up to fifteen and sixteen, who being seized with agitations and ecstasies delivered long exhortations under inspiration," etc.

Further on this book pays some attention to the Quakers: "They had indeed, the names of Quakers given them from that extraordinary shaking or quaking as though they were in fits or convulsions. Then the devil roared in these deceived souls in a most strange and dreadful manner. I wondered how it was possible some of them could live." The Rev. Mr. Chauncey\* in order to set at naught all pretense that there was any genuine inspiration in all the foregoing, cites many instances of the sayings and doings of Christ, and then says: "These be some of the proofs of the divine mission of Jesus Christ and His apostles. Compare the strangest and most unaccountable instances in the foregoing letter with the miracles recorded in the gospel and they sink into nothing. They carry with them, closely examined, the plain marks of enthusiasm, or collusion, or Satanic possession."

Reference to the above paragraphs will show that Dr. Haygarth's opinion was that these exercises were due to the imagination. and that

the Rev. Mr. Chauncey thought they were due to enthusiasm, collusion or Satanic possession. The enlightened reason of the present day would instantly discard the idea of Satanic possession, and, as nothing but deceptive appearances can be attributed to collusion, it follows that only enthusiasm remains as a rational explanation for the genuine agitations or ecstasies, that is supposing Mr. Chauncey to have enumerated all the causes. It will be remembered, too, that the manifestations in this State and Kentucky were checked and diminished by the opposition, first, of a Presbyterian minister, the Rev. Mr. Lyle, at Walnut Hill, in September, 1803, and then by the united opposition of others who, like him, looked upon them as monstrously extravagant. The Rev. Dr. Blythe cured a lady of his congregation by threatening to have her carried out of the church at the next repetition of the paroxysm, and the Doctor himself at one time felt, through sympathy, an approaching paroxysm, and was able to ward it off only by continued and determined opposition. This was the means used by the Baptists to prevent them, and they were very generally successful. The inference would therefore seem to be that under powerful emotional preaching calculated to arouse the ecstasies or the fears of the congregation, the imaginations of some would be so powerfully wrought up that the nervous system was very greatly affected, and that through sympathy others less imaginative would experience the same affliction, which the will-power could successfully resist, except where the individual resisting was overcome by the combined influence of the mentality of numerous other people. The phenomenon was nothing more than religious enthusiasm carried to a very great excess. It was in all probability a nervous disease, having but little or no effect upon the general health. Though neither proving nor disproving the truth of religion, all such extravagances tend to the discredit of religion, and all proper means should be employed if necessary to prevent or discourage such folly and excess.

It should be mentioned in this connection that those who, during the progress of the revival opposed the "bodily agitations" as extravagant and tending to the discredit of religion, were looked upon by enthusiasts as being opposed to the revival, hence the division of the people into "revivalists" and "anti-revivalists." These distinctions, however, were but of temporary duration, terminating when the revival had spent its force. Other results also followed, some of which were transient, others permanent; some deplorable, others gratifying. "At this unhappy moment, and in this unsettled state of things, when religious feeling ran high, that extravagant and (as we believe) deluded race—the Shakers—made their appearance, and by a sanctimonious show of piety and zeal



drew off several valuable Presbyterian preachers and a number of unwary members, doubtless to the great injury of the cause of rational Christianity."\*

About the same time other sects sprang up, known by the respective names of "New Lights" or "Stoneites," "Marshallites," "Schismatics," etc. By these "heresies" the Synod of Kentucky lost eight members: B. W. Stone, John Dunlavy, Richard McNamar, Robert Marshall, John Thomson, Huston, Rankin and David Purviance. Marshall and Thomson after a time returned to the Presbyterian faith. The "Stoneites" or "New Lights" were a body formed mainly through the efforts of Elder Stone, after he had decided to abandon Presbyterianism altogether. This new body was called by its adherents the "Christian Church," while by outsiders it was called by the name of New Lights. They held many of the views which afterward characterized the Campbell reformation, especially the famous dogma of "baptism for the remission of sins," and Elder Stone intimates in his book pretty plainly that in adopting it the "Disciples of Christ" or "Campbellites," as the followers of Alexander Campbell were originally called, had stolen his thunder. When the Campbell reformation reached Kentucky Elders Stone and Purviance united with the reformers, and thus the Southern branch of the old "Christian Church" finally disappeared. Since then the name of Disciples, or Campbellites, has been exchanged for the old name of the "Christian Church." Elders Dunlavy, McNamar, Huston and Rankin joined the Shakers.

Another but more remote result of the great revival was the expulsion from the Presbyterian Church of a portion of the membership by whom was formed the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. The necessities of the Presbyterians at that time in Kentucky and Tennessee were peculiar. In 1801 a few Presbyterian clergymen formed an association which was named the Transylvania Presbytery. On account of the great numbers added to the ranks of Christians by the revival there was not a sufficiency of educated ministers to supply the demand. This presbytery felt justified in ordaining to the ministry some young men who had not received a classical education. In 1802 the Transylvania Presbytery was divided into two sections, one of which was named the Cumberland Presbytery, and which included the Green River and Cumberland Counties. In 1804 a remonstrance signed by Revs. Thomas B. Craighead, John Bowman and Samuel Donnel was sent to the Synod of Kentucky against the proceedings of the Cumberland Presbytery in several particulars, amongst other things in licensing uneducated ministers. Being

---

\*"Recollections of the West," by Rev. Lewis Garrett.

taken completely by surprise, and thinking the citation of at least doubtful legality, the Cumberland Presbytery refused to appear before the synod when cited. At the meeting of the synod in October, 1805, a commission consisting of ten ministers and six elders was appointed to investigate the entire subject, vesting this commission with full synodical powers to confer with the members of the presbytery and to adjudicate upon their Presbyterian proceedings. Notwithstanding that the Cumberland Presbytery considered this commission vested with unconstitutional powers, they all, except two ministers and one elder, appeared before it at the appointed time and place. There were present ten ordained ministers, four licentiates and four candidates. The commission after censuring the Presbytery for having received Rev. Mr. Haw into connection, and considering irregular licensures and ordinations, determined to institute an examination into the qualifications of the young men to preach. This examination the young men resisted on the ground that the Cumberland Presbytery was competent to judge of the faith and abilities of its candidates. The result of this refusal was that the commission adopted a resolution prohibiting all the young men in connection with that Presbytery, ordained, licensed and candidates, from preaching, exhorting or administering the ordinances until they should submit to the requisite examination. The revival preachers, however, resolved to continue preaching and administering the ordinances, and encouraged the young men to continue the exercise of their respective functions. They also formed a council, consisting of the majority of the ministers and elders of the Cumberland Presbytery, of which most of the congregations in the Presbytery approved. In October, 1806, an attempt was made at reconciliation with the synod, but the synod confirmed the action of the commission with reference to the re-examination of the young men, and at the same time dissolved the Cumberland Presbytery, attaching its members not suspended to the Transylvania Presbytery. The revival ministers determined to continue their work in the form of a council, until their case could go before the General Assembly, which met in May, 1807. At this meeting of the Assembly their case was ably presented, but that body declined to judicially decide the case. The synod, however, upon the advice of the Assembly, revised its proceedings, but was unable to modify them. Finally in 1809 the General Assembly decided to sustain the proceedings of the synod. Thus the Cumberland Presbytery was effectually excluded from the Presbyterian Church. However, another attempt at reconciliation with the synod of Kentucky was made, their proposition being to adopt the Confession of Faith except fatality only. To this proposition the synod could not accede.

It had been the custom of the Presbyterian Church in North Carolina to ordain men to the ministry who adopted the Westminster Confession of Faith, with the exception of the idea of fatality taught therein, and the Transylvania Presbytery had also permitted ministers in their ordination vows to make the same exception if they chose. Most of the Presbyterian ministers who had lent their aid in the promotion of the revival were men of this class. When, therefore, the acceptance in full of the Westminster Confession of Faith was required of them, they found it impossible to yield without violating their convictions as honest and conscientious men. Thus the doctrine of fatality became an impassable barrier between them and the Presbyterian Church. Neither could they, on account of differences of doctrine, conscientiously unite with any other Christian body. Besides, as they regarded the Presbyterian as the most Scriptural form of church government in the world, they determined to form a Presbytery independent of the Presbyterian Church. Accordingly, on February 3, 1810, the Rev. Finis Ewing and Rev. Samuel King, and licentiate Ephraim McLean proceeded to the humble log residence of the Rev. Samuel McAdoo, in Dickson County, Tenn., and submitted to him the proposed plan of forming a new and independent Presbytery. After earnest prayer that evening until midnight, the next morning he decided in favor of the proposal, and on that day, February 4, 1810, at his residence, was formed the first Presbytery of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. Before their adjournment Ephraim McLean was ordained.

"The next meeting of the new Cumberland Presbytery was held in March, 1810. At this session it included four ordained ministers" (the four above named), "five licensed preachers: James B. Porter, Hugh Kirkpatrick, Robert Bell, James Farr and David Foster, and eight candidates: Thomas Calhoun, Robert Donnel, Alexander Chapman, William Harris, R. McCorkle, William Bumpass, David McLinn and William Barnett. After a few months they were joined by the Rev. William McGee. These men were the fathers of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. They adopted as their standard of theology the Westminster Confession of Faith, excepting the idea of fatality."\* This "idea of fatality" was supplanted by the following particulars: First, that there are no eternal reprobates. Second, that Christ died not for a part only, but for all mankind. Third, that all infants dying in infancy are saved through Christ and the sanctification of the Spirit. Fourth, that the Spirit of God operates on the world, or as co-extensively as Christ has made the atonement, in such manner as to leave all men inexcusable. With these

\*"Origin and Doctrines of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church"—*Chrismon*.



exceptions the Cumberland Presbyterians adopted the Westminster Confession of Faith, and thus was established in Tennessee a new Christian denomination, professing a system of doctrine midway between Calvinism and Arminianism, for further particulars respecting which the reader is referred to sectarian writings.

After encountering and overcoming numerous obstacles, this church was in a few years established on a firm foundation. At the fourth meeting of its Presbytery, in October, 1811, a vain attempt was made to effect a reunion with the Presbyterian Church, but this church, though then and for many years afterward willing to unite with the mother church on "proper conditions," would, rather than recede from its position and preach the doctrines of her confession of faith, prefer to maintain a distinct organization, and labor on according to the best light given them. Their success in this new theological field was from the first very great and very gratifying. In 1813 the original Presbytery was divided into three Presbyteries, and in October of that year the members of these three Presbyteries met at Beech Church, Sumner County, Tenn., and formed the Cumberland Synod. At the first meeting of this synod a committee was appointed to prepare a confession of faith, discipline and catechism in conformity with the expressed principles of the church. This committee, which consisted of the Revs. Finis Ewing, William McGee, Robert Donnell, and Thomas Callhoun, reported the result of their labors to the synod in 1814, by whom their confession of faith was adopted.

The numbers of Cumberland Presbyterians continued steadily and quite rapidly to increase. In 1820 they had numerous churches not only in Tennessee, but also in Kentucky, Indiana, Illinois, Missouri, Arkansas and Alabama. In 1822 they had forty-six ordained ministers, and in 1826, eighty. A general assembly was then deemed necessary by a portion of the clergy, and the plan of a college to be located at Princeton, Ky., was adopted. In 1827 the number of ordained ministers was 114. In 1828 the synod discussed the subject of forming a general assembly, and to carry the idea into effect, divided the synod into four—those of Missouri, Green River, Franklin and Columbia. The first general assembly met at Princeton, Ky., in 1829. To illustrate the rapidity of the growth of this church in membership it may be stated that in 1822 there were 2,718 conversions, and 575 adult baptisms; in 1826, 3,305 conversions and 768 adult baptisms; in 1827, 4,006 conversions and 996 adult baptisms. In 1856 there were 1,200 ministers of this denomination, and 130,000 members, and since that time their growth has been proportionally rapid. The college established in 1828 at Princeton, Ky., was named Columbia College.

The statistics for the Cumberland Presbyterian Church for 1869 were as follows: General Assembly, 1; Synods, 24; Presbyteries, 99; ministers, 1,500; communicants, 130,000; universities, Cumberland at Lebanon, Tenn., and Lincoln, at Lincoln, Ill.; colleges in Tennessee, male, Bethel, at McMoresville; female, Cumberland Female College, at McMinnville, and Donnell Female College at Winchester. Since this time the Cumberland Presbyterian Church has continued to grow and prosper in this, as in many other States, as the following statistics will show: In 1875 there were, as now, fifteen Presbyteries, with an aggregate church membership of 22,566, and 10,961 Sunday-school scholars. In 1880 the church membership was 29,186, and the number of Sunday-school scholars 11,031, and in 1885, the last year for which statistics are obtainable, there were, omitting the Presbytery of Nashville, for which there was no report, 32,726 communicants, 13,447 Sunday-school scholars, and \$543,545 worth of church property. The total value of the church property belonging to this denomination in the United States was, in the same year, \$2,319,006.

As may be readily conjectured the Methodists reaped a bountiful harvest from the great revival. It will be remembered that the Rev. Francis Paythress was presiding elder on the Cumberland District. In 1804 Rev. Lewis Garrett was presiding elder in this district, which included Nashville and Red River in Tennessee, besides portions of Kentucky, Mississippi and Illinois. He traveled the entire Cumberland Valley, from the mouth of the river to the mountains, through the cane brakes of Caney Fork, through every part of the Green River country, visiting settlements and finding all classes much alive to the importance of religion. The Cumberland District was then composed of six circuits and two missions, with about eight or nine traveling preachers. Mr. Garrett was the successor of John Page, who was the presiding elder on this circuit when it was formed in 1802. He had much to do with the great revival, and had to assist him such men as Thomas Wilkerson, Jesse Walker, James Gwynn, James Young and Tobias Gibson.

When the Western Conference was organized in 1800 it included Tennessee, Kentucky, Ohio, southwest Virginia and the Mississippi Territory, all of the western country then occupied by the Methodists. To give an idea of the growth of Methodism in that early day the number of members for 1796 and 1803 are presented. In the former year the whole number in America was as follows: whites 48,128, colored 12,170. This was twenty-two years after the introduction of Methodism into the country. In Tennessee there were 799 white Methodists and 77 colored. In 1802 the numbers were whites 2,767, colored, 180. In 1803 the

numbers had increased to 3,560 whites and 248 colored. These numbers are, however, not strictly limited to State lines. The conference for 1807 was held September 15, 1806, at Ebenezer, in East Tennessee, Bishop Asbury present and presiding.

It was during the progress of the revival that Miles Harper was brought to trial for violating the terms of the union which had been entered into by the Methodists and Presbyterians regarding the rules to govern them in preaching. One article of the union was that controverted points were to be avoided, and another was that they were not to proselyte. Harper, who was on Roaring River Circuit, preached right on without reference to the complaints of his Presbyterian brethren. The complaints continuing McKendree appointed a committee and put Harper on his trial. His complainants, however, failed to prove the charges, and he in his own defense satisfactorily showed that they were themselves guilty of the very charges they had brought against him, as they had been preaching the doctrine of the unconditional and final perseverance of the saints, known to all to be a controverted point. The result was that Harper was acquitted, with which all were satisfied. However, when McKendree proposed to put some of the Presbyterians on trial for preaching as above they objected, and he pronounced the union a mere farcical thing. After this the union was of short duration.

Conference for 1808 met at Liberty Hill, Tennessee, October 1, 1808, about twelve miles from Nashville in Williamson County, the site of an early camp-ground. At this Conference a regulation was made concerning slavery, which was that no member of society or preacher should buy or sell a slave unjustly, inhumanly, or covetously; the case on complaint to be examined, for a member, by the quarterly meeting, and for a preacher, by appeal to an annual conference, where the guilt was proved the offender to be expelled. At this time the Western Conference contained 17,931 white and 1,117 colored members, an increase of 3,051. In 1811 the increase in the Holston District was 1,279, and in the Cumberland District 1,819. In May, 1812, the General Conference met in New York and separated the Western Conference into two conferences, the Tennessee and Ohio. At that time there were in this country, in the United States, Territories and Canada, 184,567 members and 688 traveling ministers. Peter Cartwright in his autobiography in making a comparison showing the growth of the church, says: "Lord save the church from desiring to have pews, choirs, organs or instrumental music, and a congregational minister like other heathen churches around them."

The Tennessee Conference embraced the Holston, Nashville, Cumberland, Wabash, Illinois and Mississippi Districts, the southern part of



Kentucky being attached to the Tennessee Conference. The first session of this conference was held at Fountain Head, Sumner Co., Tenn., November 12, 1812. Bishops Asbury and McKendree were both present. The rules by which the Western Conference had been governed were adopted by this conference. The membership as reported at that time was as follows: Holston District, whites, 5,794; colored, 541; Cumberland District, whites, 4,365; colored, 327; Nashville, whites, 5,131; colored, 601. A new arrangement of circuits was made this year, Cumberland District being made to contain Red River, Fountain Head, Goose Creek and Roaring River Circuits, while Nashville District embraced Stone River, Lebanon and Caney Fork. Answer to prayer was doubtless more fully and generally believed in than at this day. Two instances illustrating this fact are here introduced. The first is of the Rev. James Axley, one of the most remarkable of the pioneer preachers of the Methodist Episcopal Church in the West. It is related in the language of the Rev. Dr. McAnally:

"But that for which he was, in my judgment, more distinguished than for anything else, was the reverence, fervency and prevalence of his prayer, proceeding, as it always seemed to do, from a deep, strong, unwavering confidence in God, through the merits of the Lord Jesus Christ.  
\* \* \* With awe, with reverence and humility, and yet with great confidence, did he approach the mercy seat, feeling that 'Jesus answers prayer.' Infidelity may scoff, skepticism and 'philosophy, so-called,' may mark it as a 'strange coincidence,' but the fact remains to be attested by hundreds of witnesses still living, that time after time Axley has been known, at popular meetings in times of severe drought, to pray publicly for rain, with all the apparent humility, child-like simplicity and Christian confidence with which he would have prayed for the conversion of a penitent; and rain came! So often did this occur in the course of years that it became common, when he publicly prayed for rain, for some wicked man to say 'Come, boys; let's go on; we'll get wet; Axley's prayed for rain.'

In this I record but sober facts; and even at the risk of wearying the reader I must mention one case, known to several persons now living, who were present and witnessed it. It occurred at Muddy Creek Camp Ground, in Roane County, Tenn., twenty-four or five miles west or southwest of Knoxville. A drought had prevailed over that region of country for an unusually long time, and the prospects were becoming truly alarming. On Sabbath of the camp-meeting Mr Axley entered the pulpit. Over him was a cloudless sky; around and beneath him was the parched earth. It had been remarked that during his stay on the ground previous to that hour he had been rather more than ordinarily serious,

thoughtful and taciturn, as though something weighed heavily upon his mind. On his entering the stand his friends observed that his countenance was deeply overshadowed with gloom. He sang and prayed. In his prayer on the part of himself and the people he made general confession of sin and consequent unworthiness, pleading the merits of a crucified Redeemer, and implored pardon for the past and grace for the future. Then, among other petitions, devoutly and fervently he asked for rain upon the parched earth. The prayer ended, he arose from his knees, with a gloom still upon his countenance so deeply and clearly marked as to excite the sympathy of his friends. Instead of announcing his text and proceeding with his sermon, as was expected, he sang a few lines and again called the congregation to prayer. This time his entreaties for rain were strikingly and touchingly earnest and fervent, and the pleas put in differed from those of his first prayer. A second time he arose from his knees. Now his countenance was indicative of intense mental suffering. A third time he sang, and a third time he bowed in prayer. In this prayer he entreated God, for the sake of Christ, and in mercy to infants and unsinning animals, which had not abused His goodness, despised His mercies, blasphemed His holy name, desecrated His Sabbath, nor violated His commandments, to send rain and preserve them from the horrors of famine and want. This prayer ended, he arose, with a countenance lighted and calm as a summer's eve. He then announced his text and preached in his usual manner, without the most distant allusion to the unusual manner in which he had opened the services, or to the feelings that had prompted him. He simply went forward and did as I relate; giving no reason to any. But ere that sermon was ended, the darkened horizon and distant thunders announced the coming rain."

Another case of answer to prayer is given in the language of the Rev. Leroy H. Cage: "I will here relate a circumstance that took place at Edwards' schoolhouse, two and one-half miles northwest from where Gallatin now stands. A circuit preacher named Henry Birchett had an appointment at that place, the congregation was too large for the house, and he had to preach in the grove. The preacher, having sung and prayed, took his text and began to preach; a cloud arose, very angry, with thunder and lightning, the congregation became restless, the preacher stopped and said to the congregation: 'Be still, and see the salvation of God.' He dropped upon his knees and prayed that he might be permitted to preach that sermon to that congregation. The cloud began at once to part, and a heavy rain fell all around but none reached the congregation. My father, Thomas Blackmore, John Carr and several others, who were there, report that the preacher's countenance shone and

seemed to be more than human. It was further told me that on his death bed there were shining lights around him, and they supposed that he heard unearthly music."

It was about this time, in the years 1811 and 1812, that the religious emotions and fears of the people were affected and awakened in a most remarkable manner by the earthquakes and other phenomena of those years. It is very seldom that earthquakes occur over a great extent of country remote from volcanoes, but these quakings were felt over an extent of country 300 miles long and of considerable width. The surface of the earth not only trembled and shook violently, but broke open in fissures, from which mud and water were thrown to the height of trees. The comet of 1811 was of tremendous magnitude, and as such bodies were then considered harbingers of impending calamity, great consternation was produced by its appearance. The aurora borealis was also that year exceedingly brilliant and beautiful, and many thought that in its rapid movements, the march of armies and bloodshed were portended. Besides all these things there was a prospect of war with the Indians and with Great Britain. All these impending calamities produced in many quarters a deep-seated and terrible feeling of fear among the people, who shook and trembled more than did the earth beneath their feet. The uninformed but pious mind has for centuries been able to discover at frequent but irregularly occurring intervals signs of the near approach of the consummation of all earthly things. Wars and rumors of wars, false prophets, and the "judgments of the Almighty" are seldom absent from the world, which is for this reason continually coming to an end. And at such times as those we are now discussing, uninformed but wicked people, conscious of the iniquity of their lives and of the impurity of their motives, flee to the church, the only refuge for them in the world. In the presence of the terrible comet, and of the earthquakes and impending war, men's hearts failed them, their knees smote together with fear, and they implored the ministers to preach and pray. The experience they were then undergoing was altogether new. They collected together in groups, terrorized and pitiful crowds. Similar scenes were witnessed in 1833, at the time of the occurrence of the great meteoric showers, or "falling stars," which produced a most profound and widely spread sensation upon the multitude. Men who for years had been personal enemies, thinking the judgment day had come, made haste to be reconciled with each other, not waiting even for the dawn of day. Many instances are related by writers, who were eye-witnesses, which, when the danger was over, were exceedingly amusing, ridiculous or absurd. Only one instance of this kind can be here introduced.



Peter Cartwright was in Nashville when the first severe shock of earthquake was felt. He saw a negro woman start to the spring for water. When the earth began to tremble and the chimneys and scaffolding around buildings being erected began to fall, she raised a shout saying: "The Lord is coming in the clouds of heaven! The day of judgment! The day of judgment!" Hearing this her two young mistresses were dreadfully frightened and came running out of the house begging her to stop and pray for them. But she replied: "I can not stop to pray for you now. I told you how it would be. He is coming! He is coming! I must go to meet him. Farewell! Hallelujah! Glory Hallelujah!" and went on shouting and clapping her hands.

Such is the weakness of poor, ignorant human nature. When judgment is impending and apparently immediate and unavoidable, men are fearfully and tremblingly anxious to confess their own sins and to obtain pardon; when judgment seems indefinitely remote they are chiefly concerned about the sins of others and in denouncing against them the judgments of the Lord. Erasmus well said: "*Quam religiosus nos afflictio facit!*"\* When history, philosophy and the natural sciences, the natural antidotes for superstition, shall become sufficiently familiar to the masses such pitiable exhibitions of human weakness will disappear.

The action of this conference at Liberty Hill, Tenn., in 1808, has already been referred to. Some of the presiding elders and circuit preachers were strongly anti-slavery in their sentiments, and consequently were rigidly anti-slavery in the administration of discipline. This was the case with the Rev. James Axley and Enoch Moore. They not only refused to license slave-holders to preach, but also denied them the privilege of exhorting or leading in prayer-meeting. They even went so far as to denounce slave-holders as no better than thieves and robbers. The course of the conference in that early day is illustrated by the following entry:

"Leven Edney, recommended from Nashville Circuit; his character examined and approved, Lewmer Blackman being security that he will set his slave free as soon as practicable." It was, however, seldom found "practicable" to set free the slave. Notwithstanding the action taken by the Methodist Church in its adoption of rules for the government of slaves and slave-holders, the number of slaves held continued to increase. Generally speaking it was found impracticable to free the slaves, hence regulations adopted by the church, aimed at the institution, had but little effect otherwise than to create and foster a prejudice against the church itself. The Tennessee Conference which met in 1812, dealt with this ques-

---

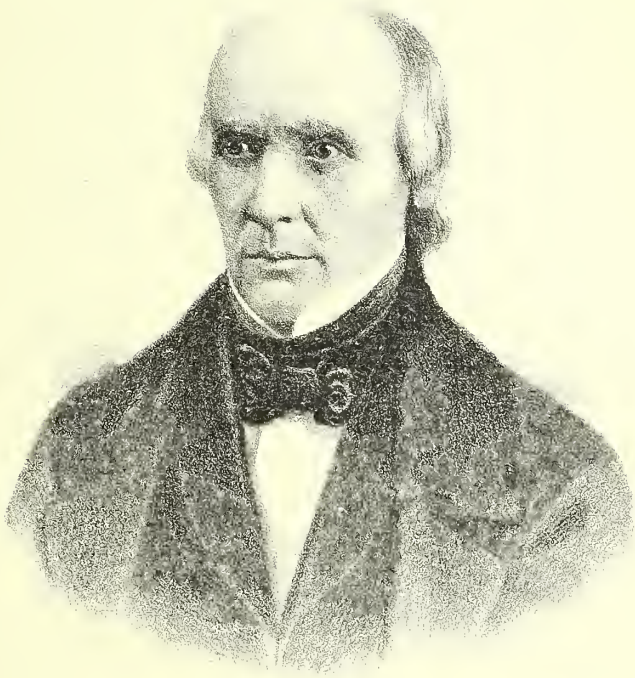
\*How religious affliction makes us!

tion with such wisdom as they possessed. It was provided that every preacher having charge of a circuit should, upon information received, cite any member buying or selling a slave to appear at the next ensuing quarterly conference, which should proceed to determine whether such slave had been bought in a case of justice and mercy, and if this were found not to have been the case, the person buying or selling such slave should be expelled from the church.

At the conference of 1815 this rule was voted to be unconstitutional and a report was adopted the substance of which was that the conference sincerely believed that slavery was a great moral evil, but as the laws of the country did not admit of emancipation without the special act of the Legislature in some places, nor permit a slave so liberated to enjoy his freedom, they could not adopt any rule compelling church members to liberate their slaves, nor could they devise any rule sufficiently specific to meet the various and complex cases that were continually arising. But to go as far as they could consistently with the laws and the nature of things, to do away with the evil and "remove the curse from the Church of God," they adopted two rules on the subject, the first being that if any member should buy or sell any slave or slaves to make gain, or should sell any slave to any slave-dealer, such member should be expelled from the church, except he could satisfactorily show that it was done to keep or place different members of the same family together; and the second was that no person should be eligible to the office of deacon in the church who did not disapprove of slavery and express a willingness to effect a legal emancipation of his slaves as soon as it was practicable for him to do so. At the conference held at Franklin, November 8, 1817, this question was again taken up for discussion with the result of the adoption of a very elaborate report. After a "Whereas" that the General Conference had authorized each annual conference to formulate its own rules respecting slavery, the following resolutions (in substance) were adopted:

First—That if any local elder, deacon or preacher in the Methodist Episcopal Church should purchase a slave, the Quarterly Conference should say how long the slave should serve as a remuneration for the purchase money, and that the purchaser should enter into a written obligation to emancipate such slave at the expiration of the term of servitude, provided that emancipation were permissible under the laws of the State; but that if the laws of the State should continue to oppose emancipation, then the next Quarterly Conference held after the expiration of the term of servitude, should determine the future *status* of the slave.

Second—The same rule applied to private members of the church, but instead of the Quarterly Conference their cases were managed by a



*Johnson*





committee appointed by the preacher having charge of their respective circuits; and in all cases relating to preachers, deacons, elders or private members, the children of slaves purchased, born during the time of bondage or term of servitude, were to be manumitted upon arriving at the age of twenty-five, provided the law should then admit of emancipation; but if the law should not then admit of emancipation, the cases of all children born of purchased slaves were to be submitted to the Quarterly Conference or the committee, according to whether the owner was a preacher or private member. The portion of this rule which applied to the selling of slaves by a preacher or member is exceedingly interesting and curious. This provision required the preacher to submit his case to the Quarterly Conference and the private member to the committee, which Quarterly Conference or committee, as the case might be, should determine for what term of years the slave should be sold, and required the seller of the slave to record in the county court the emancipation of the slave at the expiration of the said term. This rule was to be enforced from and after January 1, 1818.

Such was the legislation of a body of ministers with reference to a subject over which they had no control, provided the laws themselves did not admit of emancipation, which they themselves assumed to be the fact. Hence the adoption of a proviso which in every case, taking things as they were, either nullified the rule or made it easy for a member or a minister to retain his slave; for whenever he determined to own slaves it was easy to make it appear that it was in accordance with justice and mercy to retain those already in possession, or that under the law it was impracticable to set them free. Such legislation would seem to be sufficiently absurd, but it is amazing that an intelligent body of men should gravely attempt to compel a preacher or member to emancipate a slave at the expiration of a term of years after having surrendered ownership and control of the same. The only theory conceivable which can relieve the conference of the accomplishment of a solemn mockery is the supposition that they, having confidence in the justice of the future, must have believed themselves to be anticipating civil legislation—that the legal emancipation of the slave was an event the immediate future must produce. However, the attitude of the conference on this subject is of great historic value, bringing out into clear relief, as it does, the strong conviction of the Methodist body of Christians that slavery was a great moral evil, the existence of which was deplorable, and to be opposed by every means attached to which there was any hope of its gradual abolishment. At the conference held at Nashville October 1, 1819, two persons, Peter Burum and Gilbert D. Taylor, were recommended as proper to be

admitted on trial, but both were rejected because they were slave-holders, and a number of applicants for deacon's orders were similarly rejected. These rejections elicited the following protest:

"Be it remembered that whereas Tennessee Annual Conference, held in Nashville October 1, 1819, have taken a course in their decisions relative to the admission of preachers on trial in the traveling connection, and in the election of local preachers to ordination which goes to fix the principle that no man, even in those States where the law does not admit of emancipation, shall be admitted on trial or ordained to the office of deacon or elder if it is understood that he is the owner of a slave or slaves. That this course is taken is not to be denied, and it is avowedly designed to fix the principle already mentioned. Several cases might be mentioned, but it is deemed unnecessary to instance any except the case of Dr. Gilbert D. Taylor, proposed for admission, and Dudley Hargrove, recommended for ordination. We deprecate the course taken as oppressively severe in itself and ruinous in its consequences, and we disapprove of the principle as contrary to and in violation of the order and discipline of our church. We, therefore, do most solemnly, and in the fear of God, as members of this conference, enter our protest against the proceedings of the conference as it relates to the above-mentioned course and principle. Thomas L. Douglass, Thomas D. Porter, William McMahon, Benjamin Malone, Lewis Garrett, Barnabas McHenry, William Allgood, William Stribling, Ebenezer Hearn, Timothy Carpenter, Thomas Stringfield, Benjamin Edge, Joshua Boucher, William Hartt, John Johnson, Henry B. Bascom."

This protest had considerable influence upon the church in the South. It was taken to the General Conference and by that body referred to the committee on slavery, but nothing definite was accomplished.

At the conference which met at Columbia in 1824 this question of slavery came up again in the form of an address from the "Moral Religious Manumission Society of West Tennessee," whereupon the following resolution was adopted:

*Resolved*, That the address from the Moral Religious Manumission Society be returned to committee accompanied with a note stating that so far as the address involves the subject of slavery we concur in the sentiments that slavery is an evil to be deplored, and that it should be counteracted by every judicious and religious exertion.

Thus it will be seen that the Methodist preachers admitted that slavery was a deplorable evil, and should be counteracted by every judicious and religious exertion. "What a misfortune," says Rev. J. B. McFerrin,\* "that this sentiment had not always obtained! treating the matter in a religious manner, and not intermeddling with it as a civil question."

---

\*"History of Methodism in Tennessee," to which this chapter is indebted.



In 1832 mission work among the slaves was for the first time earnestly undertaken. South Carolina had set the example in work of this nature, and it was not long before there were scores of missionaries in the Southern States proclaiming the doctrines of Methodism to the bondman as well as to the free. Among the blacks there were many genuine Christians and some excellent preachers. The decided and memorable impulse given to missionary work among the slaves was the result of a speech by Rev. (subsequently Bishop) James O. Andrew, which "carried by storm the whole assembly." So successful was the work of missions among the blacks that in 1846 the board reported 29,430 colored members, besides the communicants in the regular circuits and stations of the church, while the general minutes give the total number of colored members in the same years as 124,961. In 1861 the board reported 69,794 probationers, and 12,418 children under religious instruction, the general minutes, in 1860, showing 171,857 members and 35,909 probationers.

Without pursuing further in detail the action of the church on the important subject of slavery, it is now deemed proper to present a synopsis of the reasons for the separation of the Methodist Episcopal Church in the United States into two portions—the Methodist Episcopal Church, and the Methodist Episcopal Church South. While there may be differences of opinion with regard to minor points of controversy, it can be positively stated that had there been no slavery there would have been no epoch of separation. The existence of this institution, the necessary connection with it of church members and its perpetual agitation in the quarterly, annual and general conferences, because of the perpetual and increasing agitation of the question outside of the conferences, was finally the occasion of the disruption of the Methodist Episcopal Church, which has been and probably ever will be a potent cause of regret to thousands of Methodists in both sections of the country, and probably to all except those who can clearly discern the hand of Providence in all events, and who are settled in their convictions that "He doeth all things well."

The General Conference met in New York May 1, 1844. It was the most memorable conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church ever held in the United States. The first question of importance which occupied its attention was that of Francis A. Harding, who had been suspended by the Baltimore Conference from the ministerial office for refusing to manumit five slaves belonging to his wife at the time of his marriage to her, and which, according to the laws of Maryland, still remained hers after the marriage. The action of the Baltimore Conference in suspending

Mr. Harding is sufficiently set forth in the following preamble and resolution:

WHEREAS, The Baltimore Conference can not and will not tolerate slavery in any of its members. \* \* \* \* \*

*Resolved*, That Brother Harding be suspended until the next Annual Conference or until he assures the Episcopacy that he has taken the necessary steps to secure the freedom of his slaves.

With this demand Brother Harding failed to comply because, according to his plea, of his inability under the laws of the State to do so; but he nevertheless expressed a willingness to emancipate them and permit them to go to Africa or to any free State provided they were willing to accept freedom on those terms, but no evidence tends to show that any attempt was made to obtain their consent, or that their consent was obtained, and thus their emancipation was impracticable, for they could not live free in Maryland without violating the laws. But notwithstanding the impracticability of emancipation the action of the Baltimore Conference in the case of Mr. Harding was, on appeal to the General Conference, after able arguments for the appellant by Dr. W. A. Smith, of Virginia, and for the Baltimore Conference by John A. Collins, of Baltimore, sustained by the General Conference by a refusal to reverse it, the vote being 117 against reversal to 56 in favor of it, taken on the 11th of May.

Another and still more important case came before the conference on May 22, in that of Bishop James O. Andrew, of Georgia, who had, against his own will, become connected with slavery. Several years previous to the meeting of this General Conference an old lady had bequeathed to him a mulatto girl in trust to be taken care of until she should arrive at the age of nineteen, when, if her consent could be obtained, she should be set free and sent to Liberia; but in case she should refuse to go to Liberia he should keep her and make her as free as the laws of Georgia would permit. When the time came she refused to go to Liberia, and as emancipation and continued residence in Georgia afterward was impracticable, Bishop Andrew remained her owner. About five years previous to the meeting of this conference, Bishop Andrew's wife's mother left to her a negro boy, and Mrs. Andrews dying, without a will, the boy became the property of the Bishop. Besides all this, Bishop Andrew, in January, 1844, was married to his second wife, who had inherited from her former husband's estate some slaves. After this marriage Bishop Andrew, unwilling to retain even part ownership in these inherited slaves, secured them to his wife by a deed of trust. But with reference to the first two slaves mentioned the Bishop became a slave-holder by the action of other people. The General Conference, impelled to action by the growing and assertive anti-slavery sentiment throughout the North-

ern States and the Northern Conferences, took action upon Bishop Andrew's case by passing the famous Finley Resolution, which was as follows:

WHEREAS, The Discipline of our Church forbids the doing of anything calculated to destroy our itinerant General Superintendency; and whereas Bishop Andrew has become connected with slavery, by marriage and otherwise, and this act having drawn after it circumstances which, in the estimation of this General Conference, will greatly embarrass the exercise of his office as an itinerant General Superintendent, if not, in some places, entirely prevent it; therefore

*Resolved*, That it is the sense of this General Conference that he desist from the exercise of his office so long as this impediment remains.

To clearly perceive the grounds for the passing of this resolution it is necessary to have reference to the discipline then governing the Methodist Episcopal Church. Of this discipline there were but two rules having either direct or indirect bearing upon the case, the first being as follows: "The bishop is amenable to the General Conference, who have power to expel him for improper conduct if they see it necessary;" and the second being what has been called the Compromise Law of 1816 on the subject of slavery: "We declare that we are as much as ever convinced of the great evil of slavery, therefore no slave-holder shall be eligible to any official station in our church hereafter where the laws of the State in which he lives will admit of emancipation and permit the liberated slave to enjoy freedom. When any traveling preacher becomes an owner of a slave or slaves by any means, he shall forfeit his ministerial character in our church, unless he execute, if it be practicable, a legal emancipation of such slaves conformably to the laws of the State in which he lives."

The above is all that is contained in the discipline concerning bishops and slavery. It would seem clear enough that the Bishop had violated no rule of discipline if it were true that under the laws of Georgia emancipated slaves could not enjoy their freedom. And as no attempt was made by any one on behalf of the conference to prove that emancipated slaves could enjoy their freedom in Georgia, it must be assumed even if it were not the fact that under the laws of his State it was impracticable for Bishop Andrew to emancipate his slaves. The probability is that the true attitude for the present to sustain toward the conference of 1844 is one of sympathy rather than of censure, even by those who still regret the division in the church. It felt impelled and even compelled to take action upon this question that should satisfy at least a portion of the conferences, and chose to satisfy the majority—the anti-slavery portion, those opposed to the election of or the continuance in office or in orders of a slave-holding bishop. The venerable Dr. Olin, of the New York Conference, probably expressed the sense of the conference as accurately as it can be expressed at the present day when he



said: "I look at this proposition\* not as a punishment of any grade or sort. \* \* \* I believe that what is proposed by this substitute to be a constitutional measure, dishonorable to none, unjust to none. As such I should wish it to go forth with the solemn declaration of this General Conference that we do not design it as a punishment or a censure; that it is in our apprehension only a prudential and expedient measure, calculated to avert the great evils that threaten us."

Looking at the question now from our present vantage ground it is evident that Dr. Olin could clearly discern the signs of the times. Division and separation, emanating from some source, it was impossible to avoid. The grand wave of anti-slavery sentiment had obtained impulse, and was irresistibly increasing in both volume and momentum. The General Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, no less than the discipline, was, like every other obstacle this grand wave encountered, unable long to resist. The conference therefore, having to choose between the discipline and the unity of the great body of the church, chose to sacrifice the discipline. Dr. Olin in another part of the same speech from which the above extract is taken, with reference to the probable consequences of the passage of the Finley Resolution, said: "Yet allowing our worst fears all to be realized, the South will have this advantage over us. The Southern Conferences are likely in any event to harmonize among themselves—they will form a compact body. In our Northern Conferences this will be impossible in the present state of things. They cannot bring their whole people to act together on one common ground; stations and circuits will be so weakened and broken as in many instances to be unable to sustain their ministry. I speak on this point in accordance with the convictions of my own judgment, after having traveled 3,000 miles through the New England and New York Conferences, that if some action is not had on this subject calculated to hold out hope—to impart a measure of satisfaction to the people—there will be distractions and divisions ruinous to souls and fatal to the permanent interests of the church. \* \* \* But, sir, I will yet trust that we may put far off this evil day. If we can pass such a measure as will shield our principles from infringement, if we can send forth such a measure as will neither injure nor justly offend the South, and as shall neither censure nor dishonor Bishop Andrew, and yet shall meet the pressing wants of the church, and, above all, if Almighty God shall be pleased to help by pouring out His Spirit upon us, we may yet avoid the rock upon which we now seem too likely to split."

A brief extract from an unfulfilled prophecy by the Rev. George F.

---

\*The Finley Resolution.

Pierce, of Georgia, a young and exceedingly enthusiastic divine, is as follows: "Set off the South and what is the consequence? Do you get rid of embarrassment, discord, division, strife? No, sir, you multiply divisions. There will be secessions in the Northern Conferences, even if Bishop Andrew is deposed or resigns. Prominent men will abandon your church. I venture to predict that when the day of division comes—and come I believe it will from the present aspect of the case—that in ten years from this day and perhaps less, there will not be one shred of the distinctive peculiarities of Methodism left within the conferences that depart from us. The venerable man who now presides over the Northern Conferences may live out his time as a bishop, but he will never have a successor. Episcopacy will be given up; presiding-eldership will be given up; the itinerancy will come to an end, and congregationalism will be the order of the day."

The vote on the Finley resolution was taken on the 1st of June, and resulted in its adoption by the vote of 111 to 69. Of the yeas four were from the Baltimore Conference, and one from Texas—the only ones from a conference within slave-holding territory. All the members from Tennessee Conferences voted against the resolution as follows: Holston Conference—E. F. Sevier, S. Patton, T. Springfield; Tennessee Conference—R. Paine, J. B. McFerrin, W. L. P. Green, T. Maddin; Memphis Conference—G. W. D. Harris, S. S. Moody, William McMahon, T. Joyner. An attempt to declare the action advisory only was laid on the table by a vote of 75 to 68. On the same day, June 3, a series of resolutions proposing the formation of two General Conferences was referred to a committee, which failed to agree, and on the 5th, the following "declaration of the Southern members" was presented by Dr. Longstreet:

"The delegates of the conference in the slave-holding States take leave to declare to the General Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, that the continued agitation on the subject of slavery and abolition in a portion of the church, the frequent action on that subject in the General Conference, and especially the extra-judicial proceedings against Bishop Andrew, which resulted on Saturday last in the virtual suspension of him from his office as superintendent, must produce a state of things in the South which renders a continuance of the jurisdiction of the General Conference over these conferences inconsistent with the success of the ministry in the slave-holding States."

This declaration was signed by all the members of the Southern Conferences, and by J. Stamper from the Illinois Conference, and was then referred to a select committee of nine, with instructions that if they could not devise a plan for an amicable adjustment of the difficulties then

existing in the church, on the subject of slavery, to devise, if possible, a constitutional plan for a mutual and friendly division of the church. On the 7th of June this committee reported a plan of separation, which after much discussion was adopted—four of the resolutions by an average vote of 141 to 11, and the remaining seven and the preamble without a division. In the resolutions provision was made for an equitable division of the book concerns in New York and Cincinnati and the chartered fund, and all the property of the Methodist Episcopal Church in meeting-houses, parsonages, colleges, schools, conference funds, cemeteries, etc., within the limits of the Southern organization was secured to the Southern Church, so far as the resolution could be of force.

The Southern delegation to the General Conference issued a call for a convention to be composed of delegates from the several annual conferences within the slave-holding States, in the ratio of one to every eleven members, to meet in Louisville, Ky., May 1, 1845. When this convention met Bishops Soule and Andrew presided, and after full deliberation it declared the Southern Conferences a distinct church, under the name of "The Methodist Episcopal Church South." The first General Conference of this church met at Petersburg, Va., May 1, 1846. It was composed of eighty-five delegates from sixteen Southern Conferences, those from Tennessee being as follows: Holston Conference—Samuel Patton, David Fleming, Timothy Sullins, Thomas K. Catlett, Elbert F. Sevier. Tennessee Conference—John B. McFerrin, Robert Paine, Fountain E. Fitts, Alexander L. P. Green, John W. Hanner, Edmund W. Schon, Samuel S. Moody, Frederick G. Ferguson, Ambrose F. Driskill. Memphis Conference—Moses Brock, George W. D. Harris, William McMahon, William M. McFerrin, Arthur Davis, John T. Baskerville. By this conference Rev. William Capers, D. D., and Rev. Robert Paine, D. D., were elected bishops. At the time of the separation in 1845 there were in the Southern Church about 450,000 communicants, and in 1860 757,205. During the civil war this number was considerably reduced. In 1875 there were 37 annual conferences and 737,779 communicants, of whom 4,335 were Indians and 2,085 colored, and 346,750 Sunday-school scholars.

As was naturally to be expected, the three conferences in Tennessee adhered to the Methodist Episcopal Church South. In 1840 the numbers of members in each of these conferences was as follows: Holston Conference—White members, 25,902; colored members, 2,420; local preachers, 304. Tennessee Conference—White members, 21,675; colored members, 4,405; local preachers, 298. Memphis Conference—White members, 12,497; colored members, 1,995; local preachers, 183.



The traveling preachers in each conference were as follows: Holston, 70; Tennessee, 109; Memphis, 69. In 1845 the Holston Conference reported 95 traveling and 327 local preachers, and 34,414 white, 4,083 colored, and 108 Indian members. Tennessee Conference reported (in 1846) 153 traveling ministers, 33,219 white and 8,036 colored members, and Memphis Conference reported (in 1846) 101 traveling and 310 local preachers, and 23,111 white and 6,003 colored members.

The boundaries of the Holston Conference were fixed by the General Conference of 1874 so as to include "East Tennessee and that part of Middle Tennessee now embraced in the Pikeville District; that part of Virginia and West Virginia which is now embraced in the Rogersville, Abingdon, Jeffersonville and Wytheville District south of the line of the Baltimore Conference, and including Jacksonville; the line between the Baltimore and the Holston Conferences running straight from Jacksonville, in Floyd County, to Central Depot in Montgomery County, so as to embrace in the Holston Conference the territory known as the New Hope Circuit; that part of the State of North Carolina which lies west of the Blue Ridge; a small part lying east of said ridge, embracing the Catawba Circuit, and that part now in the Wytheville District; and so much of the State of Georgia as is included in the following boundary: Beginning on the State line of Tennessee at the eastern part of Lookout Mountain; thence to the Alabama State line; thence north with said line to Island Creek, and with said creek and the Tennessee River to the State line of Tennessee, and thence to the beginning, including the town of Graysville, Ga."

In 1875 this conference reported 171 traveling and 294 local preachers, 38,087 white, 140 colored, and 176 Indian members, and 23,226 Sunday-school scholars. In 1880 the report was 161 traveling and 290 local preachers; 44,279 white, 48 colored, and 148 Indian members, and 28,541 Sunday-school scholars. In 1885 the following was the report: 158 traveling preachers, 308 local preachers, and 46,529 white members, neither colored nor Indian members reported; the number of Sunday-school scholars was 35,116. When the Federal Armies took possession of East Tennessee many of the Methodists in that section desired the services of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and under authority given by the General Conference of 1864, Holston Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church was organized, its first session being held at Athens, Tenn., June 1, 1865. The numbers reported to this conference were as follows: 48 traveling and 55 local preachers, 6,107 members and 2,425 Sunday-school scholars. In 1876 the numbers were 105 traveling and 237 local preachers, 23,465 members, 10,413 Sunday-school scholars, 190 churches val-

ned at \$173,485, and 11 parsonages valued at \$7,077. The boundaries of this conference, according to the discipline of 1876 were, on the east by North Carolina, north by Virginia and Kentucky, on the west by the western summit of the Cumberland Mountains, south by Georgia and the Blue Ridge, including that portion of North Carolina not in the North Carolina Conference. The statistics of the Tennessee Conference Methodist Episcopal Church South for 1846, have been given above. In 1874 its limits were so determined as to include Middle Tennessee, except the Pikesville District. In 1876 it reported 198 traveling and 331 local preachers, and 41,297 members. In 1880 the numbers were as follows: 198 traveling and 343 local preachers, 46,428 white, and 15 colored members; 22,562 Sunday-school scholars, and the collections for missions amounted to \$7,303.80. In 1885 the report from this conference showed 169 traveling and 314 local preachers, 52,865 white, and 11 colored members; 24,675 Sunday-school scholars, and \$12,610.65 collected for foreign missions, and \$3,368.20 for domestic missions.

The Tennessee Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church was organized at Murfreesboro, October 11, 1866, by Bishop Clark, under authority of the General Conference. At this time it reported 40 traveling and 49 local preachers, 3,173 members, 2,548 Sunday-school scholars, and 13 churches, valued at \$59,100. In 1868 its boundaries were so determined as to include that portion of Tennessee not included in the Holston Conference. In 1876 the statistics were 96 traveling and 206 local preachers, 12,268 members, 8,359 Sunday-school scholars, 142 churches, valued at \$206,940, and 7 parsonages, valued at \$2,500. Under authority of the General Conference of 1876 this conference was divided by separating the white and colored work. The statistics for 1877 are as follows: 41 traveling and 193 local preachers, 11,638 members, 8,329 Sunday-school scholars, 197 churches valued at \$137,028, and 15 parsonages valued at \$4,000.

The Memphis Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, a part of the statistics of which have already been given, was set off from the Tennessee Conference by the General Conference, which met in Baltimore June 1, 1840. At the division of the church in 1845 it adhered to the other Southern conferences. Its original boundaries were as follows: "Bounded on the east by the Tombigbee River, Alabama State Line and Tennessee River; on the north by the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers; west by the Mississippi River, and south by the line running due east from the Mississippi River to the southwest corner of Tallahatchie County; thence due east to the southeastern corner of Yallabusha County; thence in straight line to the northwestern corner of Oktibaha

County; thence due east to the Tombigbee River." In 1874 the southern boundary was changed so as to conform to the State line between Tennessee and Mississippi. In 1871 there were in this conference 278 local preachers and 27,833 members. In 1876 the following was the report: 125 traveling and 276 local preachers, 31,627 members and 15,726 Sunday-school scholars. In 1880 there were 140 traveling preachers, 238 local preachers, 33,329 white members, 18,610 Sunday-school scholars, and amount of collections for missions, \$6,021.60, and in 1885 there were 127 traveling preachers, 233 local preachers, 28,584 white members, 21,884 Sunday-school scholars, and collections for foreign missions, \$6,757.62, and for domestic missions, \$1,032.41.

The convention which organized this church, in 1845, at Louisville, favored the establishment of a book concern, and appointed two book agents—Rev. John Early and Rev. J. B. McFerrin—to receive proposals for the location of the book concern, and also moneys and contributions for building up the same, requiring them to report at the time of the General Conference to be held at Petersburg May, 1846. This conference provided for a book concern, with Rev. John Early as agent, and assistants and depositories at Louisville, Charleston and Richmond. The "plan of separation" contemplated an equitable division of the common property, but the General Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church subsequently pronounced the plan of separation null and void and refused to abide by the settlement of 1844, upon which the Methodist Episcopal Church South took the case to the civil courts and secured a decision in its favor. The decree relating to the book concern was given April 25, 1854. The proceeds of these suits were as follows: Cash, \$293,334.50; notes and accounts transferred, \$50,575.02; book stock, \$20,000; accounts against Richmond and Nashville *Christian Advocate*, \$9,500; presses at Richmond, Charleston and Nashville, \$20,000, and from the chartered fund, \$17,712; aggregate \$414,141.62. The total amount realized from these various sums was \$386,153.63. The General Conference favored a book concern proper for the South, and accordingly the committee brought in a plan for a book establishment at the city of Nashville for the purpose of manufacturing books, to be called the Publishing House of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, to be under the control of two agents and a committee of three to be called the book committee. In August, 1854, the agents purchased in Nashville a lot fronting on the public square sixty-eight feet and extending back to the Cumberland River nearly 300 feet, upon which buildings were erected from three to four stories high, costing in the aggregate \$37,282.52. In 1858 the General Conference determined to have but one agent, but



created the office of financial secretary. May 1, 1883, the assets of the publishing house were \$309,574.61, and its liabilities \$192,157.21; balance, \$117,417.40.

The Methodist Protestant Church which was separated from the Methodist Episcopal Church in 1830, mainly on account of differences regarding church polity, found a few adherents in Tennessee. The Methodist Church seceded from the Methodist Protestant Church in 1858 on the question of slavery, and there were also a few adherents of this church in Tennessee. But the numbers of neither were never large; hence a detailed account, either of their history or doctrines is not deemed advisable in this work. The division in the Methodist Protestant Church having been caused wholly by slavery, after the abolition of slavery by the civil war, the two bodies formed a reunion in 1877 at Baltimore. At the time of this reunion the Methodist Protestant Church had in its Tennessee Conference 18 itinerant ministers and preachers and 1,209 members, and in its West Tennessee Conference 17 itinerant ministers and preachers and 1,140 members, while the Methodist Church had 6 preachers and 230 members.

The work of the Presbyterians in Tennessee preceding and in connection with the great revival has been referred to in preceding pages. In company with Rev. Charles Cummings in East Tennessee was the Rev. John Rhea, a native of Ireland, and whose name is closely associated with the formation of New Bethel Presbyterian Church, in Sullivan County. These two were the first Presbyterian ministers in Tennessee. They both accompanied Col. Christian's expedition against the Cherokees south of the Little Tennessee River, mentioned in the Indian chapter. After this expedition Mr. Rhea returned to Maryland with the intention of bringing his family to Tennessee, but while making preparations for the removal, died there in 1777. His widow and family, however, removed to the Holston settlement, reaching their destination in 1779. They, with other Presbyterians, became members of New Bethel Church, located in the fork of Holston and Watauga. In 1778 Samuel Doak was ordained by the Presbytery of Hanover on a call from the congregations of Concord and Hopewell, north of Holston River in what is now Sullivan County. Preaching here two years Rev. Mr. Doak removed to Little Limestone, in what is now Washington County, in which latter place he remained over thirty years. In connection with the Rev. Charles Cummings in 1780, he organized Concord, New Providence and Carter's Valley Churches, in what is now Hawkins County, New Bethel, in what is now Greene County, and Salem at his place of residence. In 1783 or 1784 Providence Church was organized in Greene County and the Rev. Sam-

uel Houston called to the pastorate, serving the church four or five years when he returned to Virginia. The Rev. Mr. Doak opened a classical school, which in 1785 was chartered as Martin Academy, the first institution of the kind west of the Alleghanies. In the same year Hezekiah Balch, a member of the Orange Presbytery, united with Rev. Samuel Doak and Rev. Charles Cummings, in a petition to the Synod of the Carolinas, that a new presbytery be formed west of the Alleghanies, in accordance with which petition the Presbytery of Abingdon was formed. It was separated from Hanover by New River and from Orange by the Appalachian Mountains, and extended indefinitely westward. In May of the next year Abingdon Presbytery was divided and Transylvania Presbytery created, comprising Kentucky and the settlements on the Cumberland. The pioneer columns of emigration moved through the territory of Abingdon Presbytery to occupy the country beyond the mountains.

For a number of years after its formation the Presbyterian body within its limits was in a state of constant internal agitation, resulting in a schism in 1796. The troubles were increased if not originated by the visit in 1782 of the Rev. Adam Rankin, of Scotch-Irish parentage, but born near Greencastle, Penn., who was a zealot, in modern parlance a crank, upon the subject of psalmody. His opposition to singing any other than Rouse's version of the Psalms was a sort of monomania; while others were almost as strongly in favor of Watt's version. On this subject the controversy waxed very bitter. In 1786 the synod instituted an investigation and adopted measures which it vainly hoped would settle the dispute, and for a time satisfactory results seemed to have been reached and peace attained. But a difficulty of a different kind succeeded. The Rev. Hezekiah Balch, who removed to Tennessee in 1784, caused great trouble to the early Presbyterians, by persistently preaching "Hopkinsianism," a complicated system of religious thought which it is not the province of this book to discuss. By indiscretion in his preaching he provoked determined opposition. The subject being at length brought before the presbytery, a majority of its members voted to dismiss the case. Five prominent members, three of whom belonged in Tennessee, viz.: Doak, Lake and James Balch, withdrew and formed the Independent Presbytery of Abingdon. The case came before the Synod of the Carolinas and at last before the General Assembly which severely disciplined the seceding members and also Rev. Hezekiah Balch, upon which the seceding members submitted and the Presbytery of Abingdon was constituted as before. At this time the Presbytery was bounded as follows: From New River on the northeast to the frontiers on the Tennessee

River, and from the Blue Ridge of the Appalachian Mountains to the Cumberland Mountains. It contained thirty-nine congregations, eleven of them in Virginia, three in North Carolina and twenty-five in Tennessee.

In 1797 the Presbytery of Union was set off from Abingdon, embracing Rev. Hezekiah Balch, John Casson, Henderson, Gideon Blackburn and Samuel Carrick, living in Abingdon Presbytery in Tennessee, Rev. Samuel Doak, Lake and James Balch. In 1793 the city of Knoxville was laid off and the Rev. Samuel Carrick commenced laboring there and at the Fork Church at the confluence of French Broad and Holston, four miles distant. Mr. Carrick was the first president of Blount College, retaining that position from the time of its establishment in 1784 to his death in 1809. New Providence Church was established at the present site of Maryville in 1793 or 1794, by the Rev. Gideon Blackburn, who was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of Abingdon in 1792. After peace was made with the Cherokee Indians, he undertook a mission to that nation and by his self-sacrificing labors among them laid the foundation for the subsequent successful mission of the American Board among the Cherokees. In 1799 Greeneville Presbytery was laid off from the upper end of Union. Greeneville Presbytery was dissolved in 1804.

The Presbytery of Transylvania had charge of the churches on the Cumberland River until 1810, when the Presbytery of West Tennessee was erected with four members. In this year the Rev. Gideon Blackburn left Maryville, where he was succeeded by Rev. Isaac Anderson, who was the principal agent in establishing the Southern and Western Theological Seminary, incorporated as Maryville College in 1821. In 1811 he took charge of Harpeth Academy near Franklin and preached in five different places within a radius of fifty miles, one of those five places being Nashville, his efforts resulting in the establishment of a church in each place, these churches being erected into a Presbytery. Churches and ministers rapidly increased in Middle Tennessee. The Presbytery of Shiloh was created in 1816, from the Presbytery of Muhlenburg in Kentucky and the Presbytery of West Tennessee, Shiloh extending nearly to the southern portion of the State. In 1823 Dr. Blackburn was succeeded in Nashville by the Rev. A. D. Campbell, who was himself succeeded in 1828 by the Rev. Obadiah Jennings. In 1824 Dr. Phillip Lindsley came to Nashville as president of Cumberland College, which was changed to the University of Nashville in 1826. In 1829 the Presbytery of the Western District was organized with five ministers, and in 1830 the first Presbyterian Church in Memphis was established.

Following is given briefly the synodical relations of the different



presbyteries which were wholly or in part in Tennessee: At the formation of the General Assembly the Presbytery of Abingdon was attached to the Synod of the Carolinas, but in 1803 it was transferred to the Synod of Virginia. The Presbytery of Greeneville belonged to the Synod of the Carolinas. The Presbytery of Union belonged to this synod until 1810, when it was transferred to the Synod of Kentucky. In 1817 the Synod of Tennessee was organized, being composed of the Presbyteries of West Tennessee, Shiloh, Union and Mississippi, they being detached from the Synod of Kentucky. The Presbytery of Missouri was attached to the Synod of Tennessee in 1818, but transferred to the Synod of Indiana in 1826. The Presbytery of French Broad was erected in 1825, and of Holston in 1826. The Synod of West Tennessee was formed in 1826, consisting of the Presbyteries of West Tennessee, Shiloh and North Alabama, to which was added, in 1829, the Presbytery of Western District. In 1829 the Presbytery of Mississippi became a part of the Synod of Mississippi and South Alabama, and the Synod of Tennessee was composed of the Presbyteries of Abingdon, Union, French Broad and Holston. These four presbyteries with those of West Tennessee and Western District, representing the strength of the Presbyterian Church within the limits of the State, contained in 1830 an aggregate of nearly 100 churches and 71 ministers.

From this time on until the year 1861 the Presbyterian Church in Tennessee continued to grow and prosper. In that year the General Assembly at Philadelphia passed what has since been known as the Spring Resolutions, which hopelessly divided the Presbyterian Church in the United States. All of the churches in Tennessee, as was to be expected, cast in their lot with the Presbyterian Church South. The history of this movement with its causes, as seen by the Southern Presbyterians, is given largely in the language of the minutes of the Southern General Assembly, and is here introduced. A convention of twenty delegates from the various Presbyteries in the Confederate States of America met at Atlanta, Ga., August 15, 1861, of whom Rev. J. Bardwell was from the Presbytery of Nashville. This convention said with reference to the separation of the Presbyterian Church into two bodies:

"While this convention is far from ignoring the pain of separation from many with whom it has been our delight as Presbyterians to act in former years, it cannot conceal the gratification which it experiences in the contemplation of the increased facilities for doing a great work for the church and for God afforded by the severance of our previous political and ecclesiastical relations.

"Our connection with the non-slave-holding State, it cannot be denied,

was a great hindrance to the systematic performance of the work of evangelization of the slave population. It is true that the Northern portion of the Presbyterian Church professed to be conservative, but the opposition to our social economy was constantly increasing. Conservatism was only a flimsy covering for the evil intent which lay in the heart of the Northern churches. In the last General Assembly Dr. Yeomans, a former moderator of the assembly, regarded as the very embodiment of conservatism, did not hesitate to assign as a reason for the rejection of Dr. Spring's resolution that the adoption of it, by driving off the Southern brethren, would forever bar the Northern church against all efforts to affect a system of involuntary servitude in the South."

At a meeting of ministers and ruling elders which met at Augusta, Ga., December 4, 1861, for the purpose of organizing a General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church of the Confederate States of America, the following members from Tennessee were present: Synod of Memphis—Chickasaw Presbytery, William V. Frierson and H. H. Kimmon; Memphis Presbytery, John M. Waddel, D. D., and J. T. Swayne; the Western District, James H. Gillespie; Synod of Nashville—Holston Presbytery, J. W. Elliott and S. B. McAdams; Knoxville Presbytery, E. O. Currey and Joseph A. Brooks; Maury Presbytery, Shepard Wells; Nashville Presbytery, R. B. McMullen, D. D., and A. W. Putnam; Tusculum Presbytery, James H. Lorange and L. B. Thornton.

The title of the Presbyterian Church of the Confederate States of America, and also the confession of faith, the catechism, the form of government, the book of discipline and the directory of worship were also adopted, only substituting the words Confederate States for United States. At this session of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church of the Confederate States of America an address was delivered setting forth the causes that impelled them to separate from the church of the North, in which they said:

"We should be sorry to be regarded by the brethren in any part of the world as guilty of schism. We are not conscious of any purpose to rend the body of Christ. On the contrary our aim was to permit the unity of the spirit in the bonds of peace. \* \* \* \* \*

We have separated from our brethren of the North as Abraham separated from Lot—because we are persuaded that the interests of true religion will be more effectually subserved by two independent churches. Under the circumstances under which the two countries are placed they cannot be one united body. In the first place the course of the last assembly at Philadelphia conclusively shows that should we remain together the political questions which divide us as citizens will be obtruded upon our

church courts and discussed by Christian ministers and elders with all the acrimony, bitterness and rancor with which such questions are usually discussed by men of the world. A mournful spectacle of strife and debate would be the result. Commissioners from the Northern would meet commissioners from the Southern conferences to wrangle over the question which have split them into two conferences and involved them in fierce and bloody war. They would denounce each other on the one hand as tyrants and oppressors, and on the other as traitors and rebels. The Spirit of God would take His departure from these scenes of confusion, and leave the church lifeless and powerless—an easy prey to the sectional divisions and angry passions of its members.

\* \* \* \* \* The characteristics of the man and the citizen will prove stronger than the charity of the Christian. We cannot condemn a man in one breath as unfaithful to the most solemn earthly interests of his country and his race, and commend him in the next as a true and faithful servant of God. If we distrust his patriotism our confidence is apt to be very measured in his piety. The only conceivable condition, therefore, upon which the church of the North and the South could remain together as one body with any prospect of success, is the vigorous exclusion of the questions and passions of the former from its halls of debate. The provinces of the church and State are perfectly distinct. The State is a society of rights, the church is the society of the redeemed. The former aims at social order, the latter at spiritual holiness. The State looks to the visible and outward, the church to the invisible and inward. The power of the church is exclusively spiritual, that of the State includes the exercise of force. The constitution of the church is a divine relation, the constitution of the State must be determined by human reason and the course of events.

“Had these principles been sturdily maintained by the Assembly of Philadelphia, it is possible that the ecclesiastical separation of the North and South might have been deferred for years. But alas for the weakness of man those golden visions were soon dispelled. The first thing that led our presbyteries to look the question of separation seriously in the face, was the course of the assembly in venturing in determining as a court of Jesus Christ, which it did by necessary implication, the true interpretation of the Constitution of the United States as to the kind of government it intended to form. A political theory was to all intents and purposes propounded which made secession a crime, the seceding States rebellious and the citizens who obeyed them traitors. We say nothing here as to the righteousness or honesty of these decrees. What



we maintain is that whether right or wrong the church had no right to make them. She transcended her sphere and usurped the duties of the State. The assembly, driven from its ancient moorings, was tossed to and fro by the waves of populace; like Pilate it obeyed the clamor of the multitude, and though acting in the name of Jesus, it kissed the scepter and bowed to the mandates of Northern frenzy.

“Though the immediate occasion of separation was the course of the General Assembly at Philadelphia in relation to the General Government and the war, there was another ground on which the independent organization of the Southern church could be scripturally maintained. The unity of the church does not require a formal bond of union among all the congregations of believers throughout the earth. It does not demand a vast imperial monarchy like that of Rome, nor a strictly council like that to which the complete development of Presbyterianism would naturally give rise. As the unity of the human race is not disturbed by its division into countries and nations, so the unity of the spiritual kingdom of Christ is neither broken nor impaired by separation and division into various church constitutions, and so forth.”

The same assembly ventured to lay before the Christian world their views of slavery, and their conclusion was that the church had no right to preach to the South the extirpation of slavery any more than they had to preach to the monarchies of Europe and the despotisms of Asia the doctrine of equality, unless it could be shown that slavery was a sin. For if slavery were not a sin, then it was a question for the State to settle. The assembly then attempted to prove that slavery was not at variance with the Bible, and therefore not a sin. The argument on this point can not be here given, but it was the same that was always relied upon to prove that slavery was not necessarily a sin. Thus was the Presbyterian Church of the South launched upon its individual existence.

The minutes of the General Assembly do not give any statistics of value previous to 1863. The fund for church extension was then but \$142.75, of which \$100 had been appropriated to a church in Tennessee, and \$30 to one in Georgia. In this year according to the best estimate that can be made there were 5,830 members of the Presbyterian Church in Tennessee. In 1865 the name of the church was changed to the Presbyterian Church of the United States. Thus the Spring resolutions compelled the organization of the Southern Presbyterian Church. The necessary result of political legislation by the General Assembly of 1861 was to force the entire Southern constituency out of that connection. The Southern Assembly earnestly asserted that the church was a non-secular, non-political institution, that it was wholly spiritual in its nature

and mission, and entirely separate from and independent of the State, and this position it has ever since maintained. This conception of the true nature of the Church of Christ has caused the Southern Presbyterian Church to reject all overtures made by the Northern General Assembly looking toward a reunion, for both Old and New School Presbyterians in the North (a distinction scarcely known in Tennessee) persisted in the utterance of political doctrines, which, whether true or false, they were inhibited from uttering by the Bible and by their own statute law. These utterances, which the Southern church regards illegal, remain unrepealed and upon the records, preventing the two churches from uniting into one. No disavowal of them has been made, as of words inconsiderately uttered in times of excitement, and until such action shall be taken by the Northern church it is improbable that a reunion will ever be effected. In 1866 in Presbytery of Memphis there were 1,184 communicants; the Presbytery of the Western District, 1,058; Presbytery of Holston, 987; Presbytery of Knoxville, 123; Presbytery of Nashville, 1,320, and in the Presbytery of Alabama, 1,164. Total, 5,836.

In 1870 the following were the number of communicants: Presbytery of Memphis, 1,913; Presbytery of the Western District, 1,034; Presbytery of Holston, 1,571; Presbytery of Knoxville, 856; Presbytery of Nashville, 2,074; Presbytery of North Alabama, including 4 churches in Alabama, 12 in Mississippi and 23 in Tennessee, 1,804; a total of 9,252. In 1880 the following were the statistics: Presbytery of Memphis, 2,041; Presbytery of the Western District, 939; Presbytery of Columbia, 1,713; Presbytery of Holston, 2,030; Presbytery of Knoxville, 1,227; Presbytery of Nashville, 3,388; a total of 11,338. In 1885 the statistics were as follows: Presbytery of Memphis, communicants, 2,055; churches, 36; Sunday-school scholars, 1,448. Presbytery of the Western District, communicants, 1,375; churches 25; Sunday-school scholars, 533. Presbytery of Columbia, communicants, 1,599; churches, 25; Sunday-school scholars, 1,061. Presbytery of Holston, communicants, 2,136; churches, 38; Sunday-school scholars, 1,241. Presbytery of Knoxville, communicants, 1,314; churches, 25; Sunday-school scholars, 1,098. Presbytery of Nashville, communicants, 3,393; churches, 34; Sunday-school scholars, 2,673. Total communicants, 11,872; churches, 183; Sunday-school scholars, 8,054.

The Baptists also profited by the great revival, but perhaps not to the same or a proportionate extent, as did the Methodists. They were in Tennessee as early perhaps as any other denomination. In 1781 they had six organized churches holding relations with an association in North Carolina, which, with a few others, were in 1786 formed into the

Holston Association, the first association formed in the State. Among the first Baptist ministers in East Tennessee were James Keel, Thomas Murrell, Matthew Talbot, Isaac Barton, William Murphy, John Chastine, Tidence Lane and William Reno. These ministers usually settled on farms and made their own living by tilling the soil or by teaching school, preaching Sundays, or at night in schoolhouses, in private houses, in improvised meeting-houses or in the open air, as the case might be. In 1790 the Holston Association had 889 members, and in 1800 it had 37 churches and 2,500 members. In 1802 the Tennessee Association was organized in territory in the immediate neighborhood of Knoxville. Some of the ministers connected with this new organization were Duke Kimbrough, Elijah Rogers, Joshua Frost, Amos Hardin, Daniel Layman and William Bellew. In 1817 Powell's Valley Association was organized with 12 churches. In 1822 Hiwassee Association, consisting of 10 churches, was organized, which, in 1830, was divided into two associations, the new organization being named Sweetwater Association, and being composed of 17 churches and 1,100 members.

In Middle Tennessee the first Baptist Church was organized it is believed in 1786, by Joseph Grammer, on Red River. In 1791 the "Red River Baptist Church" was founded on the Sulphur Fork of Red River. This and other churches in existence at that time were organized into the Mero District Association. Soon afterward other churches were organized in the vicinity of Nashville: Mill Creek Church, four miles south of the city, Rev. James Whitsitt, pastor; Richland Creek Church, six miles west, Rev. John De La Hunte (afterward Dillahunt), pastor, and another church a little further west, of which the Rev. Garner McConico was pastor. On account of internal dissensions this association was dissolved, and in 1803 the Cumberland Association was formed. When this association became too large it was divided into two, the new organization being named the Red River Association. In 1810 the Concord Association was formed, its territory having Nashville for its center. In 1822 this association was divided and Salem formed with twenty-seven churches. Among the ministers active in this part of the State in addition to those mentioned above were the following: Joseph Dorris, Daniel Brown, John Wiseman, Joshua Sester, John Bond and Jesse Cox.

Up to this time there had been but little if any trouble in the church respecting doctrines. There was very general if not universal assent to the great fundamental doctrines of the church, which were strictly and with some of the ministers hyper-Calvinistic. These were particular and unconditional election and reprobation, that Christ died only for the elect, that none of the elect could by any possibility be lost, and that none of



the non-elect could by any possibility be saved. But now the doctrine of election and the extent of the atonement, whether it was general or limited in its design, began to agitate the church. A similar controversy occurred in eastern Kentucky about 1780, resulting in a division of the denomination into regular and separate Baptists. The result in Tennessee was the same, only more widely felt. The origin of this controversy in Tennessee seems to have been as follows: Elder Reuben Ross, who had emigrated from North Carolina in 1807, settling near Port Royal, Montgomery County, and preaching mainly in that and Stewart County for many years, during his early ministry became much troubled and perplexed over the doctrines of election and predestination. He could not reconcile with his own ideas of justice the thought that God in the plenitude of His wisdom and goodness had doomed to everlasting misery and to eternal bliss separate portions of the human race, from before the beginning of time, without reference to their merits or deserts, simply because it was His own will and pleasure so to decree. His study of the sacred Scriptures led him to the opposite conclusion. The sacred writings declare that God's tender mercies are over all His works, that He is no respecter of persons, but in every nation he that fears Him and works righteousness is accepted of Him.

Upon his arrival in Tennessee Elder Ross found his fellow Baptists entertaining rigid Calvinistic views with great tenacity, and although out of respect for the opinions of the many great and good men who had lived and died in that faith he had not publicly opposed their doctrinal teachings, yet he could not but doubt their correctness, and in order to fully satisfy his judgment of the Biblical soundness of his own views he brought to bear on the study of this question all the faculties of his mind, using all the means in his possession to the investigation of a subject which he felt to be one of the most important in the entire range of Christian theology. In the Old Testament no passage bearing upon this subject is more remarkable perhaps than that found in Ezekiel, chapter xviii, verses 21 to 32 inclusive. These various texts seemed to him to prove conclusively that man's salvation is conditional instead of unconditional, and the more he studied the Bible the more settled was he in the conviction that this is the true position. The underlying principle of ends accomplished by the adoption of means is everywhere visible in nature and the world, and using this as an analogy Elder Ross had his conviction strengthened that salvation, if obtained at all, is obtained or achieved by or through efforts put forth by ourselves, or that it is conditioned on the employment of proper means. The first sermon in which this doctrine was clearly and distinctly enunciated was preached in July, 1817,

at the funeral of Miss Eliza Nortfleet, who had died a short time previously at Port Royal, Tenn. This sermon was a remarkable one, not only for the deep impression made on the minds of the auditors, but also for the important consequences which followed. The substance of the sermon was that although the human race is in a state of alienation from God on account of disobedience and rebellion against His laws, yet Christ, by His suffering and death had made an atonement sufficient for the sins of the whole world; that salvation is free to all who will accept the terms, repentance, faith, love and obedience, to become followers of the meek and lowly Jesus; that while the Holy Spirit is given to influence men to believe in Christ, yet He never operates on the human soul in such a way or with such power as to destroy its free agency, and hence with man is left the fearful responsibility of determining whether he will be saved or lost, that the election spoken of in the Bible is not unconditional, but always has reference to character and conduct, etc.

Having finished his sermon he descended from the pulpit or platform erected in a grove of shady trees, and without exchanging a word with any one returned directly to his home, twenty miles distant. His auditors generally approved of the sentiments expressed in his sermons, but a small group of elderly, dignified and gray-haired men, who could clearly see the tendency of such preaching, earnestly attempted to decide on what course it was best to follow. At length it was decided to send Elder Fort to expostulate with Elder Ross upon the strangeness of his views, and to persuade him, if possible, to reconsider his position and save his church from the great reproach that must otherwise come upon it of falling into the grievous heresy of Arminianism. Elder Fort entered upon the execution of his mission, saw Elder Ross, and returned to his friends converted to the views of Elder Ross. The new views spread quite rapidly among the Baptist Churches, as all new views upon religious doctrines are sure to spread more or less widely, whether scriptural or unscriptural, true or false.

The preaching of the new doctrines went on. In some churches the majority of the members were in their favor; in some the majority were in favor of the old, while in others the members were about equally divided. If any one, dissatisfied with the new or old doctrines preached in his church, desired to sever his connection therewith, he was given a letter of dismission to any other church holding views similar to his own. In 1823 Christopher Owen, a worthy member of Spring Creek Church, of which Elder Ross was then pastor, preferred charges against him of preaching unscriptural doctrine, but as the church decided by a unanimous vote that the charge could not be sustained, it was withdrawn. In the

same year a convention of delegates from the churches of the Red River Association met in the Union Meeting-house, Logan County, Ky., for the ostensible purpose of restoring peace within its limits. Upon the meeting of the convention, however, it soon became apparent that many members of the convention were determined upon obtaining peace by bringing Elder Ross to trial and by condemning and suppressing his opinions. A charge was preferred against him of preaching doctrines contrary to the "Abstract of Principles," which took him somewhat by surprise, but upon recovering himself he demanded a trial upon the question as to whether his preaching was contrary to the Bible. This demand took the convention by surprise, and as no member of it was willing to meet him on that ground, his trial did not come off. Peace, however, had departed from the church by the introduction by Elder Ross of his heretical opinions; hence when the association met next year he proposed a peaceful division of the association, upon which proposition the association acted, and as a final result the convention which met October 28, 1825, organized the Bethel Association, into which the following churches entered: Red River, Spring Creek, Drake's Pond, Mount Gilead, Bethel, Little West Fork, New Providence and Pleasant Grove. Afterward Elkton, Lebanon, Mount Zion, Russellville and Union joined the association. The original number of churches in this association was eight, and the membership about 700; before the death of Elder Ross the number of churches had increased to sixty-two, and the membership to more than 7,000, and this, notwithstanding the withdrawal of many of its members to join the movement for reformation which finally culminated in the formation of the Christian Church. The churches that thus seceded and formed the Bethel Association were called Separate Baptists. But after the formation of the Bethel Association and the advent of the "Current Reformation," as Alexander Campbell's movement was called, there were a number of years of comparative peace. Progress had been made, harmony as a general thing had been preserved, and the members of the Baptists had increased in about the same proportion as the population of the State. But the work of evangelization had been performed by individual ministers at their own convenience and expense. About the year 1833, however, a general revival began, and the importance of an organized plan for supplying the destitute with the gospel, and of extending the influence of their denominational principles, was clearly seen and felt. A plan was therefore originated in Middle Tennessee by Garner McConnico, James Whitsitt and Peter S. Gayle, at Mill Creek, near Nashville, in October of this year, a Baptist State Convention being then organized. Three boards were appointed to conduct its affairs, one for each grand



division of the State. This plan being found impracticable, the East Tennessee Baptists withdrew and formed the General Association of East Tennessee, the principal ministers engaged in this work being Samuel Love, James Kennon, Elijah Rogers, Charles Taliaferro, Richard H. Taliaferro, Robert Sneed and William Bellew. This movement imparted new life into the great body of the church, filled the ministry with renewed zeal, and considerably increased the membership of the Baptist Church in the State, though one of the results was the secession of a few thousands of anti-Mission Baptists. One peculiar feature of Baptist evangelization, especially in early days, was this, that their efforts were mainly expended in the country, as was also largely the case with the Methodists, while the Presbyterians, who insisted on an educated ministry, and later the Episcopalians, were for the most part confined to the towns and cities. The result of this division is even yet visible in certain portions of the State.

In 1847 the Baptists in East Tennessee numbered 19,963, of whom 6,573 were anti-Mission. In 1858 the Regular Baptists had increased to 19,103, the anti-Mission portion remaining at about the same numbers as above given, while in 1880 the Regular Baptists amounted to 45,000 white and 2,000 colored, and the anti-Mission Baptists to 5,000, in all a trifle over 52,000.

In Middle Tennessee some years after the division into Regular and Separate Baptists, as the result of Elder Ross' preaching, the doctrines of the reformation reached this part of the country, and produced a profound sensation among all classes of the people. Campbellism and anti-Campbellism were endlessly and bitterly discussed. Quite a number of Baptist preachers embraced Campbellism, and in some instances, where the preacher was of a superior order, almost the entire congregation went over with him. This was the case with the First Baptist Church at Nashville, which had grown up to be a large and flourishing community, having a membership of over 300. Their pastor was the Rev. Phillip S. Fall, who was young and talented. All of the members except about twelve or fifteen went over with their pastor to the reformation. The feature of the new doctrine which had most influence with the people was that of "baptism for the remission of sins." On all occasions the reformers promised forgiveness of sin and the gift of the Holy Spirit to all those who would make the "good confession"—that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, promise to obey the gospel and submit to immersion. The terms seemed so easy that many accepted them and were baptized, while others, fearing that there might be some mistake, hesitated until they should be able to show forth "works meet for repent-

ance." The controversy over the doctrine of the reformation was exceedingly bitter for a number of years: and when the smoke of the battle had cleared away, a new denomination was added to those which some erroneously thought too numerous already, but the Bethel Baptist Association retained its numbers, strength and prestige at the end of the strife, having over some sixty churches within her limits.

The few Baptists who in Nashville adhered to the faith reorganized their church, and for a time had for their pastor Elder P. S. Gayle. In 1833 Elder Gayle resigned, and the church hearing of a remarkable debate at Norfolk between Rev. R. B. C. Howell, of Virginia, and an Episcopal minister, from which the Baptists of Nashville concluded that Dr. Howell was the man needed to combat the heresies of Campbellism, and extended to him a call to the pastorate, which he accepted in 1834. Dr. Howell labored with such ability, enthusiasm and success that within a few years the Baptists in Nashville had regained their lost ground, had built the fine church building on Summer Street between Cedar and Union, and had a membership of over 500.

After the East Tennessee Baptists had withdrawn from the State Convention, as above recorded, those of Middle Tennessee likewise withdrew and formed an independent organization, which they named the General Association of Middle Tennessee. Northern Alabama was afterward added to the association. In addition to its evangelical work, this General Association, aided by each of the other divisions of the State, established Union University at Murfreesboro, which, after a somewhat brief career, was finally suspended in 1873 by a general convention, which established the Southwestern Baptist University at Jackson. In Middle Tennessee the Baptists have the Mary Sharpe Female College at Winchester.

West Tennessee was not favored with Baptist influences until about the time of the revival in 1833. Since then they have made substantial progress. Some of their early pioneer ministers were the following: Jerry Burns, Thomas Owen, P. S. Gayle, C. C. Conner, N. G. Smith,—Collins, George N. Young, J. M. Hurt and David Haliburton. West Tennessee Convention was formed in 1835. By this convention Brownsville Female College was established. In 1876 Middle and West Tennessee dissolved their separate organizations, and with a few churches in East Tennessee, again formed a State Convention. At the end of 100 years' labor of the Baptists in Tennessee, the numbers in the three great divisions of the State were as follows: East Tennessee, 19 associations and 45,000 members; Middle Tennessee, 10 associations and 22,000 members; West Tennessee, 7 associations and 20,000 members. Besides these,

there were in the State about 8,000 anti-Mission Baptists and 20,000 colored Baptists, making a grand total of 115,000 members of Baptist Churches in Tennessee.

The General Association of East Tennessee which covered the ground in the Tennessee Valley, met at Island Home Church, Knox County, October 8, 1885. After full discussion it was resolved to discontinue the organization and to connect themselves with the State Convention; and thus the Baptists of Tennessee became united in their denominational work. The following statistics are giving from the Baptist Year Book for 1886: The entire number of white Baptist associations was 40, and of colored 9; there were 725 white ordained ministers, and 170 colored; 17,068 white Sunday-school scholars, 2,473 colored; 86,455 white church members, and 29,088 colored, and the value of the property belonging to white churches was \$686,860, and of that belonging to colored churches \$35,000; though of the latter, the value was reported from only two associations: Elk River and Stone River. Besides the institutions of learning incidentally mentioned above, there are in Tennessee, belonging to the Baptist denomination, the Western Female College at Bristol, Doyle College at Doyle Station, and Roger Williams University at Nashville.

It is a remarkable fact, that the Episcopal Church\* was considerably later in finding its way into Tennessee than the Presbyterian, Methodist or Baptist. Its numbers were not swelled by converts from the great revival, for that occurred in the first years of the century, from 1800 to 1812 or 1813, while the first congregation of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Tennessee was organized at Franklin, Williamson County, August 25, 1827, by the Rev. James H. Otey. A brief *resume* of the reasons for this late appearance of this denomination in this State is in reality a part of its history, and will doubtless be expected by all the readers of this work. The colonists from England were very generally those individuals who desired to escape from the intolerance of the Church of England. New England was settled by the Puritans, New York mainly by the Dutch, Pennsylvania by the Quakers, and Maryland principally by the Roman Catholics. The preponderating influences among the settlers of Virginia and the Carolinas were against the Church of England; but the great obstacle with which the Episcopal Church in America had to contend was that it had no bishop, no head, no leader, no administrator. Children and adults could be baptized at the hands of the clergy, but no one could have confirmation or the "laying on of hands." Candidates for the ministry were obliged to undergo the hardships and dan-

---

\*Adapted largely from a manuscript history by Rev. W. C. Gray, read before the Tennessee Historical Society, November 11, 1884.



gers of a long ocean voyage, in order to be ordained in England, and in some instances these candidates did not return. In addition to this many of the clergy of the Church of England, residents in this country after the Revolution, either from too little patriotism or too much Erastianism, or other cause, refused to remain in America and returned to England. This action on their part caused the transfer to the remnants of their deserted churches the bitter hatred which was then so bounteously being showered on the mother country. All these unfortunate circumstances led to great laxity of discipline; many unworthy and some who had been deposed continued in this country to exercise their ministerial functions and their evil course of life with impunity; hence the growth of the church was necessarily slow.

While the Episcopal Church was in such an imperfect condition in America, Methodism, which as yet however had not separated from the Church of England, was making a profound impression in both countries, and was drawing multitudes of members out of the church into the new enthusiasm, and preparing the way for the separation which some think came all too soon. But in 1784 the first bishop was consecrated for the American States, and in 1787 two others.

The Rev. James H. Otey, who organized the first Episcopal congregation in Tennessee, was a Virginian by birth, and was educated at Chapel Hill, N. C. He received deacon's orders October 10, 1823, and the office of priest June 7, 1827, at the hands of Bishop Ravenscroft. He was at Franklin, Tenn, which place is now looked back to as the birth-place and cradle of a diocese now rejoicing in its strength. The Rev. Mr. Otey organized his congregation in the Masonic Hall in Franklin, and he preached in Columbia, where he also organized a church. Still later he held occasional services in Nashville. Besides Mr. Otey there was then but one clergyman in the State, the Rev. John Davis, who had been sent by some Northern missionary society. In 1829 there were two additional clergymen in the State. The first convention of the church was held in Masonic Hall, in Nashville, July 1 of that year. The Rt. Rev. John Stark Ravenscroft, D. D., bishop of North Carolina, was present, in spite of failing health and rough roads, to preside and to aid in framing a constitution and canons for the church in Tennessee. On that day was formed the Diocese of Tennessee. Besides the presiding officer there were present at this convention the Rev. James H. Otey, of St. Paul's Church, Franklin; the Rev. Daniel Stephens, of St. Peter's Church, Columbia, and the Rev. John Davis, deacon and missionary. Christ Church, Nashville, was represented in this convention by the following laymen: Thomas Claiborne, George Wilson and Francis B. Fogg;

St. Peter's Church, Columbia, by James H. Piper; St. John's, Knoxville, by G. M. Fogg, and St. Paul's, Franklin, by Thomas Maney, P. N. Smith, B. S. Tappan and William Hardeman. In the report of the committee on the state of the church is found the following: "From what has been effected within a few years past by the exertions of a few who have stepped forward and, under the most discouraging circumstances, lent their aid to advance the interests of religion and virtue among us, we may form the most pleasing anticipations of future success. A few years since the Episcopal Church was hardly known in this State; her spirit-stirring liturgy was unheard within our borders. Now three altars have arisen, and it is cheering to know they are crowded by pious and devoted worshippers of the Most High God." At the time of this convention, so far as was known, there were not fifty communicants in the State.

In 1830 the Church in Tennessee was visited by Bishop Meade, of Virginia, and in that year was held its first diocesan convention. In 1831 Bishop Ives visited the State and presided over the convention held in Christ Church, Nashville, June 28. In 1833 there were in the diocese besides Mr. Otey, five presbyters and one deacon. The necessity of a bishop was sorely felt, and a convention was held in Franklin, on the 27th of June, for the purpose of electing one. The clerical votes fell with great unanimity upon the Rev. James H. Otey for bishop, there being but two votes against him, his own and that of the Rev. George Weller, they being cast for the Rev. William Green, of North Carolina. The nomination was unanimously confirmed by the laity. Mr. Otey's testimonials were signed by the following clergy and laity: Revs. Daniel Stevens, George Weller, Albert A. Muller, John Chilton and Samuel G. Litton, and by Messrs. John C. Wormley, George C. Skipwith, William G. Dickinson, B. S. Tappan, Thomas Maney, Matthew Watson, G. M. Fogg, F. B. Fogg and John Anderson. Several new parishes were received into union at this time, and the committee on the state of the church made an encouraging report. The Rev. Mr. Otey was consecrated bishop, at Philadelphia, January 14, 1834. Upon his return to his diocese he immediately set about devising plans for its more general good. "In his frequent and fatiguing rides through his own and adjacent dioceses he witnessed such an amount of ignorance and prejudice, and such mistaken views of religion, as often to make him groan in spirit. Preaching, preaching, preaching, was all that even the better part of the people seemed to care for. Worship, or prayer, was hardly a secondary consideration; and the ordinances of the church were regarded as little better than signs of church membership, or cloaks, in too many cases, to cover up an immoral life. Each sect gloried

in its peculiar "shibboleth;" the brief and undigested lessons of the Sunday-school constituted the chief, if not the sole, religious instruction of the young; and with few exceptions even the more intelligent seemed to have lost sight of the Church of Christ as a Divine institution, demanding an unquestioning reception of its creeds and ordinances."\* "To such men (as Bishop Otey) are we indebted for the civil and religious liberty which we now enjoy. To him his church is largely indebted for the prosperity which has marked its progress within the diocese over which he was called to preside, and he has bequeathed as a rich legacy to the entire church his spotless name and fame."†

The ignorance of the people of Tennessee with regard to the rites of the Episcopal Church is amusingly illustrated by an incident of his early ministry. One of the rude sons of the forest once said to one of his companions, "Come, let us go and hear that man preach, and his wife jaw back at him;" alluding to the responses made by Mrs. Otey, she being oftentimes the only respondent in the congregation. The clergy of the diocese in the year of the Bishop's consecration numbered 6 priests and 3 deacons, the number of the churches in the entire State had grown to 12, and the aggregate of actual communicants was 117. From this on, although there were numerous obstacles in the church, its growth though slow was steady. The ignorance of the people, and their prejudice against it, were very great. In order to remove the ignorance Bishop Otey's earliest efforts were devoted to the establishment of institutions of learning, based upon the principle of furnishing a Christian education to their students. He opened in his own house in Columbia a school for boys, which he named "Mercer Hall," and he, assisted by Bishop Polk, A. O. Harris and Francis B. Fogg, founded Columbia Female Institute in 1836. At the same time he had in contemplation the project of founding a University for the Southern States. This was undertaken in 1836, but was not consummated until July 4, 1857, when the "University of the South" was formally organized, though the name was not fully adopted until the next year. This organization was effected on the summit of Lookout Mountain, near Chattanooga, there being present at the meeting the Bishops of Tennessee, South Carolina, Georgia, Florida, Alabama, Mississippi and Louisiana, together with some of the leading clergymen of all the Southern dioceses. A board of trustees was appointed and Bishop Otey elected president.

The following incident, which created great excitement, selected from numerous others that might be given with profit, did space permit, to throw

\*Memoir of Bishop Otey, by Rt. Rev. William Mercer Green, D. D.

†Randall M. Ewing.



light upon the history of this church, is here introduced, copied from the "Memoirs," by Bishop Mercer: "On the 8th of August, 1857, the Bishop was called to consecrate a new church at Riverside, in the Eastern part of his diocese, built by Col. N. and the relatives of his wife. This was at a time when what is now generally known as "Ritualism" had gained considerable footing in some of the larger and more advanced Eastern cities, but had yet to plant its first footstep among the mountains and valleys of Tennessee. On arriving at the church, accompanied by Bishop Polk, he beheld a cross on every gate, three crosses on the roof and one on the belfry. On entering the church he found the font at the south door, and on the altar and superaltar a large movable cross, two vases for flowers, and two very large candlesticks, and five other crosses, with multifarious devices upon them. This was rather too much for the uninstructed taste of the Bishop. He had not been initiated among the more 'advanced' of his brethren. He was too old-fashioned to admire or even tolerate such novelties; therefore, at his command, these insignia were all removed before he would proceed to the consecration. Great offense was taken by the worthy family that erected the church, and no regular services were ever after held in it. It was permitted to fall to decay, and no vestige remains to mark the occasion but the site itself, one of the loveliest that could possibly be chosen for a house of God."

Ten years after the consecration of Bishop Otey there were, besides himself, thirteen resident clergymen in Tennessee, and the number of communicants had grown from 117 to about 400. A noticeable feature in the proportionate growth is the increase in the city parishes above that in the country, Christ Church, Nashville, and Calvary Church, Memphis, far outstripping the others in numbers, importance and influence. At the end of another decade there were seventeen clergymen, besides the Bishop, and seventeen parishes, besides the mission stations, and the entire number of communicants was estimated at 800. Quite a number of substantial church edifices had been erected in various parts of the State, a few of them being of stone, as in Nashville and Clarksville, and some of wood, but the most of brick. In 1860, the last year for which there is a Journal of Convention for Bishop Otey's time, the number of clergy was twenty-seven; the number of organized parishes, twenty-six, and the number of communicants, 1,506. For the next five years the great civil war not only effectually checked the growth of the church, but almost destroyed what had been accomplished with such great labor. The attitude of the Episcopal Church was generally the same as that of Bishop Otey, with respect to the war. He was strenuously opposed to both war and disunion, if both could be avoided con-

sistently with the honor and safety of the South; but when he saw that war was inevitable, he nerved himself for the contest, and for final advice and counsel to his flock; but the shock was too great for his once powerful, but now enfeebled system, and no doubt shortened his life. He died on April 23, 1863, having directed that the marble which might cover his remains should bear no other inscription than his name, the dates of his birth and death, and "The First Bishop of the Catholic Church in Tennessee."

The return of peace found the Episcopal Church in Tennessee without a bishop. A call was promptly issued for a convention to assemble in Christ's Church, Nashville, to consider the question of electing a successor to Bishop Otey. Quite a full representative convention assembled on September 8, 1865, when it was found that the Rev. Dr. Quintard was almost unanimously the choice of the convention. Since his election the progress of the church has continued to be steady though slow. In 1884 there were thirty-six white parishes, forty mission stations, and about 4,000 communicants. The charitable institutions of the diocese are numerous and creditable. There is the Orphan's Home at Knoxville, a similar institution at Memphis, where also is St. Mary's School, for girls; St. James Hall is at Bolivar, Fairmount, near Mount Eagle, and there is a fine school at Cleveland; there is a male school at Cleveland, one at Knoxville, one in Chattanooga, one at Mount Pleasant, one at South Pittsburg, but above all is the University of the South.

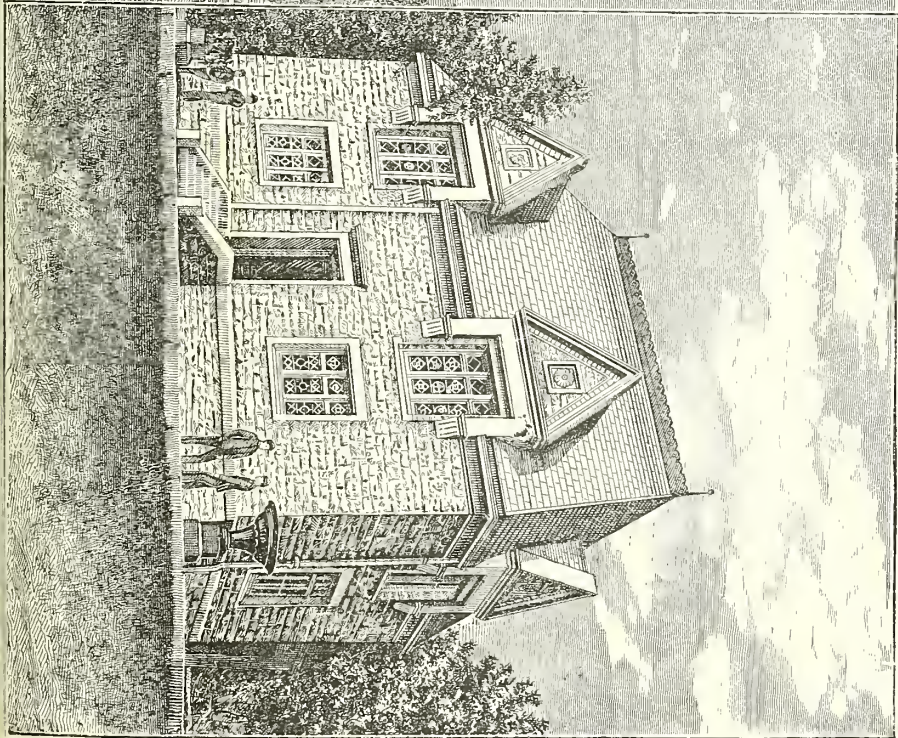
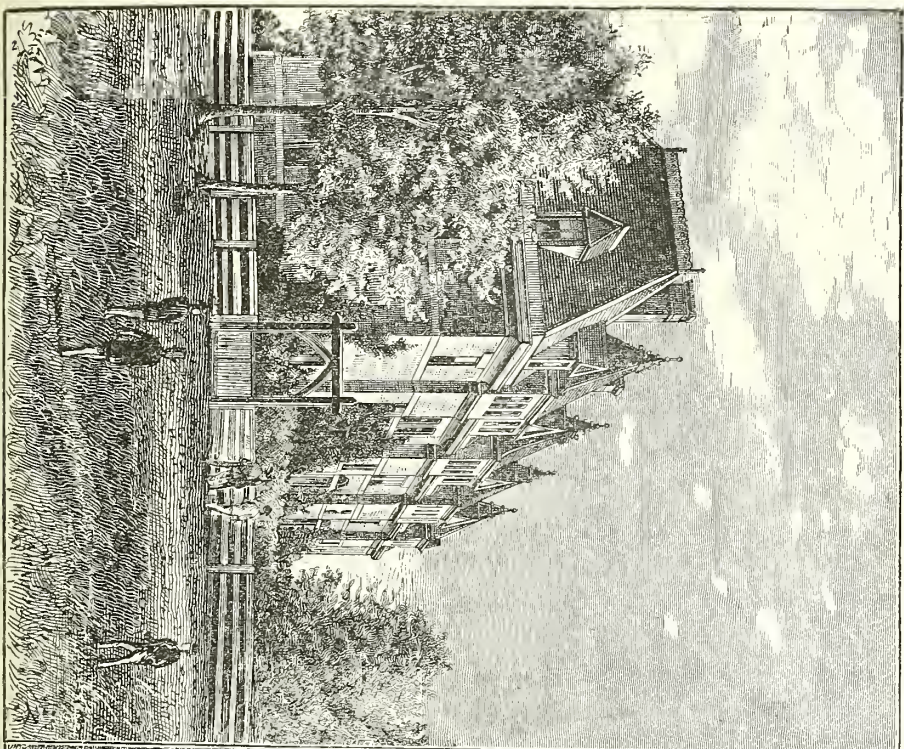
Closely identified with the history of the church and education in Tennessee is the history of the University of the South at Sewanee, Tenn. To Bishop Otey is due the honor of the first conception of the university. In 1836, in an address to his convention, he urged the necessity of an institution maintaining the highest degree of scholarship, and sought the co-operation of adjoining dioceses in founding a great university. He was warmly seconded in his efforts by Rev. Leonidas Polk, then a minister at Columbia, who, subsequently becoming Bishop of Louisiana, took a prominent part in the organization of the University of the South. In 1860 an endowment of over \$500,000 and a domain of 10,000 acres having been secured, the corner-stone of University Hall was laid with great ceremony. In the war, the endowment was lost, and the corner-stone, a massive block of native marble, was broken in fragments and carried away as relics by the Union soldiers. Misfortune proves institutions as truly as it does men. Under the energetic leadership of Bishop Quintard the university began life anew in 1868, with its bare domain and its admirable organization as its only inheritance. Its beginning was an humble one; but maintaining from the first a high stand-

ard of education, it has steadily advanced, till now with 300 students, substantial buildings, and a high reputation at home and abroad, it can see that these past trials have developed strength and proved the wisdom of its scheme of education. The university is to-day organized substantially according to the original plan, which was formulated after a careful study of the leading colleges of Europe and America. A plan which has thus stood the test of adversity is worthy of consideration. Among the causes of success are first, the concentration of the means and patronage of a large section in one institution; second, the maintenance of the highest scholarship (the requirements for degrees here are as severe as at Yale or Harvard); third, the elevation and location, free from malaria, pulmonary trouble and catarrh; fourth, it keeps a home influence over the students by boarding them in private families; fifth, it controls a domain several miles in extent, prohibiting the sale of liquors, gambling and other evils incident to university towns (it is father of the four-mile law in Tennessee); sixth, it is not a sectional but a general institution, having more students from the North than any other school in the South. It is not narrow or bigoted, but teaches a Catholic Christianity as the basis of morality, and religion and science going hand in hand in all completeness of investigation. The vice-chancellor, Rev. Telfair Hodgson, D. D., is executive head of the institution. Elected to that responsible position in 1879, he has shown rare administrative powers, and much of the material prosperity of the university is due to his wise management.

Reference has been made in connection with the account of the great revival to the Rev. Barton W. Stone. He was probably the first in Kentucky and Tennessee to preach the creed which subsequently constituted the doctrines of the reformed or Campbellite Church, as it was called in earlier days, but to which, in more recent times, the name of the Disciples of Christ or Christian Church has been applied. As a result of the labors of the Rev. Barton W. Stone a numerous body had originated in Kentucky and extended somewhat into Tennessee, separating themselves from the Presbyterian communion, having for their object a union of Christians upon the Bible alone.

But the movement which gave immediate origin and distinctive character to the church of the Disciples was started in Pennsylvania, in 1809, by Thomas Campbell aided by his son Alexander. Their original purpose was to heal the divisions in the religious world, and to establish a common basis of Christian union. This, it was thought, could be accomplished by taking the expressed teachings of the Bible as the only guide. After some time a considerable society was formed; and, curiously









enough, as in the case of the Rev. Barton W. Stone, from the Presbyterian Church. This society, by the evolution of thought upon Bible teaching, became one of immersed believers, and soon afterward united with the Red Stone Baptist Association, upon the stipulation that no standard of doctrine or bond of union should be required other than the Holy Scriptures. After some time another doctrine was discovered in the Scriptures, viz.: "Baptism for the remission of sins," which became a distinctive feature of the reformation.

Controversy upon these doctrines increased in the Baptist Church, with which Alexander Campbell was then associated from 1813, when he united with the Red Stone Association in 1827, when he began to form separate church organizations, entertaining his own peculiar views. In order to properly present his view of the doctrine of baptism for the remission of sins, the following extract from his "Christianity Restored," published in 1823, is introduced: "If then the present forgiveness of sins be a privilege and a right of those under the new constitution in the kingdom of Jesus, and if being 'born again,' and being 'born of the water and the spirit,' is necessary to admission, and if being born of water means immersion, as is clearly proved by all witnesses, then remission of sins in this life cannot be received or enjoyed previous to baptism. \* \* The remission of sins or coming into a state of acceptance being one of the present immunities of the kingdom, cannot be received or enjoyed by any one previous to baptism."

Very soon after churches began to be formed on this and the other doctrines of Mr. Campbell, which embraced most of those held by the Evangelical Churches; new organizations soon sprang into existence in Tennessee, embracing the new doctrines, and here and there a Baptist Church went over in a body to the new faith. One of the first of these latter was the Baptist Church at Nashville, Tenn. Of this church, in May, 1826, Rev. Philip S. Fall had become pastor, and it soon became evident that he sympathized with the doctrines taught by Alexander Campbell. The church found themselves in hopeless controversy. The Mill Creek Church, as the senior church of this section, was requested to take action in the matter, but the Nashville Church declined to appear before its bar. The latter church then adopted the ordinance of weekly communions. The minority, powerless in the matter, withdrew, and met for worship October 10, 1830, in the court house. In January, 1828, the Nashville Church adopted the full form of the Disciples' worship, and in May repealed the entire Baptist creed. The church at this time numbered about 450 members. In 1831 the "Stonites" in Kentucky and other Western States united with the Disciples and a strong sect or



denomination was added to the number which the Campbells thought altogether too numerous when they commenced their reformation.

A movement somewhat independent in its nature, made a few years later than this of the Rev. Philip S. Fall, deserves careful mention. It was that of Elders John Calvin Smith and Jonathan H. Young. They had both been immersed by Elder Isaac Denton and had united with the Clear Fork Baptist Church, Cumberland County, Ky., in 1821. In September, 1822, Young and his wife transferred their membership to Wolf River Church, in Overton County, Tenn. In a few years they received letters from this church to a "church of the same faith and order" in East Tennessee, continuing there until 1829, when they moved back to the Wolf River Church, of which John Calvin Smith had in the meantime become pastor, as also of Sinking Spring Church, Fentress County, Tenn. After the reading of the letter for membership in the Wolf River Church, Young asked permission to explain his position relative to the first article of the "Abstracts of Principles." After he had stated his objections thereto and closed a short argument in their favor Smith also expressed his doubts as to the propriety of the first article, and then proposed that a vote be taken on the reception or rejection of Young and his wife into the church. They were unanimously received into fellowship, notwithstanding their objections to the creed. The preaching of Smith and Young became a wider and wider departure from the Baptist creed, and they were advised by their brethren to be more cautious, or they would run into Campbellism. A very prominent Baptist preacher said to Smith, "You will take a little and a little until finally you will 'swallow a camel.'"

Young was informed that he must account to the church for preaching the doctrines which he did, to which he replied that he was received into Wolf River Church with the definite understanding that he was opposed to the use of human creeds and confessions of faith in the church of Christ. He preached an able discourse at Sulphur Meeting-house, in Cumberland County, Ky., setting forth fully his sentiments on the disputed premises. The Wolf River Church was investigated by a commission appointed for the purpose and after able discussions of the question, lasting from July to September, 1831, Young, seeing that he must, if he remained in the Baptist Church, accept the first article, and consequently the whole of the Philadelphia Confession of Faith, proposed that all who were willing to accept the Bible alone, as the only authoritative rule of faith and practice, should rise and stand with him. Seven or eight arose to their feet and stood with Young, and the church proceeded immediately to cut them off for improper treatment of her order. Elder John

C. Smith was also on the same or similar grounds excluded from membership in the Baptist Church. Smith, Young and the others who were cut off, with a few brethren living in the neighborhood, formed themselves into a church which became largely influential.

The formation of other Christian Churches in Tennessee followed with great rapidity during the two decades from 1830 to 1850. Following is a partial list of these churches, with the dates of their organization, so far as could be ascertained, and the counties in which they were located: Two of these churches were organized as early as 1816, though probably as Baptist Churches. The church at Bethlehem, and at Wilson's Hill, Globe Creek, Marshall County, in 1823. Liberty Church, Marshall County, separated from the Richland Association of United Baptists for communing with Christians and assisting to set apart a deacon in that church. At that time it had 126 members; in 1846 it had 450. In 1825 Roane Creek Church, in Carroll County, was organized, and in 1828 Berea Church, in Marshall County, was organized; in 1831 Smyrna Church, Cedar Creek, in Marshall County, and New Herman Church, in Bedford County; in June, 1832, the church at Rutland's Meeting-house, in Wilson County, separated from the Baptists by laying aside their abstract principles and agreeing to be governed by the Bible alone, and the church at Tally's old field was organized this year; in 1833 the church at Paris, Henry County, was organized, and in 1844 they built a very neat church edifice; March 30, 1834, Sylvan Church, Sumner County, was organized with nine members; in 1844, it had 115; the church at Brawley's Fork, Cannon County, and that at South Harpeth, Davidson County, were organized this year; in 1835 Rock Springs Church, Rutherford County, and Sycamore Church, Davidson County, were organized, the former having, in 1844, 130 members; in 1836, Lebanon Church was organized with nineteen members, and reorganized in 1842; the church at Bagdad, Smith County, was organized in 1835; in 1838, Lewisburgh Church, in Marshall County, and in 1839 Big Spring Church, in Wilson County, were organized; in 1840 Trace Creek Church, Jackson County, and that at Long's Meeting-house, Marshall County, and in 1841 a church at Blackburn's Fork, and at Cane Creek, Lincoln County, and the Torny Fork Church, Marshall County, were also organized; in 1842 Hartsville Church, in Sumner County, Salt Lick Church, in Jackson County, and the church at Meigsville, on the Big Bottom, were organized; in 1843 the church at Teal's Meeting-house, Jackson County, Pleasant Hill Church, Buckeye Church, Flynn's Creek, Union Church, Richland Creek, Marshall County, and the Cave Creek Church, Marshall County, were organized, and that at Murfreesboro reorganized

in 1844; the church at Rich Meeting-house was organized, and there were in existence, date of organization not known, the following: 3 in Washington County, with 304 members; 4 in Carter County, with 301 members; 2 in Johnson County, with 124 members, and 2 in Sullivan County with 252 members; in Rutherford County, besides Rock Springs Church, the date of the organization of which has been given above, there were the Spring Creek Church with 40 members, Cripple Creek Church with 130 members, and Big Creek Church with 60 members; in Warren County Hickory Creek and Rocky River Churches; in Wilson County Liberty Church, on Stone River, besides small congregations at Cypress Creek, Blue Water and Bluff Creek; in Livingston County there were 8 churches with 970 members; in McMinn County 4 churches with 150 members.

From 1845 to 1850 churches of this denomination continued to be organized at about the same rate, since which time their numbers do not seem to have increased so rapidly. In 1872 there were in the United States 500,000 Disciples or Christians, of which number Tennessee could not have had over 15,000. Since then, this sect has grown and prospered, especially in the Southern and Western States, but recent statistics, as applicable to Tennessee, are not easily obtainable. For about thirty years the Christians had a flourishing college of high grade five miles east of Nashville in Davidson County, named Franklin College, which has now ceased to exist, most of the advanced students of the denomination finding Bethany College, in West Virginia, better prepared to meet their wants. Since 1844 a valuable periodical has been published at Nashville under the different names of *The Christian Review*, *Christian Magazine* and *Gospel Advocate*, the latter name having been in use since 1855.

On May 10, 1821, Rt. Rev. Bishop David, accompanied by Rev. Father Robert Abell, arrived in Nashville, and was received by M. De Munbreun, who entertained them at his house. The following day the first mass offered in Tennessee was said. Previous to this time but four missionary visits had been made to the State since the early French settlements, and the number of Catholics in the State did not much exceed 100. Tennessee then formed a part of the diocese of Bardstown, Ky., which also included Kentucky and an extensive territory to the west, and which had constituted the bishopric of Rt. Rev. Bishop Flaget. During the visit of Bishop David a proposition to establish a congregation in Nashville was made, and met with hearty approval from both Catholics and Protestants. Rev. Father Abell, who accompanied the bishop, preached every evening during his stay in the city, and a wide-spread



interest was aroused. It was not, however, until 1830 that a church was erected on the north side of what now constitutes the Capitol grounds. Father Abell proceeded to Franklin, where there was one Catholic family and where he held services. He also went to Columbia and delivered a sermon at that place.

In 1834 the diocese was reduced to Kentucky and Tennessee, and in 1837 the latter was made a separate diocese, known as the diocese of Nashville, of which the Rt. Rev. Dr. Richard Pius Miles was consecrated bishop September 18, 1838. He was a native American and descendant of a Maryland family. Congregations had already been organized at several points in the State, and mission work was pushed forward with the energy and zeal characteristic of the Catholic Church. In 1859 the work, having considerably increased, became too arduous for the failing strength of Bishop Miles, and in May of that year Rt. Rev. Bishop James Whelan was appointed his coadjutor, with right of succession. On the death of Bishop Miles, which occurred February 1, 1860, he entered upon his duties, and remained until his resignation in 1863. He was succeeded as administrator of the diocese by the Rev. Father Kelly, a Dominican priest, who remained until November, 1865. He was then relieved by the Rt. Rev. Bishop Patrick A. Feehan, of St. Louis, who was consecrated in that city on the first day of that month. He continued in charge of the diocese until June, 1883, when he was succeeded by the Rt. Rev. Joseph Rademacher. While the Catholic Church in Tennessee does not embrace so large a membership in proportion to population as many other States, it is due rather to the small foreign element than a lack of prosperity or wise management. The Catholic population of the State at the present time is estimated by the bishop of the diocese at from 20,000 to 25,000, of which about 8,000 are residents of Nashville, and 10,000 or 12,000 of Memphis. The number in the latter city was greatly reduced by the yellow fever epidemic of 1878-79. Chattanooga and Knoxville also have large congregations. The whole number of churches in the diocese in 1886 was thirty.

The church supports a large number of excellent schools and academies, and one college. One of the best known institutions for young ladies is the Academy of St. Cecilia, at Nashville. This school was established in 1860 by six ladies from St. Mary's Literary Institute, Perry County, Ohio, and has long enjoyed a high reputation for the excellence of its management. The Christian Brothers College, of Memphis, was chartered in 1854. It has an attendance of about 200 pupils, and is presided over by Brother Maurelian.

The Lutherans are among the oldest denominations in Tennessee,

congregations of whom were organized as early as 1800. The first Lutheran church in Middle Tennessee was established about 1825 by Rev. William Jenkins. It was located near Shelbyville, on Duck River, and was known as the "Shaffner Church." The growth of the denomination in the State has been somewhat slow, owing to the small foreign immigration. The number of ministers, too, has never equaled the demand, consequently many Lutherans have united with other denominations. In 1850 there were twelve organizations in the State; in 1860 eighteen, and 1870 twenty-two. The membership at the present time is about 9,000, of which much the larger part is in East Tennessee. It is divided among three district synods, as follows: Middle Tennessee Synod, a district of the General Synod, numbering 910 members; Holston Synod, with a membership of 1,566, and forming a district under the General Council, and the Tennessee Synod (independent), with a membership of 8,185. Only a portion of the last named is included in the State of Tennessee. The Holston Synod supports a very excellent college at Mosheim, in Greene County. It was first organized in 1869, and after a suspension of several years was reopened in 1884.

The oldest Jewish congregation in Tennessee is the "Children of Israel," organized in Memphis in 1852. In October, 1851, a benevolent society was organized in Nashville, at the house of Isaac Gershon, with Henry Harris as president. A room was rented for a synagogue on North Market Street, near the Louisville depot, and divine worship was held, the president officiating as reader. Two years later the first rabbi, Alexander Iser, was engaged, and soon after the first Hebrew congregation in Nashville was formed under the name of Magen David, "Shield of David." The next year, 1854, the organization was chartered by the Legislature.

In 1862 the first reform congregation was organized under the name Benij Jioshren, with Rabbi Labshiner in charge. After an existence of about six years the two congregations united, in 1868, under the name of K. K. Ahavah Shoelem, "Lovers of Peace." Soon after the Rev. Dr. Isedor Kaleish was elected as rabbi. The congregation then, as they had done for several years, worshiped in Douglass Hall, on Market Street, at the corner of the public square. After three years Dr. Kaleish was succeeded by Dr. Alexander Rosenspitz, who remained in charge of the congregation about the same length of time as his predecessor. In 1876 a lot on Vine Street, between Church and Broad, was purchased, and the erection of the present handsome temple was begun. It was completed the following year and dedicated by Dr. Rosenspitz. In 1878 Dr. Rosenspitz was succeeded by Dr. J. S. Goldamer, a native of Vienna,

and a graduate of the university of that city; also a graduate in philosophy and Jewish theology at the Rabbinical College, at Preszburg. He is eminent as a Hebrew scholar, and previous to his coming to Nashville was in charge of a congregation in Cincinnati for twelve years. He succeeded in introducing the American ritual and mode of worship in the place of the old Polish form, in conformity with the free institutions of this country and the progressive spirit of the age. A choir was also organized. It is recognized as one of the best in the city, and renders in an excellent manner the Jewish sacred music.

The adoption of the new ritual was displeasing to a small portion of the congregation, who under the name of K. K. Adath Israel formed a new society by electing I. B. Cohen, president, and L. Rosenheim, vice-president. The organization remains much the same at the present time, and continues to worship according to the orthodox mode. In 1885, at a cost of \$12,000, a chapel and vault was erected, which is considered the finest structure of the kind in the United States.

In 1864 a congregation was organized at Knoxville under the name of Beth El, or "House of God." The membership has never been very large, and now embraces about twelve families, with E. Samuel as president and E. Heart as secretary.

A congregation was organized at Chattanooga in 1867, and now numbers about twenty-seven families, under the care of Rabbi Julius Ochs. Dr. M. Bloch is president of the society, and Joseph Simpson, secretary. The church property is valued at \$5,000. At Murfreesboro a few years ago a congregation was organized with a membership of sixteen or seventeen families, but owing to the removal of a large number from the town, only three or four families remain, and the organization is not maintained. Columbia and several other towns have small organizations, but no rabbis are employed. Almost every town in the State has one or more Jewish families, nearly all of whom upon the most important days especially, New Year's day and the Day of Atonement, attend services in the larger cities, as Memphis, Nashville or Chattanooga.

The Jewish Church throughout the State is in a very prosperous condition, and is pervaded with a spirit of liberality and toleration in keeping with the age. The congregation at Nashville under the care of Rabbi Goldamer, during the past eight years has increased from fifty-four to 135 families. The Sabbath-school children number 108. The annual expenses of the church are about \$5,500. Its property is valued at \$25,000. The president of the society is L. J. Loewenthal; the secretary, M. Wertham. The congregation at Memphis numbers 110 families under the care of Dr. M. Samfield. Its property is valued at \$40,000. Its annual expenses



are \$6,500. The Sabbath-school children number 120. The president of the congregation is E. Lowenstein; the secretary, Samuel Hirsch.

Previous to the civil war there were but few separate or independent colored churches in Tennessee, the institution of slavery being inimical to such separate organizations. But there were many colored members of white churches, especially of the Methodists. Since the war the colored people have organized churches of their own all over the State, and at the present time a colored member of a white church, if ever, is a very rare occurrence. Most of the churches of this race belong to the Methodist or Baptist denominations, these denominations being usually more demonstrative and emotional in their devotion than others; still there are Colored Episcopal, Congregational and other churches. It is altogether probable that a larger proportion of the colored race than of the white race belong to their various churches, the intelligence of the former not being as yet sufficiently developed to permit them to rest easy outside the pale of the church.

---

## CHAPTER XIX.

BIOGRAPHY OF EMINENT CITIZENS—A COMPREHENSIVE SKETCH OF THE SOCIAL AND PROFESSIONAL CHARACTER, THE DOMESTIC RELATIONS AND THE PUBLIC SERVICES OF A NUMBER OF DISTINGUISHED TENNESSEANS.

THE family of John Sevier was of French origin, the name originally being Xavier. On account of their being Huguenots they were exiled from France and went to England. They arrived in that country about the beginning of the last century. Valentine Sevier, the father of John Sevier, was born in London, and some time previous to 1740, following the tide of emigration westward, he crossed the Atlantic and settled in the Shenandoah Valley in the colony of Virginia. Here John Sevier was born in the year 1744, and here too his boyhood days were spent. His opportunities for literary attainments were very limited, but what were afforded were well improved.

Under the auspices and patronage of Lord Dunmore, who was then governor of Virginia, young Sevier received a captain's commission in the King's troops. Once driven from home it was difficult for the family to find a new one that gave satisfaction. The glowing pictures of the West, with its beautiful valleys and picturesque scenery, led Valentine Sevier, the father, to again change his home. The Sevier family settled

on the Holston in what is now Sullivan County, but Valentine above mentioned settled on the Watauga, "the beautiful river." Here Valentine Sevier made a permanent settlement between Sycamore Shoals and Elizabethton, and here he lived to a green old age. The early settlers in this section thought they were settling within the territorial limits of Virginia, but soon found they were under the jurisdiction of North Carolina. For a number of years these settlers had to contend alone against the Indians and other enemies of the new settlement. Doubtless this independent schooling had something to do in shaping the character of John Sevier. In 1772 the settlers held an election in this new colony and chose thirteen commissioners, whose duty it was to exercise the functions of government. Out of the thirteen chosen five were elected a court, "by whom all things were to be settled." The district of this settlement was called the District of Washington. John Sevier was chosen one of the thirteen commissioners and one of the five out of the thirteen for a court. While a member of this court and commissioner Sevier addressed a memorial to North Carolina urging her to extend her government over the Washington District. The appeal was successful, and in 1776 he was chosen a member of the Legislature of that State and assisted in forming the constitution for North Carolina. The territorial limits of the States had been better defined and instead of extending to the South Sea the Mississippi River was recognized as the western boundary. In setting forth the boundaries of North Carolina it may be said the germ from which sprang Tennessee was planted. The language of the boundary of North Carolina, which says that the "boundary shall not be construed as to prevent the establishment of one or more governments westward of this State by consent of the Legislature," is the language of Sevier. On the outbreak of the Revolution Sevier threw all of his wonderful influence in favor of the infant Republic. His home was ever the rendezvous of the leading Whigs, and frequently was the place of meeting of the clans preparatory to a descent upon the British and Tories or the Indians. The history of his work in the Revolutionary and in the Indian wars is given in the military chapter of this work. After the battle of King's Mountain thirty of the Tory prisoners were condemned to death. It was decided to hang only twelve of them. Cols. Sevier and Campbell determined, after eleven had been hanged, to save the twelfth man. The officer in charge of the work was much more zealous in hanging unarmed men than he had been in fighting the armed British, and seemed determined on carrying out sentence on the last. Col. Sevier ordered the work stopped, saying he was sick of it, and said to the officer: "If you had been as industrious in killing soldiers this

morning as you are this evening in hanging prisoners we would not have had so many to hang."

After the close of the Revolutionary war the several States ceded their surplus territory to the General Government. By the cession act of June 1, 1784, North Carolina ceded the whole State of Tennessee, including four organized counties. These counties were left without any government, in fact, about in the same condition as they were previous to the Revolution. They elected two men from each captain's company to meet in convention at Jonesborough on August 23, 1784. Of this assembly John Sevier was chosen president. The cession act was repealed in November, and Col. Sevier was made a brigadier-general for North Carolina. A second convention was called, of which Sevier was again made president. A legislature was elected, and Col. Sevier was chosen governor of the new State called Franklin, a position which he held from 1784 to 1788, when Franklin again became subservient to North Carolina. Gov. Sevier announced the separation and independence of Franklin. Gov. Martin, of North Carolina, declared the mountaineers rebellious subjects; likewise did Gov. Caswell. Counter proclamations were issued by Sevier. Gov. Johnson directed Judge Campbell to issue a bench warrant against Sevier for high treason. The warrant was directed to Col. John Tipton, a North Carolina rival of Sevier, who arrested him. To prevent his rescue Sevier was taken across the mountains to Morganton, where court convened to try him for high treason. The friends of Sevier also went to Morganton, and entered the court room and attracted the attention of the court while the prisoner made his escape. In 1789, with the indictment still against him, Sevier was sent to the Senate of North Carolina. After he was sworn in a motion was made to inquire into Sevier's conduct, but was lost by an overwhelming majority. In March, 1790, he was elected to Congress and took his seat in that body in June, being the first representative from the Mississippi Valley in that body. North Carolina again ceded her territory west of the mountains to Congress. President Washington appointed William Blount territorial governor, who in turn appointed John Sevier as brigadier-general of the territory. On the removal of the seat of the new territory to Knoxville, Sevier left Nollichucky and settled near Knoxville, and after a time he moved into the city. He was one of the commissioners with Blount in a great treaty with the Indians on the Holston River. On August 25, 1794, he was appointed a member of the Legislative Council of the territory, and in a few days he was made one of the trustees of Blount College, now East Tennessee University. He remained an active member of the trustees till his death. On September



23, 1794, he introduced a bill incorporating Knoxville, and in a short time assisted in the establishment of Washington College.

In 1796 the territory southwest of the Ohio became the State of Tennessee. Writs of election were directed to the sheriffs, directing them to hold a general election on March 28, 1796, for the election of members of the General Assembly and governor. The choice for governor fell upon John Sevier. He was re-elected in 1797 and again in 1799. Being ineligible for a fourth term he was out two years, when he was again elected for three terms in succession. This brought him to the year 1811, when he was chosen a member of Congress from the Knoxville District, and again elected in 1813. This was during the period of war with Great Britain. He rendered efficient service on the committee of military affairs during that period. In 1815 Mr. Monroe appointed him commissioner to run the boundary line of the lands ceded by the Creeks to the United States. He left his home in Knoxville in June, and in September was taken sick of miasmatic fever and died on the 24th of the month at the Indian town Tuckabatchie. He was buried by a detachment of United States soldiers under Capt. Walker, on the east bank of the Tallapoosa, near Fort Decatur, Ala. While he was away on official duty to find his grave, his constituents at home again elected him to a seat in Congress, but it is doubtful if he ever heard of his election. He is described as being five feet ten or eleven inches in height, with a most symmetrical well-knit frame, inclining in late years to fullness; his ordinary weight about 140 or 150 pounds; his complexion ruddy, fair skin; his eyes blue, expressive of vivacity, benignancy and fearlessness; the nose not aquiline but prominent, with a mouth and chin of chiseled perfection. His form was erect and his walk rapid. He was exceedingly colloquial, urbane, convivial and of most commanding presence. His dress was always neat. He claimed to be the best equestrian in the country, and spent much of his time on horseback. It is said that his individuality was so great that a stranger would never have difficulty in pointing him out in an assembly upon being told that John Sevier was there. He was a military leader for nearly twenty years, and fought thirty-two pitched battles but was never defeated, even in a skirmish. His plan of battle was the impetuous charge, of which he was the leader. He it was that introduced the Indian war-whoop into civilized warfare, and which struck the British with such terror. He was in many desperate hand-to-hand encounters, but was never wounded. During all his military service, except the last, he never received a cent. His house was the place of rendezvous for his men, and a general without commission he enforced discipline. Men die without any public service and

have towering shafts of marble erected to their memory, yet John Sevier, who founded a great State and gave it forty years of public service, died and not only no monument marks his grave, but even his burial place is unknown.

Gen. James Robertson,\* "the father of Tennessee," was born in Brunswick County, Va., on the 28th of June, 1742. While he was yet a youth his parents moved to Wake County, N. C., where he grew to manhood and married Miss Charlotte Reeves. When that event occurred he had already obtained the rudiments of an education, and as Wake County at that time was the center of the intelligence and culture of the colony, he had laid the foundation of the broad and liberal character for which he was ever distinguished. He had also become imbued with the spirit of liberty which was invading every American colony, and in 1770, to escape the oppression of the tyrant Tryon, he resolved to seek a home beyond the mountains. Accordingly in the spring of that year, with a small party, of whom Daniel Boone is believed to have been the leader, he visited the few settlers who had already located on the Watauga, and being favorably impressed with the country decided to make his home among them. He returned to Wake County after having made a crop, and it is thought he participated in the battle of Alamance, May 16, 1771. Soon after that event, with his wife and child, he again set out on a journey over the mountains to the Watauga, which was reached in safety. Soon after his arrival it was determined to form some sort of government, and he took an active part in securing the adoption of a set of written articles of government, which all agreed to support. In the early part of 1776 he was one of the committee who drew the petition for the annexation of Watauga to North Carolina.

As an Indian diplomatist, Gen. Robertson had no superior and very few equals. In 1772 he was chosen to visit and pacify the Cherokees, who had been aroused by the murder of one of their number by a hunter. This he successfully accomplished, and by his courage, address and friendly manner won the regard of the chiefs, with whom he remained several days. Two years later, in October, he participated in a battle with the Indians on the banks of the Kanawha, whither a company under Col. Isaac Shelby had gone to aid the settlers in West Virginia, then in danger of destruction by the Shawanees and their allies. In July, 1777, the Cherokees having become troublesome, Gen. Robertson, co-operating with a force from Virginia, invaded their country and compelled them to sue for peace. During the same year he was appointed temporary agent

---

\*So much has been written concerning Gen. Robertson that only a brief outline of his life is here presented.

of North Carolina, and sent to Chota, "the beloved town" of the Cherokees, where he resided for some time, and while there rendered himself popular with the chiefs.

In 1779 Robertson determined to remove still further west, and in February, accompanied by a party of eight, he set out to examine and locate land in the Cumberland, and to raise a crop of corn for the support of those who were to come out in the fall. The hardships and privations endured in the founding of the Cumberland settlements have been described in another chapter, and will not be here repeated. During all of these troublesome times, and up to his death, Gen. Robertson was looked upon as a counselor and leader by all the colonists. Under the Government of the Notables he was the president of the committee or the judges, and upon the organization of Davidson County was one of the justices appointed to hold the county court. He was also the first representative of the county to the General Assembly of North Carolina, and continued by successive elections until the organization of the Territorial government. He was then commissioned by Washington major-general of the Mero District.

As a legislator Gen. Robertson displayed the highest qualities of the statesman, and he could no doubt have attained eminence in a wider field. Although the Assembly of North Carolina had evinced a disposition to ignore the settlements west of the Cumberland Mountains, he succeeded in securing the passage of many acts for the benefit of his county, notably among which was one providing for the establishment of Davidson Academy; another provided for a superior court of law and equity, and a third prohibiting the establishment of distilleries in Davidson County. In 1795 he resigned his commission as commander of the Mero District, and the following year was appointed Indian agent. In March, 1805, he was sent on a mission to the Chickasaws and Choctaws, and in July following, in company with the Indian agent, Dinsmore, met the chiefs of the former nation and obtained a total relinquishment of the title to a large tract of their land east of the Mississippi. In November a treaty was concluded with the Choctaws.

During the war of 1812 Gen. Robertson rendered his last and greatest service to his country. Through his influence with the Indians, the Choctaws, Chickasaws and Cherokees, were induced to aid the United States against the Creeks and the British, and the people of Tennessee were saved from the horrors of an Indian war. Gen. Robertson had long been subject to neuralgia, and while at the Chickasaw Agency he was seized with an attack of great violence, which ended his life September 1, 1814. His remains were interred at the agency, where they



rested till the year 1825, when they were removed to the cemetery at Nashville. By his side now rest the remains of his wife who survived him until June 11, 1843. They had eleven children, seven sons and four daughters. Two sons were killed by the Indians; one daughter died in infancy. Felix Robertson, one of the sons, was born at the Bluff January 11, 1781, and was the first white child born in the settlement.

The ancestors of Judge John Haywood emigrated from England at an early period and settled in the city of New York, from which place they moved to Norfolk, Va. The destruction of the town with the home of the Haywoods led the grandfather, William Haywood, to seek a home elsewhere. He moved to near the town of Halifax, on the Roanoke, N. C. Egbert Haywood, the father of Judge John Haywood, became a farmer in the neighborhood. He was a man of ordinary means, and had little desire for books or social culture, caring more for field sports or the chase than literary attainments.

John Haywood, son of the above, was born March 16, 1762, at the family estate in Halifax County, N. C. The country afforded little opportunity for an education: not only were there few schools, but there were few educated teachers. The father being comparatively poor, he was unable to send his son to a foreign country or even a neighboring province to school, as was the case with those more favored by fortune. The want of public schools was in some instances supplied by private teachers. In his early life he attended a private academy taught by a Rev. Mr. Castle, from whom he obtained a knowledge of the elements of an education. He acquired some knowledge of Latin, Greek, geography and other branches. His knowledge of any one branch of learning at this time was general rather than special. At an early period in his career he formed a resolution to study law, a profession for which he was well fitted by nature. He was without books, without money, and without an instructor. He began his studies by reading some of Raymond's reports, which were couched in the stilted and circumlocutory style of the period, and interspersed with innumerable Latin and French phrases. He soon rose to prominence at the bar. He made his first argument before the supreme court at the age of twenty-four. He displayed such ability in this case as to attract marked attention, and he was no longer without clients. In 1794, as attorney-general, he procured not only the reconsideration but the reversal of judgment by the supreme court of a case decided unconstitutional the year preceding. In 1794 he became one of the judges of the superior court of law and equity, a position which he held five or six years. While on the bench he collected the decisions of the supreme court of North Carolina from 1789 to 1798.

After leaving the bench he again began the practice, which he followed in North Carolina till 1807, when he moved to Davidson County, Tenn., and settled about seven miles from Nashville. The reputation Judge Haywood had made both as a lawyer and a judge in North Carolina soon brought him into prominence before the Tennessee bar. This was at a period when many persons were involved in suits over land claims and titles. Judge Guild, who was examined by Judge Haywood in October, 1822, for license to practice law, describes his visit to the judge as being somewhat peculiar. He found the judge lying out in his yard on a bull-hide in the shade. He looked as large as a sleeping bullock, as his weight was about 350 pounds. He found him grim, and when he told his business the judge began growling and grumbling, and said he did not see why he should be disturbed. He called two negro men, and had them take the bull-hide by the tail and drag him farther into the shade. He then began a very long and searching catechism on the law. He grew very communicative, and was well pleased with his work. Then followed a long lecture of advice, covering almost the whole of moral and legal ethics. He is said to have been agreeable in his manner, fond of society, and entertaining to the highest degree in his conversation. He kept his law office and library at his home in the country, and compelled his clients to attend on him there. Aside from his law studies Judge Haywood found time to pursue a wide field of literary pursuits. He published a work called "Natural and Aboriginal History of Tennessee," containing about 400 pages. In this he treats of the Indians, their usages, etc., earthquakes, dreams, ghosts, goblins, bones of giants, pygmies, mastodons, caves and strange voices in air, portents, signs and wonders, all very curious and interesting. He also published in 1823 his "History of Tennessee," a book of about 500 pages, covering the period of settlement from 1768 to 1795. The "Evidences of Christianity" followed. Many of Judge Haywood's conclusions in his literary works are based on very little evidence. That close reasoning that characterizes his legal conclusions is followed in his other works; but is based upon insufficient evidence, and is therefore very often erroneous. Much of his writing is speculative and highly imaginative. One very curious argument Judge Haywood uses to prove that the Hebrews and Indians were the same people is to quote I Samuel, xviii: 27, to prove that the Hebrews scalped their enemies, as well as did the Indians. Many of his other arguments are in a similar vein.

Judge Haywood died at his home near Nashville December 22, 1826, in the sixty-fourth year of his age. He died after a few days' illness, his death being hastened from his great corpulency. Judge Haywood

left six children—three sons and three daughters: Thomas Haywood, a lawyer and teacher of classic education, died in 1868 near the Nolensville pike, about six miles from Nashville; Dr. George was a well-known physician of Marshall County; Dr. Egbert Haywood was a resident of Brownsville, Haywood County; one of the daughters married Dr. Moore, of Huntsville, Ala.; a second married Col. Jones, of Tuscumbia, and the third married Col. S. Jones, of Limestone County, Ala.

The ancestry of William Blount has been traced with certainty to the invasion of England by William the Norman in 1066. The name was originally Le Blount, and from the successful issue of invasion to the Normans the two brothers accompanying the expedition became owners of large landed estates. In 1669 Thomas Blount, great-grandfather of William Blount, with two brothers emigrated to Virginia, where one of the brothers settled and became the head of a long line of descendants. The other two brothers moved to North Carolina and settled in the vicinity of Albemarle. Jacob Blount, father of William Blount, was born in Bertie County, N. C., in 1726, and was married to Barbary Gray, a lady of Scotch ancestry, in 1744, by whom he had eight children. On the death of his wife he married a daughter of Edward Salten, by which union there were five children. Jacob Blount was a member of North Carolina Assembly in 1775-76. His death occurred at his country seat in Pitt County in 1789. William Blount, eldest son of Jacob Blount, was born in Bertie County, N. C., March 26, 1749. Jacob Blount is said to have been a man of considerable estate, and to have educated his large family in accordance with his ample means and social standing. It is probable that the training of his sons was more in the line of the practical than of the theoretical, that their training was more of action than of letters. William in early life rose to prominence by personal worth, and was married February 12, 1778, to Mary, a daughter of Col. Caleb Grainger. He and his father participated in the battle of Alamance, May 16, 1771, and all the brothers were leading spirits in the Revolutionary war. Her half-brother, Willie, was for a time his private secretary; was judge of the supreme court of Tennessee, and was governor of the State from 1809 to 1815.

William Blount was a member of the General Assembly of North Carolina the most of the time from 1780 to 1790. He was a member of the Continental Congress from that State in 1783-84, and again in 1786-87. His native State was active in the preliminary conventions which led to the final convention at Philadelphia, in 1787, of which he was a member. When the action of the convention was referred to the States, Blount used his whole power in the State convention for its ratification.





FROM PHOTO BY THUSS, KÖLLEIN & GIER, NASHVILLE

WILLIAM BLOUNT



He is said to have been "a vigilant agent of his State and the faithful guardian of the interests of North Carolina" at the treaty of Hopewell with the Cherokees, November 28, 1785. He always took an active interest in the Western settlements and was ever a zealous friend to the Indians. His good influence was used with them in securing some of the most important and liberal treaties with the Cherokees, Choctaws and Chickasaws. The ordinance and the act amendatory to it for the government of the territory southwest of the Ohio River, passed August 7, 1789. This was after the second session act of North Carolina, which was intended to simplify matters and strengthen the hands of the General Government. From personal acquaintance with Gov. Blount, made at the constitutional convention, and knowing his worth and acquaintance with the affairs of the new Territory, Gen. Washington appointed him Territorial governor. His commission was received August 7, 1790, and on October 10 he entered upon his duties. He first took up his residence at the home of William Cobb, at the forks of the Holston and Watauga Rivers, and called around him the ablest men of the Territory to assist in his government. By the unanimous recommendation of the Legislature, he was appointed by President Washington as superintendent of Indian affairs. He made a tour of inspection of the Territory to inquire into the wants and needs of the people. The Indians with whom he was to treat were included in the tribes of the Creeks, Cherokees, Chickasaws and Choctaws. This was one of his most difficult tasks. The boundaries of these were not well-defined and some of the stipulations of former treaties not carried out. Many white men had settled upon the territory of the Indians, and this gave cause for complaint by the Indians. British and Spanish intrigue was at work upon the Indians, and to prevent complications with these countries his instructions were to adopt defensive measures only in dealing with the Southern Indians, although surrounded by from 30,000 to 50,000 warriors. Considering the difficulties of the surroundings, he managed with commendable prudence. Being restrained as he was, many private injuries were inflicted by the Indians, which he was unable to punish; hence arose complaints, the grounds for which he was not responsible.

Gov. Blount called the Legislative council and the House of Representatives in extra session at Knoxville on June 29, 1795, to take steps toward the formation of a State constitution. An act was passed July 11, 1795, ordering a census and a vote on the question of forming a State constitution. The result of this poll was announced by the governor November 28, 1795, there being 6,504 votes for and 2,562 votes against a State constitution. On the same day he ordered a general



election to be held December 18 and 19, for the election of five persons from each county to assemble in Knoxville January 11, 1796, to draft a State constitution. The final announcement of the passage of the act took place February 6, 1796. On March 30 the names of William Blount and William Cocke were proposed for United States Senators, and on the following day were unanimously elected. The Legislature met again on July 30, and Congress in the meantime having declared the March election of senators illegal, from the fact that the State had not been admitted, these men were again elected on August 2. Gov. Blount took his seat in the Senate December 5, 1796. July 3, 1797, President Adams sent a message to both Houses of Congress, stating that the condition of the country was critical. The grounds for this suspicion was some correspondence Mr. Blount had had with various parties, which led to the belief that he had entered into a conspiracy to transfer the territory of New Orleans and Florida to Great Britain through the influence of an English army and the assistance of the Indians, who were to be drawn into the scheme. Five days after the giving of the notice Mr. Blount was expelled from the Senate on a charge of having been guilty of "high misdemeanor, entirely inconsistent with his public trust and duty as a senator." The vote stood twenty-five for expulsion to one against it. Mr. Tazewell, of Virginia, alone voted in the negative. On the vote of the impeachment of William Blount as a civil officer within the meaning of the Constitution of the United States, etc., it was determined in the negative. The vote stood eleven for conviction and fourteen for acquittal.

It is claimed for Mr. Blount that if time had been given him he could have vindicated himself. So great was the confidence of the people in his innocence that Gen. James White, senator from Knox County, resigned his seat in the General Assembly of the State in his interest it is said, and the people of Knox County elected him to the vacant seat. At a called session, December 3, 1797, he was unanimously elected speaker of that body. He is described by Dr. Ramsey as a man "remarkable for great address, courtly manners, benignant feelings and a most commanding presence. His urbanity, his personal influence over men of all conditions and ages, his hospitality, unostentatiously yet elegantly and gracefully extended to all, won upon the affections and regard of the populace, and made him a universal favorite. He was at once the social companion, the well-read gentleman and the capable officer." This inscription on a slab in the grave-yard of the First Presbyterian Church in Knoxville tells his end: "William Blount, died March 21, 1800, aged fifty-three years."

Gov. William Carroll was born in Pennsylvania March 3, 1788. He had little advantages for an education, but was a man of extraordinary good sense. In 1810 he left Pittsburgh, Penn., and came to Nashville. He engaged in mercantile business in which he was very successful. On the outbreak of the Creek war he was appointed captain. His fine personal appearance, brave and courageous manner, knowledge of military matters, frank and noble bearing attracted the attention of Gen. Jackson, who made him one of his most trusted lieutenants. He took an active part in the battle of Talladega December 9, 1813, and contributed no little to its success. On the expiration of the term of service of the men Gen. Carroll was one of the most active in raising recruits for the very needy army of Jackson at Fort Strother. These forces, amounting to 900 men, were forwarded early in January, and on the 17th started for Emuckfau, where they met and defeated the Indians on the 21st. In a retrograde movement on Fort Strother the Indians attacked the American lines on the 24th at Enotochopco, and were again defeated. On March 24 the army again started, and on the 27th was fought the great battle of Tohopeka or Horseshoe. In these engagements Gen. Carroll sustained his reputation for skill and bravery. He soon after returned home to take charge of the new levies for New Orleans. On November 19, 1814, he embarked at Nashville with 2,500 men, and hastened down the river to assist in the defense of New Orleans, that place was reached December 21, and in a few hours the men were in the position assigned them.

On the final battle of January 8 Gen. Carroll occupied the position next to the extreme left. The center of Carroll was selected for the main attack. This was done on information that these men were militia. The British advance in column was made with great desperation, but was met with great coolness. There was an appalling loss of life in front of Carroll's men. The military fame of Carroll and Coffee is indelibly linked with the fame of Jackson in the great achievements of that period. After the close of the war Gen. Carroll again returned to civil life. He was a very active business man, and brought the first steam-boat the "Gen. Jackson," to Nashville, in 1818. He continued in business till the financial depression of 1818-20, when he met with severe reverses, which led him into politics. In 1821 he was a candidate and was elected governor of the State. He was re-elected twice in succession, but being constitutionally ineligible for a fourth term he gave way to Gen. Houston. He was again recalled and served six years longer. His official career as governor was characterized by clearness, good judgment and firmness. His official documents though not classical are noted for good literary taste. In 1813 he was led into a duel with Jesse Benton, brother of

Col. Thomas H. Benton. It seems some of the younger element was jealous of Carroll's popularity. Several ineffectual efforts were made to bring about a collision between Carroll and some one of the young men. At last Jesse Benton was led into the quarrel and promptly challenged Carroll to a duel. Carroll appealed to Jackson to act as his second, but the latter insisted that Carroll should select some one else. Gen. Carroll told Jackson that he believed there was a conspiracy to run him (Carroll) out of the county. This angered Gen. Jackson, who promptly said that while he was alive Carroll should not be run out of the State. Jackson endeavored to bring about a reconciliation between the two belligerents and partially succeeded. However, the duel was fought and both contestants received slight wounds. The part that Jackson took in this affair led to the altercation between him and Benton a few weeks afterward. The life of Carroll is summed up in the inscription on his monument: "As a gentleman he was modest, intelligent, accomplished; as an officer he has energetic, gallant, daring; as a statesman he was wise and just. Delivered an address in Nashville on March 15, 1844, congratulating Gen. Jackson and the country on the final passage of the act of Congress appropriating a sum of money to repay Gen. Jackson the amount of the fine with interest imposed upon him by Judge Hall, of New Orleans. This was the last public act of Gen. Carroll. He died on March 22, 1844, in the fifty-sixth year of his age."

The ancestors of Andrew Jackson were long known near Carrickfergus,\* in the north of Ireland. Hugh Jackson, the great-grandfather of Gen. Jackson, was a linen draper there as early as 1660, and as was the case generally in that county the same avocation was followed by members of the family for many years. Hugh Jackson was the father of four sons, the youngest of whom was named Andrew. Andrew was the father of Andrew Jackson, so well known throughout this country. The father of Andrew Jackson, the general, married Elizabeth Hutchinson, the daughter of a poor but respectable linen weaver near their old home at Carrickfergus. With his wife, two sons, Hugh and Robert, and several of his kinsmen, Andrew Jackson immigrated to America and arrived in Charleston, S. C., in 1767, but soon moved to a settlement known as the "Waxhaws," near the line between North and South Carolina. The father settled at Twelve Mile Creek, near a branch of the Catawba River, in what was formerly called Mecklenburg, but now Union County, N. C. The family began work in clearing and cultivating a piece of land, but it seems no title to it was ever acquired. In the spring of 1767 occurred the death of Mr. Jackson, a short time

---

\*The Crag of Fergus, or where King Fergus was drowned.



before the birth of Gen. Jackson. The body, with the family, was placed in a wagon and carried to the old church at Waxhaw, where the body was buried. Mrs. Jackson went to live with her married sister, Mrs. George McKemey or McCamie, where on March 15, 1767, the future President was born. Owing to the poverty of this brother-in-law Mrs. Jackson went to live with Mr. Crawford, another brother-in-law, who lived near the State line, in South Carolina.

Here young Jackson spent the first ten or twelve years of his life. He might have been seen a tall, slender, long, sandy haired, freckle-faced, bright blue-eyed boy while attending an "old field school." He was dressed in coarse coppered-clothes; and barefooted attended a school at Waxhaw taught by Dr. Humphries, but it seems he never attained great proficiency in any branch nor any great love for books. The massacre at Waxhaw on May 29, 1780, was the first introduction he had to the horrors of war. Here were butchered 263 of the Whigs of the Carolinas, the wounded having received from three to thirteen wounds; among the number killed was his brother Hugh. Andrew was present at the engagement at Hanging Rock, but was too young to take an active part. He took Col. Davie at that time as his ideal commander, the dash and spirit of that enterprising officer well suiting the aggressive character of Jackson.

Soon after this Jackson and his brother Robert, with many others, were captured by the British and Tories. It was while a prisoner that a British officer ordered Jackson to clean his boots, an order which he refused to obey on the ground that he was a prisoner and should be treated as such. A sabre stroke on the head and arm was received for his disobedience. An order was then given to Robert to do the work; another refusal and another wound was the result. The young Jacksons were crowded into a prison pen at Camden after the defeat of Gen. Gates on August 16, 1780. Here without food and clothing and badly crowded the suffering of the prisoners was intense. Mrs. Jackson, by great exertion, succeeded in securing an exchange of her sons and a few others. With these she started to a place of safety, forty miles distant. The elder son was wounded and suffering from small-pox. Andrew was compelled to walk through rain and mud, and burning with the fever of coming small-pox. Robert soon died and Andrew was reduced to death's door. The suffering of the prisoners in 1781 induced Mrs. Jackson to go to Charleston, 160 miles distant, to nurse the sick. Here she soon after died of ship fever.

The disbarring of many Tory attorneys by the war opened a new and lucrative field for Whig lawyers. This led many young men to embark

in the profession, among them Jackson. He began the study of law with Spencer McCay, in Salisbury, S. C., where he remained during the years 1785-86. Here it is said he played cards, fought cocks, ran horse races and occasionally got drunk, but was never dissipated. After a short practice in North Carolina, of which little is known, Jackson determined to seek his fortune in the West. The difficulties between North Carolina and the State of Franklin had been settled. Judge McNairy, a friend and former associate of Jackson, had been appointed judge of the Supreme Court for the Western District, and Jackson obtained the appointment of prosecutor for the same district. Others determined to follow. A party started from Morganton to cross the mountains to Jonesboro, the usual stopping-place this side of the mountains. The party left for Nashville by escort in November, 1788. Jackson seems not to have been without cases. In the Davidson County Court in 1790 out of 192 cases Jackson had 42; in 1793 out of 155 he had 72, and in the July term he had 60 out of 135, and in 1794 he had 228 out of the 397. On the admission of Tennessee as a State he resigned his attorneyship and was chosen first representative for the session by the Legislature, beginning December 5, 1796, and ending March 3, 1797. He appears not to have been present at the next session, beginning May 13, 1797, and ending July 10, 1797. Blount was expelled from the Senate July 8, 1797, and on November 22 Jackson succeeded him. August 28, 1798, he was appointed to the office of judge of the superior court of law and equity, and soon after resigned his seat in the Senate. He was noted while in Congress for the vigor with which he urged the militia claims of Tennessee on Congress. He resigned his seat on the bench in 1804, and again began practice. The salary of a supreme judge was only \$600, and this doubtless led him to resign. It is said no reports of his decisions are extant, and that they were clothed in bad language, poorly spelled and ungrammatical—not technical but generally right.

After leaving the bench he devoted his time to his profession and to business, occasionally going down the river trading. He was very aggressive as an attorney. He was insulted by Col. Waightstill, to whom he first applied to read law, in a case wherein Jackson was defeated. Waightstill was challenged for a duel, which was accepted, and the duel fought without bloodshed. A quarrel arose between Jackson and his old friend Sevier. There was just a little favor asked, which Sevier did not readily grant, then an accusation concerning some land speculation in which Jackson accused Sevier of having a hand. In 1803 Jackson, who was still judge, opposed Sevier's re-election. At a public speaking in Knoxville, Gov. Sevier denounced Jackson most bitterly and vehemently, and

went so far as to question Mrs. Jackson's chastity. This threw Jackson into an ungovernable rage, and interference of friends only prevented bloodshed. A challenge soon followed. Sevier accepted on condition that the fight should be outside the State. Jackson insisted that it should be within the State. Each accused the other of cowardice. The matter finally ended without harm to either. In the fall occurred the duel between Gen. Jackson and Charles Dickinson. The melancholy ending of this encounter is well known. Dickinson fired first, severely wounding Jackson who did not fall, but coolly aimed at his antagonist and pulled the trigger, the hammer stopping at half-cock. He re-cocked the weapon, took deliberate aim, fired and killed Dickinson. In 1813 occurred the encounter between Jackson and the Bentons, in which the General was severely wounded.

The splendid military achievements of Jackson in the Creek war ending in his magnificent triumph at New Orleans on January 8, 1815, are facts of American history. The Seminole war again brought out his military genius, and his government of Florida at a very critical period showed his administrative qualities. There is a certain halo around military glory that captures the public mind. The name of Jackson was mentioned as early as 1815 by some of his admiring military friends. On July 20, 1822, the Legislature of this State formally nominated Jackson for president in 1824. This brought him prominently before the people. Col. John Williams who was United States Senator from Tennessee, was a candidate for re-election. To succeed he must carry the Legislature of the State. The election of Col. Williams meant the success of the Whig ticket and the defeat of Jackson's prospects. It became necessary for Jackson's success to defeat Col. Williams. The friends of Jackson staked all by nominating him for senator. His name and fame carried the day and he was elected by a large majority. In the presidential campaign of 1824, there were four candidates for the presidency, Gen. Jackson, William H. Crawford, Henry Clay and John Quincy Adams. Jackson had the largest electoral vote, also the largest popular vote, but the matter being thrown into the House, Mr. Adams was elected. In 1825 Jackson resigned his seat in the Senate and returned home, but in October of the same year was again nominated for the presidency. The enthusiasm for him rose to a white heat, nor was the tongue of slander idle. In the election of 1828 Mr. Jackson received 178 votes to eighty-three for Mr. Adams. So popular was Mr. Jackson's first administration that in 1832 he received 219 electoral votes to forty-nine votes for Mr. Clay.

The military career of Jackson is also brilliant. He husbanded his



resources until the time for a blow, then it was struck with the fierceness of a gladiator. He pushed his advantages to the utmost and never allowed his enemies time to recover. He often deceived them by a show of strength when he was really weak. His boldness and aggressive spirit made up for his deficiency in men and material. His administrative abilities may be more a question, yet whatever of error there might have been in them there will always be persons who will try to imitate his course. Many of his ideas were put into successful practice that would have been entirely impracticable if advocated by a man of less force. His aggressive administration did more to establish respect for American prowess than any other. His conclusions when reached were carried out. "His wonderful will and courage were the motor which carried him over all obstacles." He stood by his friends and was a good hater of his enemies. His aggressive nature coupled with the love of his friends often led him into difficulties. All his biographers say he was not quarrelsome; this may be, but it seems hardly true. He loved horse racing and could indulge in the most bitter oaths; was also frequently officious in duels. To all these things it may be said that public sentiment was so little against these vices that they were looked upon as mere trifles. Jackson was not a profound scholar nor a great reader. He read men well and kept posted on the events of the day. His spelling has often been ridiculed. Parton says: "Jackson lived at a time when few men and no women could spell;" furthermore he spelled better than Frederick II, Marlborough, Napoleon or Washington. Even "O. K." is said to have been written by him for "all correct." A case from the docket in 1790 in Jackson's handwriting, will illustrate how this error started. "A. Jackson presented a bill of sale which was approved and marked O. R." The initials being O. R. instead of O. K., are the abbreviations for "ordered recorded," a very common form of simplifying the expression. Jackson, though never a very polished writer or speaker, had the faculty of getting at the truth in the most direct way. His domestic relations were always the most happy. The death of Mrs. Jackson, which occurred on December 22, 1828, was a severe blow to the General. He himself died, without heir, at the Hermitage on June 8, 1845.

Sam Houston, a very noted and somewhat eccentric individual was born in Lexington, Rockbridge Co., Va., March 2, 1793. His ancestors were Scottish Covenanters, who fled to the north of Ireland to escape persecution. A number of them came to Pennsylvania about the beginning of the eighteenth century. The father of Sam was a soldier in the Revolutionary war, and at the time of his death, in 1807, was inspector of a brigade. The mother with her nine children—six sons and three daugh-

ters—soon after moved to East Tennessee and settled in Blount County, near the Cherokee country. Young Houston learned to read and write before leaving Virginia, and on his arrival at their new home was sent to school to an academy in the settlement. While attending school he committed to memory almost the whole of Pope's translation of the *Illiad*. On his teacher's refusal to teach him Greek and Latin, he left school in disgust, with the remark that he would never recite another lesson. By the influence of his elder brother he entered a store as a clerk soon after leaving school. Becoming disgusted with his clerkship, he suddenly left and went to live with the Indians. His tall commanding figure and daring exploits as a hunter soon made him a great favorite among the Indians. The chief Ootooteka adopted him as his son. He remained with the Indians three years and grew to manhood, in size being fully six feet in height, of handsome, fine figure. He left his friends, the Indians, as suddenly as he had left home before. He was now eighteen years of age, and on his return home he opened a school. He charged the moderate rate of \$8 per year for tuition; one-third payable in cash, one-third in corn and one-third in domestic cotton cloth.

He began his teaching in 1811, and soon had a flourishing school. The outbreak of the war with Great Britain afforded an opportunity for the display of his talents in a direction more congenial to his nature. In 1813 he enlisted as a common soldier, but soon rose to the rank of ensign. At the battle of the Horseshoe Bend, on March 27, 1813, he received a severe wound in the thigh from an arrow, and two balls in the shoulder. After the battle he was carried to Fort Strother on a litter. His wounds were thought to be mortal, but his robust constitution saved him. His bravery in battle made him a particular favorite of Jackson. After peace he was stationed at Knoxville as lieutenant, in charge of a post, but was soon afterward sent to New Orleans. While there his old wounds broke out afresh and he was compelled to undergo a very dangerous and painful surgical operation. After a winter of suffering he went to New York, where his health improved. In 1816 he returned to Tennessee, by way of Washington City, and was stationed at Nashville. On January 1, 1817, he was appointed to carry out a treaty with the Cherokee Indians. The next year he headed a delegation of Indians to Washington. While in that city he was accused of exercising too great zeal in putting a stop to the African slave trade through Florida, but was fully acquitted on trial. On March 1, 1818, he resigned his commission in the army and settled in Nashville, where he began the study of law. After a course of six months he was admitted to practice, and began his labors at Lebanon, Wilson County. His rise was rapid. In October,

1819, he was attorney-general for the Nashville District, and in 1821 he was made major-general of the militia of the Western District. In 1823 he was elected to Congress, and again in 1825. He was elected governor of the State by the very flattering majority of 12,000. In January, 1829, Gov. Houston was married to Miss Eliza Allen, but from domestic infelicity he left her in April, resigned his office, gave up his candidacy for re-election, and again went to his old friends, the Cherokees, now beyond the Mississippi. His old adopted father, Ootooteka, again kindly received him, and by a council of the chiefs, on October 21, 1829, he was made a citizen of the Cherokee nation, with full power. Detecting frauds in contracts with the Indians he went to Washington in 1832, where he plead the cause of the Indians so strongly that it led to an investigation, which caused the suspension of several clerks, and led to a personal encounter between himself and W. R. Stansbury, of Ohio, in which the latter received a severe castigation. For this offense Houston was arrested and fined \$500, and was reprimanded by the speaker. President Jackson, however, caused his fine to be remitted, and he left Washington in disgust and returned to the Indians in December, 1832.

He soon after moved to Nacogdoches, Tex., and took a very active part in the affairs of that State. He was elected delegate to the convention on April 1, 1833; while a member of that body he exercised great influence over its deliberations. On the outbreak of war between Texas and Mexico, Houston was made commander of the militia of the eastern district, and in October, 1835, joined his forces with Gen. Austin, who was besieging Bexar. Gen. Austin offered to resign the entire command to Houston, who refused to accept. By vote of forty-nine out of fifty Houston was made commander-in-chief of the Texan forces, but resigned March 2, 1836, because he was accused of wanting to make himself dictator. He was soon after re-elected commander-in-chief by the same vote. He took command of the Texan forces at Gonzales, March 10, which numbered 374 men. A force under Col. Travis held the Alamo against the orders of Houston, and were besieged and captured by Santa Anna and the garrison of 185 men massacred. A panic seized Houston's men when the news reached camp that Santa Anna was advancing with 5,000 men. With difficulty Houston, who was absent at the time, collected his fugitives and fell back to Peach Creek. Here he was joined by 100 men, and soon after by 650 more. Being without artillery he was unwilling to give battle; in the meantime Col. Fannin was ordered to join him with the garrison of Goliad, but the order was not promptly obeyed. The entire garrison was surrounded and captured by Gen. Urrea and 357 men were shot. Intense feeling was aroused against the



Mexicans. Santa Anna's army, flushed with victory, captured Harrisburg, the capital, and burned it, also New Washington. On April 10 Houston received two six-pound guns from Cincinnati. His forces now numbered 783 men; Santa Anna 1,600 veterans. Houston attacked him at San Jacinto March 21. He opened with grape and cannister then charged with the cry, "Remember the Alamo." Houston had his ankle shattered by a ball and his horse mortally wounded, but urged him up to the works which were instantly scaled. The Texans having no bayonets used clubbed muskets, bowie knives and pistols. Few Mexicans escaped; 630 were killed, 208 were wounded, and 730 were captured. The next day Santa Anna was captured in disguise. Houston exerted all his influence to stay the butchery of the Mexicans and saved Santa Anna. While prisoner Santa Anna acknowledged the independence of Texas and agreed to withdraw his forces therefrom. Houston resigned his position in favor of Gen. Rusk and went to New Orleans for treatment for his wounds. On his improvement he returned to his old home in Texas.

A call was made in July for the election of a president of the republic in September. Houston was selected to be a candidate, but with great reluctance consented. He was inaugurated October 22, 1836, and took his old competitors, Gen. Austin and Hon. Henry White, into the cabinet. He released Santa Anna and sent him to Washington to confer with President Jackson. He soon opened communication with the Washington government with a view to the annexation of Texas. His administration was as brilliant as his military career. The constitution prevented his re-election in 1838, when he was succeeded by M. B. Lamar. In 1841 he was again called to the presidency. In his inaugural address he said: "There is not a dollar in the treasury; we are in debt \$10,000,000 or \$15,000,000. We are without money, without credit, and for want of punctuality are without character." On the annexation of Texas he was chosen one of the United States Senators from that State, and was elected again in 1853 to serve till March 4, 1859. He was defeated for re-election in 1858, but was chosen governor again in August, 1859. He opposed the Kansas-Nebraska bill in a great speech March 3, 1854, and lamented the repeal of the Missouri compromise. He was a friend to the American or Know-nothing party. He favored the Lecompton constitution in the Kansas difficulties, and opposed secession at the outbreak of the war. He resigned his office rather than subscribe to the oath presented by the convention. His death occurred at Huntersville, Tex., July 25, 1863. Personally Houston was a man of great courage, and was the soul of honor. While in Congress he made charges against Col. Irwin, postmaster at Nashville. These charges were resented by a

challenge sent to Gen. Houston from Col. Irwin by the hand of Col. John Smith, of Missouri. This Houston refused to receive from Smith. The act of Houston was criticised by Gen. William White as being discourteous to Col. Smith. A dispute arose which resulted in a challenge and duel. Gen. White was severely but not fatally wounded.

Col. David Crockett,\* son of John Crockett, of Irish birth, was born at Limestone, on the Nollichucky River, in Washington County, Tenn., on August 17, 1786. His mother's maiden name was Rebecca Hawkins. After some youthful adventures, a little schooling and a third courtship, young Crockett married a beautiful Irish girl. About 1808 he with his wife and two children moved to Lincoln County, Tenn., where in the two following years he began to distinguish himself as a hunter. In 1810 or 1811 he moved to Franklin County, and soon after the massacre at Fort Mimms went as a volunteer to the Creek war, participating in most of the important battles until its close in 1815. Soon after the close of the war his wife died, leaving three children, and in a short time he married as his second wife the widow of a soldier, who had two children, and by whom he had three more. He subsequently removed to the country purchased of the Chickasaw Indians, in what is now Lawrence County, and became successively magistrate, colonel of militia, and member of the Legislature. Having lost his property, failed in business, and given up all to his creditors, he determined to go farther West, especially as game was becoming scarce in the locality where he lived.

In 1822 he removed to West Tennessee and settled in what is now Gibson County, but at that time Weakley County. Here he engaged in his favorite sport, bear hunting, and thus supplied his family with an abundance of meat. He also secured a large quantity of peltry, which he exchanged for coffee, sugar, powder, lead and salt. He was now elected for a second term of the Legislature, serving during the years 1823-24, voting against Gen. Jackson for United States Senator. In 1825 he became a candidate for a seat in Congress against Col. Adam R. Alexander, then serving as the first representative to that body from West Tennessee, but was defeated by two votes. For the next two years he was engaged in the lumber trade and in bear hunting, killing in one season no less than 105 bears. But his speculation in the lumber trade was a total failure. He then became a candidate a second time for Congress and defeated Col. Alexander and Gen. William Arnold by a majority of 2,748 votes. He acted with the "Jackson party" during the administration of President Adams, but during his second term he voted against the Indian bill, a favorite measure of President Jackson's. In

---

\*From a manuscript in possession of the Tennessee Historical Society.

1830 he was a candidate for a third term in Congress, but owing to his opposition to the administration party he was defeated by his opponent William Fitzgerald. Two years later, however, despite the efforts of the partisans of the administration, he defeated Mr. Fitzgerald by a majority of 202. He co-operated with the Whig party forming the rechartering of the United States Bank, and opposing the removal of the deposits.

In the spring of 1834 Col. Crockett made a trip through the Northern States, visiting Baltimore, Philadelphia, New York, Boston and other cities, and was everywhere received with marked attention, especially by the Whigs. He was presented in Philadelphia by the younger Whigs with a very fine rifled gun, a present he prized very highly, and which he subsequently bore with him in many a bear hunt, as well as during his campaigns in Texas. Retiring to Washington, where he remained until the close of Congress, he returned home, and was a candidate for re-election, Adam Huntsman being his opponent. Crockett was defeated, having not only Huntsman but the influence of Andrew Jackson and Gov. Carroll backed by the Union Bank at Jackson to contend against. Feeling that "Crockett's occupation was gone" and being disgusted with the ways of scheming politicians, he determined to go to Texas. He made a parting address to his constituents, in which he reviewed his course in Congress and warned them against the policy of "the Government" and the President's disposition to nominate Mr. Van Buren as his successor. He also alluded to the unfair means used to defeat him in his late canvass, and closed by telling them that he was done with politics for the present, and that they might all go to h—l and he would go to Texas.

Taking leave of his wife and children, and shouldering his rifle "Betsy," he started at once on the highway to Texas, to a heroic death and to a fame as lasting as the memory of the bloody Alamo itself. He made his journey as rapidly as he could, and reached San Antonio in time to join the patriots before Santa Anna's army, previous to the siege of the city. He was one of the six Americans who survived the assault upon the Alamo on March 6, 1836. The prisoners were taken before the Mexican chief, who gave orders for the massacre of the whole number. Col. Crockett, seeing their treachery, sprang like a tiger at his foes, when a number of swords were sheathed in his indomitable heart. His body, with others of the slain, was buried in a heap in the center of the Alamo. Thus ended the life of Col. David Crockett, the celebrated bear hunter of Tennessee, the eccentric congressman from the West and one of the heroes of the Alamo, whose fame is as immortal as history.

On the 11th of September, 1777, was born Felix Grundy, the young-



est of seven sons of George Grundy, of Berkley County, Va. He was of English parentage. The family moved from Virginia to Brownsville, Penn., in 1779, and 1780 to Kentucky, which State was then indeed a "dark and bloody ground." At least three of the family fell victims to the tomahawk and scalping knife of the savage; not only were several of the family victims of the savages, but their home and household effects were swept away also. This was a time according to the language of himself when "death was in every bush, and when every thicket concealed an ambuscade." He was placed in the academy at Bardstown, Ky., under that eminent educator, Dr. Priestley, who afterward became president of the University of Nashville. Being the seventh son the mother destined him for a physician, but that profession being distasteful to him he chose the law. He entered the law office of Col. George Nicholas, a gentleman who stood at the head of the Kentucky bar at that time. In 1798 he began practice and soon attained eminence as a criminal lawyer. It was in this department of the law that he ~~ranked~~ <sup>reached</sup> highest and in which he had few if any equals and no superiors.

He was chosen a member of the convention to revise the constitution of Kentucky in 1799, and the same year became a member of the Legislature of that commonwealth, where he remained for several successive terms. In 1806 he was appointed judge of the supreme court of errors and appeals and on the resignation of Justice Todd Mr. Grundy became chief justice of the State, at the age of twenty-nine. The salary of the office being small, he resigned and moved to Nashville in 1807, to enter a broader field of usefulness. He was admitted to the practice of law in the several courts of the State on Saturday, November 14, 1807. Of his professional ability Hon. John M. Bright, who delivered an oration on the "Life, Character and Public Services of the Hon. Felix Grundy," says: "At the first step in his profession, he took rank with one Haywood and Whiteside, and as an advocate he rose in time far above competition, and challenged every age and every country to produce his peer. After his settlement in Nashville, it is said, out of 165 individuals whom he defended on charges of capital offenses, one only was finally condemned and executed. \* \* \* His name was a tower of strength to the accused, and his retainer a city of refuge. At his bidding prison doors flew open, and the captive leaped from his falling chains into the arms of his swooning wife. At the bar he was always dignified in his bearing, conciliatory in his address, Saxon in his diction, and never stooping to coarseness in his allusions. His speeches not only breathed a high tone of morality, but the purer essence of religion. He was familiar with the Bible and perhaps drew from it the sparks that kindled

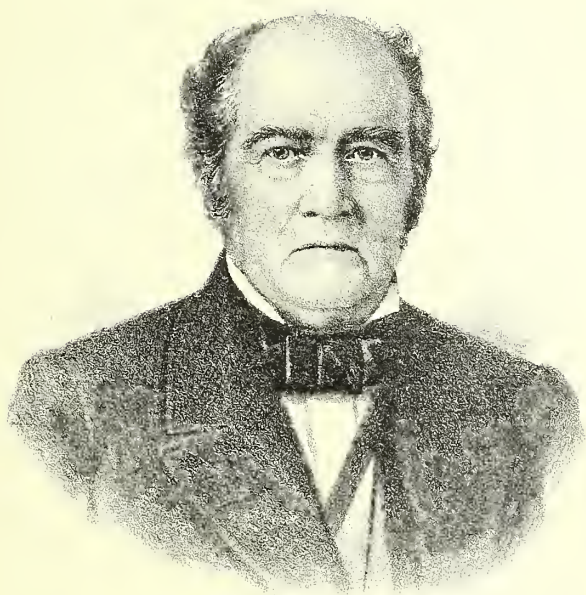
into the boldest imagery that ever shed a luster on the bar. Although he sometimes indulged a pungent humor and a caustic wit, he ever held a resort to vituperation and abuse as dishonorable as the chewed bullets and poisoned arrows of savage warfare. I have sought in vain to find some clue to the secret of his success." Doubtless his earnestness, command of words, his pictures from nature, his consciousness of his own strength, his ability to read human nature and power to portray character had much to do with it. On December 4, 1811, Mr. Grundy became a member of Congress where he remained for two terms, positively refusing to accept the nomination in 1815. This was during the period of the second war with Great Britain, when great questions were debated and there were great men to discuss them, *i. e.*, Clay, Webster, Calhoun, Randolph and others.

The interval from 1815 to 1819 Mr. Grundy spent in building up his profession and his fortune. In 1819 he became a member of the State Legislature, where he remained for six years. While a member of the Legislature he, with Mr. William L. Brown, was made a member of a committee with unlimited power to settle the very delicate question of the boundary line between Tennessee and Kentucky. This question had caused some bitterness between the sister States but was amicably settled February 2, 1820. At a called session of the Legislature of 1820 to devise some means to release the public from financial distress, Mr. Grundy was the author and successful advocate of a bank, founded exclusively upon the funds of the State. On the death of those two eminent statesmen, Thomas Jefferson and John Adams, on July 4, 1826, Mr. Grundy was chosen to deliver the funeral oration for the State. The effort was one worthy of the occasion. Following the election of Gen. Jackson to the presidency came the election of Felix Grundy to the United States Senate. He was re-elected in 1833 and served in that body till 1838. He was a member of the committee, with the great "Pacifcator," which shaped the compromise tariff bill of 1833. He was made Attorney-General of the United States in September, 1838, by appointment of Mr. Van Buren. He resigned this office in 1840 and was again elected to the United States Senate, but his death occurred before taking his seat. In 1840 Mr. Grundy took a very active part in the presidential campaign of that year in favor of Martin Van Buren against Gen. Harrison. Although suffering from physical infirmity, he entered into the canvass with all the ardor of his youth and in the full vigor of his great intellect. He survived this work but a short time. At 4 o'clock of Saturday afternoon, December 19, 1840, was witnessed the closing of the earthly career of this great man.

Hugh Lawson White was the son of Gen. James White, one of the earliest pioneers of East Tennessee, and in many respects a remarkable man. Gen. White was born of Irish parentage, and spent the early part of his life in North Carolina, where in 1770 he married Mary Lawson. During the Revolutionary war he served as a soldier from that State, but at its close removed with his family to Fort Chissel, Va. In 1787 he immigrated to Knox County, Tenn., and in 1792 laid the foundation of the present city of Knoxville. He was a member of the Franklin convention in 1785; of the Territorial Assembly in 1794, and the Constitutional Convention of 1796. During the Creek war, although advanced in years, he served with distinction as brigadier-general of militia. Taken all in all he is one of the most conspicuous figures in the early history of East Tennessee.

Hugh Lawson White was born October 30, 1773, and was consequently a lad of fourteen when with his father he came into Tennessee. His early life was spent in hardy toil, with very limited facilities for obtaining even the rudiments of an education. At the age of fifteen, however, by earnest effort, he had sufficiently advanced to take up the study of the ancient languages, which he did under the direction of Rev. Samuel Carrick, with some assistance from Judge Roane. His studies were soon interrupted by Indian hostilities, and he volunteered as a soldier under the leadership of John Sevier. In this campaign he distinguished himself, not only for bravery, but for strength and endurance. At the age of twenty he was appointed private secretary to Gov. Blount, with whom he remained until the close of his term of office. He then went to Philadelphia where he took a course of study, after which he engaged in the study of law with James Hopkins of Lancaster, Penn. In 1796 he returned to Knoxville, and at once assumed a leading position at the bar. Five years later, at the age of twenty-eight, he was elected judge of the superior court, then the highest judicial tribunal in the State. He resigned in 1807, and was elected to the State Senate. He was re-elected two years later, but did not serve the second term, as he was elected by the Legislature one of the judges of the supreme court. He continued in that capacity until December 31, 1814, when he again resigned. He had been elected president of the Bank of Tennessee in November, 1812, and from that time until July, 1827, he continued to direct the operations of that institution. In 1820, his health being impaired, he returned to his farm, but the country had need of his services, and he was not allowed to remain in seclusion. The next year he was appointed by President Monroe one of the three commissioners to settle the claims under the treaty providing for the transfer of Florida from Spain to the United





JOHN BELL



States. This occupied his time and attention for three years. In 1825 he was elected to succeed Andrew Jackson in the United States Senate, and continued as a member of that body until 1840.

During his senatorial career he delivered but few speeches of any considerable length. He usually spoke briefly and to the point, and his opinions were always received with marked respect. On most questions he was in harmony with the Democratic party. He opposed the Federal system of internal improvements, the rechartering of the United States Bank and the sub-treasury bill. He voted against the famous "expunging resolution" on constitutional grounds, but offered a set of resolutions in lieu of it. In 1836, through the influence of certain members of his party, he was prevailed upon to take a step which embittered the few remaining years of his life. It had become evident that President Jackson wished to make Mr. Van Buren his successor in the presidential chair. This was distasteful to a large element of the party, especially in the South. In October, 1835, resolutions were passed by the General Assembly of Tennessee nominating Judge White for the presidency, and he finally consented to make the canvass. For this step he was bitterly denounced by President Jackson, Judge Grundy, Cave Johnson, James K. Polk and many others, heretofore strong friends. Yet with all the leaders of his own party in Tennessee against him, and with no chance of success, he carried the State by a majority of 10,000 votes—a magnificent testimonial to the high estimation in which he was held. The General Assembly of 1839–40, having passed certain resolutions of instruction to its senators in Congress, which the latter could not support, Judge White resigned his office and retired to private life. He died very soon after—April 10, 1840.

In his domestic life he met with much affliction. In 1798 he married Miss Elizabeth M. Carrick, the daughter of Rev. Samuel Carrick, his former instructor. To their union were born four sons and eight daughters, two of whom died in infancy. Of the remainder eight died just at the threshold of adult life, and all within the short space of six years. His wife also died of the same disease, consumption, March 25, 1831. In November, 1832, Judge White was again married to Mrs. Ann E. Peyton, of Washington City, at whose house he had boarded for several years.

John Bell was born about six miles from Nashville, Tenn., on February 18, 1797. He was the son of a farmer, Samuel Bell, a man of moderate means, who gave him a good education at Cumberland College, then under the presidency of Dr. Priestly. His mother's maiden name was Margaret Edmiston, a native of Virginia. At the age of nineteen



he was admitted to the bar, and located at Franklin. The next year he was elected to the State Senate, in which body he served during that session, but declined a re-election. The next nine years he devoted exclusively to his profession. In 1826 he became the candidate for Congress against Felix Grundy, then in the zenith of his brilliant career, and was elected over his distinguished competitor by a majority of 1,000 votes. He continued in Congress by re-election for fourteen years. At first he was an ardent advocate of free trade, but afterward changed his views and favored protection. He was made chairman of the Committee on the Judiciary when the "Force Bill" and the question of nullification were before the courts. Upon the question of the removal of the deposits of the United States Bank he took issue with President Jackson, and in this breach great results were involved. Henceforth, Mr. Bell ceased to act with the Democratic party, and in 1834 he defeated James K. Polk for the speakership of the House. In 1836 he strongly advocated the election of Hugh L. White in opposition to Van Buren, and succeeded in carrying Tennessee for his candidate. In 1838 he voted against the resolution excluding anti-slavery petitions from Congress. For ten years he was chairman of the Committee on Indian Affairs, during which time the Cherokees were removed from Georgia.

In 1841 he became Secretary of War under Harrison, but resigned in the fall of the same year upon the separation of Tyler from the Whig party. He was soon after offered a seat in the Senate by the Whig majority of the Tennessee General Assembly, but he declined an election in favor of Ephraim H. Foster. He remained in retirement until 1847, when he was elected to the State Senate, and during the same year was chosen to the United States Senate. He was re-elected in 1853. During his service in the Senate he delivered some of the most able and exhaustive speeches ever listened to by that body. His speech on the war with Mexico was pronounced by Calhoun the ablest delivered upon the subject. In 1860 he was nominated by the Constitutional Union party for the Presidency, with Edward Everett occupying the second place upon the ticket. They received the electoral vote of Virginia, Kentucky and Tennessee. When secession was proposed as the result of the election of Lincoln to the Presidency, Mr. Bell threw his whole influence for the preservation of the Union, but after the call for troops by President Lincoln he took strong grounds for secession. He assumed the position that no ordinance of any kind was necessary to sever the connection of the State with the Federal Government, and that the Legislature was alone competent to declare the Union dissolved and Tennessee an independent sovereignty: During the war he took no active part in either

political or military affairs. After its close he was engaged in business until his death, which occurred at Cumberland Iron Works September 18, 1869.

In December, 1818, Mr. Bell was married to Miss Sally Dickinson, a daughter of David Dickinson, of Rutherford, and a granddaughter of Col. Hardy Murfree, of Revolutionary distinction. She was a woman of refinement and superior education. During her youth she attended one of the famous educational institutions of the Carolinas, making the journey from her home, a distance of about 406 miles, on horseback. Among her schoolmates was Mrs. James K. Polk, who probably accomplished the journey in the same manner. Mrs. Bell died leaving four children, who yet survive. Mr. Bell was married a second time, about 1835, to Mrs. Jane Yeatman, a daughter of Mr. Ervin, of Bedford County, who survived her husband until 1876. She was an accomplished lady of remarkable intellectual vigor, of fascinating powers of conversation and possessing an energy of character quite phenomenal. For more than a quarter of a century she was a conspicuous and charming member of Washington society. She left two daughters, both of whom reside in Philadelphia. The home life of Mr. Bell was of the most pleasing character. Whatever were the cares of the day, all were banished when he entered the sacred precincts of home. There his hours were passed in the kindly and sympathetic interchange of conversation upon domestic topics and the news of the day, varied at times with instructive discussions upon more important themes. There was no affectation of superior wisdom; no claim made or even suggested for deference to him or his opinions. He was natural and simple as a child, and affectionate as a woman. A pure, chaste man, no scandal ever smirched his reputation. Late in life he became a member of the Presbyterian Church, and while residing in Georgia, during the civil war, he spent much time in reading the Bible.

As a statesman it is doubtful if Tennessee has produced another man his equal. "He resembled Halifax, as described by Macauley, as one who always saw passing events, not in the point of view in which they commonly appear to one who bears a part in them, but in the point of view in which after the lapse of many years they appear to the philosophic historian." His love and devotion to his native State was one of his leading traits, and he loved to be called "John Bell of Tennessee," sometimes using the phrase himself in his popular addresses.

Cave Johnson was one of the most distinguished men of Tennessee. He was the second son of Thomas and Mary (Noel) Johnson, and was born January 11, 1793. Thomas Johnson's father was Henry

Johnson, who removed from Pennsylvania to North Carolina during the war of the Revolution, in which he served as a private soldier. Arriving in North Carolina he settled near Salisbury where he resided until 1796, when he removed to Robertson County, Tenn., and located two and a half miles east of Springfield. Some time afterward he moved three miles south of Springfield to Karr's Creek, where he died in 1815. He married Miss Rachel Holman, who died about the same time as her husband. They were the parents of nine children: William, Thomas, Henry, Isaac, Joseph, Jacob V., Rebecca, Mary and Rachel. Thomas Johnson was born July 4, 1766, and settled in Robertson County in 1789 as a surveyor. The next year he was married to Mary Noel, at Craig's Station, Ky., and took her to Robertson County in 1790. Cave Johnson, their second son, was named after Rev. Richard Cave, a Baptist minister in Kentucky, who is believed to have been a brother of Mrs. Thomas Johnson's mother. Their other children were Cave, who died in infancy in 1791; Henry Minor, born in 1795; Taylor Noel, born in 1797; Nancy, born in 1799; Willie Blount, born in 1801, and Joseph Noel, born in 1803. Cave Johnson was born three miles east of Springfield, January 11, 1793. He was sent to the academy about two miles east of Nashville, then under the control of George Martin. In 1807 he was sent to Mount Pleasant Academy on Station Camp Creek, in Sumner County, then under the control of John Hall, where he remained a year, when he was sent to Cumberland College, now the University of Nashville. Here he remained until the troops of the State were called to Mississippi in 1811. With his college mates he formed a volunteer company of which he was elected captain, and whose services he tendered to Gen. Jackson, to accompany him to Mississippi. The General declined their services on account of their youth and advised them to continue their studies, which from necessity they did, though not without deep mortification on their part and severe denunciation of Gen. Jackson on the part of some of them. In the summer of 1812 he commenced the study of law with William M. Cooke, a profound lawyer, a most estimable gentleman and then one of the judges of the supreme court. He continued with Mr. Cooke until the fall of 1813, when his father's brigade was called upon to join Gen. Jackson in the Creek Nation. He accompanied his father in the capacity of deputy brigade quartermaster during the campaigns of 1813 and 1814, and in May, 1814, returned home, the Indians having been subdued and peace restored. He continued his study of the law with P. W. Humphreys, on Yellow Creek, and toward the latter part of the year obtained his license to practice law, and commenced the practice full of hope and confident of success.



He was at that time strongly impressed with the belief that his first duty was to get him a wife, fully satisfied that his success in his chosen profession would enable him to support a family. He therefore paid his addresses to Miss Elizabeth Dortch, who was then in her fifteenth year, and was by her, as he says, "very properly rejected." By this rejection he was deeply mortified and caused to resolve that he would never address another lady. He then devoted himself to his profession. In the fall of 1817, he was elected attorney-general by the Legislature sitting at Knoxville upon the nomination of W. C. Conrad, but without any effort of his own. From this time he devoted himself with great assiduity to his profession until 1828 when he was elected to Congress, succeeding Dr. J. Marable, who had been the member for some years. He was re-elected to Congress without opposition in 1831. In 1833 he was again the candidate and was elected over both his competitors, Gen. Richard Cheatham and Dr. John H. Marable, notwithstanding strenuous efforts were made for his defeat. In 1835 he was again elected over William K. Turner by a very large majority. In 1837 he was defeated by Gen. Cheatham by a majority of ninety votes. After this defeat he resumed the practice of the law, and beginning to think seriously of the folly of his youthful resolution against matrimony. Miss Elizabeth Dortch had married a Mr. Brunson in 1817, and in 1826 became a widow with three children. Mr. Johnson's early attachment for this lady revived and they were married February 20, 1838. The election of August, 1839, resulted in returning Mr. Johnson to Congress by a majority of 1,496. In 1841 he was again elected to Congress without opposition. In 1843 he was opposed by but elected over G. A. Henry by nearly 300 votes. In 1844 James K. Polk was elected President of the United States, and at the close of Mr. Johnson's term in Congress invited him to take charge of the Postoffice Department, which he did and served as Postmaster-General four years. Soon after this Mrs. Johnson died of cancer in the breast. During the canvass prior to the elections of 1853, Judge Mortimer A. Martin, of the circuit court died, and Mr. Johnson was appointed judge *pro tem.*, and served until Judge Pepper was selected to fill the vacancy. Mr. Johnson was then appointed president of the Bank of Tennessee, entered upon the duties of that office in January, 1854, and served six years. In January, 1860, he removed from Nashville to his home and remained there most of the summer. On the 8th of June, 1860, he was appointed by President Buchanan commissioner on the part of the United States under the convention with Paraguay for the adjustment of the claims of the United States and Paraguay Navigation Company. On this commission he was engaged nearly three months.

In 1861, when the question of secession first came up to be acted upon, Mr. Johnson urged the people to stand by the Union. During the war he remained quietly at his home taking no part in the troubles between the two sections of the country, except to express his opinions on public men and public measures, his opinions, however, after the breaking out of the war, being uniformly in favor of the Southern Confederacy. In 1865 he was required to give reasons why he should not be sent within the Confederate lines, which reasons being satisfactory to Gen. Thomas he was allowed to remain quietly at his home. On the 19th of August, 1865, he was pardoned by Andrew Johnson, President of the United States. In the spring of 1866 he was elected by the counties of Robertson, Montgomery and Stewart their senator in the General Assembly of the State, but by that body refused admission as such senator. His death occurred November 23, 1866. By his marriage with Mrs. Elizabeth Brunson he had three children: Hickman Johnson, T. D. Johnson, and Polk G. Johnson, all of whom served the Confederacy in the great civil war.

James Knox Polk was born in Mecklenburg County, N. C., November 2, 1795. He was the eldest of a family of ten children—six sons and four daughters—born to the marriage of Samuel Polk and Jane Knox. His paternal ancestors were emigrants from Ireland in the early part of the eighteenth century. They settled upon the eastern shores of Maryland. The branch from which James K. descended removed first to Pennsylvania, and about 1735 to North Carolina. There his great-uncle, Col. Thomas Polk, and his grandfather, Ezekiel Polk, took a prominent part in the convention which adopted the Mecklenburg Declaration in 1775. In 1806 Samuel Polk with his family immigrated to Maury County, and was soon after followed by nearly all of the Polk family. He located up on Duck River, where he obtained possession of a large body of land, which gradually increasing in value, made him one of the wealthiest men of the county.

His wife was a superior woman of fine practical sense, who trained her children to habits of punctuality and industry, and inspired in them a love of morality. Young James early evinced a great desire and capacity for learning, and having secured the elements of an education at home and in the neighborhood school, in 1813 entered the Murfreesboro Academy, from which, in 1815, he entered the sophomore class of the University of North Carolina, at Chapel Hill. From this institution, after three more years of diligent application, he graduated with the highest honors. He then entered upon the study of law in the office of Felix Grundy, of Nashville, with whom he remained until he had com-

pleted his legal education. After his admittance to the bar he returned to Columbia and opened an office; as he was thoroughly equipped for the profession and well prepared to meet all of its responsibilities, it was but a short time until he was recognized as a leader both at the bar and on the stump.

In 1823 he was chosen to represent his county in the lower house of the General Assembly, and in the fall of 1825, after a vigorous campaign, was elected a member of Congress. During the next four years he was an active opponent of the measures proposed by President Adams. He had long been a close friend of Gen. Jackson, and when the latter was elected President he became the leader of the administrative party. He opposed the Federal system of internal improvements, the rechartering of the United States Bank and the protective tariff law. Indeed, he was in such perfect accord with Jackson and carried out his plans so faithfully that he was accused of being servilely dependent upon the President. While such a charge was entirely without foundation, it is not improbable that his relations with Gen. Jackson had much influence upon his career. He continued in Congress for fourteen consecutive years, during the last four years of which he filled the speaker's chair. He withdrew March 4, 1839, and soon after began a vigorous campaign for the office of governor. He was elected, but before he had completed his first term the great Whig victory was gained, and at the next two gubernatorial elections he was defeated. In 1844 the annexation of Texas was the most important question before the public, and Mr. Polk's position, as an advocate of the measure, had much to do with his nomination for the presidency in that year. After a campaign, based mainly upon that question, he was chosen over Henry Clay by a majority of sixty-five electoral votes. Before his inauguration the great question of annexation had been settled, but the difficulty with Mexico was thereby begun, and the greater part of his administration was occupied in considering questions connected with the war with that country. Other important measures of his term of office were the admission of Iowa and Wisconsin into the Union, the passage of the low tariff law of 1846, the establishment of the department of the interior, and the settlement of the northwestern boundary question. Having retired from the presidency in March, 1849, he returned to Nashville, where he had previously purchased the property since known as Polk Place. There his death occurred June 15, 1849.

Mr. Polk was not a man of great brilliancy of intellect, and possessed little imagination, yet he was lively and sociable in his disposition, and had the rare power of communicating his own enthusiasm to those with



whom he came in contact. He was well versed in human nature, and possessed a memory of remarkable retentiveness; while he did not possess the force of character of Jackson, the rugged native ability of Andrew Johnson, nor the far-seeing statesmanship of John Bell, he was distinguished for shrewdness, quickness of perception, firmness of purpose and untiring energy.

In his selection of a companion for life he was peculiarly fortunate. In January, 1824, he married Miss Sarah Childress, a daughter of Capt. Joel Childress, of Rutherford County, Tenn. She was only fifteen years of age at that time, a lady of rare beauty and culture. She accompanied her husband to Washington when he entered Congress in 1825, and was with him, with the exception of one winter, during his entire eighteen years' residence in that city. Since the death of Mr. Polk she has resided at Polk Place, but has seldom appeared in society.

William Gannaway Brownlow was the eldest son of Joseph A. Brownlow, who was born and raised in Rockbridge County, Va., and died in Sullivan County, Tenn., in 1816. The father was a man of good sense and sterling integrity, and served in a Tennessee company during the war of 1812. Two of his brothers were at the battle of the Horseshoe, and two others died in the naval service. His wife was Catharine Gunnaway, also a native of Virginia, who was left at her husband's death with five helpless children. She survived him, however, less than three months.

William was born in Wythe County, Va., August 29, 1805, and consequently was only about eleven years of age when his parents died. He was taken by his mother's relatives, by whom he was reared to hard labor until he was eighteen years old, when he removed to Abingdon, Va., and apprenticed himself to a house carpenter. His early education had been imperfect and irregular, and after completing his apprenticeship he labored until he acquired the means of again going to school. He afterward entered the traveling ministry of the Methodist Church, and traveled for ten years without intermission, all the time studying and improving his limited education.

In 1828 he began to take an active part in the politics of Tennessee, advocating the re-election of John Quincy Adams to the Presidency. He seemed to have a natural love for controversy, and while the vigorous sectarian discussions of that day were congenial to him, he found a better field for his peculiar talents in politics than in the ministry. In either position he was fearless in the expression of his opinion, and in 1832, while traveling a circuit in South Carolina in which John C. Calhoun lived, he publicly denounced nullification. In 1837 he began the publication of the *Whig* at Jonesboro, but in a short time removed to

Knoxville, where he soon secured for it a very large circulation. In 1843 he became a candidate for Congress against Andrew Johnson, but was defeated. In 1850 he was appointed by Fillmore one of the several commissioners to carry out the congressional provisions for the improvement of the navigation of the Tennessee River.

For thirty years preceding the civil war he participated in nearly every political and religious controversy which occurred, and became widely known as the "Fighting Parson." In 1856 he wrote a book entitled "The Great Iron Wheel Examined and its False Spokes Extracted," it being a vindication of the Methodist Church against the attacks of Rev. J. R. Graves, in a work called "The Great Iron Wheel." Two years later he was engaged in a debate upon the slavery question in Philadelphia with Rev. Abram Pryne, of New York, in which he defended the institution of slavery as it existed in the South. Although a strong pro-slavery man, his love for the Union was intense, and when the secession movement of 1860 began he severely denounced it. Even after troops began to pass through Knoxville he did not in the least abate his denunciations, and kept a Federal flag floating over his house. In October, 1861, his influence had become so dangerous to the cause of the Confederacy in East Tennessee that the publication of his paper was suspended and the office outfit destroyed. He was forced to leave the town and seek safety in the mountains. After remaining in seclusion for three or four weeks he was induced to return upon the promise of the Confederate authorities, that he should be sent within the Union line. This promise was violated, however, and on December 6, upon a warrant issued by J. C. Ramsay, Confederate States District Attorney, he was arrested and placed in jail where he remained until January 1, when he became seriously ill. On the order of his physician he was then moved to his home, where he remained under a strong guard until March 2. He was then sent with an escort to Nashville, then in possession of the Federal forces. After remaining a short time he went on a tour through the Northern States, visiting several of the large cities and delivering addresses to large audiences. In April, 1862, his wife and family were also sent out of the Confederacy, and remained in the North until after the occupation of East Tennessee by Gen. Burnside in the fall of 1863. Mr. Brownlow then returned to Knoxville, and in November of that year resumed the publication of his paper. On March 4, 1865, he was elected governor, and in August, 1867, re-elected, defeating Emerson Etheridge. Before the expiration of his second term he was elected to a seat in the United States Senate, in which body he served from March 4, 1869, to March 3, 1875. During the greater part of that time

he was a confirmed invalid, and had to be carried to and from his seat in the Senate chamber. At the close of his term, he returned to Knoxville where after an illness of only a few hours he died April 29, 1877.

Gov. Brownlow was a unique character. He can be compared with no other man. He was made up of antagonistic qualities, yet no one was ever more consistent in his course of action. In his political animosities and religious controversies he was bitter and unrelenting. He was a master of epithets and a reservoir of sarcasm. In his choice of a word he cared nothing except that it should reach its mark, and it rarely failed. In private life to his friends and neighbors he was ever polite, kind and charitable. A friend said of him: "The heart of the fearless politician, who in excitement hurled the thunderbolts of burning invective at his antagonists, and was willing even in his zeal temporarily to lay aside his religious creed and enforce arguments with something stronger than words, could bleed in the presence of a child's grief. Nothing in his career seemed to alienate him from the affections of his neighbors and friends. They overlooked and forgave the faults springing from his impetuous nature, for they knew something of the heart which beat within."

Shadrack Forrest, the great-grandfather of Gen. Forrest, was of English extraction, and moved from West Virginia, about 1730, to Orange County, N. C. Nathan Forrest, grandfather of N. B. Forrest, left North Carolina about 1806, and settled with his large family for a time in Sumner County, but soon after moved to Bedford County. Nathan Forrest married a Miss Baugh, a lady of Irish descent. The eldest son of this marriage was William Forrest, the father of the subject of this sketch. William Forrest married Mariam Beck in 1800. Mr. and Mrs. Forrest were the parents of seven sons and three daughters. The youngest son, J. Forrest, was born after the death of the father. In 1835 William Forrest moved with his family to near Salem, Tippah County, in the northern part of Mississippi. This country had been recently opened to immigrants by a treaty with the Chickasaw Indians. Here William Forrest died in 1837, and left N. B. the care of his widowed mother and her large family of little children. By that diligence and energy that characterized his whole life he soon succeeded in placing the family above want. His opportunities for an education were very limited, barely covering the rudiments of the elementary branches. In 1840 he lost two of his brothers and his sisters of disease, and came near dying himself. In 1841 he joined Capt. Wallace Wilson's company to go to Texas to assist in the cause of freedom there. The expedition was badly managed, and the majority of the men returned from New Orleans. A few of the num-



ber. however, went on to Austin to find no employment and that their services were not needed. He returned home to pass through a very severe spell of sickness.

In 1842 he engaged in business with his uncle at Hernando, Miss. He became engaged in an affray with three brothers, Maleck, for espousing the cause of his uncle. He alone fought and defeated them, but his uncle was killed. J. K. Moore, a lawyer, was killed while riding in company with Gen. Forrest by a desperado named Dyson. Forrest's life was threatened, but his courage and revolver saved him. September 25, 1825, Gen. Forrest married Mary Ann Montgomery, a distant relative of him who fell at Quebec in 1775. In 1849 he met with financial reverses in Hernando, but instead of despairing he only redoubled his exertions. He came near losing his life in 1852 in the explosion of the steam-boat "Farmer" within a few miles of Galveston. In 1852 he moved to Memphis and began dealing in real estate; he also dealt largely in slaves. He was elected alderman of the city in 1857, and re-elected in 1859. By 1859 he had accumulated a good fortune, and in 1861 he had several large plantations, and raised his 1,000 bales of cotton. On the outbreak of the war he volunteered as a private in Capt. J. S. White's company, on June 14, 1861. In July Forrest was asked by Gov. Harris and Gen. Polk to recruit a regiment for the cavalry service. This he proceeded at once to do. On July 20 he went to Louisville, where he procured a partial outfit for his men, consisting of 500 Colt's revolvers, 100 saddles and other supplies. The regiment was organized at Memphis, in October, 1861, by electing N. B. Forrest, lieutenant-colonel; D. C. Kelley, major; C. A. Schuyler, adjutant; Dr. S. M. Van Wick, surgeon, and J. P. Strong, sergeant-major. The regiment consisted in the aggregate of 650 men, organized into eight companies. The first fighting done by Col. Forrest was in Kentucky. His men attacked and defeated the gun-boat "Conestoga" in the Cumberland River, near Canton, Ky. A superior force of the enemy was defeated at Sacramento by a brilliant charge. He joined the forces at Fort Donelson on the 12th. He contributed largely to what success there was connected with that unfortunate affair, and succeeded in bringing away his regiment with little loss. He displayed great ability here. He next covered the retreat from Nashville.

On the 6th and 7th of April he was present at the battle of Shiloh. Forrest, who was now colonel, contributed as much to the success of that battle as any other man. His regiment was the last to leave the field. In a charge near the close of that engagement he was wounded. From Pittsburg Landing to Corinth the regiment was engaged almost daily. Forrest made a brilliant dash and captured Murfreesboro, with a garrison

equal to his whole force. He captured pickets around Nashville and took part in the campaign in Kentucky. He made a raid through West Tennessee, and returned in time to take part in the battle of Stone River. He was almost daily engaged in skirmishing in Middle and East Tennessee till the battle of Chickamauga, September 19 and 20, 1863. He was next sent to the Army of Northern Mississippi. He then entered West Tennessee with a few men, and in a short time had increased his force to about 3,500. Engagements were fought at Somerville, Tenn., December 26; at Colliersville, December 27; at West Point, Miss., February, 1864; at Paducah, Ky., March 25; at Fort Pillow, April 12; at Bolivar, May 2; at Tishomingo Creek, June 10; at Harrisburg, Miss., July 14; at Town Creek, July 15; at Oxford, Miss., in the early part of August; at Memphis, August 21, and in the raid through Middle Tennessee and the capture of Athens, Ala. In Hood's advance into Tennessee Forrest joined him at Florence, Ala. From the time of crossing the Tennessee to the recrossing of that stream in that disastrous campaign his men were in thirteen engagements. Had Forrest's advice been followed at Franklin, November 30, the fruits of that victory would have been attained without its terrible cost.

To his skill in covering the retreat, and advice in its management, was the army saved from greater rout. After the retreat of Hood from Tennessee Forrest was engaged at Centerville, Ala., March 31, 1865, and at Ebenezer Church April 1. His forces were engaged in the defense of Selma, as a cover for Mobile. April 2 closed his military career, on the fall of Selma. Few men ever made so brilliant a military record in so short a time. Without book knowledge he made a study of men, and took in the military situation of the country at a glance. His dash, untiring energy, industry and power of endurance were remarkable. He had the happy faculty of inspiring his men with confidence in himself as a leader. He seemed to grasp the most minute details of an army and its wants, and had a wonderful fertility of resource. He seldom if ever blundered, and never failed to extricate his men from the most perilous positions. It might be questioned whether Forrest could have succeeded so well with a large body of men, or in other words whether he had the capacity for maneuvering large bodies. To this it may be answered that he made no mistakes, whether commanding a battalion of a few hundred or a division of 5,000 men. His quick fiery temper suited him for a cavalry leader rather than for the leader of the more sluggish infantry columns. Had all other commanders been as successful as was Gen. Forrest the result would have been very different. He was made a brigadier-general in 1862, a major-general in 1863 and a lieutenant-general

early in 1865. He laid aside his arms as quickly and quietly as he had taken them up. At the close of the war he returned to his home, accepted the situation, and did his best to heal the wounds left by the war. Before his death he became a member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, in which faith he died.

Andrew Johnson, the seventeenth President of the United States, was born in Raleigh, N. C., December 29, 1808. His father, Jacob Johnson, who died in 1812, was city constable, sexton of a church and porter of the State bank. Extreme poverty prevented Andrew from receiving any education, and at the age of ten he was apprenticed to Mr. Selby, a tailor. In 1824, a short time before the expiration of his apprenticeship, having committed some little misdemeanor, he ran away and went to Laurens Court House, S. C. He obtained work as a journeyman and remained there until May, 1826, when he returned to Raleigh. During the following September, accompanied by his mother, he came to Tennessee and located at Greeneville, where in a short time he married.

Up to this time his education was limited to reading, but under his wife's tuition he learned to write and cipher. In 1828, taking an interest in politics, he organized a workingmen's party in opposition to the aristocratic element, which had before controlled the town of Greeneville. He was elected alderman, and two years later was made mayor. During this time a village debating society was formed, and he took a prominent part in its discussions, manifesting much of the ability which he afterward displayed. In 1835 he offered himself as a candidate for a seat in the lower house of the General Assembly, and after a vigorous canvass was elected. During the following session his opposition to the internal improvement bill temporarily lost him his popularity, and at the next election he was defeated. Succeeding events, however, proved his views to have been correct, and in 1839 he was returned to the Legislature. From this time forth he was almost continuously in public life. He was an elector for the State at large on the Van-Buren ticket in 1840, and in 1841 was elected to the State Senate. Two years later he took his seat in Congress as representative from the First District of Tennessee, a position which he continued to hold by re-election for ten years. During this time he advocated the annexation of Texas, the war with Mexico and the tariff of 1846.

In 1853 he was elected governor of Tennessee over G. A. Henry, the Whig candidate, and again in 1855 over Meredith P. Gentry, after one of the most exciting campaigns ever witnessed. In December, 1857, he took his seat in the United States Senate, to which he had been elected by the Legislature of Tennessee. He soon distinguished himself as the



advocate of the homestead law, which was vetoed by President Buchanan. Although he usually voted with the Southern members on the slavery question, he was not strongly in sympathy with them. In the canvass of 1860 he supported Breckinridge and Lane, but when secession was openly proposed he opposed it with all of his ability. This caused many of his former adherents to denounce him as a traitor to his State and party, and in almost every city in the State he was burned in effigy. March 4, 1862, he was nominated military governor of Tennessee by President Lincoln, and on the 12th of the same month he arrived in Nashville. He continued as military governor until March, 1865, when he was succeeded by William G. Brownlow.

On June 7, 1864, the Republican Convention at Baltimore nominated him for the vice-presidency, and on the 4th of the March following he was inaugurated. Upon the assassination of President Lincoln he immediately took the oath of office and entered upon his duties as President. From his public utterances it had been inferred that he would treat the Southern leaders with great severity, but his course was quite the reverse, and then began the difficulty between himself and Congress which ended in his impeachment trial. After a long contest he was finally acquitted, on a vote of thirty-five for conviction to nineteen for acquittal.

At the Democratic Convention of 1868 he was a candidate for nomination for the Presidency, but received little support. In March, 1869, he returned to his home at Greeneville, Tenn., and the next year became a candidate for the United States Senate. He lacked two votes of an election. In 1872 he was a candidate for congressman at large, but dividing the vote of his party with B. F. Cheatham was defeated by Horace Maynard. In January, 1875, he was elected to the United States Senate for the full term of six years, and at the extra session in March, of that year, took his seat. He died suddenly of paralysis on July 31, 1875, at the residence of his daughter in Carter County, Tenn. Mr. Johnson was essentially combative in his temperament, and was rather impatient of opposition. That he had the courage of his convictions is evident from his course at the beginning of the war, when for a Southern Democrat to champion the cause of the Union was to sacrifice both friends and reputation. He cannot be said to have enjoyed, to any great degree, the personal good-will and esteem of his fellow-citizens, but he never failed to inspire their confidence and respect. He possessed no personal magnetism, wit nor brilliancy, and his countenance usually wore an expression bordering on sadness.

The following by one of his colleagues in Congress is a fitting tribute

to his character: "If I were to write the epitaph of Andrew Johnson, I would inscribe on the stone which shall mark his last resting place, "Here lies the man who was in the public service for forty years, who never tried to deceive his countrymen, and died as he lived, an honest man—the noblest work of God."

Gen. Felix Kirk Zollicoffer was born in Maury County, Tenn., May 17, 1812, and was the son of John J. and Martha (Kirk) Zollicoffer. The father was a native of North Carolina. He was descended from an illustrious Swiss family, which included several of the most distinguished military men, divines and scholars of that nation. Several centuries ago three Zollicoffer brothers were granted a patent of nobility on account of distinguished service rendered to the Government, and from them descended the Zollicoffers of Switzerland and of America. The latter branch of the family immigrated to this country probably near the close of the seventeenth century.

Gen. Zollicoffer, after having received such an education as the schools of his native county afforded, learned the printer's trade, and at the age of seventeen, in company with two other young men, began the publication of a paper at Paris, Tenn. Their enterprise proving a failure young Zollicoffer went to Knoxville, where he found employment and remained until 1834, when he removed to Huntsville, Ala. He was employed at that place in the office of the *Southern Mercury* for a short time, after which he returned to Maury County and located at Columbia, taking charge of the *Observer*. On September 24, 1835, he was united in marriage with Louisa P. Gordon, of Hickman County, a daughter of the brave Indian scout, Col. John Gordon. The next year he volunteered as a soldier, and served with the Tennessee troops during the Seminole war. In the early part of 1837 he returned and resumed his connection with the *Observer*, of which he continued the editor until after the campaign of 1840, strongly opposing the election of Mr. Van Buren. As editor of the *Nashville Banner*, he entered upon his duties January 3, 1842, and at once made a decided impression. During the gubernatorial campaign of the following year he contributed much to the election of James C. Jones over James K. Polk. For some time he had been a sufferer from an aneurism of the aorta, that daily threatened his life, and after the election he retired from the editorial chair. On the 1st of November following he was elected by the Legislature comptroller of the State, a position he continued to hold by re-election until 1849. In August of that year he was chosen to represent Davidson County in the State Senate, and during the session made himself one of the leaders of that body.

In January, 1851, he again connected himself with the *Banner*.

He succeeded in inducing Gen. William B. Campbell to accept the nomination for governor, and the brilliant victory which was secured was due more largely to his efforts than to those of any other man. The result of this canvass added greatly to the influence of Gen. Zollicoffer.

The next year occurred the contest for the Presidency between Gens. Scott and Pierce. Gen. Zollicoffer had favored the nomination of Millard Fillmore, and attended the National Convention at Baltimore to advocate it, but when Gen. Scott was chosen as the leader of the Whigs he supported him with his accustomed vigor and ability, and, although the candidate was decidedly unpopular with the Whig party, Tennessee was brought to his support.

On April 20, 1853, having received the Whig nomination for Congress in his district, he severed, for the last time, his connection with the press. He was elected after a brilliant canvass and served for three successive terms. He then voluntarily retired to private life. During the early part of 1861 Gen. Zollicoffer did all in his power to prevent the dissolution of the Union, and was a member of the Peace Conference at Washington, but after the call for troops by President Lincoln he espoused the cause of the South and advocated secession. Upon the organization of the State military Gov. Harris called him to his aid, and commissioned him brigadier-general. He was placed in command of the forces in East Tennessee, where, during the fall of 1861, he gathered an army of about 4,000 men and took part at Cumberland Ford. Opposed to him were about double that number of troops under Gen. Thomas. On January 19, 1862, deceived as to the strength and position of the enemy he unfortunately ordered an attack, and during the engagement was killed. Various accounts of the death of Gen. Zollicoffer have been published, but the most authentic is about as follows:

Gen. Zollicoffer while inspecting his lines found himself between a Mississippi regiment and the Fourth Kentucky Federal Regiment under Col. Fry, who was about to lead them in a charge upon the Confederate lines. Gen. Zollicoffer thinking the latter regiment a part of his own command, accompanied by his aid, rode up to Col. Fry and said: "You are not going to fight your friends, are you? These men" (pointing to the Mississippi regiment), "are all your friends." In the meantime Zollicoffer's aid, perceiving their mistake, fired at Col. Fry, killing his horse. Col. Fry sprang to his feet and fired at Gen. Zollicoffer, killing him instantly. The troops thus deprived of their trusted leader retreated in confusion. Gen. Zollicoffer left a family of six daughters, five of whom are still living. Mrs. Zollicoffer died in 1857.



## CHAPTER XX.

POLITICAL HISTORY—CONTENTIONS FOR THE NAVIGATION OF THE MISSISSIPPI—SPANISH TERRITORIAL DEMANDS—CONTEMPLATION OF THE CITIZENS OF TENNESSEE—THE IMPEACHMENT OF SENATOR BLOUNT—POLICIES OF GUBERNATORIAL ADMINISTRATIONS—TENNESSEE DURING THE WAR OF 1812—EFFORTS TO COUNTERACT LOCAL FINANCIAL DEPRESSION—EARLY QUESTIONS CONCERNING SLAVERY—THE TARIFF AND THE DOCTRINE OF NULLIFICATION—JACKSON'S ADVANCEMENT AND VIEWS—TENURE OF OFFICE—PROMINENT POLITICIANS—PARTY POLICIES AND CONTENTIONS—THE FREE NEGRO BILL—GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT OF SECESSION—COURSE OF THE GOVERNOR AND THE LEGISLATURE—GOVERNMENT UNDER THE CONFEDERATE CONSTITUTION—RESUMPTION OF FEDERAL AUTHORITY—REORGANIZATION OF THE STATE GOVERNMENT—THE CONVENTION OF 1865—"RECONSTRUCTION"—POLITICAL SECRET SOCIETIES—MEMORABLE EVENTS—THE NEW CONSTITUTION—SUBSEQUENT PARTISAN PROCEEDINGS.

THE political history of Tennessee previous to its organization as a State is mainly comprised in the history of the Government of the Notables, of the State of Franklin and of its territorial government. But there were political movements and negotiations conducted by the United States Government, in which the people of Tennessee, as well as those of the other Western Territories, were deeply interested. These negotiations had reference mainly to the navigation of the Mississippi River below the thirty-first parallel of latitude. Spain then owned Louisiana, and evinced a determination to claim the country up the Mississippi Valley, west of a boundary line herewith described: "A right line shall be drawn from the eastern angle of the Gulf of Mexico to the Fort Toulouse, situated in the country of the Alibamas; from thence the River Louishatchi should be ascended, from the mouth of which a right line should be drawn to the fort or factory of Quenassie; from this last place the course of the River Euphasie\* is to be followed until it joins the Cherokee,† the course of this last river is to be followed until it receives the Pelissippi,‡ this last to be followed to its source, from which a right line is to be drawn to the Cumberland River, whose course is to be followed until it falls into the Ohio."

Spain also declared that, "As to the course and navigation of the Mississippi River, they follow with the property and they will belong to the nation to which the two banks belong," and "Spain alone will be the proprietor of the course of the Mississippi from the thirty-first degree of latitude to the mouth of this river."

\*Hiwassee.

†Tennessee.

‡Clinch.

Could Spain have maintained her claims, all of Tennessee west of the Rivers Hiwassee, Tennessee and Clinch would have belonged to her. Her persistence in insisting upon the exclusive right to the navigation of the Mississippi River below the thirty-first parallel, caused great uneasiness and dissatisfaction among the people in the Southern States and Western Territories, and was strenuously resisted by Mr. Jay for a considerable period; but at length he yielded so far as to recommend to Congress the expediency of limiting the treaty to twenty-five or thirty years, and the insertion of an article stipulating that the United States would forbear to use the river through their territory to the Gulf. On the 25th of August, 1785, a resolution was introduced into Congress instructing Mr. Jay to consent to an article stipulating a forbearance on the part of the United States to navigate the Mississippi for twenty years. When the vote was taken on this resolution it was found that all the Northern States sustained it, while all the Southern States opposed it (Delaware not voting), one of the first instances in which the North encountered a "Solid South."

When these proceedings in Congress were made known there was great excitement and indignation among the people throughout the Southern States and Western Territories, so much so that a separation of the latter from their Atlantic brethren was threatened, in order to form a union with Louisiana and thus secure the benefits of the navigation of the Mississippi River. Spain artfully encouraged these sentiments, and was not wholly unsuccessful in gaining over the Western people to an adherence to her interests. Happily, however, the policy on the part of Spain on the one hand, and the desire of the people to form an alliance with Louisiana on the other, were of short duration; and finally a treaty was concluded in October, 1795, covering the entire ground of the controversy, in accordance with which the boundary line between the two countries was soon afterward run, the posts surrendered, and the tiresome controversy, which for fifteen years had kept the Western country in a state of almost continuous excitement and alarm, was brought to an end.

The next political event of importance occurred after Tennessee was admitted into the Union. This was the impeachment and expulsion from the United State Senate of William Blount, one of Tennessee's first senators in Congress. The ground of impeachment was Mr. Blount's connection with an alleged conspiracy against the peace and dignity of the United States, in attempting with others to wrest from Spain her dominions in America and in conquering the same for the King of Great Britain. The basis of the proceedings in the United States Congress against

him was a letter written by him, under date of April 21, 1797, to James Carey a confidential friend. The letter hinted at some kind of plan, and it was evident that the plan was of a very important nature; but the nature of the same could not be ascertained from the letter alone. Notwithstanding this the House of Representatives on July 7, 1797, requested the Senate to sequester Mr. Blount from his seat, with which request the Senate on the next day complied. The Senate then proceeded to consider the report of the committee to which the charges against Senator Blount had been referred. This report which closed with a resolution expelling Senator Blount from the Senate on account of high crimes and misdemeanors, was sustained by a vote of twenty-five to one.

While the Carey letter furnishes abundant evidence that Senator Blount was a skillful diplomatist, it furnishes none whatever of his being guilty of conspiracy against his country. The most the letter shows with reference to the plan Mr. Blount was endeavoring to carry out is, that he desired to keep that plan secret, at least until it should be an assured success. The letter contains the following request: "When you have read this letter over three times, then burn it;" which shows that politicians, even in the early days, sometimes desired the destruction of the evidence of their designs, even though those designs were strictly honest and patriotic. Among the people of Tennessee, Mr. Blount never lost his popularity. Soon after his impeachment Knox County elected him to the State Senate, and the State Senate elected him its speaker, a vacancy having been caused by the resignation of Gen. James White.

The several administrations of Hon. John Sevier as governor of Tennessee had, as a general thing, been characterized by prosperity and peace with the Indian tribes. To this state of things the Governor alluded in 1801, in his farèwell message to the General Assembly. "There has been no trouble with the Indians during the past six years, the laws of the Government have been duly obeyed, and Providence has been bountiful and propitious in an extensive degree with respect to the productions of the earth." After recommending a law regulating the militia as absolutely necessary to the safety of the State he said, "The State of Tennessee possesses every power, privilege, sovereignty and jurisdiction that any of the original States in the Union enjoy; and such being undeniably the case, what hesitation can there remain to prevent you from passing laws to enable citizens to obtain a full and complete possession of all their titles and grants they have a right to receive and are entitled to? You will readily perceive the impropriety of other States undertaking and appointing officers for the discharge of the most important business in the State of Tennessee, independently of her control



or subject to her laws. It is a practice inconsistent with the liberties of a free State, and never before submitted to."

John Sevier was succeeded this year in the gubernatorial office by Archibald Roane, who served two years, and William C. C. Claiborne was re-elected to Congress; but having been appointed by the President of the United States governor of Mississippi Territory, he chose to accept the latter office. In 1803 John Sevier was again elected governor of the State, and served six more years in that capacity, when, in 1809, he was succeeded by Willie Blount, and himself taking his seat in the General Assembly as senator from Knox County.

During the second occupancy of the office (in 1807), the relations between the Governments of Great Britain and the United States became unusually strained. The affair of the "Chesapeake," which occurred on June 22, in which the British man-of-war "Leopard," fired on the "Chesapeake," and took from her four seamen claimed as British subjects, and the failure of subsequent negotiations to effect a settlement of the difficulties between the two nations, produced a bitterness of feeling on the part of Mr. Jefferson and his adherents on the one hand, and the British ministry on the other, which could only, and which finally did, result in war. Mr. Jefferson had been Tennessee's choice for President, both in 1800 and 1804, and she now sympathized fully with the National Government in its struggle to maintain "sailors' rights." During this year the Legislature sent a communication to the President of the United States, expressive of this sympathy and encouragement in the prosecution of the arduous duties of his position. On the 2d of December, the Governor informed the Legislature that, in case the Government of the United States should call for militia from Tennessee, which it afterward did, the State did not possess one pound of powder and ball for public use nor a single musket for public defense, which was immediately referred to a committee for action.

On the 7th of September, 1812, the Legislature convened in extra session and received a long message from Gov. Willie Blount regarding the war with Great Britain, which had recently been declared by the Congress of the United States. Of the 100,000 militia called out by the President, 2,500 was the quota from Tennessee. On the 9th of October, the Legislature passed a series of resolutions approving of the declaration of war against Great Britain as an act of indispensable necessity to the sovereignty, welfare, happiness and safety of the government and people of the United States, and they also resolved, "that we view any and every attempt to divide the good people of the United States, whether by a foreign government, by the State governments, respectively, or by

any of those styling themselves citizens of any of the States, as an act, in the first place, too mean, degrading and barbarous, even to have been countenanced by any other civilized government than that of our present enemy."

When the Legislature convened September 18, 1815, peace had returned to the United States, and Gov. Willie Blount congratulated the members on the advantages of a republican form of government in times of war as well as in times of peace, and said "such a government is worthy the best support of freemen." During this year Gov. Blount was succeeded by Joseph McMinn, who had served for several years as speaker of the State Senate. On October 10, 1815, George W. Campbell was elected United States Senator for six years, and John Williams for two years. Mr. Campbell served two years, when he resigned to accept the mission to St. Petersburg, to succeed William Pinkney, and John H. Eaton was appointed to Mr. Campbell's place in the Senate.

One of the subjects which engaged the attention of the Legislature was the depressed state of the industries of the country. After the settlement of the disputes with Great Britain, and before the disputes at home on the slavery question, this subject was likewise uppermost in the minds of the people, because painfully felt by all. The press teemed with articles defining the causes and prescribing the remedies. Opinions as to the duties of the State and of the people in the emergency were various, and sometimes antagonistic, even among the ablest citizens of the State. Among the causes enumerated were these: The embarrassed state of things in Europe; immense importation of foreign commodities; overtrading at home; neglect of domestic manufactures; general extravagance in living among the people; general indisposition among the people to apply themselves industriously to regular business; an attempt to grow rich without labor, and the withdrawal of foreign bank bills.

Among other remedies for the embarrassments felt by the people in Tennessee, Gov. McMinn suggested an extension of time for paying debts, the formation of a property law, and the issue of treasury notes, based on the sale of the Hiwassee lands and the public faith, the treasury notes to be brought into circulation by means of a loan office. In accordance with the suggestion of the Governor, the Legislature proposed the enactment of an elaborate loan-office bill, by which two principal offices, with a capital of \$750,000 were to be established, one at Nashville and the other at Knoxville, the later being authorized to establish eight branch offices, the former "at least five." By means of these main and branch offices all portions of the State would be supplied with a circulating medium, every citizen needing money to be furnished

with the treasury notes or bills according to his necessities, limited only by his ability to give good real estate or other security. The prospect of the enactment of this bill brought forth vigorous remonstrances, one by the citizens of Davidson County to the Senate, signed by Gen. Andrew Jackson, Col. Edward Ward and others, and one to the House of Representatives, signed by numerous other citizens. The remonstrance sent to the Senate was ascribed by some to the pen of Gen. Jackson, though that he wrote it was denied by those who assumed to know. It objected to the bill as being in violation of the Constitution of the United States, that instrument forbidding any State to make any thing but gold and silver a legal tender. While the remonstrance was denounced by some of the supporters of the loan-office bill as dictatorial in its terms, it, in conjunction with that sent to the House, caused this bill to be defeated.

Gen. William Carroll, who was inaugurated governor, as the successor of Joseph McMinn, October 1, 1821, expressed it as his opinion that "a determination on the part of the people to promote agriculture and domestic (household) manufactures and to lessen the consumption of foreign goods would soon relieve the most of the community from present pressure."

During the first twenty years of the present century there was comparatively little trouble over the slavery question. However, trouble was always anticipated. On November 3, 1803, an act was passed by the Legislature to prevent the use by any person of words having a tendency to inflame the minds of slaves or persons of color, such inflammatory words to be directed toward and be in favor of general or special emancipation, etc. The sentiment of the people of the State generally against slave-trading, up even to the time of the civil war, was very strong. In 1812 this sentiment found expression in an act by the Legislature prohibiting the importation of slaves into Tennessee for the purpose of selling them, though slave-holders were not prohibited from immigrating to Tennessee with their slaves. And in 1815 the question, which a few years later became one of National concern and importance (in this instance the admission of free colored persons into Missouri), began to agitate the people of this State. The Governor sent a message to the Legislature, informing them that about fifty free negroes had been brought into Tennessee from Virginia, "for the purpose of obtaining a residence in this State," and that nearly the same number would be forwarded in the early part of the ensuing winter for the same purpose. The Governor said that such a practice was inconsistent with the dignity of the State, and it would be a reproach on their character as citizens of



Tennessee if it should not receive proper consideration. A bill to prohibit the introduction of free persons of color into this State was presented in, discussed and rejected by the Legislature, whereupon the Governor expressed himself as of the opinion that it was "impolitic to place citizens of another State on a better footing than those of our own State."

Besides these two questions, that of the emancipation of the slaves early attracted attention, and found numerous advocates in Tennessee. Gen. William Carroll was inaugurated governor October 1, 1821, and on the next day a report was made by a committee, to which had been submitted a petition of a number of citizens praying that the Legislature would take into consideration the situation of the slaves, and to devise some plan for their relief, on allowing masters to emancipate such as were able to maintain themselves, and to declare all descendants of slaves born after the passage of a law to that effect, to be free upon arriving at a certain age, and to prevent the separation of husband and wife.

Free negroes were among the earliest persons to acquire a residence within the present limits of Tennessee. Their settlement was permitted without serious interruption until 1831, although during the decade of the twenties, owing to the agitation of anti-slavery sentiments in the North, and the steady growth of pro-slavery sentiments in the South, opposition to free negro citizenship, if such a condition could exist under the Constitution, was strongly manifested throughout the State. Slavery, highly profitable to slave-holders, had become a fixed institution. It was not only profitable but in the highest degree convenient. It shifted all the drudgery and many of the lower varieties of physical labor from the whites to the blacks, bestowing upon the former abundant time and opportunity for the cultivation of the social, moral and intellectual virtues. It outlined and established aristocratic circles and caste; and the upper classes of whites, owing to the immunity from hard labor, the ease with which they acquired comparative wealth, and the leisure they had to devote to amusement, cultivation and study, became distinguished far and near for their culture and refinement. Their renown for hospitality extended beyond the limits of their own country. The polite schools of the aristocratic courts of Europe furnished no bluer bloods or truer ladies and gentlemen. Poets, statesmen, philosophers and artists arose, splendidly proportioned, amid the sunshine shed upon the lives of the upper classes. Is it any wonder that slavery was welded to the car of progress, and that it was forced to march forward with a civilization that regarded it with abhorrence? The splendid social and scholastic opportunities, extending as they did through several generations, gave permanence to grace, culture and refinement. Pleasing evidences of these accom-

plishments are yet to be seen throughout the length and breadth of the State.

But how fared it with the colored race? Their bonds had been riveted tighter by legislative enactments and social usages, and every vestige of obstruction in the way of absolute serfdom had crumbled, or was crumbling in pieces. Education was denied them, as it made them independent and restless under restraint. Religion was awarded them, as it made them truthful, moral and subdued. The effect upon the slaves of the presence of free negroes was prejudicial; and various expedients were proposed, either to counteract such influence or to remove free colored people from the State. At length the Legislature passed the following enactment:

SECTION 1. *Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the State of Tennessee,* That it shall not be lawful for any free person or persons of color, whether he, she or they be born free or emancipated agreeably to the laws in force and use, either now or at any other time in any State within the United States, or elsewhere, to remove him, her or themselves to this State to reside therein, and remain therein twenty days; and if any such free person or persons of color shall presume or attempt to reside therein, contrary to the provisions of this act, every such person or persons of color shall be liable to be indicted before the grand jury of the county, or circuit court of the county, where he, she or they may attempt to reside, and if convicted, shall be fined in a sum not less than ten dollars nor more than fifty dollars, to the use of the county, and shall, moreover, be sentenced to hard labor in the penitentiary for a term not less than one year nor more than two years, the term of service to be fixed by the judge; and if any such free person or persons of color as aforesaid, shall fail or refuse to remove him, her or themselves from this State, within thirty days after his, her or their discharge from the penitentiary, unless detained by sickness or some unavoidable accident, such person or persons shall again be liable to indictment as before, and upon conviction shall be sentenced to labor in the penitentiary for a term double the longest term before mentioned, but shall not be liable to any pecuniary fine, as in the first instance is provided.

SEC. 2. *Be it enacted,* That it shall not be lawful, from and after the passage of this act, for any court or any owner or owners of any slave or slaves to emancipate any slave or slaves, except on the express condition that such slave or slaves shall be immediately removed from this State, and every person or persons so desiring to emancipate any slave or slaves shall, before such emancipation be allowed, enter into bond with good and sufficient security in a sum equal to the value of such slave or slaves so to be emancipated, conditioned that said slave or slaves shall forthwith remove from this State, which said condition shall be a part of the judgment of such court.

SEC. 3. *Be it enacted,* That it shall be the duty of each of the judges of the circuit courts in this State, to give this act in charge to the grand juries at each and every term of the courts respectively; and it shall be the duty of the several attorneys-general to require information upon oath, from all sheriffs, coroners, constables and any other person or persons they may think proper to call on, so as to enable him or them to prosecute all offenses under this act, whose fees on conviction shall be the same as in cases of felony now allowed by law.

December 16, 1831.

The first serious anti-slavery demonstrations were made within the State during the decade of the thirties. Organized societies in the North had for several years distributed anti-slavery books and pamphlets in Ten-

nessee and other slave-holding States, for the purpose of fanning the fires of abolition. Able representatives of the abolition societies had been sent to the Southern States to teach and preach universal emancipation and to distribute where they would have the greatest effect illustrated publications showing the more deplorable results of the institution of slavery. They were everywhere met with the bitterest opposition. On the 8th of August, 1835, Rev. Amos Dresser was arrested at Nashville for having in his possession publications calculated to incite an insurrection of the slaves. When the facts became known great excitement prevailed. A "Committee of Vigilance and Safety," consisting of sixty-two residents of Nashville, appointed to try him, found him guilty of the following specifications: 1. Of being an active and efficient member of the Abolition Society of Ohio. 2. That he had in his possession, in Nashville, sundry pamphlets of a most violent and pernicious tendency, and which, if generally disseminated, would in all human probability cause an insurrection or rebellion among the slaves. 3. That he published and exposed to public view the said pamphlets in Nashville and Sumner County. After what was considered an impartial trial, he was adjudged guilty by the committee, sentenced to the punishment of twenty stripes upon his bare back, and ordered to leave Nashville within twenty-four hours. This sentence was promptly carried into execution. Just before this event serious disturbances had occurred in Mississippi and other Southern States from the same cause. An uprising of the slaves in Tennessee was apprehended at this period, and extra precautions were taken to prevent it. The "Committee of Vigilance and Safety" at Nashville was authorized to adopt measures to hold the blacks in subjection.

As a consequence of the anti-slavery movements, public meetings were held throughout the State to denounce the course of the abolitionists and to nullify their proceedings. On the 30th of August, 1835, at Nashville, a public meeting of the "Committee of Vigilance and Safety" was held, John Shelby serving as chairman. The following boycotting resolutions (similar ones being adopted in many other parts of the State) were adopted:

WHEREAS, It is believed by this committee that funds to a large amount have been contributed by Arthur Tappan and other fanatics of New York, for the purpose of disseminating through the Southern and Western States incendiary pamphlets, inciting the slaves to revolt; and it is known that many of our merchants are in the habit of purchasing goods of said Tappan (merchant of New York) thereby increasing his power to injure us; Therefore,

*Resolved*, That we recommend to the merchants of this city and of the State of Tennessee to make no purchases of said Tappan; also

*Resolved*, That we advise our citizens to abstain from dealing with any merchant who is known to make any purchase from said Tappan or any other abolitionist after this date.



*Resolved*, That the merchants of Nashville and the State of Tennessee be requested to hold meetings and express their views upon the subject of trading or dealing with Arthur Tappan & Co. or with any other abolitionist.

So vigorous and so prompt was the action taken by the slave-holders that abolition agitators were obliged precipitately to leave the State.

From this time until the war of 1861-65 the breach between the North and South continued to grow wider and deeper. The abolitionists continued their work, sending broadcast over the South, so far as they could escape the vigilance of slave-holders, active representatives and sundry publications calculated to encourage partial or general emancipation. To a large extent this was accomplished despite the watchfulness and opposing energy of the slave-holders. Slight insurrections of the slaves under these teachings were promptly and effectually checked. Abolitionists were persecuted and driven from the State. Hundreds of runaway slaves were assisted by Northern societies and individuals on their way to Canada. The underground railroad became an historic organization. Finally the fugitive slave law was passed, but it afforded little relief to slave-holders. The repeal of the Missouri Compromise, the Dred Scott decision, the Kansas-Nebraska bill, the Kansas war, John Brown's insurrection, the multiplication of Northern abolition societies, and the fiery debates in Congress kindled everywhere, both North and South, extreme bitterness and widened to an impassable degree the gulf dividing the two factions of the Government.

During the session of the Legislature of 1859-60 the "Free Negro Bill" was introduced. It provided that all free negroes, except certain minors, who should remain in Tennessee after the 1st of May, 1861, should be sold into slavery. It was admitted that free negroes were entitled to the following vested rights: 1. Freedom from any master. 2. Could hold property. Vested rights, it was stated, did not extend to such free colored persons as had assumed a residence within the State after the passage of the act of 1831, as such residence was obtained in violation of law; their rights were natural only. It was argued that free colored persons who had assumed a residence before 1831 had vested rights under the laws but not under the State constitution; and that the Legislature might repeal such laws and thus annul their vested rights. On the contrary it was maintained that, as the Constitution permitted no retrospective law voiding or impairing the sacredness of contracts, free colored persons who had secured vested rights, such as to hold property, etc., could not be molested; and that, owing to their natural rights, such persons as had assumed a residence within the State after the passage of the law of 1831 and who had thus no vested rights, as they had settled in violation of law, could not be ejected

from the State by the Legislature. The Supreme Court had decided in the case of *The State vs. Claiborne* that the word "freeman" meant "citizen," and that as a negro could not be a citizen he could not be a free-man. But this, it was rightly urged, referred to the political rights of free colored people and not to their natural rights, such people occupying much the same relation to the State that aliens did. The leading argument against the bill was its unconstitutionality. The debate was closed early in January, 1860, Messrs East, Ewing, Neill S. Brown, Williams, Bennett, Meigs, Keeble, *et. al.* speaking against the bill, several of their speeches being published *verbatim et literalim* in the daily papers. It failed to become a law.

About the time of Gov. Carroll's first election, a committee, appointed by the Legislature for the purpose of obtaining information respecting the condition of the banks, and what legislation, if any, was required, reported that nothing was necessary to be done. The banks were much more solvent than was generally supposed. This was especially the case with the Knoxville and Nashville banks, the former of which would have to call in but 16 per cent and the latter 29 per cent of its loans, to enable them to discharge all their indebtedness. The question then naturally arose, why were their notes so greatly depreciated? The committee, of which A. V. Brown was chairman, thought it was owing to ignorance on the part of the people as to the true financial condition of the banks, and to the intrigue and management of brokers in some of the principal towns of the State, but especially to the excessive importation of foreign fabrics to the neglect of domestic manufactures. During the early portion of the history of the State, and especially after the close of the war with Great Britain, opposition to the importation of foreign fabrics was general and intense, and the sentiment was very strong in favor of domestic manufactures. Numerous laws are on the statute books, favoring the establishment of iron works, salt works, paper-mills, etc.; and Gov. Carroll's messages were never weary of impressing it upon the minds of the people that habits of industry and economy, and special attention to agriculture and domestic manufactures, were of infinitely more value to them than stay and replevin laws and the issue of irredeemable paper currency—the latter being in fact positive evils, while the former were positive benefits. But the question of encouragement to domestic manufactures by means of a protective tariff appears not to have received much attention from political parties in this State previous to 1824. In that year the revision of the tariff, and the augmentation of the duties under it, was one of the principal subjects before Congress, and turned not so much upon the emptiness of the treasury as upon the

distress of the country. By this time prosperity had returned to the State, or was visibly returning, and possibly for this reason, as well as from principle, Tennessee's representatives, Blair, Isaaks and Reynolds arrayed themselves on the side of Mr. Webster in favor of free-trade. Four years later, when the woolen bill, subsequently enlarged into a general tariff bill, came up and marked an era in American legislation, a very large majority of Southern members of Congress, including the entire delegation (nine) from Tennessee, were found to oppose its passage.

Yet notwithstanding the predilections of the people of his adopted State in favor of free-trade, Gen. Jackson himself, in his message after he became President, as had all of his Republican predecessors in that office, favored protection. In 1822 his friends who desired his elevation to that great office began a movement which in 1823 resulted in his election to the United States Senate, and they also procured for him from the General Assembly of the State a nomination to the presidency, which would give him, it was believed, more prestige before the country than he could otherwise obtain, for the people generally had no very high opinion of his qualifications for civil administration. With reference to this nomination Mr. Tucker says: "At first this nomination afforded matter for jest and merriment rather than for serious animadversion in other States; since, unquestionable as were Gen. Jackson's military qualifications, he was not thought to possess the information, the respect for civil authority, nor the temper deemed requisite in the office of President, and very few believed that the favor which his military successes had produced for him in his own State would find much support for him in other parts of the Union." The General was nominated, however, in 1824, and received 99 electoral votes to 84 for John Quincy Adams, 41 for William H. Crawford, and 37 for Henry Clay. But as he failed to receive a majority of the electoral votes, there was no choice of President by the people, and the election was carried into the House of Representatives, where, through the influence of Henry Clay, John Quincy Adams was elected President, and Mr. Clay made Secretary of State. This appointment by President Adams led to charges by Gen. Jackson's friends against him and Mr. Clay of a bargain with reference to these two high positions, which charges every well informed person now knows to have been without foundation. But the General's defeat only served to stimulate his friends to renewed and greater efforts in his behalf. The question was again taken up by the Tennessee Legislature as early as October 6, 1825, on which day the House of Representatives, after a long preamble expressive of confidence and admiration for Gen. Jackson, passed a resolution already passed by the Senate, nominating him their



next candidate for the presidency. The resolution was carried thirty-seven to one, the one being Lewis Reneau, who objected to the action of the Legislature as impolitic and in bad taste, inasmuch as the election was nearly four years hence. Upon hearing of this nomination Gen. Jackson immediately resigned his seat in the United States Senate, thinking it due to himself to practice upon the maxims he had recommended to others, and hence felt constrained to retire from a position whence imputation might exist and suspicions arise in relation to the exercise of an influence tending to his own aggrandisement.

Hugh L. White was elected October 23, 1825, to succeed Andrew Jackson in the Senate, and Gen. Jackson becoming a candidate for the presidency in 1828 was triumphantly elected to that office, receiving 178 electoral votes to 83 for Mr. Adams.

In his first inaugural message President Jackson said: "With regard to a proper selection of subjects of impost with a view to revenue, it would seem to me that the spirit of equity and compromise in which the constitution was formed, requires that the great interests of agriculture, commerce and manufactures should be equally favored, and that perhaps the only exception to this rule should consist of the peculiar encouragement of any products of either of them that may be found essential to our National independence."

Gen. William Carroll served continuously as governor from 1821 until 1827, in which latter year he was succeeded by Gen. Samuel Houston, who was inaugurated in the Baptist Church in Nashville, October 1. Gov. Houston's administration appears to have been distinguished by nothing more extraordinary than its termination. The Governor was married January 22, 1829, to Miss Eliza H. Allen, daughter of John Allen, of Sumner County, and shortly afterward discovered, or thought he discovered, that she was wanting in that affection which a wife should have toward her husband. His mind was haunted also by the suspicion that she was not a pure and chaste woman. Mrs. Houston was informed by her husband of the thoughts that were in his mind, and which destroyed his happiness, the natural result being a serious difficulty between them; and, notwithstanding that the Governor's suspicions were soon dispelled and his opinions changed, that he gave her and her father his assurance of his acceptance of her as a virtuous and chaste wife, and that he would defend her character against all assailants with his life if need be, yet the poison of suspicion had inflicted its wound, and no reconciliation could be affected.

Gen. Houston, for this, and perhaps for other reasons, resigned the office of governor of Tennessee into the hands of William Hall, speaker

of the Senate. Gen. Houston in his letter of resignation said: "In dissolving the political connection which has so long, and in such a variety of forms, existed between the people of Tennessee and myself, no private afflictions, however deep or incurable, can forbid an expression of the grateful recollections so eminently due to the kind partialities of an intelligent public. \* \* \* That veneration for public opinion by which I have measured every act of my official life, has taught me to hold no delegated trust which would not daily be renewed by my constituents, could the choice be daily submitted to a sensible expression of their will; and although shielded by a perfect consciousness of undiminished claim to the confidence and support of my fellow-citizens, yet delicately circumstanced as I am, and by my own misfortunes, more than by fault or contrivance of any one, overwhelmed by sudden calamity, it is certainly due to myself and my respect to the world that I should retire from a position which, in the public judgment, I might seem to hold by questionable authority."

Gov. William Hall served out the unexpired term of Gov. Houston, when he was succeeded by William Carroll, who was again governor for six years by successive re-elections. During these three terms of Gov. Carroll occurred events second in importance to none that occurred in the history of this country previous to the civil war. During the years 1831 and 1832, there was great excitement throughout the country, and especially in Tennessee, over the nomination of the President for a second term. When the time came for nominating a candidate Jackson was re-nominated, and when the time for the election came he was triumphantly re-elected by a majority of the popular and electoral votes surprising even to the most sanguine of his friends—the people giving him 687,502 votes to 530,189 for Mr. Clay, and the Electoral College giving him 219 votes to 49 for his opponent.

The gravest question with which the Government of the United States had to deal previous to the secession of the Southern States in 1860–61, was that of nullification in South Carolina in 1832. Nullification was the result of the tariff law of 1828, which most of the Southern States thought unequal and unjust to them in many respects, but which all, except South Carolina, were resolved to obey until it should be modified or repealed. South Carolina boldly proclaimed in her "Ordinance to Nullify Certain Acts of the Congress of the United States," that certain laws imposing duties on imports were "unauthorized by the Constitution of the United States, and were null, void and no law, nor binding on this State, its officers or citizens;" and she further ordained "that it shall not be lawful for any of the constituted authorities, whether of this State or of the United

States, to enforce the payment of duties imposed by said acts within the limits of this State."

President Jackson's views on the constitutionality of the tariff laws, were diametrically opposed to those above expressed. The following is his language: "The States have delegated their whole authority over imports to the General Government, without limitation or restriction, saving the very inconsiderable reservation relating to their inspection laws. This authority having thus entirely passed from the States, the right to exercise it for the purpose of protection does not exist in them, and consequently if it be not possessed by the General Government it must be extinct. Our political system would thus present the anomaly of a people stripped of a right to foster their own industries and to counteract the most selfish and destructive policy which might be adopted by foreign nations. This surely can not be the case. This indispensable power, thus surrendered by the States, must be, within the scope of the authority on this subject, expressly delegated to Congress.

"While the chief object of duties should be revenue, they may be so adjusted as to encourage manufactures. In this adjustment, however, it is the duty of the Government to be guided by the general good. Objects of national importance ought to be protected. Of these, the productions of our soil, our mines, and our workshops, essential to our national defense, occupy the first ranks. Whatever other species of domestic industry, having the importance to which I have referred, may be enabled, after temporary protection, to compete with foreign labor on equal terms, merit the same attention in a subordinate degree."

The State of Tennessee, through her Legislature, expressed her views and stated her position at considerable length, in the latter part of the year 1832, on the three great questions then uppermost in the minds of the people—the tariff, internal improvements, and nullification. Following is the series of resolutions submitted to the Senate October 20, 1832, by a majority of the joint select committee to which they had been referred:

Believing that a crisis has arrived which renders it important that Tennessee should declare to the world her opinion upon the subject of the relative power of the Federal and State Governments, this General Assembly, that no misapprehension may exist as to what are their political principles, do declare that they regard the resolutions adopted in the Legislature of Virginia in the year 1798, and the report of Mr. Madison thereon, as a true and safe exposition of the principles of the Federal constitution; yet, as the supporters of nullification claim to be adherents of the same doctrines, it becomes the duty of this General Assembly distinctly to declare it as their opinion, that nullification is a heresy, the more dangerous as it professes to rest upon the basis of the doctrines of 1798. Therefore,

*Resolved by the General Assembly of the State of Tennessee,* That we regard the doctrine that a State under the constitution, either by its Legislature or by a convention of the people of the State, has the power to render inoperative a law of Congress within the



limits of the State, as unwarranted by the Federal constitution and dangerous to the existence of the Union.

*Resolved*, That we regard nullification by either of these means as destructive of the principles of the government, and, under the guise of a peaceful and constitutional remedy, calculated to precipitate the country into civil war.

*Resolved* That the doctrine, that the State has the right, under the constitution, to resist or render inoperative within her limits an act of Congress, whenever the same may be declared unconstitutional by a legislative, or, in its highest political attitude, a convention of the people of the State, is wholly unwarranted by the constitution, dangerous to the existence of the Union, and inconsistent with the preservation of the Federal Government, and tending directly, under the guise of a peaceful remedy, to bring upon our country all the horrors of a civil war.

With reference to the tariff acts of Congress, while a minority of the people of Tennessee thought that the General Government had usurped the right of regulating by law the labor of a portion of the people, by imposing unequal and heavy burdens upon a portion of the States in the form of duties, not for the payment of the public debt, but in order to protect the manufactures of another portion of the States; yet the majority, while they believed these tariff acts unequal, unjust and extremely oppressive, still considered them constitutional, and hence thought that no authority had been usurped by Congress in their passage.

In the same year that these subjects were being discussed, the State was re-districted for members of Congress, the Legislature having been informed on the 3d of September, 1832, that Tennessee had become entitled to thirteen representatives in the lower house of the National Legislature. On the 14th of the samemonth an act was passed dividing the State into fifteen districts for electors of President and Vice-President of the United States, and providing that one elector, and no more, should reside in any one district, and that every voter should be entitled to vote for fifteen electors resident as aforesaid.

About this time also Tennessee, in common with many other States of the Union, abolished a practice, which had become odious to public sentiment almost everywhere—namely, imprisonment for debt. The law was passed December 14, 1831. Following is the preamble, showing the estimate in which the old law was then held, and a portion of the act itself:

WHEREAS, Liberty of person, like liberty of conscience, should not be restrained by unnecessary legal provisions, and as independence of thought and freedom of action are among the most inestimable of our political rights, it is alike unjust, inhuman and oppressive, that imprisonment for debt, which is a hateful remnant of ancient barbarism, should continue to disgrace our statute books, except in cases of fraud, and that it is repugnant to the moral sense of the community to imprison a woman for debt under any circumstances, Therefore

*Be it enacted, etc.*, That no female defendant in any civil action shall be imprisoned either by virtue of mesne or final process, etc., and that at all civil actions at law to be commenced on any debt or contract made after the 1st of March next, in courts of record

or before justices of the peace, the original process shall be a summons to the defendant to appear and answer to plaintiff's action, upon which the defendant shall be notified, as is now practiced where bail is not required; nor shall special or appearance bail be required.

On January 24, 1840, it was enacted that even in cases of fraud the defendant should have the privilege of release from imprisonment upon *habeas corpus*, and when the plaintiff had sworn falsely the defendant was discharged from imprisonment altogether. Since then imprisonment for debt has been entirely swept from the statute books, and there remains no vestige of it in Tennessee.

The gubernatorial election of 1835 was of a peculiar nature. It was the first election for governor under the new constitution. The candidates were Gov. Carroll, Newton Cannon and West H. Humphreys. Gov. Carroll had then served six consecutive years, and those opposed to him objected to his re-election on this ground, and also on the ground of his alleged ineligibility to re-election under the new constitution. He was also considered the Van Buren candidate, which, to some extent, militated against his success. His ineligibility was affirmed upon the strength of the language of Article III., Section 4, of the new constitution:

The governor shall hold his office for two years, and until his successor shall be elected and qualified. He shall not be eligible more than six years in any term of eight.

The most weighty argument against him, however, in the popular mind, was the fact that he had already held the office during two periods, of six years each, or twelve years altogether, and to re-elect him under such circumstances would have been to violate all the precedents in the State's previous history. Yet, notwithstanding that all these considerations served to defeat him, his popularity was so great that he received 35,247 of the popular vote, to 42,795 cast for Newton Cannon, and 8,433 for West H. Humphreys. Newton Cannon having been thus duly elected, Gov. Carroll's eligibility never came to a test.

It will be remembered that in 1825 Hugh L. White was elected to the United States Senate, to fill a vacancy caused by the resignation of Gen. Jackson. In 1829 he was re-elected to the same position, and in the winter of 1832-33, upon the resignation of John C. Calhoun as president of the Senate, Mr. White was elected to preside over the deliberations of that august body, and in the performance of the duties of his office was so just and impartial as to receive the commendations of Mr. Clay, a political opponent. In 1834 Mr. White commenced to be named as a possible successor to President Jackson in 1837, and in 1835 he was brought prominently forward as a candidate. Alabama, by a large majority of her Legislature, nominated him for that office, and soon citizens' conventions in numerous counties and many newspapers in Tennessee an-

nounced him as their choice. The newspapers stated that Judge White's claims to the Presidency "would not be submitted to a packed jury, designated by the name of a National Convention," but to the impartial decision of a free people. Thomas H. Benton, in his "Thirty Years' View," says that Judge White's candidacy was instigated by John C. Calhoun, in order to divide the Democratic party, and thus defeat Martin Van Buren. Mr. Van Buren, as was expected and foreseen, became the nominee of the Baltimore Convention, receiving the entire number of votes, 265, and Richard M. Johnson was nominated for Vice-President, receiving, with the aid of 15 votes unauthorizably cast for Tennessee (which State sent no delegates to the convention), by Edmund Rucker, who happened to be in Baltimore at that time, in the capacity of a private citizen, 178 votes, to 87 for W. C. Rives, just 1 vote more than the necessary two-thirds. In Tennessee the course of Mr. Rucker was regarded as a remarkable episode.

John Bell, one of the most able and distinguished men ever produced in this country, and the Hon. Bailie Peyton, were ardently devoted to Judge White, while Felix Grundy, James K. Polk, Cave Johnson, and J. N. Catron were in favor of Mr. Van Buren, as was also President Jackson himself, whose "preference," however, which was so much talked of at the time, did not prevent Judge White's receiving the popular and electoral vote of Tennessee.

The spirit of the movement in favor of Judge White is sufficiently shown in John Bell's famous Vauxhall's speech, delivered May 23, 1835. A few words only from the peroration of this speech can be here introduced:

I have already said that party is the only source whence destruction awaits our system. I am so fully and solemnly impressed with this truth that were I asked what I consider the first great duty of an American statesman at this time, I would say guard against the excesses of party. If I were asked what I consider the second duty, I would say, guard against the excesses of party; and were I asked the third, I would still say, guard against the excesses of party. \* \* \* When the spirit of party shall receive an organic existence, thus giving rise to a system within a system, not subordinate but superior to and designed to control the natural operation of the regular, lawful, and constitutional government of the country, when the sacred obligations of truth and justice are required to be yielded up a sacrifice to the unity of such a party, then I proclaim to you and to the world that the spirit of evil which is in the party is predominant. Those who would preserve the public liberty and our free institutions from pollution and overthrow must range themselves under a different standard. When party is the watchword and the ensign of those who fight for the spoils, the warning voice of patriotism says to every freeman, every white man, inscribe your country on your banner, and *in hoc signo vinces*.

The campaign was conducted with vigor on both sides until the election in November, 1836, when it was found that Mr. Van Buren had received 170 electoral votes; Gen. Harrison, 73; Judge White, 26 (Tennessee's 15 and Georgia's 11); Daniel Webster, 14, and Willie P.



Mangum, South Carolina's, 11. Tennessee's choice for Vice-President was John Tyler. The popular vote received in Tennessee by Judge White was 35,962, while Van Buren received 26,120. The defeat of Judge White for the presidency led him and his supporters mainly to unite with the Whigs. They had become unalterably opposed to the leading measures of the administration of President Jackson, and perceived as they thought the liberties of the people surely being absorbed by the executive of the nation. The policy of Mr. Van Buren being in the main but a continuance of that of his predecessor, the Whigs were equally opposed to it. However, in the gubernatorial election of 1839, in which Gov. Newton Cannon was the Whig candidate, and James K. Polk the Democratic candidate, the latter gentleman was elected by a vote of 54,680 to 52,114 cast for Gov. Cannon, and thus the custom, so long followed, of honoring the governor with three successive terms, was departed from, and has not since been renewed. The issues before the people for some years previous to Mr. Polk's election pertained almost wholly to the banks and to the currency. President Jackson had vetoed the bill re-chartering the United States Bank, and the country became dependent upon State banks. The panic of 1837 was attributed by the Whigs to the "experiments" of the executive, as is shown by the following extract from Gov. Cannon's message to the Legislature, October 4, 1837:

It has fallen to our lot to taste the bitter fruits of an experiment upon the currency, which in the midst of the highest state of prosperity has brought upon us a strong revulsion and total derangement of the monetary concerns of the country. How long and to what extent we may be doomed to suffer under this state of things must mainly depend upon the action of the General Government, by whose mistaken action and unwise policy this calamity has been inflicted upon us.

The Whigs were generally in favor of the re-establishment of the United States Bank, and opposed to the State Bank system, while the Democrats were in favor of the State Bank and opposed to the United States Bank. Ephraim H. Foster and Hugh L. White were the two senators in Congress, both of whom had been elected by the Whigs and were opposed to the policy of the administration in several important particulars. In 1839 the Legislature of Tennessee had changed its complexion, a majority of the members being then Democratic. This Legislature, in the plenitude of its wisdom, deemed it proper to change the character of the United States Senate, so far as lay within its power, by instructing Messrs. Foster and White to pursue a course with regard to certain specific measures different from that they would naturally pursue if permitted to be guided by their own judgment alone. The Legislature said they availed themselves of the power which legitimately, and in conformity with long established Republican usage throughout the Union, belonged

to them of instructing their senators and requesting their representatives in Congress to carry out their declared wishes: and

WHEREAS, The extraordinary circumstances which have existed for the last few years in the financial and commercial interests of the United States, remain unabated, and under causes of increased excitement and difficulty originating as we believe in the same vast source of public mischief; and

WHEREAS, We do solemnly believe that to that source, the late United States Bank, in a great degree to be attributed the oppressive calamities under which we have suffered, and through which we are now actually passing, etc., etc. Therefore, be it

*Resolved*, That our Senators in Congress be instructed, and our Representatives requested to vote against the chartering by Congress of a national bank;

To vote for and to use all fair and proper exertions to procure the passage of the sub-treasury bill, or independent treasury bill;

To vote against Mr. Crittenden's or any similar bill to secure the freedom of elections

To vote against the distribution among the States of the sales of the public lands;

To vote for a bill repealing the duties on imported salt; and

To heartily support the leading measures and policy and administrations of Andrew Jackson and Martin Van Buren.

These were named and are known as the "Instructing Resolutions," and were passed by the Senate November 8, 1839, and by the House of Representatives November 14. On the 15th Mr. Foster, in an exceedingly able letter, covering all the points of the instructing resolutions, resigned his seat in the Senate of the United States. Felix Grundy was elected to fill the vacancy, and resigned, not being constitutionally eligible at the time of this election, but was re-elected December 14, 1839. Mr. Grundy died December 19, 1840, and was succeeded in the Senate by A. O. P. Nicholson, appointed by Gov. Polk.

Senator White, like Senator Foster, unable conscientiously to obey the instructions contained in the resolutions, resigned his seat in the Senate in a letter dated January 11, 1840. His letter was shorter, more pointed, but perhaps not less able than that of Mr. Foster. It contained this remarkable passage:

After your resolutions shall have performed their wonted office and my resignation shall have been received, before electing my successor, I hope in your wisdom you will either rescind or expunge the sixth resolution. Our common constituents, the free and chivalrous citizens of Tennessee, I hope will ever be represented in the Senate by those whose principles and feelings are in accordance with their own; and while this resolution is suffered to remain, no man can accept that high station but one who is himself enslaved, and fit only to represent those in the like condition with himself.

With reference to this same sixth resolution Mr. Foster, in his letter of resignation, had said: "I would as soon be the servant of the President as his senator." Thus did those two distinguished men emphatically protest against the "long-established Republican usage throughout the Union" of instructing senators in Congress. Alexander Anderson, of Knox County, was elected to succeed Hugh L. White in the Senate of the United States for the unexpired term.

Considerable difficulty was experienced in electing senators to regularly succeed Mr. Foster and Judge White. The State was very nearly equally divided in sentiment between the two great political parties—Democratic and Whig. Mr. Polk had been elected governor of the State in 1839 by only 2,500 majority in a total vote of 106,834, and in 1841 James C. Jones, the Whig candidate, was elected by a majority of 3,243 over Gov. Polk, in a total vote of 103,929; though in the meantime, in November, 1840, Gen. Harrison, the Whig candidate for the Presidency, had received in Tennessee a majority of 12,102 in a total vote of 108,680. This Presidential election was perhaps as nearly devoid of issues as any that has occurred since the formation of the Government, the principal ones being the re-establishment of the United States bank and the turning out of office of the appointees of Jackson and Van Buren. After the success of Gen. Harrison was assured, the Whig papers, as might have been expected, announced that the victory was a triumph, not only of party, but the firm and conclusive assertion of moral right and sound policy over Executive misrule.

In 1841 the equally balanced condition of the two parties was further shown by the election of members to the Legislature, there being chosen to the Senate 12 Whigs and 13 Democrats, and to the House of Representatives, 39 Whigs and 36 Democrats, giving the Whigs a majority on joint ballot of only two. The Legislature convened October 4, and on the 22d Lewis Reneau introduced into the Senate a resolution that the Senate meet the House of Representatives in the Representative Hall on the first Monday of November, 1841, for the purpose of electing two senators, one to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Felix Grundy, and the other to succeed Judge White, whose term had expired on the previous 4th of March. This resolution was laid on the table, and after numerous attempts to take it up and go into convention with the House, such attempts being uniformly defeated by the Democratic members, either by an adjournment or by a direct vote. On the 16th of November a message was received from the House urging upon the Senate the immediate necessity of filling the vacancies in the Senate of the United States, not only on the ground of the interests of the State, but also upon those of policy and constitutional obligation. It was observed in this message that each member of the Legislature had taken an oath to support the Constitution of the United States, which instrument made it incumbent upon State Legislatures to fill vacancies in the United States Senate, and that a failure to do so would be disorganizing and revolutionary, and tend to the destruction of the Government of the United States, for if Tennessee had the right to refuse to elect Senators all the other



States had the same right, and if all should exercise it at the same time there would be no United States Senate, and the result would be the dissolution of the Federal compact.

After the reading of this message, one of its preambles was so amended as to read in effect that it would promote and advance the public interest by keeping E. H. Foster and Spencer Jarnagin out of office for the next four and six years, respectively, these two gentlemen being the Whig candidates for the vacant seats. The amendment was strongly protested against as being indicative of contempt for the whole Whig party in the Legislature. It was evident from the first, if the two Houses should go into joint convention that two Whig senators would be elected, and this the Democratic members were determined to prevent by refusing to go into convention. It was their desire, in view of the nearly equal division in public sentiment in the State on the subject of national politics to choose one Democratic and one Whig senator, and they would be satisfied with nothing less. This position they justified on the grounds that the thirteen Democratic senators represented 62,000 qualified voters, while the twelve Whig senators represented only 58,000 qualified voters; that if the popular will of the counties of Humphreys and Benton were faithfully represented the strength of both political parties would be equally balanced in any attempt to elect senators to Congress, by a joint vote of the two houses; that a change of four votes in one representative district, and of fifteen in another, would in each case have sent a Democrat instead of a Whig to the House of Representatives, and thus in either case have produced a tie, and they were determined to compel the Whig majority in joint convention in case they should go into it, to grant them the benefits they could have commanded if a tie in the joint convention had been the result of the popular election. The attempt to elect two senators was finally abandoned by the convention, and the Legislature adjourned February 7, 1842.

Mr. John Quincy Adams, of Massachusetts, about that time, presented to Congress a petition, praying for a dissolution of the Union, and the Whigs of Tennessee charged the thirteen Democratic Senators, who, by their obstructive tactics had prevented the election of United States Senators, with having taken an important step toward effecting the very result for which Mr. Adams' petitioners had only prayed.

The Legislature of 1841, besides failing to elect Senators to Congress, also failed to redistrict the State, as required to do by the constitution, into senatorial and representative districts. In order that these duties might be performed as soon as practicable, Gov. Jones convened the Legislature in extra session October 3, 1842. This Legislature

failed to elect United States Senators, but it did succeed in redistricting the State; and the Whigs being in the majority, controlled the construction of the redistricting bill, which elicited vigorous protests from Democratic members of both Senate and House, as being unjust to the Democratic party of the State; a flagrant outrage upon popular rights; as overshadowing all gerrymandering that had ever been attempted in any State of the Union; as a violation of the eternal principles of justice and right; and as a sacrifice of the rights of citizenship upon the altar of party.

But notwithstanding these charges of unfairness against the Whig members of the Legislature, Gov. Jones was elected in 1843 over ex-Gov. Polk by a majority of 3,833, and the Legislature became strongly Whig in both branches, the Senate having fourteen Whigs to eleven Democrats, and the House forty Whigs to thirty-five Democrats—a Whig majority of eight on joint ballot, hence it was an easy matter for the Whigs to fill the two vacant seats in the United States Senate, without going into joint convention, the method they insisted upon in 1841, when that was the only method in which it was possible for them to succeed. On the 17th of October, 1843, therefore, they proceeded to elect Ephraim H. Foster to succeed Felix Grundy, and Spencer Jarnagin to succeed Judge White; each of these successful candidates receiving fourteen votes in the Senate and forty in the House of Representatives—a strict party vote.

In the Presidential election of 1844 the annexation of Texas was the principal issue, and, hence, when Henry Clay, on the 17th of April of that year, expressed himself as opposed to annexation, the hopes of the Democrats of the State were greatly elevated, for they believed that no candidate could be elected President unless he favored annexation; and when on the 20th of the same month Mr. Van Buren announced himself as also opposed to annexation, his enemies in the Democratic party were greatly elated, for they then became certain that he could not become the nominee of the Democratic party. When the Whig convention met on the 1st of May, at Baltimore, it nominated Mr. Clay for the Presidency by acclamation, and on the 27th of the same month, in the same city, Mr. Van Buren's chances were ruthlessly destroyed by the adoption of the two-thirds rule. There were 266 votes in the convention, of which, on the first ballot, Mr. Van Buren received 146, to 116 for all others. On the second ballot he received 127, and on the eighth ballot 104. On this ballot James K. Polk, who was openly and strongly in favor of annexation, received his first support, forty-four votes, and on the ninth ballot he received 233 votes, and was nominated.

The result of the election was that Mr. Polk received 170 electoral votes to 105 for Mr. Clay, New York, with her thirty-six electoral votes having been carried for Mr. Polk, by the aid of James G. Birney, the abolition candidate for the presidency. Tennessee, however, preferred to support Mr. Clay, and gave him 60,039 votes to 59,915 for Mr. Polk, thus giving to the Whig candidate her thirteen electoral votes\* by the slender majority of 124, and thus was Mr. Polk the first presidential candidate in the history of the country who was not supported by his own State.

On March 4, 1845, the senatorial term of E. H. Foster expired, and on the 25th of October the Legislature elected Hopkins L. Turney as his successor. In August of that year Aaron V. Brown was elected governor of the State, receiving 58,269 votes to 56,646 cast for E. H. Foster, and the Democratic party elected a majority of the Legislature. The Senate, however, was evenly divided, twelve Whigs and twelve Democrats, and an episode worthy of remembrance occurred in the election of speaker. The Democrats nominated John A. Gardner for the position, but the Whigs were determined he should not be elected on account of his having been one of the thirteen Democratic senators who, in 1841 and 1842, prevented the election of two Whig senators to Congress. After 133 ballots had been cast Mr. Gardner withdrew, and on the 138th ballot Harvey M. Watterson was elected. In 1847 Neill S. Brown was elected governor, receiving 61,469 votes to 60,454 cast for Gov. A. V. Brown, and on the 22d of November, on the 48th ballot, John Bell was elected United States senator to succeed Spencer Jarnagin.

The presidential election of 1848 resulted in there being cast in Tennessee 64,705 votes for Gen. Zachary Taylor, and 58,419 for Gen. Lewis Cass, a Whig majority of 6,286. In 1849, however, the current of political opinion had so far changed as to elect Gen. William Trousdale governor (Democratic) over Neill S. Brown (Whig), the former receiving 61,740 votes, the later 60,350, and the Legislature became a tie on joint ballot, the Senate being composed of 14 Whigs and 11 Democrats, while the House of Representatives contained 36 Whigs and 39 Democrats. In 1851 political sentiment turned again in favor of the Whigs, who elected Judge William B. Campbell governor, giving him 63,333 votes, while the Democrats could muster only 61,673 in favor of Gov. Trousdale, and the Legislature elected that year was strongly Whig, the Senate having 16 Whigs to 9 Democrats, and the House 40 Whigs to 35 Democrats, though the Democrats succeeded in electing 7 members to Con-

\*The extra session of the Legislature of 1842 changed the law as to Electoral Districts, making them conform to the Congressional Districts, which were at that time reduced to eleven, and provided for two electors at large.



gress to the Whigs 4. In 1852 Tennessee cast 58,802 votes for Gen. Winfield Scott for President, to 57,123 for Franklin Pierce, but in 1853 Andrew Johnson was elected governor over Gustavus A. Henry, the Whig candidate, by a majority of 2,261 in a total vote of 124,581. In 1855 Andrew Johnson was re-elected governor over the American candidate, Meredith P. Gentry, the vote being for Johnson 67,499, and for Gentry 65,224.

In the canvass preceding this election the two rival candidates made laudable efforts to "locate" each other politically—Mr. Johnson placing Mr. Gentry among the Federalists by showing that he was willing to vote for Webster for President in 1852, and by calling attention to his vote in Congress for the appropriation for President Harrison's widow; while Mr. Gentry "located" Mr. Johnson among the Abolitionists, by showing that he was in favor of dividing the State into Congressional Districts on the basis of the voting population, thus ignoring the "three-fifths of all other persons," who could not be constitutionally ignored. This proposition was known as "Johnson's white basis scheme."

In 1856 the tide of political sentiment had begun turning quite strongly in favor of the Democratic party, as shown in the election for President—James Buchanan receiving 73,638 votes, while Millard Fillmore, the American candidate, received only 66,178—and by this vote were elected Democratic presidential electors for the first time since 1832, and for the second time in the history of the State. Fremont, the Republican candidate for the presidency, received no votes in Tennessee. In 1860, when occurred the last presidential election previous to the civil war, the vote was as follows: For John Bell, 69,176; for John Breckinridge, 64,809; and for Stephen A. Douglas, 11,330. No votes were cast for Abraham Lincoln.

In 1857 Isham G. Harris was elected governor over Robert Hatton, the former receiving 71,178 votes to 59,807 for the latter; in 1859 Gov. Harris was re-elected over John Netherland, the votes being for the two candidates, respectively, 76,073 and 68,042; and in 1861 Isham G. Harris was again re-elected, receiving 70,273 to 37,915 votes cast for W. H. Polk. Thus stood the parties at the breaking out of the civil war.

The question of secession from the Union had been occasionally discussed for years before it was finally attempted, but generally in earnest opposition. In 1850 the Hon. A. O. P. Nicholson expressed himself as entertaining strong Union sentiments, saying that "South Carolina may pass her secession ordinance, but from that day she will have no more peace." The policy of secession, however, gradually became more and more popular throughout the Southern States, but obtained a foothold

more slowly in Tennessee than in the exclusively cotton States. The *True Whig*, published in Nashville, said in August, 1851:

It is a singular fact, yet nevertheless true, that every secessionist who has been elected to Congress in Alabama, North Carolina and Tennessee, or throughout the South, is a Democrat, and all the secession candidates in Mississippi, in which State the election occurs in October next, are Democrats.

To this charge the *Daily American*, also published in Nashville, replied:

There is error in this statement. Strictly speaking there has not been a secessionist elected to Congress from the States named. Some four or five of the members elected to Congress in North Carolina and Alabama believe in the right of secession as an abstract question, as a last resort for aggravated wrong; but not one of them, we believe, is in favor of its exercise for present causes. As to Tennessee, we are at a loss to know who of the members are thus designated as secessionists by the *Whig*. We do not know that a single one of them believes in the constitutional right of a State to secede, even as an abstract question.

It would be difficult, even if desirable, to affirm with precision, when any and which leading member of either the political parties of Tennessee first announced his belief in the doctrine of secession as an abstract right. But it is evident, from the following message of Gov. Isham G. Harris, that he, at least, at the time of its writing had become a convert to the doctrine:

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT, February 28, 1860.

*Gentlemen of the Senate and House of Representatives:*

I herewith transmit resolutions adopted by the Legislatures of South Carolina and Mississippi upon Federal relations. Whilst I do not concur in their recommendations, not seeing the necessity or propriety of a convention of the slaveholding States at this time, I nevertheless deem it proper that I should communicate, and that you should respectfully consider the suggestion of our sister States.

Believing, as I do, that the people of Tennessee are loyal to the constitution, in all its parts, and with each and all of its guarantees possessing a jealous regard for the rights of the States; feeling justly apprehensive of encroachments upon them, they would feel and demonstrate, when necessary, their identity with any of her sister States, in resisting any unjust or unconstitutional warfare upon them or their institutions.

The resistance should be, first, by the use of all the constitutional means in our power; to the end that the Union may be preserved as it was formed, and the blessings of a government of equality under a written constitution perpetuated.

But if the hope of thus obtaining justice shall be disappointed, and the Federal Government, in the hands of reckless fanatics, shall at any time become an engine of power to invade the rights of individuals and of States, to follow the example of our fathers of 1776, will be the only alternative left us. While there is much in the present attitude of parties, States and public men in the northern portion of the Confederacy to cause apprehension as to the security of our rights and the continuance of fraternal feeling, yet there is a probability, and a strong one, that wise, temperate and firm counsels may avert the impending evils.

\* \* \* \* \*

Respectfully,

ISHAM G. HARRIS.

In the resolutions referred to by Gov. Harris in the above message, South Carolina had reaffirmed her right to secede, as affirmed in her ordinance of 1852, whenever the occasion should arise justifying her in her

own judgment in taking that step, and favoring the assembling of the Southern States to concert measures for united action. And Mississippi had resolved that the election of a President of the United States by the votes of one section of the Union only, on the ground of an irreconcilable conflict between the respective systems of labor of the two sections, would so threaten a destruction of the ends for which the constitution was formed, as to justify the slaveholding States in taking counsel together for their separate protection and safety.

The attitude of the Southern States thus illustrated was the immediate consequence of the John Brown raid on Harper's Ferry, made October 25, 1859. Eight days after John Brown's foolish and fanatical outbreak, a series of resolutions was introduced into the Tennessee Legislature, recognizing the outbreak as the natural fruit of the "treasonable, irrepressible, conflict doctrine of the great head of the black Republican party, and that it becomes the imperative duty of national men of all parties throughout the Union to unite in crushing out its authors as traitors to their country," etc.

After the election of Mr. Lincoln to the presidency, the three great political parties in Tennessee, in the presence and anxiety of a common danger (for all were devotedly attached to the institution of slavery), were drawn more closely together in sentiment and feeling. They correctly and clearly perceived that imminent danger threatened the institution of slavery. The leaders of these three parties united in an address to the people of the State, recommending them to assemble in primary meetings to request the Governor to call together the Legislature, with a view to their providing for a State convention, the object of which should be to bring about a conference of the Southern States to consider the existing political troubles, and if possible to compose sectional strife. The first extra session of the Legislature of 1861, convened January 7. The speaker of the Senate, T. W. Newman, in the course of his opening address said:

We have been called together in the midst of revolution, the consequences of which no man can calculate, I fear no people can now remedy, no State counteract, no Government stop. The rejection of the just, fair and equitable propositions of the venerable senator from Kentucky staggers the hopes of the most conservative men of the South. Let the Southern States then assemble through their best, their ablest men, without distinction of party. They will adopt a declaration, by which we will all stand, to which we can all pledge our lives, our fortunes and our sacred honor. In Southern disunion there are destruction, defeat and ruin, while in co-operation and unity there are safety, property and happiness.

Gov. Harris addressed the Legislature in a long message in which he ably reviewed all the charges of aggression against the Northern people upon the institution of slavery and of its various violations of the Con-



stitution of the United States; defended the South as not having violated constitutional obligations, recommended several amendments to the constitution, one of which was that these amendments should never be changed without the consent of all the slave States. He also said:

If the non-slaveholding States should refuse to comply with a demand so just and reasonable; refuse to abandon at once and forever their unjust war upon us, our institutions, and our rights; refuse, as they have heretofore done, to perform in good faith the obligations of the compact of union—much as we may appreciate the power, prosperity, greatness, and glory of this Government; deeply as we deplore the existence of causes which have already driven one State out of the Union; much as we may regret the imperative necessity which they have wantonly and wickedly forced upon us, every consideration of self-preservation and self-respect require that we should assert and maintain our “equality in the Union, or independence out of it.”

Thus powerfully did the Governor approach the Legislature, and through that body indirectly, and by other means directly, the people. The latter, however, were not ready for secession, John Bell, but a few months previously, as a candidate for the presidency upon a platform of one plank: “The Union, the Constitution, and the Enforcement of the Laws,” had received over 69,000 votes, and Stephen A. Douglas over 11,000, and it may, with small risk of error, be assumed that this aggregate vote of 81,000 preferred union to disunion. But those who favored secession had the great advantage of able, earnest, and determined leaders, while the Unionists, who should have been and might have been even more ably led by John Bell and Andrew Johnson, were deprived of such leadership by the characteristic hesitancy of the former with respect to his proper course, and by the absence during a portion of the time from the State of the latter in the Senate of the United States. Notwithstanding this great disadvantage the people of the State, under the less able but equally patriotic T. A. R. Nelson, Horace Maynard, William G. Brownlow and others, when, on the 9th of February they were called upon to decide calling a convention to consider the proper course for the State to pursue, cast 91,803 votes against the convention, to 24,749 in its favor. And up to the hour of the attack upon Fort Sumter, though the Governor and a majority of the Legislature were really in favor of joining the Southern Confederacy, yet they were unable to accomplish this result.

After this event it would doubtless have been impossible to stem the tide of secession sentiment. On the 8th of June, so great had been the change in public opinion that upon the questions of separation and no separation, representation and no representation, the vote stood in East Tennessee: For separation, 14,780; no separation, 32,923; representation, 14,601; no representation, 32,962. Middle Tennessee: Separation, 58,265; no separation, 7,956; representation, 58,198; no representation,

8,298. West Tennessee: Separation, 29,127; no separation, 6,117; representation, 28,902; no representation, 6,104. Camps: Separation, 6,246; no separation, 6,340. Total vote: For separation, 108,418; against separation, 53,336; for representation, 101,701; against representation, 47,364.

On the 2d of July, by proclamation of Jefferson Davis, Tennessee became a member of the Southern Confederacy, and on August 1, 1861, a vote was taken on the question of the adoption of the permanent constitution of the Confederate States, resulting as follows: East Tennessee—for constitution, 15,429; against it, 26,232. Middle Tennessee—for constitution, 42,931; against it, 2,254; West Tennessee—for constitution, 22,938; against it, 1,868. Military Camps—for constitution, 3,835; against it, 3. Total vote: For constitution, 85,133; against it, 30,357. On October 24, 1861, the Legislature elected two senators to the Confederate Congress, one from the old Democratic party, Landon C. Haynes, and the other from the old Whig party, Gustavus A. Henry.

On December 4, 1861, the following presidential electors met in Nashville to cast the vote of the State for President and Vice-President of the Confederate States of America: At large, Robert C. Foster and William Wallace. District electors—F. M. Fulkerson, W. L. Eakin, S. D. Rowan, John F. Doak, George W. Buchanan, Lucius J. Polk, G. A. Washington, R. F. Lamb, Robert B. Hunt, Joseph R. Mosby. John R. Fleming was elected by the foregoing to fill the vacancy caused by the absence of the chosen elector for the second district. After organization the vote of the college was unanimously for Jefferson Davis and Alexander H. Stephens for President and Vice-President of the Confederate States. From this time on, until a portion of the State was occupied by the United States soldiers, what political history the State had is mainly narrated in the military chapters.

As soon as a portion of Tennessee came under control of Federal authority, measures were taken for the re-establishment of local government. Gov. Johnson appointed new officers and instructed them to be guided in their course of official action by the constitution and the laws passed previous to the secession of the State, all colored persons coming before a judicial tribunal to be treated as free persons of color. By the latter part of 1864 the entire State had been regained, and on September 5 of that year a convention of loyal citizens assembled in the capitol at Nashville in pursuance of the following call:

At the request of a meeting of the loyal men representing the several divisions of the State of Tennessee at the capital in Nashville on the 2d day of August, 1864, and in accordance with our own views, we do hereby call a convention of the loyal people of the State of Tennessee, to be holden at Nashville on the first Monday in September next, to

take into consideration: 1st. The general state of the country. 2d. The means of reorganizing civil government and restoring law and order in the State of Tennessee. 3d. The expediency of holding a presidential election in the State in November next, and finally to take such preliminary steps in reference to said matter as they may deem necessary and proper, and we do most earnestly urge upon the loyal order-loving and law abiding people of every county in the State, the great importance of securing a full representation in said proposed convention.

W. G. BROWNLOW.

W. P. JONES.

M. M. BRIEN.

J. M. TOMENY.

HORACE MAYNARD.

JOHN H. CAMPBELL.

J. B. BINGHAM.

W. H. FITCH, JR.

About 250 delegates representing fifty-five counties were present. Gen. Samuel Milligan was chosen chairman. The convention remained in session for four days, during which time a series of resolutions was proposed and adopted. Among other things it was resolved that a convention of the loyal people of the State should assemble at as early a day as possible to revise the State Constitution and reorganize the State Government, and that an election for President and Vice-President of the United States should be held in the following November, at which only known active friends of the National Government should be permitted to vote. At the same time the following Lincoln and Johnson electoral ticket was nominated: For the State at large, Horace Maynard and W. H. Wisener; for East Tennessee, L. C. Houk, Robert A. Crawford, J. C. Everett; for Middle Tennessee, J. O. Shackelford, W. B. Stokes, T. H. Gibbs; for West Tennessee, Almon Case, William H. Fitch. On the 30th of September Gov. Johnson issued a proclamation ordering an election to be held in accordance with the above resolution, and prescribing the following oath, to be administered to all voters not publicly known to be active friends of the United States Government:

I solemnly swear that I will henceforth support the Constitution of the United States and defend it against the assaults of all its enemies. That I am an active friend of the Government of the United States, and an enemy of the so-called Confederate States; that I ardently desire the suppression of the present Rebellion against the Government of the United States; that I sincerely rejoice in the triumph of the armies and navies of the United States, and in the defeat and overthrow of the armies, navies and armed combinations in the so-called Confederate States; that I will cordially oppose all armistices or negotiations for peace with Rebels in arms until the Constitution of the United States, and all laws and proclamations made in pursuance thereof shall be established over all the people of every State and Territory embraced within the National Union; and that I will earnestly aid and assist the loyal people in whatever measure may be adopted for the attainment of these ends; and further that I take this oath freely and voluntarily and without mental reservation. So help me God.

This oath disfranchised a large number who would otherwise have voted at the election, and a protest against the action of Gov. Johnson was prepared and signed by the electors on the McClellan and Pendleton ticket, and presented to the President by John Lelyett, but Mr. Lincoln declined to interfere in the matter. The election was accordingly held



in conformity with the Governor's proclamation, and resulted in an almost unanimous vote for the Lincoln and Johnson electors, who met at the required time and cast their votes, which, however, were not received by Congress.

November 30, 1864, a call was issued by the executive committee of Middle Tennessee, for a convention to be held in Nashville on December 19, "for the purpose of forming a ticket to be run for a State Constitutional Convention by the loyal men of the State." At the appointed time the presence of the Confederate Army in the vicinity of Nashville prevented the assembling of the convention, and it was postponed until January 8, 1865, at which date a large number of delegates, representing fifty-nine counties, assembled. The convention was organized with Col. S. R. Rogers, as chairman. A business committee to whom were referred all resolutions, was appointed, composed of the following delegates: Samuel Milligan, chairman, J. C. Gaut, Horace Maynard, J. R. Hood, Joseph S. Fowler, William Basson, William Spence, H. F. Cooper, Dr. A. Gregg, J. B. Bingham and Col. R. K. Byrd. Two reports were presented. The majority report proposed amendments to the Constitution, to be submitted to the people of Tennessee on the 22d of February following, providing for the abolition of slavery, the disfranchisement of all officers, civil, judicial, and others, who had acted in hostility to the United States Government, the abrogation of the ordinance of secession and all laws passed after May 6, 1861, and the repudiation of all debts contracted in aid of the Rebellion. A resolution was also adopted requiring voters at the election for the ratification of the amendment, and at the first State election to subscribe to an oath similar to the one required at the Presidential election in the preceding November.

A minority report was presented by J. R. Hood, denying the authority of this convention to propose amendments to the constitution, and favoring the calling of a regularly elected Constitutional Convention, to be held some time in February. After a long discussion, the majority report was adopted. William G. Brownlow was then unanimously nominated for governor. After which the convention adjourned, having been in session for six days. On the 26th of January Gov. Johnson issued a proclamation confirming the action of the convention, and ordering an election to be held on February 22, 1865, to vote upon the amendments, and, provided the amendment carried, also one to be held on March 4, for the election of a governor and members of the General Assembly. The election of February 22 passed off quietly. The proposed amendments were adopted almost unanimously, but the vote was quite small. On February 28, although the completed returns had not been received,

Gov. Johnson issued a proclamation declaring the adoption of the amendments. Accordingly, the election of the March 4 was held, and William G. Brownlow was chosen governor by a vote of 23,222 to 35. On the 3d of the following month the Legislature convened. William Heiskell, of Knox County, was chosen speaker by the lower House, and Samuel R. Rodgers, also, of Knox County, by the Senate. On April 5, 1865, Gov. Brownlow was inaugurated, and on the following day transmitted his message to the Legislature. He denounced secession in his most vigorous style, and advocated the ratification of the amendment to the United States Constitution abolishing slavery. On account of the unsettled condition of the country, and the alarming prevalence of crime, he recommended that persons convicted of horse stealing, house-breaking and highway robbery be punished with death. "Let the proof in all such cases be clear and unquestionable, and then let the offenders be hung, even for the first offense." He advised that the pay of all State officers and members of the General Assembly be increased, reviewed the financial condition of the State, and discussed the subject of the common schools, railroads, the State Bank, and other State institutions.

The Legislature remained in session until Monday, June 12. One of the most important measures adopted was an act to limit the franchise, known as the "Arnell bill." By its provisions the right of suffrage was restricted to the following persons: White men over twenty-one years of age who were publicly known to have entertained unconditional Union sentiments from the outbreak of the Rebellion; or who had arrived at the age of twenty-one years since March 4, 1865, and had not been engaged in armed rebellion against the United States Government; also those who had served in the Federal Army and had been honorably discharged; those who had been conscripted by force into the Confederate Army, and were known to be Union men; and those who had voted at the elections in February and March, 1865. All other persons were disfranchised. For all persons who had held civil or diplomatic offices under the Confederate States, or who had held a military office above the rank of captain, if in the army, or lieutenant, if in the navy; also for those who had resigned seats in Congress or positions in the army or navy, or had absented themselves from the United States for the purpose of aiding the Rebellion, the term of disfranchisement was to continue for a period of fifteen years from the passage of the act. For all persons not included in any of the above classes the right of suffrage was to be withheld for five years. It was made the duty of the clerk of each county court to open and keep a registration of votes, and before him proof of loyalty was to be made. It was provided, however, that "no man of

publicly-known Union sentiments" should be required to make oath upon registering, and that no person not registered was to be permitted to vote. A person challenged by an admitted voter was required to take an oath of allegiance and fidelity to the State and the United States Government, and any persons taking the oath falsely was declared guilty of perjury, and subject to the pains and penalties attached to that crime.

By the passage of this act a very large proportion of the former voters of the State were disfranchised, and it was regarded by them as an act of great injustice. At this session, also, the revenue laws of the State were amended, and a high tax was levied on the sales of merchandise and other commercial and legal transactions. The Legislature adjourned to meet on the first Monday in October, at which time it again convened. Meanwhile an election for congressmen had been held August 3, 1865, under the new franchise law, and the following men were chosen: N. G. Taylor, Horace Maynard, Edmund Cooper, W. B. Stokes, W. B. Campbell, D. B. Thomas, I. R. Hawkins and J. W. Leftrich. Upon the beginning of the next session of Congress these members, together with Joseph S. Fowler and D. S. Patterson, senators-elect, presented themselves for admission, but were refused their seats upon the grounds that Tennessee had not yet been restored to her position in the Union. June 16, 1865, Congress submitted the fourteenth amendment to the United States Constitution to the States for their ratification, and three days later Gov. Brownlow issued a proclamation convening the Legislature on the 4th of July for the purpose of considering it. A quorum of the lower house could not be obtained for several days, and as a last resort the sergeant-at-arms was ordered to arrest and bring in the members who had absented themselves to prevent the ratification of the amendment. A. J. Martin, of Jackson County, and P. Williams, of Carter County, were brought in, and on the 19th of July a ballot was taken, the arrested members refusing to vote. The result is tersely given in the following dispatch:

NASHVILLE, TENN., July 19, 12 o'clock M.

*Hon. Edwin M. Stanton, Secretary of War, Washington, D.C.:*

My compliments to the President. We carried the constitutional amendment in the House. Vote, forty-three to eleven, two of his tools refusing to vote.

WILLIAM G. BROWNLOW.

Only two other States, Connecticut and New Hampshire, had preceded Tennessee in this action. As soon as information of the ratification reached Congress, a joint resolution was adopted declaring that "the State of Tennessee is hereby restored to her former practical relations to the Union, and is again entitled to be represented by senators and representatives in Congress." The resolution was signed by the President, who



returned it with a special message, in which he stated that he had signed the bill merely to avoid delay, and added: "My approval is not to be construed as an acknowledgment of the right of Congress to pass laws preliminary to the admission of duly qualified representatives from any of the States."

As has been stated, the Thirty-fourth General Assembly re-assembled on October 2, 1865. The majority of both Houses held extreme radical views on the question of restricting the elective franchise, but there was a determined minority in favor of a much more liberal policy in dealing with those who had participated in the Rebellion. On January 19, 1866, a new "franchise bill" was introduced. Its provisions were very similar to those of the act which it was intended to supersede, except that they were more comprehensive. It excluded from the privilege of the franchise all who had borne arms against the United States, or who had in any way voluntarily aided the Rebellion; also those who had ever sought or accepted office, civil or military, under the so-called Confederate Government. It established an office of Commissioner of Registration in each county, and certificates of registration were required at all elections municipal, county and State.

It soon became apparent to the opponents of the bill that, unless some unusual measures were adopted to prevent it, it would become a law. Consequently, when it came up for a third reading in the House, enough members absented themselves to prevent a quorum, and continued to do so for several days. Finally, the majority of the absentees tendered their resignations.\* Gov. Brownlow, assuming the seats of all members willfully absenting themselves to be vacant, issued a proclamation for an election to be held on March 31, 1866, to fill the vacancies. Nearly all who had resigned were candidates for re-election, and with five exceptions, were returned with large majorities. Meanwhile, both the Senate and House had continued the session by adjournment from day to day, and upon the restoration of a quorum, the consideration of the franchise bill was resumed. It passed both Houses, and became a law on May 3.

During this session an attempt was made to erect East Tennessee into a separate State. A similar effort had been made at the beginning of the war, but it was suppressed by the Confederate State authorities. In April, 1866, Gen. Joseph A. Cooper published a letter advocating the measure, and on the 3d of May following, a convention of delegates from twenty-two counties assembled at Knoxville, for the purpose of memorial-

\*The seceding members were W. B. Lewis, Samuel P. Walker, A. E. Garrett, Asa Faulkner, A. A. Freeman, J. F. Thomas, Abner A. Steele, W. B. Scales, A. R. Wynne, Thomas H. Bledsoe, William Barton, P. Williams, C. N. Ordway, N. Brandon, W. K. Poston, M. E. W. Dunnaway, W. W. Willis, A. D. Nicks, James R. Hood, William Simmons, Joseph H. Travis, A. C. Gillem and Wallace Waters.

izing the Legislature for leave to form a new State. An address to the people of East Tennessee was published, and a committee, consisting of Joseph A. Cooper, D. C. Trewhitt, John Caldwell, L. C. Houk, William Alexander, S. J. W. Luckey, A. B. Owens and M. L. Phillips, were appointed to prepare the memorial. Mr. Senter presented it to the Senate, and accompanied it with a joint resolution, requesting the Governor to issue writs of election to the sheriffs of the several counties represented in the convention, commanding them to hold an election for the purpose of ascertaining the sentiments of the people upon the question. The resolution was referred to a special committee, consisting of two from each grand division of the State, who made two reports. The majority report, signed by the members from Middle and West Tennessee, advised the rejection of the petition, and expressed the opinion that to grant it would be unconstitutional. The minority report, signed by D. W. C. Senter and C. J. McKinney, of East Tennessee, favored granting the request. The majority report was adopted.

On November 5, 1866, the General Assembly convened for the fourth and last time. The position of that body at this time was far from enviable. From the first, representing, as it did, but a small fraction of the voters of the State, it received but little moral support from the community for which it was supposed to legislate, and now the disfranchised party, adopting the views of Andrew Johnson, believed and maintained that they were unjustly deprived of their constitutional rights, and denounced the Legislature and the executive with unmeasured severity. This action on the part of the people, as may be supposed, did not tend to make those in authority any the less vigorous in their measures. During this session the franchise act was again amended, admitting the negroes to its privileges, but at the same time denying them the right to hold office or to sit upon juries. Another measure of scarcely less importance was the organization and equipment of a State militia. A force of about 1,700 men was raised, and placed under the command of Gen. Joseph A. Cooper. These troops, distributed to those points in the State where the greatest danger of an insurrection was supposed to exist, were maintained until after the election in August, when all but five companies were disbanded.

On February 22, 1867, the Republican State Convention assembled at Nashville, and unanimously renominated William G. Brownlow for governor. The resolutions adopted were, in substance: That equal rights should be granted to all; that those who saved the State in time of peril should govern and control it; that those who sought to destroy it, should not be hastily restored to their former privileges; and the course of the

General Assembly and the administration of Gov. Brownlow had been highly satisfactory. The policy of the Union Republican party in Congress, in its opposition to President Johnson, was also endorsed.

The Democratic State Convention met on the 16th of April, and nominated Emerson Etheridge of West Tennessee, for governor. Mr. Etheridge was a man of publicly known Union sentiments, and at the beginning of the war was compelled to leave his home on account of his hostility to the course of secession, but with the return of peace he had joined that considerable number of original Union men in the South who supported President Johnson in his policy of reconstruction and who became the bitterest opponents of the Republican party. The convention adopted resolutions favoring the immediate restoration of all disfranchised citizens to complete citizenship and approving the course of President Johnson. The campaign which followed was one of the greatest excitement. The granting of the right of suffrage to the negroes, while so large a proportion of the white citizens was debarred from voting, justly aroused intense opposition, and the State guards, re-enforced by regular troops, were not sufficient to prevent out-breaks. The election however, passed off quietly. The franchise law was strictly enforced, and the Republican candidates were successful in nearly every instance,

The Thirty-fifth General Assembly, which convened on the 7th of October, 1867, contained but few old members, although there was but little change in its political complexion. D. W. C. Senter was chosen speaker of the Senate, and F. S. Richards of the House. The session continued until March 16, 1868, during which time but few laws of importance were enacted. On October 23, 1867, the two houses met in convention and elected Gov. Brownlow to succeed D. S. Patterson in the United State Senate, for the term beginning March 4, 1869. Mr. Patterson had been elected to the office soon after the reorganization of the State Government in 1865, and during his entire term had acted with the Democratic party in support of President Johnson and his reconstruction measures.

The Republican State Convention to appoint delegates to the National Convention, which was held on January 22, 1868 recommended the nomination of General Grant for the presidency, while the Democratic Convention, which met on the 9th of June, endorsed Andrew Johnson as its candidate.

During the early part of this year, a new organization began to exert an influence in the political affairs of the State. It first made its appearance in the vicinity of Columbia, in Maury County, and from there it spread rapidly over, not only Tennessee, but the entire South. It is said



to have originated in a bit of harmless pleasantry on the part of some masqueraders who amused themselves by imposing upon the superstitious fears of the negroes. The success of their adventures suggested the organization of a band for protection against the depredations of negroes and worthless camp-followers and turbulent characters left behind upon the disbanding of the armies. To the societies thus formed the name of Ku Klux Klans was given. Their operations were conducted with the greatest secrecy, and costumes, names, and symbols of the most outlandish and mysterious character were adopted. From a merely protective social organization, it soon developed into a political and military order of the highest discipline. It was stated by Gen. Forrest, in September, 1868, that the Ku Klux Klans of Tennessee, alone, could put 40,000 men into the field in five days. It was also said that in many localities 1,500 members could be brought from their homes to a common rendezvous within three hours after the first signal was given. Men of all professions and conditions became members of the order. As a political organization it was arrayed against the Loyal League, which also originated in Tennessee, about the close of the war. At that time the white Unionists of middle and West Tennessee, and the colored people, who generally adhered to them, found themselves threatened, oppressed, and in some localities robbed and murdered. The result was the organization of a powerful social order known as the Loyal League, which united the members of that large but cowed class, gave them means of secret and rapid communication with each other, enabled them to protect each other's person and property, and to avenge wrongs done to their numbers. Upon the reorganization of the State government accompanied by the disfranchisement of their former enemies, their power was greatly increased, and it is not surprising that they used it in retaliation. Thus the oppressors became the oppressed; evil-minded persons obtained control of the organization, and in many localities numerous outrages were committed in the name of the Loyal League. To this cause was largely due the almost phenomenal growth of the Ku Klux organization; indeed the history of the two orders is very similar. Both were formed for protection purposes, later became powerful political organizations, and finally went beyond the control of their original leaders; and by unscrupulous men were made to cover the most terrible outrages.

On July 6, 1868, Gov. Brownlow issued a proclamation convening the General Assembly in extraordinary session on the 27th of the same month. That body met at the appointed time and received a message from the Governor, calling attention to the recent Ku Klux outrages, and recommending the reorganization of the State Militia. He also advised

some action with reference to the finances of the State, and these were the subjects which mainly occupied the attention of the Legislature during the session. A bill was introduced into the House providing for the organization of the State Militia, under the name of the "Tennessee State Guards," and giving the governor power to declare martial law in any county where he might deem it necessary. Petitions against the passage of the bill were sent in from all quarters, and many members of the Legislature entered their protest against it. Nevertheless, it became a law, and on February 20, 1869, Gov. Brownlow issued a proclamation, declaring martial law in Overton, Jackson, Maury, Giles, Marshall, Lawrence, Gibson, Madison and Haywood Counties, among which he ordered Gen. Cooper to distribute the State Guards, then numbering 1,600.

On February 12 Gov. Brownlow tendered the resignation of his office, and on the 25th D. W. C. Senter, speaker of the Senate, was inaugurated as his successor. Two months later, May 20, 1869, the Republican State Convention met at Nashville to nominate a candidate for governor. Gov. Senter had already announced his own candidacy, and was supported by an enthusiastic delegation. His opponent was William B. Stokes, the commander of a regiment of Tennessee Federal Cavalry during the war, and at that time the representative of his district in Congress. The convention assembled, and, after continuing, amidst great excitement and confusion, for two days, without effecting an organization, it adjourned, with each faction claiming its candidate to be the regular nominee. In the canvass the franchise question immediately became the dominant one, and practically absorbed all others. Gov. Senter issued an address to the people, in which he said: "The question which most interests the people of Tennessee at the present time, and which, in itself, is perhaps more pressing and important than any other, is the elective franchise. On this subject I am free to say that, in my judgment, the time has come, and is now, when the limitations and disabilities which have found their way into our statute books, as the result of the war, should be abolished and removed; and the privilege of the elective franchise restored and extended to embrace the mass of the adult population of the State." Mr. Stokes represented the view of the more extreme element of the party, and, while favoring the restoration of the franchise privilege, insisted that it should be done gradually and under certain restrictions. The Democrats, powerless to accomplish anything of themselves, framed no platform and nominated no ticket, leaving the contest ostensibly to the two Republicans. In reality, however, the Democracy was better organized than either of the Republican factions, and they threw their influence in favor of Senter, who also received the

support of Senator Brownlow and the Knoxville *Whig*. Owing to the extreme laxity with which the registration was conducted, a very large vote was cast at the ensuing election, and it was estimated that of the 170,000 votes polled nearly 75,000 were cast by Democrats. Gov. Senter's majority reached nearly 60,000. Of the members of the Legislature elected only 5 representatives and 2 senators had ever held seats in either house before, and a majority of them were either conservative Republicans or Democrats.

The Thirty-sixth General Assembly convened on the 4th of October, and on the 19th began balloting for a United States Senator to succeed Joseph S. Fowler. Several candidates were presented, of whom Andrew Johnson received the largest number of votes, but not a majority of all cast. After a number of ballots the opponents of Mr. Johnson united in support of Henry Cooper, senator from Davidson County, who was elected by a vote of 55 to 51. In accordance with the pledges given during the preceding campaign, the Legislature repealed most of the obnoxious laws, and passed an act providing for an election to be held on the third Saturday in December, to vote upon a constitutional convention, to assemble on the second Monday of the following January. The bill provided that all male citizens over twenty-one years of age, who had been residents of the State six months preceding the election, should be permitted to vote. The election resulted in a large majority in favor of the convention, an account of which is given in another chapter of this work. The first election after the adoption of the new constitution took place on the second Tuesday in November, 1870. The Democratic Convention of that year met at Nashville, on the 13th of September, and nominated Gen. John C. Brown, of Giles County, for governor. The Republican Convention assembled at the same place on the 22d of September, and chose W. H. Wisener, of Bedford County, as its nominee by acclamation. The most important questions discussed during the campaign were connected with the financial policy of the State. Gen. Brown advocated substantially the same policy that was afterward embodied in the funding act of 1873\*, and was elected by a vote of 78,979 to 41,500. The Legislature chosen at the same time was Democratic by a large majority. Thus the great struggle, which for nearly five years had disturbed the peace and prosperity of the State, was brought to an end at last. A new constitution, framed by the representatives of the whole people, had been adopted by the people, and a government elected by the universal suffrages of the free citizens of Tennessee was inaugurated for the first time since 1834.

---

\*See Chapter XI.



An unsuccessful attempt had been made, however, to induce Congress to declare the proceedings of the Constitutional Convention of 1870 void, and to "reconstruct" Tennessee upon the same plan as the other Southern States. A long investigation into the political condition of the State was conducted by Congress, but it resulted in nothing detrimental to the new State government. The investigation was based upon the following statements made by members of Congress from Tennessee:

FORTY FIRST CONGRESS OF THE UNITED STATES,

HON. B. F. BUTLER,

WASHINGTON, D. C., February 15, 1870.

*Chairman Reconstruction Committee.*

As representatives from the State of Tennessee in the Forty first Congress, in behalf of ourselves and our constituents, we submit the following propositions, and earnestly press their immediate consideration upon your committee:

1. We submit that the power now controlling the State of Tennessee is wholly illegal and revolutionary, brought about by fraud and violence in contravention of the constitution of the State as reorganized by Congress.

2. That the present State government of Tennessee is wanting in the great and essential requisite of good government, without which peace and happiness are impossible, to wit, the proper protection of the property and the lives of its citizens.

3. The State government of Tennessee, as now constituted and revolutionized, has never had any recognition by the Government of the United States, and we ask that Congress take immediate steps to provide for us a government, Republican in form, that will conduce to the happiness of and welfare of all its people.

4. We ask that you supplement this work with an act for the enforcement of the third section of the fourteenth amendment to the Constitution of the United States.

Signed,

SAMUEL M. ARNELL.

LEWIS TILLMAN.

W. B. STOKES.

W. J. SMITH.

W. F. PROSSER.

HORACE MAYNARD.

During the latter part of 1871 the new political movement, which resulted in the nomination of Horace Greeley for the presidency, began to manifest itself. On October 7, 1871, a reunion and reform association was organized at Nashville by several of the leading men of the State, among whom were Emerson Etheridge, A. S. Colyar, E. H. East, H. S. Foote, Frank T. Ried and John Ruhm. An address was issued to the people of the State, setting forth the principles and objects of the association, which included the restoration of fraternal feelings between the North and the South, the maintenance of law and order, the establishment of an efficient system of education, a general amnesty, opposition to repudiation, reduction of taxation by the General Government and civil service reform. Early in the following year the Liberal Republican movement reached the State, and in March, 1872, the leaders of the reform association issued an address to the Republicans of Tennessee, urging the appointment of delegates to the Cincinnati Convention, to be held the 1st of May. Conservative members of both of the old parties who were opposed to President Grant and his administration, joined in the movement, and a full delegation was appointed. In the convention, Mr. Greeley was

not the first choice of the Tennessee delegates, and it was only in the sixth and last ballot that he received their vote. The campaign which followed was one of the most memorable in the history of the State, abounding in anomalous situations and combinations. The Democratic State Convention assembled at Nashville on May 9, in which delegates from seventy-three counties were present. Benjamin J. Lea, of Haywood County, was chosen chairman. The convention expressed itself as opposed to an independent Democratic ticket, and favored supporting the Cincinnati nominees. Delegates to the Baltimore convention were appointed, and an electoral ticket was partially completed. Gen. Brown was renominated for governor by acclamation.

The Republicans held two State conventions during the year. The first assembled on the 15th of May, and appointed delegates to the National Convention, with instructions to support Grant and Maynard for the presidency and vice-presidency, respectively. No candidate for governor was nominated, it being deemed at that time, the best policy to make no contest. On the 4th of September, however, a second convention was held, and A. A. Freeman, of Haywood County, was nominated for that office. On September 1, Col. A. S. Colyar announced himself as an Independent candidate for governor, but a month later withdrew from the canvass.

As important as were the other contests during the campaign, public interest centered in the canvass for congressman for the State at large. The Democratic Convention to nominate a candidate for that office assembled August 21, 1882. The candidates for the nomination were Andrew Johnson and Gen. B. F. Cheatham. Before a ballot was taken Johnson's supporters withdrew, and the remaining delegates declared Gen. Cheatham the nominee. Mr. Johnson immediately announced himself as the people's candidate, and received enthusiastic support from the working men. Previous to this time the Republicans had despaired of electing a candidate, and none had been nominated. This division in the ranks of their opponents rendered success almost certain, and at the convention on September 4 Horace Maynard was declared the nominee for congressman for the State at large. A thorough canvass of the State was made by the three candidates, a portion of the time being given to joint debate. The result of the election was as follows: Maynard, 80,825, Cheatham 65,188, and Johnson 37,900. The vote for both Grant and Freeman was larger than had been anticipated, but they were defeated by a majority of about 12,000. The Legislature elected was as follows: Senators—Democrats, 14; Republicans 7, and Independent, 4; representatives—Democrats, 40; Republicans, 28, and Independent, 7.

The most important legislation accomplished by this General Assembly was the passage of the funding act and the establishment of a system of public schools. The two years witnessed but little agitation in political circles. There was a general return to the old organizations, resulting in a considerable strengthening of the Democratic party, which entered the next campaign well organized, and acting with remarkable unanimity. The Democratic State Convention, to which all "anti-radicals" were invited, assembled at Nashville August 19, 1874, and organized with G. A. Henry, of Montgomery County, as president. Twelve candidates were placed before the convention, and on the fourteenth ballot James D. Porter, of Henry County, received the nomination. The part of the platform adopted relating to State issues declared in favor of protection to honest labor, equality of assessment for taxation, opposition to monopolies, the abolishment of unnecessary offices and a reduction of salaries, rigid economy in the State administration, opposition to any policy looking to the raising of a greater revenue than was necessary to carry on the State government and meet all its honest obligations, and opposition to any increase of taxation. Mr. Porter, the nominee of the convention, a successful lawyer, was a member of the lower house of the General Assembly in 1859-60, and served during the war as assistant adjutant-general on the staff of Gen. Cheatham.

The Republican Convention met at Chattanooga September 16, 1874, and nominated Horace Maynard for governor. Resolutions were adopted opposing the funding and assessment acts, indorsing public schools, and denouncing Gov. Brown's administration as incompetent and unwise. During the campaign the civil rights bill, which was then before Congress, was one of the leading questions discussed, and did much to defeat the Republicans. The Democratic victory was one of the most complete ever gained by a party in the State. Gov. Porter's majority reached over 45,000. The Legislature was almost unanimously Democratic, there being only two Republicans in the Senate and six in the House. Nine out of the ten congressmen elected were also Democrats.

One of the first duties of the Thirty-ninth General Assembly, which convened on the first Monday in January, 1875, was the election of a United States Senator to succeed William G. Brownlow. Several candidates were presented, prominent among whom were Andrew Johnson, Gov. Brown and Gen. William B. Bate. Fifty-five ballots were taken, resulting in the election of Mr. Johnson, he receiving fifty-two out of ninety-seven votes cast. On the forty-fourth ballot Gen. Bate received forty-eight of the ninety-six votes cast.

The campaign of 1876 found the political situation changed but little



from what it had been two years before. The Democratic State Convention to appoint delegates to the National Convention met at Nashville on May 31, 1876. John H. Crozier, of Knoxville, was elected chairman. Resolutions were adopted, advocating civil service reform, the repeal of the resumption act of 1875, the repeal of the national banking system, and opposition to a further contraction of the currency and to a protective tariff. The convention also expressed a preference for Thomas A. Hendricks for President.

At a convention held in August, presided over by James D. Richardson, of Rutherford County, Gov. Porter was unanimously nominated and William B. Bate and Isham G. Harris were chosen electors for the State at large. The platform adopted outlined the same financial policy as that of two years before. As the nomination of Mr. Harris for elector at large was distasteful to many members of the party, he withdrew, and E. A. James, of Hamilton County, was substituted in his place. Soon after the Democratic Convention Dorsey B. Thomas announced himself as an Independent candidate for governor, stating that on National issues he was in harmony with the Democratic party, but opposed to its policy with regard to the State debt. While opposing repudiation, he favored a decreased taxation until the people should become better able to bear the burden imposed upon them by the debt.

The Republican party also held two conventions, the first on May 17, to appoint delegates to the National Convention, and the second on the 24th of August, to nominate electors for the State at large, H. S. Foote and A. H. Pettibone being the nominees. No candidate for governor was nominated. The platform advocated opposition to "the unjust tax laws," and to the convict-lease system, and denounced the Democratic party for levying a high tax and then failing to provide for the payment of the interest on the State debt. It also demanded the repeal of what was known as the "dog law," a law passed by the preceding Legislature, levying a tax upon dogs.

During the campaign two other candidates for governor, Gen. George Maney and W. F. Yardley, a colored lawyer of Knoxville, announced themselves. Both advocated the principles of the Republican party. On November 6, just before the election, Gen. Maney withdrew, and the greater part of his support was transferred to Mr. Thomas.

The election again resulted in a great victory for the Democratic candidates. Gov. Porter received a majority of about 50,000 over Mr. Thomas, while Maney and Yardley received about 10,000 and 2,000 votes, respectively. The State Legislature remained nearly Democratic.

In January, 1877, two United States Senators were elected, one to suc-

ceed Henry Cooper and the other to fill out the unexpired term of Andrew Johnson. To the long term Isham G. Harris was elected on the first ballot. To the short term the contest lay between William B. Bate, James E. Bailey and D. M. Key, who then occupied the seat by appointment from the Governor. On the seventy-third ballot Mr. Bailey, of Montgomery County, was elected, having received fifty-five of the one hundred votes cast.

During this session of the General Assembly the holders of a large part of the State bonds offered to compromise by accepting a settlement of the debt on a basis of 60 cents on the dollar. The Legislature, however, adjourned without taking action upon the proposition, and an extra session was called for that purpose, to begin on December 5, 1877. The session continued nearly a month, but no settlement was effected.

In the campaign of the following year the "State debt" question was again the leading issue, and threatened to break up the existing parties. The Democratic Convention met on August 15, 1878, and continued in session for three days. Several candidates for the nomination for governor were presented, prominent among whom were John M. Fleming, of Knoxville; John H. Savage, of McMinnville; A. S. Colyar, of Nashville, and John V. Wright, of Maury County. After taking twenty-one ballots without a choice, a compromise candidate in the person of A. S. Marks, of Franklin County, was presented, and on the next ballot he received the nomination. Mr. Marks had been a life-long Democrat, was originally opposed to secession, served in the Confederate Army, losing a leg at Murfreesboro, and at the time of his nomination was chancellor of his district. As the party was much divided upon the financial policy, no opinion was expressed upon the subject, but it was proposed to submit the question to a popular vote.

The Republican Convention assembled at Nashville on the 22d of August. Forty-nine counties were represented, and H. S. Foote was chosen chairman. The committee on resolutions reported a platform embodying much the same principles as had been expressed before. It was proposed to pay "all the liabilities of the State according to the terms of the obligation, except so far as the creditors may voluntarily concede more favorable terms." Emerson Etheridge was nominated for governor, but declined the nomination, and three weeks later the executive committee substituted E. M. Wight, of Chattanooga.

The first convention of the National Greenback party, ever held in the State, assembled at Nashville on August 29, 1878, and nominated E. H. East for governor by acclamation. Only twenty-one counties were represented. An attempt to organize the party had been made two years

before, but the movement at that time received little support. Early in the canvass Judge East withdrew, and was succeeded by Lewis B. Tillman, Sr., of Bedford County. About ten days later he also withdrew, and Col. R. M. Edwards, of Cleveland, was substituted. While Mr. Edwards received a vote of over 15,000, his candidacy did not materially affect the result as between the Democratic and Republican candidates, and Mr. Marks, with a large majority of the Democratic Legislative candidates, was elected.

In accordance with the pledges made during the campaign, the Forty-first General Assembly passed an act for the settlement of the State debt on the basis of 50 cents on the dollar and four per cent interest, upon condition of its ratification by the people at an election to be held in August, 1879. The proposition was thoroughly discussed by able speakers throughout the State, but it failed of ratification. The causes of the failure were numerous. The creditors had not signified their willingness to abide by the settlement proposed and under these circumstances, many considered that to ratify it would be an attempt to force the bond-holders to accept their terms and in a sense would be a partial repudiation; others contended for a still greater reduction in the debt.

Thus at the opening of the campaign in 1880 the settlement of the State debt still remained the chief issue and seriously disturbed the harmony of the Democratic party. The two factions in that party known as "State credit" and "low tax" had become more determined, and it was evident that the question could be no longer compromised. Two conventions were held. The first, which met on the 8th of June, to appoint delegates to the National Convention, ignored State issues, but the Gubernatorial convention, which assembled at Nashville on August 10, was compelled to frame a platform; and while the adoption of the policy of either faction would cause a disruption of the party, it was felt that to assume an equivocal or uncertain position would be equally fatal. The committee on resolutions presented its reports. The majority report contained the following: "We recognize the disposition on the part of the creditors of the State, in view of the great losses entailed by the war, in the great depression of business, and in the general shrinkage of values, to make a liberal reduction in both the principal and interest of our bonded indebtedness, and we declare that we favor a prompt settlement by the Legislature with our creditors upon the best terms that can be agreed upon as the result of negotiation." The first minority report presented a resolution similar to the one adopted by the convention in 1878. The second minority report favored the adoption of a plan of settlement, leaving it to be acted upon by the succeeding Legislature,



thus giving opportunity for the people indirectly to ratify or reject it. After some discussion the majority report was adopted. Immediately about 150 delegates, headed by D. L. Snodgrass, withdrew from the convention. The proceedings however were continued, and John V. Wright, of Maury County, was nominated for governor. The seceding delegates met the following day and nominated S. F. Wilson, of Sumner County. The portion of the platform presented, referring to the State debt, favored the repudiation of all that portion of the alleged indebtedness incurred in aid of railroads and all the bonds issued for interest accruing during the war. It was also declared that no settlement should be made that had not first been submitted to the people.

The Republican Convention was held on the 5th of May. Alvin Hawkins, of Carroll County, was nominated for governor, and delegates were appointed to the Chicago Convention. The resolutions adopted two years before were, in substance, reaffirmed. The National Greenback party again nominated Col. R. M. Edwards for governor.

The division in the Democratic party resulted in the election of Hawkins and a large number of Republican members of the Legislature, the Senate standing, Republicans, ten; Democrats, fifteen; the House, Republicans, thirty-seven; Democrats, thirty-eight. The Hancock and English electors, however, were elected by a considerable majority, as both factions of the party supported them.

One of the first duties of the Forty-second General Assembly, after its organization in January, 1881, was the election of a United States Senator, to succeed James E. Bailey. A number of nominations were made, but during the early part of the contest Senator Bailey and Gen. William B. Bate received the majority of the Democratic votes, while the Republicans supported Horace Maynard. After twenty-nine ballots had been taken, without an election, Howell E. Jackson, of Madison County, was nominated, and, receiving the support of a large number of Republicans, was elected in the next ballot by a vote of seventy-two to twenty-three for Maynard.

The Forty-second General Assembly also made two attempts at effecting a permanent settlement of the State's indebtedness. On April 6, 1881, what was known as the "100-3 act" was passed, and this having been declared unconstitutional, on May 19, 1882, during an extra session, the "60-6" act was substituted.\* This much vexed question, however, like the ghost of Banquo, would not down, and it was again the leading issue in the campaign of 1882. The Democratic Convention assembled on the 21st of June. The schism which had been produced in the party

---

\*See Chapter XI.

two years before had been so far healed as to permit delegates from both factions to assemble together, and there was a general disposition to compromise differences. The committee on resolutions presented two reports. The majority report, which was finally adopted, advocated substantially the same plan as was embodied in the act of 1883. This was considered by the most pronounced "State credit" men as a victory for the "low tax" faction, and they withdrew from the convention. Their number was small, in comparison with the entire convention, and the proceedings were continued without interruption, Gen. William B. Bate receiving the nomination for governor. The "State credit" or "sky blue" faction, which had withdrawn, among whom were John W. Childress, the chairman of the Democratic Executive Committee, James E. Bailey, Gen. W. H. Jackson, and several other prominent members of the party, met and decided to call a convention, to meet on the 11th of July, at which time Joseph H. Fussell was nominated for governor. A platform was adopted, which contained the two following planks:

*Resolved*, That we re-affirm the Democratic platform of 1880 on the subject of the State debt, and approve the 60-3-4-5-6, settlement, passed in accordance therewith.

*Resolved*, That we favor the establishment of a railroad commission, to regulate freights and tariff so as to prevent unjust discrimination, with such powers as shall protect the rights of both the people and the railroads.

The Republican Convention met at Nashville on April 27, and re-nominated Gov. Hawkins, but no principles which had not been advocated before were presented. At the election in November, Beasley received less than 10,000 votes, and Fussell about one-half of that number, while Bate's majority over Hawkins reached 30,000. The Forty-third General Assembly, the number of members having been increased in 1881, was composed as follows: The Senate—Republicans, 8; Democrats 25; House—Republicans, 26; Democrats, 71; Greenbackers, 2. This General Assembly, while it adopted a plan of settlement definitively disposing of the State debt question, introduced another element of discord. The railroad commission, which was demanded by the "State credit" faction, was established, and for various reasons proved highly unpopular.

The campaign of 1884 was opened by the Republican Convention, which was held on April 17. Delegates were appointed to the National Convention, and Judge Frank T. Ried, of Davidson County, was unanimously nominated for governor. The administration of the Democratic party, both in the Nation and the State, was denounced, and especially was the railroad commission condemned. The Democratic Convention assembled at Nashville on the 18th of June, and nominated Gov. Bate for re-election by acclamation. The railroad commission was approved,

and the debt settlement was declared to be final. A long debate on the tariff plank took place, and resulted in the adoption of a resolution to support the platform of the National Convention.

On May 22, 1884, a prohibition convention was held in Nashville, which was largely attended by delegates from all points of the State. Judge Robert Cantrell was chosen chairman. Resolutions were adopted favoring a constitutional amendment prohibiting the sale of intoxicating liquors, to be submitted to a vote of the people. The nomination of a separate ticket, however, was discountenanced. During the campaign the railroad commission was made one of the leading issues, and did much to reduce the Democratic majority, especially upon the State ticket. The majority for Gov. Bate reached about 7,000, while that of the Cleveland and Hendricks electors was about 9,000. The next General Assembly repealed the law creating the railroad commission. Gov. Bate refused his signature, but it passed over his veto. At the same session the following proposed constitutional amendment to be passed upon by the next Legislature, was adopted:

No person shall manufacture for sale, or sell, or keep for sale as a beverage, any intoxicating liquors whatsoever, including ale, wine or beer. The General Assembly shall by law prescribe regulations for the enforcement of the prohibition herein contained, and shall thereby provide suitable penalties for the violation of the provisions thereof.

The Republican Gubernatorial Convention of 1886, met at Nashville on the 16th of June, and nominated Alfred A. Taylor, for governor. A platform was adopted, declaring in favor of National aid to education and a protective tariff, and condemning the existing convict lease-system. The following resolution concerning the proposed prohibitory constitutional amendment was adopted:

That the people have the undoubted right to alter, amend, or abolish their constitution or form of government none will dispute; Therefore be it

*Resolved*, That the Republican party of the State of Tennessee recognize the right of the people to have the submission amendment voted upon at the ballot box.

The Democratic Convention was held on the 11th and 12th of August, and resulted in the nomination of Robert L. Taylor, a brother of the Republican nominee for governor. The platform of the Democratic National Convention was indorsed, a National debt was denounced as a National curse, and it was declared a crime to hoard money in the treasury raised by taxation rather than pay it out on the interest-bearing indebtedness of the Government. It favored "the maintenance and improvement of our system of public schools and the education of all classes of our citizens;" and finally advised the submission to a popular vote of the proposed constitutional amendment prohibiting the manufacture and sale of intoxicating liquors as a beverage in Tennessee.



## KNOX COUNTY.\*

KNOX COUNTY is situated very near the center of the valley of East Tennessee. Its shape is very irregular, having no two sides parallel. Beginning on the north and passing around it to the right it is bounded by the counties of Union, Grainger, Jefferson, Sevier, Blount, Loudon, Roane and Anderson. It contains an area of about 576 square miles. The surface of the greater portion of the county consists of a series of parallel ridges and valleys extending from the northeast to the southwest. Along the northwest boundary runs Flint or Chestnut Ridge. It receives its former name from the character of the rock forming it, which is a kind of chert, resembling true flint. The latter name is derived from the chestnut timber which abounds there. On the west side, in a divide of the ridge, lies a short section of a narrow valley known as Raccoon Valley. On the east side it slopes gradually into Bull Run Valley, which receives its name from Bull Run Creek, a tributary of the Clinch which flows through it. On the east side of this valley Copper Ridge rises somewhat abruptly, and beyond the ridge is Beaver Creek Valley, which is one of the richest in the county, and was one of the earliest settled. It is divided through the middle by the creek whose name it bears. Lying between Beaver and Black Oak Ridges is the section of a valley known as Hind's Valley, the lower half of which is watered by Hickory Creek, a tributary of the Clinch. The soil of this valley is generally light and thin, but is well adapted to grass, and is capable of improvement. The fertile section bounded by Black Oak and Webb's Ridges is known as Grassy Valley. It, unlike the others, does not slope gradually from northeast to southwest, but is crossed transversely by small ridges and depressions. Black Oak Ridge constitutes the watershed between the waters of the Tennessee and the Clinch. Poor Valley lies between Webb's Ridge and McAnnally's Ridge. As its name indicates its soil is poor, consisting of the washings of the shale and dolomite, which make up the ridges. The largest valley in the county is the Central or Knoxville Valley, otherwise known as Rocky Valley or New Market Valley, which constitutes the valley of the Tennessee River. The soil is composed of the shale, chert, limestone and dolomite, which have washed down from the surrounding ridges on a clay sub-soil, the whole

\*Much matter connected with the history of Knoxville is found in other chapters of this work, and to avoid repetition is here omitted. The facts concerning the settlement of the county have been taken from Ramsey, Haywood and other publications. For other matters the writer is indebted to Dr. Thomas W. Humes, Prof. W. G. McAdoo, Col. J. H. Crozier and many other citizens of Knoxville.

of which is mixed with more or less iron which gives it a reddish color. This constitutes the most fertile portion of the county, and is made up of excellent farming lands. A part of the county southeast of the French Broad and Tennessee Rivers constitutes what is known as the Knobby region, in which the parallelism incident to the other sections is broken up. It consists of a vast group of red-topped hills of remarkable uniformity of size and shape rising above the plane of the valley from 200 to 400 feet, and separated from each other by rough, irregular ravines. The formation is described by State Geologist Safford as red ferruginous, sandy, fossiliferous, limestone, interstratified with calcareous strata of fuggy limestone. The soil of the valleys, which are very narrow, is exceedingly fertile, and produces good crops of corn, oats and wheat. The creeks from this region on account of its peculiar configuration are small. They are Hind and Mill Shoal emptying into the French Broad; Baker, Hodge and Knob, tributaries of the Tennessee, and Stock Creek flowing into Little River.

The Holston River enters the county from the east and flows in a generally southwest course to a point about four miles above Knoxville, where it unites with the French Broad to form the Tennessee. The French Broad enters the county at a point near where the line between the counties of Sevier and Blount intersects the Knox County line, and continues in a nearly due west course until its junction with the Holston. The Tennessee, from its origin to the point where it leaves the county, makes several curves of greater or less size, but its general direction is to the southwest. This portion of the Tennessee and extending to Kingston, previous to 1874, was known as the Holston. The tributaries of the Holston are Big Flat Creek, into which flows Little Flat Creek, Rosebury Creek and Doak Creek on the right bank, and Swan Pond, Turkey and Sinking Creek on the left bank. The Tuckahoe empties into the French Broad on the right bank, while Love Creek, First Creek, Second Creek, Third Creek and Lyon Creek are tributaries of the Tennessee from the north.

Probably the first white persons to set foot in what is now Knox County were the troops under Cols. Evan Shelby and John Montgomery, upon their return from the Chickamauga expedition\* in May, 1779, and it was undoubtedly the beauty of the scenery, the fertility of the soil, and the many other natural advantages of this region, which they now saw for the first time, that induced many of them, a few years later, to make it their home. In March of the next year, the heroic Col. Donelson with his party, passed down the Holston River, on their way to the Cumberland

---

\*See page 79.

settlement. On the second day of the month they passed the mouth of French Broad River, and about 12 o'clock of that day one of the boats was sunk upon an island supposed to have been Dickinson's Island about two miles above Knoxville. This misfortune delayed the entire party and they camped upon the bank of the river opposite the island until the next morning when they resumed their journey.\* A year or two later corn having become scarce among the settlers on the Nolachucky, Jeremiah Jack and William Rankin, of Greene County, descended the river in a canoe for the purpose of bartering with the Indians for corn. On their return they landed and camped one night on the north bank of the French Broad about a mile above its mouth, and so well pleased was Mr. Jack with the place, that upon his immigration to the present Knox County in 1787, he selected this spot as his future residence.

In August, 1783, James White, Robert Love, F. A. Ramsey and others for the purpose of locating land warrants, explored the country as low as the confluence of the Holston and Tennessee Rivers. They crossed the French Broad at War Ford, and continued on the south side of that stream until they reached the mouth of Dumplin Creek, when they recrossed, and explored the county between the French Broad and Holston. They then crossed the latter stream a few miles above where Knoxville now stands, and continued through the Grassy Valley to the mouth of the Holston. It was upon this tour that Gen. White and Col. Ramsey saw the lands which they soon after entered and occupied.

In 1785 the Government of Franklin formed two new counties out of the county of Greene, known as Sevier and Caswell, the latter of which probably contained what is now Knox County. Settlements were made in that year on both sides of the French Broad and on the Holston. Adam Meek made the first settlement on the head of Beaver Creek in Quaker Valley. He had no neighbor to the west of him and so sparsely settled was the county to the east that he at first obtained his meal from the neighborhood of Greeneville. He was a surveyor from Mecklenburg County, N. C., and had previously explored the country and made surveys on the frontier. Like most other pioneers he built his first cabin of round poles with a covering of bark and grass. During the Indian troubles he frequently retired at evening with his family to a deep sink three-quarters of a mile from his cabin, and there spent the night. Very soon after settlements were made at the head of Flat Creek and Bull Run, and in the fork between the Holston and French Broad a colony was formed at Greene's, afterward Manifold's Station, and near it located James Cosby, James Beard, Bowman and Gibson. At the same

---

\*See page 129



time Col. James White settled on the north bank of the French Broad, about four miles above its mouth, opposite Cozby and Greene. Capt. Thomas Gillespie located three miles below on the north side of the river. In 1787 Jeremiah Jack opened the second plantation above the mouth of the French Broad. During the same year Robert Armstrong planted corn and raised a crop on the Holston, a little above the mouth of Swan Pond Creek, on which he settled the next year. At the same time Devereaux Gilliam occupied the plantation embracing the point between the French Broad and Holston, while Archibald Rhea, Sr., settled immediately opposite, on the south bank of the French Broad. These settlements between the rivers being almost isolated were less annoyed by the Indians, than those south or north of them. On one occasion, however, a party of warriors crossed the river to Capt. Gillespie's cabin, while the captain was away from home, and finding Mrs. Gillespie alone entered the house. One of them then taking out a scalping knife was at the point of scalping an infant which lay in the cradle, when Mrs. Gillespie sprang to the door, and looking in the direction of the clearing where the Captain had the day before been at work and where the fires were still burning, called for help. The Indians thinking that the men were near by dashed out of the house and into the adjacent canebrakes while Mrs. Gillespie with the child in her arms fled in the direction from which, she knew her husband, who had gone to Dumplin Creek twelve miles away, would return. After proceeding several miles she met the Captain, who took her and the child upon the horse, and carried them back to Manifold's Station. He then reinforced himself with three men, and returned in haste to his home. The savages had plundered it of its contents, and while some were carrying off the spoils, one was busily engaged in setting fire to the house. He was fired upon by the Captain, who had outridden his companions, but being partly obscured by the smoke, escaped. The property however, was recaptured and the Indians were driven across the river. Thereafter these settlements suffered but little from Indian aggressions except the stealing of horses, which frequently occurred. The population of this section now rapidly increased, the two rivers making it easy of access by boats and canoes. Among those who came were James Anderson, Moses Brooks and George McNutt, who removed from the Nolachucky and settled on the north side of the Holston above Knoxville. The year before James White had removed from his first location in the fork, and with James Conner, an old neighbor from Iredell County, N. C., had begun a settlement on the present site of Knoxville. Their cabin stood on the west side of First Creek about one hundred rods from its mouth. It afterward constituted

one corner of White's Fort, which consisted of a quadrangular plat of ground containing a quarter of an acre, on each corner of which was a strong cabin. Between these corners stockades were placed eight feet high, impenetrable to small arms, and having port holes at convenient height and distance. This fort became a central point for immigrants, and a rendezvous for rangers and scouts. Attracted by the beauty and healthfulness of the location, immigrants came in large numbers.

While Col. White was establishing this settlement, John Adair built a station five miles to the north, and by an act of the Legislature of North Carolina passed in December, 1789, his house was made a depot for supplies for the use of the Cumberland Guards, when called upon to conduct families through the wilderness to the Cumberland settlements. At the same time Adair was appointed commissary.

The country now began to be reached by wagons. Settlers were pushing on to the West, and in quick succession Well's, Bennett's, Byrd's, Hackett's and Cavett's Stations were formed. Campbell's Station was settled by several emigrants from Virginia, prominent among whom was Col. David Campbell. The settlements, however, were subject to frequent interruptions from hostile Indians, both Cherokees and Creeks, but more especially the latter, and even those who located in the immediate vicinity of Knoxville were not altogether exempt from incursions by these savage tribes. Numerous treaties of peace were made, only to be broken, usually by the Indians, but it must be confessed, on more than one occasion, by irresponsible whites. During all of 1788 the Indians were troublesome along the frontier, and did the settlers as much harm as they could. At last Gen. Joseph Martin was compelled to raise troops for their protection. He had been appointed to the command on the resignation of Col. Evan Shelby, in 1784. He collected soldiers from all the four counties west of the Alleghanies, and some were sent from Virginia. They rendezvoused at the present site of Knoxville, and then crossed the Holston and marched by the way of the Little Tennessee and the Hiwassee to the Chickamauga town, and burned every house there. They then, after inflicting other injuries upon the Indians, returned to their homes. Shortly afterward, on October 15, a body of not less than 200 or 300 Indians, Cherokees and Creeks, captured Gillespie's Station, on Little River, within eight or ten miles of Knoxville, and took several prisoners. Gen. Sevier immediately started in pursuit, overtook them and recaptured the prisoners. He also succeeded in taking several Indians, who were afterward exchanged for white captives that had been carried into the Nation.

During the next two years the Indians directed their attention to the Cumberland settlements, and although occasional depredations were committed, the pioneers along the Holston enjoyed comparative quiet.

On the 2d of July, 1791, a treaty of peace and perpetual friendship was concluded between Gov. Blount and the Cherokee chiefs, who met at the treaty ground on the present site of Knoxville.\* But notwithstanding this treaty the hostility of the Indians was very distressing throughout the greater part of 1791 and the four or five years succeeding. On the 10th of May, 1792, as two sons of a Mr. Wells, in Hind's Valley, within twelve miles of Knoxville, were picking strawberries, six Indians came up, tomahawked and scalped them before his eyes, but went off without making further attempts upon the family. At about the same time several warriors came to Col. Campbell's and fired upon him and another man who was plowing at his side, but fortunately neither was injured. During this year the settlers on the more exposed parts of the frontier were compelled to seek safety at the forts, and except in cases of necessity did not venture far from them. On the 12th of September, while a Mr. Gillespie and two sons were at their home after some corn, they were attacked by the Indians. Gillespie and the elder son were killed and the younger son taken prisoner. The latter was held by the Indians until the following month, when he was ransomed by James Carey for 250 pounds of leather and a horse. During the latter part of this year the lower Cherokees formally declared war against the United States, and fearing that their attack might be directed against the Holston settlement, the militia colonel of Knox County issued orders to his captains similar to the following:

KNOXVILLE, September 11, 1792.

*Sir:* You are hereby commanded to repair with your company to Knoxville, equipped to protect the frontier; there is imminent danger. Bring with you two days' provisions, if possible; but you are not to delay an hour on that head.

I am, sir, yours,

JAMES WHITE.

CAPT. THOMAS GILLESPIE.

The militia thus summoned paraded at various points designated, and were distributed to the more exposed stations. It was soon learned, however, that the expedition of the Indians had been directed against the Cumberland settlement, and Gov. Blount disbanded most of the troops. How inadequately the frontiers of Knox County were protected at this time is apparent from the following list of the stations and their strength on December 22, 1792: Gamble's Station—William Reagan, lieutenant, men thirteen (on furlough, five; at station, eight). Black's Station—Joel Wallace, ensign; men, four. Henry's Station—George

---

\*See page 93.



Huffacre, corporal; men, six. Well's Station—Richard Dearmond, corporal; men, six. Ish's Station—Matthew Karr, sergeant; men, eight. Campbell's Station—none. Lowe's Station—none. Manifee's Station—Captain Samples; men, fourteen. Raccoon Valley Station—Sergt. Finley and one man. Total at stations, forty-seven.

With this small force it is little to be wondered at that the Indian aggressions continued. On the 12th of November, 1792, a party of fifteen Cherokees attacked the home of Ebenezer Byram in Grassy Valley, about eight miles from Knoxville, in which were only two men with their families. The Indians had surrounded the house, before they were discovered, and forced open a window and pointed their guns into it; but by a well directed fire from the two men two of the savages were wounded and the remainder put to flight. On the 22d of the following January the Indians killed and scalped John Pates on Crooked Creek, about sixteen miles from Knoxville, and on the 29th they stole several horses from Gamble's Station. These continued aggressions created great excitement, and the local militia without orders assembled for the purpose of marching to the nearest Indian towns and retaliating upon them. The Governor, however, assisted by Col. White and others succeeded in restraining them from entering the Indian territory, and quiet was restored. But the Indians continued their depredations. On the 16th of March fourteen horses were stolen from Flat Creek within sixteen miles of Knoxville, and two days later two young men named Clements, living below Knoxville, were killed and scalped. On May 25 Thomas Gillam and his son James were killed and scalped by the Indians in the Raccoon Valley about eighteen miles from Knoxville. Capt. Beard with fifty mounted infantry started immediately in pursuit, and on the 12th of June came upon the \*Hanging Maw's family and other Indians ordered to the place by the Government. These were immediately attacked, and several were killed, among whom were two or three chiefs and the Hanging Maw's wife. As these Indians had assembled to confer with Maj. King and other agents of the United States, this attack of Beard's was an atrocious violation of the faith of the Government, and a general war with the Cherokees was thought to be inevitable. Another invasion of the Indian country by Col. Doherty and Col. McFarland occurred later in the season, and served still further to incite the savages to murderous attacks. No general movement of the Cherokees in the direction of the Holston was made, however, until September of this year. On Wednesday, the 25th of that month, the expected incursion was made by a large body of Creeks and Cherokees variously estimated

---

\*A Cherokee chief.

at from 900 to 1,500, including 100 horsemen, under the leadership of John Watts and Double Head. They crossed the Tennessee below the mouth of the Holston, and marched all night toward Knoxville, expecting to reach there before daylight on the morning of the 25th, but some detention at the river prevented. A further delay was occasioned by Double Head, who insisted upon taking every cabin as they passed. A dispute also arose over the question of killing all of the inhabitants of Knoxville or only the men, and before the plan of procedure was adjusted daylight was at hand. They were then at the head of Sinking Creek in Grassy Valley, having passed Campbell's Station in which twenty families were stationed, and which, in their haste to reach Knoxville, they had left undisturbed. In sight of them was the station of Alexander Cavett, in which besides himself and family were two men, in all thirteen persons. Disappointed in their hopes of plunder, and not daring to risk an attack upon Knoxville in daylight, they determined to wreak their vengeance upon this defenseless family. They accordingly marched to the house and surrounded it. The three men within resolved to sell their lives as dearly as possible, and opened fire upon the assailants, killing one Creek, one Cherokee, and wounding three more. The Indians then offered to spare their lives if they would surrender, and to immediately exchange them for Indian prisoners amongst the whites. These terms they accepted, but no sooner had they left the house than Double Head and his party fell upon them, and treacherously put them to death. This station was only eight miles from Knoxville, and the firing was heard by the people of that place.

The action taken by them at this time is but an illustration of the heroic character of the early pioneers of Tennessee. The following account is taken from the semi-centennial address of Rev. Dr. Thomas W. Humes: "At that time Knoxville could muster but forty fighting men, but these forty were no cravens to fly at the approach of danger even though it presented itself in the terrible shape in which it then menaced them. Here was their homes, their families, their all, and with an alacrity and zeal worthy of the crisis they prepared to defend their firesides. A knowledge of Indian cunning induced them to conclude that the approach of the savages to the town would not be made by the main western road but in a more northern and circuitous direction, and they determined to meet them on the ridge over which the road now passes to Clinton about one mile and a half from town, and then, by a skillful arrangement of their little company, check their march, and if possible alarm and intimidate them. Leaving the oldest two of their number (John McFarland and Robert Williams) to mold bullets in the block-

house which stood on the spot now (1842) occupied by the Mansion House, and which contained 300 guns belonging to the United States, the other thirty-eight proceeded, under the command of Col. James White, to station themselves on the south side of the ridge we have mentioned with an interval of twenty feet between the men. Orders were given to reserve their fire until the Indians were brought within range of every gun when at a given signal, they were to pour in upon them a well directed volley, and before the savages could recover from their surprise secure their own retreat to the block-house, and there with their wives, mothers, and children around them sell their lives at a fearful price or scatter from the port-holes a shower of leaden hail among the besiegers that would drive them from their banquet of blood. Happily neither of these contingences awaited them."

After burning Cavett's Station the Indians returned southward, and within a few days Gen. Seveir with 600 or 700 men started in pursuit.\* They marched into the Indian country, burned several towns, and administered a decisive blow to the savage inhabitants.

While this campaign had the effect to render the Indians more cautious it did not put a stop to their marrauding expeditions. On the 23d of the following December, while two men, Roger Oats and Nicholas Ball, were bringing in a load of corn to Well's Station for the support of its inmates, they were attacked and killed by the Indians and their horses taken away.

On the evening of the 24th of April, 1794, Dr James Cozby, who, as has been stated, lived south of the French Broad about eight miles from Knoxville, observed, in the gathering darkness, a party of twenty Indians stealthily approaching his house. He was an old Indian fighter, and at once prepared to defend himself and family, consisting of his wife, and several children only one of whom could shoot, from the port holes in the house. A constant watch was kept, and as there was a cleared space about the house, any near approach of a savage could be seen. Cozby, in a loud voice, gave several commands as if addressing a body of soldiers. The Indians thus deceived hesitated to make the attack, and after lingering in the vicinity until near daybreak withdrew. In the morning it was found that they had gone to the house of William Casteel, two miles away, and murdered the entire family, except one daughter whom they had left for dead, but who afterward recovered.

After this atrocious murder it was with the greatest difficulty that Gov. Blount restrained the inhabitants south of the French Broad from an immediate invasion of the Indian territory. In this he was assisted

---

\* See page 95.



by the civil officers of Knox County, who met in committee on the 20th of June at the house of James Beard, and prepared an address to the people advising them to acquiesce in the design of the Government to obtain peace by negotiation rather than by arms.

One of the last murders committed by the Indians in Knox County was that of George Mann, living twelve miles above Knoxville, which occurred on the night of the 25th of May, 1795. Hearing some noise about his stable he left the house to discover its cause, and upon his return was intercepted by the Indians who fired upon him, dangerously wounding him. He fled to a cave a short distance away, but was pursued, dragged from his hiding place and slain. His wife, hearing the Indians in pursuit of her husband, locked the door and sat in silent expectation of their return. She did not have long to wait, however. Hearing their approaching footsteps she seized a rifle, which she had learned to use, and leveled it at the door. The savages approached in single file, and the foremost pushed the door partly open. Instantly she pulled the trigger, and two Indians, wounded by the single shot, fell to the ground. The others, gathering them up, fled, and she and her children were safe. On only one occasion after this were the inhabitants aroused by an Indian alarm. On July 27, 1795, it was learned that a party of Creeks to the number of about a thousand were marching through the Cherokee country toward the Holston settlements. Gen. White was ordered out with one-half of the Knox County militia to oppose them, while the Cherokee women and children were removed to the north side of the Tennessee. The Creeks, however, advanced only to Will's Town, from which point they were turned back, and from that time the Holston settlements were undisturbed by Indian hostilities.

About two years later two white men, Micajah and Wiley Harp came to Knox County, and during their short residence there proved themselves as barbarous as their red-skinned brethren. They settled on Beaver Creek where they made a crop in 1797, and during that season furnished the butcher in Knoxville, John Miller, with hogs, sheep and cattle which they stole from their neighbors. Finally they took several fine horses from Edward Tiel, who lived about one mile northeast of Knoxville. With some of his neighbors he started in pursuit, and captured them in the Cumberland Mountains, but while bringing them home they were allowed to escape, and afterward they committed several murders. The first was that of a youth named Coffin, whom they killed on Copper Ridge while on his way to mill. They murdered one Ballard, mistaking him for Hugh Dunlap, who had at one time attempted to arrest them. They also killed a man by the name of Bradbury. After about a year

they removed west of the Cumberland Mountains, where they became a terror to the inhabitants.

Meanwhile the immigration to East Tennessee had continued. In July, 1795, a census of the territory was taken at which time Knox County, which then included an area several times as great as at present, had a population of 11,573, of whom 2,365 were slaves. During the same month occurred two events of importance in the county: the opening of a wagon road from Knoxville to Nashville, and the arrival in Knoxville of two wagons from South Carolina by the way of Warm Springs.

Up to this time no regular postoffices had been established. In the *Knoxville Gazette* of October, 1792, John Chisolm advertised that he would establish a post route from Knoxville to Greene Court House, thence to Jonesboro, and to Abingdon, Va., returning by the way of Sullivan Court House and Hawkins Court House, to Knoxville, once in every twenty-one days, provided that \$250 were subscribed for that purpose. During the year 1795 a bi-monthly mail to Knoxville was established under provision of the postoffice department, and George Roulstone was appointed postmaster. To this office was sent all the mail for much of the country to the east and all of the country west of Knoxville. In a list of letters published as remaining on hand at this office January 1, 1797, are letters directed to Nolachucky, to Buncombe, to Jonesboro, to Blount County, to Jefferson County, to Powell's Valley, to Nashville, to Sumner County, to Palmyra, to Bledsoe's Lick and other points equally remote.

In 1797 the rivers began to be used as channels of commerce, mainly for the shipment of produce. On February 27 of that year two boats carrying five tons each, from the South Fork of the Holston in Virginia, reached Knoxville. They were loaded with flour and whisky, and had traveled a distance of about 300 miles.

In 1826 the first steamboat arrived. It was known as the "Atlas," and was under the command of Capt. Conner, to whom was extended an enthusiastic reception by the citizens of the town. It afterward proceeded as far as the fork of the French Broad and Holston, where another ovation was tendered by Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey, and his neighbors. A company was immediately formed for the purchase of a steamboat to ply upon the river, and W. B. A. Ramsey was dispatched to Cincinnati to contract for the building of a small boat, which arrived a few months later and was christened the "Knoxville." This boat remained upon the Tennessee until 1838, when, under the name of the "Indian Chief," it was used in the transfer of the Cherokees west of the Mississippi.

Upon the reception of the "Atlas" at Mecklenburg, Dr. Ramsey de-

livered an address, in which he pointed out the fact that New Orleans was too far away to become a profitable market for East Tennessee, and advocated the construction of a great macadamized road to Charleston, S. C. In 1828 he went to Charleston to spend the winter, and while there succeeded in interesting several prominent men in the project. At about this time the opening, and successful operation of the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad attracted the attention of the public to that method of transportation, and the question of building a railroad through East Tennessee connecting Charleston with the northwest, began to be discussed. It finally resulted in the holding of a great commercial convention, or rather railroad convention in Knoxville, July 4, 1836, at which time plans were perfected for the building of a road from Cincinnati to Charleston by the way of Cumberland Gap. Before anything of importance had been accomplished, however, the financial panic of 1837 put an end to the work, and it was never resumed. A portion of the delegates to the convention, not satisfied with its action, withdrew and formed an organization for the building of a road to Charleston by another route.\* This finally resulted in the completion of the East Tennessee & Georgia Road in 1856. In 1852 the East Tennessee & Virginia Road was chartered, and completed six years later. At about the same time the Knoxville & Kentucky, and the Knoxville & Charleston Railroads were chartered, and in January 1853 the county court ordered an election to vote upon the proposition to subscribe \$100,000 to each of these roads. The measure carried, and six per cent bonds were ordered to be issued. The work of construction progressed very slowly, and at the beginning of the war only a few miles of road had been completed.

On June 11, 1792, Gov. Blount issued an ordinance defining the limits of the counties of Greene and Hawkins and laying off two new counties, Knox and Jefferson. At the same time he appointed Charles McClung, James Mabry, Alexander Outlaw and Joseph Hamilton to survey and mark the dividing line between these counties. Courts of pleas and quarter sessions were ordered to be held in Knox County at Knoxville, and in Jefferson County at the house of Jeremiah Matthews. Five days later, the Governor commissioned the following justices of the peace for Knox County: James White, John Sawyers, Hugh Beard, John Adair, George McNutt, Jeremiah Jack, John Kearns, James Cozby, John Evans, Samuel Newell, William Wallace, Thomas McCulloch, William Hamilton, David Craig and William Lowry, all of whom appeared before Judge David Campbell and took an oath to support the Constitution of the United States, and also an oath of office. In a like manner, on the 25th

---

\*See page 342.



of June. Robert Houston was commissioned by the Governor and qualified as sheriff, and was ordered to make proclamation for the opening of a county court at the house of John Stone in the town of Knoxville. Charles McClung had already received his commission as clerk of the court, and on Monday, the 16th of July, 1792, the first court was held by James White, Samuel Newell, David Craig and Jeremiah Jack, James White being elected chairman. But little business was transacted at this term. Robert Houston gave bond for the performance of his official duties in the sum of \$12,500, with John Chisolm, James White, Jeremiah Jack, James Cozby and Robert Armstrong as his sureties. William Meeks, James Anderson, Benjamin Pride, James Neely, John Liddy, Joseph Hart, George Caldwell, William Gray and James Blair produced commissions as constables, and Luke Bowyers, Alexander Outlaw, Joseph Hamilton, Archibald Roane, Hopkins Lacy, John Rhea and James Reese qualified, and were admitted to practice law. William Henry was given permission to build a mill on Rosebury's Creek, and Alexander Cunningham obtained leave to keep a public ferry at his landing opposite Knoxville. Roads were ordered to be laid out from Knoxville to Col. Alexander Kelley's mill to David Craig's on Nine Mile Creek, to the ford on the Clinch River, and to Campbell's Station. Stone's house at which this court was held stood on the southwest corner of Gay and Cumberland Streets. At about this time, temporary buildings for a courthouse and a jail were erected. The former stood on the south side of Main Street, a little east of Gay. Soon after its erection it was set fire to by a lawyer, it is said, and was entirely destroyed. The jail proved less satisfactory than the courthouse, for at the second term of the court, the sheriff appeared and protested against it, and on January 26, 1793 commissioners were appointed to contract for the building of a new jail, which was to be sixteen feet square; the logs to be one foot square; the lower floor to be laid of logs of that size laid double and crosswise; the loft to be laid also of logs covered crosswise with oak plank one and a half inches thick, and well spiked down. This building was erected at the corner of Gay and Main Streets, on the lot afterward occupied by the Bank of East Tennessee. It is said that it proved to its builder as did the gallows prepared for Mordecai, to Haman, he being its first occupant. After the burning of the courthouse, a new one was not erected for several years, but instead a building was rented from Col. James White for that purpose, for which he received \$30 yearly.

At the January term, 1793, the county court fixed the rates of taxation for that year at 10 cents on each 100 acres of land, and  $16\frac{2}{3}$  cents on each poll, and a justice was appointed for each captain's company, to

take a list of the taxables and taxable property. At the same time the following ordinary rates were fixed: Diet, 16 cents; corn per gallon, 10 cents; oats, same; fodder per bundle, 3 cents; whisky per one half-pint 8 cents; brandy per one-half pint, 12 cents; rum, 16 cents; wine, 16 cents; beer per quart, 8 cents; cider, the same; lodging per night, 6 cents, and pasturage per day, 8 cents.

On April 23, 1796, was begun the first county court, held under the State constitution, at which time the following justices of the peace, commissioned by Gov. Sevier, were present: James White, Joseph Greer, John McClellan, John Adair, George McNutt, John Hackett, David Campbell, John Manifee, Nicholas Gibbs, John Sawyers, Samuel Doak, James Cozby, Samuel Flanniken, Jeremiah, Jack and William Doak. All the county officers tendered their resignations, which were accepted, but they were immediately re-appointed by the court, and qualified under the new constitution.

On the 4th of February, 1797, Charles McClung, Francis A. Ramsey, John McClellan, John Adair and James Cozby, were appointed commissioners for the purpose of fixing on a site and contracting for the building of a courthouse. A lot fronting on Main Street, and extending from Gay to Prince, was donated as a site by Col. James White, and a building 30x40 feet, and two stories high, was erected. It was built of rough fragments of rock cemented with mortar, and did not present a very handsome exterior. Its aggregate cost was \$5,803.19 and to meet this expenditure one-half of the county revenue from 1797 to 1807 was appropriated to that purpose. In 1812, by an act of the Legislature, the county court was given permission to sell a portion of the courthouse lot to the Bank of Tennessee, and accordingly a lot fronting on Main Street, and extending seventy feet from the corner of Gay was sold for \$5. In November, 1801, the General Assembly passed an act authorizing Knox County to levy a special tax, not exceeding  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents on each 100 acres of land, for the purpose of building a prison and stocks, and Charles McClung, Robert Houston and Joseph Greer were appointed commissioners to let the contract. This jail was completed about 1807, at a cost of \$4,569.56, and stood near the site of the one it superseded, at the corner of Gay and Main Streets. In July, 1818, Robert Craighead was appointed to sell this jail and lot, and to ascertain for what sum a suitable lot could be obtained. No further action was taken, however, until two years later, when a new brick jail was erected near the southeast corner of the square bounded by Main, Walnut, Hill and Locust Streets. This building was used for many years.

In 1836 the new State constitution went into effect, and several

changes in the management of county affairs took place. Heretofore the county officers had been elected by the county court, now all but two or three were to be chosen by the people. The first officers thus elected were Moses M. Swan, clerk of the county court; George M. White, clerk of the circuit court; Samuel Love, trustee; William Dunlap, sheriff, and William R. Bowen, register. Prior to this time too, the county had been divided for local government and civil affairs, according to the militia companies, designated by the names of the captains. It was now divided into seventeen civil districts, and so continued until 1851, when the Eighteenth District was formed from portions of Districts Nos. 3 and 4, and the Nineteenth, from fractions of Districts Nos. 8 and 9. In 1857 a new district, No. 5, was formed from fractions of the 4th, 6th, and 7th, the greater part of original Fifth District having been cut off at the formation of Union County. These were the divisions of the county prior to the civil war.

In January, 1839, six commissioners, George M. White, William Baker, David Campbell, D. P. Armstrong, James Park and William S. Kennedy, were appointed to decide whether the old courthouse should be repaired, or a new one should be built. At the following April term they reported unanimously in favor of the last proposition, and the last three named commissioners were authorized to contract for and to superintend the construction of the new building. At the same time an appropriation of \$10,000, in payments of not less than \$2,000, was made to defray the expenses. The contract was let for \$9,570, and by December, 1842, the building was tendered to the commissioners who refused to receive it on the grounds that it was not completed according to agreement. The matter was then referred to a board of arbitrators composed of James H. Cowan, Thomas Rodgers and G. M. Hazen, who sustained the commissioners, and a small reduction was made in the contract price.

In 1839 provision was also made for the purchase of a poor farm, and John Mynatt, Thomas D. Hall, and Lewis Lutterell were appointed to locate it. Accordingly a tract of 188 acres was purchased from Robert and James McCampbell for \$950, and buildings were erected for the reception of paupers. Previous to that time these unfortunate persons had been farmed out to the lowest bidder, and, as was to have been expected, they often suffered cruel treatment at the hands of those to whom they were assigned. The management of the farm has remained substantially the same since its establishment. It is under the immediate direction of a superintendent, who is controlled by a committee from the county court. The average number of inmates is seventy,



and the total cost to the county is about \$3,000 annually. In 1875 a workhouse was established to which are sentenced persons convicted of misdemeanor, and those who are unable to pay their fines. These convicts are employed in building pikes, and since the work began about twenty-five miles have been completed. The annual cost to the county is about \$10,000.

In October 1856 it was determined to build a new jail, and \$10,000 was appropriated for that purpose to be expended under the direction of Ebenezer Alexander, C. W. Jones and William Craig. This building was completed the following year upon the site of the old jail. It became so badly damaged during the war, that a new one again became necessary, and in July 1866 David F. Dearmond, M. D. Bearden, and Charles Morrow were appointed to contract for it. Accordingly a new lot was purchased from William K. Eckles at a cost of \$4,000, and the contract let for the new building for \$18,000. This is the sixth and last jail erected by the county.

Previous to 1872, except a short time during and after the war, when a temporary bridge was used, the Tennessee River, then the Holston, was crossed at Knoxville by means of a ferry. In that year W. A. A. Conner John L. Moses, Alfred Caldwell, John Tunnell, Julius Ochs and M. Nelson were appointed to contract for the building of a bridge, and \$75,000 was appropriated for that purpose. This was afterward increased until the aggregate appropriations amounted to \$160,000 for which eight per cent bonds were issued. The bridge was completed in 1874, the entire cost being \$163,653. 65. This structure, however, was doomed to sudden destruction. On May 1, 1875 during a violent wind storm, it was blown down and entirely destroyed. In 1879 a contract was entered into between George W. Saulpaw, by the terms of which he was given the use of the old piers so long as he should keep open a bridge upon them. He at once began the erection of a bridge, which was opened March 2, 1880. Soon after S. B. Luttrell purchased a one-half interest in it, and the following year became the sole proprietor.

As soon as the county had somewhat recovered from the effects of the war the subject of building a new courthouse began to be agitated, but prior to 1883 all propositions to appoint commissioners for that purpose were voted down by the county court. In that year, however, W. S. Smith, Robert Hardin, J. W. Fowler, B. J. Hartley, M. D. Sullivan and J. T. Doyle were appointed to ascertain at what cost the Franklin House Square (the square bounded by Main, Prince, Hill and Gay streets) could be obtained as a site for the proposed new courthouse. They reported the cost at \$26,000, and it was accordingly purchased for that

sum. In 1885 the erection of the new building was begun under the supervision of S. R. Rodgers, R. A. Sterling H. Clapp, A. G. French, and G. W. Mabry with Stephenson and Getaz as the architects. The corner-stone was laid in July of that year, and the building was occupied for the first time on the 28th of September, 1886. It is built of brick, marble and iron, with terra cotta decoration, and, with possibly one exception, is the finest structure of the kind in the State. It is two stories high with a basement. On the first floor are the criminal courtroom, the county courtroom, grand jury room, witnesses-room, and offices for the chairman and clerk of the county court, trustees, register and district attorney. On the second floor are rooms for the chancery, circuit, and supreme court, and offices for the clerk and master, chancellor, clerk of the circuit court, and clerk of the supreme court.

The total cost of the building, including fence and pavement, was \$136,000.

The present financial condition of the county, is as follows:

Bonded indebtedness, funded bonds issued since October 1, 1881, and outstanding, October 1, 1886.....	\$261,200 00
Old bonds outstanding, not funded.....	18,500 00
Total.....	\$279,700 00
Bonds redeemed since October 1, 1886.....	\$12,250 00
Loans still outstanding, January 1, 1887.....	267,500 00
Unpaid county warrants.....	33,036 22
Balance due on courthouse.....	90,262 30
Total indebtedness of the county.....	\$390,798 52

The assets are as follows:

1,000 shares in the Knoxville & Ohio Railroad.....	\$100,000 00
Old courthouse.....	15,000 00
Eleven shares in Kingston Pike.....	375 00
Farm in the Fifth Civil District.....	5,000 00
Farm in the Fourth Civil District.....	700 00
Poor farm.....	3,000 00
Workhouse bail bonds.....	2,300 00
Notes good.....	700 00
Total.....	\$127,075 00

The total collections for county purposes during 1886 amounted to \$44,785.30, and the expenditures to \$43,731.02. The aggregate collections and disbursements for all purposes were \$137,209.91 and \$134,360.49 respectively.

During the past eighteen years five new civil districts have been created. In July, 1869, the Twentieth was formed from portions of the Fifth and Sixth, and one year later a part of the Fifteenth was added to the Fourteenth, which was then divided forming the Twenty-first. In Janu-

ary, 1878, a part of the Sixteenth was united into the Twenty-second, and in October, 1879, the Twenty-third was formed from a part of the Seventeenth. In January, 1886, a suburb of Knoxville known as the West End was constituted the Twenty-fourth Civil District.

The following is a list of the officers of Knox County from its organization.

Sheriffs—Robert Houston, 1792–1802; John Love, 1802–03; Joseph Love, 1803–14; John Calloway, 1814–26; George M. White, 1826–34; William Dunlap, 1834–38; Samuel McCammon, 1838–50; William Craig, 1850–56; William P. Crippin, 1856–62; William H. Swan, 1862–64; Marcus D. Bearden, 1864–70; V. F. Gossett, 1870–74; M. D. Swan, 1874–76; Alexander Reeder, 1876–80; C. B. Gossett, 1880–82; Homer Gilmore, 1882–86; J. K. Lones, 1886.

Clerks of the county court—Charles McClung, 1792–1834; George M. White, 1834–36; Moses M. Swan, 1836–44; George W. C. Cox, 1844–56; William Craig, 1856–66; William Rule, 1866–71; J. S. A. Blang, 1871–74; J. F. J. Lewis, 1874–86; John W. Conner, 1886.

Trustees—Samuel Newell, 1793–94; Charles McClung, 1794–1806; John Hillsman, 1806–12; Robert Houston, 1812–30; Samuel Love, 1830–38; George W. C. Cox, 1838–44; William McCammon, 1844–52; Samuel McCammon, 1852–54; Hiram Barry, 1854–68; H. L. W. Mynatt, 1868–70; James S. Boyd, 1870–72; B. F. Bearden, 1872–76; W. A. Anderson, 1876–78; W. H. Swan, 1878–82; B. F. Bearden, 1882–84; J. A. Swan, 1884.

Registers—Thomas Chapman, 1792–1803; Samuel G. Ramsey, 1803–17; J. G. M. Ramsey, 1817—; J. G. M. Ramsey, 1829–36; W. R. Bowen, 1836–40; Henry B. Newman, 1840–48; J. C. Luttrell, 1848–56; A. S. Hudiburg, from January to March, 1856; R. H. Campbell, 1856–60; T. J. Burkhart, 1860–64; A. T. Cottrell, 1864–68; R. L. Hall, 1868–69; L. H. Bowlus, 1869–70; Charles Morrow; 1870–82; W. R. Carter, 1882.

Clerks of the circuit court—F. A. Ramsey, 1810–20; William Swan, 1820–36; George M. White, 1836–52; M. L. Hall, 1852–64; Stephen H. Smith, 1864–66; W. R. McBath, 1866–70; E. W. Adkins, 1870–82; W. B. Ford, 1882.

Clerks of the criminal court—H. C. Tarwater, 1870–73; W. H. Swan, 1873–74; George L. Maloney, 1874–82; W. F. Gibbs, 1882.

Clerks and masters of the chancery court—W. B. A. Ramsey, 1832–48; Hugh L. McClung, 1848–57; Samuel A. White, 1857–59; David A. Deaderick, 1859–70; M. L. Patterson, 1870–82; S. P. Evans, 1882.



As has been stated the court of pleas and quarter sessions of Knox County was organized July 16, 1792. At this time as well as for many years after, this court besides transacting public business, had original jurisdiction in minor civil and criminal cases, and appellate jurisdiction in all cases from justices' courts. The first case tried was that of William Burden *vs.* William Cavanaugh on appeal. The jury were John Coulter, William Rhea, Joseph Black, William Trimble, Samuel Doak, Moses Justice, Andrew Boyle, Samuel Boyle, Robert Gamble, Joseph Weldon, John McIntire and Pearson Brock, who returned a verdict for the Defendant. It was therefore considered by the court "that the Plaintiff take nothing by his plaint aforesaid, but for his false clamour be in mercy, and the said Defendant go hence without day, and recover against the said Plaintiff his costs by him about his defence in this behalf expended."

This court continued to try causes of minor importance until the adoption of the constitution of 1834 when this part of its duties was transferred to the circuit court.

On March 13, 1793, Gov. Blount issued an ordinance creating Knox and Jefferson Counties a judicial district by the name of Hamilton, and during the following October the superior court was organized by David Campbell, who appointed Francis A. Ramsey clerk of the law court, and Samuel Mitchell clerk and master in equity. The former continued in his position until the discontinuance of the court in 1810. The latter was succeeded in 1797 by Joseph Greer, who, the year before, had been chosen one of the presidential electors. He continued as clerk and master until 1810.

During the first two or three terms of this court the transactions were unimportant. The first trial for a capital offense was begun and held in accordance with the following proclamation:

WILLIAM BLOUNT, GOVERNOR IN AND OVER THE TERRITORY OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA SOUTH OF THE RIVER OHIO,

*To David Campbell, John McNairy and Joseph Anderson, judges in and for said territory Greeting:*

I do authorize you, any two or either of you, to hold a court of oyer and terminer and general jail delivery at Knoxville, to commence on the first day of August next, and to continue the same by adjournment from day to day, not exceeding three days, for the trial of a Creek Indian, apprehended on suspicion of being guilty of the murder of John Ish, a citizen of the United States, resident in this Territory, to hear, try and determine to give judgment and award execution thereon.

Given under my hand and seal at Knoxville this 29th day of July, 1794.

By the Governor.

WILLIAM BLOUNT.

HUGH L. WHITE.

Judge Anderson issued an order to Robert Houston, sheriff of Knox County, who returned a *venire facias* of forty men, from whom the following grand jury was chosen: John Patterson, foreman; Andrew Hannah,

Oliver Wallace, William Richie, Samuel Hindman, Moses Brooks, George Walker, David Walker, George Stout, Willam Trimble, Jeremiah Jeffrey, John Steel, William Lea, Robert Kirkpatrick, Thomas Milliken, Thomas Richie, George Hayes and James Cunningham. The jury immediately returned an indictment for murder against Abongphohigo, an Indian of the Creek Nation, late of the town of Zookcaucaugee or Punk Knob on Oakfuskey River. John Rhea was appointed to defend him, and John Carey was sworn as interpreter. The jury was composed of Andrew W. Campbell, William Sharpe, Nicholas Neal, Thomas Robison, Joseph Brooks, Alexander Cole, M. Pruett, James Milliken, Thomas Inglis, James Walker, John Kerr and Thomas Bounds. The trial lasted only one day, and a verdict of guilty was promptly returned. Four days later the prisoner was executed by the sheriff of Knox County.

Some of the penalties imposed by the laws at that time would now be considered barbarous. At the October term, 1795, of the superior court, Michael Johnson, of Jefferson County, was found guilty of stealing a horse of the value of \$50, and for this offense received the following sentence. "It is ordered that the said Michael Johnson shall stand in the pillory one hour, and shall be branded, whipped on his bare back with thirty-nine lashes well laid on, and at the same time shall have both his ears nailed to the pillory and cut off, and shall be branded on the right cheek with the letter H of the length of three-fourths of an inch, and of the breadth of one-half inch, and on the left cheek with the letter T of the same dimensions as the letter H in a plain and visible manner, and that the sheriff of Knox County see this sentence put into execution on Tuesday, the 20th inst., between the hours of 12 and 2 o'clock in the afternoon." This penalty was deemed too light, and two or three years later the crimes of horse stealing, burglary, arson, etc., were made punishable by death. In 1797, at the April term of the superior court, Robert Parker, of Grainger County, was convicted of stealing 500 Spanish milled dollars from Thomas Humes, and was executed on the 28th of the same month. As there was no appeal from the decisions of this court, punishment for crime was promptly administered.

The custom of granting benefit of clergy under the old English common law, a rare occurrence in America, still obtained in this court, and through it many criminals escaped the severe penalties of the law. As the statutes provided that for a second offense benefit of clergy should not be granted, to prevent a repetition of the plea, it was customary to brand upon the thumb, the criminal pleading its protection. The following examples serve to illustrate this custom. April 22, 1797, Caleb Carter was convicted of carrying away by force of arms from one Jonathan

Boggle—"one straight coat pattern of the value of \$8, one silk handkerchief of the value of \$2, and \$1.50 in cash. Being asked if he had aught to say why sentence of death should not be pronounced upon him, prayed the benefit of clergy, which was granted him. Therefore the sentence of the law pronounced by the court is that he be branded upon the brawn of the thumb with the letter T." At the same term of the court Benjamin Stephens was tried on an indictment for "stealing from Patrick Ninny, of Jefferson County, one piece of gingham containing six yards, at the price of five shillings per yard, the whole piece being equal in value to four Spanish milled dollars." He was found guilty, and had he not plead the benefit of clergy would have been sentenced to death. He took the advantage of that plea, however, and was simply branded upon the thumb. At the next term of the court Hugh Washburn also escaped the death penalty by pleading the benefit of clergy. To what persons the benefit of clergy might be granted in this court is not now known, but it is certain that it was restricted to a certain class. Considering the severity of the punishment, however, and the comparative insignificance of many of the offenses, it is not to be wondered at that the courts were willing to grant that plea without a too rigid examination as to the petitioner's right to its protection.

On January 1, 1831, with the opening of the penitentiary, a new penal code went into effect, and the whipping post, pillory, and branding iron as instruments of punishment, were abandoned. The first representatives to the penitentiary from Knox County were Abraham and Silas Conley convicted of stealing property to the value of \$2 and \$3 respectively, for which they were sentenced to one year's imprisonment.

In 1810 circuit courts were established, and the superior court of law and equity was superseded by the supreme court of errors and appeal. The latter court was organized at Knoxville on May 28, 1810, by Hugh L. White and George W. Campbell, judges of the supreme court, and William Cocks, judge of the first circuit. Thomas Emmerson was chosen clerk and so continued until 1816, when he was succeeded by Hugh Brown, who filled the office for many years. The circuit court was organized about the same time as the supreme court by James Trimble, judge of the second circuit, who appointed F. A. Ramsey as clerk. In 1816 Judge Trimble was succeeded by Edward Scott, who continued upon the bench continuously until 1844. The chancery court was not organized until April, 1832. The first chancellor was William B. Reese, who continued until the reorganization of the courts under the new constitution in 1836, when he was elected to the supreme bench, and was succeeded by Thomas L. Williams.



Of the attorneys admitted to practice at the first session of the court of pleas and quarter sessions, Alexander Outlaw was at that time the most prominent. He had taken a conspicuous part in the organization of the county of Franklin, and had represented the county of Caswell in the Assembly in 1786. He afterward took an equally important part in the formation of the State constitution, and among the early legislators, as a representative from Jefferson County. In 1799 he was chosen speaker of the Senate.

John Rhea was several years younger than Outlaw, and not so well known. He afterward attained considerable distinction, and was a member of Congress for a period of eighteen years. Hopkins Lacy became clerk of the Territorial Assembly, and upon the organization of the courts under the constitution of 1796, was chosen attorney-general of Washington District. Archibald Roane had been engaged in the practice of his profession for some time, and in 1796 he was under one of the judges of the superior court, a position which he held until elected governor in 1801.

In March, 1793, several lawyers practicing in the courts of East Tennessee inserted a notice in the *Knorville Gazette* stating that thereafter they would not appear in court in any case unless the fees had been paid in advance, whereupon William Tatham published the following, which is so unique as to deserve representation here:

#### FIAT JUSTITIA.

Having adopted the above motto as early as I had the honor of admission to the bar I have covenanted with myself that I will never knowingly depart from it, and on this foundation I have built a few maxims which offered my reflection in satisfaction.

1. I will practice law because it offers me opportunity of being a more useful member of society.

2. I will turn a deaf ear to no man because his purse is empty.

3. I will advise no man beyond the comprehension of his case.

4. I will bring none into law whom my conscience tells me should be kept out.

5. I will never be unmindful of the cause of humanity and this comprehends, the widows and fatherless and those in bondage.

6. I will be faithful to my client but never so unfaithful to myself as to become a party to his crime.

7. In criminal cases I will not underrate my own abilities for if my client proves a rascal his money is better in my hands, and if not I hold the option.

8. I will never acknowledge the omnipotence of the Legislature to consider their acts to be law beyond the spirit of the constitution.

9. No man's greatness shall elevate him above the justice due to my client.

10. I will not consent to compromise when I conceive a verdict essential to my client's future reputation or protection, for of this he cannot be a complete judge.

11. I will advise the turbulent with candor, and if they will go to law against my advice, they must pardon me for volunteering against them.

12. I will acknowledge every man's right to manage his own case if he pleases.

The above are my rules of practice, and although I will not at any critical juncture

promise to finish my business in person if the public interest should require my removal from hence I will do everything in my power for those who like them, and endeavor to leave it in proper hands if I should be absent.

Knoxville, Tenn.

WILLIAM TATHAM.

The fate of this candid and upright, and it may be added eccentric attorney is not known, but it is probable that his hopes of political preferment were unrecognized.

In 1794 Willie Biount, John Cocke, William Cocke and W. C. C. Claiborne were admitted to practice in the courts of Knox County. All were men of distinguished ability, and prominent in the affairs of the State. Only the first named was a resident of Knoxville. He served as a judge of the supreme court for a few months in 1796, but never attained much prominence as a jurist.

Other attorneys were admitted to practice as follows: Ephraim Dunlap, 1792; David Greer, John Sevier, Jr., John Lowry and Samuel Mitchell, 1793; John McKee, 1795; John Gray, D. W. Breazeale, Hugh L. White,\* John Wilkinson and Benjamin Seawell, 1796; George W. Campbell,\* Jenkin Whiteside\* and John F. Jack, 1798; James Porter, John Kennedy and Edward Scott,\* 1799; Pleasant M. Miller,\* 1800; John Williams, James Trimble\* Samuel Love, Andrew White, and Thomas Dardis, 1803; Thomas Emmerson, J. D. Barnard, William Thompson, N. W. Williams, Luke Lea, William McNutt and Enoch Parsons, 1805; William Brown, Joel Casey and George W. Gibbs, 1806. Only a part of the above named persons were residents of Knoxville, and several who attained distinction in the profession have received sufficient mention elsewhere. D. W. Breazeale, who has been almost entirely forgotten, resided at Knoxville and for a number of years had an extensive practice. Enoch Parsons has also dropped out of remembrance, although for one time he figured quite conspicuously in political affairs. In 1819 he was a candidate for governor against McMinn, receiving about 8,000 votes. He afterward removed to Alabama, where he again became candidate for governor. He and his brother Peter, also a lawyer, married daughters of John Kain, who lived about seven or eight miles above Knoxville near where McMillian's Station now is.

With the exception of Judge White, the most prominent personage in Knoxville during the earlier part of the century, was undoubtedly Col. John Williams.† He was born in Surrey County, N. C., in 1778. He removed to Knoxville and became an attorney in the courts of the State in 1803. He was possessed of a fine person, and graceful, courtly

\*See Chapter XII.

†The sketches of Col. John Williams and Judge Thomas L. Williams were furnished by Col. John H. Grozier.

and dignified manners, but his complaisant and benevolent countenance made him accessible to his humblest acquaintances. These qualities made him very popular with all classes. Soon after his arrival in Tennessee he married a daughter of Gen. James White, one of the most prominent, popular and wealthy citizens of the State. He industriously and devotedly practiced his profession until the beginning of the war in 1812, when he raised a regiment of volunteers and marched to Florida. Returning home he was appointed colonel of the Thirty-ninth Regiment United States Volunteers. Having recruited his regiment to 600 men, on the application of Gen. Jackson, then commanding the army against the Creek Indians, Col. Williams marched to his relief, and with his regiment took an active part in the battle of the Horseshoe. At the termination of the war, in 1815, he was elected to the United States Senate. He was re-elected in 1817 and served until 1823, when he was defeated by Gen. Jackson, who was a candidate for the presidency. Col. Williams was supposed to be indifferent or hostile to Gen. Jackson's election as President, but such was his popularity he could have defeated any candidate except Gen. Jackson. Soon after he became a candidate for the State Senate, from Knox County, but was not successful. He was then appointed minister to Guatemala, by President Adams. At the end of one year he returned and made a successful canvass for the State Senate. This was the last time he offered his service to the public, but no citizen in the State in a private station, exercised a greater influence on its politics and civil affairs. He was an ardent friend and promoter of every enterprise for the public welfare, and at the time of his death was a director in the Cincinnati & Charleston Railroad. From his retirement from the State Senate in 1829, up to his death, which occurred in 1837, he devoted himself assiduously to the practice of his profession.

About 1810 William C. Mynatt was admitted to the bar, and was soon after elected attorney-general. He continued in that office until 1818, when he was succeeded by William E. Anderson. He remained in the practice of his profession for a number of years, but was somewhat too fond of ardent spirits to achieve success. Later he became the proprietor of the Mansion House. He had a keen sense of the humorous, and is said to have been "a fellow of infinite jest." He was a contemporary of Thomas D. Arnold, a man of great eccentricity, of whom many amusing incidents are told. Arnold was born in Knox County in 1791. He studied law with John Cocke, and served under him as private in the war of 1812. He was a staunch Whig, and in 1830, after a third canvass defeated Pryor Lea for Congress. At the expiration of his term he moved



to Greene County, and there, in 1840, was again elected to Congress. He died about 1869.

Pryor Lea was also a native of Knox County, born in 1794. He received his education in Greenville College, studied law and was admitted to practice in 1817. He served with Gen. Jackson in the Creek war in 1813, and was clerk of the Lower House of the General Assembly in 1816. In 1824, he was appointed United States District Attorney, and in 1826 was elected to Congress, where he remained two terms. In 1837 he removed to Jackson, Miss., and ten years later to Goliad, Tex., where he recently died.

Richard G. Dunlap became a member of the Knoxville bar about 1822. He was the eldest of seven sons of Hugh Dunlap, one of the first merchants of Knoxville, and is said to have been the first white child born in the town. He was a man of fine appearance and polished manners but of a somewhat pompous bearing. He soon removed to Texas, and in 1840 was sent as a minister from that republic to the United States. He afterward resided at New Orleans, where he died. Several of his brothers also rose to prominence: Hugh G. and William C. both became circuit court judges in West Tennessee, and the latter served two terms in Congress; James T. became comptroller of the treasury, a position he held for four years.

The Andersons, Isaac, William E., Robert M. and James, were another remarkable family of this period. They were all remarkable for their size and commanding presence and their great strength both physical and intellectual. Isaac became a prominent Presbyterian divine; William E. served as attorney-general of this judicial circuit from 1818 to 1825, when he removed to Nashville; Robert M. was admitted to the bar about 1820, and continued to practice at Knoxville until 1837. In that year the Twelfth Judicial Circuit was formed and he was elected to preside. As the new circuit did not include Knox County, he removed to New Market. He continued upon the bench until his death. The fourth brother, James, was a very respectable magistrate of Knox County.

Judge Thomas L. Williams, who was elected chancellor in 1836, was also a member of a remarkable family. He was a brother of Col. John Williams, mention of whom has been made, and a twin brother of Hon. Lewis Williams, who was a representative in Congress from North Carolina for twenty-seven consecutive years. Judge Williams, when a young man, came to Knoxville and began the practice of his profession. He was an impressive and eloquent speaker, and soon became a leading member of the bar. He never offered his services to the public for preferment but once, when he was elected to the Legislature. This was

in the earlier part of his life. He was several times elected chancellor, and continued in office nearly twenty years or to within two or three years of his death. As chancellor he was very popular with the bar, and his decisions were generally acquiesced in by the lawyers. In fact his decisions were so generally correct that they were seldom reversed or modified by the supreme court. When such did occur, it was because some technical rule of equity intervened to prevent the appearance of a decree that was according to right and justice. An able judge of the supreme court who was studying one of Judge Williams' decrees once said: "Judge Williams is an excellent chancellor—I think I may say the best in the State, but I have one complaint against him. He will throw hard cases on the supreme court. Here is a case, which he has decided, according to the right, but a technical rule of equity compels the court to reverse his decree."

Judge Williams died at the residence of his sister, near Nashville, in 1857. The supreme court was in session at the time, and resolutions highly complimentary to his honesty and uprightness as a citizen, and his ability as a judge, were adopted by the bar.

In 1833 Knoxville was credited with eighteen lawyers. At this time John R. Nelson was attorney-general. He had previously been deputy sheriff of the county, and while occupying that office, had managed to obtain some knowledge of the law. He was then chosen to represent the county in the Lower House of the General Assembly, and while a member of that body was elected to the office of attorney-general. Here he had opportunity to display his strong native ability, and contrary to the expectation of his friends he made an excellent prosecutor. He resigned his office in 1835, but still continued to practice, and attained to considerable prominence as a criminal lawyer. Physically he was a man of great strength and vigor, but was somewhat given to over indulgence in eating and drinking. He was succeeded in the office of attorney-general by John H. Crozier, who was appointed to fill out the unexpired term. Col. Crozier is still living near Knoxville. He has now retired from practice, but for half a century he was one of the leading advocates of East Tennessee. He is a man of fine intellect, an orator of uncommon brilliancy and a conversationalist of rare powers. In 1836 he was a candidate before the Legislature for the office which he was then filling by appointment. Inexperienced in political intrigue, he would not consent to any exchange of votes in his behalf, and was consequently defeated, his successful opponent being Reuben B. Rodgers. In 1837 he was elected to the Legislature without opposition, and in 1844 was an elector on the Whig ticket. The following year he was elected to Congress and

re-elected in 1847. From 1851 to 1854 he was appointed commissioner upon the supreme bench to decide cases in which Judge McKinney was incompetent.

One of the contemporaries of Col. Crozier was Samuel R. Rodgers who served as chancellor for a short time at the close of the war. He was a man of good ability, but was scarcely aggressive enough to achieve the highest distinction as an advocate. Upon the bench, however, he displayed conspicuous ability. In manner he was mild and amiable, and was highly esteemed by the community in which he lived. Samuel B. Boyd, who was another contemporary of those mentioned above, soon after receiving his license to practice, removed to Alabama where he resided for several years. He then returned to Knoxville, and remained until his death. He was thoroughly educated, and possessed strong native ability.

Samuel B. Kennedy became a member of the Knoxville bar about 1830, but he soon after removed to Mississippi, where he died two or three years later. W. B. A. Ramsey was licensed to practice in 1826. While not a brilliant man he possessed excellent judgment, and had he applied himself to his profession he could, undoubtedly, have attained distinction as a jurist. During the greater part of his life, however, he was engaged in filling some official position. In 1832 he was appointed clerk and master of the chancery court and continued in that position until elected Secretary of State in 1847. George W. Churchwell, who died at the beginning of the civil war, was a member of the Knoxville bar for more than thirty years. He was an advocate of fair ability and a man of commanding presence, but was somewhat rough and eccentric in his manners. He was at one time a member of the Legislature, and in 1836 was a strong supporter of Hugh L. White. During the events previous to the war he espoused the cause of the South. His son, William M. Churchwell, was a young man of some brilliancy and was twice elected to Congress. He became a colonel in the Confederate Army, and died during the war.

William G. McAdoo, who served as attorney-general for nearly ten years preceding 1860, began the practice of law in 1849. In 1851 he was elected attorney-general by the Legislature, and after the change in the Constitution was re-elected by the people. He was an excellent prosecutor, one of the best ever on the circuit. He is still living in Knoxville, and a more extended notice appears in another chapter. William Swan received a license to practice about 1838. He had previously been clerk of the circuit court and was then somewhat advanced in life. He obtained a good practice, but was not sufficiently well read to achieve much distinction. He died about 1860.



Ebenezer Alexander, who succeeded Judge Scott upon the bench of the circuit court in 1844, was admitted to practice about 1830. In his youth he received a good literary education in the East Tennessee University, which was then under the presidency of Dr. Coffin. He served for a time as attorney-general and was twice elected to the bench of the circuit court, once by the Legislature and once by the people. He died in 1857 while serving his second term as circuit judge. He was of an amiable disposition and was very popular with the mass of the people. While, perhaps, not as profound a jurist as some of his colleagues, as a judicial officer he gave general satisfaction. He was honest, industrious and impartial. Judge Alexander was succeeded upon the bench by James M. Welcker, who died the following year. He had been admitted to the bar about 1841, and after practicing a few years had abandoned his profession and engaged in farming. At the death of Judge Alexander he was induced by his friends to accept a position upon the bench. During his career as an advocate he was associated with a younger brother, A. G. Welcker, who afterward removed to Chattanooga. The vacancy occasioned by the death of Judge Welcker was filled by George Brown, of Madisonville. He continued upon the bench until the suspension of the courts during the civil war, when he joined the Federal Army. In 1864 Elijah T. Hall was commissioned judge of this circuit by Gov. Brownlow. He continued in that position, by election and re-election, until 1878, when he was succeeded by Samuel A. Rodgers, of Loudon. Upon the establishment of a criminal court at Knoxville in 1870 his brother, M. L. Hall, was chosen to preside over it, and acted in that capacity until 1886. In September of that year he was succeeded by S. T. Logan, who, in accordance with an act of the General Assembly of 1885, also presides over the circuit court. Judge M. L. Hall received his professional instruction in the offices of Robert M. Anderson and Samuel R. Rodgers. He was licensed to practice in 1841. In 1852 he was elected clerk of the circuit court, and from that time until September, 1886, was constantly in office. He continued as clerk of the circuit court until 1864, when he was appointed clerk of the Federal court by Judge Trigg.

The successor of Judge Williams as chancellor was Seth J. W. Lucky, of Jonesboro, who continued in that position until the close of the war. He had previously been upon the circuit court for many years and was highly esteemed, both as a man and a judge. He died in April, 1869. His successor was Samuel R. Rodgers, who continued upon the bench but one year. In 1866 A. O. P. Temple was elected chancellor, and satisfactorily discharged the duties of that office until 1878. He had

been a resident of Knoxville for several years before the war, and during the war was a staunch Unionist. He is still living, and since his retirement from the bench has served a term as postmaster. He was succeeded as chancellor by W. B. Staley, of Kingston, who filled the office for one term and is now a resident of Knoxville. The present incumbent is H. R. Gibson. Several other prominent members of the profession, among whom are Thomas L. Lyons, Horace Maynard and W. H. Sneed, have been residents of Knoxville, but they have received sufficient mention in another chapter. The present bar of Knoxville is one of conspicuous ability and among its members are some of the ablest men of the State.

The military achievements of Tennessee have been remarkably brilliant, and Knox County is entitled to no small part of the honor of making and sustaining the reputation of the "Volunteer State." In all the troublous times under the territorial government Knoxville was the rendezvous for volunteers and the headquarters for operations against the Indians, and under their leader, the gallant Gen. White, the citizens of the county were ever ready to endure the hardships and brave the perils of savage warfare for the protection of their homes and country. But as an account of their expeditions and adventures is presented in another chapter, it will not be repeated here. In the Creek war of 1812 and 1813 Knox County and vicinity bore a conspicuous part. In the early part of the war Col. John Williams led out a regiment of militia which marched into the Creek County. The term of enlistment was short, and the men returned without having accomplished anything of moment. In the fall of 1813 Gen. James White, in command of a brigade of three months' militia, joined Gen. Cocke's forces, and it was his brigade, acting under orders from Gen. Cocke, that captured and burned the Hillabee towns.\*

Early in 1813 Col. John Williams received a commission to recruit and organize the Thirty-ninth Regiment of United States Volunteers. On June 18, 1813, he had recruited a force of 600 men and they were mustered into the service. The lieutenant-colonel of the regiment was Thomas H. Benton; the major, Lemuel P. Montgomery. The companies were commanded by Samuel Bunch, James Davis, John Jones, John B. Long, John Phagan, Thomas Stuart and William Walker. Bunch afterward became colonel of one of the regiments of militia in White's brigade. Among those who served as first lieutenants were David Lauderdale, David McMillen, Nathaniel Smith, Guy Smith (who also served as quartermaster), A. Stanfield and J. O. Tate. Andrew Greer, N. Dortch,

---

\*See page 466.

M. W. McClellan, M. C. Molton, Simpson Payne, R. Quarles and J. K. Snapp were second lieutenants; and Dicks Alexander, A. G. Cowan, Joseph Denison, R. B. Harvey, Joseph S. Jackson, Ellis Thomas and T. B. Tunstall were third lieutenants. One of the ensigns was Sam Houston. Thus the regiment contained three men who were afterward to become United States Senators.

Col. Williams had expected to go to New Orleans, and was awaiting orders to move, when Judge H. L. White visited Gen. Jackson, and, learning of his urgent need of reinforcements, hastened home and urged Col. Williams to march at once to his assistance. This Col. Williams finally decided to do, and, waiting only long enough to communicate his intentions to the war department, he set out. He reached Gen. Jackson about the 1st of March, and on the 27th of that month participated in the battle of the Horseshoe. His regiment acted with especial gallantry. Maj. Montgomery was the first man to leap upon the works of the enemy, but was instantly killed. Ensign Houston received an arrow in the thigh, inflicting a wound from which he never fully recovered. The regiment continued in the Creek country until after the treaty of peace was signed, when they returned home and were mustered out on June 15, 1815.

The news of the signing of the treaty of peace with Great Britain was received in Knoxville with the greatest rejoicing. The First Presbyterian Church then just erected was illuminated, and a thanksgiving service was held there. Afterward a grand ball in honor of the event was given.

In 1836 a company of two months' militia was raised for service in the Seminole war. Dr. James Morrow was captain, Samuel B. Kennedy, first lieutenant, and Thomas C. Lyons second lieutenant. The troops for East Tennessee rendezvoused at Athens, where R. G. Dunlap was chosen to command the brigade. The regiment to which Capt. Morris' company was assigned was engaged during its term of service in assisting to remove the Cherokees west of the Mississippi, and Lieut. Lyons was promoted to a position upon Gen. Wool's staff. In the Mexican war Knox County took no considerable part. Under the first call for twelve months' men a company was organized at Knoxville on June 10, 1846, with William R. Caswell as captain; Samuel Bell, first lieutenant; Calvin Gossett, second lieutenant, and James Anderson, third lieutenant. The company known as the "Knoxville Dragoons" then went to Memphis where the regiment was organized as the Second Tennessee Volunteer Cavalry, with J. E. Thomas as colonel, R. D. Allison, lieutenant-colonel, and Richard Waterhouse, major.\* At the end of their terms of service the

---

\*For the movements of these regiments see pages 475 and 476.



members of the company returned to their homes, but a call was soon issued for two regiments to serve for three years, or during the war, and several men re-enlisted. In September, 1847, Jordan T. Council organized a company of infantry, of which he became captain. Tazewell Newman, first lieutenant; Joseph H. Crockett, second lieutenant; Thomas McAffry, third lieutenant, and James Henderson, orderly sergeant. The company was ordered to Memphis where it was assigned the position of Company D, Fourth Tennessee Infantry, with Richard Waterhouse as colonel, J. D. Swan, lieutenant-colonel and McD J. Bunch, major.

During the civil war Knoxville, as the metropolis of this division of the State, was a position of considerable importance, and was early made the headquarters of the Army of East Tennessee by the Confederate military authorities. Knox County, however, was strongly Union in sentiment. At the election held in February, 1861, to determine the question of calling a convention, out of 3,561 votes cast, only 394 were in favor of that measure, and at the election in June "no separation" received a majority of nearly three to one. This sentiment somewhat delayed the organization of troops, and some of the young men, impatient to join the army and fearful lest the war should end before they had an opportunity to do so, hastened to Georgia soon after the fall of Fort Sumter and joined the first regiment of volunteers from that State. But the necessity of collecting a force to suppress the Unionists, who threatened to cut off communication between Virginia and the southwest, soon became apparent. The old fair grounds two miles west of Knoxville was made a rendezvous for the companies organized in East Tennessee, and there, on May 29, the Third (Confederate) Tennessee Regiment was organized from troops mainly from Monroe County, which was strongly secession. Soon after the Fourth and Nineteenth Regiments were organized. On July 26, Gen. Zollicoffer arrived and assumed command of the forces in East Tennessee. He remained in Knoxville until September, when he went to Cumberland Gap, leaving Col. H. B. Wood in command of the post. On November 25 the latter was succeeded by Gen. W. H. Carroll, while at the same time Gen. G. B. Crittenden, the division commander, also had his headquarters at Knoxville.

On the 11th of October the Thirty-seventh Regiment of Infantry was organized with Moses White as colonel, H. P. Moffett, lieutenant-colonel, and W. M. Hunt, major. Considerable difficulty was experienced in providing the regiment with the proper arms. On December 9 it was reported that of the 771 men in the command only 200 were armed, and these with a miscellaneous assortment of rifles, shotguns and muskets,

many of which were totally unfit for use. On the next day Gen. Carroll was ordered to join Gen. Zollicoffer, with his brigade, but owing to its insufficient equipment, he was unable to move until toward the close of the month. Maj. G. H. Monserrat was then left in command of the post at Knoxville, and from that time forth no considerable Confederate force was maintained at this point. In March, 1862, E. Kirby Smith assumed command of the Department of East Tennessee, and he, for a time, made his headquarters at Knoxville. Later, during the autumn of 1862 and the following winter, the post was under the command of Gen. J. P. McCown, Gen. Sam. Jones and Gen. Maury, successively. During this time strenuous efforts were made to enforce the conscript act but with only partial success. On April 27, 1863, Gen. S. B. Buckner was assigned to the command of East Tennessee, and Knoxville was his headquarters until the evacuation in September.

From its position the town was difficult of access by the Federal forces, and it was undisturbed by them until June, 1863, when Gen. Sanders with a few hundred men made a raid around it. On the evening of September 4, following, the advance of Gen. Burnside entered the town, but it was not until the next day that he arrived in person and took up his headquarters in a dwelling formerly the residence of John H. Crozier but now occupied by the *Journal*. The remainder of this month and the greater part of October was spent in securing Cumberland Gap and other important points in upper East Tennessee. On October 22 news was received that Longstreet with his corps was on the march up the valley, and Burnside at once ordered the greater portion of his force to Loudon to meet him. The report, however, proved premature as Gen. Longstreet did not leave Chattanooga until the 4th of November, but Burnside, confident that the movement would be made, awaited his enemy's arrival. His army consisted of the Ninth Corps, commanded by Gen. Potter, and composed of two divisions under Gens. Hartranft and Ferrero respectively; the Twenty-third Corps composed of White's and Hascall's divisions, and the cavalry under Gen. J. M. Shackleford, numbering altogether about 10,000 men. The disposition of these forces upon Longstreet's appearance was about as follows: The Ninth Corps at Lenoir's, where a pontoon bridge had been thrown across the river; White's division of the Twenty-third Corps at Loudon, on the north side of the river; a portion of the Twenty-third Corps at Knoxville, under command of Chief-of-staff Gen. John G. Parke; a division of cavalry and mounted infantry under Gen. Sanders, south of the river not far from Rockford, and detachments at Kingston, Maryville and other points. Longstreet's army consisted of the divisions of Gens. Hood,

McLaws and Wheeler, and two battalions of artillery commanded by Cols. Alexander and Leyden, respectively, numbering in the aggregate about 20,000 men. On the 13th of November Gen. Wheeler with three brigades of cavalry detached himself from the main army, marched to Maryville, captured the detachment there, and attempted to capture and occupy the heights south of the river at Knoxville. After a vigorous attack upon the force under Gen. Sanders, however, he was compelled to withdraw, and marched down the river to join the main army which had thrown a bridge across the river at Hough's Ferry. On the 12th of November Assistant Secretary of War Dana and Col. Wilson of Grant's Staff visited Gen. Burnside, and upon conference it was decided to hold Knoxville at all hazards, and Kingston if possible. On the next morning Gen. Burnside accompanied his guests as far as Lenoir's, and at once began making preparations for the withdrawal of his forces to Knoxville. He ordered Gens. Potter and White to Hough's Ferry to delay the passage of Longstreet's army, while at the same time he started his wagon trains for Knoxville. Soon after daylight on the 15th he had his whole command on the road moving toward Lenoir's, which place was not reached until nearly night. There two days' rations were issued, and the army went into camp.

At Campbell's Station about ten miles above Lenoir's the Loudon road enters the Kingston pike extending from Kingston to Knoxville. This was therefore an important point, and before daylight Hartranft's division, accompanied by Biddle's cavalry, was started in advance to seize and hold it. Meanwhile McLaws' division was hastening up on the Kingston road for the same purpose. The roads were in bad condition from heavy rains, and the progress of both were slow, but Hartranft's division gained the position, and by 11 o'clock Burnside's main army had passed the forks of the road and formed in line of battle. Ferrero's division was posted on the right to the north of the wood, Hartranft's division on the left, with White's division in the center. Five batteries of six guns each were placed in commanding positions to the rear of the first line of troops. About 12 o'clock, after some severe skirmishing by McLaws' division, Longstreet brought his command into position with Hood's division, under Gen. Jenkins, on the right, the artillery in the center, at the junction of the roads, and McLaws' on the left. Gallant and well sustained charges were made, first by McLaws' division on Burnside's right, and second by Hood's division on the extreme left, but both were repulsed. It had been the intention to make these assaults simultaneously, but owing to some misunderstanding of orders this was not done. Meanwhile the wagon trains had obtained a start toward Knox-



ville, and Gen. Burnside now retired his army under a heavy fire to a hill about three-fourths of a mile in the rear. This position was obtained in good order about 4 o'clock, and in a few minutes McLaws renewed the attack upon the Union right, but Burnside, anticipating the movement, had massed his artillery to meet it, and after an hour's hard fighting Longstreet withdrew his forces beyond the range of the Union batteries. The Union loss in this battle was reported at 26 killed, 166 wounded and 57 missing, while the Confederate loss was probably much greater.

The spot where this battle was fought had already become historic. It was the site of one of the oldest forts or stations in Knox County, and near by were the birthplaces of Com. Farragut and Bell Boyd, the celebrated spy.

After the withdrawal of Longstreet's army Gen. Burnside gave orders to retreat to Knoxville. The night was very dark and the roads heavy but by daylight the next morning the army reached its destination. The lines of fortification had already been selected by Chief Engineer O. M. Poe, and the work of intrenching was immediately begun. Ferrero's division was posted on the west, extending from the river to where the railroad crosses Second Creek; Hartranft's division on the north, extending from First to Second Creek along Vine Street, and White's and a portion of Hascall's division on the east, from Second Creek to a point on the river where the old glass-works were located. Artillery was placed on all the hills on and within these lines. A bridge had been thrown across the river, and a portion of the artillery, supported by Cameron's brigade of the Twenty-third Corps, was stationed on the heights to the south.

Meanwhile Gen. Longstreet had pushed in, and to delay his approach the cavalry under Gen. Sanders was dismounted, and on the morning of the 17th sent out four or five miles on the Kingston pike to delay and harrass Longstreet's advance consisting of McLaws' division. The whole of that day was spent in skirmishing, Sanders slowly falling back and McLaws advancing until night, when the former made a stand about 500 yards above the house of R. H. Armstrong where a line of defense consisting of rails, rifle pits, etc., was constructed, extending from the river to the railroad. McLaws occupied a parallel line just in front of Armstrong's house where his artillery was stationed.

Vigorous attempts were made by McLaws during the next day to drive in the Union line, but this was stubbornly resisted as it was imperatively necessary that the position be held as long as possible to give time for the strengthening of the works around the city. Chief Engineer Poe says in

his report that every hour was worth a thousand men. About three o'clock in the afternoon the line was so hard pressed that it was impossible longer to maintain it, and Gen. Sanders rode forward from his headquarters to direct the retreat. He had reached a point about the center of his line, and just in its rear, when he received a mortal wound and was carried into the city. Gen. Wolford, however, succeeded in withdrawing his forces in good time, and Gen. Longstreet made the fatal mistake of not pressing the attack. Gen. Sanders was carried to the Lamar House where he died in a few hours after having been baptized by Rev. J. A. Hyden of the Methodist Church. The next night, in the presence of Gen. Burnside and the other officers, he was buried in the yard of the Second Presbyterian Church, Rev. Dr. Thomas W. Humes conducting the exercises. On the 18th of November Longstreet's entire command had come up and were placed in position. As has been stated McLaws' division occupied the space between the river and the railroad; Hood's division extended from the railroad to the Clinton road, while Hart's cavalry brigade completed the investment on the east, from the Tazewell Pike to the river. As the siege progressed. Longstreet received reinforcements from Gens. Sam Jones, "Mudwall" Jackson and "Cerro Gordo" Williams, and the divisions of Hood and McLaws were moved up so that the former's left rested on the Tazewell pike, and the latter's left extended to the Clinton road.

From the 18th to the 24th nothing of great importance occurred, although some skirmishes were kept up, and two or three sallies were made from the Union line, for the purpose of destroying houses which gave shelter to the sharpshooters of Longstreets' army, under direction of Capt. Poe the work of strengthening the fortifications went steadily on, nor had it ceased when the siege was raised. First Creek was dammed at the Mabry Street crossing, and Second Creek at the railroad crossing, thus flooding the low ground along the railroad. Fort Sanders was rendered almost impregnable by a deep ditch in front, and beyond that a net work of wire, and *Cheveux de Frise*.

On the night of the 24th Longstreet sent about 1,100 men under Gen. McLaws across the river near the Armstrong House, and on the next day an attempt was made to carry the heights south of the river. This was unsuccessful, except as to one hill below the university which was taken and a battery placed upon it. This battery, however, proved of little service. From this time until the attack on Fort Sanders the siege presents few points of interest, with the exception of an occasional sortie for the possession of the rifle pits in front of the fort.

It had been the purpose of Gen. Longstreet to starve the Federals

into surrender, and he would undoubtedly have succeeded very quickly had he cut them off from all outside sources of supplies. It is stated by Capt. Poe in his report that at the commencement of the siege the army had provision sufficient for but a single day, yet at its close a quantity sufficient to last ten days had been collected. The Holston and French Broad Rivers above Knoxville were not carefully guarded, and large quantities of provisions and provender were floated down in flat-boats under cover of darkness and dense fogs. These supplies were freely furnished by loyal citizens, and were sent down under direction of Capt. Doughty and his company, who remained on the French Broad during the entire siege.

On the 28th of November Gen. Longstreet, learning of the approach of Gen. Sherman with a force of 25,000 men, resolved to attempt to carry the Federal works by assault. Upon consultation with his officers it was at last decided to attack Fort Sanders. This point was determined upon, it is said, through the advice of the engineer, Gen. Leadbetter, who from observation had decided that there was no ditch in front the fort. He was led into this error by seeing a dog pass out of the fort without disappearing from sight as he would have done had he entered a ditch. This was afterward explained by the fact that the animal had crossed over the ditch on a plank.

The attack upon the fort was begun early in the morning of the 29th by three brigades of McLaws' division composed of Mississippi, Georgia and South Carolina Regiments respectively. The engagement lasted about twenty minutes, and was attended with severe loss on the part of the Confederates. The obstacles in front of the fort threw their lines into confusion, and the ditch proved almost impassable. Heavy rains had made the ground very slippery, and no scaling ladders had been provided. Only a few succeeded in scaling the parapet, and these were either captured or killed. The assault was gallantly made and sustained, but the odds were too great for human endurance. The shattered columns were withdrawn, and soon after Longstreet began a retreat up the valley to Morristown. On the 12th of December Gen. Burnside turned over his command to Gen. Foster and left Knoxville. Upon his arrival there in September Gen. S. P. Carter had been appointed provost-marshal of East Tennessee, continuing in that position until the close of the hostilities, discharging the duties of the office with skill and justice.

In the summer of 1864 most of the troops having been withdrawn from Knoxville a regiment of militia was organized for the defense of the town. F. F. Flint was made colonel; F. A. Reeve, lieutenant-colonel; D. G. Thornburg, major; W. R. Patterson, adjutant, and W. J. Perkins,



quartermaster. The companies were commanded as follows: Company A, John Baxter; Company B, W. G. Brownlow; Company C, John Netherland; Company D, E. C. Trigg; Company E, Perez Dickinson; Company F, A. A. Kyle; Company G, John M. Fleming and Company H. Capt. Montgomery, the aggregate number of men being 846.

During the continuance of hostilities in East Tennessee the suffering among the poorer people became intense, and in the fall of 1863, Col. N. G. Taylor visited the North and East to procure money and supplies for these unfortunates. He delivered addresses in all the large cities, and succeeded in arousing the sympathies of the people. Large contributions were made, and in order that the supplies might be properly and systematically distributed it became necessary to form an organization in East Tennessee which was effected at Knoxville on February 8, 1864. Thomas W. Humes was made president; M. M. Miller, treasurer and J. M. Fleming, secretary. The society was known as the East Tennessee Relief Association, and during the three years of its existence received and distributed large quantities of supplies to the needy inhabitants.

The first company recruited in Knox County for service in the Confederate Army was Company E, of the Nineteenth Tennessee Infantry, which was organized in May, 1861, with Dr. John Paxton as captain; John Miller, first lieutenant; George Boyce, second lieutenant; L. B. Graham, third lieutenant, and Samuel Hamilton, orderly sergeant. At the reorganization, one year later, W. W. Lackey became captain; S. Abernathy, first lieutenant; H. A. Waller, second lieutenant, and J. L. Waller, third lieutenant. At the battle of Chickamauga, on September 19, 1863, Capt. Lackey was killed and was succeeded by H. A. Waller. This was the only company in the Nineteenth Regiment raised in Knox County. At the organization it numbered 101 members, but twelve only remained at the close of the war. The regiment was organized at the fair grounds near Knoxville on June 10, 1862, at which time the following officers were chosen: D. H. Cummings, colonel; F. M. Walker, lieutenant-colonel; A. Fulkerson, major; V. Q. Johnson, adjutant; J. D. Taylor, quartermaster; H. M. Doak, sergeant-major; J. E. Dulaney, surgeon; Rev. D. Sullins, chaplain, and W. J. Worsham and Rufus Lamb, chief musicians. A considerable number from this county also joined the Fourth Infantry, under Col. W. M. Churchwell, and also the Thirty-first, under the command of Col. William Bradford. Lieut.-Col. James W. Humes and Sergt.-Maj. James White, of this regiment, were from Knoxville.

Company D, of the Sixty-third Tennessee Infantry, was also partially recruited at Knoxville by Capt. A. A. Blair, in May, 1862. The re-

mainder of the company was from Washington and Hawkins Counties. The officers were A. A. Blair, captain; J. R. McCollum, first lieutenant; J. W. Carter, second lieutenant; J. L. Wilson, third lieutenant, and R. N. Collum, orderly sergeant.

Of the First and Second Regiments of Tennessee Confederate Cavalry, a considerable number were from Knox County. The First Regiment was originally organized as Brazleton's battalion, at Knoxville, in August, 1861. It was composed of seven companies under the command of Lieut.-Col. William Brazleton, with William Bradford as major, and operated in East Tennessee and Kentucky. At the reorganization in the spring of 1862 James E. Carter succeeded Brazleton, and Alonzo Bean became major. At Murfreesboro three more companies were added and the organization completed with James E. Carter as colonel; Alonzo Bean, lieutenant-colonel; Alexander Goforth, major, and J. D. Carter, adjutant. The companies composing the regiment were as follows: Company A, from Rhea County, Capt. Keys; Company B, Hamilton County, Capt. J. B. King; Company C, McMinn and Monroe Counties, Capt. Richard Vandyke; Company D, Rhea and Roane Counties, Capt. Greer; Company E, Knox County, Capt. John Jarnagin; Company F, Claiborne County, Capt. Frank Fulkerson; Company G, Blount County, Capt. Wiggs; Company H, Jefferson County, Capt. Neff; Company I, Blount County, Capt. William Wallace; Company K, Jefferson County, Capt. Richard Swearinger. Later two other companies were added: Company L, from Claiborne County, Capt. Blackburn, and Company M, Washington County, Capt. Ed. Gammon. The regiment was assigned to Pegram's brigade. On the first day of the battle of Murfreesboro it participated in the movement around Rosecrans' army, and on the third day was actively engaged. After the battle it was transferred to East Tennessee, and was at Cumberland Gap when that place was surrendered by Gen. Frazier. Later it participated in several engagements in upper East Tennessee, among which was the battle of Blue Springs; was present at the siege of Knoxville, and remained with Gen. Longstreet during his stay in East Tennessee. In May, 1864, the regiment was dismounted and sent to the valley of Virginia under Gen. William E. Jones to meet the Federal forces under Gen. Hunter. In the battle which took place at Piedmont a severe defeat was sustained, and the regiment lost 150 out of 315 men in killed, wounded and captured. After participating in Early's campaign down the valley to Washington it was again mounted in the fall of 1864, and from that time until after the surrender of Gen. Lee, operated in southwestern Virginia and East Tennessee.

The Second Tennessee Cavalry was organized at Woodson's Gap in the

spring of 1862 by the consolidation of Branner's and McClellan's battalions. The companies forming these battalions previous to that time had acted somewhat independently of each other, and had been engaged in scouting through East Tennessee. They were commanded as follows: Company A, John Kuhn; Company B, John Rogers; Company C, William Ford; Company D, Capt. Owens; Company E, William E. Smith; Company F, Capt. Stone; Company G, Capt. Clark; Company H, ———; Company I, N. C. Langford; Company K, Capt. Gillespie. The regimental officers were H. M. Ashby, colonel; H. C. Gillespie, lieutenant-colonel; P. A. Cobb, major; R. M. Bearden, adjutant, and Charles Coffin, sergeant-major. The regiment was at first placed in Alston's brigade, but during the following fall was transferred to Gen. Pegram's command. Later it was under Col. Scotts and Gen. W. T. C. Humes successively, and finally toward the close of the war Col. Ashby was promoted to the command of the brigade. The regiment from that time was commanded by Capt. Kuhn, acting lieutenant-colonel, with Capt. William E. Smith, acting major. This was one of the most gallant regiments in the army and received many complimentary orders from its commanders. It participated in the battles of Fishing Creek, Shiloh (a detachment), Perryville, Murfreesboro, Chickamauga and the Atlanta campaigns. It was with Wheeler on his raid into Tennessee during that campaign. Afterward it opposed Sherman on his march through Georgia and the Carolinas, and finally surrendered near Greensboro, N. C. The greater portion of the troops from Knox County in this regiment were in Company I. W. W. Gibbs, who served as third lieutenant in Ashby's company of Branner's battalion, afterward, in the spring of 1863, organized a company of scouts which saw much hard service in East Tennessee.

Four batteries of light artillery were raised for the Confederate service in Knox County. In the spring of 1861 H. L. W. McClung organized a company of 120 men, of which E. S. McClung was senior first lieutenant; A. Allison, junior first lieutenant; William Lewis, senior second lieutenant, and David G. Jackson, junior second lieutenant. The battery consisted of six pieces—four smooth-bore six-pounders, and two twelve pound howitzers. The company was ordered into Kentucky where it participated in the battle of Fishing Creek, after which it joined A. S. Johnston's army and was present at the battle of Shiloh. As a part of Breckinridge's division it was at Vicksburg during the first bombardment. It then accompanied the division to East Tennessee, where it spent several months guarding the bridge at Loudon and at Carter's Station. Later it did guard duty at Saltville, Va. A detail of two guns



from this battery and two from another under the command of Lieut. Allison were present with Morgan when he was killed at Greenville, on September 4, 1864, and under Vaughn the battery participated in the fight at Morristown, where Capt McClung and Lieut. Allison were both captured. The remainder of the company took part in the battle at Bull Run, Tenn., and finally surrendered under Gen. Johnston at Bentonville, N. C.

The Rhett Artillery, or Burrough's battery, was organized in June, 1861, by W. H. Burroughs and James C. Luttrell, who were elected captain and senior first lieutenant respectively. The other officers were G. A. Huwald, junior first lieutenant; J. E. Blackwell, senior second lieutenant, and J. J. Burroughs, junior second lieutenant. The battery was first stationed at Cumberland Gap, but upon Kirby Smith's raid into Kentucky it joined his command, and was present at the battles of Richmond and Perryville. After their return to Knoxville, a disagreement arose between Capt. Burroughs and Lieut. Luttrell, the former wishing to resume guard duty, and the latter to continue in active service. Finally, Capt. Burroughs, with the battery, was ordered to Cumberland Gap, and was continued in that vicinity until the close of the war. Lieut. Luttrell was given a detail from the Brigade battery, and, until the surrender at Greensboro, N. C., was engaged in active service under Gens. Pegram, Wheeler and Forrest, successively.

Kain's battery was organized in March, 1862, with W. C. Kain as captain; Thomas O'Conner, senior first lieutenant; Hugh L. White, junior first lieutenant; James Newman, senior second lieutenant; W. C. Danner, junior second lieutenant; and about 125 noncommissioned officers and privates. They proceeded to Chattanooga, where they received their guns and equipment, after which they marched to Bridgeport, and there participated in their first battle. They then engaged in a raid to Winchester, returning across the Cumberland Mountains to Loudon, where they did guard duty for a short time. Late in 1862 one section of two guns was detached under Lieut. White and sent to Murfreesboro, where it participated in the battle. It soon after rejoined the battery at Knoxville, which, under the command of Lieut. O'Conner, marched to Cumberland Gap, where the entire company (with the exception of nine men) were surrendered on September 9, 1863, and sent to Camp Douglass, from which only thirty-two returned alive at the end of the war.

Huwald's battery was organized with G. A. Huwald, captain; G. B. Ramsey, first lieutenant; William Martin, second lieutenant, and Charles McClung, third lieutenant, and numbered about ninety men. It operated in East Tennessee with Pegram's brigade until after the evacuation,

when it went to Chattanooga and participated in the battle of Chickamauga. It afterward, at Dalton, Ga., was consolidated with Scott's battery, from Louisiana, after which the officers were G. A. Huwald, captain; G. B. Ramsey, senior first lieutenant; John Turner, junior first lieutenant; — Leftwich, senior second lieutenant; Robert Vestal, junior second lieutenant. It participated actively in the Atlanta campaign, and lost one section by capture at Beaver Creek. The remainder of the company continued on through Georgia, and at the time of the surrender were at Aiken, S. C. There they sold the horses, guns, etc., at auction; divided the money among themselves, and returned home. While on the Atlanta campaign, Lieuts. Ramsey and Turner fought a duel in which the latter received a mortal wound. Afterward Huwald was suspended for playing cards with his private soldiers, and Ramsey then assumed command.

As nearly all of the Union regiments from East Tennessee were organized in Kentucky from bands of refugees very few full companies were made up of men from any one county. It is impossible, therefore, to classify them by counties with any degree of accuracy. Of the First Tennessee Cavalry, Company C was composed chiefly of men from Knox County. This regiment was organized at Camp Garber, Ky., March 1, 1862, as the Fourth Infantry, and so continued until November 1 of that year, when it was transferred to the cavalry service. The first regimental officers were Robert Johnson, colonel; James P. Brownlow, lieutenant-colonel; James O. Berry, major and John Hall adjutant. Afterward, in the cavalry service, M. T. Burkhart and William R. Tracy became majors, but in the summer of 1863 were succeeded by Russell Thornburgh and Calvin M. Dyer, both of whom subsequently became lieutenant-colonels. Henry G. Flagg and Birton Smith were also promoted to the rank of major. The former in August, 1863, and the latter in July, 1864.

Company C was organized by James P. Brownlow, who, upon being chosen lieutenant-colonel, was succeeded by M. T. Burkhart. The latter in a few months was raised to the rank of major, and the command devolved upon Elbert J. Cannon. The final captain of the company was Jacob K. Lones, who was commissioned in December, 1863. John Roberts and James H. Smith both successively held the rank of second and first lieutenants. The whole number of men who enlisted in this company was 122, of whom 41 were killed or died of wounds or disease. The Second, Third, Fourth, and Ninth Cavalries also contained a considerable number of Knox County men.

Of the infantry regiments the Third and Sixth were most largely composed of men from Knox County, although it was well represented in the

First, Second and Eighth. The companies in the Third, organized in whole or in part from Knox County men, were D, F, H, and I. Company D was organized February 10, 1862, with John O'Keefe, captain; W. C. Robinson, first lieutenant; S. L. King, second lieutenant and W. C. Brandon, orderly sergeant. The officers of Company F were J. L. Ledgerwood, captain; James Clapp, first lieutenant; C. Rutherford, second lieutenant and C. Zachary, orderly sergeant. Company H, J. W. Adkinson, captain; J. G. Roberts, first lieutenant, and W. W. Adkinson, second lieutenant. Soon after the organization, J. G. Roberts became captain, and E. C. Roberts, first lieutenant. Company I was organized with E. D. Willis as captain; W. L. Ledgerwood, first lieutenant; J. H. Ellis, second lieutenant, and R. Bince, orderly sergeant; later, by promotion, W. L. Ledgerwood became captain; J. H. Ellis, first lieutenant and J. C. Bayless, second lieutenant.

Of the Sixth Tennessee Infantry, all but two companies, E and F, were recruited mainly from Knox County men. Company A was organized with A. M. Gamble, captain; Thomas D. Edington, first lieutenant, and V. F. Gossett, second lieutenant. In August, 1862, Capt. Gamble was raised to the rank of major, and the remaining officers were regularly promoted; W. W. Dunn becoming second lieutenant. Company B was organized by Spencer Deaton, with James M. Armstrong, first lieutenant; Thomas A. Smith, second lieutenant, and William D. Atchley, orderly sergeant. In May, 1864, Lieut. Armstrong was promoted to the command of the company. The officers of Company C at the organization were Rufus M. Bennett, captain; John P. Baryar, first lieutenant; William L. Lea, second lieutenant, and Joseph A. E. Blang, orderly sergeant. March, 1863, Lieut. Lea became captain, but on the 6th of August, 1864, was killed, and was succeeded by Adam T. Cottrell. At about the same time G. L. Maloney was made first lieutenant and John M. Berry, second lieutenant. Company D was organized by M. D. Bearden with S. L. Gilson, first lieutenant; Thomas Parham, second lieutenant, and William N. Price, orderly sergeant. In January, 1863, James H. Coleman became first lieutenant. He was succeeded in July, 1864, by J. L. Turner. F. B. Nicholl also served as second lieutenant. Company E was from Claiborne County, and was commanded by William Ausmus. Archibald Meyers was captain of Company F, which was from Campbell County. The organization of Company G was as follows: Francis H. Bounds, captain; A. E. Murphy, first lieutenant; A. M. Cate second lieutenant and Ignaz Fanz, orderly sergeant. Only eight companies were organized. The regimental officers upon organization were Joseph A. Cooper, colonel; Edward Maynard, lieutenant-colonel; William C. Pickens, major;



H. W. Parks, adjutant; William Rule, commissary sergeant, and T. T. Thornburgh, sergeant-major. In August, 1862, William C. Pickens was succeeded by A. M. Gamble, and in December, 1863, William Rule became adjutant. Thornburgh was also succeeded by Thomas L. Trewhitt.

One company of the Seventh Regiment of Mounted Infantry was recruited in Knox County. The officers were Charles W. Cross, captain; T. L. B. Huddleston, first lieutenant; S. D. Whitton, second lieutenant, and E. E. Longmire, orderly sergeant.

As has been stated, James White removed from his first location in the fork in 1786, and with James Conner began a settlement in the vicinity of what has since become the city of Knoxville. The first ground cleared by them is said to have been the lot upon which the First Presbyterian Church now stands, but this was not the site of their cabin, which was on the west side of First Creek, just north of where Union Street now is. The strength of the settlement thus begun had so far increased in 1791 as to induce Gov. Blount to fix upon it as the seat of the Territorial government. Early in that year he removed from the fork of the Holston and Watauga Rivers, where he had been located since assuming his official position, and took up his residence on a knoll between the hill upon which the university stands and the river. A few small buildings for the reception of government stores were erected near the mouth of First Creek, and it was in that vicinity that the treaty of Holston was held on the 2d day of the following July.

Although the town was not laid off until in February, 1792, the first number of the *Knoxville Gazette*, issued November 5, 1791, contains a notice of an agreement entered into on October 3 of that year, by James White, the proprietor of the town, and John Adair, Paul Cunningham and George McNutt, commissioners on the part of subscribers for lots, by the terms of which subscribers were to pay a uniform price, and after all the lots had been taken, they were to be assigned by lottery. It is probable, however, that this scheme was never carried out, as no other mention of it could be found. The following account of the founding of the town, written by Hugh Dunlap, is probably accurate: "At the treaty of Holston, in 1791, there were no houses except shanties put up for the occasion to hold government stores. Gen. James White lived in the neighborhood, and had a blockhouse to guard his family. At the treaty they used river water entirely, until Trooper Armstrong (James Armstrong) discovered the spring to the right of the street leading from the courthouse to what is now (1842) called "Hardscrabble." He at the time requested Gen. White, as a great favor, to let him have a lot including the spring when the town was laid off. The General granted his

request, and after the town was surveyed made him a deed to the lot. These facts were told me by Gen. White himself, for I was not present at the treaty. I left Philadelphia with my goods in December, 1791, and did not reach Knoxville until about the 1st of February, 1792. I deposited my goods, and kept store in a house used by the Government at the treaty. At the time of my arrival in the town Samuel and Nathaniel Cowan had goods there. John Chisolm kept a house of entertainment, and a man by the name of McLemee was living there. These men with their families constituted the inhabitants of Knoxville at that time. Gov. Blount lived on Barbara Hill, a knoll between College Hill and the river. It was then approached from the town by a path following the meanders of the river. The land upon which Knoxville is built belonged to Gen. White. In February, 1792, Col. Charles McClung surveyed the lots, and laid off the town. I do not remember on what day of the month, it excited no particular interest at the time. The whole town was then a thicket of brushwood and grapevine, except a small portion in front of the river where all the business was done. There never was any regular public sale of lots. Gen. White sold anybody a lot for eight dollars who would settle upon it and improve it."

The new town was called Knoxville in honor of Gen. Henry Knox, then Secretary of War. As the county had not been laid off, no county buildings were at first erected, but lots for a courthouse and jail were reserved by Gen. White. He also set apart a lot for the erection of a house of worship, and two years later donated an entire square for the use of Blount College. This was the square bounded by Gay, Church, Clinch and State Streets.

In 1793 a detachment of United States troops, under command of Capt. Carr, arrived and erected a barrack upon the lot now occupied by the new courthouse. This was a somewhat extensive structure built of logs notched closely together, and extending from Main Street toward the river. The second story projected two feet on every side beyond the walls of the first. In both stories, and in the floor of the second, port holes were left at suitable distances. The square around was cleared of everything that might give protection to an assailant.

Nearly all of the merchants were at first located on State Street. Nathaniel and Samuel Cowan's store stood at the corner of State and Front Streets, opposite Chisolm's tavern. After a year or two the partnership between them was dissolved, and Nathaniel removed to the country. At about the same time a third brother, James Cowan, opened a store near State Street above Main. During the latter part of 1792 Titus Ogden, a merchant and a paymaster of troops and of Indian annuities,

arrived and established a store on State Street. He died about a year later and was buried on College Hill.

The commercial importance of the town increased quite rapidly, and during the next two or three years stores were opened by James and Samuel Miller, James Ore, John Sommerville & Co., Charles McClung, Alexander Carmichael and Stephen Duncan, several of whom, however, remained in business but a short time. The last named a few years later was convicted of murder, and with an accomplice was executed at Knoxville.

Next in importance to the merchant was the tavern keeper. John Chisolm as the pioneer landlord soon had several competitors, and in order to maintain the rates he adopted the modern plan and formed a combination. In the *Gazette* of December 17, 1792, John Chisolm, Alexander Carmichael, John Wood and Peter McNamee inform the public that they have opened houses of entertainment in Knoxville upon the following terms: "breakfast and supper, one shilling each; dinner, one shilling and sixpence; constant boarders, \$2 per week; whisky, six pence per one half pint."

In 1794 the Territorial Assembly convened in Knoxville. The council held its sessions in the barrack, and the House sometimes in another room of the barrack, but occasionally at Carmichael's tavern at the corner of Cumberland and State Streets. The joint conferences were held in the courthouse. As the seat of government, Knoxville attained an importance not common to frontier villages of a few years' growth. Its society, too, possessed an air of unusual refinement. This was due in a great measure to the influence of Gov. Blount and his wife, Mary Grainger—more to that of the latter perhaps, than of the former. Soon after the town was surveyed the Governor erected a house at the corner of State and Hill Streets, where he dispensed to all an elegant hospitality. Mrs. Blount was an accomplished lady of noble mind and gentle disposition, and from her presence emanated a certain grace and dignity which did much to soften and refine the manners of the pioneer inhabitants. She became a universal favorite, and to show the high esteem in which she was held a fort, a town and a county, were successively named in her honor.

The constitutional convention of 1796 assembled in the office of David Henley, an agent of the war department, a small building in the outskirts of the town. The population of Knoxville at this time had increased somewhat, but as is well known, there were not to exceed forty houses in the place, and these without exception were built of logs. The merchants then in business were Col. McClellan, John Nicholls, James and Samuel Cowan and John Crozier. That the place



was one of considerable resort is evident from the fact that it supported five taverns. The largest of these stood on the present site of Schubert's Hotel, and was owned by John Stone.

The town continued to improve slowly, both in wealth and population. In 1810 there was a population of about 400, and a few brick houses had been built. Among the merchants who located in the town during the first decade of the present century were Thomas Humes, James Dardis, James and William Park and Calvin G. and R. Morgan, all of whom became substantial and influential citizens. Mr. Humes came to Knoxville from Mossy Creek, and opened a store at the northeast corner of Gay and Main Streets. Just before his death, which occurred in 1816, he erected what was known as the City Hotel, now a part of the Lamar House. James and William Park occupied the site of Stone's tavern at the corner of Cumberland and Gay Streets, where they continued for many years. James Dardis was located on Cumberland Street, west of the City Hotel. The Morgans, whose store was at the corner of Cumberland and Crozier Streets, did the largest business. They also owned a large tract of land north of Clinch Street.

Other merchants previous to 1820 were Haynie & Jackson, Z. Booth, Samuel Roberts, Bowen & Davis, J. H. Cowan & Co., Charles McClung, & Son, David Nelson, King & Whitson and Anthony & Conway.

On October 20, 1811, the Bank of Tennessee was incorporated, and one year later it went into operation with Hugh L. White as president, and Luke Lea as cashier. The board of directors was composed of John Crozier, James Park, David Campbell, Calvin Morgan, John Hillsman, Robert King and James Dardis. The bank building stood on the northwest corner of Main and Gay Streets. The bank continued in operation until 1828, when it began to close up its affairs. In 1820 a State bank was established at Nashville, with a branch at Knoxville. This institution was located at the corner of Crozier and Cumberland Streets. The cashier was James Campbell, "Scotch Jimmy." It never did a very extensive business, and was closed out in 1833.

In 1809 the Knoxville Water Company was incorporated by the Legislature. The members of the company were John Crozier, Josiah Nicholl, James and William Park, Richard Bearden, George W. Campbell, Thomas Humes, Nathaniel Cowan, John Williams, Pleasant M. Miller, James Dardis, Thomas Dardis, John N. Gamble, James Trimble, Edward Scott, Robert Craighead, Charles McClung and three or four others. Wooden pipes, or rather logs bored through the center, from end to end, were laid to bring the water from what is known as McCampbell's Spring, situated about two miles north of town. The pipes not being strong

enough to sustain the pressure, this plan did not prove a success, and it was soon abandoned. In 1814 John Craighead obtained permission from the county court to make a cistern or reservoir in the courthouse yard. Pipes were to be laid to a point on First Creek near its mouth, and by means of a water wheel water was to be forced into the reservoir, and thence distributed over the town. This system, however, was never put into operation.

In 1830 Knoxville contained a population of about 1,500. The merchants at that time were James and William Park, M. and H. McClung, Hon. A. M. White, James H. Cowan, S. T. Jacobs, Calvin Morgan & Son, D. P. Armstrong, Robert King & Son, A. McMillan, E. Williams, John Crozier, Zach. Booth, Samuel Roberts & Son, William Lindsey and William Bowen. At this time but little wholesale business was done. Goods were mostly bought in Baltimore and Philadelphia, and hauled in large wagons the entire distance, at a cost of from \$5 to \$6 per 100 pounds. The wagons carried from two to three tons, and on the outgoing trips were loaded with ginseng, feathers and other produce. About 1835 a canal was completed to Lynchburg, Va., and that became a shipping point for Knoxville. At nearly the same time steamboats began plying regularly between Knoxville and Decatur, Ala., and the heavier goods were received in that way. They reached Decatur by rail from Tusculum, the head of navigation in the Tennessee River below the shoals. It was at this time that the jobbing trade of Knoxville began to assume importance. The pioneers in that business were McClung, Wallace & Co., Cowan & Dickinson, G. M. Hazen & Co. and Robert King & Son, in dry goods, and James King, McClung & French and Bearden & White in groceries. The town soon became the distributing point for all of East Tennessee, western North Carolina, southwestern Virginia and a part of Kentucky. No traveling salesmen were employed, but merchants from the country and surrounding towns came to Knoxville twice a year to replenish their stocks. Dry goods were usually sold on six month's credit, with the privilege of six months more with interest; groceries were sold on shorter time. The steamboat trade increased rapidly, and at one time there were no less than eighteen boats plying between Knoxville and other points on the river. The leading firms engaged in the business were James and William Williams, McClung and French, Bearden & White and James King & Co.

Among the retail dealers of this period were M. M. Gaines, A. G. Jackson, Crozier & Deaderick, McMullan & McElrath.

In 1833 a branch of the Union Bank of Nashville was opened in a building which stood in Cumberland Street, about where the office of

Schuberts Hotel now is; Andrew McMillan was the cashier. In 1837 the building on Main Street was erected, and the bank continued in operation there until the war. The successors of McMillan were Hugh A. M. White and J. J. Craig.

In 1838 Knoxville suffered severely from a fever, somewhat resembling yellow fever in its effect, which became epidemic. Some parts of the town had experienced an unusual amount of sickness during the two previous years, but it did not excite much alarm. The summer of 1838, which was unusually hot and dry, fully developed the disease. It appeared in June, reached its height in September, and disappeared upon the approach of cold weather. It pervaded the whole town, and over one hundred persons fell victims to the scourge. The disease was not well understood by physicians, but it was supposed to have been caused by the miasma arising from the large deposits of decomposing matter which had accumulated in the mill ponds surrounding the town, and which, during the drought, had become exposed to the sun. To prevent a recurrence of the disease the ponds were declared nuisances, and the dams were removed.

In 1854 the city was visited by cholera, which became epidemic in nearly all the towns of the State. In 1838 Knoxville had escaped an attack, but this year it suffered severely. The first victim was Col. John McClellan, a brother of Gen. Geo. B. McClellan, who died on the 30th of August. He belonged to the United State's Army, and was stationed at this point in charge of some Government work on the river. A number of other cases quickly followed, and nearly all proved fatal. It did not spread over all the town, however, but was confined principally to Main Street and the part nearest to the river.

The celebration of the semi-centennial anniversary of the settlement of Knoxville, which occurred on the 10th of February, 1842, forms a memorable event in the history of the town. Almost the entire population of the town and surrounding country were present. The officers of the occasion were Matthew McClung, president; James Park, Robert King, M. D. Bearden, W. B. A. Ramsey, David Campbell, I. B. Havelly, Calvin Morgan, Samuel Bell, H. A. M. White, Moses Lindsey, J. E. S. Blackwell and J. H. Cowan, vice-presidents, and D. P. Armstrong, Marshal. Thomas W. Humes, the orator of the day, delivered an eloquent address reviewing the early history of Knoxville, after which a large company of ladies and gentlemen repaired to the City Hotel, where a sumptuous dinner was in readiness. After dinner the chairman of the committee of arrangements, Maj. E. Alexander, read the following regular toasts.





*F. C. Beaman*  
KNOX.



The Day we have Assembled to Commemorate—"Hallowed by recollections of the dangers and privations of a past generation, may it be a festival in all time to come."

The Early Settlers of Knoxville—"Honored be their memories, and gratified our recollections of their perseverance, their courage, and their fortitude."

The Historical and Antiquarian Society of East Tennessee—"Formed for the purpose of collecting and preserving facts connected with the settlement and early history of Tennessee, may its success be commensurate with the object."

A large number of volunteer toasts and responses followed. The celebration was conducted upon strictly temperance principles, and no wine was served. Rev. William Mack offered the following toast—The Town Spring of Knoxville—"Grateful, sparkling and free, cold water, pure water, bright water for me."

Among those who participated in the exercises were Thomas A. R. Nelson, Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey and Horace Maynard.

The celebration closed with a ball at the Mansion House.

The decade from 1850 to 1860 was characterized by greater activity and growth than any similar period in the history of the town previous to that time. This was due mainly to the opening of the East Tennessee & Virginia and the East Tennessee & Georgia Railroads, which led to the establishment of some extensive manufactories, and considerably augmented the volume of trade. The wholesale business at this time was carried on principally by Cowan & Dickinson, McClung, Wallace & Co., and Walker, O'Keef & Co., dealers in dry goods and general merchandise, and Wallace & McPherson, Harvey Ault, and C. Powell & Co., grocers.

A short time previous to the war the first two named firms united under the name of Cowan, McClung & Co. They also did the largest retail business in the town. Other retail dealers were A. G. Jackson & Co., Plumlee Bros. and Boyd & Piper, dry goods; T. G. Rollins and James C. Moses & Bro., hardware; Dixon & Whitaker and T. J. Powell, insurance; Ed. Armistead, hats and caps; John S. Van Gilder, boots and shoes, Rayl & Vanuxem, books and stationery; Ricardi Bros., confectionery; Byrne & Elliott and Strong & Stevenson, drugs.

This period was also remarkable for the large number of banking institutions established.

Cowan & Dickinson obtained a charter for the Bank of East Tennessee, which they soon after sold to a Mr. Fiske, of New Orleans. About 1852 William M. Churchwell became president, and under his manage-



ment a system of wild speculation and over-issue was inaugurated, which resulted in its downfall in 1856. The cashier was Samuel Morrow, who afterward, in company with John Baxter, established the Exchange and Deposit Bank.

In 1852 the Miners & Manufacturers Bank was founded by Joseph L. King and William Goodrich. It occupied the old State Bank building at the corner of Gay and Main Streets.

In 1859 the Branners (John R., William A., George M., Joseph and Benjamin) purchased the charter of the Ocoee Bank, of Cleveland, Tenn., and removed it to Knoxville, where it was opened in the building now occupied by the People's Bank. Of this institution John R. Branner was president and Joseph R. Mitchell, cashier. In 1854 the Bank of Knoxville was organized by John L. Moses, Joseph H. Walker and A. L. Maxwell. The following year it was sold to Hugh A. M. White and George M. White. The Farmers Bank was established by Hugh L. McClung in about 1854. He sold it to Shepherd & Wheless, of Nashville, who continued it for two or three years, after which it was consolidated with the Ocoee Bank.

About 1857 a branch of the State Bank was opened in the building now occupied by the Mechanics National Bank, with John H. Crozier as president, and M. B. McMahan, cashier. Mr. Crozier was soon after succeeded by Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey. Notwithstanding the number of other banking institutions this bank, with the Union Bank, did the greater part of the business.

In the preceding pages no mention has been made of the many minor industrial enterprises established in Knoxville during her earlier history, which, of small importance in themselves, were necessary to the welfare of the town, and deserve notice in this chapter. Among the earliest settlers in the town was the firm of Lord & McCoy, who sank a tanyard on Second Creek in 1793, and in 1795 a saddler's shop was opened by John and Robert Hunter. The next year a second shop was established by John Lavender. Grist-mills were early erected throughout the county, and soon scarcely a stream was without one or more upon its banks. During the first eighteen months after organization of the county the county court granted no less than twelve permits for the building of grist and saw mills. Although all the manufacturing industries were conducted on an extremely small scale, their number and variety were much greater than at the present time. Excepting some of the finer dress materials, nearly every article worn or used was supplied by domestic manufacture. The hatter, the shoemaker and the tailor furnished the clothing, while the cabinet-maker and the blacksmith supplied the

household utensils. In enumerating the industries of Knoxville in 1830 the *Tennessee Gazetteer* names two spinning factories, ten carding machines, four grist-mills, three saw mills, one brass foundry, six blacksmith shops, two cabinet-makers, three hatters, six saddlers, eight shoe-makers, one tinner, five tanners, two coach-makers and two wagon-makers. The foundry mentioned in the above list was established on Second Creek, near Churchwell Street, by William Morse, who also operated a spinning factory and blacksmith shop. After running a few years the entire plant was destroyed by fire. The other spinning factory was built by Nathaniel Bosworth on the same creek, a little higher up, and was somewhat extensive, employing from fifteen to twenty hands. This continued until 1838. In 1833 William Oldham built a cotton spinning factory on First Creek, between Church and Cumberland. The machinery for this mill he hauled in wagons from Lexington, Ky., across the Cumberland Mountains. It was a small establishment, containing only about 300 spindles, and was run entirely by water power. He was preparing to increase its capacity in 1838, when the destruction of the mill dams rendered it useless. He then removed his machinery to Blount County, and established what is now known as the Rockford Mills.

For several years after the settlement of the county cotton was one of the staple productions of Knox County. About 1820, however, its cultivation began to decline, and by the end of that decade it had practically ceased. Probably the first cotton-gin ever erected in Knoxville was built by Calvin Morgan, and stood on Gay Street, near where the Insurance Building now is. A second one was built and operated on Second Creek by a Mr. McCulloch. Wool-carding machines were common throughout the county. The earliest one in the vicinity of Knoxville was put in operation in 1816, by James Scott on First Creek, about two miles above its mouth. This continued in use up to the war. Another was set up and run for a time near where Bosworth's factory stood.

Of the five tanyards in 1830 one was owned by William Morrow, and was situated on First Creek, at the crossing of Cumberland Street. John Webb had one nearly on the opposite side of the street. A third, owned by Robert Lindsey, was located at the east end of Clinch Street, while Rutherford & White operated one on Second Creek, where Caswell's furniture factory now stands. In 1850 F. A. R. Scott built a small oil mill on Second Creek, and the following year opened a tannery in connection with it. In 1853 he sold the mill and tannery to M. B. McMahan, who continued to operate the latter until 1860, when he was succeeded by an incorporated company. During the war John S. Van

Gilder, who was then extensively engaged in the manufacture of boots and shoes, obtained control of it, and in 1865 he was joined by Mr. Scott. These two gentlemen have since continued the business under the name of the Knoxville Leather Company. The cabinet shops were run by Lones & McCroskey and Terence McAffry. The former was situated on the lot where C. W. Park now lives, and the latter on Cumberland Street, between Henley and High. Some time about 1820 a chair factory was erected on Gay Street, about where Ogden Bros.' store now is. It was established by a company of chair-makers from the north, and for a few years furnished a large section of country with chairs. The building stood unoccupied for many years afterward, and served as a target for the small boys, who affected to believe that it was haunted. The first mill in the vicinity of Knoxville was a "tub mill," erected by Gen. James White soon after his settlement. Afterward his son, Moses White, operated a mill on First Creek, near the crossing of Mabry Street, for several years. A second mill was built by John Craighead at the crossing of Main Street, and about 1820 Rufus Morgan built a more extensive one on the same creek. In 1830 the three grist-mills, together with two saw mills on First Creek, were all owned and operated by James and William Kennedy. James Scott also ran a grist-mill in connection with his fulling and carding mill, about two miles farther up the creek.

Previous to 1838 the town was almost entirely surrounded by water and the creeks furnished abundant water power. The depression on the north, now occupied by the depot, was covered with water several feet deep, and was known as the Flag Pond, while on First Creek there were three mill ponds within the space of half a mile. The upper one, known as White's mill pond, extended north and northeast for more than a mile. On Second Creek there were two large ponds. The cutting down of the dams in 1838 drained the ponds, and while they have been partially restored, the water power has never been equal to what it was before that time.

About 1855 a large steam flouring-mill was built upon the site of the Knoxville Rolling Mill, by M. W. Williams, but it was soon after destroyed by fire. It was succeeded by the Knoxville City Mills, on Broad Street, which were recently abandoned. In 1859 F. A. R. Scott and J. C. Deaderick erected what is known as the Trio Mill, on First Creek, which has since been in constant operation.

In 1838 Gideon M. Hazen and M. D. Bearden erected a paper-mill at Middle Brook, three and one-half miles from the city, which was continued until 1886, when the breaking of the dam caused its suspension. It was run about seven months in the year by water power, and the



remainder of the time by steam and water power combined. For the past ten years it has been owned and operated by J. A. Rayl and Samuel McKinney, and it will probably be repaired and set in operation again.

The first manufacturing enterprise, upon anything like a modern scale, was established by A. L. Maxwell, who came from New York in 1852, and erected a large machine shop at the corner of Broad Street and the railroad. Mr. Maxwell, who was the senior member of the firm of Maxwell, Briggs & Co., was very extensively engaged in bridge building throughout the South, and designed this shop to supply the iron work for the Howe truss bridges which he was erecting. The building was completed, and the concern went into operation in June, 1853, employing from 200 to 250 hands. Two years later, finding that the bridge material could be furnished more advantageously from Richmond, Va., an interest in the establishment was sold to some Vermont parties, and the Knoxville Manufacturing Company was formed for the purpose of building engines, boilers, etc. This business was continued until just before the war, when the shops were closed, and Mr. Maxwell again took possession of the property.

In 1852 Williams, Moffett & Co. erected a foundry and stove factory on Second Creek, near the present site of the Knoxville Leather Company's works. They employed considerable capital, and for the time did quite an extensive business. In 1856 the establishment was transferred to the firm of Shepard, Leeds & Hoyt, who two years before had built a foundry and car works on the ground now occupied by the railroad shops. They invested a capital of about \$20,000, and employed from twenty to thirty hands in the manufacture of cars, car wheels, agricultural implements and plows. In this business Mr. Maxwell successively purchased the interest of Messrs. Leeds, Hoyt and Shepard, until in 1861 he became the sole proprietor. During the siege in 1863, the entire plant along the railroad was destroyed by fire, entailing a loss upon the proprietor of some \$250,000.

The advent of the civil war marks the beginning of a new era in the history of Knoxville. At that time she contained a population of about 3,000 souls, representing a growth of nearly seventy years. As a commercial center she had attained no little importance, and two or three manufacturing establishments of respectable proportions had been put into operation. Two railroads had also been recently opened, connecting her with the East and West. Yet, if one may judge from the gazeteers and other publications of the time, she was little known outside of Tennessee, other than as the seat of a university and the former capital of the State. Her population had remained remarkably stationary, re-

ceiving only now and then a recruit from the East, in the person of some young professor or teacher. Her citizens, eminently respectable, intelligent, and cultivated, and proud of their splendid traditions and honorable ancestry, had lived to themselves, marrying and giving in marriage until, it is said, nearly every person in the town was related to every other person. Yet it is not to be inferred that these people were devoid of enterprise. Every project looking to the development of the resources of the country was liberally supported. When the Southern Commercial Convention was to be held in Knoxville, the citizens promptly raised \$1,000 to provide for the proper reception and entertainment of the guests. Subscriptions to railroads and other internal improvements were in every case supported by large majorities, and that no greater progress had been made, was due rather to environment, than to the character of the people.

During the progress of the civil war Knoxville reaped her full portion of suffering and loss. Property was destroyed, industry paralyzed and trade scattered. In one respect her position during that struggle was without a parallel among the cities of the South. Her population on the great question of disunion was almost equally divided, and the animosities and feuds engendered were bitter in the extreme. In the early part of the war the disunion element being in the ascendancy, and acting in the heat and excitement of war, oppressed and harassed those who remained loyal to the Union; and when during the last two years the positions of the parties were reversed, acts of retaliation were frequently indulged in. But from the revolution wrought by the war Knoxville has also reaped her full measure of prosperity. During those four years thousands of troops gathered from all parts of the country, visited her historic site, and, like the pioneers who beheld it for the first time three-quarters of a century before, were charmed with the fertility of the soil, the salubrity of the climate and the magnificence of the scenery. The valley of East Tennessee, with all the wealth that nature had lavished upon it, was at last discovered to the world, and when peace was restored many of these veterans returned to make it their home, while former residents entered with spirit upon the work of reconstruction and development. Since that time the growth of Knoxville, in both population and wealth, has been remarkably rapid. In 1870 the population had increased to about 9,000; during the next decade it was nearly doubled, and now, on January 1, 1887, it falls little short of 30,000. At the beginning of 1865 less than \$20,000 of manufacturing capital remained; now not less than \$2,500,000 are invested in the various industrial enterprises of the city.

In commercial operations the growth has been even more rapid. The following carefully prepared statement of the trade of Knoxville was made in 1886: Iron and nail, \$500,000; stoves and tinware, \$25,000; woolen goods, \$140,000; cotton goods, \$125,000; dry goods, \$1,500,000; clothing, \$600,000; boots, shoes and hats, \$1,000,000; groceries, \$2,000,000; queensware, \$200,000; books and stationery, \$100,000; drugs and paints, \$400,000; candy, \$50,000; leather, \$100,000; harness and saddlery, \$300,000; furniture, \$125,000; agricultural implements, \$300,000; timber and lumber, \$800,000; sash, doors and blinds, \$100,000; ax and hammer handles, \$50,000; wagons and buggies, \$25,000; engines and boilers, \$200,000; cars and car-wheels, \$400,000; foundry and machine works, \$50,000; marble and coal, \$1,000,000; zinc spelter, \$100,000; a total of \$11,285,000.

It is universally conceded that no other city of equal size in America has so large a wholesale trade as Knoxville. The area tributary to this city embraces, in whole or in part, the States of Tennessee, Kentucky, Virginia, North and South Carolina, Georgia and Alabama, while in some lines it includes the entire South. Nearly all the firms are backed by abundant capital, and are controlled by competent, progressive and practical men.

Among the wholesale houses of the present time that of Cowan, McClung & Co., which has previously been mentioned, is the largest as well as the oldest. Formerly they carried a general stock, embracing almost every article sold by the country dealer, but during the last few years, they have confined themselves to dry goods, notions, boots and shoes, in which they have a trade of many hundred thousand dollars annually. Their present, large, four-story, business block was erected in 1870, and they now carry, probably, the largest stock of goods in the country. The individuals comprising the firm are P. Dickinson, F. H. McClung, Matt McClung, C. J. McClung, J. D. Cowan, R. M. Rhea and J. L. Thomas.

The house of Briscoes, Swepson & Co. was founded by George & Briscoe in 1882. The present firm is composed of Daniel Briscoe, P. J. Briscoe, R. R. Swepson, M. D. Arnold, S. C. Roney. They employ seven traveling salesmen, and do a business approximating \$1,000,000 annually. Their stock, embracing dry goods, notions, boots and shoes, is very large and complete, and their salesrooms are among the finest in the city.

McNulty & Borches carry a stock similar to the above firms with the addition of carpets and groceries and do both a wholesale and retail business. They occupy a four-story building, 85x100 feet, and give employment to thirty-two people. Their trade reaches half a million dollars



annually. The individuals composing the firm are F. McNulty and J. W. Borches.

Since June, 1886, Knoxville has had two wholesale firms dealing exclusively in hats and caps. They are S. H. George & Co. and Davis & Walker, both of which were formed upon the dissolution of the firm of George & Davis. The former consisted of S. H. George, John McMillan and S. C. Dismukes, and the latter, J. R. Davis and M. H. Walker. Both carry large stocks of goods, and do a flourishing business.

Two firms also deal exclusively in boots and shoes. Haynes, Henson & Co. began business in 1878, and until recently handled hats and caps. They occupy a large, three-story building, and carry a complete stock of goods, embracing all grades from the heaviest to the finest.

McMillan, Hazen & Co. began business in 1884 as the successors of R. S. Payne & Co., a firm established in 1870. The individual members are E. E. McMillan, Asa Hazen, M. S. McClellan and Lytton Thomas. Five men are constantly on the road selling their goods, and their annual transactions amount to several hundred thousand dollars.

The firm of McTeers, Payne, Burger & Hood, is one of the most extensive wholesale clothing and gents' furnishing goods houses in the South. They have a trade throughout Kentucky, Virginia, Tennessee, Georgia, Alabama, the Carolinas and Mississippi, amounting to over half a million dollars annually. The business was established by J. T. McTeer in 1876. The present firm is composed of J. T. and C. E. McTeer, R. S. Payne, C. Burger and W. H. Hood.

Sample, Andes & Co. is the style of a firm that recently engaged in the wholesale notion business. They occupy one of the finest houses in the city, and carry as complete a stock as can be found in any similar establishment in the country. The members of the firm are J. C. Sample, George S. Andes, I. E. Dooley and R. Annan.

The wholesale grocery trade is greater than that of any other line. One of the oldest houses in this business is that of Cone, Shields & Co., which was established in 1867 by Coffin, Martin & Co. The individual members of the present firm are C. and M. A. Cone, J. S. Shields and J. T. Shields, Jr. They carry a large and complete stock of staple and fancy groceries, and have extended their trade throughout a radius of 200 miles from Knoxville.

H. B. Carhart & Co. do an annual business approximating half a million dollars, and give employment to fifteen men, of whom six are traveling salesmen. The business was founded in 1877 by Lewis & Carhart, who were succeeded in January, 1884 by the present firm, consisting of H. B., W. B. and W. E. Carhart. They also conduct a similar business in New York City, under the style of Carhart & Bro.

The house now conducted by Condon Bros. was established in 1870 by Williams & Zimmerman, who were succeeded by the present firm, consisting of Michael J., Stephen P. and Martin J. Condon, in 1880. All are men of practical experience and business ability, and they have built up a large trade throughout East Tennessee and contiguous territory.

The firm of W. B. Lockett & Co. was formed in October, 1883, and consists of W. B. Lockett, Sr., W. B. Lockett, Jr., R. S. Hazen and J. O. Lotspeich. They employ six traveling salesmen, and their annual transactions amount to nearly half a million dollars.

The house of M. L. Ross & Co. was established in 1870 by Carpenter, Ross & Co., who conducted the business successfully until 1879, when they were succeeded by M. L. Ross and W. B. Lockett. In 1883 W. B. Lockett was succeeded by S. B. Dow. They do a very large grocery business, employing five traveling salesmen, and also run a candy factory, which enjoys a good trade.

Knaffl & Locke do an extensive wholesale business. The enterprise in which they are engaged was founded in 1876 by Anderson & McNulty, who were succeeded by the present firm, composed of Rudolph Knaffl and E. C. Locke, in 1881.

Knoxville contains two mammoth wholesale drug houses which would be a credit to any city. The oldest is that of Sanford, Chamberlin & Albers, which was established by E. J. Sanford & Co. in 1864. From a small beginning they have constantly extended their trade, until now they employ four traveling salesmen, and do a business amounting to \$300,000 annually. They are also extensively engaged in the preparation of proprietary medicines. The present firm, consisting of E. J. Sanford, W. P. Chamberlin and R. J. Albers, was formed in 1870.

The other firm is that of Chapman, White, Lyons & Co., which was organized in January, 1882. They carry a full line of drugs and druggists' sundries, and have a large trade in proprietary medicines which they manufacture. The individual members of the firm are J. E. Chapman, W. O. White, W. L. Lyons and D. K. Young.

Knoxville also contains the largest queensware house in America. It was established by its present proprietors, Curtis, Cullen and C. S. Newman, in 1872. They have a trade in about every town in the South, and their sales amount to many hundred thousand dollars annually. Besides their main office and warerooms in Knoxville, they have branches in New York and Cincinnati, from which they ship direct to their customers.

Of the wholesale dealers in hardware the firm of W. W. Woodruff & Co., does the most extensive business. They employ about twenty-five

men, four of whom are traveling salesmen, and have an annual trade of from \$300,000 to \$400,000. The house was founded by Mr. Woodruff in 1865, and from a modest beginning, through able management, has reached its present proportions. The other members of the present firm, which was formed in 1882, are William E. Gibbons and C. L. Carpenter.

The next oldest house is that of George Brown, which was established in 1869. Mr. Brown was formerly a prominent lawyer, and served one term as circuit judge. He employs several traveling salesmen, and has a large trade in Tennessee, Kentucky, North Carolina, Virginia and Georgia. He carries a general stock of hardware, agricultural implements, and mill machinery.

The firm of S. B. Luttrell & Co., consisting of S. B. and James C. Luttrell, was formed in 1871, and is recognized as one of the most substantial and reliable firms in the city. As an evidence of their high standing throughout the territory tributary to Knoxville they employ no traveling salesman and yet are able to hold their trade against all competition. Their sales to regular customers aggregate \$225,000 per annum, in addition to which, during the past few years, they have furnished an immense amount of supplies to railroad contractors.

In 1880 the firm of McClung, Powell & Co., consisting of C. M. McClung, C. Powell, W. J. McNutt and A. Gredig, succeeded in the hardware line the firm of Cowan, McClung & Co. They increased the stock, added agricultural implements, and continued the business until 1884, when they were succeeded by C. M. McClung, W. P. Smith and W. B. Keener, under the firm name of C. M. McClung & Co. They occupy one of the finest business houses in the city, and carry a large stock of hardware, machinery, and implements of every description. Their annual sales amount to nearly a quarter of a million of dollars annually.

In addition to their jobbing trade nearly all of the above firms sell more or less goods at retail. The wholesale trade in stoves, tinware, etc., is extensive. One of the oldest dealers in this line is J. R. Butt, who began business in 1871, as a member of the firm of Hawkins, Butt & Co. In 1875 the firm was changed to Butt, De Pue & Co., and so continued until 1884 when the partnership was dissolved. Since that time C. W. De Pue and John Cruze have conducted the business at the old location, while J. R. Butt, with J. P. Young and E. L. Jordan, have established an extensive business under the name of J. R. Butt & Co. Both are enterprising firms, and sell large amounts of goods throughout the Southern States, east of the Mississippi.

The firm of Rolan, Seay & Co. was established in 1877 as Harvey, Rolan & Co., and its members have since changed somewhat, several



times. They now are T. M. Rolen, T. S. Seay, C. C. Hill, and J. J. Loyd. They carry a large stock of stoves and house furnishing goods, and have a good trade at both wholesale and retail.

J. M. Greer & Co. are extensive dealers in agricultural implements, machinery, buggies, etc. The business was established in Maryville, Blount County, in 1865, and removed to Knoxville about two years ago.

The firm of H. G. Mead & Co. is also engaged in this line of business. The house was established in 1865 by H. G. Mead, who subsequently formed a copartnership with C. R. Love. Although Mr. Mead died in 1882, the old style of the firm has been preserved, and Mrs. Mead retains an interest in the business.

Three firms are engaged in the wholesale liquor business: J. F. Horne & Co. began business in 1870, and now have a trade throughout the country tributary to Knoxville; they employ two travelling salesmen, and do a \$50,000 annual business. The house now conducted by W. C. Perry was established in 1870 by W. A. B. Hall, who continued the business until 1877; he carries a large stock of liquors of all kinds and does a good business. Betterton & Co., began business in 1879, but the house was originally established in 1868; they occupy three entire floors in the McGhee Block on Gay Street, and carry a complete line of the best liquors. The individuals composing the firm are J. N. Betterton and J. H. Whitlow.

The retail trade of Knoxville will compare favorably with that of any other city of its size, both as to the number of the firms and the extent of their business. Of the many enterprising houses, only a few of the best known can be mentioned in these pages. They are H. J. Owens, Young, Williams & Co., Thornburgh & Daniels, Meek & Biddle, McMillan & Treadwell, Mitchell & Payne, J. S. Hall, S. W. Flenniken, P. Hannifin, and A. L. Young, dry goods; J. B. Minnis & Co., C. Ruthertford, T. P. McDaniel & Co., S. P. Condon, J. Lichtenwanger, Caldwell & Selden, Caldwell & Thornburgh, James Anderson, Gammon & Larue, S. W. Hall & Co., J. L. Hudiburgh, Jett, Gammon & Co., D. R. Mayo, W. B. Scarborough, J. C. & W. A. Schneider, H. A. Kelly, H. E. Kelly, Bearden & Co., Blaufield and Bro., W. M. Miller, groceries; McCrum & Yeager, Gooding & Shughrue, J. W. Slocum, G. W. Albers, Tompkins Bros., J. A. McCampbell, C. J. Moore & Co., Spence & Co., W. M. Weber, W. J. Worsham, J. D. West and D. H. Zbinden, drugs; Brandau, Kennedy & Co., Huddleston, Smith, Powers & Co., Berwanger Bros., M. Nelson & Co., S. & A. Seaskind, A. Lobenstein and F. Hart, clothiers; Anderson, Cooley & Co., Brown Bros. & Co., Cruze Bros. and J. T. Rowntree & Co.,\* hardware; G. W. Adney & Co. and G. R.

\*While many of these firms sell more or less goods at wholesale, they have been classed in the department in which they are the most prominently identified.

Williams and Bro., stoves and tinware; J. C. Cullen, glass and queensware; Brown, Carter & Huddleston, Epps, McMillan & Co., H. W. Hall & Co., Haynes & McCoy, J. E. Lutz & Co. and Atkins & Brownlee boots and shoes, hats and caps; Ogden Bros. & Co., Ramage & Co. and William & W. E. Williams, books and stationery; H. W. Curtis, Hope Bros. & Co., Moses Greer, Jr., & Co., J. & L. Wenning, jewelry, watches etc.; Steen & Marshall and John A. Gilbert, music and musical instruments; G. W. Akin, Mrs. A. N. Hodge, Mrs. C. F. Rollings, millinery; F. J. Callan, N. Cuquel, G. W. Hand, D. Moore and W. H. Button, merchant tailoring; S. P. Angel, W. Jenkins & Co., C. F. Maskall and W. G. Ware, sewing machines; P. Ritter, J. Blaufield and C. Kohlhase, cigars and tobacco; P. Kern, Bell Bros., I. E. Barry & Co. and M. Taylor, fruits and confections; V. Burger & Son, A. David & Co., J. W. Gaut & Son, Smith & Bondurant, J. Allen Smith & Co., L. C. Matthews and R. Sammon, produce and commission merchants; S. & E. S. Barker, Brooks & Goodall, Cruze Bros., James George, Trent & Toms, T. J. Youmans & Co. and T. Johns, coal; Shepard, Mann & Johnson and S. Newman, undertaking; E. W. Eckardt, A. G. Rhodes, Boyd, Allen & Co. and S. T. Atkin & Co., furniture.

Knoxville is well supplied with first-class hotels, which are liberally patronized. The principal ones are the Hattie House, John C. Flanders, proprietor; Schubert's Hotel, H. Schubert, proprietor; Atkin House, I. N. Scott, manager; and the Lamar House, H. P. Truman & Co., proprietors.

The leading livery men are W. M. Bell & Co., Peyton Carter, J. M. Shetterly & Co., Daniel Cawood, P. A. & T. J. Roberts, Bird & Staub, P. B. Brown and J. H. Atkin.

It is not the purpose of this chapter to enter into an elaborate discussion of the advantages of Knoxville as a manufacturing center. The close proximity of large deposits of valuable iron ore, and the best coal, combined with a central location, render it one of the most desirable sites in the United States for the manufacture and manipulation of iron in all its forms, while an abundance of all kinds of timber adds another most important factor in many branches of industrial enterprise. But an incontestable proof of the advantages of this city for the investment of capital in manufactories is the uniform success of those already established.

The first attempt to manufacture iron and rolling mill products in Knoxville was made by the Confederate authorities during the war. Some machinery which had been confiscated at Loudon, Tenn., was moved to Knoxville and set up, but, owing to the absence of skilled workmen, its

operation was not a success. After the Federal occupation of the town another attempt to operate the mill was made by H. S. Chamberlain, a quartermaster in the army, but it, too, was a partial failure. At the close of hostilities, John H. Jones, one of the former owners of the machinery, came to Knoxville, and a company composed of S. T. Atkin, L. C. Shepard, H. S. Chamberlain and John H. Jones was formed to put the mill into operation. At about that time, in April 1866, D. and J. Richards and D. Thomas, experienced iron men from Pennsylvania, purchased the interest of Messrs. Atkin and Shepard. Soon after, Mr. Jones sold out to W. J. Richards and T. D. Lewis, also men of extensive experience in the iron business. The company was then re-organized under the name of Chamberlain, Richards & Co. They at first labored under many disadvantages, as raw material was obtained with considerable difficulty. In the winter season coal was brought by boat from Emory Gap, but during the summer it was hauled by wagons from Winter's gap at a cost of 50 cents per bushel. In 1867, under the direction of D. Thomas, a mine at Coal Creek was opened, and in the fall of that year the first car-load of coal was shipped over the Knoxville & Ohio Railroad. Soon a foundry was added to the rolling mill, and other improvements made. At this time the present president of the company was a bookkeeper for the firm. In 1869 the company was incorporated under the name of the Knoxville Iron Company, with a capital stock of \$300,000, and the capacity of its works was greatly increased. The plant now covers an area of about three acres, and consists of three mills; an eighteen-inch nail-mill, a ten-inch bar-mill and an eight-inch guide-mill, containing altogether nine single puddling furnaces, three heating furnaces, forty nail machines and four trains of rolls. The product consists of merchant bar, nails, railroad, car and miscellaneous forgings, and light T and street rails, the annual capacity being 12,000 tons, with a value of about \$500,000. To run the works, thirteen engines, with an aggregate of 800 horse-power, are required, and constant employment is given to about 300 men, to whom about \$10,000 is paid monthly. The company are also largely engaged in the mining of coal, and have extensive mines at Coal Creek on the Knoxville & Ohio Railroad, about thirty miles north of the city. They have a capacity of 500 tons of coal daily, and besides supplying the rolling mills, furnish large quantities to railroads and gas companies in Tennessee and adjoining States.

The officers of the company are W. R. Tuttle, president; W. S. Mead, secretary and treasurer, and George L. Reis, general manager.

In 1867 Clark, Quaife & Co. erected a small foundry for the manu-



facture of stoves, hollow ware, etc. Later they began making car wheels, and this branch of the business proving a success, an incorporated company, with a capital stock of \$47,000, was formed in 1872, with A. L. Maxwell as president, and Harvey Clark, secretary. Thirty thousand acres of iron land in Carter County was purchased, upon which a cold blast charcoal furnace was erected for the purpose of supplying the shops with iron. The brown hematite ore found on this land is among the best in the country, and a furnace which is still standing was erected there very early in this century. Under the management of Mr. Maxwell, which continued until 1881, the business steadily increased, and the Knoxville Car Wheel Company became known throughout the South for the excellence of its products. In 1881 the company was reorganized with a capital stock of \$107,000, and since that time the works have been considerably enlarged. A well equipped machine shop, boiler shop, and a foundry for making all kinds of soft castings have been added. Fifty hands are employed in the shops, and as many more at the furnace. The capacity of the car shops is 125 wheels and of the furnace ten tons daily. The present officers of the company are C. H. Brown, president, and D. A. Carpenter, secretary and treasurer.

Another successful and important manufacturing establishment of Knoxville is operated by the Southern Car Company, which was organized June 1, 1881, with a capital stock of \$80,000. Their line of operations consists of the manufacture of freight and mining cars of all descriptions. They employ from 125 to 150 men, and turn out from six to eight cars per day. The works are located just west of the city limits on the E. T. V. & G. R. R., and cover an area of about ten acres.

The Knoxville Foundry and Machine Shops were established in 1865 by J. W. North & Co., who continued the business until 1870, when it was transferred to the firm of Rogan & Co., composed of L. H. Rogan, William McAfferty and William De Groat. In 1874 J. B. Kelly became a partner, and during the ensuing years the business was conducted under the name of Rogan, Kelly & Co. In 1878 a stock company with a capital of \$25,000 was organized, with Peter Staub as president, J. B. Kelly, secretary, and L. H. Rogan, manager. The shops were then transferred from Broad Street to their present location, where new buildings were erected. Since that time the business has steadily increased, until now it represents an invested capital of \$100,000. The present officers of the company are Peter Staub, president; J. B. Kelley, general manager and secretary, and Charles Fouche, treasurer.

The Clark Foundry and Machine Company was organized in 1881, with H. W. Clark, president, and Simpson Cornick, secretary and treas-

urer. The enterprise has been highly successful, and has been increased each year, until now over thirty workmen are constantly employed. They make a specialty of mill machinery, but manufacture all kinds of castings and machines.

The Knoxville Brass and Iron Foundry, owned and operated by Stamps & Mehaffy; the wrought iron fence manufactory of H. O. Nelson, and the machine shop of Dempster & Co. are also establishments of some importance, employing from three to ten men each.

The milling interests of Knoxville have recently been greatly extended by the erection of a mammoth mill, with a capacity of 150 barrels of flour per day. It is owned by the Knoxville City Mills Company, and was completed in January, 1885. It is equipped with the latest improved machinery for the manufacture of the finest grade of flour, and its products find a ready market in all parts of Alabama, Georgia, Tennessee and North Carolina. An elevator with a capacity of 50,000 bushels was erected with the mill, but was destroyed by fire in June, 1886. It will soon be replaced by another with a capacity of 75,000 bushels. The company was incorporated in 1884 with a capital stock of \$30,000, which has since been increased to \$50,000. The officers are J. Allen Smith, president, and Charlton Karnes, secretary and treasurer.

Another excellent flouring-mill has been built on First Creek, a short distance below the site of Scott's old mill. It is owned and operated by Peters, Jones & Co. The Trio mills owned by Scott, Dempster & Co. are also still in operation. The mill at the crossing of Main Street on First Creek after undergoing several transformations, and passing through the hands of many successive owners, is now operated by the Champion Manufacturing Company who use it to grind meal and mill feed. Recently mills of this character have been erected by the Knoxville Cooked Feed Company, and T. P. McDaniels & Co.

The manufacture of furniture forms one of the most important industries of Knoxville, but it is still in its infancy. It is doubtful if any city in America affords greater advantages to this branch of industrial enterprise, and the capital now employed could be multiplied many times without reaching the limit of profitable investment. Of the firms now engaged in this business, that of Boyd & Caswell is one of the oldest. The enterprise was established in 1873 by Howe Bros., who continued it for about three years, when they were succeeded by William Caswell & Co. In 1880 S. B. Boyd, the proprietor of a carpet store, consolidated his business with that of the company, and an extensive retail house furnishing store was established in connection with the factory. In August, 1886, the partnership was dissolved, Mr. Caswell retaining the manufac-

tory, and Mr. Boyd the sales department. The latter has associated with himself John M. Allen, R. J. Stevenson and S. B. Boyd, Jr., under the firm name of Boyd, Allen & Co..

Mr. Caswell employs about forty men, and makes a specialty of fine furniture, parlor suits, and bedroom sets. S. T. Atkins & Co. began business in 1876, and now employ about thirty-five men in the manufacture of all grades of furniture. They sell their goods almost exclusively at retail and to the city trade. They also operate a saw mill with a capacity of 10,000 feet per day, and cut all of their own lumber.

In 1882 the Knoxville Furniture Company was organized with a capital stock of \$50,000. The officers are T. R. Price, president; H. S. Mizner, treasurer, and A. J. Price, superintendent. They obtain their material from mills on the Clinch River, and manufacture a medium grade of furniture which they sell at wholesale in all of the States east of the Mississippi and south of the Ohio. Schaad & Rotach is the style of a firm which began business in June 1885, they make a specialty of the finer grades of furniture. They buy their lumber from mills in the vicinity of Knoxville, but the marble which they use is obtained from their own quarry, situated about five miles west of the city, on the Clinton pike.

Of the other wood-working establishments, that of the Standard Handle Company is one of the most extensive. The company was incorporated in 1881 with a capital stock of \$60,000. The officers are Edward Nicoll, president; F. J. Leland, vice-president, and C. M. Woodbury, secretary and treasurer. They use only hickory timber, and manufacture all kinds of handles.

The Barker Manufacturing Company are extensively engaged in the manufacture of wooden-ware and handles. The business was established in June, 1883, by J. H. and F. Barker. The officers of the present company are F. Barker, president; H. N. Saxton, Jr., secretary, and J. H. Barker, treasurer. The Knoxville Box and Keg Company was established in 1872 by D. R. Samuel, who, in 1880, admitted his son, W. B. Samuel, into partnership. Their line of manufacture embraces packing boxes of all kinds, kegs, wagon felloes and wood specialties and novelties.

In the manufacture of saddlery and harness Knoxville rivals any other city of its size in the country. The firm of Oates, White & Co., consisting of E. T. Oates, J. C. White and Samuel W. Graves, was established in 1877. They have a large capital invested in the business, and use only the most improved machinery and appliances. They employ about forty workmen in the various departments, and manufacture harness, saddlery and collars. Their products, together with a full line



of saddlery hardware, they sell at wholesale throughout the Southern States.

In 1867 Maj. Thomas O'Conner and James O'Conner established the business now conducted by James O'Conner & Co. It was on a very small scale at first, but it has grown steadily until it has reached its present large proportion. They now employ about sixty-five men in the manufactory, and distribute their goods throughout the Southern States, east of the Mississippi.

Other firms and individuals engaged in this line of manufacture, but with somewhat limited capital, are S. Van Gilder & Co., D. M. Haynes & Bro., J. M. McAffrey and H. L. Karnes.

The lumber business of Knoxville and Knox County is increasing more rapidly than any other branch of industry, but its development is by no means complete. Large tracts of the finest timber line the banks of the Holston and French Broad and their tributaries, and these streams with the Tennessee River, during six months in the year, afford every facility for the rafting of logs. One of the largest mills now in operation is owned by D. M. Rose & Co. who began business in Sevier County in 1876. In 1880 they removed to Knoxville, and erected a small mill on the south side of the river. Since that time their business has constantly increased, and they now have a capacity of 50,000 feet of lumber per day.

The Scottish Carolina Timber & Land Company, with a capital stock of \$1,000,000, has recently completed a mill with a capacity of 50,000 feet per day. It is located on the river, a short distance below the Knoxville & Augusta Railroad bridge, where they contemplate building a boom at a cost of \$40,000. They own large tracts of timber land in upper East Tennessee.

Mills with a capacity of 5,000 to 10,000 feet per day are also operated by S. T. Atkin & Co., L. E. Craig and Burr & Terry, while many small mills are distributed throughout the county. It has been estimated that during 1886 there were cut in Knox County 5,000,000 feet of lumber, and that in 1887 this amount will be fully doubled.

Of the planing mills and sash and door factories, the most extensive is that of Burr & Terry. It was established in 1867 by Richardson & Burr who were succeeded in 1869 by the firm of Richardson, Burr & Terry. Mr. Richardson died the following year and the business has since been conducted by the present firm. They have a large capital invested, and employ about twenty-five men.

The firm of Stephenson & Getaz began business in 1882. Their mill is equipped with all the latest improvements in machinery and appliances,

and about thirty men are employed in the manufacture of all kinds of building material.

L. E. Craig engaged in this line of manufacture in 1879 at the mouth of First Creek, where he has since continued. He employs twelve men, and does an extensive business. His mill is operated by water power.

The manufacture of carriages, buggies and other vehicles, is becoming an important branch of industry in Knoxville. The firm most extensively engaged in this business is that of Post, Simmons & Co., composed of S. T. Post, C. N. Simmons and F. H. Post. The enterprise was established in 1870 by S. T. Post & Son, who conducted it with signal success until 1882, when the present firm was formed. They employ about twenty men and make a specialty of heavy wagons. They are now erecting a new factory with the intention of doubling their capacity.

The Knoxville Buggy Works were established in March, 1885 by C. Geiger under the management of James A. Nisonger. They manufacture carriages, buggies and light wagons, for the local trade. An extension of the shops is now being made and when completed about twenty-five men will be employed. The present proprietors are T. T. Goodall & Co.

The shops now owned and operated by T. C. Eldridge, was established in 1872 upon a comparatively small scale, but during the past eight years under the present management, the facilities have been greatly increased. From ten to fifteen workmen are constantly employed, turning out about 100 vehicles annually, Sheridan & Quincy, former employes of Post, Simmons & Co., have recently engaged in this line of manufacture.

After the disappearance of the primitive mills no attempt was made to manufacture cotton or woolen goods until within the past ten years. In 1877 the Knoxville Woolen Mills Company was organized with a capital stock of \$180,000, and commenced the operations of a mill at Sanfordville, in McMinn County. From the first the undertaking proved a success, and in 1884 the company determined to increase their facilities by erecting new buildings. With this object in view they increased the capital stock to \$200,000, purchased thirteen acres of land adjoining the city limits, and erected one of the most convenient and best appointed woolen-mills in the country. The new mill was completed and put into operation in 1885. It is a substantial brick structure, 50x400 feet, and three stories high, and is equipped with seven sets of cards and 193 looms. It employs about 150 hands. The product consists exclusively of all wool jeans. The officers of the company are E. J. Sanford, president, and R. P. Gettys, secretary, treasurer and general manager.

In November, 1885, an incorporated company with a capital stock of \$150,000 completed the erection of a large cotton-mill 78x210 feet, two stories high, and in March, 1886, between 5,000 and 6,000 spindles and 176 looms were put into operation. The mill is fitted up with the best machinery made, and in the spinning department a new process not in use in any other mill is employed, by means of which a great saving in time, power and labor is effected. The product of this mill consists entirely of brown sheetings of grade suited to both the domestic and foreign trades. At present about twenty-five bales of cotton are used per week, but only one-half of the mill is occupied, and the doubling of its capacity is now under contemplation. The mill is under the management of Mr. C. J. Sweet, a man of long experience in the manufacture of cotton, having acted for many years as superintendent and agent of some of the largest mills in New England. He is assisted by his sons, also experienced cotton manufacturers.

The Knoxville Ice Company is an enterprise of great importance to the city. The business was inaugurated in 1876 by J. C. Mustard, on a small scale as an experiment, and such was the success of the venture that in 1881 the present company was formed with a capital stock of \$40,000. Extensive improvements were at once made, new buildings erected and the most improved machinery supplied. The water used for the manufacture of ice is obtained from a large spring, and is distilled before freezing. The works now have a capacity of thirty tons per day, and the trade of the company extends throughout East Tennessee. The officers of the corporation are Peter Kern, president; Ignas Fanz, secretary and treasurer, and T. D. Lewis, manager.

The quarrying and manipulation of marble has become one of the most important industries of Knoxville and Knox County, but it is of such recent origin that it may be said to be in a transition state, and to give a satisfactory account of the many companies which have been organized for the prosecution of the business is impossible. Worked systematically by men of experience and sufficient capital quarries within easy reach of transportation yield rich returns, but in the hands of inexperienced persons with small capital, the business affords many opportunities for failure.

One of the most successful firms engaged in quarrying marble is that of J. J. Craig & Co. Their business was established in 1880 by Col. J. J. Craig, who has been very largely instrumental in developing the resources of the county in this especial department of industry. They now operate four quarries, five miles northwest of Knoxville, furnishing employment to about fifty hands. Recently the members of this firm



organized the Great Southern Marble Company with the following officers; John J. Craig, president; John J. Craig, Jr., secretary and treasurer; W. B. McMullen, general manager, and J. M. Edington, superintendent of quarries.

The Knoxville Marble Company is the oldest company now in the business, having been organized on July 11, 1873. The members of the company at that time were William Patrick, president; George W. Ross, secretary and treasurer; James Patrick, and John H. Holman. They purchased the old government quarry at the forks of the French Broad and Holston, and have since continued to operate it. The marble obtained from their quarries is conceded to be the soundest in East Tennessee, and for building purposes it is unsurpassed. When polished it presents a handsome appearance, and it is used largely for mantels and decorating purposes. They work from fifty to seventy-five hands, run four steam-drills and two saw mills with two gangs of saws each, and turn out products to the value of over \$100,000 yearly. They own sixty-five acres of land, and operate three quarries. They ship to all the large cities in this country, and are now engaged in filling an order for a European market. Since January, 1886, the officers of the company and sole proprietors of the business have been John M. Ross, president, and George W. Ross, secretary and treasurer.

The Phoenix Marble Company was incorporated in 1885 with a capital stock of \$20,000. They operate quarries in Hawkins County, and have a mill with three gangs of saws in Knoxville. The officers of the company are John P. Beach, president, and Charles Pitman, secretary and treasurer. Mr. Beach is also the senior member of the firm of Beach & Co., who began business in 1880. They work a quarry two and one-half miles east of Knoxville, where they employ about twelve hands. They also operate a mill, in which fifteen hands are employed in cutting and polishing marble for furniture, and inside decoration. The largest mill of this kind in Tennessee was erected in 1886 by W. H. Evans & Son, who are extensively engaged in the business in Baltimore, and who built a small mill and opened a quarry in Hawkins County in 1881. Their mill in Knoxville contains twelve gangs of saws, and has a capacity of 1,800 feet of finished marble per day, furnishing employment to 160 men. During 1887 the capacity of the mill will be more than doubled.

The coal business in so far as Knoxville is concerned has been developed during the past twenty years, although a company was organized for the purpose of dealing in coal as early as 1855. It was known as the Knoxville Coal Company, and the members were John S. Moffett, John Shields, M. W. Williams and A. L. Maxwell. A small steamboat called

the "Holston" was purchased, and coal was brought from points on the river below, but the demand for it was so limited that the company soon suspended operations.

In May, 1858, the Cumberland Mountain Coal & Land Company was organized with a capital stock of \$1,200,000. The officers and members were G. B. Lamar, president; Thomas H. Calloway, treasurer, and — Jackson, secretary; Campbell Wallace, Thomas C. Lyons, C. M. McGhee, Robert Morrow, Euclid Waterhouse, A. L. Maxwell, M. B. Prichard and Samuel Congdon. In 1867 the company was reorganized as the East Tennessee Iron & Coal Company, with Charles M. McGhee, president. A large tract of land in Campbell, Scott and Anderson Counties, had been previously purchased, but owing to the manner in which grants had been issued by the Government, where conflict of title existed, and several years have been spent in settling these claims. The company, now own 50,000 acres of the finest, and most accessible coal land in East Tennessee, extending along the line of the Knoxville & Ohio Railroad, for thirteen miles, and the work of developing mines will be begun during 1887. Since 1882 A. L. Maxwell has been the president of the company.

In 1868 the Coal Creek Mining & Manufacturing Company was organized, with Henry S. Wiley as president, and Charles H. Berkley, secretary. The capital stock is \$2,500,000, of which about three-fourths is held in New York. They own one of the finest bodies of mining lands in the world. The tract is thirty miles in extent, and embraces 240,000 acres. They also own a large interest in about 70,000 acres more. They operate no mines themselves but lease to other companies. The following are the present officers: E. J. Sanford, president; E. R. Chapman, of New York, secretary and assistant treasurer; and W. P. Chamberlin, treasurer and assistant secretary. The Poplar Creek Coal & Iron Company with a capital stock of \$1,000,000, also owns a large tract of land which they lease to other companies. The officers are E. R. Chapman, president, and T. H. Heald, secretary and treasurer. The Wheeler Coal & Iron Company, with a capital stock of \$375,000, has the same officers. It was organized about 1870, and owns 4,400 acres of land, on the Knoxville & Ohio Railroad, about thirty-five miles from Knoxville. A third company, with the same officers, is known as the Wyley Coal Company. It has a capital stock of \$40,000

The Coal Creek Mining Company was organized in 1880, with a capital stock of \$150,000. They operate four mines having an aggregate annual out-put of 120,000 tons, and employing 400 men. The officers are T. H. Heald, president, and E. F. Wyley, secretary and treasurer.

The Coal Creek Coal Company was organized in 1868, by M. C. and

C. C. Wilcox, E. A. Reed, P. A. Maniner, S. S. Tuttle and E. C. Camp. They own land on Coal Creek, and operate a mine having an out-put of about 75,000 tons yearly. The officers now are E. C. Camp, president, and Henry Camp, manager.

The Standard Coal Company, organized in 1882 with capital stock of \$100,000, operates a mine at Newcomb, from which is shipped annually about 60,000 tons. The officers of the company are W. W. Woodruff, president, and E. E. McCroskey, secretary and treasurer.

The East Tennessee Coal Company was incorporated in 1876 and began operations at Coal Creek. They now own 900 acres of land at Jellico upon which their mines are located. They have a capacity of 400 tons per day, and ship large quantities to Alabama, North and South Carolina, Georgia, Kentucky and throughout Tennessee. The officers are E. J. Davis, president, and B. A. Jenkins, secretary and treasurer.

After coal, iron and marble, zinc is the next most abundant and valuable mineral found in East Tennessee. The first works for the manufacture of zinc oxide were erected at Mossy Creek in 1872. Four years later mines were opened and operations begun on an extensive scale in Union County, and in 1881 spelter works were completed at Clinton. In 1883 these works were purchased by the Edes, Mixter & Heald Zinc Company, who have since continued to operate them. The ore is obtained from mines on Straight Creek, and from Mossy Creek. The company has a capital stock of \$100,000 and ships annually about 1,250,000 pounds of spelter. The secretary and manager is Maj. T. H. Heald, of Knoxville. The other members of the firm reside at Plymouth, Mass.

Of the present banking institutions of Knoxville the People's Bank is the oldest. It was established in 1865 by C. M. McGhee, John R. Branner, Thomas H. Calloway and J. R. Mitchell under the firm name of J. R. Mitchell & Co. In May, 1866, it was incorporated under its present name with a capital stock of \$35,000, C. M. McGhee becoming president and J. R. Mitchell, cashier. This bank, controlled as it has been by some of the wealthiest and most prominent business men of the city, has always enjoyed the confidence of commercial circles. The present officers are J. R. Mitchell, president, and F. A. Moses, cashier.

In 1873 the East Tennessee National Bank was organized as the successor of the First National Bank, of Knoxville, established soon after the war. The capital stock is \$100,000, while the surplus and individual profits amount to nearly \$90,000. The annual discounts exceed \$500,000, and the deposits average over \$600,000. Its directors are R. C. Jackson, C. M. McGhee, R. S. Payne, W. W. Woodroff, E. J. Sanford, S. B. Boyd, C. M. McClung, Daniel Briscoe and James M. Meek,



The president is R. S. Payne; vice-president, E. J. Sanford, and cashier, F. L. Fisher.

The Mechanics National Bank, organized in March, 1882, also has a capital stock of \$100,000. It is under able management and has been remarkably successful. Its surplus now amounts to \$51,000 and its deposits average over \$400,000, while its exchange account with its bank in New York in 1886 amounted to \$2,500,000. The directors are W. P. Washburn, S. T. Harris, M. L. Ross, H. H. Ingersoll, S. B. Luttrell, S. P. Evans, J. W. Borches, J. C. Luttrell and J. T. McTeer. S. B. Luttrell is president; M. L. Ross, vice-president and Sam House, cashier.

The Merchants Bank is a private institution of high standing, owned by John S. Van Gilder, who has been engaged in the business for over twenty years.

Probably no city of its size is better represented in the line of fire insurance companies than Knoxville. The oldest is known as the Knoxville Fire Insurance Company; it was organized in 1879 with a capital stock of \$100,000. It is under able management and has been successful from the beginning. On January 1, 1886, the reserve fund amounted to \$26,674.98, and the net surplus to \$26,993.10, a gain in the net surplus, during 1885, of \$5,798.80. The company does a general fire insurance business throughout the State, and has reliable agents in the leading commercial centers. The directors of the company are as substantial a body of men as could be selected from the successful business men of the city. They are D. A. Carpenter, S. B. Luttrell, C. M. McGhee, Joseph T. McTeer, F. W. Taylor, Sr., R. C. Jackson, W. P. Washburn, W. W. Woodruff, James M. Meek, C. M. McClung and M. L. Ross. The president of the company is D. A. Carpenter; vice-president, W. W. Woodruff, and secretary and treasurer, W. H. Simmonds.

A new company, known as the Protection Fire Insurance Company, was incorporated under the same management in 1885, and now has assets amounting to \$108,093.84.

The East Tennessee Insurance Company began business on May 1, 1885, with a capital stock of \$150,000, and already has a surplus fund amounting to about \$35,000. The company is ably and conservatively managed, and commands the entire confidence of the public. The members of the company are C. J. McClung, president; B. R. Strong, vice-president; C. Powell, secretary; P. Dickinson, F. L. Fisher and C. E. Luckey.

The Island Home Insurance Company was recently organized, with the same officers and directors, and incorporated with a capital stock of \$200,000.

At what time the first Masonic lodge in Knoxville was organized could not be ascertained, as all old records pertaining to it had been destroyed. It was known as Mount Labanus Lodge, and was established at a very early period in the history of the town. Of the lodges now in existence, the oldest is Master's Lodge, No. 244, the records of which have also been destroyed.

Maxwell Lodge, No. 433, was organized in November, 1871, with L. H. Rogan as W. M. It has since been fairly prosperous and now has a membership of about forty.

Oriental Lodge, No. 453, was organized under a dispensation granted November 10, 1873, with N. S. Woodward as W. M., J. V. Fulkerson, S. W. and A. Caldwell, J. W. It contains some of the best members of the fraternity in the State, and is in a highly prosperous condition.

Pearl Chapter, No. 24, R. A. M., was organized in 1841, with the Most Eminent James W. Paxton, as H. P. It has worked continuously to the present time with the exception of a few months during the civil war. The present H. P. is Arch. Ferguson. The present membership is fifty-six.

Couer de Leon Commandery, No. 9, K. T., was organized on May 5, 1868, under a dispensation granted by R. E. Sir John Frizzell, Grand Commander of Tennessee, with the following officers: John W. Paxton, E. C.; William Morrow, G.; A. N. Maxwell, C. G.; W. H. Lillard, P.; H. M. Aiken, S. W.; S. B. Dow, J. W.; Spencer Munson, Rec.; J. A. Mabry, Treas.; U. A. Rouser, Standard Bearer; William Rule, Sword Bearer; H. C. Hawkins, W. and John W. Cruze, S. At the burning of the Masonic Hall, the Commandry lost about \$2,000 worth of property. It now has a membership of seventy, with S. B. Dow as E. C.

Knoxville Consistory, No. 10, S. P. R. S., under the Peckham Cerneau jurisdiction, was instituted on July 7, 1884, with H. H. Ingersoll, Thirty-third degree, as C. C. Among the other officers are A. J. Albers, Thirty-second degree; R. H. Sansom, Thirty-second degree; A. Gredig, Thirty-second degree; J. H. Keeling, Thirty-second degree; J. L. Curtis, Thirty-second degree; G. W. Albers, Thirty-third degree; W. A. Galbraith, Thirty-second degree; E. E. McCroskey, Thirty-second degree; John E. Clyman, Thirty-second degree; S. G. Bowman, Thirty-second degree; J. H. Doughty, Thirty-second degree, and J. W. Cruze, Thirty-second degree.

Tennessee Lodge, No. 4, I. O. O. F., was organized on March 20, 1848, with the following charter members: A. A. Barnes, A. R. Crozier, P. M. McClung, William M. Churchwell, and James Rodgers. The lodge has since been successfully maintained and now has a membership of sixty-three with J. R. McBath as Noble Grand.

Knoxville Lodge, No. 138, was organized on November 23, 1869. The charter members were James M. McAffry, L. C. Shepard, E. G. McClanahan, J. D. J. Lewis, W. H. Parker and J. C. Ristine. The present membership is twenty-three. J. L. Culverhouse is Noble Grand.

Golden Rule Lodge, No. 177, was instituted on July 2, 1874, with R. Y. Hayes, G. B. Burlson, J. B. Campbell, J. E. Newman, W. R. Stephenson, W. C. Putnam, George W. Roth, P. F. Jenkins and E. B. Mann as charter members. The present membership is fifty-three.

Knoxville Encampment, No. 11, was organized soon after the institution of Tennessee Lodge, with the following members: James A. Deery, A. A. Barnes, W. M. Churchwell, William Hunt, Daniel Lyons, William Lyons and M. D. Bearden.

Teutonia Lodge, No. 141, K. of H., was organized August 20, 1875, with about eighteen members. It is now in a prosperous condition, and has a membership of 149, with J. W. Benziger as Dictator. L. A. Gratz, a member of this lodge is the present Supreme Dictator.

Relief Lodge was organized in 1876, and now has but a small membership.

Fidelity Lodge, No. 9, A. O. U. W., was organized in August, 1876, with John Burks as Past Master Workman, and Fred Esperandieu, Master Workman. Soon after the organization of this lodge Phoenix Lodge, No. 14, was instituted with a membership of about fifty-three. A few months later Peabody Lodge, No. 44, was established. These two lodges existed as separate bodies until December, 1886, when they were united under the name of the former.

Pioneer Council, No. 34, A. L. of H., was organized September 10, 1879, with a small membership which rapidly increased, and has since averaged about one hundred and twenty-five.

Knoxville Council, No. 110, R. A., was instituted in June, 1878, with L. A. Gratz as Past Regent, A. L. Maxwell, Regent, and Julius Ochs, secretary. Its original membership of twenty-five has increased to sixty-eight.

Peace Commandery, No. 1, U. O. of G. C., was organized on July 11, 1876,\* a short time after the incorporation of the Supreme Commandery. Hope Commandery, No. 2 was instituted August 16, 1876, but did not receive its charter until the following November, at which time the members numbered forty-one.

Ed. Maynard Post, No. 14, G. A. R., was organized December 23, 1883, with the following members: A. S. Prosser, L. A. Gratz, W. R. Carter, W. J. Ramage, W. W. Dunn, W. C. Brandon, Ignaz Fanz, C. H. Brown,

\*See page 308.



W. R. Tuttle, P. D. Roady, S. J. Todd, B. Goodhart, and George L. Maloney. The first Commander was A. S. Prosser who was succeeded by L. A. Gratz. The present officers are W. J. Ramage, C.; W. W. Dum, S. V. C.; Ignaz Fanz, J. V. C.; L. Harvey, Adjt.; W. A. Gage, O. D.; J. R. Galyon, O. G.; Thomas D. Lewis, Chaplain; J. W. Stewart, Surgeon; L. W. Schirman, Q. M.

Felix K. Zollicoffer Camp, Confederate Veterans, was organized December 10, 1885, with one hundred and thirty-five members, and for the following admirable purposes; "The object shall be to perpetuate the memories of our fallen comrades, and to minister so far as practicable to the wants of those who were permanently disabled in the service, to preserve and maintain that sentiment of fraternity born of the hardships and dangers shared in the march, the bivouac and the battle ground. It is proposed not to prolong the animosities engendered by the war, but to extend to our late adversaries on every fitting occasion, courtesies which, in our case, a common citizenship demands at our hands. We propose to avoid everything which partakes of partisanship in religion and politics, but at the same time we will lend our aid to the maintenance of law and the preservation of order." The present membership of the camp is about one hundred and sixty-five. Alexander Allison is Commander and P. B. Shepherd, First Lieutenant Commander.

The medical profession has always been ably represented in Knoxville. In the *Gazette* of April 20, 1794, Dr. Thomas McCombs informs the public that he intends to remove and locate in Knoxville about May 15, where he proposes to enter upon the practice of medicine. He hopes his long studies and experience under the most eminent physicians in the Atlantic States, and his attention to his profession will insure him the patronage of the public. During the same year Dr. Robert Johnson, also advertises that he has located in Knoxville. Of those now remembered Dr. Joseph C. Strong was the earliest. He was finely educated, and was an excellent physician. He continued to practice until his death, which occurred about 1844. Dr. James King, who died in 1838, was a contemporary of Dr. Strong. Dr. Donald McIntosh began practice at a little later date. Others who were prominent previous to the war were Francis A. Ramsey, William J. and Leonidas Baker, Joseph W. and John Paxton, R. O. Currey, P. Fatio, J. Woodward, James Rodgers and John M. Boyd, the last two of whom are still living. Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey, who had been a pupil of Dr. Strong, opened an office in Knoxville in 1820, but two years later removed to the Forks, where he continued until the war. On May 7, 1845, a number of medical practitioners met in convention at Knoxville, and organized the Medical Society of East Tennessee. Only

six counties were represented at this time, but the society increased, annual meetings were held, and branches were organized in several counties. The Knox County society was incorporated in 1856 with the following members: William J. Baker, James Rodgers, William Rodgers, J. Morman, Joseph W. Paxton, John Paxton, Richard O. Currey, C. W. Crozier, James Sawyers and others. This section has been maintained up to the present time, although the East Tennessee society was recently disbanded. In April, 1852, the first members of a quarterly, called the "East Tennessee Record of Medicine and Surgery," edited by Frank A. Ramsey, appeared. It was continued but one year. In January, 1855, "The Southern Journal of the Medical and Physical Sciences," a monthly edited by R. O. Currey, was removed from Nashville to Knoxville, and for a time was published by Kinsloe & Rice. It was subsequently returned to Nashville.

The history of the press in Knoxville previous to the civil war is given in another chapter. The two leading dailies of the present time, the *Tribune* and *Journal* are the lineal descendants of the *Knoxville Register* and *Knoxville Whig*, respectively. At the close of the war the *Register* was revived under the name of the *Messenger of Peace*, by M. J. Hughes, and was the first Democratic newspaper published in East Tennessee, after the close of hostilities. On June 29, 1867, the initial number of the *Knoxville Daily Free Press*, a six-column morning paper, was issued by John M. Fleming & Co. Four months later, Ramage & Co. founded the *Knoxville Daily Herald*, also a morning paper, the same size as the *Free Press*. Ramage & Co. then purchased the *Messenger of Peace*, and published it under the name of the *Knoxville Messenger*, as the weekly edition of the *Herald*. January 7, 1868, the *Daily Free Press* and *Herald* were consolidated as the *Daily Press and Herald*, and the weekly *Free Press* and the *Messenger* as the *Press and Messenger*. These papers were then published by Ramage & Co., and edited by John M. Fleming. On March 18, 1876, Mr. Fleming having severed his connection with the *Press and Herald*, formed a partnership with Samuel McKinney, and established the *Knoxville Daily Tribune*, of which the former became editor-in-chief. One week later they purchased the *Press and Herald* and merged it into the *Tribune*, while at the same time the *Weekly Tribune* took the place of the *Press and Messenger*. On March 14, 1877, the *Tribune* was sold to the Tribune Publishing Company, composed of Nashville and Knoxville capitalists. At about the same time the *Evening Age*, which had been established a short time before by C. W. Charlton, was purchased, and on the 31st of March the paper opened as the *Tribune and Age*. Soon after the old name of the *Tribune*

was resumed, and John M. Fleming again became the editor. On February 2, 1878, the paper was purchased by F. M. Paul, who continued its publication until October 13, 1879, when he sold it to Moses White and Frank A. Moses, the former being the editor and the latter business manager. On August 27, 1880, it was purchased by Bean, Summers & Wallace. James W. Wallace and Alexander Summers became the editors and Joseph H. Bean, business manager. In February, 1886, Wallace received a government appointment, and since that time Summers has had entire editorial control. When the present proprietors purchased the *Tribune*, it was a seven-column folio, and the office was poorly equipped. They at once began to improve it, and it is said to have been the first newspaper in Tennessee to banish advertisements from its first page. They then purchased the *Evening Dispatch*, and enlarged the Sunday edition of the *Tribune* to thirty-two columns. The next improvement was to enlarge the regular daily edition to the same size. In 1884 a costly new press was bought, and the weekly *Tribune* enlarged to an eight-page, fifty-six column paper. In 1886 additional printing machinery and appliances were purchased, and the Sunday edition was enlarged to the same size as the weekly. The *Tribune* is under the management of enterprising and progressive men, and is ably edited. The weekly edition is probably the most widely circulated and influential newspaper in East Tennessee.

In November, 1863, W. G. Brownlow resumed the publication of the *Knoxville Whig*, adding to its title *and Rebel Ventilator*. It represented the extreme faction of the Republican party of Tennessee as it existed for the first few years after the war. Although Gov. Brownlow's immediate supervision of the paper ceased upon his election to office, he continued to direct its policy. In 1870 the *Chronicle*, daily and weekly, was established by William Rule and H. C. Tarwater, and in 1875 the *Whig* and the weekly *Chronicle* were consolidated under the name of the *Whig and Chronicle*. In 1879 L. C. Houk and H. R. Gibson founded the *Weekly Republican*, which continued until 1882, when an incorporated company purchased the *Chronicle* and the *Republican*, changing the name of the weekly edition to the *Republican Chronicle*.

In 1885 William Rule and — Marfield established the *Journal*, daily and weekly, and in 1886 they purchased the *Chronicle*, and merged it into the *Journal*. This paper represents the best and most liberal element of the Republican party, and Mr. Rule, the editor, is recognized as one of the ablest journalists in the South.

In December, 1886, the *Sentinel*, an evening daily, was established by the Sentinel Publishing Company. It is Democratic in politics, and



has a large and increasing circulation. This completes the list of daily papers. In 1885 J. H. Atkins began the publication of a Sunday paper, a lively Republican sheet called the *Topic*, which has since been changed to the *Times*.

Knoxville was incorporated by an act of the Legislature passed October 27, 1815, and the first meeting of the board of aldermen was held at the courthouse on the 13th of the following January. The members were Thomas McCorry, Rufus Morgan, James Park, Thomas Humes, James Dardis and John McCullen. Anderson Hutchinson was appointed recorder, David Nelson, high constable, and John McCullen, treasurer. Thomas Emmerson was the mayor. A tax of 25 cents on \$100, \$1 on each poll, and \$5 on merchants was levied for corporation purposes. At the next meeting Thomas Humes, Rufus Morgan and John McCullen were appointed to build a market-house on Market Square, between Prince and Crooked Streets. In June, 1817, \$340 was appropriated for the improvement of the streets, \$120 to be expended on Cumberland, \$80 on State, and \$60 on Water Streets. In February, 1822, a fire company was organized with Calvin Morgan as captain and John Boyd, Carey Thatcher, David Campbell and William Park, lieutenants. An ordinance passed at the same time required every owner of a dwelling, store or office to provide a leather bucket. At the next meeting Thomas Aiken and James Hickey were appointed night watchmen, whose duty it was to patrol the streets and to call the hour and the state of the weather at the end of each hour. In January, 1826, the town was divided into three wards, the First Ward to embrace all east of State Street, the Second all between State and Prince Streets, and the Third all west of Prince Street.

Nothing occurred of any especial interest in the transactions of the board until in April, 1852, when it was decided to submit to a vote of the people a proposition to subscribe \$50,000 to the East Tennessee & Virginia Railroad. The proposition was carried by a vote of fifty-nine to twenty-six, but, on account of the conditions upon which the subscription was tendered, the railroad company refused to accept it. On the 26th of March, 1853, a proposition to subscribe \$50,000 to the Knoxville & Lexington Railroad (now the Knoxville & Ohio) was carried by a vote of ninety-two to one, and on October 4, 1856, it was voted to increase the amount to \$100,000. In 1853 the market-house was erected, and in 1867 the city hall was added. In 1856 the Knoxville Gas Light Company was organized and chartered for a period of forty years. R. R. Simpson is the present president, and R. C. Jackson, secretary and treasurer. The corporate limits of the town have been

enlarged several times. In 1856 they were extended to include the depot, and in 1868 East Knoxville, which had previously existed as a separate corporation, was added. On January 1, 1883, Mechanicsville, now known as the Ninth Ward, was admitted.

The first street railroad company was incorporated January 5, 1876, with a capital stock of \$40,000. It is known as the Knoxville Street Railway Company.

The Market Square Street Railway Company was incorporated in August, 1882, with a capital stock of \$20,000. The officers are Dr. A. B. Tadlock, president, and W. H. Simmonds, secretary and treasurer. The Mabry, Bell Avenue & Hardie Street Railway was incorporated in 1885 with a capital stock of \$20,000. The officers are R. N. Hood, president; R. H. Edington, vice-president, and B. L. Smith, secretary and treasurer. The combined length of the three lines is about six miles.

In January, 1882, the Knoxville Water Company was incorporated with a capital of \$250,000. A reservoir was constructed on the highest hill in the city, and a system of mains and pipes was laid. The water is obtained from the river just above the city. R. N. Hood is president of the company, and J. M. Brooks, secretary.

In January, 1886, the old charter of Knoxville, after having been amended several times, was superseded by a new one. Under its provisions the city government is vested in a mayor and nine aldermen, who constitute the legislative branch, and a board of public works of three members, who constitute the executive branch of the municipal government. The mayor and aldermen are elected for a term of two years, and the chairman of the board of public works for four years. The last named officer and the mayor are chosen by the qualified voters of the city, and the aldermen by the voters of their respective wards. The associate members of the board of public works are nominated by the mayor and confirmed by six votes of the board of aldermen.

The following is a list of the mayors of Knoxville, with the date of election: Thomas Emmerson, 1816; James Park, 1818; W. C. Mynatt, 1822; James Park, 1824; W. C. Mynatt, 1827; Joseph C. Strong, 1828; Donald McIntosh, 1832; S. D. Jacobs, 1834; W. C. Mynatt, 1835; James King, 1837; W. B. A. Ramsey, 1838; Samuel Bell, 1840; G. M. Hazen, 1842; M. M. Gaines, 1843; Samuel Bell, 1844; Joseph L. King, 1846; Samuel B. Boyd, 1847; George M. White, 1852; James C. Luttrell, 1859; William G. Swan, 1855; James H. Cowan, 1856; Samuel A. White, 1856; Thos. J. Powell, 1857; James White, 1858; Joseph Jacques, 1858; A. M. Piper, 1858; J. C. Luttrell, 1859; M. D. Bearden, 1868; John S. Van Gilder, 1870; William Rule, 1873; Peter Staub,

1874; D. A. Carpenter, 1876; Joseph Jacques, 1878; S. B. Luttrell, 1878; H. B. Branner, 1880; Peter Staub, 1881; R. S. Payne, 1882; W. C. Fulcher, 1883, and James C. Luttrell, 1885.

In 1869 the erection of a United States building was begun at Knoxville under the superintendency of J. H. Holman, with A. B. Mullet as supervising architect, and George W. Ross, disbursing agent. The building is constructed entirely of marble, and is one of the most substantial structures in the country. It was completed in 1873 at a cost of \$392,000. It is three stories high. The lower floor is occupied by the postoffice; the second floor by the office of the pension agent, revenue collector, district attorney and the clerks of the district and circuit court, and the third floor by the courtroom and rooms for juries, judges and the United States signal office.

The subject of education early engaged the attention of the citizens of Knoxville, as is evidenced by the establishment of Blount College in 1794, but as a history of this institution, together with that of East Tennessee College and the succeeding university, is given in another chapter of this work, no mention will be made of them here.\* Under the act of 1806, providing for county academies, Hampden Sidney Academy was incorporated with the following trustees: Nathaniel Cowan, John Crozier, Thomas Humes, John Adair and George McNott, to whom were added the next year Isaac Anderson, Samuel G. Ramsey, Robert Houston, Francis H. Ramsey and John Sawyers. The number was still further increased by an act of 1811, appointing Thomas McCorry, George Wilson, James Park, Thomas Emmerson, Hon. L. White and John Hillsman. No organization was effected until April 4, 1812, when Hon. L. White was chosen president, George Wilson, secretary, and Thomas Emmerson, treasurer. At this meeting it was decided to put the academy into operation, and steps were taken to procure suitable teachers. William Park, who was about to go to Philadelphia, was requested to select a principal and an assistant teacher. The following description was furnished to aid him in making a selection: "A president of the academy is wanted, who must be a good scholar, capable of teaching the Latin and Greek languages, and the sciences. He must, moreover, be a man of genteel deportment and unexceptional moral character. A minister of talent and a considerable show of eloquence would be greatly preferred, and especially one who has heretofore taught with success. To an able teacher the trustees propose to give a salary of \$800 per annum." The assistant, it was asserted, "must be a man of good moral character, capable of teaching reading, writing, English

---

\*See pages 416 and 447.



grammar and arithmetic. One who understands surveying and book-keeping, also, would be preferred. To such a man the trustees will engage to pay a salary of \$500 per annum." To this it was added: "The salubrity of the climate and the cheapness of living render the proposed salaries here equal to much larger ones in most places to the eastward."

Notwithstanding these preliminaries the academy was not opened, and no further attempt was made until four years later, when David A. Sherman, a graduate of Yale College, was employed as principal. Under his direction the academy was opened on January 1, 1817, in the building formerly occupied by the East Tennessee College, which had suspended in 1809. Among the original subscribers to the support of the institution, the largest contributors were John Crozier, Thomas Humes, Hon. L. White, Joseph C. Strong, Pleasant M. Miller and Calvin Morgan, each of whom gave \$100.

In October, 1820, the trustees of East Tennessee College decided to put that institution into operation again, and an agreement was entered into whereby the college and academy were united. D. A. Sherman, the principal of the academy, becoming president of the college. From that time until 1830 the academy had no separate existence. In October of that year the trustees held a meeting, and reorganized under a new charter, granted by the preceding Legislature. Dr. Joseph Strong was chosen president, H. Brown, secretary, and James H. Cowan, treasurer. The services of Perez Dickinson, a young man recently arrived from Massachusetts, were secured as teacher, and the academy was once more opened in the old college building. Mr. Dickinson continued in charge of the academy until the spring of 1832, when, to the regret of the trustees, he resigned. During the following summer a frame building, two stories high, was erected for the use of the institution upon a lot purchased from Hugh L. McClung, situated on Locust Street. For some reason, however, the academy did not prosper, and after several changes of teachers it was suspended in 1834. By an act of the General Assembly, passed in 1838, \$18,000 was appropriated annually for the use of county academies, and the trustees determined to reopen Hampden Sidney Academy. The building was repaired, and the school put into operation in November, 1839, under the care of Rev. N. A. Penland. He continued for nearly two years, when he was succeeded by William D. Carnes, who resigned in October, 1842. During the next four years W. S. Williams, J. H. Lawrence and M. Rowley were successively employed as teachers. In May, 1846, the academy was consolidated with a public school which had been established in Knoxville, but this arrangement did not prove satisfactory, and at the end of one year it

was terminated. In October, 1847, Rev. Mr. Elwell was installed as teacher, and so continued until March, 1850, when he resigned, and was succeeded by John B. Mitchell. In 1850 a new charter was obtained, and the board of trustees was reorganized, with William Swan as president, Joseph L. King, secretary, and James H. Cowan, treasurer. In 1852 Mr. Mitchell accepted a position as teacher in the East Tennessee University, and from that time until the beginning of the war the academy was in session but a few months. At the close of the war Prof. J. K. Payne opened a school in the building, but he soon after transferred his services to the university. On March 22, 1866, three or four of the old trustees met and reorganized by electing William Heiskell president, and James Roberts secretary and treasurer. On September 3, following, M. C. Wilcox opened the academy, and continued in charge until January, 1868. Soon after the property was leased to the university, to be used for a preparatory department, but after one year this lease was terminated. About two years later the building and lot were sold, and a new lot, at the corner of State and Reservoir Streets, was purchased at a cost of \$2,500. In 1876 the erection of the present excellent three-story brick building was begun, and completed the following year. It was then leased to the corporation at a nominal rent for the use of the public schools.

In 1827 the Knoxville Female Academy was established. On April 26, of that year, a number of enterprising citizens met in the office of Robert King and effected an organization by electing Joseph C. Strong, chairman, and F. S. Heiskell, secretary. Committees were then appointed to secure teachers and procure a suitable building. These preliminaries having been duly arranged the school went into operation the September following, with John Davis as principal, and Mrs. Davis, Miss Morse and Miss Littleford, as assistants.

At the meeting of the Legislature in October, the academy was incorporated with the following board of trustees: F. S. Heiskell, William C. Mynatt, William S. Howell, S. D. Jacobs, A. McMillan, Dr. Joseph C. Strong, Hugh L. White, Robert King, Robert Houston, Matthew McClung, Calvin Morgan, William B. Reese, M. Nelson, James King, James McNutt, James Park and Donald McIntosh. Steps were at once taken toward the erection of a building. Two lots adjoining each other on Main Street were donated as a site by Dr. Strong and Matthew McClung. The new building was completed in January, 1829, at a cost of nearly \$3,000. The largest contributors were John Crozier and Charles McClung, each of whom gave \$200. Several others gave \$100 or more. John Davis did not prove a satisfactory principal, and he was soon called upon to

resign. His successor was Joseph Estabrook, a graduate of Dartmouth College, and an excellent teacher, and under his management the academy was more prosperous than for many years after his resignation. In 1834 he was elected to the presidency of East Tennessee College, and was succeeded by Henry Herrick, who continued in charge of the academy until 1838. The next year Rev. J. B. Townsend was installed as principal.

In September, 1841, a meeting of the trustees was held to consider a proposition from the Holston Conference of the Methodist Church, to give their patronage to the institution, provided they could share in its control. It was proposed to increase the number of trustees to thirteen, and to permit the conference to appoint a board of nine visitors, the two bodies to constitute a joint board for the election of teachers, etc. It was further stipulated that four of the trustees should be appointed by the conference. This proposition was agreed to, and the academy was thus, in effect, transferred to the conference. Rev. J. E. Douglass, of Alabama, was elected principal, and the institution, under the new management, was reopened September 1, 1842. At the end of one year Mr. Douglass resigned, and was succeeded by Rev. D. R. McAnally, under whose administration the academy was placed in a flourishing condition. In 1846 the charter was amended to permit the conferring of degrees, and the name was changed to the East Tennessee Female Institute. The transfer of the academy to the control of the Holston Conference had not been satisfactory to many of the original subscribers, and in 1847 a movement was inaugurated to sever its connection with that body. It was asserted that the members of the conference had not fulfilled their promise to support the school, and that the trustees had transcended their authority in consenting to the change in management. This opposition finally prevailed, and the old board of trustees again assumed exclusive control. The first graduates from the institute were Margaret H. White and Isabella M. White, Theodosia A. Findley and Harriet A. Parker, who in 1850 received the degree of mistress of polite literature. The next year Mr. McAnally resigned the principalship, and the trustees experienced considerable difficulty in securing a satisfactory successor. At last J. R. Dean was elected, and continued for three or four years. In 1856 he was succeeded by R. L. Kirkpatrick, who remained until the beginning of the war, when the building was taken for a hospital. In January, 1865, three trustees, Thomas W. Humes, Horace Maynard and George M. White met and accepted a proposition from John F. Spence, to open a school, provided the provost-marshal would restore the building. This he did, and during the following spring Mr. Spence opened the school. He continued about two years. From that time until 1881



many attempts were made to establish a school, but all proved unsuccessful. In September, 1881, the building was leased by the board of education for a girls' high school, for which purpose it was used until 1885. Since that time it has been occupied by Mrs. Lizzie C. French, who is conducting a very flourishing female seminary.

The system of public schools in operation in Knoxville had its origin in the board of mayor and aldermen, by whom, on December 16, 1870, a committee, consisting of W. A. Henderson, J. A. Rayl and J. R. Mitchell, was appointed "to take into consideration the propriety of establishing a system of free schools." The committee, at the next meeting, presented a favorable report, and on the 21st of January, 1871, the matter was submitted to the decision of the people, and carried by a vote of 433 to 162. Accordingly, a tax of one mill on the dollar was levied for the support of schools, and a board, consisting of J. A. Rayl, chairman, W. A. Henderson and Dr. John M. Boyd, was appointed to inaugurate the new system. These gentlemen, although much pressed by the duties attendant upon their business and professions, gave the subject thorough study, and met in frequent consultation. They were assisted in their work by John K. Payne, professor of mathematics in East Tennessee University, a teacher of large experience, who freely offered his services in the interest of education. Through the influence of Rev. Dr. Thomas W. Humes, the committee procured aid from the Peabody Fund to the amount of \$2,000, which was of great assistance in the prosecution of the work only just begun. As few suitable buildings could be obtained, the committee rented the basements of churches and such other rooms as they could, and on September 4, 1871, the schools were opened in nine houses situated in various parts of the city, with about 1,000 children in attendance.

It was the desire of the committee to have a system of graded schools, but owing to the nature of the buildings, as well as to many other difficulties to be encountered in establishing such schools where they have never before existed, could be only imperfectly effected the first year. However, what was possible under the circumstances was done, and the schools were continued ten months, employing fifteen teachers. In the summer of 1872 the school committee advised the city council to purchase for a schoolhouse the building known as the Bell House, originally erected and used as a hotel. The advice of the committee was favorably considered, and the building was secured at a cost of \$5,500. The needed repairs and alterations having been made, the school opened in September with greatly improved facilities for grading, which rendered necessary the employment of more teachers. Accordingly twenty

teachers were employed, several of whom had taught in the schools in 1871, and all entered upon their duties with an earnest desire for the prosperity and ultimate success of the schools. Until December, 1873, the schools were under the management of a committee appointed by the mayor, consisting of members of the city council holding their office but one year. On the 12th of December the city council passed an ordinance creating a board of education, consisting of five persons, to be elected by the city council, for a term of five years, one member retiring each year. The first board consisted of J. A. Rayl, chairman; C. D. McGoffey, secretary; J. W. Gaut, treasurer; F. A. Reeve and W. W. Woodruff.

In 1874 a new house was erected on Morgan Street at a cost of \$6,000, and a school known as the Peabody School was established. In 1877 the trustees of Hampden Sidney Academy erected a new building on State Street, and tendered it to the board of education for the use of the public schools. The offer was accepted, and the next year a school for girls was opened in it. In 1881 the schools had again become crowded, and through the courtesy of the trustees of that property the Female Institute on Main Street was obtained for the use of a girls' high school. This building was occupied until 1885, when the school was transferred to the Barton Block at the corner of Church and Gay Streets. In 1886, at a cost of \$35,000, one of the finest public school buildings in the South was erected for the accommodation of girls from the third to the tenth grades, inclusive. It is a three-story brick, and is fitted up and furnished with all the modern conveniences.

On January 1, 1883, that portion of Knoxville known as the Ninth Ward was admitted into the corporation, and in February following graded schools were organized in a building which had been previously erected, and which has since come into the possession of the city.

From the first, colored schools have been maintained upon an equal footing with the white schools. Since 1881 these schools have been in charge of colored teachers exclusively, and have been admirably well managed by them.

In 1864, before the close of the war, the United Presbyterian Board of Freedmen's Missions opened a school in Knoxville for the colored children, and continued it until the opening of the public school. One of the teachers in this school, Miss Emily L. Austin, of Philadelphia, afterward erected a small house in the Third Ward, and there taught a small private school for several years. In 1880, the accommodations for the colored pupils of the public school having become insufficient, a new building known as the Austin School was rented. For this purpose the

city furnished a lot and \$2,000, and Miss Austin procured the remaining \$8,000 required to complete the work, from voluntary subscription, in the Northern cities. In the new building, one room was reserved for an industrial school, which was established, and opened under the direction of Miss Austin. Work was begun with a sewing school and kitchen garden school for girls, and later a carpenter shop was built for the boys, although many difficulties were met with the new feature proved a success, and larger rooms and better facilities soon became a necessity.

In 1885 the Slater Training School for the manual training of colored children was incorporated with the following board of trustees: Rev. Dr. Thomas W. Humes, president; E. E. McCroskey, vice-president; Miss Isa E. Gray, of Boston, treasurer; Miss E. L. Austin, secretary; W. S. Mead, C. Seymour, A. S. Jones (of Washington, D. C.) and R. B. Hayes (of Fremont, Ohio), and the work of raising funds for the erection of a new building was begun. By the citizens of Knoxville \$1,000 was contributed, and nearly \$5,000 was obtained from friends of the cause in the North. In 1886 a house three stories high, with a brick basement, was erected, and furnished with all modern improvements. In September the school was opened with an attendance of over 200. Three grades of the city schools are taught in the building, and these pupils are required to take a course in the industrial department. For the boys a carpenter shop and a printing office have been fitted up, and each placed in the hands of a competent teacher. The girls receive instruction in sewing, cooking and housekeeping. In connection with the school a Young Men's Christian Association and a Shakespeare Club, composed of the teachers of the colored school, are maintained, and nothing that tends to the elevation of the colored race, morally, intellectually and physically, is neglected.

The following is a list of the superintendents of the Knoxville city schools since their establishment: Alexander Baird, Jr., 1872-75; Rev. H. T. Horton, 1875-78; R. D'S. Robertson, 1878-81; Albert Ruth, 1881.



## COMPARATIVE STATISTICS.

Year.	Number of Pupils Enrolled.	Average Attendance.	Number of Teachers Employed.	Cost per Pupil Enrolled.	Expenditures.	Scholastic Population.
1874	1,102	780	20	\$11 24	\$ 7,522 11	1,829
1875	840	609	20	13 81	11,600 00	1,992
1876	1,500	849	20	11 84	12,916 76	1,992
†1877	.....	...	20	.....	12,178 21	.....
†1878	.....	...	23	8 12	12,420 22	.....
1879	1,509	930	24	9 05	13,659 83	2,100
1880	1,759	1,253	...	8 48	14,913 44	*2,748
1881	1,984	1,512	26	7 91	15,690 05	3,044
1882	2,137	1,558	30	7 55	16,086 20	3,044
1883	2,265	1,519	34	8 18	19,920 69	3,196
1884	2,737	1,955	44	8 92	24,421 30	4,315
1885	2,781	2,142	50	9 98	27,753 97	4,817

\* Before 1880 the scholastic population included only those between the ages of six and eighteen.

† No report made.

Intimately connected with the colored public schools is the Knoxville College, a normal and training school for colored teachers. It is controlled and supported by the United Presbyterian Board of Missions, but receives the colored students appointed to cadetships in the University of Tennessee, and also a portion of those receiving State normal scholarship. The work was begun in September, 1875, when a normal school was opened in East Knoxville, under the superintendency of Rev. J. P. Wright, and a new building was begun on an eminence northwest of the city. This building was completed in 1876. It is a brick, 64x84 feet, four stories high, and contains seven large class rooms, and a chapel capable of seating 400 students, besides several rooms for teachers.

In 1877 two small buildings were erected for the use of pupils who wished to board themselves, and the following year a cottage was built for the use of the president and his family. In 1881 a large dormitory and boarding house 45x110 feet, four stories high, was added to the main building.

The school opened in 1875 with three instructors. The next year there were four, and since that time the number has increased to twelve. The students in attendance have increased in the same proportion, and the capacity of the institution is now taxed to the utmost. In addition to instruction in all the branches of education, the girls are given lessons in sewing and cooking. All of the work connected with the institution is performed by students, and thus expenses are reduced to a minimum. The present president of the college is Rev. Dr. J. S. McCulloch.

Outside of Knoxville, the only town in the county of any considerable importance is Concord, situated on the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia

Railroad, and also on the Tennessee River about —— miles below the city. It was laid off in 1854 upon land owned by James M. Rodgers. The first store was opened by George Gilbert, and the first dwelling was erected by S. Calloway. Among the other merchants before the war were Pate & Russell, William Boggle and William King. Those of the present time are Cox & McNutt, Russell & Boyd and Pepper & Galbraith, dry goods and groceries; C. B. Newhouse, groceries and provisions, and Joseph Doak, drugs. Within the past five years Concord has become the center of a large marble business. It is surrounded by quarries producing the finest varieties of marble in East Tennessee, and is the shipping point for them. In 1881 forty-one carloads were shipped, in 1882, 113, in 1883, 238. Since that time the increase has been even more rapid. The following quarrying companies are situated in the territory tributary to Concord: Lima & East Tennessee, organized in 1882; Stamps, Wood & Co., 1884; Buckeye, Gem, Concord, Bond, Kincaid and Great Bend, organized in 1884; Steinert, organized in 1885, and the Republic organized in 1886.

In 1883 a mill for the sawing and polishing of marble was erected at Concord by the Juanito Company, and run by them until January, 1886, when it was purchased by the Enterprise Marble Company. They at once made extensive improvements, and are now doing a large business. As they purchase all their marble they are enabled to obtain stone to suit their customers, and as they keep a large stock of slabs on hand, they can always fill orders upon short notice.

Besides Concord, the stations upon the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad in Knox County are Lenoirs, Bearden, Ebenezer, Caswell and McMillan. Those on the Knoxville & Ohio Railroad are Powell Station and Bull Run.

To assign to any one of the three denominations—Presbyterians, Methodists or Baptists—the honor of priority in the work of bringing the gospel into the frontier settlement of Knox County, is impossible. It is certain, however, that one did not precede another more than a few months. Brave and hardy ministers of each denomination kept pace with the vanguard of civilization, and as soon as a few settlers had established themselves in a neighborhood, those “ambassadors of the Lord” sought them out and their coming was always hailed with delight. The simple announcement that there would be preaching at a station on a certain day was sufficient to bring together the entire population for miles around. Nor did it matter to what denomination the minister belonged. To these pioneers, destitute of all those means of entertainment common to older communities, a meeting served to satisfy the inher-

ent desire for some kind of social excitement. Besides as a class they were eminently a godly people, and no opportunity of renewing their spiritual strength was neglected.

The denominations mentioned, however, were at that time more widely different in their doctrines and methods than at the present day, and it was not long until religious controversies sprang up. The Presbyterians and Baptists were both Calvinists of the strictest sect, yet in almost every other respect they were antagonistic. The Methodists, being Armenians in belief, were in opposition to both. The Presbyterians included in their membership the more cultivated portion of the community, and, having an educated ministry, they naturally established and controlled nearly all the schools, especially those of a higher grade. The strength of the Baptists lay among the poorer, and, as a rule, the uneducated people. The Methodists occupied a middle ground. In the following pages the growth of each denomination will be traced separately, beginning with the Methodists.

In the fall of 1787 the elder of the Nollichucky Circuit received letters from persons low down on the Holston and French Broad Rivers, informing him of their destitute condition. It was decided, after consultation, that Thomas Ware, one of the ministers of that circuit, should visit them and attempt to form a circuit. He went in the autumn of 1788, and after a winter of toil and exposure succeeded in forming the French Broad Circuit. But little is known of this circuit, except that it was probably south and west of the French Broad River, and included what is now Cocke, a part of Jefferson, Sevier, Blount and Knox Counties. The next year Daniel Asbury was assigned to this circuit, but as it does not again appear upon the records of the general conference until after the cessation of the Indian wars, it is probable that Asbury failed of success, and a portion of the circuit was attached to Holston.

It is scarcely probable that either of these men organized societies in Knox County, but if they did they were south of the Holston and French Broad. One of the oldest societies in the county was organized in the southeast part on the French Broad River, near the Seven Islands, among the Cunnynghams, Huffakers and Greens. Two of the early pioneer Methodist preachers went out from that region, Jesse Cunnyngham and Jesse Green. James Green, a brother of the latter, was for many years a local preacher.

Another society was organized at about the same time near where Logan's Chapel and camp-ground were afterward built, and perhaps one was established in the neighborhood of the Frenches, Rules and Goddards, six or seven miles south of Knoxville. The first church organized



north of the river was at Macedonia, four miles east of Knoxville, where the Aults, Wagoners, Haynies and Luttrells lived. This became a great rallying point for the Methodists early in the present century, and was one of the first places at which camp-meetings were held.

But little is definitely known of the early work in Knox County. On November 1, 1800, Bishop Asbury, while on his way from the Cumberland settlements to North Carolina, accompanied by Bishop Whatecoat and William McKendree, visited Knoxville, and were entertained by Joseph Greer, an old friend of Asbury's. The Bishop preached in the "State House" to a congregation of about 700 people, only a portion of whom could gain entrance to the house. Asbury, in speaking of this day in his journal, says, "We came off in haste, intending to make twenty miles that evening, but Francis A. Ramsey pursued us to the ferry, ferried us over, and took us to his excellent mansion." In the autumn of 1802 Bishop Asbury visited Knoxville twice, and on both occasions was entertained by Col. Ramsey and Mr. Greer. At neither time, however, did he hold religious services in the town. November 25 he preached at the home of Justus Huffaker, a local preacher, living near Seven Islands in the French Broad. This year had been one of great prosperity to the church in the Holston country, and two new circuits were formed. The French Broad, the one containing Knox County, extended westward from the west line of Greene County, on both sides of the French Broad and Holston Rivers. To this circuit during the next ten years the following assignments were made: In 1802, Luther Taylor; 1803, John Johnson; 1804, E. W. Bowman and Joshua Oglesby; 1805, Ralph Lotspeich; 1806, James Axely; 1807, Benjamin Edge; 1808, Nathan Barnes and Isaac Lindsey; 1809, James Trower; 1810, William Pattison; 1811, George Elkin and Josiah Crawford.

In November, 1812, Bishop Asbury, accompanied by William McKendree, made his last visit to Knoxville. This time he was the guest of Father Wagoner, "one of Otterbine's men," whose son afterward became a local preacher. There had been great interest manifested in religion during the previous year, which is remembered for the large number of accessions to the church, and the conference from which Bishop Asbury was returning had established a Knoxville Circuit, to which Samuel H. Thompson was assigned. He was succeeded the following year by Richard Richards, a man of strong mind and of great popularity. He afterward became addicted to strong drink, and was expelled from the church. Later he reformed, and was again received into membership. In 1814 James Dixon was assigned to the Knoxville Circuit. He was a man of remarkably strong intellect, and defended the doctrines of

his church with signal ability. He carried on a protracted controversy in the papers with Dr. Isaac Anderson, the founder of Maryville College, and acquitted himself to the satisfaction of his church. In 1819 he was again sent to Knoxville, and the following year had the care of the church at Greenville, in addition to his Knoxville charge. During that time he became afflicted with epilepsy, and suffered in a most remarkable manner. He was helpless and almost unconscious for several weeks, and when his consciousness did return he had forgotten everything he had before known. He could not read, and was compelled to learn his letters a second time.

In 1815 John Henninger was assigned to the Knoxville Circuit. He was succeeded by Nicholas Norwood in 1816, Josiah B. Daughtry in 1817, and George Atkin in 1818. The next year Knoxville was made a station, and Knox Circuit, to which Robert Hooper was assigned, was formed. Meanwhile several new churches had been organized in Knox County. One of these was a few miles west of Knoxville, when a building known as Manifee's Meeting-house was erected. Another church and camp-ground was established three miles northwest from the town, and was called Lonas' Camp-ground. About 1833 the camp-ground was removed to Fountain Head Springs, six miles north of Knoxville, where a log church was built at a very early day. A church and camp-ground were also early established at Hopewell, thirteen miles east of Knoxville, and another at Mount Pleasant, seventeen miles northeast. April 7, 1810, John Manifee made a deed to two acres of land lying north of Beaver Creek to John Childress, Solomon McCampbell, Jeremiah Tindall, George Lucas, Daniel Yarnell, Michael Yarnell and Thomas Wilson trustees, for the purpose of building a meeting-house and camp-ground to be free to all denominations. This was known as Bell's Camp-ground, and was frequently used by the Methodists.

At precisely what time a Methodist congregation was organized at Knoxville is not known, but it occurred about 1816 or 1817. The principal mover in its organization was Rev. John Haynie, who had united with the church at Wagoner's in 1809, and who had now removed to Knoxville to labor for the cause of Methodism. He at once began preparations for building a house of worship, and through his friend, a Mr. Nelson, he obtained as a site a lot on the hill, in East Knoxville, from Hugh L. White. A small frame structure was erected, and on account of the liberal donation received from Judge White it was named in his honor. Among the most prominent of the early members of this church were John Haney, Frederick Ault, Henry Graves, J. Roberts, William Seay, Mr. Hudiburgh, Mr. Formwalt and Joseph Bell. A Sunday-school

was organized previous to 1822, and was probably the first in the county. Henry Graves was the first superintendent.

In 1824 the Holston Conference was organized in a small red house on the south side of Main Street, not far from the church.

From 1820 to 1840 Knoxville constituted a station only a portion of the time. For short periods it was at two or three different times included in Knox Circuit to which were then assigned two ministers. In 1836 a brick church was erected upon a lot on Church Street, donated by Dr. James King. It cost about \$5,000 and was first occupied by the Southern Commercial Convention. The old church on Methodist Hill was then given to the colored members, who continued to occupy it until the beginning of the war. Previous to that time the colored members, of whom there was a considerable number, had worshiped in the same house with the white members. Later, a minister was assigned to East Knoxville, who gave one-half his time to the colored congregation, and the other half to a white congregation which assembled at Temperance Hall. During the war the house on Methodist Hill was destroyed by the Federal troops, who also occupied the brick church.

At the close of hostilities the Methodist Episcopal Church South began the work of collecting its scattered members and reorganizing congregations. In Knoxville they found themselves extremely weak. Only one of the old board of trustees, Samuel T. Atkin, remained, and their property was in the hands of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Not discouraged, however, they obtained a lot, erected upon it a new church, and brought suit to recover their former property. Meanwhile they held services in the First Presbyterian Church. After considerable litigation, a favorable decision of the courts was obtained, and the Methodist Episcopal Church was ordered to restore the property to the trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

In 1877 the erection of the present excellent brick building standing upon the site of the old church was begun, and on February 3, 1878, it was dedicated by Bishop Wightman. The members of this church now number over 600. In 1870 a congregation was organized in North Knoxville with about sixty members. A plain and unpretentious frame building was erected on Broad Street and dedicated on June 25, 1871. The congregation and membership grew very rapidly, and soon became one of the most popular churches of the city. Nine years ago, under the ministry of Rev. W. W. Bays, it became necessary to enlarge the house and render it more commodious. The pastors who have served this church are George D. French, B. O. Davis, J. L. M. French, W. W. Bays, J. H. Keith, J. T. Frazier, R. H. Parker and H. W. Bays, who is



serving his third year. The church has very recently erected an elegant brick building on the corner of Broad Street and Fifth Avenue, which, when completed will be one of the most imposing church edifices in the State. It will cost about \$20,000. During the past two years the membership has increased 255 and now numbers about 500. In some respects this church has no equal in the Holston Conference. The official board is aggressive, plucky and determined, while the ladies of the communion are one of the chief sources of power.

In 1885 a second church in North Knoxville was built by the co-operation of the two older congregations, and is known as Centenary Church. It has a membership of 114.

In 1886 a neat frame house was erected on the old site on Methodist Hill, and a congregation now worships there under the ministration of Rev. W. H. Bates.

Among the other congregations in the county belonging to the Methodist Episcopal Church South are Concord, Geitzentanner, Lyon's Bend, Erin, Ebenezer, Pleasant Hill, Asbury, Cedar Grove, Riverdale, Brookside, Macedonia, Bethlehem, Wood's Springs, Stony Point and Hopewell.

At two or three different times a periodical, under the auspices of the Holston Conference, has been published at Knoxville. The first was the *Holston Messenger*, established in 1824 by Rev. Thomas Stringfield. It had formerly been published at Huntsville, Ala., as the *Western Armenian* and *Christian Instructor*. It was continued at Knoxville but a short time. On May 5, 1846, the first number of a weekly paper, the *Methodist Episcopalian*, appeared, and continued as such about four years, when it was changed to the *Holston Christian Advocate*, which was also published about four years. In December, 1862, a religious weekly called the *Holston Journal* was established under the management of C. W. Charlton, but upon the evacuation of Knoxville, the following September, it suspended. Since 1884 the *Holston Methodist*, originally established in Bristol, was removed to Knoxville, where it is now issued by the Holston Publishing Company, of which W. H. Valentine is business manager. The editor is Rev. R. N. Price. The *Methodist* is a large eight-column folio weekly, and is one of the best church papers in the country.

On May 27, 1864, a call for a convention of members and preachers of the Holston Conference, loyal to the United States Government, to be held in Knoxville on the first Thursday in July, was issued by William G. Brownlow, J. A. Hyden, E. E. Gillenwater, William T. Dowell, James Cumming, Thomas Russell, William H. Rogers and

David Fleming. At the appointed time fifty-four delegates assembled in the Episcopal Church, and organized by electing E. E. Gillenwater chairman, and Robert G. Blackburn secretary. The most important action of this assemblage was the adoption of the report of a general committee favoring a return to the Methodist Episcopal Church, subject to the approval of its general conference. This action was ratified by that body at its next meeting, and under its authority the Holston Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church was organized at Athens on June 1, 1865. During this year the First Methodist Episcopal Church at Knoxville was established under the pastorate of Rev. Dr. John F. Spence. The officers elected were W. G. Brownlow, R. D. Jaurolman, E. N. Parham and C. W. De Pue, trustees, and S. P. Angel, William Rule, H. C. Tarwater, F. M. Wheeler and J. F. Ambrose, stewards. For three years services were held in the courthouse and the First Baptist Church. In 1867 the erection of the present church on Clinch Street was begun, and completed in 1869. It is a large and commodious brick structure, having a seating capacity of 600. The congregation is a large and growing one, numbering at present over 300 members. A Sunday-school is also maintained with a membership of over 200. In 1872 a second church was organized by Thomas H. Russell with about thirty members, and soon after a house of worship was erected in Asylum Street. It is a brick structure and cost about \$4,000. The members now number about 120. A Sunday-school, of which Charles McGlothen is superintendent, is maintained with a membership of over 200. There are now in Knox County thirty-five congregations under the care of the Holston Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, with an aggregate membership of 1,931 in full connection, and 207 probationers. The circuits and congregations are as follows: Knoxville, Clinch Street, I. A. Pierce, pastor; Asylum Street, J. W. Holden, pastor; Knox Circuit, W. C. Daily, pastor; Rocky Dale, Antioch, Fountain Head, Corinth, Clapp's Chapel, Copper Ridge and Macedonia; New Salem Circuit, M. A. Rule, pastor; Jones' Chapel, New Salem, Oak Grove, Hendron's Chapel; Little River Circuit, P. H. Henry, pastor; Logan's Chapel, Cox's, Bethlehem and Walker's; Thorn Grove Circuit, R. O. Ayres, pastor; Pleasant Hill, Thorn Grove, Cedar Ridge, Oak Grove, Underwood, Huckleberry Springs, Asbury, Union and Sunny View; Loveville Circuit, J. M. Durham, pastor; Ebenezer, Scott's Chapel, Beaver Ridge, Bell's, Palestine, Boyd's Chapel, Pleasant Hill, Grigsby's Chapel and Valley Grove.

To the Presbyterians is due the honor of having established the first regularly organized congregation of which there is any record. The following account of the first religious service, and subsequent organization

of a church, is condensed from a manuscript prepared by the late Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey in 1875. "Tradition says that in the early autumn of 1789 or 1790 a surveying party composed of land explorers, adventurers, hunters and farmers had met at the junction of the French Broad and Holston, and that while thus assembled, they were approached by a clerical looking individual on horseback, who informed them that he was on his way to Houston's Station beyond Little River, where some of his old acquaintances from Virginia had settled, and that his mission was to organize the Presbyterians of this region into congregations. In the party whom he addressed were many who had belonged to Presbyterian congregations in their native States, and he was eagerly besought to make an appointment to preach upon his return, at Gilliam's Station. To this he consented, and upon the appointed day an immense crowd assembled, including nearly all the settlers for miles around. They came from Baker's Creek, Pistol Creek, Little River, Elijah Creek, Stock Creek, all the country south of the French Broad, and in the north from House Mountain to Grassy Valley. The place chosen for the meeting was a large Indian mound, which, until recently, stood at the fork of the French Broad and Holston, immediately back of where afterward was erected the house of the late Dr. Ramsey. From this mound the canebrake was removed and seats were arranged upon it. The text, chosen by the speaker was 2 Corinthians v, 20, from which he preached an eloquent sermon. At its conclusion he announced that any parents who wished to offer their children in holy baptism to the Lord, would be allowed that privilege. Many embraced the opportunity, and some of nearly adult age, who had been born in the wilderness, were admitted to the ordinance. While these services were going on another minister came upon the ground, and having been introduced, was invited to preach a second sermon. He stated that he had been circulating among the forts and stations, and that, hearing of the appointment, he had come to the meeting. He commended the sermon which he had heard, but said that the subject had not been exhausted, and proceeded to preach from the same text. He was Rev. Hezekiah Balch, and the first speaker Rev. Samuel Carrick. It was arranged that there should be a second service at an early date, which was accordingly held, and resulted in the organization of a Presbyterian Church near Gilliam's Station. It was named "Lebanon-in-the-Fork," afterward abbreviated to Lebanon. Among the first members of this church were the families of James White, James Cozby, John Adair, James Armstrong, Deveraux Gilliam, Archibald Rhea, Sr., Archibald Rhea, Jr., James and Alexander Campbell, Jeremiah Jack, George McNutt, Col. Francis A. Ramsey, Thomas Gillespie, Robert



Craighead, Robert Brooks, Joseph Love, Jacob Patton and Robert Houston. Rev. Samuel Carrick was installed as minister, and located with his family near what has since been known as Carrick's or Boyd's Ford on the Holston. Mr. Carrick was very popular, and Lebanon soon became the center of a very large congregation. A church about eighteen feet square without windows or floor was erected. It was not large enough to contain the worshipers, and in good weather and always on communion days the services were held in a grove of cedars near by. In 1793 it became necessary to build a house on a larger scale and of a more imposing appearance. Col. Ramsey donated nine acres as a site, and upon an eminence in the center of a grove of cedars, a house 40x60 feet, of logs, straight and well hewed, was erected. The ground around had long been used as a cemetery by trappers, traders, and later by the soldiery and settlers within reach, and was consequently the first burial ground in this region. Among the first Christian interments was that of Mr. Carrick's wife. It occurred on the day of the expected Indian attack upon Knoxville in 1793, when all the male inhabitants had gone out for the protection of the town. The burial of Mrs. Carrick's body, therefore, devolved upon the women, and by them alone, it was brought in a canoe, and deposited in the churchyard. About 1803 Mr. Carrick was succeeded by Rev. Isaac Anderson, who divided his time between Lebanon and the Washington congregation which had been organized on Roseberry Creek. He continued in charge of these churches until 1813, when he removed to Maryville. During his pastorate in 1810, a new church of stone was erected upon the site of the old church at Lebanon. This was used until some time in the forties, when the present frame house was erected.

Almost from its organization the Lebanon congregation maintained a school in connection with the church. The first school was taught in 1791, in a shanty standing near the church. It had been a hunter's lodge for years before. The teacher's name was Thompson, an Englishman, who continued to enlighten the youth of the neighborhood for many years. A new house was soon built on the Dandridge road. It was somewhat more comfortable than the first but still rude in the extreme. It had neither floor nor windows, and the seats were made from rough puncheons, supported upon round pins driven into them. The teacher was a strict disciplinarian, and brought with him the old English customs of using the dunce block and fool's cap. The former was improvised from the stump of a small sapling which had been left standing about two feet high in the middle of the room. The fool's cap was made from an old copy-book twisted into the proper shape. The chief text book was

Dilworth's spelling book. The Bible and the catechism were also taught, and the deacons of the church were regular in their visits to the school to see that the latter subjects were not neglected.

Other houses and teachers followed, and about 1828 a building was erected on the line between the farms of Dr. Ramsey and James Jack. This became quite a high school, in which the classics were taught. In 1835 an association was formed for the purpose of establishing an academy. The trustees were Maj. Aaron Armstrong, Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey, James Jack, John Naill and Isaac Patton. A building, 18x36 feet was erected, and Noble A. Penland, then pastor of the Lebanon church was installed as teacher. This institution was known as Mecklenburg Academy.

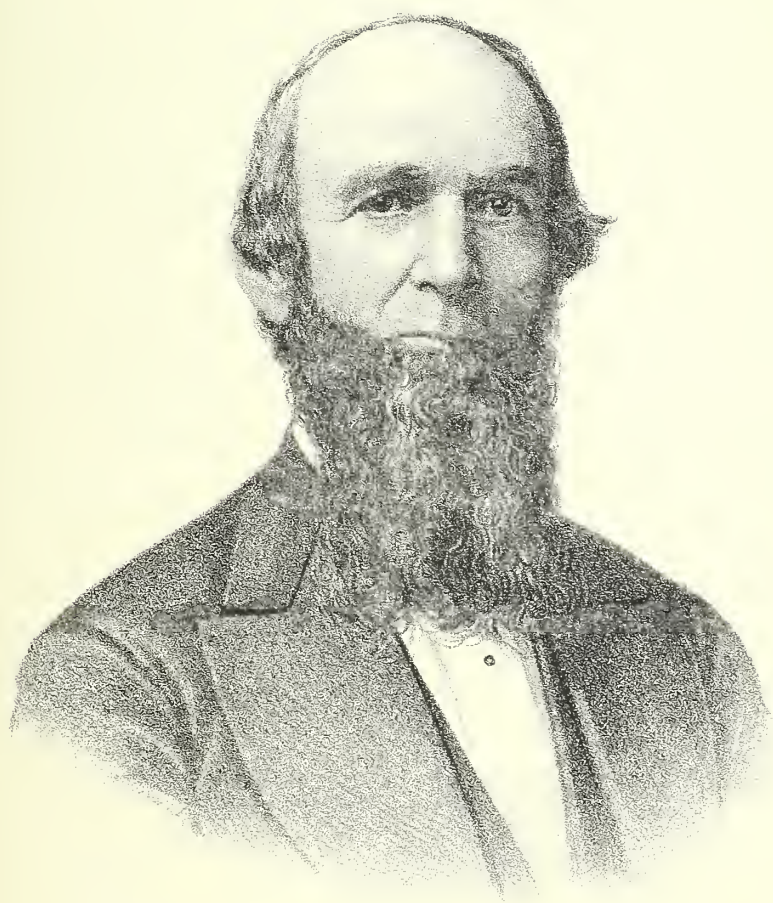
Meanwhile other congregations had been organized and other schools established. The church at Knoxville was organized by Mr. Carrick, soon after he became pastor of the Lebanon Church, but nearly all of its members had previously been enrolled with the latter congregation. Its first ruling elders were James White, George McNutt, John Adair, Archibald Rhea, Sr., Dr. James Cozby and Thomas Gillespie, the first three making the original bench. In September, 1794, the Territorial Legislature incorporated Blount College, with Mr. Carrick as president,\* and he was continued in that capacity and also as pastor of the church until his death in 1809. The church was then without a regular pastor until 1812, when Rev. Thomas H. Nelson was installed. Up to this time no house of worship had been erected, religious services having been held in the courthouse and at the barracks. During the year previous, however, under the inspiration of a sermon preached by Rev. Samuel G. Ramsey, three commissioners: John Crozier, Joseph C. Strong and James Park, had been appointed to contract for the building of a house. This duty they accordingly performed, and late in the autumn of 1812 the work upon the brick meeting-house had sufficiently advanced to allow of its occupancy, although it was not entirely completed and furnished until 1816.

At this time there was a debt of \$529.17, which was assumed by the three commissioners mentioned above. The sight consisting of one acre was donated by James White.

Soon after the completion of this house, a portion of the members became disaffected, and in 1818 sent up a petition to Union Presbytery for permission to organize a new congregation, alleging as a reason, the insufficient accommodation of the old church. This was considered, however, by the other members as but the pretext of the "Hopkinsian"

---

\*See page 416.



*James Rodgers M D*  
KNOX CO.





party for withdrawing from the old organization, and when the petition, having been refused by the presbytery, went upon appeal to the synod of Tennessee, a remonstrance was sent up. The synod nevertheless disregarded the remonstrance, overruled the decision of the presbytery, and ordered the petitioners to organize the Second Presbyterian Church of Knoxville.\*

An appeal was then taken by the session of the First Church to the General Assembly of 1820, but the decision was allowed to stand.

Mr. Nelson continued in charge of the church until his death in September, 1838 and under his pastorate 204 names were added to the communion roll. During this time also the following elders had been elected: Thomas Humes, James Campbell, John Craighead, Moses White, Robert Lindsey, James Craig, Dr. Joseph C. Strong, James Park and William Park.

After the death of Mr. Nelson, the pulpit of the First Church was supplied successively by Samuel Y. Wyley, Joseph I. Foot, Charles D. Pigeon and Rev. Reese Happersett, none of whom continued more than a few months. In 1841 Robert B. McMullen, then a professor in the East Tennessee University, was installed as pastor, and continued as such until the latter part of 1858, when he became president of Stewart College at Clarksville. The following year W. A. Gallatin was elected pastor. He continued until February, 1864, when he was sent South by the Federal military authorities. In March, 1855, a new house of worship, which had been begun in 1852 upon the site of the old house, was dedicated. This building, from November, 1863 to May 1, 1866, was used by the United States authorities, first as a hospital, then as barracks, afterward as quarters for refugees from upper East Tennessee, and finally was turned over to the Freedman's Bureau, and was used by them as a colored schoolhouse.

In February, 1866, Rev. James Park, who had recently returned to Knoxville from Georgia, was requested by several members to preach. Having no house he, upon his own responsibility, rented the Baptist Church, which was then vacant, and there continued to hold services until the following May, when the First Church was restored to the congregation. At this time there were but thirty-nine members, of whom David A. Deaderick, William S. Kennedy and George M. White were the elders. Under the care of Dr. Park the church prospered, and many accessions were received. In 1869 the church building was repaired and refurnished, and the lot improved at a cost of more than \$5,000. On May 21, 1876, Dr. Park was again elected pastor, and has since con-

\*Historical Discourse by James Park, D. D.

tinued in charge of the church. During his pastorate, a period of a little more than twenty years, about 600 members have been added to the church which now has a membership of about 300.

At a *pro re nata* meeting of the Presbytery of Knoxville, held at Sweetwater, December, 18, 1873, the petition of several members of the First Church, and a few other persons to be organized as the Third Presbyterian Church of Knoxville, was granted, and a committee, of whom Dr. Park was chairman, was appointed to attend at Knoxville on the Friday night before the third Sabbath in January, 1874, hold a meeting to embrace the Sabbath, and organize the new congregation. This duty was discharged, and in January, 1874, the church was constituted embracing twenty-nine communicants, four ruling elders and four deacons. Until a house of worship could be erected, services were held in the Caldwell Schoolhouse. In 1876 the present fine brick structure, situated on Fifth Avenue, was dedicated.

For the first eighteen months this church was served with efficiency by Rev. J. P. Gammon, during which time the number of communicants was about tripled. Mr. Gammon was succeeded by Rev. Dr. W. A. Harrison, who has since had pastoral charge of the church, and under his care the membership has increased to nearly 500. The present elders are Dr. Benjamin Frazier, Dr. J. D. Carter, W. H. Simmonds, Dr. John M. Kennedy, James L. Cooley, Lewis Roth, A. McDonald, Joseph A. Porter and Samuel A. Caldwell. The deacons are F. A. R. Scott, Thomas E. Oldham, J. C. J. Williams, Joseph L. Bauman, James P. McMullen and George McCully.

Near the close of the last century, and at about the time of the organization of the First Presbyterian Church at Knoxville, two other Presbyterian Churches were established in Knox County by Rev. Samuel G. Ramsey, a brother of Col. Francis A. Ramsey. They were Pleasant Forest, situated about two miles north from Concord Station, and Ebenezer, situated upon the site of the present Ebenezer Station, near the latter place. Mr. Ramsey established a sort of preparatory school for young men, which was known as Ebenezer Academy, and for a few years this was the leading educational institution in the county. Here attended Dr. J. G. M. Ramsey, W. B. A. Ramsey, Richard G. Dunlap, and his brothers Hugh G. and William C., John and Robert Singleton, Joshua Armstrong, William Moore, Charles McClung, also Matthew and James McClung, and the sons of Gov. Blount. Mr. Ramsey had for an assistant a portion of the time a young man, John Bain, who had been educated under Rev. Samuel Doak, and who was preparing for the ministry.



While Mr. Ramsey was thus educating the young men, Mrs. Ramsey conducted a school for girls, and so excellent was the instruction given that she received several pupils from Knoxville. For some time before his death Mr. Ramsey became enfeebled by disease, and was finally compelled to resign his pastoral charges. He was succeeded by Richard King. Mr. King was a man of fine intellect, and an excellent speaker. Physically he was very large and corpulent, so much so that in his later years he sat in a chair while preaching. About 1825 Mr. King was succeeded by William Higgleton, who continued until 1830, when William A. McCampbell was chosen pastor.

Until 1833 the two churches, Ebenezer and Pleasant Forest, were united in one congregation known as the Grassy Valley congregation. In that year the members in the vicinity of Pleasant Forest formed a separate organization with seventy-three members, and installed Samuel H. Doak as pastor, while McCampbell continued at Ebenezer. Mr. Doak was succeeded in 1838 by Samuel G. Willis, and he in turn the next year by A. A. Mathes. In 1848 Rev. Dr. James Park became pastor of both churches, and so continued until 1853. After the completion of the railroad Pleasant Forest was reorganized as Concord and erected a church at that station, while the congregation at Ebenezer removed two miles north of its old location and organized as Cedar Springs Church. In 1859 Dr. Park again became their pastor, and so continued with a short interval during the war until 1866. He also supplied their pulpit on Sunday afternoons for two years longer.

These churches have always been old school, and now form a part of the presbytery of Knoxville, the origin of which is as follows: In April, 1839, the general assembly of the Presbyterian Church, by its famous "excision act," having cut off the presbytery of Union, the few members including only about eight ministers still adhering to the old school doctrines, met near Greenville, Tenn., and organized Holston Presbytery. In October, 1846, this presbytery was divided by a right line running from Cumberland Gap to the southeast corner of Blount County, and the portion to the west of that line was erected into the presbytery of Knoxville.

Two periodicals have at different times been published at Knoxville in the interests of the Presbyterian Church. The first was the *Western Monitor*, established about 1819, and the other the *Presbyterian Witness*, established some time in the forties and published by Kinsloe & Rice.

Contemporaneously with the founding of Ebenezer and Mount Pleasant Forest by Mr. Ramsey, Washington Church situated on Rosebury Creek, was organized by Rev. Dr. Isaac Anderson, one of the ablest men

who ever occupied the pulpit in East Tennessee. He also established there a school known as Union Academy. In 1803 Mr. Carrick resigned his charge of Lebanon Church, and from that time until 1813 Dr. Anderson divided his time and attention between Washington and Lebanon. He had adopted the peculiar doctrine known as "Hopkinsianism," and under his teaching, many not only among his own congregation but among members of neighboring churches had been converted to his belief. After he removed to Maryville his old admirers did not forget him, and in 1818 he was invited by some of the members of the First Presbyterian Church at Knoxville, to return and preach to them. This he did, and the result was the organization of the Second Presbyterian Church of Knoxville, which took place on October 24, 1818. The elders chosen at this time were Archibald Rhea, John McCampbell, Thomas Craighead, Joseph Brown and John Taylor. An acre lot was purchased from Gideon Morgan, and the work of erecting a house of worship was immediately begun. By April, 1820, this work had so far advanced, that the building was dedicated by Dr. Anderson. It was not entirely completed, however, and for nearly ten years the walls remained unplastered.

Dr. Anderson continued to preach in the church until 1829, during which time 153 members were added. The next regular pastor was Rev. Jefferson E. Montgomery, who began his labors in 1831, and remained until 1838. In October, 1840, he was succeeded by Rev. William Mack, who resigned three years later. Under the ministry of these two men, 225 names were added to the communion roll. In February, 1845, John W. Cunningham was installed as pastor, but was succeeded in about a year by Rev. J. H. Meyers, who continued until April, 1857. The sixth minister was J. H. Martin, who served the congregation from July, 1857, to October, 1863. During his pastorate the present church building was erected, at a cost of \$14,236.84. It was begun in the fall of 1859, and dedicated November 11, 1860. During the latter year, a chapel for Sunday-school, prayer meetings, etc., was built from the materials of the old church, at a cost of \$2,219.

For two years during the war the church was without a pastor, after which Rev. R. P. Wells preached for a few months. In October Rev. Nathan Bachman began his labors, which continued for several years. He was succeeded by F. E. Sturgis. The present pastor is T. S. Scott, who was called from Rockford, Ill., in 1885. The present membership of the church is nearly 500. A Sunday-school has been successfully maintained since, some time prior to 1832, and its pupils now number over 500. Among those who have served as superintendents may be mentioned Hugh A. M. White, J. H. Cowan, Campbell Wallace, John R. Henry and W. P. Washburne.

On April 24, 1886, a new congregation was organized in North Knoxville, and known as the Fourth Presbyterian Church; Rev. E. A. Elmore is the pastor.

The churches mentioned, together with Spring Place, six miles east of Knoxville, organized several years before the war, and New Prospect in the Fourteenth District, organized in 1871, constitute what was once the new school element, and now belong to a Union Presbytery of the Presbyterian Church. Shannon Dale, a church recently organized on the Tazewell Pike, is also a member of this body.

This Presbytery in common with the others in the synod withdrew from the general assembly of the Presbyterian Church in 1858, but at a meeting held at New Market in 1863, a resolution not to license or receive a member who sympathized with the Southern Confederacy, was adopted, and at the next meeting which was held at Spring Place Church on September 2, 1864, a resolution was adopted favoring a return to the general assembly of the Presbyterian Church.

On August 23, 1866, the members of Knoxville Presbytery who had remained loyal to the United States, met at Baker Creek Church in Blount County and organized Holston Presbytery. This continued as a separate body until the union of the old and new school presbytery was formed, when it was consolidated with other presbyteries in the synod of Tennessee. The only congregation organized in Knox County under the Holston Presbytery was Pleasant Forest, now in Kingston Presbytery.

The first Cumberland Presbyterian Church in Knox County was organized in the year 1824, near the place known as Low's ferry, the residence of the late Gen. S. D. W. Low, about two miles from the present village of Concord, which took its name from this church. Andrew Russell, William Rodgers, William Gounds, J. W. Craig, Thomas Boyd and S. D. W. Low were among the first ruling elders and deacons. James Guthrie, George Russell, George Donnell, James Blair, Samuel B. West, Hiram Douglass and A. Templeton were early ministers. A camp-ground was also established at this church, where for many years meetings were held annually in July or August. The congregation, numbering about eighty members, is now worshiping in its fifth house, which is located in the village of Concord. The present pastor is Rev. J. S. Porter.

A second church, known as Marietta, was organized soon after Concord at the mouth of Hickory Creek in the Ninth Civil District, and a third, Beaver Creek, was established in the Eighth District, near the present site of Powell's Station. Union Church in the Tenth District, two miles west of Campbell's Station, was organized about 1863, and West Emory, two miles southwest of Ebenezer, in 1879.



In the spring of 1883 a commission, composed of Rev. E. J. McCroskey, J. R. Butt and T. W. Kellar, was appointed by the presbytery to take steps for the establishment of a church in Knoxville. Mr. McCroskey entered upon the work of soliciting subscriptions, and as soon as a sufficient amount had been obtained a lot was purchased, and the erection of a house begun. In the spring of 1885 the work had progressed sufficiently to allow of the occupancy of the building, but it is not yet entirely completed. In March, 1885, the congregation was organized with J. R. Butt and T. W. Kellar, elders; J. B. Malcolm and T. W. Carter, deacons. W. H. Baugh was installed as pastor, and so continued until June, 1886, when he was succeeded by J. V. Stephens. The present membership of this church is 110, and of the entire county about 600.

Previous to 1837 the churches in Knox County belonged to Knoxville Presbytery, but on March 15 of that year, by authority of the synod, Hiwassee Presbytery was organized at Lebanon Meeting-house, in Monroe County. It embraces all of East Tennessee from the upper line of Knox County to the Hiwassee River. The first moderator was John Tate, and the first stated clerk, Floyd McGonegal.

The Baptists began preaching and organizing churches in Knox County about 1790. It may have been a year or so earlier than that, as a church was organized at the mouth of Richland Creek, in Grainger County, in 1788. The oldest church in the county, still in existence, is Little Flat Creek, which was organized in 1796. Among the earliest ministers may be mentioned William Johnson, Isaac Barton, Richard Wood, Elijah Rogers, Thomas Hudiburgh, Duke Kimbrough, Robert Fristoe, Thomas Hall, Richard Newport and West Walker. Nearly all were men of limited education, and received no pay for their services, but they possessed a rude and fervid eloquence, well suited to the mass of their hearers, and their congregations grew. It was not long until the Baptists had outnumbered both the Presbyterians and Methodists, and they have ever since maintained that position. As the history of the denomination in Knox County is largely the history of the Tennessee Association, it will be traced in connection with that body.

On the 25th of December, 1802, delegates from nineteen Baptist Churches, formerly belonging to the Holston Association, assembled at Beaver Creek Meeting-house, in Knox County, and organized the Tennessee Association. William Johnson was chosen moderator and Francis Hamilton, clerk. A plan of association and statement of religious principles was adopted, embracing, with some slight alterations, an extract from "Asplund's Register."

Of the nineteen churches represented at this meeting five were located

in Knox County. They were Beaver Ridge, represented by Aquila Low, Thomas Hudiburgh and Jesse Councill; Hickory Creek, represented by William Helms and John Finley; Fork of Holston and French Broad, represented by Alexander Bleakley; Little Flat Creek, represented by Richard Newport, Eli Scaggs and George Halmark, and Beaver Creek, represented by Francis Hamilton, John and Hezekiah Boyles. These churches, as reported the following year, embraced an aggregate membership of 172.

The first annual session of the association was held at Big Spring Church, in Grainger County, with the same officers as at the preceding meeting. Elder Richard Wood preached the introductory sermon from Acts xx, 28. Letters from twenty-three churches were received, showing a total membership in the association of 1,615. In 1806 Stock Creek Church with twenty-four members was organized, and its delegates, Aaron Smith and Abraham Reid, were admitted to seats in the association. During the next two or three years the association did not prosper, and the membership in 1809 aggregated only 1,466. Accordingly, November 4, of this year, was appointed a day of fasting and prayer for the revival of religion. In 1815 the subject of foreign missions was first introduced to the association. At the next session Luther Rice, the agent of the Baptist Board of Foreign Missions, was present, and a constitution for a local missionary society was adopted, with the reservation, however, that the churches were not to be bound by the action of their delegates. In 1817 twelve churches, situated in the counties north and northwest of Knox County, withdrew and formed Powell Valley Association, leaving seventeen congregations in the Tennessee Association. At the next session the churches in Knox County were represented as follows: Hickory Creek, John Courtney, Henry Loward, Arnold Moss, Sterling Kemp, John Freeman and Rowland Childs; Stock Creek, Joseph Johnson, James Trice and James Childers; Little Flat Creek, Peter Graves; Forks of French Broad and Holston, Randall Davenport; Beaver Ridge, Thomas Hudiburgh, Obed Patty and Eli Cleveland, and Beaver Creek, Willis Hammons. The last named church had not been represented for ten years previous. At this session a meeting of the missionary society was appointed to be held at Robert Tunnell's, in Knox County in May, 1820. At the session in 1822 the number of churches in the association had increased to twenty-eight, and it was agreed to divide it by a line running from Chilhowee Mountain with the Little Tennessee River, to the Holston; thence northwest so as to include the east fork of Poplar Creek and Hickory Creek in the upper end. A committee was then appointed to meet at Pisgah on the fourth Saturday in

May, 1823, to form a constitution for the lower association which was known thereafter as the Hiwassee Association. This left eighteen churches in the Tennessee Association, but other congregations were soon after formed and admitted. In 1830 the number had increased to twenty-six, and in 1835 to thirty. In 1836 Beaver Creek Church changed its name to Beaver Dam Creek. It afterward became simply Beaver Dam.

In 1829 a congregation was organized at Union Meeting-house, and its delegate, Thomas Hunt, was admitted to the association. From this time until 1843, however, it was not again represented. At that session J. S. Waters and Z. Reeder were its delegates. In 1830 a church known as Third Creek was organized in Knox County, and in 1833 its delegates, J. Hillsman and Samuel Love, were admitted to the association. In 1835 Hickory Creek Church withdrew. At about this time the schism in the church between the mission and anti-mission factions began to threaten serious damage to the cause. Queries from individual churches with reference to tests of fellowship, were received each year by the association, but the danger of expressing a decided opinion was apparent, and it was avoided as long as possible. In 1837, however, the query was received from Zion Church—"Is it right to fellowship the Baptist State Convention or home missionary and temperance societies?" The reply was, "We advise our churches not to make the joining or not joining of institutions any test of fellowship." This resulted in the withdrawal of two churches and serious divisions in others. The anti-mission party, however, were very largely in the minority, and the Tennessee Association stood unshaken. In an address issued by the association in 1843 to the Baptists of the State, urging the importance of a general association, is the following: "We rejoice that so much union seems to exist on the subject, and cannot help looking back to the origin of this convention, when it was followed by an opposition fierce and clamorous; we rejoice that whilst the anti-mission spirit has been prowling around our association and convention, we have been so far preserved from its withering and destructive influence, and instead of being annihilated by its insults and torpedo touch, our churches, under the blessings of the God of missions, have been greatly increased and built up in their strength."

During these troublous times new churches continued to be established. Those in Knox County were Mount of Olives, in 1837; New Hopewell, 1840, and Knoxville, 1843.

As has been stated in the early history of the Baptist churches in East Tennessee its greatest numerical strength lay in the country and remote from towns, therefore it is not strange that the organization of a



church at Knoxville occurred at so late a date, and that when it did occur the membership was so small, numbering as it did only twenty-six white persons, and twenty colored. It is remarkable, however, that its organization was suggested by a man not a member of any church, and was effected chiefly through his instrumentality. That man was James C. Moses, who, with his brother John L. Moses, had then recently arrived at Knoxville. He afterward was the first person baptized into the fellowship of this church, was its first clerk, a member of its first board of deacons and trustees and the first superintendent of its Sabbath-school.

On the 15th of January, 1843, a sort of mass meeting, composed mainly of Baptists from the surrounding country, met in the upper room of the courthouse, at which time arrangements were made for completing the organization of a congregation on the following Sabbath. The ministers present upon this occasion were Rev. Messrs. Kennon, Kimbrough, Milliken, Bellue, Coram and Ray. During the next few months the church grew rapidly, and by August the enrollment reached eighty-five. Thirty having been added by experience and seventeen by letter, while seven had been dismissed and one excommunicated. This large increase was due to two revivals, which were held during the spring and summer. The first was conducted in the First Presbyterian Church by Rev. Dr. Baker, of Texas, and the other by Rev. Israel Robards, a man of great power, who drew large crowds to hear him. He continued for several successive days and nights, and awakened a deep interest.

The first pastor of the church was Rev. Joseph A. Bullard, who remained but one year. Prominent among his successors may be mentioned G. W. Griffin, L. B. Woolfolk, J. L. Lloyd, J. F. B. Mays, George B. Eager, C. H. Strickland, and the present pastor, E. A. Taylor.

In 1844 the erection of a church on Gay Street was begun, and completed about two years later. This served the congregation as a place of worship until 1886, when one of the finest churches in the South was erected upon the site of the old church. It will cost when completed \$30,000. Of this sum, one member, Capt. W. W. Woodruff, contributed one-half.

This church now has a membership of 640, and maintains a Sunday-school with over 500 scholars.

In November, 1873, a second congregation was organized in Knoxville, and a house of worship was erected on McGhee Street. The location was found to be unsuitable, however, and in November, 1880, the congregation was disbanded. A short time after a mission was established in the northern portion of the city, and there in November, 1885, Calvary Church was organized with Rev. O. L. Hailey as pastor, and L. Huddle-

ston, W. C. McCoy, W. A. J. Moore, G. W. Peters, J. J. Martin, J. R. Dew and J. A. Galyon as trustees. It has since been highly prosperous, and in one year the membership has increased from 53 to 115. But to return to the association.

In 1844 the "New Hampshire Confession of Faith" was adopted. The radical difference between these articles and those adopted at the first session in 1802 is conclusive evidence of the great revolution which had taken place in the church. From this time until the beginning of the civil war, the association continued to prosper. In 1862 there were within its bounds thirty-nine churches, having an aggregate membership of 4,119, of whom 125 were colored. Six new churches have been established in Knox County. They were, Adair Creek, 1845; Brick Chapel, Lyon Creek, Mount Pisgah and Mars' Hill, now Gallaher's View, 1855, and Sinking Creek, 1859.

During the war nearly all the churches suffered more or less from loss of both members and property, and some were entirely destroyed. But the work of reviving old churches and establishing new ones was entered upon with zeal and energy, and in 1870 there were forty-five churches and 4,705 members within the bounds of the association. Of this number fifteen churches and 1,755 members were included in Knox County.

In 1873 Little River Association was formed, and the following year, seven churches, including all of those in Knox County south of the Tennessee River, except Stock Creek, withdrew from the Tennessee Association to join Little River, now Chillhowee Association.

Since January, 1870, new churches have been constituted in Knox County as follows: Stock Creek, 1870; Sharon, 1871; Pleasant Gap, 1874; Meridian, 1874; Pleasant Hill, 1875; Mount Harmony, 1875; Fair View, 1877; Guesses Creek, 1877; Hill's Chapel, 1879, and Calvary, 1885. There are now in the county twenty churches belonging to the Tennessee Association, having a combined membership of 2,434, and four belonging to the Chillhowee Association, with an aggregate membership of 642, making a total of twenty-four churches, and 3,076 members.

At three different times periodicals have been published at Knoxville, under the auspices of the Tennessee Association. The first was established in 1855, and was known as the *Baptist Watchman*, a weekly, edited by M. Hillsman. It continued only a few years. In 1868 D. M. Braeker began the publication of the *East Tennessee Baptist*, which in 1870 was consolidated with the *Christian Herald*. In 1880 the *Beacon* was established by Rev. J. B. Jones. After about two years it was consolidated with the *Reflector*, of Nashville, and has since been published in Chattanooga as the *Baptist Reflector*.

Until 1844, ten years after the first bishop of the diocese of Tennessee was consecrated to his office, no Episcopal Church had been organized in East Tennessee. Several attempts had been made to establish a church at Knoxville, but each had resulted in a discouraging failure. In March, 1844, Thomas W. Humes, who was a candidate for the ministry, began to serve as a lay reader on the morning of each Lord's day, but, owing to the deep prejudice existing in the community against the Episcopal Church, the movement met with strong disfavor, and the congregations were small. On the 9th of June, Rev. Charles Tomes, of New York, by appointment of the bishop, took charge of the parish, and entered upon his work with energy and zeal. The services were at first conducted at a dwelling-house, but were soon transferred to a small building at the northeast corner of Gay and Church Streets, which was donated for that purpose by Andrew R. Humes. This building was neatly fitted up as a chapel, and was occupied for over two years. On July 22, 1845, the corner-stone of St. John's Church was laid with appropriate exercises by the bishop of the diocese. At about this time T. W. Humes, having been ordained a deacon at Columbia the preceding March, became an assistant to the rector. On September 21, of the following year, Mr. Tomes resigned the rectorship, and was succeeded by Rev. Mr. Humes, who continued in that position, with the exception of about two years in the early part of the war, until 1869, when he also resigned. During the two years previous to September, 1863, the rectorship was occupied by Rev. William Vaux, of Loudon.

In the year 1844 the communicants of St. John's Church numbered twenty-one. Upon the resignation of Mr. Tomes in September, 1846, they had increased to forty-one. During the next fifteen years of Mr. Humes' first incumbency about 154 were added, and about 132 were lost by death and removal, leaving in September, 1861, a membership of sixty-two. During the next two years this number was diminished so that, upon Mr. Humes resuming the rectorship in September, 1863, he found only thirty-six communicants; they were increased during the next five years to ninety. Rev. William Graham succeeded to the rectorship in January, 1869, and served until the autumn of 1870. He was followed by Rev. John H. Smith, who resigned at the end of nearly four years, and was succeeded by Rev. Thomas Duncan. Mr. Duncan ministered to the congregation very satisfactorily for nearly six years.

In 1867 Dr. Humes, the rector of St. John's Church, and his assistant, William Mowbray, laid the foundation of the church of the Epiphany in North Knoxville. The first services were held in the cemetery. The next Sunday the basement of a steam mill was procured, and this



was used for a time. Through the instrumentality of Charles McGhee a lot was soon after obtained, and during the next year the present church, located on Broad Street, was completed. Mr. Mowbray served the church as rector for about two years, when, after an interval, he was succeeded by Rev. Everard Meade, who continued in charge of the church for several years. The next rector was A. A. McDonough, who also remained about ten years.\* The present rector is Rev. A. Buchanan. The church now numbers over 100 communicants, and is in a highly prosperous condition.

The Church of Christ, or Disciple's Church as it is some times denominated, had its beginning in 1870; a few of that faith meeting in hired rooms and from house to house for prayer and Bible study. Gradually growing stronger they, on the first Lord's day of September, 1874, under the direction of L. H. Stine, a young minister, then just from school at Bethany, W. Va., united in a covenant to worship God according to the Holy Scripture, and became a regularly organized congregation with A. C. Bruce as elder and N. R. Hall and George T. Rhoades as deacons. Their number at this time was eighteen, all poor. They have gradually increased until now they count seventy-six on the roll of membership. The present officers are N. R. Hall and Lewis Tillman, elders; T. P. McDaniel, George T. Rhoades and M. O. Cooley, deacons. During the more than twelve years elapsing since their organization they have had only about two years of preaching. The other while the elders have conducted the worship, and but few Lord's days have passed without the meeting of the Sunday-school and the congregation in their regular service. The ministers who served the congregation at different times are E. F. Taylor, A. S. Johnson and N. G. Jacks. For a number of years the congregation met at the corner of Depot and Broad Streets, then at their church house on McGhee Street. Recently they have built a house of worship on Park Street, a very neat frame with round tower and cathedral windows in front, and having a seating capacity of 500, and there they now regularly meet on Lord's day. The church is now without a pastor, but efforts are being made to have the pulpit filled for the coming year.

The Church of the Immaculate Conception, Roman Catholic, was established at Knoxville in 1851, and from that time until 1855 was under the care of Rev. Father H. V. Brown. The first church building was erected soon after the organization, on Walnut Street near Vine. It was used until 1886, when the present fine brick was completed. The congregation now numbers over 1,000 members, and a Sunday-school is maintained with an attendance of about 300. The successors of Father

Brown have been J. L. Biemans, March, 1855, to October 24, 1857; J. Bergrath, October, 1857 to May, 1865; A. J. Ryan, May, 1865 to June, 1867; Joseph S. Keane for one year from June, 1867, and M. J. Finnegan from June, 1867 to July, 1872; since the latter date the church has been under the care of Rev. Francis Thomas Marron.

The first Evangelical Lutheran congregation organized in Knox County was Zion, established on May 18, 1823, seven and one-half miles south of Knoxville on the "Picken's Gap Road." by Rev. George Easterly. The original members were George Houser, Peter Long and Henry Long, together with their wives, to whom were added upon the day of organization by confirmation: Jacob and Frank Long, Sarah and Lydia Houser, Joseph Sane, and William Baker and wife, the latter of whom is still living.

The first building erected was a log structure, which was occupied until 1859, when the present frame was completed at a cost of \$1,200. The pastors of this church have been George Easterly, Jacob M. Schaffer, J. K. Hancher, J. C. Bart, J. Cloninger and George H. Cox.

A second congregation was organized about seven miles northeast of Knoxville, about 1829, by Rev. Adam Miller, who became its first pastor. Since his incumbency, this church has been supplied by the same pastors as Zion Church. In August, 1873, a congregation, known as Bethel, was organized about four miles southwest of Knoxville on the Maryville road, by Rev. George H. Cox, who has since continued as its pastor. The original members were L. E. Williams and wife, A. A. Rudder and wife, Alexander Henson and wife, Mrs. S. Maxey and N. B. Williams.

In 1869, at the request of Dr. Passavant, a benevolent gentleman of Philadelphia, Rev. John Heckle came to Knoxville and organized an Evangelical Lutheran Church, among the incorporators of which were Peter Kern, C. Sturn and John Aurin. A frame house, 31x50 feet, was soon after erected and dedicated. At that time there was a debt outstanding and held by members amounting to \$2,700. This was promptly and generously canceled by the creditors. Mr. Heckle continued in charge of the church over four years, and after an interval of about eighteen months was succeeded by the present pastor, J. George Schaidt, a graduate of the Philadelphia Theological Seminary. Under his pastorate the church has greatly prospered, and now has a membership of about 180.

The Welsh Congregational Church, of Knoxville, was the first church of the kind organized in the county. Many Welsh people came to the city from Pennsylvania in April, 1866, and were the leading managers and workmen in the rolling mill. Many of them were pious and faithful

Christians, and for about three years united themselves with the Second Presbyterian Church, assembling for Divine worship in their lecture room, but in June they resolved to organize a congregation of their own, and to build a church edifice on Atkin Street, in Mechanicsville, now the Ninth Ward. Accordingly, a neat frame house, capable of seating about 250 persons, was erected at a cost of \$3,000, to which \$1,000 for improvements and repairs have since been added. These amounts were paid by the free contributions of the Welsh people, assisted by the liberal donations of the citizens of Knoxville and other places. The first trustees and deacons were Joseph Richards, John Jones and Thomas Davis. On February 12, 1870, Rev. Thomas Thomas was installed as pastor, and continued until the close of 1871. In September, 1872, Rev. Robert D. Thomas (Lorthryn Gwynedd) commenced his ministry, and labored successfully for three years. In July, 1877, he returned, and continued, as pastor until June, 1882, when he resigned, and in November, 1883, was succeeded by Rev. D. D. Davis. The latter remained until December, 1885, since which time Mr. Thomas has served the congregation. A good Sabbath-school, a Band of Hope and a temperance society are also maintained. The present officers are Robert D. Thomas, pastor; David Richards and David C. Richards, deacons; E. J. Davis, treasurer; David J. Richards, secretary, and E. J. Davis, superintendent of the Sabbath-school.

A preliminary organization of the Pilgrim Congregational Church was made in June, 1886, by Supt. C. C. Creeg. In September following E. Lyman Hood was called to the pastorate, and on December 19 the organization was completed with twenty-three members. No house of worship has yet been erected, but services are held in the Young Men's Christian Association rooms.

Previous to the war the colored members of all denominations in most instances worshiped with the white congregations, but since that time they have maintained separate organizations.

The First Baptist Church known as Mount Zion was organized in March, 1866, by Rev. Talton Emory with thirteen members. A house which has since been remodeled and enlarged was erected in 1869, and is now valued at \$6,000. The present membership is nearly 1,000. Two other Baptist Churches have since been organized.

The African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church was organized about 1866, and worshiped for a time in a house on Clinch Street. They are now occupying their third house, an excellent frame building erected in 1883. The membership of this church is very large.

The African Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in 1884 by



J. W. Grigsby, and in 1886 they erected a neat frame house on Crozier Street.

Shiloh Presbyterian Church was organized about 1869, and is now a member of Union Presbytery. Its house of worship is situated on Clinch near Henley. The membership is about 135.

The Second Congregational Church was organized April 21, 1883, by S. P. Smith, the present pastor, with eighteen members. Under the auspices of the American Missionary Association, the Methodist Church on Mabry Street was purchased, and has since been organized. The congregation numbering about sixty members includes some of the best colored citizens of the city.

Attempts to establish common schools in Knox County were made as early as 1830, but, as in other sections of the State, little of value was accomplished. Under the system inaugurated in 1839, somewhat more benefit was derived from them, but the funds for their support were inadequate and the instruction afforded by them was of very inferior character. Under the law of 1867 an attempt was made to put a system of public schools in operation, and for a brief period considerable progress was made in that direction. The first school was opened in the Thirteenth Civil District on May 14, 1865, and on September 13, 1869, the one hundred and twenty-sixth school was opened. Of this number twenty-three were for colored children. The lack of sufficient funds and the irregularity of their payment, the absence of suitable hours and a not inconsiderable hostility on the part of the public, conspired to render the system unsuccessful. No tax was levied by the county court, and although a tax of three mills on the dollar was voted by the citizens of Knoxville, no levy was made by the board of aldermen. With the funds received from the State, amounting to \$2,225.47, a few schools were opened in the city, but these ceased, as did those in the country, upon the repeal of the law in December, 1869. Under the law of July, 1870, the county court levied a tax sufficient to run the schools for four or five months in the year, but as no county superintendent was elected, there was a general lack of discipline and thoroughness. The county board of education, composed of district commissioners, was too unwieldy and consequently inefficient for almost all practical purposes. In 1873 the present school law went into effect, and in April of that year Mr. T. C. Karns was elected county superintendent. In August the boards of directors were chosen, and soon after schools were organized in every district. For 1873 the rates of county tax for school purposes were 10 cents on each \$100 worth of property, \$1 on each poll and ten per cent of the privilege tax. The same rates were maintained

in 1874 and 1875. The total amount of money received during the latter year from both State and county tax was \$23,698.31, while the aggregate expenditures was \$37,877.72. The total scholastic population was 9,689, of whom 5,603 were enrolled in the schools. The number of schools opened was 100 white and twenty-one colored.

Since that time there has been a steady improvement in the schools of the county. Better houses have been erected, numerous institutes have been held, thereby increasing the efficiency of the teachers, the schools have been better graded, and the length of the session has been increased. The county superintendent in his report for 1886 says: "Our schools in Knox County were in a very prosperous condition during the past year. The increase in scholastic population, enrollment average, daily attendance and uniform grading show that we have made greater progress than in any previous year. There were in operation 127 schools, the most of which continued five months. There were erected during the year five handsome school buildings, furnished with neat desks and comfortable seats, at a total cost of \$3,700. The amount of funds received from the State and county amounted to \$34,544.39. The expenditures aggregated \$35,769.94. The scholastic population excluding Knoxville was 11,149, and the enrollment 8,749."

The following named persons have held the office of county superintendent: M. C. Wilcox, T. C. Karns, H. M. Brother, H. C. Hamstead, W. C. Gibbs, Frank M. Smith, J. R. Shipe and John W. Saylor.

# BIOGRAPHICAL APPENDIX.

## KNOX COUNTY.

H. M. Aiken, president and sole owner of the Tennessee & Ohio Railroad, was born in Morgan County, Ohio, March 4, 1844, and in early boyhood was taken to Virginia. He graduated at Washington and Jefferson College in 1863, and in the law department of the University of Pennsylvania. A year later he came to Knoxville, and was admitted to the bar in 1865. He practiced his profession five years, then became clerk of the United States Courts eight years, since which time he has devoted his attention to railroading and steamboating. The Tennessee & Ohio Railroad connects Rogersville with the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, and is sixteen miles in length; the bridge over the Holston River is said to be the highest in the State. This road was constructed in 1858, and purchased by Mr. Aiken in 1879. He also owns a line of steamers, which ply the St. John's River, Florida. In 1867 he married Mary, daughter of Gov. Brownlow, to whom six children have been born, all now living. William A., the father, was born at Hamburg, Penn.; was a minister in the Presbyterian Church, and filled one charge in Virginia twenty-five years. In 1866 he came to Knoxville, and resided here until his death, May, 1886. The mother, Martha Osborn, is a native of Ohio, and now resides in Knoxville. Our subject is one of a family of five children, two of whom are deceased.

Capt. Samuel P. Angel, now a prominent and influential citizen and merchant of Knoxville, Tenn., is a son of Samuel and Martha G. (Burrow) Angel. He was born in Carter County, Tenn., in 1840. His father was born in 1807 and died in 1872. His mother was born in 1813 and died in 1864. Capt. Angel was reared in Elizabethton, Tenn., by parents who were strict Methodists in faith and practice, and acquired an excellent education at Duffield Academy of that town. In 1863 he enlisted in the Federal Army, joining Company G, Thirteenth Regiment Tennessee Cavalry, as a private, but was soon promoted to orderly sergeant of that company, to sergeant-major of the regiment in 1864, to adjutant of the regiment in 1865, and to captain of Company H in the same year. At the battle of Saulsbury, N. C., he was wounded in the right



hand, and had a horse shot from under him. At the close of the war the brigade to which Capt. Angel's company belonged, having been ordered South in pursuit of Jefferson Davis, the fleeing ex-President of the Southern Confederacy, he passed through Lexington, Ga., and was the first Federal soldier to enter the residence of Hon. Alexander H. Stephens in a rather social call, and received the kind hospitalities of that distinguished gentleman. Mr. Stephens received them most cordially, and entertained them elegantly at "tea," and said he supposed that they had come to arrest him. To his great ease and comfort he was informed that they had neither instructions nor authority to do so. After peace was declared and the armies were disbanded, Capt. Angel located in Knoxville, Tenn., and engaged in his present business in October, 1865, leading dealer in guns, sporting goods, sewing machines, etc. In the same year he married Miss Julia E. Piper, then a member of a family of social prominence in Rogersville, Tenn. She was the daughter of William and Lucinda (Beal) Piper, the former a native of Virginia, and the latter of Tennessee, and was born in 1848. There were born unto them five children, three of whom are living as follows: Blanch, Samuel P., Jr., and William P. Capt. Angel joined the Edward Maynard Post, No. 14, G. A. R., of Knoxville, the same year of its organization, and is still an honored member of the same. In religion Capt. Angel is a Methodist, and is an active, zealous and efficient member of the Methodist Episcopal Church. In 1884 he was elected by the annual session of the Holston Conference a lay delegate to the general conference of that church, held in Philadelphia, Penn., and attended its sessions. For a number of years he has been prominently identified with the Sunday-school work of his church, and the union work of the county, and is at present not only president of the Knox County Sunday-school Convention for the second time, but is president of the East Tennessee Sunday-school Convention for the present year. Capt. Angel has an honorable record of patriotic and useful labor, and is a valuable citizen of the community in which he lives.

D. F. De Armond, an old and prominent farmer, was born in Knox County July 17, 1807. He is the son of Richard I. and Rhoda (Hinch) De Armond, natives of North Carolina and Virginia. The father was one of the early settlers of East Tennessee. Our subject was educated in the subscription schools of his native county, and has never attended a free school. His education was very limited, but, notwithstanding this, he has acquired, by study and observation, sufficient knowledge to enable him to transact all ordinary business. In 1831 he married Miss Sarah Hines, a native of Knox County, Tenn., born December 28, 1812, and

died September 13, 1883. She was the daughter of Robert Hines. To our subject and wife were born twelve children—ten sons and two daughters. Five of these children are deceased—four sons and a daughter. The daughter died when but five years of age. Of the four sons deceased two lost their lives in the Federal Army and one in the Confederate Army. The fourth was a Federal soldier, and died of lung disease a few years after the close of the war. The children now living are Columbus, James, Dowe, David, Marian and William. Our subject was justice of the peace for a number of years, and was postmaster at Gap Creek for thirty years. He is the owner of more than 800 acres of Knox County land, and is a Democrat in politics.

Moses A. M. Armstrong, register of Knox County, Tenn., was born in the year 1861, and is the son of Thomas N. and Ann Eliza (Love) Armstrong, both natives of Knox County, Tenn. The father is a successful farmer, and is now engaged in agricultural pursuits in this county. Our subject, five brothers and one sister are the surviving members of a family of eight children born to the union of their parents. Moses Armstrong grew to manhood on the farm, and secured a good education at Asbury, this county. He is a charter member of the land improvement company, of Knoxville, which was organized in December, 1886, and he was elected to his present office August 5, 1886. He is a young man of energy and push, and the future is bright before him.

J. K. Ault, a farmer, and a native of Knox County, Tenn., was born December 4, 1834. He is the son of Michael and Mary (Brown) Ault, both natives of Tennessee, and of German and Scotch lineage respectively. The subject of this sketch was reared on a farm, and educated in the common schools. In 1858 he chose for his companion in life Miss Margaret Karns, a native of Tennessee, who bore him six children, two of whom are deceased. Those living are Charles L., William G. and James W. Charles L. was born September 18, 1859, and is a contracting carpenter. He married Miss Rachel Rutherford in 1879, and their children are Lizzie and Margaret. The next is James W., a grocer, at 192 Mabry Street, Knoxville, who was born July 26, 1865, and who married Miss Cynthia J. Bounds in 1883. Two children, Bettie Lee and Lena May, have blessed this union. Our subject owns a farm of seventy-five acres of land in the Second District of Knox County, and 300 acres in Loudon County. In 1874 his wife died, and in 1875 he married Miss Martha Rutherford, who bore him four sons and three daughters, one son and one daughter being deceased. Those living are Albert H., Henry A., Margaret D., Cynthia C. and Robert B. Mr. Ault and his sons are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and are Democrats.

R. D. Badgett, farmer, was born July 13, 1820, within a mile of where he now resides. He is the sixth of eight children born to Burwell F. and Lucy (Faulkner) Badgett. (For further particulars of parents see sketch of B. F. Badgett.) Our subject attended school several years at the East Tennessee University, and taught school during the year 1851. At the age of twenty-four he engaged in business for himself and was in only moderate circumstances. Besides \$40,000 which was destroyed and stolen during the late war, he owned a fine farm of 166 acres under a splendid state of cultivation, and located on the Tennessee River nine miles southwest of Knoxville. In March, 1855, previous to the war, he married Miss Eliza Jane Reeder, a native of Blount County, born in 1833 and the daughter of Maj. Reeder. Mr. and Mrs. Maj. Reeder were born and reared in Virginia. He immigrated to Tennessee, a poor man, at quite an early day, but by industry has accumulated quite a fortune. To our subject and wife were born these children: Susie R., Barekley Majors (deceased), Susan Reeder, Charles, Nannie V., Cassandra E. (Mrs. C. N. Martin), Elizabeth Wallace, Rebecca J. and Roberta C. Mr. Badgett is a Democrat in politics, casting his first presidential vote for James K. Polk, and he and his family are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He is a Master Mason, and served his district as school commissioner two years.

B. F. Badgett, a successful agriculturist of the Eleventh District, was born May 4, 1833, near the mouth of Little River. He is one of nine children born to B. F. and Lucy (Faulkner) Badgett, natives of Buncombe County, N. C., where they were reared and married. About 1813 they immigrated to Tennessee, settling near Stock Creek in Knox County. B. F. Badgett, Sr., took quite an interest in the political affairs of his county and State and was a very successful farmer. He and his wife were of purely Irish descent. Our subject had excellent educational advantages, and lacked only six months of graduating in the classical course at the East Tennessee University. When twenty-two years of age he married Miss Clementine Gillespie, a daughter of Cowin Gillespie, of Blount County, Tenn. The result of this marriage was the birth of six children: William C., Lucy A. (deceased), Eglentine (Mrs. S. L. Tillery), Mary (deceased), Ransome N. and Florence C. Mrs. Badgett died August 16, 1874, and October 23, 1877, Mr. Badgett married Miss Josephine M. Cottrell, a native of Knox County, and the daughter of Samuel and Louisa T. (Sommers) Cottrell. To Mr. and Mrs. Badgett was born one child named Rebecca. Mr. Badgett is a Democrat in politics and cast his first presidential vote for James Buchanan. He is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church and his wife is a member of



the Missionary Baptist Church. He is a Master Mason and a prominent citizen of the county. He has been quite successful as a farm manager and had accumulated considerable property before the war but lost a great deal of it during that event. He now owns 418 acres of land, nine miles southwest of Knoxville. He has some rich deposits of very valuable marble and ore on his farm.

S. E. Badgett, a successful tiller of the soil, was born February 7, 1834, on a farm, where he has since resided. He is the third of nine children born to Ransome and Sophira (Hunter) Badgett. Ransome Badgett was born and reared in Surry County, N. C., on the Yadkin River. He came to Tennessee in 1812, settling on the farm where his son now resides. He organized a company for the war of 1812, and equipped it at his own expense. He was a very enthusiastic and successful farmer, and accumulated considerable property. He was one of the men who ran the State line between Georgia and Tennessee. He died in 1862, aged about ninety years. He was a very prominent civil engineer, and assisted considerably in establishing the boundary lines of the different counties of his part of the State, and also made quite an extensive study of medicine, his books being purchased in England by his father. His father, James Badgett, was born and reared in North Carolina, where he died. Ransome Badgett's wife died in 1865, aged about seventy-one years. Our subject was educated in the common schools of Knox County, and after reaching his majority was united in marriage to Miss Drucilla Sharp, a native of Union County, a member of the Missionary Baptist Church, and the daughter of Andrew and Sinai (Zackery) Sharp. Mr. Badgett inherited some property from his father, but by his success as a farmer, manager and practical business man, has added considerable to what he then received. He owns 125 acres of splendid land well improved and well cultivated, situated nine miles southwest of Knoxville. He is a Democrat in politics, and cast his first presidential vote for the Whig candidate of 1856.

J. H. Ballard, dairyman, was born in Albemarle County, Va., August 17, 1838. He received a common-school education, and grew to manhood on the farm. He began for himself by collecting for people in Charlottesville, Va. In 1861 he joined the Confederate Army as a private in Company K, Second Virginia Cavalry. This corps, before it was known as Company K, was called "Albemarle Light Horse." He reached the rank of captain, and was in many of the principal battles and skirmishes. He served fourteen years of his life as deputy collector, deputy marshal and United States Gauger in Virginia. In 1863 he married Miss Sallie A. Whitehead, of Nelson County, Va., who is the daughter of Floyd L.

Whitehead, of Virginia. To this union were born eight sons and one daughter, two of the sons being deceased. Mr. Ballard came to Knoxville, Tenn., in 1886, purchased a tract of ninety acres of land situated near Knoxville and in the Second District. On this tract he is farming and dairying. He is not a political schemer, but is a faithful Republican. He is the son of Thomas and Lucy B. (Duke) Ballard.

A. A. Barnes, a retired lawyer, at present engaged in farming, was born in Chelsea, Vt., in 1821, and is the second of four children born to Henry and Hannah (Rolfe) Barnes, both born and reared in Massachusetts. His grandfathers were both soldiers in the Revolutionary war. Our subject graduated at the University of Vermont in 1845, and studied law at Knoxville under Horace Maynard. He was admitted to the bar in 1849, and then practiced law with Mr. Maynard, afterward with Maj. Thomas C. Lyon. He married Miss Louisa T. Lyon, the daughter of William and Mary Payne (Clark) Lyon, natives of Maryland and Virginia respectively. Mr. Lyon came to Tennessee when eighteen years old, and shortly after his marriage moved to Knox County, where he remained until his death. He was appointed marshal of East Tennessee by Gen. Jackson in 1828. Mrs. Barnes is the youngest of eight children. Her brother, Maj. Lyon, was an aid-de-camp under Gen. Wool in removing the Indians from Tennessee to Indian Territory, was quite a prominent and successful lawyer at Knoxville, and was appointed supreme judge of Tennessee to fill the unexpired term of the judge deceased. Capt. William Lyon, great grandfather of Mrs. A. A. Barnes, donated the land and built the first Presbyterian Church in Baltimore, Md. Mrs. Barnes has a gold watch which was brought to America by Capt. William Lyon, Sr., and is about one hundred and fifty years old, a relic of a past age. To our subject and wife were born three children: Susan Wallace (deceased), Mary Rolfe and Lou Lyon (now Mrs. Rev. F. E. Sturgis, D. D.). Mr. Barnes was formerly a Whig, but now votes with the Democratic party. He and wife and family are members of the Second Presbyterian Church in Knoxville. During the late war he was general ticket and freight agent on the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad. After the war he was appointed general ticket and freight agent on the Memphis & Charleston Railroad for seven years. He originated and signed the first bill of lading of cotton from Memphis to Liverpool. He is a prominent member of the I. O. O. F., and is Past Grand Master of Tennessee, and is also Past Grand Representative of the Grand Lodge of the United States. He is a ruling elder of his church, and was twice appointed commissioner to the general assembly of the Presbyterian Church.

J. F. Baumann, senior member of the firm of Baumann Bros., and the leading architect of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Monroe County, Tenn., January 16, 1844, and is a son of William and Catherine (Snyder) Baumann, both natives of Germany. They came to America when young, and were married in New York. Later they found their way to Monroe County, Tenn. The father was an architect and builder. In 1854 they moved to Knoxville where the mother is still living. Our subject was educated in that city, and in early life learned the carpenter's trade, as he progressed he also commenced taking contracts. Since 1876 he has devoted his energies to architecture. Among the prominent buildings for which he has furnished plans are the First Baptist Church, Broadstreet Methodist Episcopal Church, Catholic Church, Third Presbyterian Church, Staubs' Theatre, the Girls High School building and nearly all of the ward school buildings in the city. Besides he has planned some of the finest residences and business blocks in the city. In 1878 he married Miss Ella K. McCafferty of Alexandria, Va., and they have now three children—one son and two daughters. Mr. Baumann is a member of the Third Presbyterian Church, having been deacon for several years. He is also a member of the Masonic fraternity; a member of the Western Association of Architects, and he is also vice-president of the State association of architects. He is thoroughly identified with the progress and advancement of the city, and enjoys the respect and confidence of the entire community. Mrs. Baumann is a member of the Baptist Church.

William M. Baxter, general solicitor for the East Tennessee Railroad system, was born August 30, 1850, in Alexander, N. C. He is the eldest son of Hon. John Baxter, who appears in the State department of this work. William was brought to Knoxville when six years of age, and here received his primary education. He finished his education at Earlham College, Richmond, Ind.; at Kenyon College, Gambier, Ohio, and at Hobart College, Geneva, N. Y., graduating from the last named institution in 1870 as fourth in a large class. He then began reading law under his father, and two years later was admitted to the bar, becoming a partner of his father. In 1875 he moved to Chattanooga in order to practice his profession, but three years later, his father having been appointed United States circuit judge, he returned to Knoxville and took up the large practice of his father. In 1880 he married Mary, daughter of John Kirkman, of Nashville, and to them were born two children: John K. and William M. In 1882 Mr. Baxter was chosen to his present position and in 1886 he was nominated Republican candidate for supreme judge of the State, and though defeated he had the satisfac-



tion of running over 1,000 votes ahead of his ticket. Mr. Baxter, like his father, has shown himself to be a very able man before a jury. Both he and wife are members of the Episcopal Church.

Herman G. Bayless, M. D., a successful practitioner of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Covington, Ky., March, 25, 1854, and is the son of John C. and Rosa (Lewis) Bayless. The father was born in Louisville, Ky., and was a prominent minister of the Presbyterian Church. Previous to his death, which occurred in 1875, he was minister in charge of the First Presbyterian Church, of Covington and Ashland Ky. The mother was a native of South Carolina, born in 1826 and died in 1858. Our subject was reared in Covington and Ashland Ky., and acquired his literary education at Center College, situated at Danville, Ky. In 1873 he entered the Ohio Medical College, at Cincinnati, Ohio, where he graduated in 1878. He then passed a year at the Good Samaritan Hospital of Cincinnati, after which he began the practice of medicine at Augusta, Ky., where he remained until 1883. He then went to Europe, and spent two years in the hospitals of Vienna, Austria, and London, England. He returned to America, and in January, 1886, located in Knoxville, where he has since resided practicing his profession. June 25, 1879, he married Miss Mary Armstrong, of Augusta, Ky., who is the daughter of Hon. A. C. Armstrong (deceased). To them has been born one child, Herman A. Dr. Bayless is a member of the Masonic, A. L. of H., and other benevolent associations of Knoxville. He and wife are members of the Second Presbyterian Church.

Capt. F. C. Beaman is a native of Malone, N. Y., born Dec. 25, 1836. He received a collegiate education at Middleberry College, Vt., and upon him was conferred the honorary degree of A. M., but his joining the United States Army precluded his receiving the degree of A. B. He enlisted as a private in Company G, Ninety-eighth New York Volunteers, and was promoted through the successive ranks of his company until he became captain. He received the last promotion for gallantry displayed at the battle of Cold Harbor. After the war he located in Knox County, Tenn., and in 1866 engaged in teaching school. In 1868 he married Miss Mary J. Sherrod, daughter of Jonathan Sherrod. She was born in Tennessee, June 13, 1850, and to her marriage were born four sons and three daughters: Orin C., Ruth, Blanche, Clarence, Maggie, Ernest Andrew and James Garfield. After teaching in the graded schools of Knox and Sevier Counties for ten years Mr. Beaman received the chair of ancient languages in the Grant Memorial University at Athens, Tenn., where he remained for four years, and then resigned on account of ill health. He removed to Knox County and began farming, having

purchased land near Knoxville, on which he has carried on farming and dairying until recently. He is now engaged in building and arranging a pleasure park, which consists of forty-five acres, in which is a lake containing ten acres and a school of springs which are noted for their medicinal properties. He has selected a healthful and beautiful spot, which promises to be a favorite resort for pleasure and health. The park is situated two and a half miles from the center of the city, and one mile beyond the terminus of the Bell Avenue and Mabry Street Railroad line. Mr. Beaman is a Republican in politics, and he, wife and eldest three children are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He is an excellent citizen, and is well liked by all who know him. He is the son of Timothy and Rebecca (Allen) Beaman. The father was a native of Vermont and was elected representative to the New York Legislature. He was the brother of F. C. Beaman, of Adrain, Mich., who served twelve years in the United States Congress. The mother was a native of New York, and was related to the Allens of Revolutionary fame.

J. N. Betterton, of the firm of Betterton & Co., wholesale liquor dealers of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Campbell County, Va., born August 22, 1843, and the son of Thomas and Charlotte (Callaway) Betterton, both natives of Virginia. The father was born in 1807, was a merchant farmer and died in 1861. The mother was born in 1811 and died in 1872. Our subject was reared in the county of his birth, and educated at Bristol, Tenn. In August, 1861, he enlisted in the Confederate Army, joining Staunton Hill Artillery, with which he served throughout the war. He removed to Tennessee in 1868, and located at Knoxville, where he engaged in the wholesale liquor business as a member of the firm of W. J. Betterton & Bros. In 1870 he was united in marriage to Mrs. Zephana Steptoe, of Virginia, who was born in 1843, and who is the daughter of J. H. Whitlow, a member of the firm of Betterton & Co. She is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church. In 1880 our subject became a member of the present firm. He is a member of the Felix K., Zollicoffer Camp, No. 3, Confederate Veterans, and also of the Chilhowee Club, of Knoxville.

Adam B. Blake, farmer and one of the oldest living citizens of Knox County, Tenn., was born in South Carolina September 4, 1800, and is the son of John Blake, a native of Ireland, who was born April 14, 1766, and died April 3, 1850. The mother was a native of Ireland, born December 15, 1773, and died November 13, 1837. Her father was a native of Ireland, born December 2, 1768, and completed his education in Glasgow, Scotland; came to Pennsylvania, and here married Miss Mary Smith; came to Tennessee and settled in Knox County, rearing ten children; was

a beloved pastor of the Presbyterian Church, and died August 30, 1826. His wife was born in Pennsylvania April 10, 1777, and died October 11, 1853. Our subject received a very limited education in the common schools, and in 1824 came to Tennessee, settled in the Seventeenth District of Knox County, where in the same year he wedded Miss Jane M. I. Kennedy, daughter of Rev. James Kennedy. She was born in Knox County February 14, 1806, and from her girlhood has been a member of the Presbyterian Church. Mr. Blake has also been a member of the same church from early youth. Nine children were the result of our subject's marriage, one, James K., died when forty-two years of age, he was the eldest of the family. The remainder of the family who are married and living in Knox County, are Mary Jane, John T., Emily W., William H., Nancy E., Eliza A., Adam B. and Sammel M. Our subject is a successful, enterprising farmer, and has accumulated considerable wealth. He is the owner of 600 acres of land in Knox County, which are well improved. He has not been much of a politician, but inclines toward the Democratic party.

John T. Blake, farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., January 23, 1833. He is the son of Adam B. and Jane M. I. (Kennedy) Blake, natives of South Carolina and Tennessee respectively. Our subject was educated in the common schools of his native county, and early in life turned his attention to farming, which occupation he has followed successfully ever since. In 1861 he was united in marriage to Miss Martha E. Cobb, a native of Knox County, born March 5, 1845. Two sons and four daughters have blessed this union. One son, Sammel A., and one daughter Martha J., are married. The son, a farmer, married Miss Mary Hodges, and the daughter married Robert Kennedy, a farmer. Our subject is the owner of 412 acres of fine land in the Sixteenth, Seventeenth and Twenty-third Districts of Knox County, and is considered one of the wide-a-wake, thorough-going farmers of the county. He is a Democrat in politics, and for more than thirty years has been a zealous member of the Presbyterian Church.

William H. Blake, farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., January 23, 1838. He is the son of Adam B. and Jane M. J. (Kennedy) Blake, natives of North Carolina and Tennessee, born in 1800 and 1806 respectively. Our subject secured his primary education in the common country schools, and later attended Holston College in Blount County. After leaving the latter institution he was united in marriage to Miss Mary A. Cobb, who presented him with five children: Margaret J., born February 13, 1866; James K., born December 25, 1866; Alice E., born December 27, 1872; Robert B., born February 26, 1877, and Anna Porter, born



May 14, 1879. Mr. Blake owns over 250 acres of land in the Sixteenth District and 160 acres in the Twenty-third District of Knox County, Tenn. This land is well improved, and our subject has a comfortable home. He takes a great interest in farming and stock raising, in which he is quite successful. He is a stanch Democrat in politics, and he and wife are members of the Presbyterian Church.

George Bond, farmer, was born October 21, 1796, in Virginia, and with his father moved to Knox County, Tenn., December 25, 1802, settling in the neighborhood where Mr. George Bond has since resided. He is the eldest of thirteen children born to Isaac and Sarah (Fryar) Bond. Isaac Bond was a very successful farmer and highly respected citizen. Mrs. Bond was born and reared in Ireland. Her father, William Fryar, immigrated to America about the time of the Revolutionary war, settling in Knox County within three miles of where Mr. Bond now resides. George Bond, grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was born and reared in England as was also his wife, Elizabeth Bond. The latter was disinherited on account of her marriage, and she and her husband immigrated to Virginia, where they reared a family of seven children of which number Isaac Bond, father of subject, was the third child. Our subject received his education after he was twenty-one years of age, while on a trip down the river on a flatboat in Alabama. He remained three months to dispose of his boat load of produce, and while there attended school. When twenty-five years of age he married Miss Eliza Swan, daughter of James and Catherine Swan. Nine children were the result of our subject's marriage: James A., a prominent physician for many years; Sarah L. (Mrs. J. N. Seaton); Hugh M. (deceased); Isaac H., a successful merchant in McMinn County, Tenn.; Catherine J. (Mrs. H. Tedford, deceased); Isabella C. (Mrs. H. Tedford); Stephen F., a prominent farmer of Limestone County, Texas; Mary Eliza, and Martha (deceased). Mrs. Bond died in 1868, and Mr. Bond took for his second wife June 11, 1872, Mrs. Mary Rhea formerly Miss Mary Rockhold. Mr. and Mrs. Bond are members of the Southern General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church. Mr. Bond has been a member of the church sixty-three years, and has been a ruling elder in the same for sixty years. He has resided in the locality where he now lives eighty-four years, and has reared a family of eight children, who are among the most intelligent and respected citizens of the different localities where they live. Mr. Bond has left the impress of his most excellent influence, not only upon his children but upon all with whom he comes in contact. In politics Mr. Bond is Democratic, casting his first presidential vote for the Whig candidate of 1820. He has been a remarkably, energetic and successful

farmer. He owns 500 acres of excellent land twelve miles west of Knoxville, 225 of which are well improved and well cultivated. On this farm are very rich deposits of marble, the finest to be found in Tennessee. Mrs. Bond was a daughter of William and Harriet (Netherland) Rockhold, natives of Maryland and Virginia, and were of English and German descent respectively. Mr. Rockhold was magistrate of his district for about twenty-five years. Mr. John Netherland, uncle of Mrs. Bond, was for many years a prominent attorney at Rogerville, and was a candidate for governor against Isam G. Harris.

James W. Bowman, farmer and hunter, was born in Knox County, Tenn., July 10, 1823, and is the son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Green) Bowman. The father was born in Virginia, June 8, 1783, was a successful farmer, and was brevetted captain in the war of 1812. He died at his home in 1874, having lived eighty-nine years within five miles of that place. Our subject received a fair education, and soon began cultivating the soil. In 1845 he married Miss Mary Goddard, a native of Knox County, Tenn., born January 14, 1827, and the daughter of John and Ann Goddard. To this union were born eight children of whom four sons and one daughter are now living. These are Dr. S. G.; Joseph S., a farmer; Isabella (Mrs. J. D. Winkle), and W. P. and John C. who are farming with their father. Our subject is the owner of 1,000 acres of land, all in one body, situated on the French Broad River. The land is well improved and contains fine marble. Mr. Bowman is an energetic farmer and is quite comfortably situated. He frequents the Cumberland and Smoky Mountains, and often has the good fortune to bring down deer or other game. For the last few years he has been going to the Smoky Mountains to spend the fall of the year, and with his fine pack of hounds, killed thirteen deer at one time. Mr. Bowman is a strong Democrat, and has served as justice of the peace and also as deputy sheriff. He is at present taking much interest in the raising of live stock, especially Shorthorn cattle.

Samuel B. Boyd, of the firm of Boyd & Caswell furniture dealers, was born in Virginia in 1828, and received his education in his native State. In 1851 he came to Knoxville, and in 1853 married Isabella R. Boyd, a native of Knoxville, Tenn.; the fruits of this union were eight children, seven now living. In 1857 Mr. Boyd embarked in the dry goods trade, in the firm of Piper & Boyd, which firm existed only about one year, after which our subject continued the business alone until 1861, when he entered the Confederate service, serving in the ordnance department until captured at Bristol and taken to Camp Chase, where he was held prisoner until the close of the war. He then returned to Knox-

ville and became a member of the dry goods firm of Rayl & Boyd, where he remained until 1871, after which he handled carpets and house furnishing goods alone until 1880; the present firm was formed in August, 1880. He is a director in the East Tennessee Insurance Company, also director of Gray Cemetery for the last twenty-eight years. He has been treasurer of the State Deaf and Dumb Asylum for twelve years, and trustee of the same for twenty-eight years. For fifteen years he was secretary of the board of East Tennessee National Bank and has been director ever since its organization. He was a member of the executive committee for eighteen years. He was the second of a family of five children (two now living) born to James S. and Elizabeth (King) Boyd, natives of Martinsburg, Va., where the mother died in 1833. The father then moved to Illinois four years later, and engaged in merchandising for many years in Carmi, White County. His death occurred in 1883.

Samuel B. Boyd, M. D., junior member of the well known firm of physicians, J. M. and S. B. Boyd, of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in that city March 24, 1853, and is the son of Samuel B. and Susan H. (Mason) Boyd, natives of Virginia. The father was a prominent member of the Knoxville bar, and occupied a position on the chancery court bench; he died in 1855. The mother died in 1885. Our subject was reared in Knoxville, and finished his literary education at the University of Tennessee, entering the preparatory department of that institution in 1866, and graduating in 1873. He at once began the study of medicine with his brother, Dr. John M. Boyd, in Knoxville, and during the years 1873-75, attended the University of Pennsylvania, at Philadelphia, where he graduated in 1875. He then returned to Knoxville, and at once began practicing his profession which he has continued up to the present with evident success. He is a member of the Knox County Medical Society, of which he has served as president, secretary and treasurer, and is the present secretary of the city board of health. In 1876 he married Miss Maggie A. Baker, a native of Tennessee, born at Sinking Creek in 1857, and the daughter of Dr. Harvey Baker. Two children were the fruits of this union, one, D. W. Boyd, is living. Both Mr. and Mrs. Boyd are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

John Wilson Boyd, agent of the Eastern Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad Company at Concord, Tenn., was born March 7, 1833, in Knox County, and within four miles of where he now resides. He is one of seven children (two now living) born to Thomas and Anna (Wilson) Boyd. The father was born January 8, 1781, in Knox County, and died in 1876. He was well educated, and was nominated for representative of Knox County, but declined the nomination, although urged



strongly by his friends to accept. He was greatly interested in the advancement of all religious and educational enterprises, and was also very active in effecting the construction and building of the East Tennessee & Georgia Railroad. He was an elder in the church to which he belonged for many years. Mrs. Boyd was born in Anderson County, Tenn., in 1799, and died in 1853. She was a devoted Christian worker, and an excellent woman. J. W. Boyd received his education principally at Cumberland University, where he graduated in 1856, the first literary graduate who attended that institution from East Tennessee. He ranked with the best students in mathematics, and was a good student in the other branches. After graduating he taught school, and shortly afterward was offered, and accepted, the presidency of Ewing and Jefferson College, in Blount County, which position he held until the close of the war. He then moved to his farm near Concord, and taught school and farmed for the following two years. In 1866 he was offered (unsolicited by Mr. Boyd), and accepted, the position he now occupies. He is a member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, having been elder and clerk of the session for many years. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity, of which he was Worshipful Master for several years. Previous to the war he was a Whig in politics, but later voted the Democratic ticket, and at present votes with the Prohibition party, and takes a great interest in the advancement of the temperance interests. He has been solicited by his friends many times to accept the nomination of representative from Knox County. In 1856 he married Miss Mahulda J. Lester, who was born in 1835, and who is the daughter of Henry D. and Malinda Lester, of Lebanon, Tenn. Mr. Lester was high sheriff of Wilson County for many years, and was a prominent citizen of that county. Ten children were the result of our subject's marriage: Alice E., John L. (now clerk in the East Tennessee National Bank, Knoxville, Tenn., and was train dispatcher for some time), Henry D. (a merchant of Concord, Tenn.), Thomas A. (Western Union Telegraph operator at Nashville), William J. (telegraph operator at Concord), Minnie A., Lavinia J. (deceased), Edwin T., Mamie F. and Freddie M. (deceased). Mrs. Boyd was reared in the Baptist Church, but after her marriage attached herself to the church of her husband's choice, and with him has ever since been a devoted member.

H. L. Bradley, dealer in wall paper and shades, was born in Knox County April 27, 1827. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools. He came to Knoxville in 1848, and here learned the carpenter's trade, at which he worked until 1855, and then went in the car shops, being boss of the wood work of the East Tennessee, Virginia

& Georgia Railroad. He continued at this business until 1864, when he began merchandising in a general way, continuing until 1876, when he changed his line of business to the present. In 1852 he married Miss Margaret C. York, of Knox County, Tenn., and the fruits of this union were eight children, five living—one son and four daughters. He is a Republican in politics, and for twenty-three years has been in business in Knoxville. By his own efforts and industry he has accumulated considerable property, and is now in comfortable circumstances. He was one of seven children, six now living, born to John and Malinda (Dowell) Bradley, both natives of Virginia. The father was born about 1772. He was a soldier in the war of 1812, and a farmer by occupation. The mother came with her parents to Tennessee at an early day.

T. J. Bradley, a miller of the firm of Peters & Bradley, was born January 1, 1834, in Knox County. He is one of the eleven children born to Archlers and Nancy (Bradley) Bradley, natives of Virginia. They came to Knox County, Tenn., and here passed the remainder of their days. Our subject received a good common-school education, and was thrown upon his own resources when twenty-one years of age. He first engaged in farming, and at the age of twenty-two chose for his companion during life Miss Evaline Ledgerwood, a daughter of William and Ailey Ledgerwood. This union resulted in the birth of six children: Charlton W., Ailey (widow of John Thompson), George, Maynard, Marshall (deceased) and Clarence. After following agricultural pursuits for about twenty years he then engaged in merchandising with his son, the style of the firm being Bradley & Son. At the end of six years he became a member of the firm of Peters & Marston, the style of the firm being Peters, Marston & Co. This partnership continued six months, when Mr. Marston died and the firm name then became Peters & Bradley. From a small beginning they have increased their business to its very prosperous and extensive condition. Although commencing life with very little capital, Mr. Bradley, by great industry and careful financiering, has become quite comfortably fixed. Mr. and Mrs. Bradley are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Mr. Bradley is a Republican in politics.

Daniel Briscoe, of the wholesale dry goods firm of Briscoe, Sweepson & Co., is a native of Mississippi, and was reared and educated at Oxford, Miss. He graduated there in 1861 and soon after enlisted in the Eighteenth Mississippi Infantry, but was afterward assigned to the quartermaster department, and located at Knoxville, Greeneville and Bristol, Tenn., until the close of the war, after which he embarked in the dry goods trade at Morristown, Tenn., until 1882. In March, 1864, he led to the hymenial altar Miss Kate C. Ernest, a native of Greene County,

Tenn., and to them were born eight children, six now living. The mother of these children died in December, 1883. In 1886 Mr. Briscoe came to Knoxville and established the firm of which he is a member. He is one of the directors of the East Tennessee National Bank, and a stockholder in the East Tennessee and Island Home Insurance Companies. P. J. and Martha (Allen) Briscoe, parents of our subject, were natives of Mississippi and East Tennessee, and died at Canton, Miss., in 1869 and 1871 respectively. Our subject is a member of the Masonic fraternity.

Lewis F. Brooks, farmer, was born June 7, 1821, in Rockbridge County, Va., where he was partly reared. He is the eldest of five children born to Lawson S. and Catherine (Myer) Brooks. The father was born and reared in Albemarle County, Va., and was a soldier in the war of 1812 under Gen. Scott. He was wounded at the battle of Lundy's Lane. His father, Lawson Brooks, was a lieutenant under Gen. Green in the Revolutionary war, and was killed at the battle of Camden, S. C. In May, 1845, our subject married Miss Minerva J. Wesson, a daughter of Isaac and Tobitha Wesson, and this marriage resulted in the birth of nine children: C. A., Gertrude (Mrs. A. W. Trout), Frances I. (Mrs. Ira J. Weeks), Harriet O. (Mrs. C. R. Summers), Paulina T. (Mrs. James A. Walkinshaw), Lelia W., Isaac J. (a physician and a graduate of the Ohio Medical College of Cincinnati, Ohio), Lawson L. and Robert N. Mrs. Brooks died August 18, 1873, and Mr. Brooks took for his second wife Mrs. Elizabeth Spencer, formerly Miss Wilson, a daughter of James P. and Elizabeth (Peed) Wilson. Mr. and Mrs. Brooks are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. He is a Democrat in politics, and cast his first presidential vote for James K. Polk. He moved to Mason County, Ky., in 1868, and lived there until 1884, when he moved to his present location where he has since resided. Mr. Brooks owns ninety-three and a half acres on the Kingston Pike about three miles west of Knoxville. He is of Scotch descent, his grandmother being a native of Perthshire, Scotland.

J. L. Brown, a practical engineer and farmer of the Seventh District, was born in Knox County, Tenn., December 13, 1828, and is the fourth of eight children born to Joshua and Frances (Blakeley) Brown. The father was born and reared in Knox County, Tenn., and served two campaigns as a soldier in the Creek Indian war under Gen. Jackson. He followed the occupation of a farmer, in which he was very successful; died December 31, 1841, and was buried January 1, 1842, being forty-nine years of age. Mrs. Brown was a native of North Carolina, and when only a girl came to Knox County. She died in March, 1883, aged eighty-five years. Our subject received unfavorable advantages for



an education, but made the best of those advantages. December 18, 1850, he married Miss Martha J. Hall, a daughter of William and Nancy (Nelson) Hall. She bore him one child, Pink Lawson, who is now a music teacher. From 1851 Mr. Brown taught school, more or less, each year for ten years, and for fifteen years after he had abandoned teaching was engaged in surveying. In connection with this he has superintended the management of his farm. He owns 210 acres of land well cultivated and well improved, situated ten miles north of Knoxville. Mrs. Brown and daughter are members of the Missionary Baptist Church. Mr. Brown is conservative in politics, voting for principle, not for party. He cast his first presidential vote for Gen. Winfield Scott.

Alfred Buffat, farmer and miller, was born in Switzerland December 8, 1840, son of P. F. and Sylvia (Tauxe) Buffat, both natives of Switzerland. They came from that country to the United States in 1849. Their mode of travel, illustrative of the means of that day, was from Aigle (Switzerland) to Paris (France) by stage, from Paris to Havre by rail, from that city to New York by sail (being more than forty days at sea), from New York to Charleston, S. C., by steamer, from the last named city to Dalton, Ga., by rail, thence to Chattanooga by stage, and from that city to Knoxville by steamer. They remained in the vicinity of that city a few months, after which they purchased a farm of 300 acres in the Second District of Knox County. Here the father followed farming. He built a flouring-mill in 1860, and formed a partnership with his son, Alfred, in 1865, for milling. He was born November 7, 1809, and died on his farm in 1874, aged nearly sixty-five years. The mother was born in 1819, and is now sixty-seven years of age. She succeeded her husband in the business partnership with her son. Alfred Buffat, the eldest of nine children, received only a limited education when young. A few years in a primary school in Switzerland, then a few months of attendance to school in a slab-seated old log schoolhouse in this country, constituted the school advantages that he enjoyed; but he made amends for this lack of opportunities, by applying himself closely to study during all his spare moments. On September 14, 1865, he married Miss Eliza Bolli, who was born in Paris (France) on the 18th of May, 1842. Her father, Edward Bolli, was a native of France, and her mother, Eliza (Porta) Bolli, was a native of Switzerland. She removed with her parents to Brazil, her father being Swiss consul at Pernambuco for several years. On account of ill health he removed to the United States, and settled in Knox County, where he died in 1854. To our subject and wife were born six sons and two daughters: Edward F., Charles A.,

Ernest (deceased), William E., Flora F., Samuel T., Elise B. and Walter D. Mr. Buffat was elected school director for his district in 1882. After one year's experience in that capacity, he became convinced that the interests of the schools of his district required the establishment of a system for their management and of rules for their government. After a proper study of the matter, in the autumn of 1883, he proposed to the board of his district a plan for grading the schools of the district and rules for the government of these schools. This was met with approval by the board who appointed a committee to select text books and to fix the limits of the different grades. The plan was put in operation in the Second District at once. County Superintendent J. R. Shipe approving the plan, urged the directors of other districts to adopt it also. Through his efforts and those of his successor, J. W. Saylor, this system and rules were adopted throughout Knox County. Mr. Buffat is also the author of a set of grammar charts, and takes a great interest in educational matters. He took no active part in the late war, and is not a politician. He is a member of the Christian Church.

George H. Burr, one of the firm of manufacturers of doors, sash, blinds, etc., and general lumber dealers of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Connecticut, born in 1829, and a direct descendant of Aaron Burr, the great American politician and Vice-President of the United States, he having been elected by Congress as such with President Thomas Jefferson in 1800. He is the son of Moses and Harriet B. (Banks) Burr, both natives of Connecticut. The father was born in Greenfield, Fairfield Co., Conn., in 1806. The mother was born in 1809. She was the daughter of Thomas and Abigail (Murwin) Banks, both natives of Connecticut. He was a member of the Presbyterian Church. Our subject was reared in Weston, Conn., and acquired his education at the public schools of that place. He began life as a coach-maker, but that business was too slow for a man of his energy and ambition. At the close of the civil war he saw great opportunities in the new South, and came to Tennessee in 1867, locating in Knoxville, and engaged in saw milling and general lumber business. He was married, October 19, 1854, to Amelia Andrews, who was born in Connecticut in November, 1830, and is the daughter of Jonathan and Abigail (Murwin) Andrews, both natives of Connecticut. The father was born in April, 1802, was a farmer, and died in 1849. The mother was born in 1804, and died in 1854. Both our subject and wife are members of St. John's Episcopal Church.

J. R. Butt is a son of J. R. Butt, Sr., and Leanah T. (Coffman) Butt, both natives of Virginia. The father was a farmer by occupation,

and both he and the mother are now deceased. Our subject was a native Virginian, born February 26, 1845. He lived on the farm until fourteen years of age, and while growing up received a very limited education. But notwithstanding this he has by reading and observation acquired a good practical education. In 1859 he came to Tennessee, and at the age of sixteen learned the tinner's trade. During most of the late war he made supplies for the Confederate Government. In 1865 he chose for his companion Miss Laura Vickars, of St. Albans, W. Va., and two children: Will L. and Frank M., were the fruits of this union. Mr. Butt is a Democrat in politics, and he and Mrs. Butt are members of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. He took an active part in making up the stock for the Scates Warm Air Furnace Company, of which he is a director. He has also held the position of alderman of the city.

Rev. Henry E. Byerley, pastor of Little Flat Creek, Graveston, Beaver Dam and Sharon Baptist Churches, of Knox County, Tenn., was born in Grainger County, Tenn., August 29, 1849, and is the son of James and Elizabeth (Skaggs) Byerley. The father was born in Knox County June 12, 1807, was a farmer and died July 13, 1881. Though of limited education he was a most successful man, and was highly respected by all who knew him. The mother was born in Knox County (now Union) October 15, 1805, and died January 18, 1877. Both parents were members of the Baptist Church. Our subject came with his parents from Grainger to Knox County, when about a year and a half old, and has lived in the latter county ever since. He attended the common district schools in youth, and finished his education at Walnut Grove Academy, and the University of Tennessee. He then engaged in farming, which occupation he has followed successfully. He professed religion at Murphey's Chapel (Methodist Episcopal) in August, 1865, and was baptized the second Sabbath in November following. June 7, 1879, he was ordained a minister of the Baptist Church by Revs. H. C. Hamsted, P. A. Morton and J. A. Robinson. He has filled the pulpit almost all the time since his ordination, and is considered one of the most successful ministers of the county, his qualifications and work in the Church being highly appreciated. He was married, January 30, 1873, to Martha A. Luttrell, of Knox County, who was born February 27, 1853, and who is the daughter of Joseph W. and L. E. (Carter) Luttrell, both of Knox County. To this union seven children have been born, only three now living, viz.: a son (unnamed) born January 10, 1874, died at birth; son (unnamed) born February 4, 1875, died at birth; Luo L., born March 1, 1879; Charles S., born September 29, 1881; son (unnamed) born October 3, 1883, died at birth; James W., born



July 26, 1884, and died September 3, 1885, and Mattie Pearl, born May 29, 1886. Mrs. Byerley is also a member of the Baptist Church. By a previous marriage James Byerley, father of subject, became the father of five sons, one of whom died. The other four enlisted in the Federal Army during the late war. One was wounded at Resaca and died later at Knoxville. The other three are now living in Grainger County. The mother of our subject was also married previous to her union to James Byerley and had one son, who also enlisted in the Federal Army, was captured, and died in a Confederate prison. The five sons were members of the same company. Our subject was one of two children born to the union of his parents and the only survivor of that marriage.

T. R. C. Campbell, the subject of this sketch, was born August 18, 1833, in that section of country lying on the north bank of French Broad River, known as Riverdale. It was here that Knox County was first settled, and among the early settlers of this region was William A. Campbell, who came from Virginia about 1790 and settled on the present homestead of our subject. Here the father of our subject, James Campbell, was born. He served under Gen. Jackson in the campaign against the Creek Indians. Our subject received a finished education at Maryville College, Blount County. In 1865 he married Miss Anna E. Davis, of Sevier County, a graduate of a Moravian school at Salem, N. C. This union resulted in the birth of five children: James R., who is a graduate of the State University, Thomas B., M. Linda, John and Lucy. Mr. and Mrs. Campbell are deeply interested in all subjects pertaining to educational advancements, and their children are reaping the benefit of this interest. Mr. Campbell owns a very productive farm of 500 acres, called "the Riverdale Farm," and on this, besides his own commodious dwelling, is situated Riverdale schoolhouse and also a mill for flouring and lumbering. Formerly Riverdale postoffice was kept here. Mr. Campbell is an excellent citizen and neighbor as his many friends can testify.

D. A. Carpenter, president of the Knoxville Fire Insurance Company, and secretary and treasurer of the Knoxville Car Wheel Company, of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Rock Castle, Ky., and was born March 24, 1837. He is the son of William S. and Malinda E. (Merryman) Carpenter, both natives of Kentucky. The father was born in 1818; was a machinist by occupation, and died in 1886. The mother was born in 1819, and died in 1847. Both were members of the Baptist Church. Our subject was reared in the town of his birth, and came to Tennessee in 1857, locating and engaging in merchandising in Anderson County, where he remained until the breaking out of the Rebellion. In July,

1861, he went to Kentucky, going to that State at the suggestion of prominent Union Tennesseans to meet Col. James Carter, and ascertain when the Union Tennessee Volunteers would be supplied with arms, Col. Carter having previously gone to Washington City in company with Andrew Johnson. Consequently our subject was the first man to refugee from East Tennessee to Kentucky. The trip was made on horseback, and was fraught with danger and hardships, the whole country being overrun with and in the possession of the Confederates. Securing the desired information he returned to Clinton, Tenn., and reported the same. In the latter part of July he returned to Kentucky, and August 10, 1861, enlisted in the Federal Army, joining Company C, Second Regiment of Union Tennessee Volunteer Infantry, the name of which was subsequently changed to that of Tennessee Mounted Infantry. He was mustered in as a private, and upon organization of the company was elected first lieutenant, and at the organization of the regiment was made adjutant of the same. In August, 1862, he was promoted over ten captains to a majorship of the Second Regiment, Tennessee Union Mounted Infantry. A large portion of the regiment, also including himself, was captured at Rogersville, Tenn., and imprisoned, first at Libby prison for six months, then one month at Macon, Ga., and then two months at Charleston, S. C. While in prison our subject was commissioned colonel by Gov. Johnson. He was mustered out of service at Knoxville October 8, 1864, and went at once to Clinton, Anderson Co., Tenn., and engaged in merchandising. Previous to this he was married, June 23, 1863, to Sophia A. Berry, a native of Kentucky, who was born in 1842. To them have been born six children. Our subject and wife are members of the Broad Street Southern Methodist Episcopal Church. In March, 1865, he was elected sheriff of Anderson County, and August 17, 1865, was appointed by President Johnson assessor of internal revenue for the Second District. In 1869 he removed to Beaver Creek, Knox County, and engaged in farming, and two years later removed to Knoxville, where he engaged in the wholesale grocery business, being a member first of the firm of Carpenter & Ross, next of Carpenter, Ross & Co., next of Carpenter, Ross & Lockett, and last of Carpenter, Ross & Co., remaining in business until 1878. In 1876-77 he was elected mayor of Knoxville. He organized the Knoxville Fire Insurance Company in 1878, of which he is president, and has been since its organization, and in 1881-82 was elected president of the Knoxville Car Wheel Company, of which he is at present secretary and treasurer. He has also served as vice-president and general manager of both the Oak Dale Iron, Coal & Transportation Company and Walden Ridge Railway Company.

John H. Carriger, M. D., was born in Carter County, Tenn., August 18, 1825, and is the son of John and Margaret (Elliott) Carriger. The father was born in Pennsylvania in 1776, and immigrated to Tennessee about 1779, located in Carter County, where he farmed until his death, which occurred in 1848. Two of his elder brothers were soldiers in the Revolutionary war and participated in the battle of King's Mountain. They were both killed at St. Clair's defeat in the Indian war in 1791 in the Miami country. The mother was a native of Ireland, born in 1786, and came to America when three years of age. Her parents located near Jonesboro, Washington Co., Tenn. She died in 1854. Both parents were members of the Baptist Church, although Mrs. Carriger was baptized in the Episcopal Church. Our subject was reared in Carter County, and attended school first in the immediate neighborhood, next at Elizabethton, then at Jonesboro, and finally at Washington College in Washington County. April 3, 1846, he began the study of medicine under Dr. Michael Carriger at Tazewell, Tenn. In 1848 he attended lectures at Transylvania University at Lexington, Ky., and later graduated from Jefferson Medical College at Philadelphia in the class of 1850 and 1851. He then began the practice of medicine at Tazewell, Tenn., where he remained until the fall of 1852, when he removed to Columbus, Ga., remaining at the latter place until 1874. He next spent several months visiting in New York City, and in December, 1874, located in Knoxville, where he has practiced medicine up to the present. He is a member of the Knox County Medical Society and the State Medical Association. In October, 1853, Dr. Carriger married Musidora Coker, a native of Hawkins County, born August 10, 1826. She died March 30, 1883, leaving one child, Dr. J. Sterling Carriger, who is now associated with his father in the practice of medicine. J. Sterling Carriger began the study of medicine in 1882 with his father, and during 1883-86 attended medical lectures at Bellevue Hospital Medical College, New York. After graduating he returned to Knoxville and began the practice of his profession. Our subject was married a second time, October 22, 1883, to Vandalee Durham, a native of Knox County, and one child was the result of this union, named Arthur Lee. The Doctor is a member of the K. T. Commandery of Knoxville.

William W. Carson, professor of mathematics in the University of Tennessee, was born in Adams County, Miss., June 2, 1845. His father's parents were Col. Joseph Carson, a lawyer of St. Stephens, Ala. (then a part of Mississippi Territory), who commanded the regiment of Mississippi Volunteers in the Creek war, and Caroline C. Green, of Adams County, Miss. His mother's parents were William S. Waller (cashier of



the old Bank of Kentucky from 1809 to 1835, located at Frankfort, and from 1835 to 1852 of the Lexington branch of the present Bank of Kentucky) and Catherine S. Breckinridge, natives of Kentucky. His parents, James Green Carson and Catharine Waller, married when quite young, and had four sons and one daughter. They lived (he being a cotton planter) for ten years on the plantation inherited from his mother in Adams County, Miss., and then moved to the richer alluvial lands of North Louisiana, spending most of their summers until the war, however, with her family in Kentucky. The father died in 1863 at the age of forty-eight. The mother, now seventy-two years old, makes her home with her son, the subject of this sketch. Prof. Carson was the second son. In 1863 he enlisted as a private in Company B, Fourth Louisiana Cavalry, Confederate Army, and served with that regiment until the close of the war, having been promoted a few months before the end to sergeant-major. He was instructed by tutors at home until 1863. In 1866 he entered Washington College (now Washington and Lee University), Va., as a student. Two years later he received the civil engineer's diploma, and won the prize medal awarded for the best examinations in practical mathematics, natural philosophy and chemistry. Continuing at Washington College another year he served as instructor in engineering and at its close received the mining engineer's diploma. In 1873-74 he took a further course in chemistry at the school of mines in New York City. Before and after this last he was engaged as a civil engineer in different kinds of city and railroad work and hydrographic surveys. In 1877 he was elected to the chair of mathematics in Davidson College, N. C., which he filled for six years. Wishing then for more lucrative employment he resigned and engaged in mercantile life in Memphis. This proving unsuccessful, he returned to teaching, and in 1885 was elected to his present position. In 1880 he married Miss Rachel Finnie, of Memphis, who was born, however, in Caseyville, Ky. They have three children: Katie W., James F. and Emma F. Both Professor and wife are members of the Presbyterian Church.

M. B. Carter, an influential farmer of Knox County, Tenn., was born in that county November 10, 1840, son of James M. and Rebecca (Johnson) Carter. The father was a native of Knox County, born August 17, 1812, and died July 5, 1885. The mother was a native of North Carolina, and died in her thirty-fifth year. Our subject received a fair education, and in boyhood assisted his father on the farm. After his marriage to Miss Elizabeth Leeper, in 1866, he began farming for himself. Mrs. Carter was born in Bradley County, Tenn., September 29, 1847, is the daughter of James M. and N. E. (Prater) Leeper, and to

her marriage have been born two sons and nine daughters, all living but one daughter, Nannie, who died when quite young. The children living are, Mary Alice, Julia, Elizabeth, James Madison, Margaret Ann, Anrelia A., Jennie Minnie, Gertrude, Robert Lee and Jodie Cleveland. Our subject began life with nothing but a pair of willing hands. He is now the owner of 450 acres of good land in the Eighteenth District of Knox County, Tenn., and on this land are quantities of zinc which are being taken out in abundance. There is also pink marble on the farm, and as the soil is fertile the farm ranks among the best of the county. Mr. Carter is an ardent Democrat, and he and wife are both members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

W. R. Carter, of the firm of Goodheart & Carter, bookbinders and stationers of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Knox County, of that State, born November 14, 1844, and is a son of W. H. and Mary (Chandler) Carter, natives of Tennessee. The father was born in March, 1814, was a farmer by occupation, and died July 16, 1882. The mother was born in 1822, and is now a resident of Knox County. She is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, of which her husband was also a member. Our subject was reared on a farm, and acquired his early education in the common schools, but subsequently attended Walnut Grove Academy in Knox County. April 1, 1862, he enlisted in the Federal Army, joining Company C, First Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry, was elected corporal of the company at its organization, and was afterward promoted to sergeant, which position he held until the close of the war. his regiment passing through some of the hardest battles of the war. After that event he returned to his home in Knox County, and, at the end of two years spent in school, learned the carpenter's trade, which he followed for twelve years. During this time he had removed to Knoxville, where he continued his occupation. October 29, 1868, he wedded Miss S. J. Harris, a native of Knox County, born January 12, 1847, and the daughter of J. J. Harris, a native of the above county. By this union our subject became the father of two boys: E. E. and E. R. In 1882 our subject was elected recorder of deeds for Knox County by a majority of 1,300, and served in this capacity for four years, making one of the best recorders the county ever had, as his work will show. He systematized the recorder's office thoroughly, for which he received the hearty and warm endorsement of the bar, as well as the citizens of his county. "A place for everything and everything in its place" was and is his motto. After leaving that office he formed a copartnership with Briscoe Goodheart, and engaged in the manufacture of blank books, blanks and bookbinding, and also dealing in stationery, which business

he is engaged in at present. He is a member of Ed Maynard Post, No. 14, G. A. R., of Knoxville, of which organization he is a charter member, and has served as Officer of the Guard, Adjutant, and is at present a member of the Department Council of Administration and Aid to the Commander-in-Chief, and now Junior Vice-Commander of his post. He and wife are members of the Fourth Presbyterian Church of Knoxville. He is a man of sober and steady habits, sticking to whatever he undertakes, has a host of warm personal friends, and is well posted on most all leading questions of the day. Nothing he delights in more than relating war stories and hair-breadth escapes.

Peyton Carter, a liveryman and farmer of Knox County, Tenn., was born in that county March 13, 1845, and is the son of Peyton (Sr.) and Lucinda Carter, both natives of Virginia. They came to Tennessee about 1827 and settled in Knox County. Our subject received a common-school education, and in 1868 married Miss Martha M. Shippe, daughter of Alexander Shippe, a farmer and tanner. She was born in Knox County, Tenn., October 11, 1847, and by her marriage became the mother of two children: Walter H. and Charles B. The former was born August 5, 1869, and the latter February 18, 1873. Mr. Carter is the owner of 325 acres of well improved land in District No. 16, Knox County, and is also the owner of the largest livery and feed stables in Knoxville. They are situated at 282 Crozier Street, 16 and 18 Hardee Street, and 13 and 15 Sullivan Street. He is the sole proprietor of the stable, and in it he has a capacity for 100 wagons and 200 horses. It covers 20,350 feet of ground, and is provided with rooms for gentlemen and families. He has connected with it free scales for the use of farmers. Mr. Carter is a Republican in politics, and a stirring, energetic business man.

W. P. Chamberlain, of the firm of Sanford, Chamberlain & Albers, was born in Cuyahoga County, Ohio, December 2, 1840, and is the son of Leander and Susannah (Willey) Chamberlain. The father was born in Connecticut, and when young went to New York, where he met and married Miss Willey. In 1840 they moved to Cuyahoga County, Ohio, and there passed the remainder of their days on the farm. He died in 1884, being in his eightieth year, and she in 1887, being in her eighty-fourth year. Both were zealous workers in the Christian Church. Our subject was reared on a farm, and educated in the common schools and at Hiram Institute. In 1861 he volunteered in Company A, Twenty-third Ohio Infantry, Federal Army, being among the first to offer his services. Having served as a private a short time he was promoted to second lieutenant, and later to first lieutenant. In 1864, his term of



enlistment having expired, he came to Knoxville and took charge of the government corral and workshop. The following year he engaged in the drug business, and has carried it on successfully ever since. In 1873 he married Miss Kate E. Harper, of Hamilton, Ohio, and to them were born three sons and a daughter. Harper L. and Frederick W. are the only ones now living, one son and the daughter having died in infancy. Mr. and Mrs. Chamberlain are members of the Second Presbyterian Church. For about two years he was president of the Knoxville Street Railroad Company; is president of Mozart Club and a member of the Loyal Legion. He is of English descent on both the paternal and maternal sides.

Charles B. Christian, farmer of the Ninth District, was born January 31, 1838, near where he has since resided. He is the third of six children born to Walter L. and Jane (Hope) Christian. Walter L. Christian was born March 22, 1806, in Amherst County, Va., and immigrated to North Carolina after he was grown. After living there a few years he came to Tennessee where he remained until the close of the late war, when he went to Dalton, Ga., for a short time. He then moved to Knox County, from there to the old home place, and finally went to Rush County, Kas. He died October 19, 1883. His first wife was born in 1800, and died July 12, 1852. May 30, 1855, he married his second wife, Lorinda Gallbreath, who bore him two children. She was born January 25, 1821, and died December 3, 1879. Walter L. Christian was an elder in the Cumberland Presbyterian Church for forty years, and was a highly respected citizen. His father, Henry Christian, was a soldier in the war of 1812, and his father was a soldier in the Revolutionary war. Our subject, Charles B. Christian, received his education in the common schools of Knox County, and at the age of twenty-one enlisted in Company B, Sixty-third Tennessee Infantry, August 8, 1861, and served until the close of the war. He was captured in April, 1865, and carried to Fort Delaware from which he was released June 10, 1865. September 25, 1870, he married Miss Ann E. Hardin, who was born September 20, 1846, and who is the daughter of John G. and Sallie R. (Gallaher) Hardin. John G. Hardin was major of the State militia, and took a great interest in the affairs of the county. He was a practical business man and accumulated a vast amount of property. To Mr. and Mrs. Christian were born six children: William T., John W., Carrie V., Frank H. (deceased), Katie and Mary H. Mrs. Christian is a member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, and Mr. Christian, although not a member of any church, supports all churches as well as all other worthy enterprises. He is a Democrat and a Master Mason.

Nicholas Clapp, farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., July 22, 1816, son of Solomon and Pherba (Smith) Clapp, both natives of North Carolina. Our subject received meager advantages for an education, but by observation and study has become a well read man. He was reared on a farm and has followed agricultural pursuits all his life. He started in life with little or no capital and is now the owner of 250 acres of land in the Fifth District of Knox County, and is considered one of the prominent and enterprising citizens of Knox County. He was married when twenty-four years of age, to Miss Lucinda Gibbs, daughter of Daniel Gibbs, and a native of Knox County, born December 25, 1812. To this union were born two sons and six daughters. The two sons and three of the daughters are deceased, viz.: Rachael Minerva, died when six years of age; Martha Elizabeth, died August 13, 1855, aged fourteen; Rufus Solomon, died at the age of five; William R., died aged thirty-one, and Sarah Jane (wife of William Miller), died aged forty. The names of the daughters now living are Alvira Cornelia (Mrs. A. P. Farmer), Orlena M. (Mrs. R. J. Gibbs) and Pherba E. (Mrs. W. R. Kerns). The mother of these children died November 28, 1871, and the father married Miss Mary A. Gibbs in 1872. She is a native of Knox County, born June 16, 1836. Mr. Clapp has been a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church from early boyhood; he was a Whig in politics before the war, a strong Union man during the war, and since that event has been a staunch Republican. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity.

Henderson Clapp, farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., June 1, 1820. He is the son of Solomon and Pherba (Smith) Clapp, natives of North Carolina and of Dutch and English extraction respectively. Our subject received poor educational advantages, but, by his own exertions, has obtained sufficient knowledge to enable him to transact all ordinary business. He was reared on a farm, and although he learned blacksmithing and worked at the trade much of the time until he was twenty-four years of age, he has, since that time, devoted most of his life to the independent occupation of farming. In 1845 he married Miss R. Shell, daughter of William Shell. She was born August 16, 1824, and died October 19, 1885. To this union were born seven sons and two daughters—two of the sons, Richard R. and R. LaFayette, are deceased. The names of the living children are Lurina E., James S., Linwill Foyd, William Joseph, Mary E., H. M. Brownlow and Solomon Conrad. Mr. Clapp has been one of the largest real estate owners of Knox County, but he has distributed land among his children and at present owns seventy-five acres of land in the Fourth District. He is also one of the real estate owners of Knoxville. He has served as justice of the peace for a num-

ber of years, and although he has never been a strong politician he has voted the Republican ticket on all State and National questions.

Walter M. Cocke, attorney at law, is a native of Knoxville, where he was reared. He graduated at the University of Tennessee in 1879, after which he read law with Judge H. H. Ingersoll, and was admitted to the bar in 1881. He then associated himself with his preceptor in the practice of his profession until June, 1886, since which time he has practiced alone. The Cocke family has figured prominently in the early history of Tennessee. We find by referring to other portions of the work that the great-great-grandfather of our subject, William Cocke, was one of the representatives from Sullivan County, who met with representatives from Washington and Greene Counties at Jonesboro, August 23, 1783, for the purpose of forming an independent association, the plan of which was drawn by Messrs. Cocke and Hardin. At the convention, which met at Greeneville November 14, 1784, he was chosen brigadier-general of the militia for the new State of Franklin, and also counsel of State. He was a member of the House of Representatives, which met at Knoxville August 25, 1794, and of the convention which met at the above place January 11, 1796. He was also on the committee to draft the consolidation for the State of Tennessee. He and William Blount were elected the first United States senators from Tennessee. Gen. John E. Cocke, the son of William Cocke, was a member of the House of Representatives which met at Knoxville March 28, 1797, and afterward distinguished himself in the war of 1812. The grandfather of our subject, William E. Cocke, was born in Grainger County, and practiced law and medicine there until his death. Our subject's father was a native of Grainger County, and came to Knox County in 1852. He graduated at Cumberland University, and was of the law firm of Cocke & Henderson at the time of his death.

M. B. Collier, a successful agriculturist of the Eighth District, was born March 21, 1847, in Knox County, and is the son of Thomas and Jane (Brown) Collier. Thomas Collier was born and reared in Washington County, and came to Knox County with his mother when eighteen years old, his father having died some time before. He was born in 1821, and has been clerk and elder in the Cumberland Presbyterian Church over forty years, and was the leader in organizing the first Masonic lodge in Beaver Creek Valley. In his younger days he was quite an able and promising singing school teacher. He is now living with his third wife. His children are prominent and prosperous citizens of the different localities in which they reside. Our subject received his education in the common schools of Knox County,



and at the academy of Oak Grove. He assisted his father on the farm until twenty-four years of age, when he married Miss Alice McBath, who was born July 26, 1852, and who is the daughter of Robert and Sallie McBath. The result of this union was the birth of four children: Robert Hoyal, Ivy McBath, Thomas Carl (deceased) and Clio Brown. Mr. Collier is a Republican in politics, casting his first presidential vote for Horatio Seymour. He is a member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, and is a Master Mason. He owns 125 acres of land one mile northeast of Powell's Station. Mr. Robert McBath was born in Scotland, and was brought to America when only six years old. Here he married Mrs. McBath, who was also a native of Scotland. One of their daughters, Caroline, was a graduate of the Female Institute at Knoxville. Two of his sons were majors in the Federal Army, and all are prominent citizens. William McBath was elected circuit court clerk immediately after the close of the war, and served three terms. He also represented Knox and Sevier Counties in the Legislature one term. He was quite a frequent correspondent for several papers, notably the *Nashville Union* and *Cincinnati Enquirer*.

Sampson D. Cole (deceased), one of the leading farmers during his life of the Third Civil District, of Knox County, Tenn., was born in Anderson County, Tenn., May 11, 1817, and was the son of Alexander Cole, a native of Tennessee, born of Virginia parents. The father died when our subject was but ten years of age. He made his home with an uncle, at New Market, Tenn., after his father's death, and learned the saddler's trade. Later in life he removed to Jacksboro, Tenn., where he worked at his trade. He next removed to the Third District of Knox County, where he followed farming and worked at his trade until his death, which occurred April 20, 1874. He served as justice of the peace, at Jacksboro, and also of the Third District of Knox County. He was an elder of Washington Presbyterian Church, and was universally respected and esteemed by all who knew him, he being an industrious, energetic and enterprising citizen. He was married August 8, 1839, to Eliza Anderson, who died, October 20, 1850. To this union three children were born, one of whom is living. He was married the second time to Martha J. Crawford, March 23, 1852, who died August 12, 1860. To this union five children were born, three of whom are living. He married Nancy J. Crawford, May, 2, 1861, who is a native of Tennessee, and was born November 2, 1831, and is the daughter of Anderson and Sarah (Meek) Crawford, both natives of Tennessee. To this union five children were born, as follows: Samuel, March 7, 1863; James, November 5, 1864; Thomas, November 19, 1866; Laura, August 13, 1868;

Eva, August 7, 1870. The mother is a member of the Washington Presbyterian Church.

Martin J. Condon, a member of the board of education of Knoxville, is a son of John and Bridget (Gray) Condon, both natives of Ireland, where they grew up and were married. After living for some time in the old country they came to America, and soon found their way to Tennessee. The father was a railroad conductor by occupation. The immediate subject of this sketch was born October 29, 1857, in Hawkins County. His early education was obtained in the country schools, and his subsequent education at Georgetown College. Soon after he engaged as porter in a wholesale grocery house, and by industry and close attention to business, gradually rose to one of the highest positions. In 1880 he and his brothers, Mike J. and S. P., bought out his employers, Williams & Zimmerman, and have carried on a successful and extensive business since. In 1885 our subject was elected to his present position, and the same year he was united in marriage to Miss Margaret M. McMillan, by whom he has two sons: Martin J. and Paul A. Mr. Condon is a good business man, and an active member of the Catholic Church.

Mike J. Condon, senior member of the firm of Condon Bros., wholesale grocers, of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Massachusetts, born in Springfield, September 29, 1846, and the son of John and Bridget (Grey) Condon, natives of County Clare, Ireland. The father was born October 24, 1824. The mother was born September 8, 1818. They were married in July, 1844, and immigrated to America in June, 1846, locating in Springfield, Mass. They subsequently removed to Hartford and New Haven, Conn., residing in the latter place until 1856, when the father was employed on the construction of the Virginia Midland Railway, and in 1857 removed to Rogersville, Tenn., and was employed in building the masonry of the bridge on the Rogersville & Jefferson Railway. In 1861 he entered the Third Regiment of Confederate Engineer Troops, and in the fall of the same year, while blockading Big Creek Gap with a detachment of men, was wounded and captured. He was in prison at Camp Chase, Ohio, ten months, and then exchanged. He served in the army until the surrender in 1865. He walked from Virginia, where they surrendered, below Lynchburg, to Rogersville, and in 1865 removed to Knoxville, where he died in April, 1885. The mother still lives and is now a resident of Knoxville. Our subject was reared principally in Hawkins County, Tenn., and acquired only a limited education, at Arnett's schoolhouse, in that county. He commenced working on the railroad at the age of thirteen. Until 1861 he worked on a farm; then till 1864 he went with his father in the Confederate

Army. After the war he served an apprenticeship at stone cutting with his father, until 1868, when he became associated with his father in contracting. In 1869 he married Miss Kate E. Moore, a native of Martins, Va., of Irish parentage, born in 1849, and who was educated in a convent at Washington, D. C. This marriage resulted in the birth of ten children. Both Mr. and Mrs. Condon are members of the Catholic Church, and he is a member of the Catholic Knights of America, and of the Irish Catholic Benevolent Union of America. Mr. Condon was connected with the building of twenty-five miles of the Cincinnati Southern Railway; the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia, from Atlanta to Macon; the Red Clay Cut Off; the Knoxville & Ohio; the extension of the Knoxville branch of the Louisville & Nashville Railway, and is now engaged on a contract for the building of forty-four miles of the Memphis & Birmingham Railway, in Alabama and Mississippi. In 1876 he established the wholesale grocery house, of which he is senior partner. In politics Mr. Condon is a Republican; served as alderman in the city council of Knoxville two terms, and was a candidate for railroad commissioner, on the Republican ticket, in 1884, being elected by nearly 9,000 majority.

Martin J. Condon, member of the board of education of Knoxville, is the son of John and Bridget (Gray) Condon, both natives of the "Evergreen Isle," where they grew up and were married. After living some time in the old country they came to America, and found their way to Tennessee. The father was a railroad contractor by occupation. The immediate subject of this sketch was born October 29, 1857, in Hawkins County. He received his primary education in the common schools, and subsequently attended Georgetown College, where he completed his education. Soon after he engaged as porter in a wholesale grocery house. By industry and close attention to business he gradually arose to one of the highest positions in the house. In 1880, he and his brothers, Mike J. and S. P., bought out his employers Williams & Zimmerman, and have carried on a successful and extensive business since. In 1885 Mr. Condon was elected to his present position. The same year he married Miss Margaret M. McMillan, by whom two children, Martin J. and Paul A. were born. Mr. Condon is a good citizen, and a member of the Catholic Church.

S. Y. Conner, one of the successful and enterprising farmers of the Sixth District, was born December 2, 1822, in Knox County, Tenn., and is the tenth of twelve children born to William and Sallie (Cox) Conner, both native Virginians, and both of whom were reared in their native State. They came to Tennessee at a very early day. William Conner



was a soldier in the Creek Indian war. He was lieutenant of his company, to which position he was promoted owing to the signal bravery he displayed, and his efficiency as a soldier. Both he and wife were of German-Irish descent. When our subject was twenty-three years of age, he married Miss Mary Tindell, a daughter of Charles and Mary (McLain) Tindell, prominent and highly respected citizens of their locality. Mr. Tindell was elected to the office of constable, which position he filled successfully one term. To Mr. and Mrs. Conner were born eleven children: John Tate, Mary S. (Mrs. Webber), George W., James, Joseph, Sarah A., Louisa (Mrs. Williams), Susan, Almeda N., William P. (deceased), and one who died in infancy. Mr. Conner is a Democrat in politics, casting his first presidential vote for Henry Clay, and he and Mrs. Conner are members of the Missionary Baptist Church. Mr. Conner owns 300 acres of land all nicely improved, and located on Bull Creek, twelve miles northwest of Knoxville.

W. A. A. Conner, a prominent farmer of the Second District, was born in Knox County November 4, 1823, and remained under the parental roof until twenty-six years of age. He then married Emily A., daughter of John Smith (one of the pioneers of the county), and located at his present home place. He began life with very limited means, but by industry and frugality has gained a very comfortable home. He resided seventeen years in a log cabin, after which he built his present commodious residence. November 2, 1862, he was conscripted by Confederate officers, but escaped the same night, and made his way to Kentucky, where he remained until the Federal troops occupied Knoxville, after which he returned to his home. He served as justice of the peace, from 1864 to 1884, and was chairman of the county court from 1875 to 1877. At the organization of the Knoxville, Tazewell & Jacksboro Pike Company he became a stockholder, and soon after filled the various offices of director, secretary and treasurer. To his marriage referred to in the beginning of this sketch, ten children have been born—four deceased. He and his family are members of the Baptist Church, and he has filled two terms of one year each, as moderator for the State of Tennessee. He and nine sisters constitute a family, of which but two survive. The parents, Thomas and Margaret (Alldredge) Conner, were natives of Virginia and North Carolina respectively, and came to this county in early childhood. The former was born in 1794 and died in 1875, and the latter's death occurred about 1877.

John W. Conner, county court clerk, of Knox County, Tenn., is a native of that county. He was born September 2, 1862, and educated in the common schools of the county. At the age of seventeen (1879) he

received an appointment through the influence of Congressman L. C. Honk, under John Sherman, then Secretary of the Treasury as messenger at Washington, from which he was promoted through a competitive examination to a \$1,200 clerkship in the same office which he resigned in 1883 to accept a clerkship under Col. Henry R. Gibson in the pension office at Knoxville. This position he held until relieved by President Cleveland in 1885. In August, 1886, he was elected to his present office as a Republican, defeating J. F. J. Lewis, a Democrat, by 700 votes, and who had held the office for twelve years. Though the youngest county official in the State, he fills the office with credit and efficiency. He was married May 6, 1884, to Miss Katie R. Nichols, of Washington, D. C., to whom one son has been born. His parents, Joseph Wesley and Zerada E. Conner, were both natives of Knox County, Tenn. The father followed agricultural pursuits until the commencement of the civil war, when he enlisted in the Sixth Tennessee Infantry, Union Volunteers, and served as a private until his death at the battle of Resaca, Ga. The mother is still living, and is a resident of Knox County. The parents were both of Irish descent.

J. L. Cooley, contractor and builder, is a native of Rogersville, Tenn., born in February, 1845. He was reared and educated at Rogersville, and during the war served in the Third Regiment of Confederate Engineer Troops. After the war, in January, 1867, he married Miss Laura A. Johnson, a native of Carroll County, Va., to whom eight children have been born, one deceased. Mr. Cooley engaged in general merchandising in Grayson County, Va., until August, 1869, when he located at Morristown, Tenn., and followed contracting and house building until May, 1871. He then came to Knoxville, and has since continued the contracting business in partnership with his brother, F. B. Cooley (whose sketch appears below. Among the many fine residences of Knoxville erected by them may be mentioned those of James Cowan, Capt. Chamberlain, Judge Meek, F. H. McClung, etc. Their annual amount of business ranges from \$50,000 to \$75,000.

Fleming B. Cooley, one of the stirring business men of Knoxville, is the son of Andrew J. and Lucy (Evans) Cooley. The father was a native of Virginia, and when young went to Abingdon, that State, to learn the carpenter's trade. Soon after he moved to Rogersville, Tenn., a good portion of which he built. While there he married Miss Evans, and to them were born ten children—three sons and three daughters now living. During the war he moved to Virginia to escape the persecutions of political enemies, but after the war returned to Tennessee and located in Knoxville, where he followed his trade. He was an energetic, industri-

ous man, and in his business employed many workmen. When his sons were but five or six years of age he provided them with little benches and put a skillful workman over them. Fleming, the subject of this sketch, was born in Hawkins County, Tenn., January 8, 1848. Owing to the interruption caused by the late war his education was limited to the common schools. In 1869 he came to Knoxville and worked at the bench about two years, when he and his brother, J. L., commenced contracting on a small scale. Since then they have gradually increased their business until now they are ranked among the first contractors of the city. In addition they run a sash and blind factory, and are partners in a hardware store. In 1872 our subject married Miss Elizabeth Tarr, of Grainger County, Tenn., and a member of the Presbyterian Church. After her death he wedded Miss Bettie Carmichael, of Alabama. By the first marriage he has one daughter, and by the second, three sons and two daughters. Mr. Cooley is a Democrat in politics and he and wife are members of the Presbyterian Church. The Cooley Bros. have built some of the best buildings of the city.

W. R. Cooper, Supreme Keeper of Records of the Supreme Commandery U. O. G. C., and vice-president of the Central Guarantee Life Association of Knoxville, Tenn., a native of Campbell County, Tenn., was born near Jacksboro, February 13, 1847, and is the eldest son of Gen. Joseph A. Cooper, who was known among his troops (Union) during the war of the Rebellion as "Fighting Joe." During the war he visited his father several times while in the field, and at one time clandestinely left home to enlist in the Union Army, but was caught by his uncle and brought back, after a tramp of one day and night. During the last two years of the war he attended school in Cincinnati, Ohio. He came to Knoxville in 1866. On the 22d of June, 1869, he entered the internal revenue service, as a deputy collector, under his father, holding that position until July 10, 1879. This period of service was largely confined to the planning, ordering and leading raids against illicit distilleries in the mountains of East Tennessee. He was one of the charter members of the U. O. G. C., and was appointed to his present position in the order by the late Dr. John H. Morgan, the "founder," and at that time its Supreme Commander.

John J. Craig, Jr., secretary and treasurer of the Tennessee Marble Association and the Great Southern Marble Company, is of the firm of John J. Craig & Co., of this city. He was born in Knox County, Tenn., September 20, 1860, and after attending the State University, graduated at the Queen City commercial college in 1879. He then accepted a position with the Canton Banking & Insurance Company of Canton, Miss.,



until December 9, 1880, and then with the banking house of John S. Hornor & Son of Helena, Ark., as bookkeeper until June, 1886, at which date he came to Knoxville and has since been actively engaged in the marble trade. In 1883 he married Miss Lucy Cage, a native of Canton, Miss., and to them was born one child. John J. (father of our subject) was born in Lauderdale County, Ala., in 1820, came to Knoxville in 1839, and clerked for McClung, Wallace & Co. until 1844, after which he returned to Alabama, and in 1847 married a Miss Lyon, of Knox County. He remained at his home in Alabama until 1852, when he was elected cashier of the Knoxville branch of the Union Bank, which position he filled until the bank was closed by the war. He then resided with his family in Cincinnati, Ohio, two years, after which he engaged in the banking business in New York City until 1869. He then returned to Knox County, and resided on the old homestead until the same was sold to the State for the location of the present insane asylum five miles below Knoxville. Mr. Craig is a pioneer in the East Tennessee marble trade and the introducer of the fine variegated varieties.

Samuel B. Crawford, M. A., chairman of the faculty, professor of military science and commandant of cadets of the University of Tennessee, was born in Knox County, Tenn., November 13, 1850. His father, Barnes Crawford, was born in the State of New Jersey, and when young came to Knoxville, being among the early settlers. He was a manufacturer of carriages. The mother, Amanda Lones, was born in Knoxville. Their family consisted of five children, four now living. The only son, our subject, had to depend principally upon his own exertions for an education. After attending the public schools of this city he entered the University of Tennessee, from which he graduated in 1873. The same year he married Miss Mattie Eckle, a native of Knoxville, by whom he had four children, two now living: Jean B. and Saxton. The two deceased were named Bessie and Lennis. Soon after marriage Prof. Crawford was chosen commandant of cadets, holding that position two years. For about three years he taught in the preparatory department, but soon after was made professor of military science and tactics and commandant of cadets, also adjutant professor of mathematics. In June, 1886, he was elected chairman of the faculty. Prof. Crawford is one of Knox County's boys who began life's work under adverse circumstances, but by persistent effort has accomplished much toward making life a success. He and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

Capt. John H. Cross, a farmer of the Tenth District, was born November 3, 1843 in Anderson County, Tenn., where he grew to manhood. He

came to Knox County in 1865 and settled near his present residence. He is the second of seven children born to William and Jane (Black) Cross, both natives of Anderson County, Tenn. William Cross is a very prominent citizen of the county where he lives. He represented Anderson County in the State Legislature three terms, and is the only Democrat who has ever represented Anderson County in the Legislature since the war. Although seventy-five years old he is hale and active for that age. His father, Britton Cross, came from Virginia and settled in Middle Tennessee. He afterward located in Anderson County, where he continued to reside until his death. Mrs. William Cross, mother of our subject, was born in Anderson County, where she spent her whole life. She died April 2, 1885. Our subject received his education in the common schools of Anderson County. August 13, 1861 he enlisted in Company H, First Tennessee Infantry, and after eight months' service was transferred to Company C, Third Tennessee Infantry, was commissioned first lieutenant and afterward promoted to the captaincy of his company. He served three years and eight months, and was mustered out of service in March, 1865, at Nashville, Tenn. He participated in the battles of Resaca, Kenesaw Mountain, Atlanta, Nashville, Jonesboro, Fishing Creek, Chickamauga and in numerous other lesser battles and severe skirmishes. On one occasion he was given 100 men and sent nine miles northeast of Mossy Creek, Jefferson Co., Tenn., where he was attacked by three regiments of rebel cavalry, was surrounded once or twice and cut his way through each time. He fought the three regiments over the nine miles back to camp, and forty-four of his men were captured, killed and wounded. But his men killed twenty-seven men of the enemy. He was a brave soldier, an efficient officer, and enjoyed the highest esteem and confidence of his superior officers, by whom he was placed in positions of great trust. May 28, 1868, he married Miss Ann A. Pate, daughter of John F. and Margaret (Marley) Pate, both natives of Knox County. The latter died about 1856. To Mr. and Mrs. Cross were born three children: Mary (deceased), William (deceased) and Frank. Mr. and Mrs. Cross are members of the Presbyterian Church of which he is deacon. He is a Democrat in politics, and cast his first presidential vote for George B. McClellan. He is also a Master Mason. He owns a fine farm of 256 acres, and is in excellent circumstances.

W. W. Cruse, one of the stirring, enterprising farmers of Knox County, Tenn., and a native of that county, was born August 22, 1839. He is the son of A. B. and Margaret (Brown) Cruse, both natives of Tennessee. Our subject received his education in the common district schools, and began tilling the soil while still quite young. In 1862 he

chose for his companion through life Miss Charlotta E. Payne, who bore him three children—two sons and one daughter. The sons' names are Jacob A. and John M., and the daughter's name is Lucy Jane. The mother's death occurred March 10, 1874, and in September of the same year he was united in marriage to Miss Nancy E. Hines, and by this union became the father of two sons and two daughters, viz.: Arthur Temple, Chester Ellis, Margaret E. and Sarah Evaline. Mr. Cruze owns three different tracts of land, containing respectively 150, 110 and 50 acres. He is a Republican in politics, and is at present superintendent of the workhouse in Knox County.

J. W. Cruze, Sr., one of the deacons of the First Baptist Church, of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Blount County, Tenn., born December 19, 1824, and is the son of James and Lennes (Childress) Cruze, both natives of Virginia. The father was born in Prince Edward County in 1797, and immigrated to Tennessee about 1808, settling in Knox County, where he farmed until his death in 1852. He was a soldier in the war of 1812. The mother was born in Buckingham County in 1807, and died in 1863. Both were members of the Baptist Church. James Cruze, grandfather of our subject, served seven years as a soldier in the Revolutionary war. Our subject was reared in Blount and Knox Counties, and attended the common schools. In 1849 he married Margaret Sherrell, a native of Blount County, born in 1826, and the daughter of John and Annie Brakeville, both natives of Tennessee. To this union have been born nine children, five of whom are living: James H., Rachel M., Elizabeth, John W., Jr., and C. C. Our subject followed agricultural pursuits until 1852, after which he engaged in merchandising, and this continued until the panic of 1873, when he met with reverses and retired from business. He retained his property, however, and at present is in comfortable circumstances. In 1847 he enlisted in the war between the United States and Mexico, joining the Thirteenth Regiment of Alabama Infantry, United States, under Capt. Egbert Jones. He became a member of the First Baptist Church, of Knoxville, in 1849, and is now and has been a deacon in the same since 1860. His wife is also a member of the same church.

J. H. Cruze, member of the board of education of Knoxville, and son of J. W., Sr., and Margaret (Sherrell) Cruze, was born in Knoxville March 6, 1852, and after passing through the public schools completed his education at the University of Tennessee. At the age of nineteen he began his business career as a salesman for the firm of Woodruff & Co. In 1875 he engaged in the hardware business in partnership with a Mr. Gredig. Soon after he purchased his partner's interest and has continued



alone until July 1, 1887, when he entered into partnership with Mr. E. Buffat under the firm name of Cruze & Buffat. In connection with that he is a member of the firm of Cruze Bros., dealers in coal and coke, and has been dealing quite successfully in real estate. In 1876 he married Miss Lucy Knaffl, daughter of Dr. Knaffl, of Nashville, by whom he has two children: Clifford and Edna. Both Mr. and Mrs. Cruze are members of the First Baptist Church. Politically Mr. Cruze is a Democrat, and he was for several years a member of the board of mayor and aldermen, and as such gained the reputation of fearlessly expressing and voting his convictions. He has been very successful, and now takes rank among the first business men of Knoxville.

J. W. Cruze, Jr., junior member of the firm of Cruze Bros., dealers in coal and coke, and son of J. W., Sr., and Margaret (Sherrell) Cruze, was born March 18, 1864, in the city of Knoxville. His educational advantages were confined to the public schools of the city. Upon reaching his majority he did business for a coal firm until 1886 when he and his brother J. H. Cruze opened their yard at 55 Hardee Street. Since that time he has done an extensive business, handling about 16,000 tons yearly. In 1886 Mr. Cruze married Miss Esther, daughter of Joseph Post, of Knoxville. Mr. Cruze is a member of the First Baptist Church, and in politics is a Democrat. Although young as a business man he is rapidly coming to the front.

John Cruze, one of the substantial merchants of Knoxville, is a son of James and Catherine (Brakebill) Cruze, both natives of East Tennessee. The father's people came from Virginia and the mother's from Pennsylvania, being among the early settlers of this part of the State. The father was a farmer by occupation. Of their family of nine children seven are now living. Our subject was born in Knox County October 27, 1838. He was reared on the farm, and at the age of seventeen came to Knoxville to learn the tinner's trade. Having worked as journeyman until after the war he began business for himself on a small scale, and has been increasing the same ever since. He has been associated with several different firms, and is now a member of the firm of DePue, Cruze & Co., having one of the largest stove and tinware establishments in the city. In 1860 he was united in marriage to Miss Isabella Henry, of Knoxville, and the fruits of this union were six children, four now living—one son and three daughters. Mr. Cruze is a Mason, and he and wife are members of the First Baptist Church. He has been intimately connected with the business interests of Knoxville for thirty-four years.

Albert Davis, farmer, was born November 21, 1825, in Grainger County, Tenn. In 1853 he moved to Knox County, where he has since

resided. He is the third of twelve children born to the union of James and Lavicy (Cockrum) Davis, both natives of South Carolina, and both were brought to Tennessee by their parents when children. James Davis was a minister of the gospel in the Baptist Church. He died in 1872, aged seventy-one years. Mr. and Mrs. Davis were of German and English descent and Mr. Davis' great-grandfather was a native of Ireland. Our subject acquired his education mostly at home and by his own exertions. When twenty-one years of age he began life for himself and has made the principal part of what he now owns by his own exertions. In 1848 he married Miss Deborah Ann Cate, a daughter of Charles and Elizabeth (Lloyd) Cate, natives of North Carolina, where they were reared and educated. They came to Tennessee in 1816 and settled in Grainger County. To them were born eight children: Marian (deceased), Jasper, Taylor (deceased), Elizabeth (deceased) and four who died in infancy. Mr. Davis is a Democrat in politics, casting his first presidential vote for Z. Taylor. He was a staunch Union man during the late war. He and wife have been members of the Missionary Baptist Church for forty years and he has been deacon in the same for thirty years. He was also for many years clerk of the church. Mr. Davis has a fine farm of 200 acres and is a successful and enterprising farmer.

C. Deaderick, M. D., one of the most prominent physicians of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in that city August 22, 1847, and is the son of David and Elizabeth J. (Crozier) Deaderick, both natives of Tennessee. The father was born in the year 1797 and filled various public positions, the last of which was that of clerk and master of the chancery court at Knoxville. His death occurred in 1873. The mother was born in the year 1804 and died April 14, 1887, aged eighty-three years. She was a member of the Third Presbyterian Church, of which her husband was also a member. Our subject was reared in the city of his birth, and attended the University of East Tennessee, finishing his education at the Washington and Lee University at Lexington, Va. He entered that institution in his seventeenth year and graduated in 1869. He began the study of medicine in that year under Dr. John M. Boyd at Knoxville, and in the fall of the same year entered the University of Pennsylvania at Philadelphia, graduating in 1871. He at once returned to his native city and began the practice of medicine, which he has continued up to the present, having established one of the largest practices in the city. He is a member of the Knox County and the State Medical Societies and a member of the American Medical Association. He was recently appointed examining surgeon of the United States Pension Office at Knoxville. Dr. Deaderick was married in 1875 to Rebecca Williams,

a native of Warren County, N. C., born in 1852, and the daughter of John T. and Mary (Somerville) Williams, natives of North Carolina. Mrs. Deaderick is a member of the Episcopal Church.

Hon. James A. Doughty was born in Knox County, Tenn., July 1, 1823, in what was then called Lyon's Bend, on a farm now owned by Robert Badget, seven miles from the city, and is the son of Benjamin and Mary W. (Camp) Doughty, natives of Tennessee and Virginia respectively. Our subject was reared in Knox County, and educated at Maryville College, Blount County, Tenn. Previous to coming to college he had learned the saddler's trade in Knoxville, and this occupation, together with teaching, assisted him in working his way through college. In May, 1849, he wedded Miss Sarah A. Martin, a native of Blount County, Tenn., born in 1821, and to this union three children were born—one son and two daughters. Mrs. Doughty died in 1855, and in 1857 Mr. Doughty married Elizabeth Taylor, of Anderson County, Tenn., who bore him one child, a daughter. In 1877 he married Adelia Murphy, daughter of the late Maj. James A. Murphy, of Knox County. After his first marriage our subject engaged in farming and merchandising in Anderson and Blount Counties, and studied law up to the breaking out of the late war. At that time he allied himself with the Union people of East Tennessee, and in August, 1861, he, with about 300 other Tennessee Unionists, went to Kentucky, and was mustered into the First Regiment of Union Tennessee Infantry, at Camp Dick Robinson, Ky., he having been elected captain of Company K before reaching that point. In December, 1862, he was commissioned by Andrew Johnson, military governor of Tennessee, to raise a regiment of cavalry, and after spending \$1,000 of his own private funds, and after losing his companies for want of supplies before October, 1863, succeeded in raising about 500 men, who were designated the Seventeenth Tennessee Cavalry by Gen. A. E. Burnside. This regiment participated in the siege of Knoxville, and was instrumental in saving the Federal Army from starvation or surrender, a fact noticed in the official report by Gen. Burnside. In January, 1864, this regiment was consolidated with the Twelfth Regiment, and became the Thirteenth Regiment, of which his cousin, George W. Doughty, was made major. After the consolidation of the regiment our subject was commissioned to raise artillery batteries, of which he was promised the lieutenant-colonelcy, but was denied the promised reward to make way for the advancement of individuals who stood more in favor with those in authority. He served throughout the war, and returned home greatly damaged and injured in health, but was not long idle at home until he was called to serve his State in another capacity. In



1865 he was elected to the House of Representatives of Tennessee, to represent Anderson and Campbell Counties. He was re-elected in 1867, and served four years with honor and distinction. He was sometimes called the leader, and sometimes the father of the Radical party, and so he was on some subjects, especially in reference to the status of the negro. He was the first man to vote on the constitutional amendment which gave the negro the privilege of testifying in court, and the right of suffrage. He attended the border State convention at Philadelphia, in 1866, as a delegate, and took a deep interest in the resolution to give the negro the right of suffrage. The report of the committee having the resolution in hand was adverse to its passage on the grounds of inexpediency. There was but the majority report, which was received by the convention. Seeing how matters stood, and that the question was about to be solved, our subject gathered a few prominent friends of the measure together, among whom were United States Senators Fowler, of Tennessee; Hamilton, of Texas, and Moss, of Missouri, who constituted themselves a committee, and prevailed on the convention to permit them to make a minority report for the sake of argument. So well did the friends of the measure improve their time and opportunity that the resolution was adopted, and to our subject is largely due the honor and credit of its passage at that time. During his legislative career Col. Doughty was one of the leaders of all important movements, and earnestly worked for the advancement of the vital interests of the State. He was ever the champion of the negro, the railroads and educational interests, and was the author of the present school law of Tennessee, which has since been amended. He was chairman of the committee on agricultural funds, and aided as such in securing the congressional appropriation to be deposited in the University of Knoxville for the use of the people of the State. In 1867 he began the practice of law at Clinton, Tenn., and continued the same until 1873, when he removed to Sneedville, Tenn., and here practiced until 1883, after which he removed to Knoxville. He is a member of Ed Maynard Post, No. 14, G. A. R., and an excellent citizen.

Dr. Charles M. Drake, physician of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Greene County of that State, December 20, 1854, and is the son of Dr. W. W. and Amanda (Evans) Drake. The father was born in Rockbridge County, Va., in 1818, and attended Tusculum Literary College in Greene County and graduated from Jefferson Medical College at Philadelphia, Penn. At his death, which occurred February 10, 1871, he was considered one of the most prominent physicians of East Tennessee. The mother was born near Russellville, Tenn., in 1824, and was the

daughter of Walter Evans, one of the pioneers and large land owners of Jefferson County, Tenn. Our subject was reared in Greene County and attended school at Tusculum College. In 1872 he began the study of medicine, and the same year entered Jefferson Medical College at Philadelphia, where he graduated in 1875. He was elected assistant surgeon of the Philadelphia Charity Hospital, which position he resigned to come to Knoxville, where he practiced medicine two years. He then returned to Philadelphia and became assistant to Profs. Joseph and William H. Pancoast. Six years were spent in the above position, during which time he visited Europe and the various city hospitals. From 1877 to 1880 he was assistant demonstrator of anatomy at Jefferson Medical College. In 1882 he married at St. Paul, Minn., Miss Nellie Averill, a native of Minnesota, born in 1856, and the daughter of Gen. John T. Averill. Dr. Drake removed to Knoxville in 1883, on account of his wife's health, but her death occurred there in April, 1887. Dr. Drake is a member of the Knox County and State Medical Societies, and has contributed a number of articles to medical journals.

J. C. Duncan, manager of the Western Union Telegraph Company, and also manager of the East Tennessee Telephone Company of Knoxville, was born in Cumberland County, Va., in 1840. When eighteen years of age he began to learn telegraphy. During the war he was with the Army of Tennessee as an operator. In the year 1866 he came to Knoxville and took charge of the Western Union Telegraph office, which position he has held ever since. He has been a student and experimenter of electrical and phonetic science, and since 1880 Mr. Duncan has been manager for the East Tennessee Telephone Company at Knoxville. For a companion through life he chose Miss Fannie J., daughter of Gen. Joseph A. Brooks, and this union was blessed by the birth of two sons. Mr. Duncan is an honest, straightforward business man, and as such is appreciated by his many friends. He has been in the telegraph service twenty-nine years.

East Tennessee Coal Company. Among the largest enterprises in the mining of coal in this State is the above named company, which was organized in 1871 and incorporated July 24, 1883, with a paid up capital of \$40,000; since then it has increased its stock to \$50,000. This firm is the owner of over 3,000 acres of the celebrated Jellico coal fields. While only capitalized at \$50,000 the cost value of their property is \$115,000; \$65,000 being carried as a surplus. The mines are located at Jellico, Tenn., at the junction of the Louisville & Nashville Railroad and East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad. The location is superior to any in East Tennessee, giving shipping facilities north to

the Ohio River and south in all the Southern States as far as the Gulf of Mexico. The following gentlemen constitute the board of directors, viz.: S. B. Luttrell (president Mechanics National Bank), D. C. Richards (president Enterprise Machine Company), J. B. Hoxsie (general manager Crystal Ice Company), D. D. Nicholas (president Gem Marble Company), W. T. Lewis, E. J. Davis and B. A. Jenkins. The signal success of this industrial enterprise is due to the ability and thorough knowledge of its officers, E. J. Davis, president and general manager, and B. A. Jenkins, secretary and treasurer. Mr. Davis is a native of Wales, and immigrated to America in 1867, locating at Knoxville, Tenn. He is a slater and stone cutter by trade, but embarked with a small purse, with several others, into the coal business in 1871, and has since been engaged in the upbuilding of this now recognized as one of the largest enterprises of the kind in the State. Mr. Jenkins is a native of Pennsylvania, and is a graduate of a Pennsylvania academy and of Eastman's Business College. He first connected himself as bookkeeper, and afterward was elected secretary and treasurer of the company. Much of the success of this organization is due to the energies of this young man, who is now one of its largest stockholders. No company is deserving of higher recognition than this organization, for its widespread popularity is due to its prompt, liberal and reliable transactions in the prosecution of its business.

East Tennessee National Bank was organized at Knoxville, July 26, 1872, with a capital stock of \$100,000, and the following list of directors, viz.: Joseph R. Anderson, R. Love, James H. Ernest, Franklin W. Taylor, Sr., William Brazelton, Joseph Jaques, Richard C. Jackson, Jesse A. Rayl, Samuel McKinney, Franklin H. McClung, Jasper W. Lillard, Samuel E. Boyd and J. E. Raht. Richard C. Jackson was elected president, Franklin H. McClung, vice-president, and W. B. French, cashier. The present directors are R. S. Payne, E. J. Sanford, S. B. Boyd, W. W. Wordworth, Daniel Briscoe, C. M. McClung, J. M. Meek, R. C. Jackson and C. M. McGhee. R. S. Payne is president, E. J. Sanford, vice-president, and F. L. Fisher, cashier. The following is the report of the bank, after business, March 4, 1887: *Resources*—Loans and discounts, \$501,069.23; overdrafts, \$1,557.41; United States bonds to secure circulation, \$25,000; United States bonds to secure deposits, \$50,000; other stocks, bonds and mortgages, \$20,429.12; due from approved reserve agents, \$221,322.76; due from other National banks, \$27,309.96; due from State banks and bankers, \$10,856.85; real estate, furniture and fixtures, \$2,700; current expenses and taxes paid, \$8,819.95; premiums paid, \$18,940.62; checks and other cash items, \$10,396.37;



bills of other banks, \$35,000; specie, \$106,713.81; legal tender notes, \$115,000; redemption fund with United States treasurer (5 per cent of circulation), \$1.125; due from United States treasurer, other than 5 per cent redemption fund, \$40; total, \$1,156,281.08. *Liabilities*—Capital stock paid in, \$100,000; surplus fund, \$20,000; undivided profits, \$94,385.29; National bank notes outstanding, \$22,500; individual deposits subject to check, \$812,422.47; demand certificates of deposits, \$10,537.17; United States deposits, \$15,119.01; deposits of United States disbursing officers, \$31,118.08; due to other National banks, \$35,794.77; due to State banks and bankers, \$4,404.29; notes and bills rediscounted, \$10,000; total, \$1,156,281.08.

R. H. Edington, dry goods merchant, and senior member of the firm of R. H. Edington & Co., extensive rock-masonry contractors, of Knoxville, Tenn., is a son of James and Fanny (Johnson) Edington, and was born in McMinn County, Tenn., January 22, 1842. His parents were natives of Tennessee, and his father was a millwright by occupation. He died in 1844. The mother was born in 1809, and died in the year 1876. R. H. Edington was reared in the county of his birth, and acquired a limited education in the country schools of that day. Later in life, however, he added to his education materially by his own exertions, which, with natural ability, fitted him for a successful and active career. He began life at the bottom, and was obliged to borrow money with which to procure his marriage license. Until after his marriage he was not able to write his own name or do the easiest sum in arithmetic. But success followed him, and he is to-day in easy circumstances, paying taxes on about \$14,000 worth of real estate. In 1861 he wedded Margaret Henderson, a native of Tennessee, who presented him with seven children, six of whom are living. Mrs. Edington died in 1876, and in June, 1877, our subject married Catherine J. Groner, a native of Tennessee, born in 1846, the daughter of Wilson and Margaret (Brown) Groner. To this union five children have been born. Mr. Edington became a member of New Hopewell Baptist Church at the age of fourteen, and has continued a member of that denomination up to the present. He and his wife are members of the First Baptist Church, of Knoxville, of which he is a trustee.

T. C. Eldridge, proprietor of the Knoxville Carriage Factory, is the son of David Eldridge, a native of Pennsylvania. When young the father moved to Ohio, where he learned carriage-making, and ran a shop many years. While on a trip to Natchez, Miss., he met and married Miss Elizabeth Gauley, a native of England, who came to America when about sixteen years of age. In 1872 they moved to Knoxville, where both

spent the balance of their days. Of their family of four children—three sons and one daughter—our subject is the second. He was born March 2, 1852, in Ohio; was educated in the common schools, and while growing up learned the trade of his father. When seventeen years of age he started out for himself. After traveling and working as journeyman for a number of years he found his way to Knoxville, his father having established a factory at that point in 1872. He took charge of it six years later, and has run it successfully ever since. In 1881 he married Miss Sallie Knaffl, daughter of Dr. R. Knaffl, of Nashville, and by her became the father of two daughters: Maudie and Osie. Mr. Eldridge is a Republican in politics. Financially he has met with excellent success, having started with a very small capital, he now runs a good factory, working from seven to twelve hands.

William Epps, senior member of the firm of Epps, McMillan & Co., dealers in boots, shoes, hats, trunks, umbrellas, etc., is a native of Knox County. He was reared on the farm, came to Knoxville in 1877, and filled various clerkships until the firm of which he is now a member was formed in 1881. The other two members of the firm are Alex McMillan and Flem. Hazen, both natives of Knoxville. They employ three assistants, besides the members of the firm. The paternal great-grandfather of our subject came from Holland, and located in Virginia, from which State the grandfather came to Knoxville in the early settlement of this county. He was in the war of 1812. The father of our subject, Richard Epps, was born in this county, and served one year in the Confederate cavalry service. He is at present engaged in agricultural pursuits in Knox County. The mother of our subject, Armenia Epps, is a native also of Knox County, and William is the second of her family of nine children, all of whom are living.

Capt. S. P. Evans, clerk and master, is a native of Roane County, Tenn., where he was reared and educated. He grew to manhood on the farm, and at the time of Grant's first election to the presidency, came to Knoxville as United States marshal, which position he held for twelve years, when he was appointed to his present office. In 1872 he was united in marriage to Miss Emma Godby, by whom he had six children, four still living. Mr. Evans has been a member of the Coal Creek Coal Company since 1883, and was sheriff of Roane County before he came to Knoxville. At the breaking out of hostilities during the late war, he enlisted in the Fifth Tennessee Federal Infantry, and at the organization was elected second lieutenant, from which he was promoted to the rank of captain, serving as such until the close. He is the fourth of a family of ten children, seven now living, born to the union of P. H. and Rebecca

Parks, natives of East Tennessee. The father resided in Cocke County in early life, then in Roane County about forty years, and there died in 1882. The mother's death occurred in the same county about 1880.

Ignaz Fanz, secretary and treasurer of the Knoxville Ice Company, was born in Baden, Germany, August 1, 1842, and educated in the old country. At the age of fifteen he came to America and located at Knoxville, Tenn., where he began learning the machinist's trade, but was obliged to abandon this on account of not understanding the English language. For a time, during the war, he manufactured powder, and then he and a brother engaged in the butcher's trade. In 1862 he went out in Company G, Sixth Tennessee Infantry, Federal Army, and served until the close of the war, being sergeant a short time. After the cessation of hostilities he returned to Knoxville, and soon began manufacturing the celebrated Fanz's East Tennessee pork sausage, which he has made ever since. In 1866 he married Miss Emma J. Cooley, an East Tennessee lady, and to them were born five children—one son and four daughters. Both Mr. and Mrs. Fanz are members of the Third Presbyterian Church. He is a Republican in politics, and a member of the G. A. R.

F. L. Fisher, cashier of the East Tennessee National Bank, is a native of Union County, Penn., born in 1853, and was reared and educated in that county. He then came to Tennessee with his parents, who located on a farm in Hamblen County. In 1876 he came to Knoxville and accepted a clerkship with a wholesale grocery firm two or three years. He then began in the bank as bookkeeper, from which he was promoted to teller, and from this position to that of his present as cashier in 1883. In February of the same year he was united in marriage to Miss Ella Locke, a daughter of Maj. Locke, of this city. Our subject is the sixth of eight children born to Daniel and Amelia (Loudenslager) Fisher, who are natives of Pennsylvania and of German descent. The father died in Hamblen County at seventy-five years of age. The mother is still living at the old home.

W. H. Fizer, proprietor of the Palace Livery Stable of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Mount Sterling, Ky., born in 1860, and is the son of S. L. and Mary (Jones) Fizer, both natives of Kentucky. The father was born in 1833, is a painter by occupation and resides at Mount Sterling. The mother was born in 1844. W. H. Fizer was reared in the town of his birth and attended the public schools. In 1879 he removed to La Grange Iron Furnace, in Stewart County, Tenn., where he entered the furnace store as clerk, and succeeded in working his way up to assistant superintendent of the furnace, a position he held until he



removed to Bibb Furnace, Alabama, in 1881. At this place he occupied a similar position for one year, and then the same position at Bass Furnace, Alabama, for two years. He then went to Shelby Iron Works, Alabama, where he secured large ore contracts. While at this place he married, in August, 1885, Tennie Gurley, of Knoxville, who was born in that city in 1860. At the end of two years he removed to Knoxville and opened his present business. His stable building is one of the largest and most complete in the State. It is a two-story brick, fronting 150 feet on Reservoir Street and 200 feet deep, is stocked with fine horses and elegant rigs. Mr. Fizer is a young man of thorough business worth and sterling character, and is one of the representative young business men of Knoxville.

B. P. Flenniken, farmer and mechanic, was born in Knox County, Tenn., October 11, 1830, and while still quite young, began earning his own living. He went to Middle Tennessee, where he learned brick-making and the masonry trade, and has followed this all his life in connection with farming. In March, 1859, Miss Malissa Ann Tipton daughter of William C. Tipton, became his wife. She was born in Knox County, Tenn., October 1, 1837, and two children were born to her marriage, viz.: William B. who lived but a short time and John Howell, a manly little fellow, the pride of his fond parents and the delight of the household, who died after a short stay of three years. Mrs. Flenniken has been an invalid for eight years. Both Mr. and Mrs. Flenniken are worthy and consistent members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. Mr. Flenniken has a good farm of 170 acres of land in District No. 13, of Knox County. He recently purchased a nice homestead near Knoxville but on the opposite side of the Tennessee River, and here he expects to pass the remainder of his days. He also owns two houses and lots in Knoxville.

E. H. Flenniken, a native of Knox County, Tenn., was born in 1832, and lived on a farm until twenty years of age, after which he learned the brick-mason's trade and followed that until 1861, when he returned to agricultural pursuits. This occupation he followed for three years, after which he resumed his trade in connection with brick manufacturing in Knoxville, and continued this for twenty-seven years. He retired from business in 1881, and has since devoted his time to looking after the interests of his farm and town property. He was formerly president of the Kingston Pike Company, and is at present a stockholder and director in the same. In 1862 he married Miss Mary Adaline French, also a native of Knox County. His great-grandfather, Wallace Flenniken, located within four miles of the present site of Knoxville, and a house

that he built here, and in which he reared part of his family, is still standing near the Maryville dirt road. He resided in the house until his death October 11, 1828. The grandfather of our subject, Wallace Flenniken, was reared here and served in the war of 1812. Samuel Flenniken, father of our subject, was born in Knox County, near the old Flenniken farm mentioned above, and followed the carpenter's trade in connection with farming, until his death in 1877. He married Elizabeth Howell, a native of Knox County, and a family of eight children was reared, four of whom are still living: Our subject, two brothers and a sister. Mr. Flenniken is a Mason, and he and family are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

W. B. Ford, circuit court clerk, was born in Knox County in 1851, and is the son of James P. and Susan (Haynes) Ford, natives of Virginia, who came to this county about 1810 and 1825 respectively, and were here married. The mother died in 1876, and the father June 8, 1887. The father was a successful tiller of the soil, and a much respected citizen. Our subject was one of twelve children (nine of whom are living) born to his parents. He received a good education at Mossy Creek College and at the State University, leaving the former institution in 1876. He then followed the teacher's profession until 1879, at which date he went in the United States revenue service as storekeeper and gauger until 1882, after which he was elected to his present position. In 1873 he was united in marriage to Orlena Henderson, a native of Knox County. Mr. Ford is a member of the I. O. O. F., and the Missionary Baptist Church. His grandfather, Joseph Ford, was a native of Virginia, and settled in the Fourteenth District of Knox County. The Ford family are all Republicans, the father and grandfather formerly being Whigs.

J. W. Fowler, a farmer of the Sixth District, was born April 28, 1817, in Knox County, where he has since resided. He is one of twelve children born to John and Elizabeth (Dorsey) Fowler, both of whom were born and reared in Franklin County, N. C. They came to Tennessee in 1816, settled in the district where their son now resides, and here passed the remainder of their days. Samuel Fowler, grandfather of our subject, was a soldier under Gen. Washington, and participated in the battle in which Gen. Braddock was killed. He was reared in Virginia, and his father was a native born Englishman. His wife's maiden name was Fanny Lawson; she had two brothers who were captains in the Revolutionary war, one in the colonial and the other in the British Army, and both were killed. Our subject never attended school six months in his life, but acquired his education by his own efforts while at home. He lived with and provided for his father until the latter's death. When twenty-

eight years of age he married Miss Mary Conner, who was born in 1820, and who is a daughter of William and Sarah (Cox) Conner. This union resulted in the birth of eight children: John W., William P., Elbert S., Louisa J. (deceased), Samuel P., Nancy E. (Mrs. Herrell), Sarah E. (Mrs. Yarnell) and James A. Mr. Fowler and family are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church, Mr. Fowler having been a member of the same for forty-five years. He is a Republican in politics, and cast his first presidential vote for William H. Harrison. He was elected justice of the peace in 1860, and has been re-elected each successive election since. Mr. Fowler has reared eight children and one grandson, S. W. Marshall, who are highly respected citizens of the different localities in which they live, and but one of the nine has ever taken a drink of ardent spirits. They are all ardent prohibitionists. Mrs. Fowler's grandfather, Curd Cox, was a soldier in the Revolutionary war, being only a youth at that time. Her father was orderly sergeant under Gen. Jackson in the war of 1812. Mr. Fowler's maternal grandmother's maiden name was Sedgick, and she was a native of Maryland.

W. M. Fox, a successful agriculturist of the Tenth District, was born November 7, 1834, in the Ninth District of Knox County, where he grew to manhood. He came to the locality where he now resides in 1871, and here he has since lived. He is one of the fourteen children born to Austin and Margaret (Walker) Fox, both natives of Burke County, N. C., where they were married in 1820. They came to Knox County in 1829, settling on Beaver Creek. The father died in 1840, and the mother in October, 1864; they were both of Scotch-Irish descent, and both were members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. At the time of his death the father owned 800 acres of well improved land, all well cultivated. Our subject's grandfather, John Fox, was a soldier in the Revolutionary war, and was a practical and successful farm manager. W. M. Fox, married Miss Louisa Ellen Nelson, May 21, 1865. She was a daughter of David and Charlotte (Lanes) Nelson. Mrs. Nelson died January 3, 1880, aged seventy years. Mr. Nelson's father, Suthy Nelson, lived to the remarkably advanced age of one hundred and fifteen years. He was a soldier in both the Revolution and the war of 1812. To our subject and wife seven children were born: David N., Charlotta B., Mollie T., Etta J., William M., Joseph O. and Daisy Adelia. Mr. Fox is a Democrat in politics, although he usually votes for principle instead of party; is a member of the Masonic fraternity, and he and wife and two elder daughters are members of the Missionary Baptist Church. Mr. Fox began life a poor man, and, besides paying over \$2,000 security debts, has a fine farm of 400 acres of land located two miles east of Concord.



During the late war Mr. Fox was recruiting officer for the Federal Army, and proved a very efficient officer in that capacity.

J. W. Fox, of the firm of Bird & Fox, liverymen and stock traders, was born in Knox County, Tenn., in 1849, and was reared on a farm at Beaver Creek, securing his education at the country schools, and after reaching manhood began dealing and trading in stock. He soon purchased a farm in the county, continuing stock trading, shipping, etc., in connection with farming. He served as deputy sheriff of Knox County in the years 1874-75 under Mat. Swan. He located in Knoxville in April, 1885, where he continued buying and shipping stock. In November, 1886, he formed a partnership with J. W. Bird in the livery business. They keep about thirty head of horses in the livery trade, and still continue trading and shipping to Southern markets. The father of our subject, J. W. Fox, Sr., was a native of Burke County, N. C., and came to Knox County in childhood, where he followed farming and stock trading until his death in 1881. Ann Galbraith Fox, the mother, was a native of Anderson County, Tenn., and also died in 1881. Our subject is a Free Mason and the eldest of four sons and three daughters, all living.

Henry Frazier (deceased) was born January 22, 1825, in Knox County, and within one mile of the Frazier homestead. He received a common-school education, and having a decided taste for agricultural pursuits always followed that occupation. He devoted much time to the improvement of his farm, and was considered one of the best farmers in his immediate neighborhood. He took a great interest in education, and was the main support of the school of his neighborhood. He was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and very enthusiastic in the cause of religion, having with the aid of a friend, erected Delphi Academy, near his home, which was after some years used as a church, and he was for some years steward and also superintendent of the Sunday-school. He died in his sixty-second year in the full triumph of a living faith, and was buried in the family graveyard. He was the husband of Margaret Underwood, whose first husband was Jonathan Pickle. The marriage of Mr. Frazier occurred in 1856, and to this union were born seven children: Gustavus, Sarah and Alice (twins), James, Adra, Ida and Angus, three of whom are married. Mr. Frazier gave liberally to support the gospel, and was a good man. Mrs. Frazier is now living at the old home in close proximity to her children.

W. H. French, a farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., April 25, 1820, and is the son of George and Elizabeth French, natives of Virginia and Pennsylvania, respectively. Our subject is of Dutch extraction and one of three sons and two daughters born to his parents. Our subject,

a brother, and one sister are all who are living. W. H. received a very limited education and early in life turned his attention to farming. He began his life's work with very little capital, but is now the owner of 215 acres of Knox County land, situated in the Twenty-first District, all well improved. He has lately turned his attention to stock raising and excels in this. He is an uncompromising Republican but does not care for office, and although sixty-seven years of age is still strong and healthy.

W. B. French, farmer, and prominent citizen of Knox County, was born in that county March 11, 1850. His father, Jacob French, was of German descent, and a native of Virginia. His mother, Sarah (Kountz) French, was of German descent, and a native of Tennessee. Our subject received a rather limited education in the country schools, and early in life began cultivating the soil. August 5, 1874, he was united in marriage to Miss Susan M. Haynes, daughter of Jordan and Elizabeth Haynes, and the fruits of this union were four sons and two daughters, only two sons and two daughters now living, viz.: Urban Alexander, Jacob Dexter, Lilly and Sarah Opha. Our subject is the owner of 285 acres of well-improved land, and is also interested in raising live stock. He is a justice of the peace in his district, is postmaster at French, is a Republican in politics, and he and his wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

J. V. Fulkerson, a farmer, miller and dairyman near Ebenezer, was born September 20, 1848, in Rogersville, Hawkins Co., Tenn. He is the youngest of four children born to James L. and Alice G. (Armstrong) Fulkerson. The father was born in Washington County, Va., in 1814, and came to Tennessee about 1835, settling first in Hawkins County. He died in 1849. The mother of our subject was born in Hawkins County, Tenn., and died on the farm where her son is now residing, in 1872, aged eighty-five years. J. V. Fulkerson received the principal part of his education at Abingdon, Va. At the age of twenty-seven he married Miss Lula Oldham, a native of Knoxville, Tenn., and the daughter of Thomas E. and Georgianna (English) Oldham. Seven children were the result of our subject's marriage, viz.: Alice Armstrong, Margaret Virginia, Lula Oldham, Floyd Hurt, Thomas Oldham, Georgianna English and James Lyons. Mr. Fulkerson is a Democrat in politics, and he and Mrs. Fulkerson are members of the Presbyterian Church, of which he has been a ruling elder for one year. He has served his district as school commissioner, and was appointed a member of the live stock sanitary commission in 1884, and is still holding the office. He is a Master Mason and a Knight Templar. Mr. Fulkerson's great-grandfather, George Rogers, a native of Ireland, came to America shortly after the Revolutionary

war, and settled in Hawkins County, Tenn., the county seat of which was named in honor of him. He was for some time hotel keeper at Rogersville, and it was at his house that Gen. Jackson compelled a fastidious young man who desired to lodge alone in a room, to sleep in Mr. Roger's corn crib, being forced in by main strength by Gen. Jackson, when he refused to occupy the place prepared for him. Our subject's paternal great-grandfather, James Fulkerson, was a native of Germany, as was also his wife. J. V.'s grandmother's name was Vance, a first cousin of the father of Zebadee Vance, ex-governor of North Carolina, and at present United States senator. Our subject's uncle, Abraham Faulkner, represented the Ninth Congressional District of Virginia, two years in Congress. Another uncle, Samuel V. Faulkerson, was judge of the Ninth Judicial District of Virginia for many years, and after the breaking out of the late war was appointed colonel of the Thirty-seventh Virginia, and was afterward commissioned brigadier-general, but was killed a short time afterward. Our subject began life for himself, when nineteen years of age, in the drug business at Knoxville. This he followed for sixteen years. He then traveled for the wholesale firm of S. D. Mitchell & Co., then with W. C. Ingles & Co., then with Oldham & Hunter, and after being eleven years on the road began working at \$8 per month, and when he quit working was drawing a salary of \$1,500 per year. In August, 1883, he abandoned the business on account of ill health, and has since followed agricultural pursuits. He owns 500 acres of land, all well cultivated, and located on the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, near Ebenezer. In 1853 Mr. F. S. Heiskell married Mrs. James L. Fulkerson. He was born in 1787, in Woodstock, Va., where he grew to manhood. He learned type setting under his brother, and he and his brother-in-law established the *Knoxville Register* in 1815, one of the strongest Whig organs in East Tennessee. He was State and National printer, and represented Knox County several times in the Legislature, riding from Knoxville to Nashville several times on horseback. He was a strong Jackson man, although he was an enthusiastic Whig in principle. Mr. Heiskell and Gov. Brownlow carried on a very exciting discussion for some time in the newspapers, and Mr. Heiskell, very ably and successfully defended the principles he advocated. He purchased and moved to the farm, where Mr. J. V. Fulkerson resides, in 1835, where he continued to reside until his death, which occurred in 1883. He was buried at Rogersville. He was a self-made man, acquiring his education by his own exertions.

Charles M. Funck, manager of the marble works of W. H. Evans & Son, Knoxville, was born in Cumberland, Md., January 17, 1854, but



while yet quite young removed to Baltimore. While growing up he had the benefit of the public schools until thirteen years of age, when he was left an orphan. His parents, Henry and Rosina (Hausch) Funck, came from Germany when children. The father served in Company K, Second Maryland Infantry, Federal Army, nearly three years, but was discharged on account of ill health. He afterward joined a construction corps, and served until the close of the war. He was a cabinet-maker by trade. The mother died in 1864, and the father in 1867. Of their family of seven children—three sons and four daughters—the three boys were of a mechanical turn of mind. Our subject began his business career as cash boy in a dry goods house. From that he arose to salesman, and continued in that capacity for about nine years. After spending four years in Florida, farming, he returned to Baltimore, and was bookkeeper and cashier for the Baltimore Ice Company. In 1877 he married Miss J. Cora Wilcox, of Baltimore, who bore him five children. One son and two daughters are now living. In 1886 Mr. Funck came to Knoxville to assume the duties of his present office. He has managed this large establishment ably, and justly deserves the esteem in which he is held.

William Gallaher, farmer of the Ninth District, was born May 11, 1812, on the farm where he has since resided. He is the tenth of eleven children born to George and Sarah (Oats) Gallaher. George Gallaher was born and reared in Virginia, and after his marriage came to the place where his son now lives. This was about 1800. He was an active worker in the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, and died in 1837, at the age of seventy-six. Mrs. Gallagher died about 1820. Our subject received his education in the common schools of the Ninth District. At the age of twenty-six he married Miss Mary King, who was born in 1819, five miles south of Knoxville, and who is the daughter of Rev. Jeremiah and Mary (Freeman) King. Her father was reared in North Carolina, and was a prominent and successful minister of the gospel in the Methodist Episcopal Church. He was for many years presiding elder. He died about 1822. To our subject and wife were born ten children: George H., Thomas J., John F., William N. (deceased), William B. (deceased), Lucy A. (deceased), Robert H., Joshua J. (deceased), David C. and Sallie E. (Mrs. Dr. Charles Lee). Mrs. Gallaher, up to the time of her death, was a member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, as was also Mr. Gallaher and the children. She died January 3, 1887, about sixty-nine years old. Mr. Gallaher owns a fine farm of 1,100 acres, on Clinch River, twenty-two miles from Knoxville. In politics Mr. Gallaher is a Democrat, casting his first presidential vote for Martin Van Buren.

Robert H. Gallaher, farmer, was born April 16, 1851, on the farm where William Gallaher now resides. He received his education in the subscription schools of the Ninth District, and at Croton College, in Monroe County. He is the seventh of ten children born to William and Mary (King) Gallaher, who were of Irish and Scotch lineage, respectively. (For further particulars of parents, see sketch of William Gallaher.) Robert H. Gallaher, subject of this sketch, married Miss Roxie Crookshank, the daughter of Thomas and Lavenia (Boyd) Crookshank. Mr. Crookshank was born in April, 1831, in Jefferson County, Tenn. After his marriage he moved to Knox County, and settled at Concord. In 1881 he moved to Grayson County, Tex., where he is now living, and is a member of the Presbyterian Church. His wife was born July 17, 1842, in Knox County, Tenn. She died in September, 1869. She was an active worker in the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. To our subject and wife were born six children: Effie J., Willie R., Joshua J., David C., George B. and Carrie Sue. Mr. Gallaher is a Democrat in politics, and he and his wife are members of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. He owns 225 acres on Clinch River, situated about twenty miles from Knoxville.

George Gallaher, farmer of the Eleventh District, was born April 14, 1836, in Roane County, Tenn., and is the fifth of eight children born to Thomas and Permelia (Williams) Gallaher. Thomas Gallaher was born in 1801 on Clinch River, where he grew to manhood. He took great interest in the politics of the country, and was postmaster for several years. He was of English and Irish descent, and died in 1873. His wife was born and reared in Knox County, and was also of English and Irish descent. She died in 1838, being about thirty-two years of age. Our subject received his education in the common schools of Roane County, and in 1858 married Margaret Fox, daughter of Austin and Margaret (Walker) Fox. To Mr. and Mrs. Gallaher were born three children: Thomas (deceased), Sophronia (Mrs. William Rodgers) and Charles. Mrs. Gallaher died August 20, 1868, and Mr. Gallaher took for his second wife, Miss Sarah Walker, June 8, 1871. She is a daughter of Elijah and Sarah Walker. Mr. Gallaher is a Democrat in politics, and he and wife are members of the Missionary Baptist Church, of which he was elected deacon in February, 1887. He owns a fine farm of 320 acres near the Kingston road, nine miles west of Knoxville, and is a successful farmer.

J. M. Gass, M. D., physician of Knoxville, Tenn., a native of Jefferson County, Tenn., was born April 7, 1836, and is the son of Ewing and Parmelia (Scruggs) Gass, both of whom are dead. Our subject was

reared on the farm, and acquired his literary education at Greeneville and Lebanon, Tenn. He was married, June 24, 1867, to Nancy Davis, who was born in 1839, and is the daughter of James Davis, of Greene County, Tenn. Both are members of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. He began the study of medicine under Dr. John R. Boyd, of Greeneville, Tenn.; later graduated from the medical department of the University of Nashville, and then began practicing in Greeneville, from where he removed to Morristown, and in August, 1883, removed to Knoxville, where he has since practiced his profession, having built up a good practice. He is a member of the Knox County Medical Society, and also of Oriental Lodge, F. & A. M., of Knoxville.

J. W. Gaut, general produce, grain and commission merchant, was born in Jefferson County, Tenn., February 26, 1823, and in early boyhood moved with his parents to Monroe County, where he grew to manhood on a farm. He came to Knoxville in 1853 and embarked in the general produce and commission trade, being the first merchant in East Tennessee to confine himself to a certain line of goods. In 1848, previous to his coming to Knoxville, he married Miss Jane Boldman, a native of Greene County, Tenn., to whom thirteen children have been born, four sons and two daughters still living. From 1855 to 1858 he was in the wholesale grocery, grain and provision trade, after which he sold his interest and moved his family to Savannah, Ga., at which place he continued a general commission business until the commencement of the war. After the war he followed business two years in Atlanta, Ga., after which he came to Knoxville and resumed his former business, which he has since continued with the assistance of his sons. Mr. Gaut is one of the board of trustees for the University of Tennessee, was on the board of education (Knoxville city schools) five years, and for a number of years was president of the Knoxville board of trade which he assisted in organizing in 1871. Mr. Gaut's grandparents, John and Lutitia Gaut, were of German and Irish extraction respectively, but were natives of America. They settled in Jefferson County about 1780 or 1785, and their family consisted of thirteen children, two of whom are still living, and the average age already attained by the family of fifteen, including parents, is seventy-five years. Two of the above family (uncles of our subject) were in the war of 1812. Robert Gaut, father of our subject, was born in Jefferson County in 1801, and followed agricultural pursuits through life. He moved from Tennessee to Illinois in 1863, and died there in 1865. The mother of our subject, Mary (Wood) Gaut, was a native of Jefferson County, and died in 1846. Of her family of six children all are living but one daughter, our subject being the eldest of the



family. He and his family are all members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, holding memberships at Church Street Church, of which Mr. Gaut is and has been for many years an efficient member, and for twenty years past always sent as a lay delegate to the district and annual conference of his church. He also served as lay delegate in the general conference of 1874, 1878 and 1882 respectively.

J. L. George, farmer, was born August 31, 1848, in Blount County, Tenn., where he remained until 1872, when he moved to his present residence. He is the third of seven children born to J. W. and Eliza J. (Badgett) George, both of Irish descent. Mrs. George was born and reared at the mouth of Little River. She died October 22, 1877, aged about fifty-seven. Mr. J. W. George was born and reared in Blount County, where he is still living. The grandfather of our subject, Samuel George, came from Virginia to Tennessee at a very early day. He was justice of the peace of his district for many years and was prominently known as a flatboat builder and produce shipper. He reared a family of eight children, J. W. being the youngest born and the only child now living. J. W. is an energetic, enterprising man, and is one of the most influential and prominent citizens of the locality where he is known. He accumulated a vast amount of property, but much of it was destroyed or stolen during the late war. Mr. George married his second wife, Mrs. Mary Dorton, formerly Miss Hood, a sister of Gen. R. N. Hood, of Knoxville, March 2, 1880. By this union two children were born. Our subject received his education in Ewing and Jefferson College and at Emery and Henry, near Abingdon, Va. At the age of twenty-seven he married Miss Bettie Heiskell, a daughter of Milton Y. and Caroline (Kelso) Heiskell. William Heiskell, father of Milton Heiskell, was born and reared in Virginia, and came to Knox County at a very early day. He represented Knox County in the State Legislature several years, and took quite an active part in legislative affairs and in politics. He also took a prominent part in politics during the late war, and was quite an able supporter of the Union cause. Mr. Milton Heiskell received his education at Emery and Henry College, Virginia, and received his medical education at the medical college at Philadelphia, where he graduated. He is now practicing medicine at Knoxville, and is meeting with excellent success as a physician. To our subject and wife were born six children: Milton Heiskell, Isaac Wright, Joe Leath, Charley Kelso and two who died in infancy. Mrs. George is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. Mr. George is a Democrat in politics, casting his first presidential vote for Horace Greeley, and is a Master Mason. He owns 227 acres of land twelve miles southwest of Knoxville, and is a very successful farmer.

W. F. Gibbs, clerk of the criminal court for the district of Knox, is a native of Knox County, and was educated at Walnut Grove Academy and the University of Tennessee. He grew to manhood on the farm, and was elected constable of the Fifth Civil District in 1874, and re-elected in 1876, serving four years in all. In 1878 he was appointed deputy sheriff of Knox County, under Sheriff Reeder, and in 1880 was reappointed by Sheriff C. B. Gossett. In the year 1882 he was elected to his present office, being the regular nominee of the Republican party, and was re-elected in August, 1886, which term he is now filling. He is the son of John and Sarah W. (Blain) Gibbs, who are natives of Knox and Grainger Counties, Tenn., respectively. The father is a successful farmer, and is now following agricultural pursuits in this county. He was deputy sheriff six years at the close of the war. February 22, 1887, our subject was united in marriage to Miss Mamie Sullivan, a native of Washington, D. C., and the daughter of Dennis Sullivan (deceased), of that city. Mr. Gibbs is a member of the A. O. U. W.

Hon. Henry R. Gibson, chancellor of the Second Chancery Division of Tennessee, is a native of Maryland, born in 1837, and graduated at Hobart College, Geneva, N. Y., in the class of 1862. A year later he married Miss Fanny M. Reed, of Brooklyn, N. Y., and there have been born to them three children: Nellie, Woolman (deceased) and Fanny. His father, Woolman Gibson, farmer and merchant, was born in Queen Anne County, Md., in 1800, and died in Washington, D. C., in 1877. His mother, Catherine (Carter) Gibson, who is also deceased, was a native of Georgetown, D. C. His great-grandfather, Woolman Gibson, served under Washington in Braddock's defeat, and afterward settled near the battleground, now the site of Pittsburgh, Penn. From this branch descended several of the noted Gibsons of Pennsylvania and Ohio. An uncle of Chancellor Gibson's mother, Daniel Wells, was one of two patriots who killed the British commander, Gen. Ross, at the battle of North Point, near Baltimore, in the war of 1812, and the name of this hero stands first on the shaft of the Baltimore Battle Monument. Chancellor Gibson entered the military service of the United States March 17, 1863, on the general staff of the Army of the Potomac. He participated in the second battle of Fredericksburg, in the battles of Chancellorsville and Monocacy and in the preliminary skirmishes of Gettysburg. He was honorably discharged from the service, August 4, 1865. After the war he attended the Albany (N. Y.) Law School, and upon the completion of his studies, and after receiving his license to practice law from the supreme court of New York, came to Knoxville and began the practice

of his profession. In 1866 he moved to Campbell County, and in 1869 was chosen a delegate to the State Constitutional Convention from Campbell and Anderson. He was prominent in the convention, but owing to some obnoxious provisions in the constitution, refused to sign it. In 1870 he was elected to the State Senate, was a Grant electoral candidate in 1872, and a Garfield electoral candidate in 1880. In 1875 he represented the counties of Campbell, Union and Scott in the Tennessee House of Representatives. In 1881 he was appointed postoffice inspector, in which position he investigated the Star Route cases in California, Oregon, Idaho, Nevada, Utah and Arizona, and was highly commended by his superiors for his zeal and efficiency. In 1883 he became the editor of the *Knoxville Chronicle*, consolidating with it the *Knoxville Republican*, and making it the leading Republican paper in the South. In June, 1885, he was appointed by President Arthur, United States pension agent for the Southern States. In August, 1886, he was elected to his present office of chancellor by a majority of 13,621. He is a member of the Ed. Maynard Post, G. A. R., of Knoxville, and Senior Vice-Commander of the Department of Tennessee and Georgia G. A. R. Chancellor Gibson is a scholarly and vigorous writer, and as an orator has made a State reputation. His legal acquirements and habits of industry and research, eminently fit him for the responsible duties of Chancellor. Yet in the prime of life and possessed of good bodily vigor, Chancellor Gibson has open to him other and still larger fields of usefulness and fame.

S. L. Gilson, farmer of the Eleventh District, was born in Rush County, Ind., in 1829, and came to Tennessee in 1856, settling first at Knoxville, where he ran the stage from that place to Loudon the following four years. Since 1860 he has been engaged in farming. He is a son of Daniel and Jane (Bruce) Gilson, both of whom were born and reared in Washington County, Va. After their marriage they immigrated to Rush County, Ind., but moved from there to Iowa in 1840. Mr. Gilson died in 1841, and his widow moved her family back to Rush County, Ind., where she died in 1875, aged about eighty-three years. Mr. Gilson was of Irish and his wife of English descent. S. L. Gilson had very limited educational advantages, and after reaching manhood was united in marriage to Miss Catherine J. Lones, who was born in 1836 near where she now resides. Fifteen children were the result of our subject's marriage, viz.: Joseph W., John R., Thomas W., Lenora A. (now Mrs. S. H. Cooper), Nettie G., Horace M., Nancy J. F. (deceased), Sarah Mack, Emma C. (Mrs. A. Rohel), Mary C., Samuel H., Daniel F., Mary M., Jessie C. and one who died in infancy. Mr. Gilson is a Republican in poli-



tics, and he and wife are members of the Christian Church. In 1862 he enlisted in Company D, Sixth Tennessee Volunteers, and was first lieutenant of his company. He was discharged at Carthage in 1864 on account of disabilities. Mr. Gilson began life a poor man, and what he now owns are the fruits of his own industry and good management. He has 273 acres of good land, all well improved and under a good state of cultivation, located seven miles west of Knoxville.

John W. Glenn, professor of agriculture, horticulture and botany, of the University of Tennessee, was born near Athens, Ga., September 18, 1832, son of John W. (Sr.) and Mary (Jones) Glenn, both of whom were natives of Virginia. The father was a millwright in early life, but later turned his attention to the ministry. He was in the conference that divided the Methodist Episcopal Church, being one to help organize the Methodist Episcopal Church South. He had a good farm, which was superintended by his wife. She was a good financier and a woman of sound judgment. For thirty-two years Mr. Glenn was presiding elder, and consequently from home nearly all the time. But Mrs. Glenn proved equal to the occasion, and gave her children the best educational advantages to be had. In 1867 he died, being sixty-nine years of age. The mother lived to be about seventy, dying in 1871. In their family of ten children, eight are now living—five sons and three daughters—one of the sons became a lawyer, one a minister, and two became educators. Our subject was reared on the farm, and after attending home schools, graduated from Emory College, Georgia, in 1853. In 1854 he married Mary J. Orr, sister of Hon. G. J. Orr, of Georgia, and to this marriage were born three children: Lula, Frank A. and George W. Both he and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. In 1856 he founded Madame La Vert School of Georgia, at the head of which he stood until 1859, when he was called to the chair of mathematics in East Alabama College and remained here until the breaking out of the war, when, as captain, he led a company of students into the Confederate service, holding that position until the final surrender. He then taught in the same college for some time, and then took charge of Martin Institute, near Athens, Ga. In 1882 he was called to his present position. Prof. Glenn has benefitted the agricultural interests, not only of this, but of other States, by public lectures, by articles in the leading agricultural journals and by taking an active part in framing and securing the passage of wholesome laws on this subject.

C. J. Gooding, senior member of the drug firm, Gooding & Shughrue, is a native of England, born in 1849. He graduated at the Pharmaceutical Association of Great Britain in 1866, came to America

in 1869 and located in New York City, where he remained until he came to Knoxville in 1874. He filled prescriptions with the leading drug firms of the city until February 17, 1886, after which he embarked in the trade for himself at his present location, at the corner of Gay and Asylum Streets. Messrs. Gooding & Shughrue confine their stock strictly to drugs, and have an extensive prescription business. December 31, 1875, Mr. Gooding was united in marriage to Miss Martha Johnson, a native of Knox County. Our subject, and his brother George, who is now residing in England, are the only children born to George and Charlotta Gooding. The father was born, reared and always resided in England, and at the time of his death, which occurred in 1880, was superintendent of the Abbergavenny Asylum. The mother was also a native of England, and died there in 1870.

L. A. Gratz, attorney at law, is a native of Prussia, Germany, born in 1843, and was reared and educated there. He came to America in 1861 and enlisted, on the Federal side, in the Fifteenth Pennsylvania Infantry, in the three months' service, at the expiration of which time he re-enlisted, this time in the Ninth Pennsylvania Cavalry, of which he became first lieutenant. In 1862 he was transferred to the Sixth Kentucky Cavalry as first major, in which capacity he served throughout the war. December 25, 1863, he was detailed on the staff of Gen. Carter until mustered out at Goldsboro, N. C., in July, 1865. The same year he married Miss Elizabeth Trigg Bearden, a native of Knoxville, who bore him five children. Soon after the war Mr. Gratz located in Knoxville, having at that time great confidence in the future growth and development of that city. He laid out Gratz's addition to the city, and Gratz Street is named in honor of him. The same year of his coming to Knoxville he was admitted to the bar, and has ever since enjoyed a lucrative practice. He has twice served as city attorney of Knoxville. He is now serving a second term as Supreme Dictator of the K. of H., and in 1884 was employed by the order as counsel in the famous case against Judge Breckenridge, defaulting treasurer, which case was finally terminated in favor of the order at Louisville, March 2, 1887. His parents, Sol and Henrietta (Barshall) Gratz, were both natives of Prussia, where they passed their days, dying in 1875 and 1860 respectively.

Capt. J. M. Greer, the leading dealer in agricultural implements of Knoxville, is a son of John and Annis (Hood) Greer, both natives of Blount County, Tenn., where they still live and where the father cultivated the soil. The father is about eighty and the mother about seventy years of age. Our subject was born in Blount County, October 21, 1844,

was reared on a farm, and, after attending the district schools, entered the Indiana State University, but the war came on and interrupted his studies. In 1862 he enlisted in Company A, Fifty-fourth Indiana Mounted Infantry, Federal Army. Toward the close of the war he was commissioned captain of Company E, Third Tennessee Mounted Infantry. In 1865 he engaged in general merchandising at Maryville, Blount County, and five years later opened a hardware store in the same town. In 1867 he married Miss Martha E. Courier, a native of Knox County, by whom he had four children—two sons and two daughters. In 1884 Mr. Greer came to Knoxville and built the spacious hall where he now does business. When he first proposed entering mercantile pursuits he asked his father to lend him means, the father refused, thinking it would soon be spent and little or no show for it, but offered to give him a farm if he would follow that pursuit. Not to be turned from his purpose he borrowed the necessary sum from a good neighbor. Success crowned his efforts, and he is now a man of wealth, and has an enviable reputation as a business man. In connection with his other business Mr. Greer is secretary and treasurer of East Tennessee Hedge Company. He has also held the position of postoffice inspector a term, and that of internal revenue assessor of the Second District, four years. He is a Republican, and a member of the I. O. O. F.

Col. Nathan Gregg, internal revenue collector for the Second District of Tennessee, with headquarters at Knoxville, is a native of Tennessee, born in 1834, the son of Maj. Abraham Gregg, also a native of Tennessee, who was born in 1789, and served under Gen. Jackson in the Creek war, acting as courier for that officer, carrying dispatches through Tennessee to Gen. Harrison in Indiana. In the war caused by the removal of the Cherokee Indians he served with the rank of major. His death occurred in 1876. The mother was also a Tennessean, and the daughter of John Davidson, of North Carolina, he being of the family of that name and State who distinguished themselves during the Revolutionary war. She died in 1852. Our subject was reared in Sullivan County, and acquired his education in the common schools of the day. Up to the breaking out of the civil war he was engaged as a contractor, and also followed farming. March 4, 1857, he married Miss Katie Marrell, daughter of Isaac Marrell, of Washington County, Tenn. In April, 1861, Mr. Gregg enlisted in the Confederate service, joining Company B, of the Nineteenth Regiment Tennessee Infantry, of which company he was elected second-lieutenant. He succeeded to the command of the company on the death of First Lieut. Connelly, at the battle of Fishing Creek, Ky., and at the battle of Shiloh again succeeded to the command



of the company upon the wounding of Capt. Willet. On the second day of the battle he was shot entirely through the body by a minie-ball. As he was considered mortally wounded, he was discharged from the army. He recovered, however, and in the fall of 1862 assisted in raising the Sixtieth Regiment of Tennessee Infantry, at the organization of which John H. Crawford, of Washington County, was elected colonel, and our subject lieutenant-colonel. Col. Crawford soon afterward resigned, and our subject was commissioned to succeed him as colonel by the secretary of war for "gallantry on the battlefield of Shiloh." He served as colonel of the Sixtieth Regiment until the close of the war, surrendering at Charlotte, N. C., in 1865, he being included in the terms of Gen. Johnston's surrender. He then returned to Sullivan County, and upon the enfranchisement of Confederate soldiers in 1870 was elected sheriff of that county, and was re-elected in 1872, 1874 and 1876. He retired in September, having held the office for six years and five months. The following November he was elected to represent Sullivan County in the State Legislature, being elected as an avowed Isham G. Harris Democrat, and was the only Democrat from East Tennessee who openly and boldly declared before the election as being in favor of Mr. Harris for United States senator. During the session of the Legislature of 1877, he was a low tax Democrat, and supported Frank Wilson for governor on that platform. Col. Gregg was re-elected to the Legislature in 1879, and again in 1882. In April, 1885, he was appointed by President Cleveland to his present position.

Samuel Benton Giffin, a progressive young farmer of Knox County, was born in that county in 1857, and is the son of William and Nancy (King) Giffin, both of whom were natives of Tennessee. Our subject was educated in the country schools, and is a self-made man. He is a zealous member of the Baptist Church, and an ardent Republican in politics. In 1884 he chose for his companion through life an estimable young lady, and is now living on one of the most valuable farms in Knox County, which consists of 104 acres of well improved land. He takes considerable interest in fine stock, and is considered one of the successful and prominent farmers of the county. He also takes a great interest in all public enterprises, and although a young man and just beginning life, the future looks bright before him.

Judge Major Learoy Hall. The ancestors of our subject were among the first settlers of what is now Knox County. The grandparents, Thomas and Nancy (Hays) Hall located here from North Carolina about 1796. Thomas Hall served in the Revolutionary war, and was held prisoner by the British at Charleston about six months. He resided here in what

is now the Seventh District of Knox County from 1796 until his death in 1833. His wife died about 1835. Thomas Hall was of English and his wife of Scotch-Irish descent. William Hall, a son of Thomas, and father of our subject, was born in Orange County, N. C., in September, 1788, and came to this county with his parents, residing within the present limits of the Seventh District until his death. He followed farming all his life, and was a great friend to education, being school commissioner many years, the only office he would ever hold. He married Nancy Nelson in 1813, and her death occurred in 1837. He followed her in 1868. Judge M. L. Hall, the immediate subject of this sketch, was born in the Seventh District of Knox County August 16, 1814, and was the eldest of eight children, six of whom are still living. He was reared on a farm, and secured such educational advantages as the rural districts at that time afforded. At the age of nineteen he began teaching school, which occupation he followed a short time after his marriage in 1836, and then began the study of law with Judge Robert M. Anderson, continuing with Samuel R. Rodgers until he was admitted to the Knoxville bar in January, 1841, his license being signed by Circuit Judge Edward Scott and Chancellor Thomas L. Williams. Our subject was elected clerk of the circuit court in 1852, which office he held without opposition until the close of the war, being re-elected in March, 1864, but resigned in April of the same year to accept an appointment from Judge Trigg to fill the office of clerk of the United States Circuit and District Courts and United States commissioner, all of which he resigned in August, 1870, to accept the office of judge of the criminal court, which had just been created July, 1870. He filled this office until 1886, when he was defeated for the first time in his life by Judge Logan, and has since resumed the practice of law, and is also engaged in writing a treatise on criminal law. Sarah (McCampbell) Hall, the faithful companion of our subject since 1836, was born near Frankfort, Ky. Their marriage was blessed by the birth of eight daughters and three sons, all now deceased but three daughters. The sons, William, John and Robert were all in the Federal service during the war. The Judge is Swedenborgian in his religious views.

G. G. Hardin, farmer was born April 6, 1836, on the farm where he is now residing. He is the son of John G. and Sarah R. (Gallaher) Hardin. John G. was born and reared in Hardin Valley, and was a very successful farmer, dealing quite extensively in stock. He was a son of Amos Hardin and a grandson of Col. Thomas Hardin, a pioneer settler of Hardin Valley. He was also a prominent man in county affairs, and was colonel of the State militia. Mrs. John G. Hardin was born and reared within three miles of where her son now resides. She died September

5, 1863. Her father, George Gallaher, was very enterprising, a good farmer and was a highly respected citizen of Knox County. Our subject received his education in the common schools of Knox County, and remained with his parents until thirty-two years of age, when he married Miss Matilda C. Smith, a native of Roane County. She died in 1872, leaving two children: Charles L. and Sallie B. Mr. Hardin married his second wife, Tennessee Hardin, in 1881. Mr. and Mrs. Hardin and their children are members of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. Mr. Hardin is a Democrat in politics, and cast his first presidential vote for John C. Breckenridge. He has a good farm of 250 acres all well cultivated, and is located seven miles from Concord. His children have had good educational advantages, and his daughter is quite a success as a school teacher. His son is attending school in California. His father's ancestors were of Irish descent, and his mother's of English.

J. J. Hardin, school teacher and farmer, was born January 16, 1850, in Hardin Valley. He is the ninth of ten children born to John G. and Sarah R. (Gallaher) Hardin. (For further particulars of parents see sketch of G. G. Hardin.) Our subject secured his education at Hiwassee College, Monroe County, and at Ewing and Jefferson College. In 1870 he went to California and engaged in farming near Hollister. In 1872 he moved back to Hardin Valley, and one year later moved to where he now resides. The same year he married Miss Annie Crookshank, who was born August 5, 1855, and who is the daughter of Thomas and Lorenia (Boyd) Crookshank. Mr. Thomas Crookshank was one of the most extensive mule dealers in this part of the country and was a very prominent member of the Masonic fraternity. To Mr. and Mrs. Hardin were born four children: Lavenia S., Ernest M. (deceased), George B. and Willie M. During the winter of 1873 Mr. Hardin taught school at Hardin Valley. He also taught school at Fairview Academy, at Corner Creek Academy for seven years, and at Greybeal's Academy one year. As an instructor and disciplinarian he gave excellent satisfaction, being considered one of the best educators who has ever taught in the Ninth District. He owns 225 acres of good land on Clinch River, which is well cultivated. Mr. Hardin is a Democrat, and he and wife are members of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church.

James Hardin, farmer, was born November 8, 1813, near his present residence. He is the seventh of ten children born to Amos and Mary (Gallaher) Hardin. Amos Hardin was born February 25, 1780, near Richmond, Va. He was a prominent minister of the gospel in the Baptist Church, was secretary of the board of missions, and in many ways was active in the interests of the church. He was a leading school



teacher of Hardin Valley, also a very extensive and successful farmer, and was justice of the peace of his district for forty years, giving universal satisfaction as magistrate. He died in 1840, at the age of sixty-one years. His father, Col. Joseph Hardin, was born near Richmond, Va., in 1734, and commanded a regiment during the Revolutionary war. After that event he immigrated to Greene County, but lived there but a short time when he moved to Knox County. He was a member of the General Assembly fourteen years, and was a candidate for re-election when he died. The mother of our subject was born in Pennsylvania, and died about 1846. Her father, James Gallaher, came from Pennsylvania to Tennessee in 1780. Our subject, James Hardin, received his education in the common schools of Knox County, and began business for himself at the age of twenty-one. He inherited 200 acres of land from his father, and has added enough to this to make 600 acres. He married Miss Sarah Hope, a native of Loudon County, born in 1821, and the daughter of James and B. (Walker) Hope, natives of Burke County, N. C. Mr. Hope was a soldier in the Creek war. He was a farmer, and died September 5, 1840. Mrs. Hope died in 1842. To our subject and wife were born ten children: Mary B. (deceased), Malinda H., Lurinda G. (Mrs. McCallum), Amos G. (deceased), Major W., Sarah J. (deceased), James B. (deceased), Cynthia A. (deceased), Lenora (Mrs. Crozier) and Laura. Mrs. Hardin is a member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, while Mr. Hardin is a Baptist in principle. He has been a life-long Democrat, casting his first presidential vote for Martin Van Buren.

R. W. Hardin, farmer, was born April 6, 1822, in the house where he has since resided. He is the youngest of ten children born to Amos and Mary (Gallaher) Hardin. (For further particulars of parents see sketch of James Hardin.) Our subject received his education in the common schools of Knox County, and was thrown upon his own resources after the death of his father in 1840. In 1843 he married Miss Amanda King, a daughter of Rev. Jeremiah and Mary King, and the fruits of this union were the birth of eight children: Amos (deceased), Mary (Mrs. Gallaher), Tennessee (Mrs. G. G. Hardin), Sarah Jane (deceased), Adelia (Mrs. J. M. Smith), Nancy (deceased), Alice Florence (deceased), and Robert John (deceased). From a farm which his father gave him our subject had acquired considerable property, and owned 750 acres of excellent land, a large lot of fine stock and many valuable negroes. The most of this property was lost during the late war. Mr. Hardin is a Democrat in politics, casting his first presidential vote for James K. Polk, and he and children are members of the Missionary Baptist Church. He

was elected magistrate of the Ninth District in 1846, served sixteen years, and was re-elected but refused to serve. In 1875 he was elected again, and is still holding the office. During all the time he has held the office only two of his judicial decisions have been appealed to a higher court, and there they were confirmed. Mr. Hardin strives, under all circumstances, to discharge the duties of his office conscientiously and honestly, and by so doing has given universal satisfaction.

G. M. Harrill, proprietor of the Knoxville Freight Transfer Line, was born in Hawkins County, Tenn., March 14, 1844, and is the son of J. S. and Emaline (Robertson) Harrill, both natives of Hawkins County, Tenn. Misfortunes fell upon the family which led to the separation of the father and mother. The mother afterward married Alex Young, by whom she had two children—a son and a daughter. She died in the year 1875. Our subject was taken to Roane County, and there lived until eleven years of age. He afterward went to Blount County, and there worked until he was eighteen years of age, securing for his services a horse, saddle and bridle. During the war he was in the quartermaster's department, United States Army. In 1866 he came to Knoxville to engage in the transfer business, owning half of his team, and driving it himself. He now runs fourteen good teams, and, besides this, is interested in agricultural pursuits. His marriage to Miss Sophia E. Crawford, of Knox County, in 1872, was blessed by the birth of one daughter. His first wife died in 1876, and two years later he married Miss Mattie McNew, of Campbell County, who bore him three children—two sons and a daughter. Mr. Harrill is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. From 187- to 1875 he was passenger agent for the Nashville, Chattanooga & St. Louis Railroad, and from 1875 to 1879 he was with the St. Louis & Southeastern.

Hon. Joe Harris, legislator, humorous writer and merchant, of Knoxville, Tenn., one of the most widely known men in East Tennessee, is a native of that State, born in 1850, the son of S. K. and R. C. (Sawyer) Harris. The father is a native Virginian, born in 1818, and came to Tennessee in his infancy, locating in Knox County. He is, and has been for a number of years, a member of the Knox County Court. The mother was a native of Massachusetts, born in 1822, and died in 1878. Our subject was reared in Knoxville, educated at the University of Tennessee and the Maryville (Tenn.) College, and finished his education at Princeton (N. J.) College. He also took a course at a business college. He studied law for three years, and, though well qualified for the practice of that profession, took up the business

of merchandising instead. He was elected to represent Knox County in the State Legislature in 1886, and served with distinction in that body, being recognized by his colleagues as a man of brilliance and overflowing wit. For a number of years he has been a contributor of humorous articles to such leading newspapers as *The Detroit Free Press* and *Burlington Hawkeye*, also the local press under the *nom de plume* of "Sol Turpin." He is a man of great genius and resources, being adapted to almost any class of business or walk of life, and enjoys the esteem and respect of his acquaintances. He was married June 8, 1879, to Miss Jugie Richardson, of Kentucky, who was born in 1863, and who is the daughter of Hon. J. W. Richardson, of Kentucky.

S. G. Heiskell, of Knoxville, attorney at law, is a native of Monroe County, Tenn., and was born August 7, 1858; came with his parents to Knoxville to live at the age of three years, and graduated at the University of Tennessee in the class of 1877; attended law lectures at the University of Virginia at Charlottesville; was admitted to the bar in Somerville, Ala., and, since his admission, has practiced successfully at Knoxville. In 1882 he was a member of the city council of Knoxville, also city attorney. The same year he was elected chairman of the Knox County Democratic Executive Committee, and president of the Knoxville Public Library, which has since become the Lawson McGhee Memorial Library. In 1884 he was again city attorney for Knoxville, also Cleveland and Hendricks' elector for the Second Congressional District. In 1885 he was again chairman of the Democratic Executive Committee of Knox County. In 1886 he was the Democratic nominee for Congress in the Second Congressional District, and now represents that district on the Democratic State Executive Committee of Tennessee. William Heiskell, father of S. G. Heiskell, was born at Hagerstown, Md., but passed the greater part of his life in the State of Virginia. He was a member of the House of Delegates of Virginia, and afterward moved to Monroe County, Tenn., which he represented in the Tennessee Legislature. He was a member of the board of trustees of the University of Tennessee for many years. He accumulated a large property, mostly by agricultural pursuits, and died at Knoxville in September, 1871. He was of German descent. Julia J. (Gahagan) Heiskell, wife of William Heiskell, is a native of the State of Georgia, and is still a resident of Knoxville. She is of Irish descent.

M. T. Henson, farmer and stock dealer, was born in January, 1832, in Knox County, where he has since resided. He is the ninth of twelve children born to John and Mary (Cottrell) Henson. John Henson was born in Virginia, and when twelve years old came with his father to



Tennessee. He died in Knox County in 1876, aged eighty-four years. He was a soldier in the war of 1812, was a member of the Missionary Baptist Church for sixty years, and was deacon of the same for forty years. The mother of our subject was born and reared in Knox County, was a consistent Christian woman, and her influence was felt not only by her family, but by all with whom she came in contact. She died on the old home farm August 14, 1855, aged fifty-five years. Mr. William Henson, grandfather of our subject, was born and reared in Withe County, Va. He died about 1863, aged ninety-nine years. At the time of his death he could read the finest print as easily as at any time of his life. He was a respected citizen, a kind neighbor, and was of French and "Tuck-a-Hoo" descent. Our subject received only a common-school education, but has by reading and observation become well informed on all the current topics of the day, and is considered a man of intelligence and sound judgment. He learned the brick mason's trade, but liking farming better, gave it up and engaged in agricultural pursuits, which he has followed ever since. The fruit of his exertion is a fine farm of 238 acres, eight miles southwest of Knoxville. At the age of twenty-two he married Miss D. Compton, who bore him thirteen children: L. W., William L., L. C., Vilanto (Mrs. Stinnett), Matilda B., Sarah M. (Mrs. Jett), Clementine B., D. R., Ida B., John G., Charles C., Mary J. and Nathan H. Mrs. Henson was born in Sevier County, Tenn., in 1831, and is the daughter of William and Charlotta (Cunningham) Compton. Mr. Henson is a Democrat in politics, and he and wife and nine children are members of the Missionary Baptist Church.

Thomas H. Hicks, M. D., physician of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Columbus, Colorado Co., Tex., November 7, 1856, and is the son of Dr. J. F. and Sallie W. (Harbert) Hicks, both natives of Madison County, Tenn. The father was born in 1830, and graduated from the medical colleges at Memphis, New Orleans and Baltimore. At present he is practicing at Bristol, Tenn. The mother was born in 1837, and is still living. Both are members of the Baptist Church. Our subject resided with his parents in Texas until his thirteenth year, when he removed with them to South America, where they resided for a year and a half. They then returned to the United States and located in Tazewell County, Va., where they remained until 1874, and then removed to Bristol, Tenn. In September, 1874, he entered the University of East Tennessee, at Knoxville, and graduated in June, 1879. In October of the same year he entered the medical department of the University of Tennessee, at Nashville, graduating in February, 1881. He next attended the Eclectic Medical College, at Cincinnati, Ohio, and graduated in June, 1881, and the

following fall entered and graduated at the Hahnemann Homœopathic College, in Philadelphia. October 1, 1882, he entered the Homœopathic Hospital at Ward's Island, New York City, where he spent a year as resident physician. He then returned to Bristol, Tenn., and remained until March, 1886, when he came to Knoxville, where he has remained up to the present practicing his profession.

J. Willard Hill, M. D., physician of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Portland, Me., October 15, 1853, and is the son of Dr. O. F. and Charlotta (Parsons) Hill. The father was a native of New Hampshire, and practiced medicine in Portland, Me., and from 1854 to 1880 was one of the practicing physicians of Knoxville, where he died in June, 1881. The mother was a native of Vermont, and died in 1862. Our subject was reared in Knoxville, but from 1869 to 1879 attended various colleges in Europe, graduating first from the Canton College, of St. Gall, Switzerland, and then entered the academy at Neuchatel, Switzerland. In 1873 he began the study of medicine at Strasburg, Germany, from which school he graduated in 1878. He attended lectures at Paris, France, and then returned to America, and in 1879 began practicing medicine at Knoxville, Tenn. In 1882 he returned to Europe, and attended lectures at Glasgow, Scotland, and Vienna, Austria. He next returned to Knoxville and resumed his practice, continuing up to the present, and has built up a large practice. He is a member of the Knox County Medical Society, of which he was president in 1886, and is the present secretary. Our subject was married in 1873 to Miss Cecile L. Roger, who was born in 1853, of French parents, on the island of Porto Rico, West Indies. To them have been born two children: Charles Willard, born in Strasburg, Germany, August 29, 1875, and Adele, born December 24, 1881. Our subject is a member of the Episcopal and his wife of the Calvinistic Church.

Isaac Hines (deceased) was a farmer and miller, and the son of William Hines, a native of Maryland. He was born September 15, 1795, and died in 1872. He secured a limited education, and early in life engaged in agricultural pursuits. He was a soldier in the war of 1812, and in 1815 he was united in marriage to Miss Mary L. DonCarlos, a daughter of William Carter DonCarlos of Virginia. She was born May 7, 1800, and died in 1863. To this union were born three sons and nine daughters, one son, A. D. C. and six daughters are now living. In 1863 Mr. Hines took for his second wife, Mrs. Rhoda Wilson, whose maiden name was Rhoda Hickey. She was born in Blount County, Tenn., December 11, 1822, and is the daughter of David and Fanny Hickey. This marriage resulted in the birth of one son and one daughter. The

son, George Washington, is a farmer, and is living with his mother on the old homestead; the daughter, Nancy C., is also living at home. Our subject was a worthy and consistent member of the Baptist Church, having belonged to that organization for more than forty years, and his death was much regretted.

A. D. C. Hines, a mechanic and farmer, was born in Sevier County, Tenn., March 20, 1825, and is the son of Isaac and Mary L. (DonCarlos) Hines. The father was born in Knox County, Tenn, September 15, 1795, and is the son of William Hines, a native of Maryland. The mother was born May 7, 1800, and was the daughter of Prof. Carter DonCarlos, of Virginia. Our subject received a fair education in the common schools, and when twenty-five years of age went to Illinois, where he remained two years. He then returned to Knox County, and purchased an old farm near his father's homestead. To his marriage to Miss Pressure M. Bowman, in 1855, were born eight children—six sons and two daughters. The youngest son died when five months old. This family of children deserves more than merely a passing notice. The eldest child: Isaac B., is a graduate of the Knoxville University, and is now engaged in the signal service at Block Island, R. I. The second child, John M., is a graduate of the Grant Memorial University, of Tennessee, and is now engaged in agricultural pursuits in California. The third child received a common school education, and is now engaged in the same occupation as his brother, John M. The fourth son, Samuel B., graduated at the Grant Memorial University of Tennessee, and is now engaged in the livery business in California. The fifth child, A. D., left the public schools, and after attending one year at Harrison Seminary, of Sevier County, went to Carson College, where he is now a student. He is also a teacher of penmanship in that college. The two daughters: Millie E. and Mary L., are living at home. Our subject has a well improved farm of 240 acres in the Fifteenth District of Knox County, and besides this he is the owner of about 500 acres of other land. He is a Democrat in politics, and a worthy member of the Baptist Church. Mrs. Hines was born in Anderson County, Tenn., November 7, 1835, and is the daughter of Rev. J. N. Bowman, of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

S. P. Hood, M. D., physician of Knoxville, Tenn., and a native of Newport, Cocke Co., Tenn., was born November 9, 1834, and is the son of Rev. Nathaniel and Isabella W. (Edgar) Hood, both natives of Tennessee. The father was born February 14, 1804, was a minister of the Presbyterian Church, and died in 1874. The mother was born April 28, 1807, died in 1848, and was of Scotch-Irish



descent. Both grandfathers were soldiers in the Revolution. Our subject was reared in Jefferson County, Tenn., and attended Maryville College, where he graduated in 1855. He began the study of medicine in 1856, under Dr. Beriah Frazier, of Knoxville, and in 1858 entered the Nashville Medical College, and later graduated from the University of Virginia. This was in 1863-64. He entered the Confederate Army in 1861, and served as assistant surgeon in the hospitals at Knoxville and Bean Station, Tenn. Later he served as surgeon, first of Rucker's Legion and then of Col. James Carter's First Regiment of Tennessee Confederate Cavalry. At the close of the war he located and practiced his profession at Mossy Creek, Jefferson Co., Tenn. In 1885 he came to Knoxville, where he has since resided. He is a member of the Jefferson and Knox Counties medical societies, being at one time corresponding secretary of the former. In 1883 he had charge of all the small-pox cases of Hamblen and Jefferson Counties. He was married in 1857 to Margaret Goodwin, a native of Grainger County, Tenn., born in 1835, and the daughter of Jacob Goodwin, a native of Tennessee. To this union six children were born, all of whom are living. The mother was a member of the Presbyterian Church, and died in 1879. Dr. Hood is also a member of the same church.

John W. Hope, senior member of the well known jewelry firm of Hope Bros. & Co., was born in Knoxville in 1842, and learned the silversmith's trade with his father. At the commencement of the war he enlisted in the First Georgia Regulars, and served until 1863, when he was transferred to the Thirty-second Virginia Mounted Battalion. He was captured and held as a prisoner sixteen months. In 1865 he married Miss Rachel Ebaugh, a native of Knoxville, by whom he had five children, two deceased. Mr. Hope is a Free Mason, and with his family is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church. His father, Daniel L. Hope, was born in Knox County in 1799, and learned the silversmith's trade at Huntsville, Ala. After which he returned to Knoxville and followed his trade until his death. Mary E. (Welch) Hope, mother of our subject, was reared in Virginia, and died about 1848. Our subject's grandfather, Thomas Hope, was a native of England, and came to Charleston, S. C., where he followed the architect and builder's trade a short time. He then married Elizabeth Large, and came to Knox County in the early settlement of the same. After the death of his father our subject became a member of the firm of Hope & Miller, who were succeeded in 1879 by Hope & Bro., and they in turn were succeeded by the present firm, in January, 1885. D. J. Hope, brother of our subject, and W. D.

Dreher, are the other members of the firm. They carry a stock of about \$50,000, consisting of fine foreign and American watches, in gold and silver cases, articles of jewelry for personal adornment, diamonds in modern and unique settings, etc. D. J. Hope was born in Knoxville in 1847, and, like his brother, was brought up to his present trade from youth. In 1875 he married Miss Hattie Owen, a native of Norwalk, Ohio, to whom one daughter was born. This lady died in 1877, and D. J. afterward married Elizabeth Richards, a native of Pennsylvania, but was reared in Knoxville. Mr. Dreher was born in New York City in 1844, and came to Knoxville, in January, 1885, since which he has been connected with our subject in the jewelry trade.

John F. Horne, of the firm of J. F. Horne & Bros., wholesale liquor dealers, of Knoxville, is a native of Knox County, born in 1843, was reared in Knoxville and educated at the University of Tennessee. At the age of fifteen he began life for himself, as a farmer. In April, 1861, he enlisted in Company A, Ninth Tennessee Regiment of Artillery, of which company he was a sergeant. He served until his capture at Cumberland Gap, September 9, 1863, from which time until the close of the war he was held as a prisoner of war, first at Camp Douglas, then at Fort McHenry, Baltimore, Md., and finally at Point Lookout, an island at the mouth of the Potomac River. June 13, 1865, he took the oath of allegiance to the United States and started on his return home, walking the entire distance from Richmond to Knoxville, and that too in a miserable state of health. Between the close of the war and 1870 he engaged as salesman for different firms in Knoxville, New York and Baltimore, and in 1870 he established the wholesale liquor house of J. F. Horne & Bros., of which he is senior member. He became a member of Felix K. Zollicoffer Camp No. 3, Confederate Veterans, at its organization, and is at present an active member. He is the son of Rev. George and Amanda (Luttrell) Horne, natives of Wythe County, Va., and Knox County, Tenn., respectively. The father was born in 1796, and removed to Tennessee about 1800. He was a minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and died in 1867. The mother was born in 1808, and died in 1884. She was the sister of James C. Luttrell, Sr. (deceased), ex-mayor of Knoxville, and aunt of James C. Luttrell, Jr., the present mayor.

W. H. Howell, farmer and stock raiser, was born in Grainger County, Tenn., June 23, 1826. He is the son of James H. and Rebecca (Havens) Howell, natives, respectively, of Virginia and Tennessee. Our subject's educational advantages were rather limited, as he grew to manhood on the farm, and, as he expressed it, "was reared between the plow handles."

In his twentieth year he began working for himself, and in 1852 he chose for his life companion Miss Minerva Smart, daughter of James R. Smart. She was born in September, 1837, and by her marriage to our subject became the mother of six sons and four daughters. One son, named James Benjamin, is deceased. Those living are John Mc., Martha E., Robert S., Azalee T., William H., Donald Henry Luther, Adam Daniel, Louisa Rebecca and Sallie D. M. Our subject is the owner of 1,100 acres of land lying on opposite banks of the Holston River, and on this farm are quantities of fine marble. Mr. Howell is a member of the Presbyterian Church, and an excellent citizen.

J. B. Hoxsie was born in Rhode Island December 17, 1832, and is the son of Reynolds and Lucretia (Cranton) Hoxsie, both natives of Rhode Island. For a livelihood the father followed manufacturing cotton, and he and wife were zealous members of the Baptist Church. The father died many years ago, but the mother is now living in Rhode Island. Our subject was educated at East Greenwich Providence Conference Seminary, from which he graduated in 1850. While growing up he determined to be a machinist, serving an apprenticeship at Taunton, Mass. After graduating he went to Cuba as a machinist in the railroad service, and when he returned, assisted in building the Mobile & Ohio Railroad. In 1856 he came to Knoxville, and engaged with the East Tennessee & Virginia Railroad as engineer on a passenger train, but afterward arose to master mechanic. During the war he remained true to his country, exerting his best efforts for the maintenance of the Union. When the Confederates burned the bridges across Watauga and Holston Rivers they left the railroad crossing them in three sections. Transportation was impossible by railroad, there being neither cars nor engine on the section between the rivers. No one could devise a plan to cross except the building of a bridge which would take too much time. At this juncture Mr. Hoxsie proposed to have the engine and cars across within thirty-six hours if he could have sole control of the working force. The river was rapid and the banks steep and deep. Having cut down the banks a little he made arrow-shaped sinkers, filled them with rocks, ran stringers across, and within the proposed time had an engine and four cars over. In 1863 Gen. Burnside made him general superintendent of all the roads running from Knoxville. For six years after the war he was superintendent of the East Tennessee & Virginia Railroad, and after its consolidation with the Georgia Railroad, he was master of transportation. He is vice-president of the Knoxville Ice company, director in the East Tennessee Coal Company, manager of the Crystal Ice Company, and was previously president of the Knoxville Car Wheel Company.



In 1857 he married Miss Zilpha DePue, of Sussex County, N. J., and to them were born three children, all daughters. Mr. and Mrs. Hoxsie are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

Hon. L. Huddleston, of the firm of Huddleston, Smith & Little, wholesale and retail clothiers of Knoxville, is a native of Grainger County, Tenn., born April 8, 1834, and the son of John F. and Mary (Smith) Huddleston, natives of Tennessee. The father was born of English parents, September 24, 1807, and died August 6, 1883. The mother was born June 25, 1814, and is now residing with our subject. He was reared in the counties of Grainger and Union, and acquired his education in the public schools. At the age of twenty he engaged as salesman in a mercantile establishment, and eighteen months later he and his brother, O. W. Huddleston, began merchandising at Gravelton, Knox County. They remained here two years and then removed to Maynardville, Union Co., Tenn., where they continued until our subject's removal to Knoxville, in January, 1884. He was first a member of the firm of Brock, Huddleston & Co., which firm was changed at the expiration of about eighteen months, Mr. Brock retiring, and S. T. Powers entering. Nearly two years later Mr. Powers withdrew, and the firm became as at present. In March, 1858, Mr. Huddleston was elected county court clerk of Union County, he being elected by a small majority over the strongest man in the county. He was re-elected in 1862. During the above period he served also as deputy clerk and master of the chancery court of Union County, under his brother, O. W. Huddleston, and after his brother's death filled the unexpired term of clerk and master. In November, 1880, he was elected to represent the counties of Anderson, Grainger, Knox and Union in the State Senate, of which he was an active member though in poor health. In December, 1871, he wedded Miss Mary E. Carr, the daughter of James K. Carr of Claiborne County, Tenn. She was born June 25, 1856, and died February 21, 1878, leaving two sons: Harry L., born November 5, 1872, and John L., born January 11, 1875. Mr. Huddleston is a member of the Calvary Baptist Church of Knoxville, and his wife a member of the Maynardville Baptist Church.

J. C. Hudgings, M. D., a successful practitioner of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Monroe County of the same State, September 6, 1849, and is the son of Edward and Mary (Carter) Hudgings. The father was born in Virginia in 1823, and is now a farmer of the above named county. The mother was born in Tennessee in 1832, was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and died in 1886. The father was also a member of the same church. Our subject was reared in the

county of his birth, and acquired his education at Hiwassee College, within a mile of his home, from which school he graduated, and then moved on the farm for a few years in order to secure necessary funds with which to fit himself for the medical profession. In 1874 he graduated from Jefferson Medical College at Philadelphia, and then located at Strawberry Plains, Jefferson Co., Tenn., where he practiced his profession. March 3, 1875, he married Hattie C. Clark, a native of Virginia, born in 1858, and the daughter of Edwin and Mary (Sessler) Clark, natives of Virginia. Two children were the fruits of our subject's marriage. In January, 1876, Dr. Hudgings removed to Knoxville, where he remained until the fall of 1878, when he removed to Texas, but returned to Knoxville the following spring, and has remained in that city ever since, practicing medicine with success. In 1881 he was elected city physician and re-elected in 1882 and 1883, going through the small-pox epidemics of the two latter years and having charge of all the city patients. He is a member of the Knox County and State Medical Societies and he and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

M. W. Huffaker, county surveyor, entry-taker and notary public, was born in Sevier County, Tenn., in 1833, and came to Knox County in early childhood, where he has since resided. He was reared on a farm, and educated at the public schools of the county and at Knoxville. In the year 1854 he was united in marriage to Miss M. E. Pickle, and the result of this union was the birth of nine children, seven of whom are still living. The mother of these children died in the year 1876, and in 1882 he took for his second wife Miss Mary A. Pickle, to whom one child, a daughter, has been born. James and Mary (Cunningham *nee* Huffaker) Huffaker, parents of our subject, were natives of East Tennessee, the father being born and reared in Knox County. He followed agricultural pursuits until his death in 1865. His wife's demise occurred in the year 1857. Mr. Huffaker is a member of the Masonic fraternity, and, with his family, is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He took charge of his present office January 1, 1887, and has filled that position up to the present in a satisfactory manner.

Francis Kinloch Huger. Among the noted Huguenot families that came to South Carolina to escape persecution appears the name of Huger. Five patriotic brothers by that name came to this country, espoused the cause of the colonies, and rendered valuable services during the Revolutionary war. One of the brothers, Benjamin, was killed before the lines at Charleston, in 1779. He is the man who cared for the shipwrecked boy, La Fayette, and first introduced him to Washington. His

son, Francis Kinloch, was an American officer, who with Dr. Erie Bollman made the daring and disastrous attempt to rescue La Fayette from the Austrian prison at Olmulz. He held the position of captain in the Revolution and colonel in the war of 1812. He also served in both branches of the South Carolina Legislature. Benjamin, the son of Francis, and the father of the subject of this sketch, was a graduate of West Point; commander of Fortress Monroe from 1841 to 1846; colonel in the Mexican war; commandant of the arsenal at Pikesville, Md., from 1854 to 1860, and major-general in the Confederate service. Francis Kinloch Huger, our subject, was born in Buford, S. C., December 5, 1845. When a young man he entered the South Carolina Military Academy, but while there the war broke out, and in 1862 he, with his class, "The Cadet Rangers," entered the Confederate service in the Sixth South Carolina Cavalry. After serving a short time as private he was promoted to the rank of second lieutenant. Soon after he was commissioned adjutant-general of the staff of Col. William Butler. In 1865 he was captured at Averysboro, N. C., and held a prisoner of war until the close. Since then he has been in the service of some of the most extensive railroad systems of this country. He began as baggage master, and is now superintendent of the East Tennessee division of the East Tennessee, Virginia and Georgia Railroad. He has been in the railroad service for twenty-two years, and has ever proved himself an able official.

Thomas W. Humes, S. T. D., librarian of Lawson McGhee Memorial Library of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in that city in the year 1815, and is the son of Thomas and Margaret (Russell) Humes. The father was a native of Armagh, Ireland, born in 1767, and came to America when a boy, locating at Morristown, Tenn., where he engaged in merchandising. He came to Knoxville in 1797, and followed the same occupation at that place; he died in 1816. The mother was born in Jefferson County, Tenn., in 1777, and died in 1854. She was married first to James Cowan, a Knoxville merchant, who died in 1799. The father and mother were both members of the First Presbyterian Church, of which the former was an elder. Our subject was reared in Knoxville, and graduated from the East Tennessee College in 1830, receiving the degree of M. A. in 1833, and then for a time was a student of Princeton Theological Seminary. In 1835 he married Cornelia Williams, of Grainger County, Tenn., born in 1817, and the fruits of this union were three children, one of whom, Andrew R. Humes, is now clerk of the United States Circuit Court, Knoxville. The mother of these children died in 1847, and in 1849 Mr. Humes married Anna B. Williams, a native of New Hartford, Conn., who was born in the year 1821. To this union five children were born, only



two now living. Mrs. Humes died in 1879. In 1837, a short time after his first marriage, Mr. Humes became a member of the firm of Cowan, Dickinson & Co., merchants of Knoxville, and in 1839 he became editor of the *Knoxville Times*, the first newspaper published oftener than once a week in Knoxville. In 1840 he was also editor of the *Knoxville Register*. He was ordained a deacon of the Protestant Episcopal Church in 1845, and a presbyter at Knoxville in the following August. He became rector of St John's Church, Knoxville, in the autumn of 1846, and as such served until 1861, when he resigned. In the autumn of 1863 he was re-elected to the rectorship. He was elected president of the East Tennessee University in June, 1865, and resigned the rectorship in 1869. He continued president of the university until August, 1883. In 1869 the degree of S. T. D. was conferred upon him by Columbia College, of New York. In 1884-86 he was a missionary of the Protestant Episcopal Church in East Tennessee, and was elected to his present position in September, 1886.

Henry H. Ingersoll, attorney and president of the board of education, of Knoxville, is a native of Lorain County, Ohio. He graduated at Yale in the class of 1863; was superintendent of city schools at Kenton, Ohio, in 1863-64, and was admitted to the bar at Kenton, Ohio, in 1864, after having read law at Kenton, and also at Cincinnati, Ohio, with Hon. W. M. Ramsey. In 1864 he married Miss Emily G. Rogers, a native of Cincinnati, Ohio; to them two children have been born, one, a daughter, Mabel, still living. He located at Greeneville, Tenn., in 1865, and at once began the practice of his profession, being at that time twenty-one years of age. He resided in Greeneville until 1878, after which he located at Knoxville and has since practiced at that place, and also at Jonesboro, Greeneville, Dandridge and other places in East Tennessee. He is one of the board of directors of the Mechanics National Bank, and was judge of the supreme court commission in 1879 and 1880. He was a presidential elector on the Democratic ticket for the First District in 1876, and is now Deputy Grand Master of Masons of Tennessee. His parents, William and Semantha (Bassett) Ingersoll, were natives of Massachusetts. His father was a farmer, and also a minister of the Congregational Church; he died in 1873, and his widow in 1882.

Maj. R. C. Jackson, one of the county's most prominent and influential citizens, was born September 27, 1809, in Knox County, Tenn., and moved to Knoxville in 1813, where his early boyhood was spent. At the age of eighteen, after having filled a clerkship in the city for six years, he embarked in the general mercantile trade at Athens, Tenn. In November, 1845, he married Miss Julia Brazelton, a daughter of

Gen. William Brazelton, and to them were born twelve children, only six of whom are now living. Our subject continued merchandising at Athens until 1849, at which date he accepted the position of secretary and treasurer of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, and the additional office of general manager in 1852, filling the different offices until the road was taken charge of by the army during the war. In 1865 he was elected vice-president of the above railroad, and at the consolidation of the different branches officiated as superintendent until 1873, and as a director until 1880. In the latter year he had the misfortune to lose his wife, she dying April 13. Mr. Jackson was one of the projectors of the East Tennessee National Bank, and soon after the organization was elected president, and afterward cashier. He is at present one of the board of directors of the bank, and also of the Gas Light Company. He is a trustee of the deaf and dumb school. He resided in Knoxville until 1883, when he removed to his excellent farm, which consists of 288 acres, situated five miles north of Knoxville, where he still resides. His father, Joseph Jackson, was born in Virginia, September 4, 1781, and was reared in Petersburg, where he married Elizabeth Cardwell, and clerked in a dry goods store until they came to Knox County, about 1808. They resided in Knoxville from 1813 to 1838, after which they moved to Grainger County, where the mother of our subject died January 24, 1840. She was born March 20, 1783. Joseph Jackson afterward married a Mrs. Clowney, and returned to Knoxville, being proprietor of the Lamar House, and being also engaged in merchandising until the war. After that event, he retired from business, and died in October, 1868. The paternal great-grandparents of our subject came from Ireland and settled in Virginia, where the grandfather of our subject, Abner Jackson, was born and reared. He came with our subject's father to Knox County, but soon removed to near Franklin, Tenn., where he died.

A. N. Jackson, attorney and member of the board of public works for Knoxville, was born in Washington County, Tenn., in 1853. He was taken in infancy to Blount County, where he resided until 1877. He graduated in the law department of Cumberland University, in 1876, and then came to Knoxville the following year, where he has since practiced his profession. In 1877 he married a Miss Cox, whose nativity is Blount County, Tenn. To this union two children have been born. Mr. Jackson was elected alderman in 1884, and to his present office in January, 1886. He is a director in the proposed Elmwood Street Railroad. His father, N. T. Jackson, an attorney by profession, and a native of Washington County, was killed at Cumberland Gap while in the Confederate service. The mother, Elizabeth (Henry) Jackson, a native of Knox County, is residing at present in Blount County.

William Johnson, an enterprising farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., September 15, 1829, and is the son of Thomas and Martha (Rodgers) Johnson. The father was born in Blount County, Tenn., September 2, 1800, and died January 25, 1868. The mother was also a native of Blount County, born March 29, 1804, and died May 7, 1878. Both were of English descent. Our subject received his education in the common schools, and early in life engaged in farming, which occupation he has ever since followed. December 24, 1868, he married Mrs. Alexander Andes *nee* Miss Mary J. French, daughter of Jacob French; this union resulted in the birth of six children—one son and five daughters. The son and one daughter are deceased. Those living are Ida F., Julia A., Martha Alice and Pearl F. By her former marriage Mrs. Johnson had one son, J. O., and two daughters, S. Ellen and Mollie L. Mr. Johnson commenced life with very little means, but is now one of the most substantial farmers in the county. He owns over 500 acres of good land in Knox County, and is one of the most extensive stock raisers in that county. He is a Republican in politics, and a member of the Masonic Lodge.

J. L. Johnson, a farmer of the Twelfth District, and one of eight children of Allen and Matilda (Looney) Johnson, was born October 19, 1840, on the farm where he now resides. Allen Johnson was born and reared in Hawkins County, Tenn., moved to Knox County in 1839, and two years later moved to Missouri, where he remained twelve years. In 1852 he came back to Hawkins County, and afterward to Knox County, where he still lives. Mrs. Johnson was born and reared on the farm where her son now resides. She died about 1851. Absolom Looney, grandfather of our subject, moved to Knox County after he was grown. He dealt quite extensively in salt and general merchandise. When fourteen years old, our subject began working for himself, with very little of this world's goods. He first worked as a day laborer, and as soon as able purchased seventy-five acres of remarkably good land, to which he has added until he now owns 210 acres, situated four miles southwest of Knoxville. All of this was the result of his own exertion. He deals quite extensively in real estate in addition to superintending the affairs of his farm. In 1862 he married Miss Nancy Looney, who was born January 20, 1840, and who is the daughter of John and Zebella (Colman) Looney. Our subject's union resulted in the birth of seven children: Matilda (Mrs. Knott), Zebella (Mrs. Ambrose Wells), John, Mary, Artensia, Genevia and Allen. During 1862 and 1863, Mr. Johnson acted as mail carrier for the Federal Army. Gen. Robert Looney, cousin of Mrs. Matilda Johnson, was quite a prominent candidate for the gubernatorial



torial nomination at the Democratic convention of 1886. He with Mr. Cherry and Thomas O'Conner, had the penitentiary lease for many years. Mr. Johnson is a Republican in politics, and has served his district as school director six years. He has also served as road commissioner for three years.

Jacob T. Johnson, proprietor and principal of the Knoxville Business College, was born in Overton County, Tenn., January 26, 1857. His parents, Henry D. and Margaret F. (Davis) Johnson, were born in Tennessee, where the greater part of their days have been spent, though now they live in Kentucky. The father has followed farming and merchandising, and has been quite a prominent man in local political affairs. Of their family of six children—five sons and one daughter—all except one have taught school. Our subject received his literary education at Glasgow, and Edmonton, Ky., and then took a business course at Louisville, Ky. Having established Rock Spring Academy at Pekin, Tenn., at the head of which he stood two years, he took a course at the Nashville Business College, in which he was instructor for some time. He was then principal of a business college in Knoxville, and in 1885 established the Knoxville Business College. This institution graduates a large number of young men and women every year, who take the highest positions in commercial circles. Mr. Johnson is a member and clerk of the First Baptist Church.

Reps Jones, one of Knoxville's most useful and enterprising citizens, was born in Jefferson County in 1843, and at the age of ten years made Sweet Water, Tenn., his home, until the war, when he enlisted in the Confederate service as second lieutenant of the Forty-third Infantry, being soon after promoted to the first lieutenancy, in which rank he served until the close, when he came to Knoxville, and for about ten years was engaged in the pork packing business, then in the livery business until 1881, since which time he has been contracting and building, and in this way has contributed largely to the upbuilding of Knoxville. Among the many fine and substantial buildings recently constructed by him may be mentioned the Lyon's View Asylum, girls' high school and the new Knox County courthouse, all of which reflect credit to his name as a contractor. He also built the Knoxville woolen-mills, and the new Catholic Church. He employs about 125 hands during the building season, and his contracts for 1886 amounted to over \$80,000. He is a director in both the old street car companies, and was at one time city alderman. He married Miss Mary Pate, of Concord, Knox County, in 1878. W. B. Jones, the father, was born in Cocke County, and married Mary Jarnagin, a native of Grainger County. He then moved to Jefferson County,

where he followed merchandising until his death in 1848, his wife having preceded him in 1845. Our subject and two sisters, one being a twin sister, constitute the family. The paternal great-grandfather came from Scotland and settled in Virginia, where the grandfather was born and reared. They afterward located in East Tennessee.

Charlton Karns, secretary and treasurer of the Knoxville City Mills Company, was born in Knox County, Tenn., in 1858, and is the son of J. C. and Lorenia (Lindell) Karns. The father is a native of Knox County, born in 1833, and is at present engaged in merchandising at Adair Creek, Knox County. The mother was also born in Knox County in 1834, and is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, as is also her husband. Our subject was reared on the farm, situated within two miles of Knoxville, where he remained until his twentieth year, acquiring his education at Mossy Creek College, in Jefferson County. At the age of twenty he engaged with his father in the mill business at Planters' Mills, one mile north of Knoxville, where he continued for five years, and then removed to Knoxville. He then entered the employ of the Knoxville City Mills Company, becoming secretary and treasurer of the same in 1885. He is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and although a young man, occupies a responsible position, and has established a good standing in business circles.

Thomas H. Kearney, M. D., one of the prominent physicians of Knoxville, Tenn., a native of Ireland, was born November 23, 1832, son of Patrick and Sophia (Apjohn) Kearney, both natives of Ireland. The father was born in 1799, and immigrated to America in 1849. He was by profession a civil engineer, and died in 1874. The mother is at present a resident of Waynesville, Ohio. Our subject was reared in his native country, and was in his seventeenth year when he accompanied his parents to this country. His medical studies began in 1855, at Cincinnati, Ohio, where he attended and graduated from the medical college of Ohio in 1858. He then served for a year as house physician at the Commercial Hospital in the above city, and next began practicing medicine at that point (Cincinnati), and continued until the spring of 1861. The civil war breaking out at that period, he entered the Federal service as medical officer on one of the gunboats of the western flotilla. After a year's service on the gunboat he was commissioned surgeon of the Forty-fifth Ohio Regiment of Infantry, a position he held until the close of the war. He returned to Cincinnati after the war, and again began the practice of medicine. He served as assistant physician of Longview Asylum for the Insane, near Cincinnati, was elected to the chair of principles of surgery in the Miami Medical College, of Cincinnati, Ohio, in 1872, and at

the death of Prof. Mussey, some years later, was made professor of the principles and practice of surgery. This position he held up to his removal to Knoxville, Tenn., in 1884. He is a member of the Knox County Medical Society, of which he is now president. He was married in 1873 to Lavinia Miner, who is the daughter of the late Judge Miner, of Cincinnati. To them have been born three children, all of whom are living. Both our subject and his wife are members of the Episcopal Church.

James H. Keeling, M. D., a leading physician of Knoxville, was born in Shelbyville, Tenn., in 1849. and is the son of James L. and Charlotte (McGrew) Keeling. The father was a native of Virginia, born in the year 1800. He was a planter and trader by occupation, a member of the Presbyterian Church, and his death occurred in 1856. The mother was born in South Carolina in 1802; was a member of the Baptist Church, and died in 1873. Our subject was reared in Pulaski, Giles Co., Tenn., and attended the Pulaski High School and Giles College. He began the study of medicine in 1869 at Elkton, Giles Co., Tenn., under Drs. Bealy & Bowers, and during 1870 and 1871 attended medical lectures at the Maryland University at Baltimore, from which institution he graduated in the latter year. In 1872 he graduated from the University of Louisville (Ky.), and, after a few months spent in hospitals, returned to Pulaski, where he began practicing his profession. In October, 1879, the Doctor married Miss Jennie Dickerson, a native of Giles County, born in 1859, the daughter of Col. W. R. Dickerson. To this union was born one child. In 1882 our subject removed to Knoxville, and has since practiced medicine in that city, building up a good practice, likewise a good professional standing.

J. B. Kelley, secretary and general manager of the Knoxville Foundry & Machine Company, is a native of Barre, Worcester Co., Mass., born in 1839, and the son of Joel B. and Adaline (Billings) Kelley, both natives of Massachusetts. The former was born in 1804 and died in 1845, and the latter was born in 1813 and died in 1876. They were both members of the Unitarian Church. Our subject was reared in his native town, and, after passing three years of his life in Illinois and Minnesota, graduated from Brown University at Providence, R. I., in the class of 1862. He then passed ten years in Providence, R. I., after which, in 1870, he came to Tennessee, and located in Knoxville, where he became a member of the firm of Clark, Quaife & Co., car wheel manufacturers, and the first two years with this company were passed in rebuilding and operating the blast furnace on Stony Creek, in Carter County, Tenn. In 1874 he became associated with his present firm.



Previous to this, in 1872, he went to Providence, R. I., and was there united in marriage to Miss Hattie D. Mason, a native of Rhode Island, born in 1844, the daughter of Nathaniel and Nancy (Davis) Mason. This union resulted in the birth of five children, only two of whom are now living, viz.: J. B., Jr., born in 1873, and Lucia D., born in 1880. Mrs. Kelley died in 1883, and the following year our subject married Annie Stuart, a native of Knoxville, born in 1858, the daughter of Jacob and Margaret (Anderson) Stuart. To this union was born one child, Adeline S., in 1886.

Peter Kern, a member of the board of public works of Knoxville, and the leading confectioner of the city, was born on the Rhine October 31, 1835. While growing up he learned the shoemakers' trade, and when seventeen years of age he came to America, locating in Georgia, where he followed his trade until the breaking out of the war. In 1861 he volunteered to serve his adopted country in Company I, Twelfth Georgia Infantry (Confederate States Army). At the battle of McDowell he received a severe wound, and after sufficiently recovering was on detailed duty. In 1863 he came to Knoxville and opened a bakery, which he has continued up to the present. For a companion in life Mr. Kern chose Miss Henrietta Meyer, of Nashville, in 1864, and the fruits of this union were ten children—six sons and four daughters. Mr. Kern and wife are members of the German Lutheran Church, and he is a Democrat, although he votes for the man rather than the party. He held the position of alderman of the city of Knoxville about ten years, and is now president of the Knoxville Ice Company and of the Asylum Street Railway Company. He is an example of what a young man of energy and determination can do. Having started here a day laborer, and a stranger to our language, laws and customs, he has now become one of the wealthy men of Knoxville. He now does an extensive wholesale and retail confectionery business, which is ably conducted by his sons.

Hon. J. M. King, postmaster of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Roane County, of the same State, born in 1836, and reared at Athens, McMinn Co., Tenn. He was educated at Emory and Henry College, and then graduated at the Lebanon Law School in 1858, after which he located at Knoxville and practiced his profession as a member of the firm of Swan & King, afterward Swan, King & Doak, until the commencement of the war, when he enlisted in the Third Tennessee Confederate Infantry, but was afterward transferred to the Sixteenth Tennessee Battalion in 1862. In September, 1864, he was taken prisoner and confined at Fort Delaware until discharged, June 12, 1865. He then returned to Knoxville and practiced law until 1876, after which he was

made chairman of the county court, and October 20, 1885, he received his appointment to the postoffice of Knoxville, of which he took charge in November of the same year. Directly after the war he married Miss Mary McCleskey, a native of Georgia, but reared in Knoxville. Six children were the result of this union, one of whom is deceased. The mother of these children died October 19, 1886. Charles L. and Julia R. (McElnee) King, the parents of our subject, are natives of Richmond, Va., and Knox County, Tenn., respectively. They reside in McMinn County, Tenn., where the father cultivates the soil. Of their family of twelve children, our subject, four brothers and four sisters, are the survivors. The grandfather, McElnee, located in Knoxville at the same time Gen. White came here. The ancestors on the King side were of Scotch-Irish descent.

James M. Kinkaid, a marble quarryman and marble dealer, was born April 21, 1827, in Rockbridge County, Va., and is the third of five children born to Isaiah and Sarah (McFarland) Kinkaid, both born and reared in Rockbridge County, Va. The father immigrated to Ohio in 1831, settling first near Dayton, and after remaining there one year moved to Miami County, where he settled seven miles north of Troy. He was a successful farmer and was highly respected by all. He died in 1873, in his seventy-ninth year. Mrs. Kinkaid died in 1836, aged thirty-three years. She was an active worker in the Presbyterian Church. After her death Mr. Kinkaid married Mrs. Sarah Miller. Our subject received very limited educational advantages. He was united in marriage to Miss Mary Ann Palmer, of Miami County, Ohio, where she was born December 31, 1827. She was the daughter of John and Margaret (Hance) Palmer. Her father was a native of Bristol, England, who immigrated to America, and settled first in New York, but finally in Miami County, Ohio. To our subject and wife were born five children: William F., Albert Horatio. Clara Bell (Mrs. E. W. Mason), John Charles and James Lawrence. The youngest two sons are bookkeepers for their father in the marble business, and also have charge of the store near their marble quarry. Mr. Kinkaid is a Republican in politics, and he and his wife and four children are members of the Missionary Baptist Church. Mr. Kinkaid followed farming and stock raising until the fall of 1872, when he moved to Troy, Ohio, and engaged in coal mining. By a complication with other parties Mr. Kinkaid lost about \$100,000. He is now engaged in the cattle business in southern Kansas, which is managed by his eldest son. He also owns a very rich deposit of fine marble two miles east of Concord. James McFarland, the maternal grandfather of our subject, was a warm Abolitionist and a splendid practical business man.

Charles Kurth is a practical machinist and engineer, plumber, gas and steam fitter. His is the most conspicuous house in the above trade in Knoxville or probably in East Tennessee. It was established by that gentleman in this city May 1, 1882, and is located at No. 160 Gay Street. This building is a very extensive one, occupying an area of 25x150 feet. The exhibition of fine chandeliers, shades, gas fixtures, etc., generally contains an assortment, which for artistic workmanship and beauty of design, as well as variety and extent is unequalled in this section, and will average in value over \$20,000. In addition to engineer and machinists' supplies, all kinds of plumbing, gas and steam fitting are done, and he also deals in all kinds of railroad, mining and quarry supplies. He carries a complete assortment, and makes a specialty of steam pumps, steam gauges, Hancock inspirators, injectors, jet pumps, hand mining pumps, cistern and deep well pumps, the famous American self-feeding lubricators, Pickering spring governors, asbestos, soapstone, Italian hemp and rubber packing, hose and hose trimmings, wrought iron pipe and engine and boiler trimmings of every description. Every invention or improvement made in this line is at once secured or adopted by this house, which may be implicitly relied on to perform all contracts undertaken with promptness and entire satisfaction to all concerned. The trade of this establishment is not confined to this city alone but extends throughout Georgia, Tennessee, Kentucky, Virginia, North Carolina and South Carolina and is steadily increasing, amounting now to over \$50,000 per annum. Mr. Kurth was born in Germany, and came to this city four years ago, conducting his business upon an upright and liberal basis, with a thorough and practical knowledge of its every detail, and quick to avail himself of every idea promising improvement. In 1881 he married Miss Minna Engert, whose parents came from Germany a short time before her birth. To this union were born two daughters: Emma and Ida. Mr. and Mrs. Kurth are members of the Lutheran Church, and are much respected citizens.

Capt. J. K. Lones, sheriff of Knox County, was born in that county in 1842, and is one of eight children (seven now living) born to Charles and Rebecca (Johnson) Lones, both natives of Knox County, Tenn., where the mother's death occurred in 1863, and where the father is still living, engaged in agricultural pursuits. He has also been administering to the spiritual wants of his fellow men, having been a minister in the Baptist Church for many years. Our subject attained his majority on the farm, and received his education in the common schools. At the breaking out of hostilities during the late war, he enlisted in the First Tennessee Union Cavalry as private, but in June, 1862, he was promoted



to the rank of second lieutenant, November, 1862, to first lieutenant, and in January, 1863, he was made captain, which position he held until the close of the war. He then returned to Knox County, and cultivated the soil until elected to his present office in August, 1886. In 1872 he married Pauline Sharp, a native of Knox County, who presented her husband with six children, four of whom are now living. Mr. Lones is a member of the F. & A. M. and G. A. R. Jacob Lones, grandfather of our subject, was a native of Virginia, and helped build the first house that was erected on the present site of Knoxville. He was captain of the State militia in the early history of the county, and died in 1860.

Hon. Edward Legg, justice of the peace of the Third Civil District of Knox County, Tenn., and one of the oldest and most prominent farmers of the district, was born in Knox County near the mouth of Big Flat Creek February 14, 1818, and is the son of Wesley and Christian (Price) Legg. The father was born in Knox County in 1797, and was the son of Edward and Polly (Grover) Legg. Our subject's grandfather was a native of England who immigrated to America when seventeen years of age, settling in Virginia, where he subsequently married. He then removed to Knox County, Tenn., and here followed farming and school-teaching as occupations, until his death in 1833. The grandmother was a native of Virginia, and died when her son Wesley was a child. Both grandparents were members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Wesley Legg was a successful farmer, and under the old constitution held the office of constable for fourteen years. He served in the war of 1812, under Gen. Jackson, and died in 1859. His wife was born May 11, 1801, in Knox County, and was the daughter of Edward and Juda (Webb) Price, both natives of Virginia. She died in 1873. Our subject was reared on the farm, and acquired his education at Bristol, a school taught on the farm now owned by our subject. He remained on the farm with his parents until twenty-five years of age, and in 1848 was elected constable, serving eight years. Previous to this, November 30, 1843, he married Mary K. Chanaberry, a native of Knox County, born in 1817, the daughter of Peter and Mary (Epps) Chanaberry. To this marriage was born one child, George M. D., September 28, 1844, who is now a prominent merchant of Boston, Mass. The mother was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and died in 1847. He was again married, November 6, 1849, to Matilda W. Harris, a native of Knox County, born April 26, 1821, the daughter of Stephen and Martha (Luttrell) Harris. Stephen Harris was a native Tennessean, a farmer, and died in 1855. The mother was born in Virginia in 1784, was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and died in 1881. To our subject and wife were born

eight children: Mary, born in 1850 (now Mrs W. N. Brandon); W. E. A., born in 1852; Martha C., born in 1853 (now Mrs. A. T. Angel); Adlicia F., born in 1856 (now Mrs. W. M. Buckhart); E. P., born in 1858; Rachel M., born in 1861 (now Mrs. George Cardwell); A. J., born in 1864, and Damie T., born in 1868. The mother is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and has been totally blind for nearly four years. She nevertheless retains her health, and is able to perform light household duties. She can sew and knit and can also write letters to her children. She is an amiable and cheerful lady and a true helpmate to her husband. Mr. Legg was elected justice of the peace in 1874, and holds that office at the present time. In 1882 he was chosen to represent Knox County in the State Legislature, and served in that body with honor and credit to himself and constituents, being a member of the committee on Federal relations, claims and charitable institutions. Though a Democrat and living in a Republican district, he receives the support of both political parties and has never been unsuccessful in seeking office. Mr. Legg has followed farming all his life and has made that occupation a complete success. He is a member of the Union Baptist Church.

Frank J. Leland, vice-president of the Standard Handle Company, and one of the county's enterprising and successful citizens, is a son of J. E. and Mary E. (Crover) Leland. The father was a native of Massachusetts, and is engaged in the same business as our subject. The mother is a native of Rhode Island. Our subject was born in Windham County, Conn., August 12, 1856, and educated at the college of the city of New York. He moved to New York City when but twelve years of age. In 1874 he went to Bowling Green, Ky., and engaged in the manufacture of handles until 1881 when he came to Knoxville. He has been twice married, and by his first wife became the father of one son. In 1887 he was united in marriage to Miss May Ebbert. Mr. Leland is a member of the K. of H., of the I. O. O. F. and is a wide-awake business man.

J. F. J. Lewis, a native of Knoxville, Tenn., where he now resides, was born in that city February 13, 1830. His early education was such as the schools of that day afforded. His first business efforts, when quite young, were of the mechanical and mercantile departments. At the age of twenty-two he was admitted to the Knoxville bar to practice as a solicitor in chancery and attorney at law. His license bears the signature of two of the most distinguished judges Tennessee has produced: Thomas L. Williams, chancellor, and Ebenezer Alexander, circuit judge. Under the administration of President Buchanan Mr. Lewis was appointed postmaster at Knoxville, but resigned the office in the course of a year or two

after the date of his commission. While holding that position, about 1858, he married Miss Laura A. Mitchell, a native of Alabama. Seven children were born to them, but only five survive. Soon after the presidential election of 1860 he removed to Arkansas, and made his home in Chicot County at Lake Village. There he formed a partnership for legal business with Maj. James F. Robinson and George K. Cracraft in the name of Robinson, Lewis & Cracraft. Soon after this the war paralyzed business in that country and closed the courthouses. Mr. Lewis returned to Knoxville with his family, and from that point entered the army of the Confederacy with Maj. David Sullens. At the close of the war he spent a year in Cincinnati in the wholesale hat house of Wallace and Ringel. At the urgent solicitation of his former partners he returned to Arkansas to resume the law. In 1869 the governor of Arkansas, Hon. Powell Clayton, appointed him judge of the court of probate for said Chicot County, which office he held until his final return to his native city. In 1874 he was elected clerk of the county court of Knox County, and was afterward twice re-elected, serving twelve years in the three terms. Mr. Lewis was twice elected a member of the board of mayor and aldermen in the city of Knoxville, and is now president of the board of trustees of the East Tennessee Female Institute, one of the first schools in the State. He is also Grand Master Workman of the A. O. U. W. in Tennessee. By the favoritism of the members of the order he is serving a second term, an honor conferred by unanimous vote. After the death of Hon. John L. Moses, who was the tax attorney of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railway system, extending through four States, Mr. Lewis was appointed to that position, and now discharges the duties of the office.

J. W. Lillard, a native of Meigs County, Tenn., was born in 1832, and in youth moved to Athens, Tenn., being the first agent at that place of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad. From 1852 to 1858 he was a salesman for the firm of Courtney, Tennent & Co., Charleston, S. C., becoming a member of the firm at that date (1858). After the war he severed his connection with the above firm, and for two years acted as traveling salesman for a Cincinnati firm, selling goods throughout the Southern States. At the expiration of the two years he returned to Athens, Tenn., and organized the Franklin Association Bank, which has since been merged into the First National. About the time of the organization of the East Tennessee National Bank he came to Knoxville, and assisted in the organization of the same, being made cashier soon after, which position he filled six years. He then opened a wholesale notion store, and conducted the same two years in Knoxville, since which time he has



not been actively engaged in business. He was also one of the first board of directors for the Mechanics National Bank, and is at present a stockholder in the East Tennessee and the new Third National Banks. In 1869 he married Miss Martha E. Matlock, a native of McMinn County, Tenn., to whom two children have been born: John M. (deceased) and James. The paternal grandfather of our subject, Col. William Lillard, was a native Virginian, and served in the war of 1812. James, the father, was born in Virginia in 1795, and in infancy came with his parents to East Tennessee, where he married Mary Sandusky, a native of Cocke County, Tenn. He was a farmer, and died in 1879. Our subject and a twin brother were the youngest of five brothers, viz.: William C. (deceased), captain in the Mexican war; John M. (deceased), colonel of the Twenty-sixth Tennessee, Confederate Infantry, killed at Chickamauga; James, who was a private in the Third Tennessee Infantry; N. J., colonel of the Third Tennessee Confederate, now living in Meigs County. All of the above four brothers were also in the Mexican war.

John Llewellyn, farmer, was born January 19, 1836, in Morgan County, Tenn., and is the third of eight children born to William L. and Nancy (Wallace) Llewellyn, natives of Virginia and Tennessee respectively. William L. Llewellyn was born August 2, 1809, and was brought to Morgan County, Tenn., by his father, Anderson Llewellyn, when about two years of age. He was constable of Morgan County for several years, and since his removal to Knox County in 1862 has served his district as magistrate for several years. His wife, and the mother of our subject, was born about 1811 in Anderson County, where she grew to womanhood. Our subject was educated by his father, and after assisting on the farm until twenty-four years of age, married Miss Elizabeth E. Shannon, a native of Morgan County, born in 1834, and the daughter of James and Mary Shannon, citizens of Morgan County, and both of purely Irish parentage. The marriage of our subject resulted in the birth of six children: William A., Nancy Jane, John B., Newton C., Charles S. and Freeman H. Mr. and Mrs. Llewellyn and four children are members of the Missionary Baptist Church, Mr. Llewellyn being a deacon of the same. He was formerly a Whig, but is now a Democrat in politics. By his own industry and good management he has accumulated considerable property, and now owns in one body a fine farm of 225 acres of land, well cultivated and well improved. Mr. Llewellyn is giving his children good educational advantages, and he is also quite liberal in his support of all religious enterprises. He donated the land upon which the Methodist Episcopal and Baptist Churches were built near his farm, and besides gave considerable money. He is a Master Mason, and an excellent citizen.

W. B. Lockett & Co., wholesale dealers in groceries and tobacco, established their business in October, 1883. The firm is individually composed of W. B. Lockett, Sr., W. B. Lockett, Jr., J. E. Lotspeich and R. S. Hazen. W. B. Lockett, Sr., is a native of Mississippi, born in 1834. He removed to Knoxville in 1874, and there engaged in the wholesale grocery business as one of the firm of Carpenter, Ross & Lockett. Mr. Carpenter withdrawing, the firm title became M. L. Ross & Co. In 1883 this firm dissolved, and the present company formed. Mr. Lockett was married in 1860 to M. A. Ballard, of Mississippi, who bore him seven children. Both Mr. and Mrs. Lockett are members of the Third Presbyterian Church, of Knoxville. W. B. Lockett, Jr., was born in Mississippi in December, 1861. He removed with his parents to Tennessee in 1874, and secured his education at the University of Tennessee, graduating in the class of 1881. He became a member of the above firm at its organization. J. O. Lotspeich, is a native of Tennessee, born in Greene County in 1854, and the son of V. S. and Elizabeth (Easterly) Lotspeich, both natives of Tennessee. He was reared in Greeneville, and removed to Knoxville in 1872, becoming a member of the firm at its organization. He was married in 1878 to Ida S. Meek, of Jonesboro, Tenn., the daughter of C. W. and Sarah (Hale) Meek, of that place, and this union resulted in the birth of two sons. Mr. and Mrs. Lotspeich are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. R. S. Hazen, is a native of Knox County, Tenn., born August 13, 1854, and is the son of G. M. and Mary (Strong) Hazen, both natives of Tennessee, but of New England parents. Our subject was reared in Knoxville, educated at the University of Tennessee, and became a member of the present firm at its organization. In 1882 he married A. E. Mabry, of Knoxville, and the daughter of Joseph A. and Laura (Churchwell) Mabry, both natives of Tennessee. This union resulted in the birth of two daughters. Edward Henegar, bookkeeper for W. B. Lockett & Co., was born in Charleston, Tenn., and educated at the University of Tennessee. He began with the above firm as file clerk, but was promoted to his present position.

Hon. Samuel T. Logan, judge of the criminal and circuit courts for the district of Knox, was born on the 29th of February, 1832, at Abingdon, Washington Co., Va., graduating at Emory and Henry College in 1852. He then studied law with his father, Samuel Logan, one of the first lawyers of the State, and commonwealth's attorney for many years, and was admitted to the bar in December, 1855. In January, 1856, Mr. Logan removed to Tennessee, and after practicing law about one year at Blountville located at Jonesboro, in same State. Here he continued the practice of law until 1864 in partnership with his brother, Joseph M.

Logan, at which time both removed to Knoxville and formed a partnership with Hon. Thomas A. R. Nelson, under the firm name of Nelsor, Logan & Logan. This firm enjoyed a lucrative practice for several years. Mr. Logan's brother and partner died in 1869, and Judge Nelson in 1873, after which he formed a partnership with Mr. C. E. Lucky, under the firm name of Logan & Lucky. In 1882 Mr. Logan retired from the practice of the law, and in 1884 was elected State senator from the Fifth Senatorial District (composed of the counties of Anderson and Knox) by a majority of about 2,500, and in August, 1886, was elected to the present office. Judge Logan's parents were Samuel and Bethia (Talbot) Logan, both natives of Washington County, Va., where they were married in 1827. His father was elected attorney for the commonwealth of Virginia for sixteen years consecutively, first by the Legislature, and then by the people, and although a pronounced Whig, was chosen from a strong Democratic district. He died in 1855, and the mother in 1836.

A. Looney, a successful agriculturist, was born in 1817 in Hawkins County, Tenn., and when ten years old moved to Knox County, where he has since resided. His educational advantages were quite limited, and when eighteen years of age he was thrown upon his own resources. He inherited some property from his uncle, but the balance of his wealth was the fruit of his own industry. Besides a good deal of property he lost during the late war, Mr. Looney owns a first rate farm of 220 acres, well improved, and located four miles southwest of Knoxville. In 1846 he enlisted in Capt. Caswell's company and Col. Thomas' regiment, serving twelve months in the Mexican war. He was mustered out of service at New Orleans. About 1852 he married Miss Ellen Parker, daughter of John Parker, of Hawkins County, Tenn., and five children resulted from this union: Alexander, Susan, Mary (Mrs. J. G. Lones), and two who died in infancy. Mrs. Looney died in October, 1861, and July 4, 1865, Mr. Looney married Mrs. Martha Lones, formerly Miss Daniel. Mr. Looney and two daughters are members of the Missionary Baptist Church. In politics Mr. Looney is conservative, voting for principle instead of party. He is the youngest of five children born to Absolom and Nancy (Long) Looney, natives of Hawkins County, where they were reared. Absolom Looney was an accomplished scholar, a refined gentleman, and a prominent citizen of his county, which he represented in the Legislature. He was also sheriff of the county several years. He was a practical civil engineer, and helped to establish the State line. He was of English descent; his grandfather, together with his twelve brothers, came to America some time before the Revolutionary war, and settled in Stanley Valley. He was killed near Knoxville by the Indians. Mr.



Looney, grandfather of our subject, was born in England, and came with his father to America. He was wounded at King's Mountain during the Revolutionary war. Our subject's father, by his second marriage, became the father of eight children. He moved to Louisiana, and here died. His son, Robert Looney, brother of A. Looney, is a well educated, highly cultured gentleman, and is at present supreme judge of the State. He is a prominent lawyer and an able jurist. He has been connected in some of the leading law suits of Tennessee and adjoining States.

Hon. James C. Luttrell, mayor of Knoxville, was born in that city in 1841. He was reared there and educated at the University of North Carolina, after which he engaged in the notion trade in Nashville, Tenn. At the breaking out of the war he enlisted in the thirty days' infantry, and then served in the Knoxville Artillery, of which he was first lieutenant, and afterward commanded a battery. At the close of the war he engaged in the hardware business in New York City for five years, and then in partnership with his brother, S. B. Luttrell, established their hardware store in this city. In 1867 he married Josephine E. Brooks, a native of this county, to whom three sons and three daughters have been born. Mr. Luttrell is a director in the Mechanics' National Bank of Knoxville, is a stockholder in three of the insurance companies, a stockholder in the Market Street Railway Company, a stockholder and director in the Bell Avenue Street Railroad Company, a director in the chamber of commerce, and chairman of committee on transportation, railroads and navigation. In January, 1886, he was elected to his second term as mayor of Knoxville, to serve two years. He is one of two sons and four daughters born to J. C. and Eliza (Bell) Luttrell. The father was a native of Knox County, born in 1811, and was a legal practitioner. He was at one time clerk of the Tennessee Legislature, and in company with Andrew Johnson, rode horseback to and from Nashville. He was county register several years, was postmaster of Knoxville under Fillmore's appointment; was comptroller of the State at the time Mr. Johnson was governor, and was also mayor of Knoxville fourteen years. After the war he was elected to the State Senate, and a short time before he was appointed special agent for the postoffice department of East Tennessee by President Lincoln. He was the first Democrat who carried Knox County in an election for several years after the war. His death occurred in Nashville, but his home was in Knoxville. The mother of our subject was of Scotch-Irish descent. Her parents located at Pittsburgh, Penn., and afterward came to Tennessee.

J. E. Lutz, senior member of the firm of J. E. Lutz & Co., dealers in boots, shoes, hats, trunks, valises, umbrellas, etc., is a native of New-

market, Va., born in 1854, and came to East Tennessee with his parents in his youth. About 1873 he came to Knoxville, and accepted the position of bookkeeper for Alvin Barton until the present firm was formed in 1884. The firm of Dismukes & Thomas was formed, and existed one year, after which it merged into the firm of S. C. Dismukes & Co., which was after another year succeeded by the present firm of J. E. Lutz & Co., with our subject and J. C. White, of Oates, White & Co., as members. February 10, 1886, he was united in marriage to Miss Delia Armstrong, daughter of Col. R. H. Armstrong, one of Knox County's pioneers. The father of our subject, H. R. Lutz, is a native of Virginia, and is now residing on a farm near Rogersville, Tenn. He first married Sarah Andes, a native of Virginia, to whom our subject, one brother and one sister were born. The mother died in 1865, and the father afterward married Miss Mary Plecker, to whom four children have been born. Our subject's paternal grandfather was of Swiss parentage, and came from Pennsylvania to Virginia, where he died.

Hon. G. W. Mabry, a farmer of the Tenth District, was born July 21, 1823, on the farm where he now resides. He is the eldest of six children born to Joseph A. and Alice (Scott) Mabry. The grandfather of our subject, Joseph A. Mabry, was born March 19, 1796, in Westmoreland County, Va., came to Tennessee with his parents when quite young, and settled in Knox County. He was a member of the convention which framed the constitution of Tennessee, and was elected to the Legislature, serving two terms. He was a successful farmer and trader. His son, Joseph A. Mabry, was a member of the constitutional convention which met in 1870. Our subject received his education in the common schools of Knox County, and at Holston College. His father died when our subject was but fourteen years of age, and he began farming for himself shortly afterward. He married Miss J. L. Hume in 1846, and to them were born these children: Isabella (Mrs. Jerome Templeton), Maria Florence (deceased), Joseph C., George C. (deceased), Mary (deceased), Jeanette, Rowena, Margaret L., David Hume and Evelyn. Two died in infancy. Mr. and Mrs. Mabry are members of the Missionary Baptist Church, of which Mr. Mabry is a deacon. Mrs. Mabry was born in Abingdon, Va., November 8, 1825, and is the second of four children born to David and Eliza (Sanderson) Hume. Mr. Hume was born in Scotland March 9, 1794, and came to America when nineteen years of age. He was a weaver by trade. Mrs. Hume was also a native of Scotland, born in 1789, and came to America when nine years of age. Her father owned a large woolen factory where they now live in New Hampshire. Our subject is a strong Democrat. He was elected to the State Legislature

in 1851 and 1853, and took quite an active part as a legislator. He presented several bills and all were passed. He was elected magistrate in 1870, and has been re-elected at each successive election since. He was chairman of the building committee during the erection of the courthouse of Knox County, and took quite an interest in all matters pertaining to the erection of that building. Mr. Mabry is a good citizen, and is of English-Irish descent.

G. L. Maloney, of the firm of Childress & Maloney, dealers in groceries at Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Knox County, Tenn., born July 3, 1844, and is the son of James W. and Minerva E. (King) Maloney. The father, a native of Greene County, Tenn., was born February 1, 1818, and is now a resident of Knox County. The mother is a native of Knox County, and was born in March, 1817. Our subject was reared on the farm, and attended in his youth the schools of the neighborhood, and later attended Rocky Springs Academy, in Sevier County, finishing his education after the war, at Athens and the University of Tennessee, at Knoxville, and occupied the position of teacher in the preparatory department of the latter school for about a year and a half. In April, 1862, he refuged to Kentucky, where he enlisted in the Sixth Regiment of Union Tennessee Infantry, joining Company C, Capt. R. M. Bennett. He entered as private, and serving throughout the war was mustered out of the service as first lieutenant. At the close of the Rebellion he returned to Knox County and attended and taught school for a while. In March, 1870, he entered the postoffice at Knoxville as a clerk. In 1874 he was elected clerk of the Knox County Criminal Court, and was re-elected in 1878, serving two terms of four years each. In 1886 he engaged in his present business. He is a charter member of Ed. Maynard Post, No. 14, G. A. R., of which organization he is an active member. He was married, June 8, 1868, to Sonora L. Dodson, daughter of Lazarus and Rebecca L. (Sullens) Dodson natives of McMinn County, Tenn. She was born July 31, 1852. To this union four children have been born as follows: Willie M., George E., Frank D. and James D. Both our subject and wife are members of the Methodist Church.

Rev. Francis Thomas Marron, pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Ireland, born in 1843. When a child, about six or seven years of age, he immigrated with his parents to this country, and settled for a time on Staten Island, and later in New York City. His early education was acquired at St. Mary's Parochial School, Clifton, Staten Island, and at St. Mary's Parochial School, New York City. He completed his classics at the De La Salle Institute



and Manhattan College, both in New York City. In 1865 he was adopted by Rt. Rev. Bishop Feehan, who had just been consecrated bishop of Nashville. The following year the Rt. Rev. Bishop sent his newly adopted candidate to St. Vincent's College, Cape Girardeau, Mo., where he completed his philosophical and theological studies. In 1871 he was ordained in the cathedral at Nashville. Father Marron's first pastoral duties were in Middle Tennessee, at Columbia, Pulaski and other points. He was placed in charge of Knoxville Parish in 1872, and this is no ordinary charge, for it not only includes the large and thrifty city of Knoxville, but all upper East Tennessee. The Catholic Church in Knoxville is in a very flourishing condition, and the church building is the largest and finest in the whole State. Father Marron is a most courageous and energetic man. He has done well for the church in Knoxville, and his people fully appreciate his services.

S. C. Martin, physician and surgeon at Campbell's Station, was born September 10, 1843, in the locality where he now resides. He is one of nine children born to Samuel and Julia Ann (Reese) Martin. The father was born in Antrim County, Ireland, about 1775, came to America when about twenty years of age, and settled in Jefferson County, Tenn. He subsequently went to Kingston, and in 1823 moved to Knox County; where he died in 1855. He was a remarkably good business man, and although he commenced life a poor man, was worth about \$100,000 at the time of his death. He was a very prominent man in his time, and was considered one of the best read and most influential citizens of his part of the country. He was on quite intimate terms with men of National reputation, was well acquainted with Gen. Jackson, and was quite active in securing the reduction of the postage rates. He married a daughter of John J. Reese, of Mossy Creek, whose son, William B. Reese, was for several years one of the supreme judges. Mr. Martin's brother, Hugh Martin, came to America the same time he did, and had a son, Rev. Joseph Martin, D. D., who was a noted divine of Kentucky. Mrs. Samuel Martin, mother of our subject, was born in Jefferson County, near Mossy Creek, and died in 1854 during the cholera scourge at Knoxville. Our subject lacked one year of completing the classical course of study at Knoxville University, and made an exceptionally good record as a student. He studied medicine under Dr. Nelson, and also under Dr. McNutt of Kingston. He attended school at the Nashville Medical College, and began the practice of medicine in 1863 at Campbell's Station. He has been a very successful physician, and has a large and extensive practice. Since the death of his parents he has made his home with his sister, Mrs. Eliza Jane Nelson. Dr. Martin is a Master Mason and is a Democrat in politics.

Spencer A. Maxey, farmer, is a native of Knox County, Tenn., born March 4, 1811, and is of French lineage. He received a limited education in the common schools, and after reaching his majority chose the occupation of a farmer as a life pursuit. In 1829, however, he engaged in the distillery business and followed this for about seven years. He afterward resumed his agricultural pursuits. In 1846 he married Miss Rebecca Hommel, a native of Knox County, born May 24, 1827, and the daughter of Daniel Hommel. To them were born seven sons and two daughters, all now living with the exception of one son. Those living are Abram, born October 9, 1847, and the only one married; Franklin, born September 21, 1852; J. H., born April 9, 1855; Andrew, born October 29, 1857; John, born February 26, 1860; and William, born May 22, 1862. The daughters are Catherine, wife of J. H. Maloney, born May 21, 1850; and Sallie, born April 6, 1867, who is now at home. Mr. Maxey owns over 300 acres of land in the Thirteenth District of Knox County, and is a successful farmer. He is a Democrat in politics, and his wife is a member of the Evangelical Lutheran Church. The six sons are farmers and land holders, and all are living near the old homestead. On their land are quantities of pink and variegated pink marble, which they are now quarrying quite extensively. All the sons have received their education in the common schools and have attended higher institutions. Franklin Maxey attended the University of Tennessee during the session of 1876. James H. entered the University of Tennessee in the autumn of 1876, and continued at school for two years and a half; Andrew entered the University of Tennessee in the fall of 1877, and continued at school there for three years until the spring of 1880. William attended school at Maryville College, after which he entered the University of Tennessee, and continued there for two years; John also went to school at Maryville. Frank and James H. taught school eight years each; Andrew taught six years, and William taught two years. They and their father are extensive stock raisers, and it has been their custom for years to graze their cattle among the Smoky Mountains during the summer seasons. They are also extensive wheat and corn growers. Like their father, each son is a decided Democrat in politics.

A. L. Maxwell, president of the East Tennessee Iron and Coal Company, of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Saratoga, N. J., and was born February 1, 1824. He is the son of A. L. and Rachel (Stafford) Maxwell, both natives of Saratoga County, N. J., and traces his direct ancestry back to the Maxwells of Scotland and North of Ireland, and the Staffords of England, both prominent and leading families from the earliest histories of those nations to the present time; he is also a

relative of the late Hon. Hugh Maxwell, of New York City. The father of our subject was born in 1789, was a railroad contractor, and died in 1862. The mother was born in 1795, and died in 1873. Both parents were members of churches—the father of the Baptist, and the mother of the Methodist. Our subject was reared in Saratoga, and acquired his education in the public schools of that town. He left home in December, 1845, going to Massachusetts, where he began life for himself as bookkeeper and paymaster for the firm of Asariah Boody & Co., the largest railroad contractors of the East at that time, the firm being composed of such men as Sidney Dillon, Amasa Stone, John Ross, Daniel L. Harris and Milton Clyde, all of whom became the leading capitalists of the United States, and constructed, as members of different firms, a majority of the railroads of New England and the early West. Our subject was married, February 1, 1845, to Harriet J. Brown, a native of Cheshire, Mass., who was born March 15, 1829, and is the daughter of Luther H. and Adaline (Mason) Brown, both natives of Massachusetts. She is a great-granddaughter of Capt. Daniel Brown, who commanded a company at the battle of Bennington during the Revolutionary war, and who had charge of a number of British officers as prisoners, quartering them at his residence. He was a prominent and wealthy citizen of that date, and an honored friend of President Martin Van Buren, and often entertained that distinguished man during his presidency. At the house of Capt. Brown was made the huge cheese, weighing nearly 1,500 pounds, which was presented to President Jefferson, the presentation being made by Elder John Leland, a noted Baptist divine. Our subject's wife is also a cousin to the wife of President Fillmore, on the Leland side. To the union of our subject and wife eight children have been born, only three of whom are living, they being Louie L., born January 30, 1855; Hattie B., born August 22, 1862, and Helen M., born April 10, 1865. He remained with the above firm until 1848, and the year following became a partner of Mr. Boody with Peter Thatcher, on track laying contracts on the Hudson River and Erie Railroads, they laying the track from New York City to Poughkeepsie, on the Hudson River Railway, and from Fort Deposit to Binghamton on the Erie Railway. In 1850 he formed a partnership with Andros B. Stone, and purchased the patent-right of Howe Truss Bridge for New York and New England. The firm dissolved in 1852. Our subject formed a partnership with A. D. Briggs, of Springfield, Mass., who afterward served for a number of years as railroad commissioner of his State. E. B. Hall and E. F. Starr, under the firm name of Maxwell, Briggs & Co., purchased the Howe Bridge patent for the Southern States, and immediately began



contracting for building bridges in Virginia, Tennessee, Mississippi, Alabama and other Southern States. He located in Knoxville, Tenn., in 1852, and the first bridge he erected was the one across the Tennessee River, at Loudon, Tenn., and has since erected bridges on a large number of railroads in the Southern States. The above firm dissolved in 1855, all the members retiring, and the business was then conducted for several years by our subject alone. In 1857 he entered into a partnership with Thomas H. Callaway and George W. Saulpaw, under the firm name of Maxwell, Saulpaw & Co., and with this firm continued bridge building and masonry until the breaking out of the war. The close of the Rebellion found him in Macon, Ga., where he took the contract of rebuilding the Central Railroad of that State. He continued bridge building until 1872, when he again located in Knoxville, Tenn. In 1873 he engaged in the manufacture of car wheels, organizing the Knoxville Car Wheel Company, of which he was president until 1881, when he disposed of his interests in that company. Since that time he has had charge of the East Tennessee Iron and Coal Company as president, and is also president of the New River Mining Company, of New York, the stockholders of both corporations embracing quite a number of the solid business men of New York, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Georgia and Tennessee. When he came to Knoxville in 1853, he erected large machine shops in that city, and conducted an extensive manufacturing business in the way of bridge material, and subsequently became interested in foundries. This business was successfully conducted until the appearance of Gen. Burnside's army in 1863, when his machine shops, patterns, etc., were destroyed during the siege, for the destruction of which he applied to Congress for damages in the sum of \$270,000, the bill for which is now pending before the Lower House, having on two different occasions passed a second reading before that body. Gen. Burnside, who, as officer in command, had personal knowledge of the destruction of the property, he having the same in his possession as a military necessity at the time, pronounced the claim valid and just. Our subject is a member of the Masonic fraternity, and has had conferred upon him thirty-two different degrees of the Southern jurisdiction, and is a member of St. Omer Commandery, No. 2, Knights Templar, of Macon, Ga., and is well known to Masons of Tennessee and Georgia. He and wife are members of the First Baptist Church of Macon, Ga., and the three daughters are members of the Third Presbyterian Church of Knoxville.

William Gibbs McAdoo was born near Knoxville, Tenn., April 4, 1820. His father was John McAdoo, a native of Jefferson County, Tenn.,

who married Mary A. Gibbs, a native of Knox County, and a descendant of a gallant French soldier in the French and Indian war. The paternal grandfather was of Scotch extraction, and was one of the heroes of King's Mountain. William G. received his early education in the "old field schools," and at the age of fifteen entered Union Academy at Clinton, where he remained two or three years. At the age of eighteen he became principal of that institution, and two years later took charge of Franklin Academy, in Campbell County. From 1842 to 1845 he taught school during the summer, and attended East Tennessee University during the remainder of the year. The next day after his graduation, he was elected to the Legislature from Campbell and Anderson Counties. In the spring of 1846 he enlisted as first lieutenant in Company C, Second Tennessee Volunteers, and served for one year in the Mexican war. In 1847 he went to Columbia, Tenn., and began the study of law under Judge Dillahunt. In due course of time he was admitted to practice, and in 1851 was elected by the Legislature attorney-general of the Second Judicial Circuit. He was afterward re-elected by the people, and served until 1860. In 1862 he removed to Rome, Ga., where he resided until 1877, meanwhile having served as a captain in the Confederate Army, judge of the Twentieth Judicial District of Georgia, and superintendent of schools in Baldwin County, Ga. From the date of his return to Knoxville in 1877 until 1886 he filled the chair of English language and literature in the University of Tennessee. With H. C. White he is the author of an "Elementary Géology of Tennessee." In 1848 he married Miss Annie Horsley, of Columbia, who died in 1853 leaving two daughters: Kate (wife of E. F. Wiley) and Emma. In 1857 he married Mary Faith Floyd, a granddaughter of Gen. John Floyd, and daughter of Gen. Charles R. Floyd, of Camden County, Ga. She is a writer of much ability and grace and is the author of two or three romances and other publications. She also prepared a part of the chapter on literature appearing in the State history of this volume. She had previously married Randolph McDonald, who died in 1854. To this second union have been born three sons and four daughters. They are John F., Caroline B., Rosalie F. (Mrs. J. S. O'Neal), William G., Malcom R., Nona H. and Laura S.

G. C. McBee, farmer and miller, was born in Knox County, Tenn., September 12, 1840. His parents were G. C. and Sarah Bell (Love) McBee. The father was born in Knox County, Tenn., May 19, 1799, and died November 20, 1880. The mother was born in North Carolina, and died in 1870. Our subject received a good education at Strawberry Plains and is a good Greek and Latin scholar. When the late war broke

out he abandoned his studies and enlisted in the Confederate Army as first lieutenant of Company D, Tennessee Infantry. Later he was changed from this position to that of a private in the cavalry, this being made on account of his having the rheumatism. At the close of the war he returned to his native county, and settled on his present homestead in the Fourth District where he has farmed ever since. In 1865, directly after the war, he married Miss N. E. Sawyers, daughter of W. S. Sawyers. Four sons and two daughters were the result of this union, viz.: W. S., born September 10, 1866; J. A., born October 6, 1868; R. L., born June 16, 1871; Sarah B., born November 22, 1873, and G. C., born May 30, 1882. Our subject owns 373 acres of excellent land, and is an enterprising and successful farmer, stock raiser and miller. He is a faithful Democrat in politics.

W. C. McCammon is a native of Knox County, Tenn., born January 5, 1837, son of Samuel and Martha B. (Cowan) McCammon. The father was born in Knox County, Tenn., May 9, 1808, and died at Nashville in 1865. He was by occupation a farmer, and served three terms as sheriff of Knox County. In 1851 he was elected State senator from Knox County and served one term, and in 1865 he was elected by a general State election to represent Knox County in the Legislature. While serving this term he suddenly sickened and died. The mother of our subject was born in Sevier County, Tenn., November 5, 1813, and died at her home in Knox County in 1876. Our subject received a fair education, and taught school for two years. He then engaged in farming, and has made this his lifetime occupation. He chose for his companion through life Miss Eliza Huffaker, daughter of Henry Huffaker. She died in 1875 leaving six children—two sons and four daughters. Previous to this our subject had served from November, 1862, to June, 1864, as a Federal soldier in the civil war. He enlisted as a private in Company B, Third Tennessee Cavalry. December 19, 1862, he was commissioned second lieutenant of Company C, Third Tennessee Cavalry, by Gov. Andrew Johnson, and was also appointed recruiting officer during the war. In 1864 he resigned his commission on account of ill health, and settled at his present homestead in the Twenty-first District of Knox County. In 1867 he was appointed deputy sheriff, and served in this capacity until 1868 when he resigned. In September, 1874, he was again appointed, and served one term under M. D. Swan. He was the nominee of the Democratic party for representative in the fall of 1876. In September, 1882, he was a third time appointed deputy sheriff, and served a term under Homer Gilmore, but refused an appointment for another term. In 1876 he married Miss Joanna E. Randles, daughter of John



Randles, and two sons were the result of this union. Mr. McCammon is the owner of more than 400 acres of land, and is a successful farmer. He is an extensive stock raiser (horses and cattle), and is the owner of some very valuable fine stock.

John N. McCammon, farmer and dairyman, was born near Knoxville, Knox Co., Tenn. He is the son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Montgomery) McCammon. The father of our subject was a prominent man in Knox County politics, and served six years as county sheriff. After being out of office some time he was re-elected to the same position and served one term. He was a man universally respected in his county, and many positions of honor and trust were given to him. He died in 1860, leaving to his family the results of a useful and successful life. Mrs. McCammon is the daughter of James Montgomery, and is now living (1887) with our subject. Both parents were natives of Tennessee. The father having died when our subject was but sixteen years of age the latter received but a limited education. At the close of the late war it became necessary for J. N. to take charge of the home farm, and this involved much responsibility but he managed the work of the farm successfully for three years, at the close of which time he removed to California. Here he made his headquarters for fifteen years while trading in cattle. He then returned to his native State and purchased the old home place which he now owns. It consists of 200 acres of fertile and well improved land situated in the Second District near Knoxville and on the Holston River. The farm contains quantities of fine limestone which the owner has extensively quarried. Mr. McCammon has been a successful farmer, and has been dairying and butchering for several years. He has never married, has never joined the church and has never entered politics, though he is entertaining, charitable, and in politics is a Democrat.

J. A. McCampbell, druggist, is a native of Knoxville, and was reared and educated in that city. In December, 1874, he established his present drug trade in the firm of Lyons & McCampbell until November, 1881, which firm was succeeded by our subject alone. He has built up an extensive retail drug trade, and employs three assistants. His paternal grandfather, Benjamin Bennett McCampbell, came from Virginia to the early settlement of Knox County, and resided here until his death. William H. McCampbell, father of our subject, was born in Knox County, Tenn., and followed merchandising until his death, which occurred in 1884. He was market master of Knoxville at the time of his death. The mother, Martha (Goans) McCampbell, was also a native of Knox County, Tenn., and still resides in Knoxville. Of their family of six children, all living, our subject is the second. He is a good citizen and an excellent business man.

C. M. McClung, senior member of the wholesale hardware firm of C. M. McClung & Co., is a native of St. Louis, Mo., born May 12, 1855, but was reared at Knoxville, Tenn. He graduated at the State University in 1874 and at Yale in 1876, after which he returned to Knoxville, and was in the employ of Cowan, McClung & Co. until he established the present firm in July, 1882. The business has grown until it is now, perhaps, the leading hardware house in Eastern Tennessee. Mr. McClung is a director and treasurer of the Knoxville Water Company, director in the East Tennessee National Bank, also treasurer and trustee of the Lawson McGhee Library. In the year 1881 he was united in marriage with Miss Annie McGhee, daughter of Charles M. McGhee, and a native of Knoxville, to whom two daughters have been born. F. H. McClung, the father of C. M. McClung, is a native of Knoxville, born November 23, 1828, and the grandson of Charles McClung, one of the early pioneers of Knoxville. F. H. is of the wholesale dry goods firm of Cowan, McClung & Co., of this city, and had resided here the greater part of his life, having been, however, engaged in the wholesale dry goods business for a few years in early life in New York and St. Louis. The mother of our subject, Eliza (Mills) McClung, was born June 2, 1833, at St. Louis, Mo., and died September 4, 1881, at Knoxville.

Maj. E. E. McCroskey, secretary and treasurer of the board of education, was born in Sevier County, Tenn., in 1839. His father, David McCroskey, was also a native of that county, and his mother, Elizabeth Rogers, was a daughter of the pioneer Baptist preacher of Sevier County. The father and mother were married in that county, and reared a family of nine children—four sons and five daughters. The mother died in 1864, and the father afterward married a Miss Trew hitt, sister of Judge Trew hitt, of Chattanooga. This marriage resulted in the birth of four children—two sons and two daughters. Grandfather McCroskey was a native of Scotland. He came to America, settled in Virginia, and finally found his way to Tennessee, being among the first settlers. Our subject is the fifth child by the first marriage. He was educated in the common schools and at Mossy Creek College. After graduating at that institution he taught school at Cleveland for some time and then went South. In 1861 he enlisted in H. W. Hilliard's Alabama Legion, and was soon promoted to adjutant on John T. Morgan's staff. Just before the battle of Murfreesboro he was severely wounded. Having sufficiently recovered he was given a military post at Mobile, and promoted to the rank of major. From Mobile he returned to Montgomery, Ala., where he constructed a fortification to withstand the advancing enemy. He participated in the last battle of the war, and near him the

last man who gave his life for the confederacy fell. In 1868 Mr. McCroskey married Miss Ellen R. Chandler, and both he and wife are members of the First Baptist Church. Soon after the war Mr. McCroskey engaged in mercantile pursuits in Knoxville, and in 1872 he went into the coal trade. He has been president, secretary and treasurer of the Standard Coal & Coke Company, being now secretary of the same. In 1882 he was elected secretary and treasurer of the board of education, and has been twice a member of the board of mayor and aldermen. He is a Democrat in politics, and a Mason, having taken the thirty-second degree of that order.

J. S. McDonough, M. D., was born in Knox County, Tenn., October 24, 1830, and is the son of John and Araminta (Scott) McDonough. The father was born May 12, 1803, in the city of Baltimore, and came to Tennessee in 1825, where he engaged in farming. He died November 14, 1874. He was a nephew of Commodore McDonough, who fought the battle of Lake Champlain. The mother was born in Buckingham County, Va., August 24, 1803, and died in March, 1875. Our subject was reared in Knox County, and attended Ewing and Jefferson College in Blount County. He began the study of medicine in 1856 under Dr. B. B. Lenoir, at Lenoir's Station, Tenn., and attended the University of Nashville. In 1860 he graduated from the Atlanta (Ga.) Medical College, and began the practice of medicine at Concord, Tenn., but the Rebellion breaking out he enlisted in the Confederate Army, joining the Sixty-third Regiment of Tennessee Infantry as surgeon, and was serving under Gen. Lee at the surrender at Appomattox. In the year 1867 he married Mary L. Lenoir, a native of Loudon County, Tenn., born April 4, 1844, and the daughter of A. S. and C. F. (Welcker) Lenoir, the mother being a sister of the late Judge James M. Welcker, of the Knoxville bar, and of Judge Albert Welcker, of Cleveland, Tenn. To our subject and wife were born seven children, four of whom are living, viz.: Mary L., J. Albert, Katie W. and Maggie L.; those deceased are Laura Bell, who died at the age of one and a half years; John Henry, who died at the age of four and Fred Lenoir at the age of three and a half years. After the war Dr. McDonough returned to Knoxville, but remained only a few weeks, when he went to Memphis and there practiced his profession for a year and a half. Returning to Knoxville he resumed his practice, continuing up to the present. He and wife and two elder children are members of the Third Presbyterian Church of Knoxville.

Charles M. McGhee, one of Knoxville's most influential citizens, was born in Monroe County, and spent his boyhood on the plantation, after which he took the degree of B. A. at the State University. He owned



the Peoples' Bank at Knoxville for many years, and was vice-president of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad a number of years, being at the time the principal stockholder, and prominently identified with all the transactions of that road. His first marriage was to Isabella M. White, daughter of Hugh A. M. White, who was a nephew of Hugh Lawson White; to this union was born one child, who died in infancy. His first wife dying, Mr. McGhee afterward married her sister, Cornelia H. White, who bore him the following children: Margret W. (now Mrs. Baxter), May Lawson (deceased), Annie (now Mrs. C. M. McClung), Bettie H. (now Mrs. Lieut. Tyson, of the United States Army) and Ellinor W. Mr. McGhee, in memory of his deceased daughter, built and furnished the Lawson McGhee Library at a cost of about \$40,000, donating the same to the city of Knoxville. Our subject has recently made New York City his home, but spends a considerable portion of his time in Knoxville, and is still considered one of the citizens. He has been an active and efficient trustee of the State University, and was largely instrumental in procuring the renewal of that institution after the war. He was a member of the Legislature from Knox County in 1870-71. His father, John McGhee, was an able financier and a large land holder in Monroe County. His mother was the daughter of Charles McClung, and niece of Hugh Lawson White.

Green McLemore, contractor and builder of Knoxville, is the son of Green and Ellen McLemore. The father was a native of North Carolina and the mother of South Carolina. In early life both came to Tennessee and located in Knox County, where they married and passed the remainder of their days. The father was a farmer by occupation. Of their family of ten children four sons and four daughters are now living; all the sons are mechanics. Our subject was born January 26, 1839, in Knox County. He was reared on the farm and educated in the common schools. At the age of twenty he came to Knoxville, and learned the carpenter's trade under W. K. Eckles. Having worked chiefly as journeyman until 1872 he began contracting, and has gradually extended his business since. By his marriage to Miss Sarah O. Keyhill in 1869 he became the father of three sons. In 1880 Mr. Alexander Kelley joined him in the business. In connection with his trade Mr. McLemore is interested in agriculture, and owns a fine farm of 180 acres on the Holston River. Among the better buildings erected by Mr. Kelley and himself are the Hattie House, Girl's High School, First National Bank and the Knoxville Insurance Company's office. Mr. McLemore is a Republican in politics, and one of the county's best citizens.

Hon. James M. Meek. The grandfather of our subject, Adam Meek,

came from Ireland and served throughout the Revolutionary war. About 1780 he located in Jefferson County, Tenn., and built the first residence in that county. He afterward followed surveying in that and adjoining counties until his death. Adam K. Meek, the father of our subject, was born in Jefferson County, and was a captain in the Indian war, being mustered in at Athens, Tenn. He was born in 1798, and has always followed agricultural pursuits. He is now residing at Strawberry Plains. His companion through life, Elizabeth (Childers) Meek, was also a native of Jefferson County, Tenn., and died in February, 1885. Our subject is a native of Jefferson County, born in 1821, and is the eldest of a family of ten children, eight of whom are now living. He graduated at Maryville College in 1850, and was admitted to the bar in his native county in 1852. He then practiced law until his election to the State Legislature in August, 1855. After serving for two years he returned to the practice of his profession, which he continued until his second election to the Legislature in 1861. In 1859 he married Miss Lizzie J. Walker, a native of Hawkins County, to whom three children have been born. In April, 1862, Mr. Meeks was taken prisoner by the Confederate forces, but was released on July 4 of the same year. He was soon after elected attorney-general for the Second Judicial Circuit of Tennessee, and upon the reorganization of the State received the appointment to the same office, serving until 1871, after which he resumed the practice of law. He was a member of the board of directors of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, representing the State from 1866 to 1869, and was interested in railroad transactions; attorney and director, from 1869 to 1883. On March 4 of the latter year he was appointed United States district attorney for the Eastern District of Tennessee, which position he filled until July 4, 1885. He is a director in the Knoxville Fire Insurance Company, and also in the East Tennessee National Bank.

James K. Meek, one of the firm of Meek & Biddle, retail dealers in dry goods, notions, millinery and dress goods, is a native of Jefferson County, Tenn. He came to Knoxville in 1878, and graduated at the State University four years later (1882). He then became connected with the firm of George & Briscoe until the firm of Barton & Meek was established in April, 1885, and this was succeeded by the present firm in September of the same year. Including the millinery and dress making department they employ about twenty assistants. In 1885 Mr. Meek chose for his companion through life Miss Lilly Baker, a native of Knoxville. Our subject is a son of James M. Meek, whose sketch will be found in another part of this work. For a young man, our subject has

shown unusual business ability, and is one of Knoxville's thorough-going, wide-awake men.

A. Metler was born in Canton, Switzerland, December 9, 1826, and came to America in 1854. He found his way to Knoxville, Tenn., without money and without friends. While in the old country he was brought up to the dairy business in the Alps Mountains, and was master of his business. Here he hired out by the month at small wages, and by hard work and economy he managed to save up his earnings, and in three years succeeded in starting a dairy of his own, which he managed with consummate skill and judgment, and in a few years accumulated a considerable amount of money by the sale of milk and the manufacture of cheese. Shortly thereafter he established in the city of Knoxville the butchering business, thus again showing his fine business sense. He soon became the leading man in the business, and was eminently successful. He made money rapidly, and was exceedingly fortunate in his investments. He bought 300 acres of land near the city at low figures, which to-day is very valuable, being worth from \$75,000 to \$100,000. In 1854 he married Miss Waldburghla Frauller, by whom he had five children, three now living—two sons and a daughter. After Mrs. Metler's death our subject married Mrs. Susan Walker, and the result of this union was the birth of two children, only one now living. During the war Mr. Metler was conscripted for the Confederate Army and hired a substitute. In politics he is a Democrat, and in religion a Roman Catholic. His first wife was a Presbyterian, and his present one is a Baptist. He stands deservedly high as a citizen. Financially his credit is good in any of the banks of the city, and he is regarded as one of the most successful business men in the country.

John B. Michael, master mechanic for the East Tennessee division of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, was born in Baltimore, Md., October 3, 1850. When a mere boy both parents died, and he was reared by an uncle. His education was limited to the common schools, but by self application he succeeded in obtaining enough education for all ordinary business transactions. When only fifteen years of age he began railroad service as water boy on a construction train. A sketch of a locomotive that he made fell into the hands of Master Mechanic T. J. Hamer, who at once took John into his office. He afterward served an apprenticeship in the Philadelphia & Erie Railroad shops, and after learning his trade he held the positions, respectively, of fireman, engineer and foreman for different companies until 1885, when he was chosen foreman of the shops at Macon, Ga., for the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, and soon afterward became



master mechanic of the Alabama division of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia. He was also general foreman of the Louisville & Nashville shops at Nashville for five years. In 1886 he was given his present position. Mr. Michael is a self-made man, and has reason to be proud of the fact.

A. H. Mitchell, an enterprising farmer, was born in Hawkins County, Tenn., in 1821. He moved to Monroe County, Ky., in 1855, where he resided four years. He then moved to Knox County, Tenn., and is living there at the present. Mr. Mitchell is a natural born mechanic. When twenty-four years old he worked at the carpenter and cabinet-maker's trade, which he followed until 1855, after which he followed agricultural pursuits. In 1859 he married Miss Parmelia A. Hall, a daughter of William Hall, who is the father of Judge E. T. Hall, of Knoxville. In 1864 Mr. Mitchell engaged in the grocery business with Mr. John Mitchell, the style of firm being A. H. & J. Mitchell, and followed this occupation very successfully for one year. He also traveled very extensively through the United States in his younger days. He owns a good farm of 180 acres located nine miles north of Knoxville, all well improved and well cultivated. Mrs. Mitchell died in 1872, and our subject took for his second wife Miss Eliza Crippen in 1874. She is the daughter of William and Dicy (Tyndle) Crippen. William Cribben was sheriff of Knox County six years, constable ten years, and was a farmer by occupation. Mr. Mitchell is a Democrat in politics, casting his first presidential vote for Zachary Taylor, and his wife is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. He was the fifth of ten children born to John and Martha (Lyon) Mitchell, both of whom were born and raised in Hawkins County, Tenn. The father was of English and the mother of German descent. Mr. Solomon Mitchell, grandfather of our subject, was a soldier in the Revolutionary war, and our subject's father was a soldier in the war of 1812. The latter was justice of the peace of his district for twenty-five years. He was one of the county commissioners while the present courthouse was being built, and held various other offices of the county and district in which he lived. About 1833 he was appointed by the State Legislature as entry-taker of what is now known as "Symm's Survey."

Joseph R. Mitchell, president of the People's Bank, of Knoxville, Tenn., was born at Rogersville, Hawkins Co., Tenn., in 1824. His grandfather, Richard Mitchell, was of Scotch-Irish descent. He was a member of the convention which met at Knoxville, January 11, 1796, and at the age of seventeen was clerk and private secretary of Gov. Blount, by whom he was appointed

county court clerk of Hawkins County in 1790, and held the position until 1815. Richard and his wife united themselves to the Presbyterian Church, and were baptized at Rogersville when at the advanced age of eighty-two and ninety-two years respectively. The parents of our subject, Stokley and Alice G. (Rogers) Mitchell, were natives of Rogersville, where they were married and resided until their deaths in 1861 and 1873 respectively. The father was county court clerk of Hawkins County from 1815 to 1845. He was also clerk of the House of Representatives several terms, and filled the position of cashier and president of the Nashville Bank and the Bank of Tennessee. Our subject is the eldest of a family of six sons and five daughters, nine of whom are still living. He remained in his native place until 1857, then soon after came to Knoxville to accept the position of bookkeeper in the Ocoee Bank, of which he afterward became cashier. This position he filled until 1865, when he established the general brokerage and banking house of J. R. Mitchell & Co., which was merged into the Knoxville Depository, and afterward the People's Bank. In 1845 he wedded Miss Eliza C. Messengill, a native of Grainger County, to whom six sons and seven daughters were born—seven children now living.

John M. Montgomery, farmer, was born August 16, 1835, in Roane County, Tenn., where he grew to manhood. In 1869 he moved to Arkansas, settling near Fort Smith, and afterward moved to Loudon County, Tenn., and from there to Knox County in 1875, where he has since resided. He is the eldest of eight children born to Josiah and Martha M. (Watson) Montgomery. The father was born January 12, 1811, in Roane County, Tenn., where he passed the remainder of his days. He died April 29, 1868. He was a very efficient minister in the Missionary Baptist Church, particularly so as a revivalist and class organizer. The mother of our subject was born May 21, 1811, in Roane County, where she has since lived, and although seventy-six years of age is very healthy and active, but quite deaf. She is a devoted member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. Her parents, John and Martha Watson, came from North Carolina and settled in Roane County at a very early day. Our subject acquired a good practical education at the family fireside, and taught four different sessions of school. October 5, 1862, he enlisted in the Sixty-third Tennessee Infantry, and was for a while sergeant of his company. He was wounded quite severely at the battle of Chickamauga, and this rendered him unfit for duty a short time. He was mustered out in 1865, and returned to Loudon County, where he rented a farm and engaged in agricultural pursuits. This occupation he has since followed. November 28, 1867, he married Miss Mary J. Wilker-

son, who was born May 6, 1845, and who is the daughter of M. W. and Mary E. (Hardin) Wilkerson. To Mr. and Mrs. Montgomery were born these children: Ida Lee, William Austin, Hattie Miller, John Chester, Mary Annie, Martha Elizabeth and Dartha Eva. Mr. and Mrs. Montgomery and three elder children are members of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. In politics Mr. Montgomery is a Democrat, and cast his first presidential vote for John C. Breckinridge. His paternal grandparents, Josiah and Mary (Lewis) Montgomery, came from Virginia early in life, and his grandfather, Josiah Montgomery, was a soldier in the war of 1812.

Mark Morel, farmer of the Eleventh District, was born in Switzerland, and came to America in 1857, settling first at Knoxville. He is the third of five children born to Charles S. and Catherine Morel. Our subject received his education in the common schools of Switzerland, and at the age of sixteen began working for himself, with but the clothes he wore. He first followed farming, afterward blacksmithing, then railroading, then carpentering, and is now engaged in agricultural pursuits again. He is a natural mechanic, being able to make most anything out of wood or iron. Mr. Morel has been remarkably successful as a farm manager, and owns 304 acres of land, well improved, which is located seven miles west of Knoxville. In 1867 he married Miss Susan Ferguson, a daughter of James and Mattie Ann Ferguson, and the result of this union was the birth of seven children: Charles, Louisa, James, Anna, Mary, Sarah and Samuel (deceased). Mr. Morel is a Republican, and a member of the Missionary Baptist Church. April 18, 1862, he enlisted in Company D, Sixth Tennessee Infantry, and served until the close of the war.

J. B. Morris, a successful farmer of the Nineteenth District, and one of seven children born to Joseph and Rachel (Waters) Morris, first saw the light of day July 29, 1827, in Ashe County, N. C. He immigrated to Tennessee with his parents in 1832, and settled in Knox County, where he has since resided. The father of our subject was born in North Carolina, as also was his wife. He was a soldier in the war of 1812, and died in the year 1842, aged fifty-two years. His wife followed him in 1875. Our subject acquired his education mostly after he became grown. When seventeen years of age he apprenticed himself to learn the saddler's trade, which he continued to follow until 1865, after which he engaged in farming. During the late war he assisted considerably in furnishing the Confederate Government with supplies. Mr. Morris began life a poor man, but by industry and good management he has made money rapidly. In the fall of 1864 he married Mrs. Margaret J.



Nelson, formerly Miss Marley, a native of Knox County, and the daughter of John and Elizabeth (Ayers) Marley. Two children were the fruits of our subject's marriage: Joseph Robert and John Dickenson. Mr. Morris is a Democrat in politics, and cast his first presidential vote for Millard Fillmore. He is a Master Mason. His parents were of English descent, and his paternal grandmother lived to the remarkably advanced age of one hundred years, being quite active up to the time of her death. Mr. Morris is the discoverer of the only sure cure for hog cholera now known in the United States. The remedy has been quite severely tested for the past nine years, and has proved eminently successful in all instances.

Hon. John L. Moses (deceased), who was tax attorney for East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, and a prominent resident of Knoxville, was a son of John F. and Mary (Pearson) Moses, both natives of New Hampshire and both of English descent. The father was a wool merchant by occupation, carrying on the business quite extensively. He was a man who stood high in the estimation of the people, as was evinced by the public positions he held. Several times he occupied a seat in the State Legislature, and was one to cast an electoral vote for the last Whig candidate for the presidency. His union with Miss Pearson resulted in the birth of seven children. After her death he married Abbie C. Boyd, who bore him three children. Our subject was born in Exeter, N. H., May 9, 1822, and passed his early life in his native town, surrounded by the best of educational advantages. After attending the Phillips Exeter Academy he went to Waterville College, in that State, and graduated in 1841. He soon after came to Knoxville, and he and his brother, James C., decided to establish a church of the faith of their ancestors. Though both were quite young, and neither a church member, they organized the First Baptist Church in the city, and this church has grown to be one of the strongest churches here. After reading law a short time our subject engaged in journalism for several years. He then followed mercantile pursuits until elected cashier of the Bank of Knoxville. From 1855 Mr. Moses was connected with railroad service as president of Tennessee State Line; secretary, treasurer and superintendent of the Knoxville & Ohio, and was, up to the time of his death, assistant secretary; secretary and treasurer of Coal Creek & New River. For several years he was tax attorney for the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, and was also secretary and treasurer of the Coal Creek Consolidated Coal Company; president of the Tennessee Deaf and Dumb School, having held that position twenty-four years. For a number of years he was judge of the county court, and president of the board of trustees of the University of Tennessee.

In 1847 he married Miss Susan Williams, whose father was an early settler of Knoxville, and commanded a regiment at the battle of Horse Shoe Bend. He was also a United States Senator. By her he became the father of seven children, five now living—four sons and one daughter. Mrs. Moses died in 1877. Both were members of the Baptist Church. Mr. Moses was a Democrat in politics. He was a kind father, an excellent citizen, and his death, which occurred April 2, 1887, was universally regretted.

Thomas L. Moses, principal of the Tennessee Deaf and Dumb School at Knoxville, was born near Knoxville on December 13, 1849, and is the son of Hon. John L. and Susan (Williams) Moses. Our subject was educated at Knoxville and at Exeter (N. H.) High School. Soon after leaving school he became a teacher of the Deaf and Dumb School, and in this capacity continued about ten years. In the year 1871 he took for his companion through life, Miss Katie Teasdale, daughter of Rev. T. C. Teasdale, of Columbus, Miss., and the fruits of this union were three children, two of whom are now living—a son and daughter. In 1883 Mr. Moses was chosen principal of the Deaf and Dumb School, and has filled that position satisfactorily and ably from that time to the present. He was a member of the board of education of the city schools for a period of nine years, and is now a member of the board of directors of the Y. M. C. A. Both he and wife are active workers in the First Baptist Church, he being superintendent of the Sunday-school.

Frank A. Moses, cashier of the People's Bank of Knoxville, was born in Knox County in 1845, and completed his education at the State University in 1861. In May, 1862, he enlisted in the Sixty-third Tennessee Confederate Infantry, and was afterward promoted to the rank of first lieutenant. At the close of the war he returned to Knoxville, and engaged in the hardware trade until 1871. In 1870 he married Miss Elizabeth Mitchell, a native of Hawkins County, and the daughter of Joseph R. Mitchell, whose sketch appears elsewhere in these pages. The fruits of this union were one son and one daughter. In January, 1875, Mr. Moses was elected clerk of the Legislature and House of Representatives, and in the fall of the same year assumed the duties of corresponding clerk of the People's Bank. In May, 1877, he engaged in journalism as business manager of the *Knoxville Tribune*, which position he filled until July, 1880. In the fall of 1877 he was appointed a member of the railroad assessors of Tennessee. In 1881 he returned to the People's Bank as bookkeeper, and in May, 1886, was elected cashier. His parents, James C. and Susan W. (Baker *nee* Park) Moses, were natives of New Hampshire and Tennessee respectively. The father followed journalism from

1838 to 1849, after which he engaged in the hardware trade until his death in 1870. He was one of the trustees of the State University, and for a number of years was president of the board of trustees of the Deaf and Dumb Asylum. He was founder of the First Baptist Church of Knoxville, and was the first member baptized in that faith in Knoxville (1842). The mother is still living. She had three children by a previous marriage, all still living, and our subject is the third of eight children born to her second marriage, six of whom are still living. The paternal grandparents of our subject were of Welsh descent, and the maternal of Scotch-Irish.

John W. Moulden, farmer, son of Maj. William and Nancy (Johnson) Moulden, was born in Jefferson County, Tenn., September 28, 1836. His father, born in Henry County, Va., December 11, 1798, was of English descent, and was quite a prominent citizen of Knox County. He took considerable interest in public affairs, and although he commenced life with no other capital than willing hands, died comparatively wealthy. He drove the first spike in the East Tennessee & Virginia Railroad, in whose incorporation he was a stockholder and director. He was a director in the Tennessee State Bank at Knoxville before the war. He was for a long time justice of the peace, was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and died at his home in Knox County March 24, 1886. The mother of our subject was born in Washington County, Va., February 10, 1800, and was of English descent. She died at her home in Knox County, at the age of eighty-three years. She was also a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and was a most excellent woman. Our subject was educated at Strawberry Plains, Jefferson Co., Tenn., and engaged in farming on the Holston about two miles below Strawberry Plains. In 1860 he married Miss Almeda McMillan, and to them were born six children, only four now living: Belle M. (Mrs. Caldwell); John, who is with McMillan & Treadwell, of Knoxville; Nannie E., who is at home with her father, and Fred T., who is with his sister, Belle, attending school at Strawberry Plains. In 1887 our subject married Miss Anna Lee Boyd of Atlanta, Ga. He is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and a Democrat, although he votes for principle and not for party.

Hon. E. F. Mynatt, one of Knoxville's most promising young lawyers, was born in Knox County, Tenn., February 22, 1858. He secured his education in this county, and at the age of nineteen, commenced reading law with Hon. W. L. Ledgewood, of Knoxville, Tenn., and was admitted to the bar on the day he was twenty-one years old. He practiced his profession alone until the spring of 1887, when he became a member of



the firm of Caldwell & Mynatt. Mr. Mynatt rose rapidly in his profession, and in a very short time, after having been admitted to the bar, took rank among the best lawyers in East Tennessee. His forte is criminal law; he has great power before a jury, and is called all over East Tennessee, in important criminal trials. Mr. Mynatt has never sought political honors, but in 1886 the people of Knox County took him up, and elected him to the Legislature of 1887, where he served with great distinction, making, it is said, one of the ablest representatives Knox County has had since the war. He was faithful to every trust, and looked well to the interest of his people standing upon the floor of the House of Representatives, for five hours' fight against the passage of the revenue bill of 1887, but the bill passed by one vote. Hon. E. F. Mynatt was the youngest man Knox County has elected to represent them in the Legislature, since 1852. Joseph A. Mynatt, the father of our subject, was born in 1828, and has always resided in Knox County, where he followed agricultural pursuits. Melvina (Ally) Mynatt, mother of E. F. Mynatt, is also a native of Knox County. Richard Mynatt the paternal grandfather, came to Knox County in the early settlement of that county. The Mynatt family is among the oldest families of Knox County.

J. C. Mynatt, a farmer of the Seventh District, was born November 4, 1821, on a farm where he has since resided. He is the tenth of eleven children born to John and Frances (Clark) Mynatt. Mrs. Mynatt was the widow of Mr. Gist by whom she had three children: Joshua H. (deceased), Spencer C. (deceased), who was commander of a vessel which was engaged in the battle of Vera Cruz during the Mexican war. Shortly after the battle he took the yellow fever, died, and is buried at Vera Cruz. He was a graduate at West Point, a prominent man and a splendid soldier. His grandfather, Spencer Clack, and brother, John Clack were signers of the first constitution of the State of Tennessee, which was made at Knoxville in 1796. Mrs. Mynatt's third child was Barthella (Mrs. Flint, deceased). Elizabeth Haven, John Mynatt's first wife, bore him eight children. She was born February 7, 1777, and he July 31, 1780, in Virginia. He came with his father to Knox County when seven years of age, and settled in Grainger County, near Clinch Mountain. He died April 23, 1867. All the Mynatts living in the United States are descendants of William Mynatt, who came from England to America before the Revolutionary war. J. C. Mynatt's uncle, William Mynatt, was aid-de-camp under Gen. Cocke during the war of 1812. John N., father of the subject of this sketch, lived with and was supported by his son, J. C. Mynatt. The latter was married to Miss Frances W. Hall

December 1, 1841. She is a daughter of William and Nancy (Nelson) Hall. Her brother, M. L. Hall, was judge of the criminal court sixteen years, and another brother, E. T., was judge of the circuit court eight years. M. L. Hall served as clerk of the circuit court for many years and as clerk of the Federal court for several years. He is now a prominent attorney of Knoxville, as is also his brother, E. T. Hall. Eight children were the result of our subject's marriage: Oliver C., William B., John Hall, Flavius, Josephus, Cynthia F. (deceased), Mark Donel (deceased) and Major Clack. Mr. and Mrs. Hall are members of the Missionary Baptist Church; Mr. Hall joined in February, 1840, and since that time has continued an active Christian worker. Mr. Mynatt has been deacon of the church for about twenty years. He had two sons in the Federal Army, and was a staunch Union man. He began life as a poor man, but by untiring industry and good management accumulated quite a fortune, besides giving his children excellent educational advantages. Mr. Mynatt is a Democrat in politics, and cast his first vote for the Whig candidate of 1844. Mrs. Mynatt's grandfather and mother, Hall, came from North Carolina to Tennessee at a very early day, and her maternal grandparents came from Virginia to Tennessee also at a very early day. All of our subject's ancestors, as far back as they have knowledge, were members of the Baptist Church. J. C.'s father and grandfather each served the Baptist Church of his neighborhood for many years as deacon. Our subject and brother, Dr. B. K. Mynatt, are the only children living of the father's family. The latter, Dr. B. K., is a graduate of the Nashville Medical College and is quite a prominent and successful physician in Rhea County.

J. H. Nave, farmer, was born June 10, 1820, within two miles of where he now resides. He is one of eight children born to John and Mary (Morrison) Nave. John Nave was born in Rockingham County, Va., near Green Brier. His father came to Tennessee at quite an early day, settled first in Blount County, and was a native born German. John Nave was a soldier in the war of 1812 under Gen. Jackson, and was a much respected citizen. Our subject's educational advantages were very limited. At the age of seventeen he began working for himself at \$4 per month. March 23, 1843, he married Miss Margaret Gray, who bore him six children: Mary A. V. (deceased), Andrew H. (a graduate of West Point Military Academy, and is now captain in the regular army located at Houston, Tex.), Susan J. (deceased), Margaret E. (Mrs. Joseph Nelson), Isabella B. (deceased) and Alice C. (deceased). Besides giving his children a farm a piece, our subject owns eighty-nine acres of splendid land seven miles west of Knoxville. All this was accumulated

by his own exertion. Mr. Nave is a Democrat in politics, and a member of the Presbyterian Church. Mrs. Nave died April 29, 1864, aged thirty-seven. She was an earnest worker in the church, and was respected by all. Mr. Nave's grandmother, Mary Marshall, died in Illinois in 1840, aged ninety years.

M. Nelson, senior member of the firm of M. Nelson & Co., wholesale and retail clothiers, of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of that city, and was born in 1817, being the son of Mathew and Martha (Cannon) Nelson. The father was born in Virginia in 1778, and came to Tennessee when a young man. He was elected to represent Roane County in the State Legislature in 1813, and while serving in that body was elected treasurer of East Tennessee, which position he held until 1827, having during that time charge of and the sale of all the public lands of that section of the State, and was made at different times defendant in large land suits. In one instance a rich North Carolina syndicate purchased large tracts of lands in East Tennessee in a fraudulent manner, and Mr. Nelson refused to sign the necessary papers to make good the title. An effort was made to bribe him, but he was too honorable, and an immense amount of litigation followed, in which he came off victorious. The lands were re-sold, and his fees amounted to over \$13,000, which he refused to accept, his reason for so doing being that he had fought the syndicate for a principal, and that, should he accept the fees accruing from the sale of lands he wrested from them, his actions would be construed by them as having been prompted by a desire of gain. In 1845 he was elected, and served two years as treasurer of Tennessee. During his official career he was also engaged in merchandising. He died full of honors in 1853. The mother was born in North Carolina in 1785, and came with her parents to Tennessee in her youth; she died in 18—. Our subject was reared in Knoxville, and educated at the old Knoxville College, which at that time stood on the left side of Gay Street opposite the H— House of to-day. At the age of sixteen years he engaged as clerk in the mercantile house of McClung & Hazen, of Knoxville, which position he held for about five years, and then removed to Pulaski, Tenn., where he became a member of the firm of Morgan & Nelson, merchants. Two years later he returned to Knoxville and engaged in the dry goods business, and in 1875 began dealing in clothing and carpets. He was married in 1855 to R. A. McGauhey, of Athens, Tenn., who was born in 1833, and is the daughter of John McGauhey. To them two sons have been born as follows: M. M., born in 1856, and Hugh B., born in 1868; both of whom are connected with their father in business.

Thomas A. R. Nelson, attorney-general for the district of Knox, is a



native of Washington County, Tenn., born in August, 1848, and at the age of fifteen came to Knox County. He received his education at the university, after which he studied law with his father; was admitted to the bar in 1872, and began the practice of his profession. He was city alderman during 1876-77 after which he received a four years' appointment as commissioner of the claims under the United States Government, and at the expiration of this time resumed his legal practice, which he followed successfully until elected to fill his present office in August, 1886, for a term of eight years. He and two sisters are the surviving members of a family of five children born to Thomas A. R., Sr., and Ann (Stuart) Nelson, natives of Roane and Washington Counties, Tenn. The father was born in 1812, and afterward moved with his parents to Washington County, Tenn. He was married in that county, and soon afterward came to Knox County. He was attorney-general of the First Circuit many years, was presidential elector, was twice a member of Congress, was one of President Johnson's council in his impeachment trial, and was elected to the supreme bench of Tennessee in 1870, which position he resigned in 1872 to resume the practice of law. His wife died in May, 1850, and he afterward married Mary Jones, who is still living, and by whom five children were born, all living. The father was counsel of the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad many years, and died August 24, 1873. He was of Scotch-Irish descent.

D. D. Nicholas, president of the Gem Marble Company at Concord, was born September 10, 1841, at Gomer, Ohio. He is the fourth of five children born to James and Mary (Jones) Nicholas. The father was born September 10, 1810, in Butler County, Ohio. In 1833 he moved to Allen County, Ohio, where he still resides. He was justice of the peace of the district where he resides for fifty-three years, and is still holding the office. He was a son of James Nicholas, a native of Cardingshire, Wales, who came to America in 1797, settling first in Beula, Penn., but afterward moved to Ohio in 1800, and settled in Butler County of that State. The mother of our subject was born in Montgomeryshire, North Wales, in 1810, and came to America in 1817, settling in Butler County, Ohio. Our subject received his education in the common schools of Allen County, Ohio, also at Lebanon (Ohio) Normal School, and Nelson's Business College, Cincinnati, Ohio. In 1867 he was elected county surveyor of Allen County, Ohio, and held that office twelve years. He was elected city engineer of Lima, Ohio, in 1868, and held that office up to 1882. Mr. Nicholas, with several other gentlemen, all of Ohio, formed a partnership under the name of The Lima & East Tennessee Marble Company, with Mr. R. Mehaffey, president, of the Mer-

chant's National Bank, of Lima, Ohio, and D. D. Nicholas as general superintendent. From a small beginning they increased the average capacity to many car loads per month, shipping marble to all parts of the country. The quarry produces some of the finest marble in the country. In 1878 Mr. Nicholas married Miss Flora E. Cunningham, of Lima, Ohio, the daughter of James and Martha (Kennedy) Cunningham. To Mr. and Mrs. Nicholas were born two children: Nellie and Mary. In 1885 the Gem Marble Company was organized, with D. D. Nicholas as president. From a beginning the Gem Marble Company has increased, until their present monthly capacity averages twenty car loads. Mr. Nicholas is also connected with two other marble companies, known as the Buckeye Marble Company, of which he is president and director, and the National Marble Company. He is prominently connected with several other of the most substantial business firms of Ohio and Tennessee. Mr. and Mrs. Nicholas are members of the Presbyterian Church, and Mr. Nicholas is a Democrat in politics. He was candidate for the State Legislature from Knox County, Tenn., on the Democratic ticket in 1886, and helped cut down the usual majority of 1,700, to something less than 1,000. In 1862 Mr. Nicholas enlisted in Company F, One Hundred and Eighteenth Ohio Volunteer Infantry, and served until the close of the war. He was wounded at the battle of Resaca, and excepting the time lost during the healing of his wound, was in all the battles and severe skirmishes in which his regiment took part.

James O'Conner, the leading saddler and harness manufacturer of Knoxville, was born January 27, 1835, at Halifax C. H., Va. His father, John O'Conner, was born in Virginia, where he died in 1854, being seventy-two years of age. He was a wheelwright by trade, and was a soldier in the war of 1812. The mother of our subject, Rebecca (Powell) O'Conner, was also born in Virginia, and died there in 1882, being over eighty years of age. Of their family of eleven children, five are now living—four sons and one daughter. Grandfather O'Conner was a native of the Emerald Isle, and came to America soon after the Revolutionary war. Our subject was educated in the old field schools, and at the age of eighteen went to Lynchburg, Va. to learn his trade. During the war he was purchasing agent, in his line, for the Confederate Government, traveling over a principal part of the South. In 1868 he began his present business in Knoxville, commencing as a day laborer he gradually arose until now he runs an extensive establishment requiring from 75 to 125 hands. In 1872 he married Miss Mary S. Price, a native of the same village as himself. Three children were the result of this union—two sons and one daughter. Mr. O'Conner is a Democrat in politics, and he and

wife are members of the First Baptist Church. He is a reliable and prominent man, and is well respected by all who know him.

Ogden Bros. & Co., booksellers, stationers, printers and binders, have their business situated at 145 and 147 Gay Street, Knoxville, Tenn. The firm of Ogden Bros. was established about 1871, and existed until 1883, when it was succeeded by Ogden Bros. & Rule. It thus continued for two years, when it merged into the present firm, which consists of the two Ogden brothers, S. R. and Alfred, T. H. Robinson and Samuel Hensell. The Ogden brothers are natives of Wellington, Ohio. S. R. came to Knoxville in 1871, and established the business of which he has since been the principal. Alfred Ogden is now a resident of Brooklyn, N. Y. Mr. Robinson is a native of England, where he received his education. He came to Knoxville in 1883 and associated himself with the Ogdens. Mr. Hensell came to Knoxville from West Virginia about 1875, and accepted a clerkship with the firm of which he became a member April 1, 1886. The firm employs about thirty assistants, and keeps one traveling salesman regularly on the road. The amount of business transacted annually is about \$100,000. They furnish all the stationery supplies for the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, and also for the K. of H., delivering the blank books, stationery, etc., for the above named order at St. Louis, Mo.

R. G. Osborn is a woodworkman by trade, and for many years has been an employe of Burr & Terry. of this city. He became a member of the U. O. of G. C. soon after the organization of the order in Knoxville, and is now treasurer of Hope Commandery, No. 2, member of the finance committee of the Grand Commandery, and member of the committee on laws and grievances of the Supreme Commandery. He was born in Monroe County, Tenn., in 1831, but has resided in Knoxville since infancy. December 27, 1855, he married Miss Sarah J. Beal, a native of Rogersville, Tenn. His father, James Osborn, was a native of Virginia, born in 1799, and came to Tennessee when fifteen years of age. He located a few years after marriage in Monroe County, after which he came to Knox County, where he died in 1877. The mother, Sabella (Helsley) Osborn, was a native of Greene County, Tenn. She was born in 1804, and is still living in Knoxville. Our subject is the fourth of eleven children born to his parents, all living with the exception of one sister.

John F. Parker, farmer of the Third Civil District of Knox County, Tenn., is a native of that county, born in 1842, and the son of F. S. and Mary B. (Coker) Parker. The father was a native of North Carolina, where he was born in 1811. He came to Tennessee when a young



man and located in Knox County, where he followed farming until his death, which occurred about 1857. The mother was a native of Tennessee, born in 1817, and is a member of the Baptist Church. She is now residing with her son, whose farm is situated six and one-half miles from Knoxville. Our subject was reared on the farm, and attended Spring Place Academy. He has made a decided success of farming, which occupation he has followed all his life, and is regarded as one of the substantial and enterprising men of the district. He was married in 1871 to Miss P. C. Ross, who presented him with one child, H. D., who was born in 1873. The mother died in 1877, and in 1879 Mr. Parker married Miss Jennie Roberts, of Knox County, who was born in 1861. The fruits of this union were three children, viz.: Howard R., born in 1880; Loyd C., born in 1882, and Hugh F., born in 1885. Both Mr. and Mrs. Parker are members of the Spring Place Baptist Church.

Col. M. L. Patterson was born in Stokes County, N. C., in Oct., 1827, and was reared on a farm. In his seventeenth year (1844) he had the misfortune to lose his left arm by the first portable threshing machine that came to his native State. In 1847 he moved to Washington County, Tenn., where he attended the common schools a few months. He then completed his education at Clear Springs Academy, and taught school about three years in Washington and adjoining counties. In 1853 he went West and spent two years. He then returned to Tennessee, and filled two terms as circuit court clerk of Greene County. Soon after the commencement of the war he acted as captain and commissary officer of Gen. Spears' brigade, but on the organization of the Fourth Tennessee Infantry he was elected first lieutenant and regimental quartermaster, from which he was promoted to major and then to lieutenant colonel, serving until March, 1865, when he resigned and accepted the appointment as clerk of the supreme court for the Eastern Division of Tennessee, which he held until September, 1870. In 1866 he married Miss Nettie E. Slemons, a native of Paris, Ill., to whom two children have been born: Edgar and Orton. Edgar died in his tenth year. In October, 1870, he was appointed clerk and master of the chancery court, at Knoxville, and reappointed in 1876, serving until October, 1882. He was the youngest of nine children, three of whom are living, born to James and Mary M. Patterson, both natives of North Carolina. The father remained in his native State until 1861, when he moved to Indiana, and there died in 1869. He was a participant in the war of 1812, and at the time of his death was in his eighty-sixth year. His wife died in 1857.

A. C. Payne was born in Knox County, Tenn., March 28, 1837, and is of English and Dutch descent. He received a limited education, and early in life turned his attention to farming. At the breaking out of the late war he left home, went to Kentucky, and here offered his services to the Federal Government. On account of a deformed hand he was rejected. He then went to Nashville, Tenn., where he was employed by a sutler, and remained at this place until February, 1865, when he moved to Pulaski, Giles Co., Tenn., and was at that point when the war closed. He then came to Knox County, Tenn., and in 1865 formed a partnership with E. W. D. Wrinkle in mercantile pursuits. In 1874 our subject married Miss Susan Slatery, daughter of John Slatery. Four children were the result of this union, only one now living, named Laura; she was born January 23, 1877. Mr. Payne followed mercantile pursuits until 1875, when he and his partner, in connection with this, also engaged in farming. They now own 375 acres of Knox County land, and have it well improved. Mr. Payne is a Republican in politics, and a good citizen.

R. S. Payne, president of the East Tennessee National Bank, a native of Davidson County, Tenn., was born in 1844. He was reared and educated in Davidson County, and at the commencement of the war enlisted in the Second Tennessee Infantry, with which he served until 1863, when he was placed on Gen. Morgan's staff, but at the death of Morgan he was placed on Breckinridge's staff, a short time after which he acted as first lieutenant of Capt. Gracey's artillery. He was engaged in the wholesale hat trade in New York City from 1866 to 1868, then located at Knoxville in the same trade, which he continued until 1885, since which time he has been a member of the firm, McTeers, Payne, Burger & Hood. In 1879 he married Miss Bettie Dismukes, a native of Davidson County, to whom three sons and one daughter have been born. Mr. Payne was elected mayor of Knoxville in 1882, and served about one year. He was elected director and vice-president of the East Tennessee National Bank shortly after its organization, and April 14, 1884, he was elected president, which position he still fills. He is a director in the Knoxville Gas Light Company, and stockholder in the Knoxville Woolen Mills, East Tennessee Insurance Company, Island Home Insurance Company, and has taken an active part in all worthy enterprises for the upbuilding of Knoxville. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity. R. S. Payne (Sr.) and Sarah C. (Lewis) Payne, the parents of our subject, were natives of Davidson County, Tenn., and North Carolina respectively. They were married in Sumner County, Tenn., and the father followed merchandising in Nashville and Springfield until his death at the

latter place. The mother's death occurred in Sumner County. Our subject was the second of the family, which consisted of himself and three sisters, all deceased but himself.

W. H. B. Prater, farmer of the Eleventh District, was born July 4, 1842, in Blount County, Tenn. He is the second of four children born to William and Mary Blair (Leeper) Prater. The father was born July 22, 1811, in Roane (now Loudon) County, Tenn. He was a very enthusiastic farmer, as well as a very enterprising and successful one. He was killed by being thrown from a horse. Benjamin Prater, grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was born and reared near Lynchburg, Va., and afterward moved to North Carolina, and from there to Tennessee, settling on French Broad River, where he married Miss Nancy Lane. He began life by splitting rails, and by his remarkable energy, enterprise and excellent practical ability accumulated quite a fortune. He and wife were of Scotch descent. The mother of our subject was born August 7, 1815, and is the daughter of Hugh B. and Malinda (Saunders) Leeper, natives of Pennsylvania and Georgia respectively. She is still living, is quite active, and enjoys excellent health. She has a remarkably good memory for dates and historical facts, reads considerable, and carries on quite an extensive correspondence. After the death of her husband she married John W. Lee, a native of Virginia, and a relative of Gen. Robert E. Lee. Our subject secured his education at Knoxville University, at the University of Lexington, Ky., and Ewing and Jefferson College. He enlisted in Hugh L. McClung's battery in the spring of 1862, and was discharged at Loudon in 1863. He was in part of the siege at Vicksburg, Miss., and took part in all the battles and severe skirmishes in which his regiment was engaged. He married Miss M. G. Lee in 1867. She was born August 6, 1850, and is the daughter of John W. and Elizabeth (Akers) Lee. The result of our subject's marriage was the birth of seven children: Mary Ellen, William Walter, Hugh Leeper, James Gaines, Roddy Clifford, Ernest and Bessie Lee. Mrs. Prater died June 16, 1886. She was a member of the Presbyterian Church. Mr. Prater has always followed agricultural pursuits. He now owns a fine farm of 700 acres of land, on the Kingston Pike, and 100 in Blount County. He is a Democrat in politics, and cast his first vote for Horace Greeley.

G. W. Prater, farmer, was born September 15, 1846, in Blount County, Tenn., and is the third of four children born to William and Mary B. (Leeper) Prater. The father was born July 22, 1811, in Roane County, Tenn., where he grew to manhood. When twenty-seven years of age he moved to Blount County, Tenn., where he followed



the occupation of a farmer and trader, and where he accumulated considerable property. He was colonel of the State Militia, and was a man highly respected by all. He was passionately fond of stock raising and trading, loved company, and delighted in fishing and hunting. The mother was born in Shelby County, Tenn., August 7, 1815, and moved with her parents to Blount County, where she was reared and married; she is still living. Our subject received a fair education in the common schools of Blount County, and subsequently attended Union and Jefferson College. In 1863 he went to Kentucky, and located near Lexington. Later he came back to Blount County, where he remained until 1868, and then removed to Knox County. In the fall of 1869 he removed to California, but in the fall of 1870 returned to Knox County, where he has since resided. He received some property from his father, but the late war and the freshet of 1867 destroyed about all he then had. He now owns 670 acres of good land. October 10, 1872, Miss Elizabeth Brooks became his wife. She was born September 23, 1850, and is a daughter of Gen. James A. and Margaret A. (McMillen) Brooks. To Mr. and Mrs. Prater were born seven children: Hattie W., Tracy W., Mary B., Joseph B., George W., Frederick B. and Bob. Mr. and Mrs. Prater are members of the Southern Presbyterian Church, he being a deacon of the same. He is a Democrat in politics. He began life as a stock dealer, and followed this business until 1863. From that date until 1865 he handled goods from Nashville to Lexington, Ky., and from 1865 to the present has cultivated the soil.

A. S. Prosser, attorney at law, was born in Pennsylvania, December 4, 1838, and reared on a farm until fifteen years of age. He then attended the public schools of Johnstown, Penn., where he received his education, after which he moved to Illinois. April 19, 1861, he enlisted in the Tenth Illinois Infantry, with which he served in the commissary department until 1864, at which date he was transferred to the Second Tennessee United States Cavalry, as first lieutenant. He was mustered out July 9, 1865, at Nashville, and remained there until February, 1866, after which he located at Knoxville, and entered the law firm of Maynard & Washburn, which title was afterward changed to Washburn & Prosser, and continued as such until January, 1870, since which time he has practiced alone, and is one of the leading members of the bar. He is a director in the Central Guarantee Life Association, and a stockholder in the Knoxville Gas Company. In 1869 he was attorney-general, *pro tem.*, of the State. In 1875 he married Lizzie, daughter of Judge George Brown, a native of Monroe County, to whom one child—Brown, has been

born. Our subject is the third of a family of four sons, all still living, born to David and Rachel (Williams) Prosser, natives of Wales, where they were married. They came to America in 1832, and located near Harrisburg, Penn., where they remained until 1837, after which they moved to Johnstown. The mother died in 1842, and the father afterward married Mariah Kenton, a native of Bedford County, Penn., to whom eight children were born (two deceased). The father of our subject was the first man to open out a coal bed in western Pennsylvania. His death occurred in November, 1884. T. E. Prosser, M. D., brother of A. S. Prosser (our subject), is one of the young physicians of Knoxville. He is a native of Pennsylvania, and attended the high school of Johnstown. In 1883 he began the study of medicine, and in 1884 entered Bellevue Hospital Medical College, at New York City, from which he graduated in 1886. He returned to Johnstown, Penn., where he practiced his profession until he removed to Knoxville, Tenn. He is a medical director of the Central Guarantee Life Association, of Knoxville, and is a young physician of rare promise.

Dr. James Gettys McGready Ramsey, was born in Knox County, Tenn., on March 25, 1797. His paternal grandfather was Reynolds Ramsey, who, with his parents, came from Scotland. On the passage across the ocean the mother was drowned. The remainder of the family settled at New Castle, Del. Reynolds Ramsey married Naomi Alexander and located on Marsh Creek, in York County, Penn. They had three or four sons and one daughter. The eldest son, Francis A., was born May 31, 1764. Early in life he came west, stopping in Washington County, N. C. Soon after he came to Tennessee, took an active part in forming the State of Franklin, and became one of the leading actors in those troublous times. On April 7, 1789, he married Peggy Alexander, of Mecklenburg, County, N. C., and settled on Little Loudon Creek, where, on March 26, 1791, their first son, William B. A., was born. They then removed to Knox County, where three more sons: J. M. A., Samuel G. and J. G. M., were born. In July, 1805, the mother died, and the next year Col. Ramsey married Mrs. Ann Fleming. She also preceded him to the grave, and he married Mrs. Margaret Humes in 1820. He died November 13, 1820. The subject of this sketch received the rudiments of an education from a private teacher, and in 1809, with his brother William, was sent to the Ebenezer Academy, where they remained until 1814. They were then sent to Washington College, where they graduated. In 1817 James entered the office of Dr. Joseph C. Strong, of Knoxville, and two years later he entered the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania. On August 1, 1820,

he opened an office in Knoxville, and on the 1st of March, following, he married Peggy Barton, daughter of Capt. John and Hannah Crozier. He continued to live at Knoxville until 1823, when he removed to the Forks, where he named his home Mecklenburg. From that time until the war, although actively engaged in his profession, he was prominently identified with railroad and banking enterprises, and found time to prepare his history of Tennessee. He was a man of great energy and activity, both mental and physical. During the war he was among the most extreme secessionists. Upon the Federal occupation of East Tennessee his house, with all its contents, was burned, and he was compelled to seek safety within the Confederate line. With his wife he remained in North Carolina until 1870, when he returned to Knoxville, where he died in 1884. Mrs. Ramsey, a most estimable and intelligent lady, is still living, at the advanced age of eighty-five years. Twelve children were born to them, only six of whom are now living. William W. died in California during the gold excitement there. Arthur C. was mortally wounded at the battle of Piedmont, during the war. Two daughters also died during the war. John C. died since the war. Those living are Frank A., Robert M., J. G. M., Mrs. Davidson Alexander, Mrs. E. A. R. Breck and Mrs. M. J. Dickson.

Maj. Robert B. Reynolds, farmer of the Twelfth District, was born November 11, 1811, on Flat Creek, Knox Co., Tenn., and is the third of eight children born to John and Barbara W. (Frazier) Reynolds. John Reynolds was a native of Ireland, and came to America with his father when ten years of age. The father settled first in Harrisburg, Penn., and three years later moved to Hawkins County, Tenn., where he remained one year; he then moved to Knox County, and here died. John Reynolds was major of a battalion under Gen. James White in the Creek Indian war of 1812, and served in many campaigns against the Indians prior to that year. He lost his health from exposure during this war, and was an invalid sixteen years. He died in 1835, aged sixty-four years. Our subject acquired a good English education in the common schools and under private tutors. When twenty-two he studied law under George W. Churchwell, of Knoxville; was admitted to the bar, and in a short time gained quite a reputation as an able lawyer and jurist. He was elected attorney-general by the Legislature in 1839, having jurisdiction over six counties, and held this office six years. In 1846 he was appointed quartermaster by President J. K. Polk, which position he held about eight months, and then was promoted to the position of paymaster with the rank of major. At the close of the Mexican war he was reappointed paymaster for the regular army, and held this office until 1861, when he



resigned. He was then appointed to the same position in the Confederate Army with the same rank, but did not accept the position. After the close of the war he spent four years in Virginia, Illinois, Missouri, and then returned to Knox County, where he has followed agricultural pursuits. He owns a good farm of 230 acres well improved and well cultivated, and situated five miles west of Knoxville. In 1875 he married Miss Mary Kennedy, daughter of George B. and Myra J. Kennedy, who bore him five children: Mary B., Robert B., John P., Ida L. and Claude E. Mr. Reynolds is a Democrat in politics. His wife is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

Charles E. Ristine, M. D., physician of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Abingdon, Va., in December, 1845, and is the son of J. C. and Susan (Elliott) Ristine, the former being a native of New Jersey, and the latter of Virginia. The father was born in 1810, and was a coach maker by trade. The mother was born in 1811 and died in 1878. Our subject was reared in Knoxville, and acquired his early education at the East Tennessee University. He began the study of medicine in 1866 under Dr. L. L. Coleman at Nashville, Tenn., and in 1867-68 attended the old University at Nashville. He next attended the University of Pennsylvania at Philadelphia, from which institution he graduated in 1880. The same year he married Mary Alice Peach, a native of Nashville, who died in 1875. In 1880 he married Ella McKinney, of Nashville, who was born in 1856. To this union one child was born, who is now six years of age. Both our subject and wife are members of the Methodist Church South. After marriage he practiced for one year at Coal Creek, Anderson Co., Tenn., and then for eleven years in Nashville, three years of which time he was professor of physiology in the medical department of the University of Tennessee. He next removed to Knoxville, where he has since resided, practicing his profession with success. He is a member of the Knox County and State Medical Societies.

Russell H. Roberts (deceased) was born on Big Flat Creek, Knox County, Tenn., October 22, 1823, and during his life was one of the enterprising and successful farmers of the Third Civil District, of that county. He was the son of Maj. Andrew and Jane (Kelley) Roberts. The father was a native Tennessean, born in 1796, and served as major of the militia under Gen. Jackson during the war of 1812. He died in 1860. He was the son of Henry Roberts, who immigrated to Tennessee at an early date. The mother of our subject was born February 18, 1801, and was the daughter of Joseph and — (Woods) Kelley, natives of Virginia; she died in 1876. The subject of this sketch was reared on the farm, attended the common district schools, and followed farming as an occu-

pation. He married Nancy Meek, of Knox County, March 3, 1846, who was born December 1, 1824, and who is the daughter of Joseph and Rebecca Meek. Joseph Meek was a native of Knox County, Tenn., born June 1, 1788, and died October 14, 1851. He was a soldier in the war of 1812, and was the son of John and Jane (McCutcheon) Meek, both natives of Virginia, who were married June 15, 1770. John Meek was the son of James and Ann Meek, who had six children as follows: Damie, Mary, John, Samuel, Elizabeth and Martha. Rebecca Meek, mother of Mrs. Roberts, was born in Knox County May 7, 1792, and died April 19, 1870. She was the daughter of Col. John and Rebecca (Crawford) Sawyers. John Sawyers was an officer of the Revolutionary war. Rebecca (Crawford) Sawyer's parents were massacred by the Indians. Our subject was a successful farmer, and a member of Washington Presbyterian Church, of which he was a deacon. He died April 9, 1874. To the union of our subject and wife eleven children were born, five of whom are dead, as follows: Joseph A., born January 21, 1847, died August 10, 1881; Henrietta E., born December 3, 1848, died October 10, 1874; Rebecca J., born September 19, 1850 (now Mrs. Jacob Slair, of Knox County); Narcissa R., born December 27, 1852, and died April 12, 1861; John B., born February 27, 1855, who was married August 29, 1883, and is now living with his mother; William F., born December 7, 1856, now of Kansas; Henry L., born November 25, 1858; Gains S., born November 3, 1860, now a teacher at New Market Academy, Tennessee; Ellen C., born October 25, 1862, died May 30, 1880; Robert L., born May 17, 1865, now of Kansas, and an infant, born in 1868, and died same day of birth unnamed. Mrs. Roberts is a member of the Washington Presbyterian Church, of which all her children are also members and her son, John, an elder.

P. A. Roberts, of the firm of Roberts & Bros., liverymen, of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Knox County, born July 13, 1833, and the son of Henry G. and Rebecca (Harris) Roberts, both natives of Tennessee. The father was born in 1808, and followed farming successfully during life. He died in 1864, leaving a name noted for honesty and industry. The mother was born in 1809, and is now living in Knox County. Our subject was reared on the farm, and acquired his education in the neighboring schools, finishing the same at Walnut Grove Academy, in the Fourth Civil District. He removed to Chester, S. C., in 1860, where he engaged in the livery and sale business. In December, 1861, he returned to Knoxville, and on the 15th of that month enlisted in the Confederate Army, joining Company D, Second Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry, organized at Cumberland Gap. He was

with the regiment at the battles of Fincastle, Tenn., Stephensville, Ky., Richmond, Ky., and was then with others detached on special duty and sent to Tennessee. Returning to Kentucky, he participated in the fight at Perryville. He was at Chickamauga, and in the retreat to Atlanta, Ga. He was mustered out of service at Sugar Creek Church, North Carolina, in May, 1864, and then returned to Chester, S. C., where he entered the livery and sale business, which he continued for seven years. He next removed to Greene County, Tenn., where he remained for three years, and again returned to South Carolina. Later he removed to Knoxville, opened his present business, and has been a resident of that city ever since. He became a member of the Felix K. Zollicoffer Camp, No. 3, Confederate Veterans of Knoxville, in 1886, of which he served as officer of the day. He is an extensive dealer in stock, and is regarded as one of the substantial citizens of Knoxville.

James Rodgers, M. D., one of the leading and the oldest practicing physician of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in that city July 2, 1818. He is the son of Thomas and Annie (Patton) Rodgers, both of whom are natives of East Tennessee, the former of Washington County, and the latter of Knox County. The father was a useful mechanic, living an honorable life, and dying in the year 1870. The mother, a most worthy woman, died about the year 1821, leaving our subject, an infant of tender age, to the mercy of the world. Reared and educated in the city of Knoxville, our subject completed his education in the University of Tennessee, and in the year 1840 began the study of medicine under the direction of Dr. J. Morrow, of Knoxville, and during 1842-43 took lecture courses in the medical department of Transylvania University, at Lexington, Ky. Thereupon he returned to Knoxville, began practicing his profession, and has thus continued until the present. He served several times as president of the East Tennessee Medical Society (now the Knox County Medical Society), and is a member of the American Medical Association and the American Public Health Association. He is also a member of the East Tennessee Lodge, No. 34, I. O. O. F., and served as Grand Master of the State. In 1870 the University of Tennessee voluntarily conferred upon him the degree of M. D. In 1843 he was united in marriage to Miss Rosina, daughter of Daniel McMullen, the latter a native of Ireland. This lady was born in Knoxville in the year 1830, and has presented her husband with ten children, nine of whom are yet living, as follows: Thomas, Isabella, James, Samuel R., Charles E., Anna, Wallace D., Hugh M. and Lillie. Our subject and wife are members of the Second Presbyterian Church, of which he is an elder.

Dr. W. A. Rodgers, practicing physician of Knox County, Tenn.,



merchant of Graveston and farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., August 30, 1820. He is the son of John and Rebecca (Patton) Rodgers, both natives of Virginia, and of Scotch and English descent respectively. Our subject received his primary education in the common schools, and subsequently attended the Knoxville schools. About 1840 he began the study of medicine, and in 1843 he began practicing in McMinn County, where he continued two years. He then removed and located near Graveston, Knox Co., Tenn., where he continued the practice of his profession up to the breaking out of the late war. November 4, 1847, he married Miss Ann Clapp, daughter of Daniel Clapp, and to this marriage were born two sons, and a daughter named Margaret, who is deceased. The sons are named Samuel and John. In August, 1861, our subject became assistant surgeon in the First Tennessee Regiment, and later was promoted to surgeon of the Third Tennessee Regiment. After the war he returned to his home at Graveston, where, in connection with farming and mercantile pursuits, he has practiced his profession ever since. He has a farm of 175 acres of well improved land in Knox County, and is an excellent citizen. Our subject was appointed examining surgeon for the pension department at Knoxville. He is a Republican in politics.

L. H. Rogan, assistant superintendent and one of the directors of the Knoxville Foundry and Machine Company, is a native of Washington County, Va.; was born in 1819, and is the son of Daniel and Catherine (Crawford) Rogan. The father was a native of Ireland, and the mother of Pennsylvania. Our subject was reared in Sullivan County, Tenn., and acquired his education at the schools of that county. He came to Knoxville in 1858, engaged in the foundry and machine business, and in 1870 founded the business of which he is now assistant superintendent and director. The firm at that time being L. H. Rogan & Co. was next Rogan & Kelley, and in 1878 became incorporated under the above name. He was married in 1836 to Margret Cloud, a native of Tennessee, who was born in about 1818, and died in 1877. To the above union four children were born, three of whom are living. In 1880 our subject married Nancy Trout, a native of Knox County, who was born in about 1844. He is a member of the Presbyterian Church.

Thomas M. Rolen, of the firm of Rolen & Hill, Co-operative Stove Company, of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Knox County, Tenn., December 3, 1844, and is the son of George and Hila (Clawson) Rolen. The father was born in Virginia in 1812, came to Tennessee when a boy, and is at present a farmer of Knox County, Tenn. The mother was born in North Carolina in 1822, and both she and her husband were members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Our subject was reared

on the farm and attended the neighborhood schools. In the spring of 1863 he left home to avoid the Confederate conscript law; went with his brother on foot and in secret to Somerset, Ky., where he joined the First East Tennessee Scouts, under the command of Maj. John Black. That organization being unable to secure recognition under that name by the Federal government, it was subsequently mustered into service in June, 1863, as the Eleventh East Tennessee Cavalry Regiment, United States Troops, our subject being a member of Company C. In March, 1865, the Eleventh and Ninth Cavalry Regiments were consolidated at Camp Contonement Springs, Tenn., and he became a member of Company I, of the Ninth Cavalry. In February, 1864, he was captured at Camp Wiremon, Lee County, Va., was taken to Richmond, Va., and held as a prisoner of war for some time, in Castle Thunder and Belle Island, and after some time he was exchanged for and returned to his command at Cumberland Gap; was mustered out of the service at Knoxville, Tenn., September 5, 1865, and remained on the farm until the fall of 1867, when he became traveling agent for Cruze & Adney, Knoxville, Tenn., manufacturers of stoves and tinware, and traveled in this capacity until the fall of 1878, when he became a member of the firm of Havey, Rolan & Co., manufacturers of stoves and tinware. In 1880 the firm changing to Rolan, Sevy & Co., in 1887 the firm changing to Rolan & Hill, Co-operative Stove Co. Mr. Rolan is a member of Ed. Maynard Post, No. 14, G. A. R., of Knoxville, and of East Tennessee Lodge, No. 34, I. O. O. F. On June 3 he married Miss Carrie Sparkes, a native of Tennessee, born in 1852, and the daughter of Jacob Sparkes. To this union were born three children. Mr. Rolan is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and his wife is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

M. L. Ross, president of the Chamber of Commerce, vice-president of the Mechanics' National Bank, and senior member of the wholesale grocery firm of M. L. Ross & Co., is a young man thirty-six years of age, a native of Anderson County, Tenn., and one of two survivors of a family of three children born to James and Mary Martin Ross. The father was a native of Virginia, of Scottish descent, and prior to the marriage to the mother of our subject was united in marriage to a Miss Slover, who bore him five children, two of whom are now living, viz.: John S. and G. W. Ross. After her death he was married to Miss Mary Martin, who still survives him. He was an officer under Col. Kirkpatrick during the war of 1812, and afterward followed merchandising for upward of fifty years. He died in 1869. He was frequently in the Legislature and State Senate for ten or twelve consecutive terms. He was an intimate and warm friend of John Bell, Zollicoffer, James K.

Polk and Andrew Johnson. The mother of our subject is a native of Roane County, Tenn., and now resides in Knoxville. M. L. Ross secured only a fair education at Emory and Henry College, Virginia, having to leave the college on account of the death of his father in 1869. Taking charge of a store in Anderson County, he managed it successfully for a few years, but possessed of indomitable energy he sought out a larger field, and in 1871 came to Knoxville, where he formed a co-partnership with Maj. D. A. Carpenter to carry on the wholesale grocery business under the firm name of Carpenter & Ross, who did a prosperous business until 1879, when the firm was changed to its present style of M. L. Ross & Co., who have built up an extensive trade in five or six States. Mr. Ross is commonly called Martin, is a director in the Knoxville Car Wheel Company, Knoxville Fire Insurance Company, the Protection Fire Insurance Company, Knoxville Street Railroad Company, Knoxville Provident Company, and Knoxville & Western Railroad Company, also a Knight Templar. In 1870 he married Miss Ellen Carey, daughter of Hon. William Carey, of Caryville, Campbell Co., Tenn., to whom three children have been born, two now living: Mary Martin and William Carey Ross.

Michael F. Rourke, plumber and dealer in steam heating apparatus and gas fixtures, Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Ireland in 1844, and in 1861 he immigrated to America and located in New York City. At first he was employed to sweep a store, but afterward learned the plumber's trade and worked at this until 1871. He afterward worked in Chicago, St. Louis, Memphis, Cincinnati, and finally, in 1879, came to Knoxville. Having saved his earnings he invested them in plumber's supplies, and took as partner a contractor and builder who failed, ruining both. These were hard times for Mr. Rourke. Finding himself in debt, and with nothing to go on he redoubled his efforts and soon began to rise again, becoming one of the leading plumbers of the South. To him was intrusted the mammoth task of fitting up the East Tennessee Insane Asylum. In 1875, while in Cincinnati, he was united in marriage to Miss Mary McDonough, who presented him with five children—one son and four daughters. As a business man Mr. Rourke has been quite successful, and now has a good store house, stock and other property.

Hon. William Rule, editor-in-chief of the *Knoxville Journal*, stands in the front rank of Tennessee journalists. He was born in Knox County in 1839, and passed his boyhood days on the farm, but before reaching the years of manhood he left the parental roof and entered the newspaper office of Parson Brownlow, who was then publishing the *Knoxville Whig*. He soon became Brownlow's trusted friend, and remained with him



through all the days of strife preceding the war, and they ever after remained fast political friends. In 1858 Mr. Rule married Lucy A. Maxey, a native of Knox County, and to them were born six children. After Brownlow's departure from Knoxville in 1862, our subject enlisted in the Sixth Tennessee Union Infantry, commanded by Col. Joseph A. Cooper, and soon became adjutant of the regiment, which position he held until the close of the war, sharing in all the battles of the Army of the Cumberland. At the close of hostilities he returned home, and was the same year elected county court clerk, and after being re-elected resigned in 1870 to re-enter journalism. He edited the *Chronicle* until 1875, when Gov. Brownlow, whose term as United States senator had just expired, purchased an interest in the paper, and the weekly edition from this time took the name of the *Whig and Chronicle*. The paper was thus edited until Brownlow's death and then by our subject alone until 1882, at which date he sold out, and soon after, with Mr. S. Marfield, began the publication of the *Daily Journal*. In 1873 he was elected mayor of Knoxville, and a municipal committee waited upon the President and secured a special order by which he was allowed to serve (although without salary) and remained in the Government service, he having previously been appointed special agent of the postoffice department. He was the same year appointed postmaster of Knoxville, which position he retained until 1880, when he was a delegate to the national Republican convention, and during the same year entered the race for Congress, but met the fate of many other editors who fearlessly uphold their views by their pen, and afterward enter the political field. Frederick Rulè, father of our subject, was born in Knox County in 1817, and resided in that county until his death in 1874. The mother, Sarah E. (Brakebill) Rule, was a native of Blount County, Tenn., and died in 1883. William was the first-born of six children, five of whom are still living.

W. L. Russell, a merchant at Concord, was born January 11, 1832, in Blount County, Tenn. When sixteen years of age he came to Knox County, where he has since lived. He is the fifth of seven children born to John H. and Annie (Gillespie) Russell. John H. Russell was born in Knox County, January 3, 1796, where he grew to manhood. He then went to Blount County, where he resided until his death in August, 1878. He was a successful farmer and a remarkably energetic and enterprising man. His wife was born near Little River in Blount County, where she was reared, and where she married John H. Russell. She died August 3, 1841. W. L. Russell received his education in the common schools of Blount and Knox Counties. At the age of sixteen

he began working for himself as clerk in a general store. At the age of twenty he became a member of the firm of M. & R. Russell, of Campbell Station, which partnership existed about seven years. After this he came to Concord, and became a member of the firm of Pate & Russell. Mr. Pate retired in 1878, since which time Mr. Russell has been a member of the firm of W. L. Russell & Co., and of Cox & McNutt. In May, 1868, he married Miss Dannie J. Evans, a daughter of Daniel and Elizabeth (Harrison) Evans. Her father was born in North Carolina, and reared in Cocke County, Tenn., where he died in September, 1845. He was a successful farmer. Her mother, Mrs. Evans, was born in Jefferson County on the French Broad River, and died in June, 1863. They were both of Scotch-Irish descent. To our subject and wife were born nine children: Frank P. (deceased), Joseph E., John P., Lizzie Kate, Linda A., Anna M., Margaret A., William L. and Dannie E. (deceased). Mr. and Mrs. Russell are members of the Presbyterian Church. He was previously a Whig, but since the war has voted the Democratic ticket and is now in full accord with the Prohibition party.

D. R. Samuel & Son. D. R. Samuel, senior member of the above mentioned firm, is a native of South Wales, England, born in 1832. In 1854 he married Mary Bynon, a native of Carbondale, Penn., born in 1835. He came to Knoxville in 1872, and founded the present manufactory. He was one of the organizers of Market Square Street Railway Company, of Knoxville, of which he is vice-president. He was also one of the founders of Pilgrim Congregational Church, of which he and wife are members. W. B. Samuel, junior member of the above firm, was born at Pittston, Penn., in 1856, and remained there until his sixteenth year, acquiring his early education in the local schools. He attended the University of Tennessee, at Knoxville in 1873-75, and in 1878 graduated from Eastman's College, Poughkeepsie, N. Y. He became a member of the above firm in 1877, and has since occupied the position of superintendent and bookkeeper. In 1881 he wedded Mary P. Tustin, a native of Baltimore, Md., and the daughter of John D. Tustin, a commission merchant of Philadelphia. To this union were born two sons and one daughter: Philip, born in 1883; Joe, born in 1885, and Ruth, born in 1887. Mrs. Samuel is a member of the Pilgrim Congregational Church. In the board of enterprise, organized in 1884, which organization accomplished great and lasting benefit to Knoxville, Mr. W. B. Samuel was chairman of the committee of manufacturers, the duties of which office he discharged in a satisfactory manner. He is a member of East Tennessee Lodge, No. 34, I. O. O. F., and for four years represented it in the Grand Lodge.

E. J. Sanford, vice-president of the East Tennessee National Bank, president of the Knoxville & Ohio Railroad, and a member of the wholesale drug firm of Sanford, Chamberlain & Albert, is a native of Connecticut, where he was reared and educated. He came to Knoxville in 1853, and engaged in the lumber trade until the commencement of the war. In 1860 he married Miss Emma Chavares, to whom ten children have been born, six still living—three sons and three daughters. Edward T., the eldest son, is a graduate of the University of Tennessee, and is now attending the Harvard Law School. At the breaking out of the war our subject joined a company for the Union Army, which went to Kentucky, where many of them enlisted, but owing to bad health Mr. Sanford returned to Connecticut. He returned to Knoxville in 1863, with Burnside's Army, and established his wholesale drug house in 1864 under the firm name of E. J. Sanford & Co., which company existed until 1872, when the present firm was formed. They employ four traveling salesmen, and in volume of trade rank among the largest drug firms of the South. At the death of Maj. O'Conner Mr. Sanford was elected president of the Mechanic's Bank, but after its establishment upon a firm basis, dissolved his connection with that bank, though requested by every director not to do so. In 1882, he was elected vice-president of the East Tennessee National Bank, which position he now holds. He has been one of the directors of the Kentucky & Ohio Railroad about ten years, and was elected president in 1886. He is the only director of the East Tennessee & Georgia Railroad, residing in Tennessee if not in the South. He is president of the Coal Creek Mining & Manufacturing Company and of the Knoxville Woolen Mills, and has been, for a term of years, president of the board of education for the Knoxville city schools. His parents, John W. and Altha (Fanton) Sanford, are natives of Connecticut, and still reside on the homestead of our subject's grandfather in Connecticut at the ripe old age of eighty-seven and eighty-eight years respectively.

R. H. Sansom, assistant postmaster of Knoxville, Tenn., was born at Round Rock, Williamson Co., Tex., September 8, 1854, and is the son of Richard and Mrs. Mary Agnes Sansom. The father was born October 28, 1828, and was the son of Dr. D. N. Sansom, of Columbia, Tenn. He died June 13, 1880. The mother was born July 3, 1831, and is the daughter of Matthew D. Cooper, and sister of ex-United States Senator Henry Cooper (deceased). She is now a resident of Georgetown, Williamson Co, Tex. Our subject was reared until his sixteenth year in Texas. He then came to Tennessee, and attended the Montgomery Bell Academy, at Nashville. After this



he went to Columbia, Tenn., where he acted as deputy clerk and master of the Maury Chancery Court, under his uncle, D. B. Cooper. He next practiced law for a number of years in Columbia, and then located at Washington City, where he was extensively engaged in contracting in partnership with Messrs. D. B. Cooper and J. W. Whitthorne. September 3, 1876, he wedded Loulie, youngest daughter of the late Gen. Felix K. Zollicoffer. She was born February 8, 1856, at the old Zollicoffer homestead, at Nashville. In January, 1881, he removed to Knoxville, and entered the firm of Frierson & Morgan, marble dealers. At the dissolution of that firm he became a member of the Crescent Marble Company, of Knoxville, of which he had practical charge until November, 1885, and yet retains stock in the same. He was appointed to his present position in November, 1885. He is a member of Felix K. Zollicoffer Camp, No. 3, Confederate Veterans, and is Grand Master of Oriental Lodge, No. 453, F. & A. M., of Knoxville. He is also Second Lieutenant Commander of Knoxville Consistory No. 10, and also Generalissimo of Cour de Leon Commandery No. 9, K. T., of Knoxville. He and Mrs. Sansom are members of the First Presbyterian Church.

H. Schubert, owner and proprietor of the beautiful and popular Schubert's Hotel, situated at the corner of Cumberland and Gay Streets, was born in Germany, in 1842, and came to New York City in 1857. He remained there three years, then came to Nashville, Tenn., and engaged in the restaurant and retail liquor business until 1865, after which he continued in the same business two years in Chattanooga, and in Grainger and Union Counties. In 1872 he came to Knoxville, where he continued the same business until May 10, 1875, when he opened out the nucleus of his present model hotel. By 1880 he found his patronage increasing to such an extent that additions were made to his already large building, but he again found himself inadequate to accommodate his rapidly increasing number of guests. In December, 1885, he completed the hotel as it is at present. The building is three stories high, fronts 80 feet on Gay Street and 150 feet on Cumberland, and possesses all the conveniences of modern architectural improvements. In 1869 he married Hannah Furner, a native of Union County, to whom one son, A. A. N. Schubert was born; he is still residing with his father. The death of Mr. Schubert's life companion occurred in October, 1886. She was a member of the First Baptist Church. Our subject's parents, A. and D. (Alexander) Schubert, were both natives of Germany, where the mother still lives and where the father died in 1875. Our subject was the eldest of six children, four still living—one in Chicago, one in Australia, one in Berlin and our subject in Knoxville, Tenn.

Dr. John R. Scott was born in Boyle County, Ky., near Danville, July 6, 1828, and is the son of Col. C. C. and Elizabeth B. (Westerfield) Scott. The father was a native Virginian, and of Irish descent. The mother was born in Pennsylvania, and was of French-German descent. They were early settlers in Kentucky. Our subject graduated at Franklin College, Tennessee, in 1848 and studied medicine at Athens, Ala., from 1851 to 1854, and was licensed to practice in the latter year. In 1856 he began practicing in Union County, Tenn., and continued there until 1857, when he returned to Athens, Ala. Here he remained until 1862, when he was employed as surgeon at Post Hospital, Strawberry Plains, and remained there until 1863. December 6, 1865, he married Miss Callie Shropshire, and to them were born these children: C. C., R. L., J. L., N. R., D. H., E. A. and M. A. In 1863 our subject came to Union County, Tenn., where he remained until 1870, since which time he has practiced at Graveston, Tenn., where he owns 175 acres of land. He has been United States examining surgeon for Union County, Tenn., is a Democrat in politics and a Master Mason, Graveston Lodge, No. 321. He is a relative of Gen. Winfield Scott and Charles Scott, ex-governor of Kentucky. He has written both prose and poetry for the local press, and is the author of medical works which he has not yet finished.

Frank A. R. Scott was born in Knox County in 1827, and has always resided in this county. He began operating a linseed oil mill in 1850, and a tannery in 1851, both at the present location of the Knoxville Leather Company. He sold the entire property in 1853, the tannery then being run by an incorporated company until the close of the war, when it was purchased by our subject and his present partner, John S. Van Gilder. They manufacture all kinds of leather, and consume about 6,000 hides annually. In 1857 he wedded Miss Margaretta F. Deaderick, a native of Knoxville, to whom eleven children have been born. Our subject's grandfather, James Scott, of Scotch-Irish descent, located in Knox County about 1820. He established a carding and fulling mill which in all probability was the first mill established in Tennessee. The father of our subject, James Scott, Jr., was born in 1797, and operated the mill mentioned above in connection with farming. His death occurred in 1838. The mother of Frank A. R. Scott, Eliza J. (Ramsey) Scott, was a sister of Dr. Ramsey, the author of "Annals of Tennessee." Her death occurred in 1858. Of her family of five children all are still living. Two of her sons were in the Confederate Army—one was wounded at Chattanooga and the other at Shiloh.

James N. Seaton, farmer, was born April 3, 1815, in the locality where he has since resided. He is the second of eleven children, two

now living—his elder sister and himself—born to James and Elizabeth (Love) Seaton. The father was born February 27, 1788, and died in 1853. He served as magistrate for about twenty years, giving universal satisfaction. He was an elder in the Presbyterian Church for many years, was a very efficient and successful school teacher, took an active part in all public affairs, and was a highly respected citizen. His wife, Elizabeth (Love) Seaton, was born about 1793 in Lancaster County, Penn., and was brought by her parents to Tennessee some time before the celebrated Cavett massacre. Her father, Mr. John Love, was a highly respected man, and an elder in the Presbyterian Church. He lived to a ripe old age. He had but one son, who moved to McMinn County, and was a prominent citizen; he died in 1882. James N. Seaton, our subject, received his education in the common schools of the Tenth District. He assisted his father on the farm until twenty-one years of age, when he married Miss Rachel Craig, who died in 1849. His second wife was a Miss Caroline Wills, who bore him four children: Mary (Mrs. Thomas Fox), Caroline D. (deceased), Sophronia J. and an infant deceased. Mrs. Seaton died March 29, 1857, and in October, 1857, he married Miss Margaret C. Good, and to this union were born five children: Kate, Emma, Susan, James, Robert and one who died in infancy. Mrs. Seaton died November 2, 1881, and February 8, 1883, Mr. Seaton married Mrs. Sarah Louesa McCampbell, formerly Miss S. L. Bond, the daughter of George and Eliza (Swan) Bond. Mrs. Bond died in 1869, but Mr. Bond is still living, ninety years old, and is still comparatively hale and hearty. He has been a ruling elder in the Presbyterian Church for about sixty years. Our subject began life a poor man, but now has a good farm of 400 acres, well improved, and located one mile north of the State road. His land is very valuable for the excellent marble which is to be found on it. It is considered one of the largest and best veins of marble to be found in Eastern Tennessee. Mr. and Mrs. Seaton and children are members of the Presbyterian Church, of which Mr. Seaton has been deacon and elder for over twenty years. Mr. Seaton is a Democrat in politics, and was captain and adjutant for several years of the State militia. He is a man of very rugged constitution, is seventy-two years old, and has never taken any medicine except for rheumatism, with which he is occasionally slightly afflicted. He is one of the county's very best citizens.

J. F. Sharp, a successful agriculturist of the Eighth District, was born May 15, 1853, in Claiborne County, Tenn., and came to Knox County in October, 1882. He is the eldest of four children born to William and Elizabeth (Mason) Sharp, both of whom were born and



reared in Claiborne County, where they are now living. The father is one of the most successful farmers of the locality in which he resides and was a Master Mason. Our subject was educated in the common schools of Claiborne County. He remained with and assisted his father on the farm until he was twenty-four years of age, when he married Miss Mary Condray, a daughter of John and Carley Condray. They were highly respected citizens; both died in the year 1874. Five children were the fruits of our subject's union, viz.: Minnie May, Elmer, Parris (deceased), Amy and Condray. Mr. Sharp is a Democrat in politics, casting his first presidential vote for Samuel J. Tilden, and he and Mrs. Sharp are members of the Baptist Church, of which he has been clerk of the sessions three years. He has a good farm of 100 acres of land, well improved and cultivated, and is considered an excellent citizen by all his acquaintances.

Paris M. Shell, farmer of the Third Civil District of Knox County, Tenn., was born on Beaver Creek, Knox County, November 3, 1841, and is the son of Christian and Susan (Shell) Shell. The father is a native of Montgomery County, Va., born in 1811, and is the son of Jacob Shell, also of Virginia. Christian Shell came to Tennessee about 1838, and located in Knox County, but subsequently removed to Sweet Water Valley, McMinn County, where he is now engaged in farming. He is a member of the Presbyterian Church. His wife was a native of Tennessee, born in Knox County about 1818, and was the daughter of John and Nancy (Persley) Shell; she died in 1880. John, the maternal grandfather of our subject, was a native of Tennessee, and served in the campaign of removing the Cherokee Indians from their reservation. Our subject was reared in McMinn County and acquired his education at Mouse Creek and at Maryville. At the age of twenty-two years he enlisted in the Federal Army, joining Company I, One Hundred and Fifteenth Indiana Regiment of infantry enlisting for six months and serving nine. He was in the neighborhood of Knoxville during the siege of that city, and was with his regiment at the engagements of Blue Springs and Walker's Ford on Clinch River. He was mustered out of service in February, 1864, and returned to McMinn County, where he followed farming. October 20, 1868, he married Lucy J. Cole, daughter of Sampson and Nancy J. (Anderson) Cole, and to this union were born two children: Lula E., born July 15, 1869, and died March 13, 1873, and William T., born September 22, 1870, and died October 25, 1872. October 14, 1874, he married M. Crippen, a native of Knox County, born September 13, 1847, and the daughter of William and Dicy (Tindell) Crippen, both natives of Tennessee. William, the father, was born in

1811 and died in 1872. He was a son of James and Martha (Hall) Crippen, the former being a native of Virginia, and the latter of North Carolina. Dicy, the mother, was born in 1811, and is the daughter of Samuel and Zillah (Parker) Tindell, both of whom were natives of North Carolina. She makes her home with her son, P. M. Shell. To our subject and wife were born five children, viz.: Sanford C., born March 4, 1876, and died June 18, 1876; Albert E., born August 19, 1877, and died May 1, 1880, and Lina B. born December 23, 1878. Two children died in infancy. The mother is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church. In 1875 Mr. Shell removed to Knox County, where he has established himself as an enterprising and worthy citizen.

Lazarus C. Shepard, trustee of the deaf and dumb school at Knoxville, is a son of Sueton and Dymah A. (Hurd) Shepard, natives of Connecticut, where they are now peacefully sleeping. Their family consisted of eight children—three sons and five daughters. Our subject was born June 2, 1816, in Connecticut, where he grew up and received a limited education. He then followed the trade of his father, which was that of a carpenter, and for some time ran a car shop and sash and blind factory. In 1837 he married Miss Emily E. Strong, who presented him with five children, three now living—two sons and a daughter. Both sons were Confederate soldiers in the late war. In 1854 Mr. Shepard came to Knoxville, and in connection with two partners, opened car works which were burned during the war. After that event he engaged in the rolling mill business for a time and then turned his attention to the manufacture of furniture and undertaking, which he has followed ever since. Mrs. Shepard died in 1882. Mr. Shepard and all the children are members of the Protestant Episcopal Church, of which he is also senior warden. For about eight years he has been magistrate, and he also filled the position of alderman for some years in Knoxville. He is president of the Knoxville Building Loan & Association, treasurer of the Masonic lodge and of the I. O. O. F. lodge, and is secretary and treasurer of the Knox County Humane Society. He is one among the old and highly respected citizens of Knoxville.

Philo B. Shepard, chief of the Knoxville Fire Brigade, was born in 1841 in Bridgeport, Conn., and is the son of L. C. and Emily (Strong) Shepard, both natives of Connecticut, but since 1853 citizens of Knoxville, the father being senior partner of the firm of Shepard, Mann & Johnston. Our subject grew to manhood in Knoxville, and was educated in the University of Tennessee (then known as East Tennessee University), which institution he continued in up to the war. He connected himself with the Fifth Tennessee Cavalry, Confederate States

Army, at the formation of that regiment at the commencement of the war. He remained with this regiment, serving in various capacities until early in 1862, when he was ordered on duty at Loudon in connection with the hospitals, in which capacity he served until the Kentucky campaign, when he connected himself with the Texas and Arkansas Brigade, during which campaign he occupied various staff positions. On the return of the army from Kentucky he was compelled, on account of disease contracted during the campaign, to retire from active service. He then engaged in business in Loudon until the evacuation of East Tennessee by the Confederates, when he was carried to Augusta, Ga., where he remained until Gen. Longstreet started the advance on Knoxville. He then connected himself with the Georgia Brigade of Cavalry as assistant adjutant-general, in which capacity he served until Longstreet raised the siege, after which he served in the ordnance department. On the return of the army to Georgia he was commissioned first lieutenant, and assigned to Company K, Sixth Georgia Cavalry, in which capacity he served until nearly the close of the war, when he was ordered to Augusta, Ga., as assistant provost-marshal, and this position, as he says himself, was the most trying of the war, as he was always on duty. After the close of the war he removed to Mobile, Ala. (the sentiment against ex-Confederates being very strong in East Tennessee), and engaged in the commission business. In 1867 he moved to Selma, Ala., where he engaged in the life insurance business, and later in agricultural implements and machinery and planting. January 8, 1868, he was married to Miss Lou Coleman, of Dallas County. In 1876 he removed to Knoxville and established a steam laundry, which business he followed until 1880. He then engaged in business in Lebanon, Tenn., for one year, when he moved to Arkansas, and engaged in the agricultural implements and machinery business until 1882, when on account of the sickness and subsequent death of his mother he returned to Knoxville, Tenn., since which time he has been connected with the firm of H. G. Mead & Co. He was elected to his present position March 26, 1886, a position to which he is peculiarly adapted, having been connected with fire departments since his eighteenth year. In December, 1885, he organized Felix K. Zollicoffer Camp, Confederate Veterans, of which he is First Lieutenant Commander. Both he and wife are members of the Episcopal Church.

Prof. J. W. Sherman, teacher and farmer, was born at Jonesboro, Washington Co., Tenn., December 22, 1840, and is the son of James and Emily (Chadwich) Sherman. The father was a native of North Carolina, and of English descent. The mother was born in Germany.



Our subject received his education at Maryville, Blount County, and also at Bethany College, West Virginia. He then took an extra course at the State University, at Lexington, Ky., and while there taught the primary department in the Woodland school of the university. He afterward took charge of Rice's Academy, in Garrard County, Ky., where he remained two years, and then came to Tennessee. In 1872 he married Miss Cordelia M. Reeder, daughter of Hon. Alexander Reeder, of Knoxville. The fruits of this union were six children, the eldest of whom (a son) died in infancy. Those living are Alzada Tennessee, Linnie Belle, Mary Effie, Emma Hazel, and the youngest (a boy) is named John Thomas Wentforth. After our subject's marriage he engaged in farming, and this, in connection with teaching, has been his occupation through life. In September, 1886, he took charge of the Walnut Grove Academy, where he is at the present time. He is the owner of 120 acres of land in the Sixteenth District, a part of it good timbered land.

Isaac Sherrod, a native of Knox County, Tenn., was born June 5, 1842, and is the son of Jonathan and Charlotta (Bales) Sherrod. The father was a native Tennessean, born December 25, 1813, and died in the year 1854. The mother was born in the same State in 1812, and died in 1860. Our subject was educated in the country schools, and in 1862 was united in marriage to Miss Elizabeth Pittille, who bore him seven children—two are married, one is in the Walnut Grove school, two are at home, and two are deceased. In 1880 our subject took for his second wife Miss Margaret Howell, a native of Knox County, born March 25, 1845, and this marriage resulted in the birth of five children. Our subject is an energetic, wide-awake farmer, and his fine farm of 165 acres situated on Holston River, in the Sixteenth District, is well cultivated and well improved. Mr. Sherrod is a Republican in politics, and one of the county's best citizens.

William Shinpaugh was born in Roane County near Loudon County, Tenn., July 16, 1818, and is the youngest of three children born to Henry and Elizabeth (McDaniel) Shinpaugh, natives of North Carolina. Their parents came to Knox County about 1770, where Mr. and Mrs. Shinpaugh were married. Of their children none are living except our subject. Henry Shinpaugh served three years in Capt. Steward's company, and three years after the war he died from the effects of exposure during that struggle. Our subject attended school only about twelve months in his life. When about nineteen years old he married Miss Sallie Letsinger, who was born in June, 1825, and was the daughter of John and Joanna (Buckaloo) Letsinger. Her father was a very successful farmer, and died in 1881. To Mr. and Mrs. Shinpaugh were born these children:

Hugh, John (deceased), Calvin, James, George, William, Alexander, Joanna (Mrs. W. Young), Elizabeth (Mrs. Young) and Sallie (Mrs. E. E. Duncan). Mr. Shinpaugh is a Republican in politics, and he and Mrs. Shinpaugh are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. Mr. Shinpaugh came from Roane to Knox County about 1833, and settled first in Hardin Valley. He came to Hind's Valley about 1860. He has always followed farming, and has been quite successful.

J. W. Shipe, one of the leading farmers of the Third District of Knox County, Tenn., was born in that county and district on February 26, 1830, and is the son of Henry W. and Deborah (Scaggs) Shipe. The father was a native of Virginia, and was born in 1797, his father being a native of Pennsylvania and his mother of Maryland. Henry W., the father, came to Knox County in 1807, at a time when there were but few settlers here, and the country was a wild and unbroken forest and canebrake. He followed farming, and served in the war of 1812 with Gen. Jackson, and was at the battle of New Orleans. He enlisted when but eighteen years of age, and was in Gen. Coffee's command. He was a member of the Baptist Church for over forty years, and died November 9, 1879, on his ninetieth birthday, leaving a name universally respected for upright and honest dealing. Deborah, the mother, was born in Knox (now Union) County, of English parentage, in 1796, and died in 1871. She was also a member of the Baptist Church. Our subject was reared on the farm, and attended the neighborhood schools. When about eighteen years of age he left home and learned the tanner's trade. Two years later he went out to California, where he remained for three years and six months, spending the time in mining for gold and lumbering. He returned to his home in Knox County January 30, 1857, and has since resided in the county, following farming as an avocation, making a success of the same, being now one of the most highly respected citizens of the district. He joined the Union Baptist Church in 1861, and three years later was elected deacon of that church, which office he holds at present. He was married, July 1, 1857, to Ruth C. Crippen, a native of Knox County, who was born August 8, 1833, and is the daughter of William P. and Dicy (Tindell) Crippen. Her father served as sheriff of Knox County for six years, and was a well-known and highly respected citizen, he dying December 13, 1872. To this union nine children have been born, eight of whom are living, as follows: George W., born April 2, 1858; Apolinia E., born August 18, 1859; William H. McC., born July 11, 1862; Martha E., born August 9, 1861, and died August 14, 1861; Joseph F., born April 14, 1864; Charles Russell, born August 11, 1866; James C., born February 11, 1868; Alvin B., born February 2, 1871, and John D.,

born June 4, 1873. The wife and four children are members of the Union Baptist Church.

W. H. Simmonds, secretary and treasurer of the Knoxville Fire Insurance Company, is a son of Cyrus Simmonds, a native of Virginia, who chose his wife from one of North Carolina's fair daughters. In 1830 they moved to West Tennessee, and reared a family of five children—two sons and three daughters. One of the sons, Dr. James H. Simmonds, was a surgeon of a Florida regiment during the late war. The father was a merchant by occupation, and accumulated a large fortune, which was swept away by the war. The parents are now living with our subject, and both are in their eighty-fifth year. Our subject was born in West Tennessee in 1836, and received his education at West Tennessee College. In 1856 he went to Nashville to engage in mercantile pursuits. In 1858 he married Miss Lillie, daughter of Col. W. B. A. Ramsey, and to them were born three children—one son and two daughters. In 1861 Mr. Simmonds was appointed commissary by Gen. Bragg, which position he held until the close of the war. He then returned to Nashville and began merchandising, first as a member of the firm of Dodd & Simmonds, and afterward of the firm of W. H. Simmonds & Co. In 1872 he came to Knoxville, and since that time has been engaged in merchandising, in real estate and in insurance business. He was elected secretary and treasurer of the Knoxville Fire Insurance Company in 1880, and he also holds the position of secretary and treasurer of the Powell Land & Kaolin Company, and president of the Mechanic's Building and Loan Association. He is a Mason, and he and wife are members of the Third Presbyterian Church.

Jesse Simpson, farmer, is the son of Jesse, Sr., and Mary (Giffin) Simpson. The father and mother are both natives of Virginia, and of English descent, their ancestors being natives of New England. The father was the son of John Simpson. Our subject was born in Virginia; his education was very limited, and obtained in the rude and primitive log schoolhouses of early times. He assisted his father on the farm until twenty-two years of age, after which he was engaged for a short time in cabinet-making, and then began trading on the Tennessee River. In 1836 Miss Margaret Coker, daughter of Charles Coker, became his wife, and two children—a son and a daughter—were born to this marriage; the son died when a year old, and the daughter, Mary Sophia, is the wife of B. S. B. Love. Mrs. Simpson died in September, 1840, and in May, 1842, Mr. Simpson took for his second wife Miss Mary J. Anderson, daughter of James and Anna Anderson. This marriage resulted in the birth of two sons and four daughters: Margaret C., Joseph Alex-



ander, Sarah Elizabeth, David La Fayette and Delilah Jane and Telitha Ann (twins). Since about the time of our subject's first marriage, he has followed farming. He owns 160 acres of land on the opposite side of the Tennessee from Knoxville, all well improved and well stocked. He, his wife, and all the children are members of the Baptist Church, he having been deacon in the same for more than thirty-five years. He is a Republican in politics.

J. A. Smith, agriculturist of the Eighth District, was born December 11, 1822, in Grainger (now Union) County, Tenn. He came to Tennessee in September, 1882, and settled where he now resides. He is one of seven children born to Josiah and Nancy (Stanley) Smith. Josiah was born in Virginia, came to Tennessee with his father when a boy, and settled in Union County, Tenn., north of Maynardville. He was a successful farmer, and much esteemed citizen. He died about 1836, aged fifty-five years. He was a soldier in the Creek Indian war under Gen. Jackson. The mother of our subject was born and reared in Union County, Tenn. Both parents were of English descent. Harbord Smith, grandfather of our subject, moved from Tennessee to Alabama at a very early day, where he died. He was a very successful and practical business man, and accumulated considerable property. When about twenty years of age our subject married Miss Emily Ann Buckner, a daughter of Ezra and Elizabeth (Duncan) Buckner, highly respected citizens of their locality. To our subject and wife were born twelve children: William E., Nancy B. (deceased), Mary E. (Mrs. Harris), Pernina C. (Mrs. Hamilton), Margaret B. (deceased), Joseph W., Pauline C. (Mrs. McPhetsidge), James, Hugh L. (deceased), Penelope T. (Mrs. McDowell), John L. (deceased), Laura L. and Oscar D. Mr. Smith is a staunch Republican in politics, casting his first presidential vote for J. K. Polk, and he and family are members of the Missionary Baptist Church, of which he has been deacon for over thirty years, and has only missed attending church two times in thirty-two years.

B. L. Smith, senior member of the firm of Smith & Bondurant and a prominent business man, is the son of John A. and Lucy P. (Williams) Smith, both natives of Virginia. The father was cashier of the Farmers' Bank, at Richmond, and died in 1864. The mother is still living, and makes her home with her son, B. L. Our subject, the only living child of his parents, was born in Virginia in 1846 and while growing up acquired a good education. Toward the close of the war he served two years in the Richmond Howitzers, and after the final surrender of the South moved to Virginia, where he remained until 1870. He then came to Tennessee. Two years later he located at Knoxville, and became a

member of the present firm, being dealers in meat and shippers of produce. In 1877 he married Miss Bell Stover who bore him six children. Mr. Smith has been secretary and treasurer of Mabry Bell Avenue & Handle Street Railroad Company since its first organization. He is a Democrat in politics, and inherits English blood from both father and mother.

J. Allen Smith, president of the Knoxville City Mills, is the son of Burgess and H. W. (Jordan) Smith, and a native of Georgia, born in 1850. He was reared in Elbert, Ga., where he acquired his education at the public schools. He began life for himself in 1868 as clerk in a wholesale house at Atlanta, Ga. In 1871 he removed to Knoxville, Tenn., where he engaged in the grain business. In 1878 he was united in marriage to Miss Lillie Powell, who was born in Knoxville in 1855, and is the daughter of Columbus Powell. The result of this union was the birth of two children; the first, a girl, died at the age of two years. Mr. Smith founded the Knoxville City Mills Company in 1881. It began as a private enterprise, but grew in importance until in 1884 it was deemed advisable to enlist others in the building and equipping of the handsomest and most substantial plant of the kind in East Tennessee. In this year the company was organized under a charter and began their work. Mr. Smith was elected president of the company, which position he holds at the present time. The position is more important by virtue of the recent consolidation of the firm of J. Allen Smith & Co., the largest provision and grain merchants in the place, with the Knoxville City Mills Company, increasing their capital to \$100,000. At this time they are erecting a large grain elevator to accommodate increasing trade. He and his wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

W. T. Smith, farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., December 7, 1829, and is the eldest of eight children born to John T. and Nancy A. (Golston) Smith. The father was born in Rockbridge County, Va., and came to Knox County with his father, William Smith, in 1801. He died in 1874. William Smith, grandfather of our subject, was a native of Ireland, and came to the United States, settling first in Virginia, but afterward came to Knox County in 1811. He was a good farmer and an excellent financier. He died in 1853. Our subject received his education in the common schools of Knox County and at Ewing and Jefferson College. At the age of twenty-one he left the parental roof, and soon married Miss Lucinda E. Doak, born August 14, 1829, the daughter of H. and E. Doak. To Mr. and Mrs. Smith were born twelve children: Samuel L., Harvey (deceased), Laura Ellen (Mrs. C. G. Ninney), James B. (deceased), Lizzie, Sidney, Eugene, Luther, Sophia, Adelia (Mrs. H.

D. Boyd), Maggie and Arthur. Mr. Smith since the dissolution of the Whig party has voted the Democratic ticket. He was elected magistrate in 1870 and served eleven years. Mr. Smith has a fine farm of 350 acres in the Tennessee Valley, on which is an excellent marble quarry that yields a greater variety of fine marble than any other quarry in the State. Mr. and Mrs. Smith are members of the Presbyterian Church.

Robert Snead, M. D. (deceased), was born in Washington County, Va., December 20, 1820, and is the son of Henry and Jane (Kesner) Snead. The father was born in Halifax County, Va., in 1792, and died in Washington County of the same State in 1864. The mother was also a native of Virginia, born in 1796 and died in the year 1833. While young our subject had very poor educational advantages, but he worked hard and accumulated sufficient money to enter Emory and Henry College, Virginia. He would alternately attend college, work on the farm and teach school. He never completed his collegiate course, and took up the study of medicine, studying with his uncle in Virginia. When he became competent to practice his profession he removed to Dandridge, Tenn., where he lived and studied with another uncle. He afterward took a trip South in search of a location, but returned to Strawberry Plains, Jefferson Co., Tenn., and here located. Later he entered the Louisville (Ky.) Medical College, graduated from this institution, and then returned to Strawberry Plains, where he practiced his profession until his death, which occurred in 1882. While driving some cattle he was kicked by a horse, and lived but eight weeks after this accident. To his marriage to Miss Malinda Bryan in 1852 was born one child, a daughter who lived but four short years. Mrs. Snead was born in Tennessee January 16, 1827, and is the daughter of Hon. Allen Bryan, who was a member of the State Legislature of Tennessee at the time Knoxville was the capital of the State, and also after it was removed to Nashville. Dr. Snead was a wise and skillful physician, a man of marked and decisive character, and his death was a sad blow to his companion through life.

Joseph W. Sneed, city attorney, was born in Knox County in 1854, and has resided here since with the exception of a few years during the war, when he went with his parents to Georgia, and there remained a few months, when he returned to Knoxville, and from here went to Salem, N. C., Liberty, Va., and Atlanta, Ga. In 1867 he located again in Knoxville. He attended the State University in 1870 and 1871, and was admitted to the bar in 1875. In January, 1874, he took for his life companion Miss Lizzie D. Williams, a native of this county, who bore him two sons and three daughters, one daughter deceased. After being



admitted to the bar our subject practiced alone until the present firm of Williams & Sneed was formed in 1883. He was city alderman in 1884-85, and January 1, 1886, he was elected city attorney. His parents, M. H. and Eliza D. (Williams) Sneed, were both of English descent, and natives of Davidson and Greene Counties, Tenn., respectively. In 1843, soon after their marriage, they moved to Greene County, where the father was admitted to the bar, and practiced in partnership with Judge McKinney a short time. He then came to Knoxville, and was here practicing at the time of his death. He represented his district in Congress in 1856-57, and was in the Confederate Congress. He died September 18, 1869, and the mother September 7, 1873.

George L. Snyder, farmer and dairyman, was born in Blount County, Tenn., April 28, 1856, and is the son of Col. George W. and Elizabeth (Slaughter) Snyder. Our subject attended the Maryville Normal School for four years, and the Grant Memorial University at Athens, Tenn., for two years. At the age of twenty-one he began teaching school, and followed this occupation alternately with attending college up to 1883, since which time he has followed farming. In 1882 he married Miss Fannie Pelleaux; she died in March, 1884, leaving one son, Roy Sankey. In 1886 he married Mrs. Sarah Jones, *nee* Miss Sarah Massey. She was born in North Carolina April 12, 1835, and came to Tennessee, where in 1875 she became the third wife of John A. Jones, a native of Sevier County, Tenn., born January 28, 1815, and died at his home near Knoxville August 17, 1884. He was a farmer, a lifetime member of the Baptist Church, and a kind and faithful husband and father. To the above marriage were born two sons: Charles D. and Frank J., and one daughter, Anna B.

R. A. Sterling, chairman of the county court of Knox County, was born in that county in 1842, was reared on a farm, and educated at the common schools of the county. In 1866 he went to California, where he engaged in the lumber trade until 1870. He then returned to Knox County, and embarked in the mercantile trade at Ebenezer, in which he is still interested. He was constable of his district in 1866; was elected justice of the peace of the Eleventh District in 1879, to fill an unexpired term, then in 1882 he was re-elected for a term of six years, and in January, 1882, he was elected chairman, and re-elected in January, 1886 and 1887. In 1874 he married Mrs. R. L. Morris, *nee* Walker, a native of the county, and a daughter of James and Isabella (Swan *nee* Gillespie) Sterling, natives of Knox and Blount Counties respectively. The mother's death occurred in 1849. She had three children by her first husband, one now living, and three by her union with the father of our

subject, all of whom are living. The father is still living, and is a resident of Ebenezer, Knox County.

Nathan Stern, dealer in clothing and gents' furnishing goods, was born in Bavaria, in 1842, and when nineteen years of age came to New York City, where a brother and sister had preceded him. Here he worked at his trade (tanners') until 1863, when he came with his brother to Tennessee, and located in Knoxville, where they established a general merchandise store, of which our subject became a partner in 1864. The business was then carried on under the firm title of M. & N. Stern, until 1878, they having merged it into a clothing store in 1867. In 1878 they dissolved partnership, and our subject conducted the business alone until 1882; it then took the firm name of N. Stern & Co., until 1885, since which date he has again been the sole proprietor. In 1877 he married Miss Minnie Gump, a native of Philadelphia, to whom two daughters have been born. A brother of our subject's paternal grandfather, was a general in the French war, under Napoleon Bonaparte, and the maternal grandfather, Haas, was at the head of the commissary department for the French Army. The father of our subject, Joseph Stern, was a man of considerable wealth, and led a retired life in Brooklyn, N. Y., from 1868 until his death in 1883. He was also in the war of 1812, being then but a youth. He married Leanora Haas, a native of Hesse Darmstadt, whose death occurred in 1865. Of the eleven children born to this marriage, five of whom are living (all in the United States), our subject is the tenth.

Joseph Churchill Strong and Gideon Hazen Strong, brothers, are farmers and stock raisers at McMillan, Knox Co., Tenn. J. C. was born September 20, 1841, at Shelbyville, Tenn.; G. H. was born October 5, 1850, at McMillan, and are the sons of Joseph Churchill Strong, M. D., born in Knoxville, Tenn., December 25, 1808. He married Sophronia, daughter of John A. and Nancy, (Stone) Morris, at Shelbyville, Tenn., September 25, 1832; she was born February 17, 1817. Their children are Prof. Robert Nilson, John Morris, Martha Jane (wife of W. O. Monday), Charles Ready and Horace Strong, all now deceased; Joseph Churchill and Gideon Hazen Strong, of McMillan; Benjamin Rush, Mary Hazen (wife of J. W. Borches), William Erwin and Albert Newton Strong, all of Knoxville. Joseph Churchill Strong, M. D., lived at Knoxville until 1826. He then went to Shelbyville, Tenn., where he engaged in selling drugs and practicing medicine until 1847. He then removed to McMillan, Tenn., where he lived the remainder of his life, a practicing physician and farmer. He was noted for his generosity and kindness. He attended to the sick of the poor as well as of the rich. He

was a great reader and thinker. He kept a record of things in general of each day for many years. He died at McMillan, Tenn., December 27, 1878. His wife Sophronia also died at McMillan, Tenn., November 20, 1867. The grandfathers of our subjects are Joseph Churchill Strong, M. D., born at Bolton, Conn., October 3, 1775 (he married Catherine, daughter of William Neilsom, at Hot Springs, N. C., December 6, 1804. She was born November 25, 1785, and died May 13, 1810), who was the son of Juda Strong, born in Bolton, Conn., November 28, 1738; who was the son of Dr. David Strong, of Bolton, Conn., born December 15, 1704, and died January 25, 1801; who was the son of John Strong, of Windsor, Conn., born December 25, 1665, and died May 29, 1749; who was the son of John Strong, Jr., of Windsor, Conn., born in England in 1626 and died February 20, 1698; who was the son of Elder John Strong, of Taunton, Somersetshire, England, born in 1605; who was the son of Richard Strong, born in the county of Caernarvon in 1561, and died at Taunton in 1613. Elder John Strong, of Taunton, moved to London and afterward to Plymouth. Having strong Puritan sympathies he sailed from Plymouth for the New World March 20, 1630, in the ship "Mary and John," Capt. Squeb, and arrived at Nantucket, Mass., about twelve miles south of Boston, Sunday, May 30, 1630. He died April 14, 1699, aged ninety-four. The grandfather of our subjects, Joseph Churchill Strong, married Jane Kain for his second wife, May 23, 1811. She was born January 30, 1788, and died October 3, 1846. He entered the United States Navy as assistant surgeon, under John Adams' administration, where he continued until the sale of the navy by Jefferson in 1801. He was aboard the frigate "Trumbull" the day she was sold, and often said pleasantly that he came near being sold with her, as the auctioneer offered her with all her contents to the highest bidder. He settled at Knoxville, Tenn., in 1804, where he became eminent in his profession. In 1816 he became a member of the First Presbyterian Church of Knoxville, and afterward became an elder in the same. He died November 3, 1844. Our subjects received a common-school education, and have devoted most of their lives to farming and stock raising. They own a farm of 1,000 acres in the Eighteenth District on the Holston River; through it passes the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railway. The land is fertile, and is well improved. Their dwelling is handsome and commodious, and is supplied with hydrants, whose aqueduct is a natural spring a quarter of a mile away, and a force pump, operated by water power, forces the water through the dwelling in bath room, water closet, etc. In the way of fine stock they imported from Holland some Holstein cattle that are very fine. These



brothers have always been closely associated together in their pursuits, and although they commenced with very little capital, have succeeded in accumulating considerable wealth. June 7, 1877, G. H. married Miss Elizabeth Brice, daughter of N. B. Brice. She was born in Knox County February 11, 1858, and by her marriage became the mother of Ralph, born September 3, 1878, died August 16, 1882; Mary Eliza, born February 8, 1882; Sophronia, September 25, 1884; Gideon Rush, February 26, 1887. Both our subjects are members of the Masonic fraternity.

Alex. Summers, editor-in-chief of the *Knoxville Daily Tribune*, is a native of Knox County, Tenn., born in 1856, and a graduate of the University of Tennessee in the class of 1876. He taught school in the county part of the time while procuring his education, and after graduating continued that occupation a short time. In 1878 he accepted the position as reporter for the *Atlanta Daily Post*, of which he afterward became assistant editor. In August, 1880, he, in connection with Messrs. Bean & Wallace, began the publication of the *Knoxville Daily Tribune*, successors to Frank Q. Moses & Co. He was at first city editor and afterward editor-in-chief. In 1881 he was united in marriage to Miss Kate Smith, who has presented him with one son, named Norman. Mrs. Summers was reared in Atlanta, Ga. George W. Summers, father of our subject, was born in Knox County in 1822, and has always resided in the county. He is at present residing in the Thirteenth District, where he was justice of the peace many years, and where he was also county surveyor eighteen years. The mother, Mary (Johnson) Summers, is also a native of Knox County. Our subject is the eldest of a family consisting of himself and four sisters, all still living. His paternal great-grandparents came from England and located in Virginia, where the grandfather, Thomas Summers, was born, and there in the early settlement of Knox County, located and afterward died.

J. A. Swan, county trustee, is a native of Knox County, born in 1857, and the only son of a family of six children born to W. H. and Mary A. (Seaton) Swan. The father is also a native of Knox County, born in 1817, and is now a resident of Knoxville. He was justice of the peace of Knox County from 1848 to 1856, and then deputy sheriff six years. He was sheriff two years, tax collector two years, and county court clerk a short time in the year 1864. He was then city recorder from 1866 to 1867, after which he filled an unexpired term of over a year in the criminal court clerk's office. He was city tax collector one year, and in 1878 was elected county trustee. He was re-elected in 1882, but resigned in 1884, our subject succeeding him. The mother of our subject was also a native of Knox County, and died in 1880. Our subject was reared and

educated in Knox County, completing his studies at the University in 1877. In 1878 he acted as deputy trustee under his father, whom he succeeded in 1884, and has filled the office since that date. In 1878 he married M. J. Partin, a native of Arkansas, who bore her husband two children: Clarence L. and Anna Belle. Mr. Swan's paternal grandparents were born and reared in Tennessee, and came to Knox County in the early part of the present century.

Charles A. Sweet, superintendent of the Brookside Mills, Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Rhode Island, born in 1860, and the son of Charles J. and Mary J. (Whipple) Sweet, both natives of Rhode Island, now residing in Knoxville, Tenn. Charles A. attended the public schools, and was to study medicine, but contracted the measles which settled in his eyes, and his physicians assured him that unless he gave up his studies he would become blind. He then began work in the cotton-mill at Killingly, Conn., where his father was agent, and went through all the different departments, and for three years acted as overseer of carding. At the age of twenty he accepted a situation as superintendent in a small yarn mill of 6,000 spindles, which position he held for one year and a half, and was then tendered the situation of superintendent of the Lippitt Mills, Phenix, R. I. He held this situation for three years, and then resigned to come to Knoxville to assist his father in starting the Brookside Mills of Knoxville. While at Lippitt Mills Charles A. was known as the boy superintendent, being the youngest superintendent in the State.

R. R. Swepson, president of the Knoxville Gas Light Company, is a native of Virginia, and came to Knoxville in December, 1866. He was president of the First National Bank until it closed in December, 1872. In July, 1884, he became a member of the firm of Briscoes, Swepson & Co., of which he is still a member. In September, 1876, he was elected president of the Knoxville Gas Light Company, and is the principal stockholder of the company which was organized in 1856. He is also stockholder in the Island Home and East Tennessee Insurance Companies, Coal Creek Mining & Manufacturing Company and Poplar Creek Mining Company. Our subject is the third child, and the only surviving member of a family of seven children born to William M. and Ann E. (Redd) Swepson, both of whom were natives of Virginia, Mecklenburg and Prince Edward Counties respectively. They both died in the former named county. Our subject's ancestors were of Scotch descent, and settled in Princess Anne County, Va.

Jacob Tarwater, farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., April 29, 1830, and is the son of William and Judia (Childres) Tarwater. The

father was born in Blount County, Tenn., February 14, 1790, and died at his home in Knox County September 21, 1857. The mother was born in Sullivan County, Tenn, April 20, 1794, and also died at her home in Knox County, October 28, 1866. Our subject received a limited education in the country schools, and early in life began cultivating the soil. In 1855 he married Evaline French, a native of Knox County, Tenn., born July 19, 1828, and the daughter of George French. She is of German descent, and an earnest worker in the Methodist Episcopal Church. Although they have had no children of their own, six orphan children have been reared by them, thus clearly showing Mr. Tarweather's charitable, benevolent nature. He has ever been a zealous Republican, and was a strong Union man during the late war. He has been an earnest and energetic farmer, and though he commenced the occupation of farming without capital he has accumulated wealth and is the owner of 375 acres of Knox County land. He has never held any civil or political office.

E. A. Taylor, D. D., pastor of the First Baptist Church, of Knoxville, Tenn., is a native of Louisiana, born October 16, 1853, the son of A. B. and E. C. (Fluker) Taylor, both natives of Louisiana. The father was a physician by profession, and served as a general in the war between the United States and Mexico. He died in 1855. The mother was born in 1830, is still living, and is the daughter of Col. Robert Fluker, an officer in the war of 1812. Our subject was reared in Natchez, Miss., where he acquired his early education in the primary schools. Desiring to prepare himself for the ministry, he entered and graduated from Mississippi College (Baptist), and followed this with a two years' course at the Baptist Theological Seminary, at Louisville, Ky. His pastoral duties began at Grenada, Miss., in 1878, where he took charge of the Baptist Church of that place, and continued as pastor for four years. During that period, however, he was given a vacation in order to travel through Europe, and visit Palestine and other points in the East. His duties in Grenada were pleasant and very successful. He removed from that place to Knoxville, Tenn., and took charge of the First Baptist Church, succeeding as pastor Rev. C. H. Strickland, D. D. The membership of this church numbers 700, being one of the largest and most important of that denomination in the State. The pastorate of our subject has been very successful, the membership increasing under his charge at an average rate of eighty per annum. Among the incidents pertaining to the prosperity of the church under his management is the erection of the present handsome church edifice on Gay Street, the corner-stone of which was laid in June, 1886, and which, when completed, will cost about \$30,000 exclusive of the ground on which the building stands, the



money for the payment of which has already been raised. Our subject was united in marriage, in 1882, to Miss Maggie Jordan, a native of Tennessee, born May 26, 1862, and the daughter of E. L. Jordan, Esq., one of the wealthiest and most influential citizens of Murfreesboro, Tenn., and president of the First National Bank of that city. He is also the oldest (in point of service) director of the Nashville, Chattanooga & St. Louis Railroad. The result of our subject's marriage was the birth of two children, viz.: Eugene A., Jr., born in 1883, and E. Leland, born in 1885. In 1887 he preached the baccalaureate sermon for Carson College, University of Tennessee, and Mississippi College, and received the title of D. D. from the first named college, in his thirty-third year.

O. P. Temple was born in Greene County, Tenn., in 1820, near old Greeneville College. His father, James Temple, was a farmer and surveyor. He was the son of Mazer and Mary (Kennedy) Temple. Maj. Temple moved from Pennsylvania to North Carolina in 1766, and here resided until 1786, when he settled in Greene County, Tenn. He took an active part in the battle of King's Mountain, and was a man of considerable property and high standing. His wife was a relative of Gen. Daniel Kennedy, of Tennessee, and aunt of Gen. Thomas Kennedy, of Kentucky. On the maternal side our subject's mother, Mary Craig, was the daughter of Robert and Jane Innis Craig. Robert Craig served throughout the Revolutionary war as a captain in the Pennsylvania forces, and at one time commanded the body guard of Gen. Washington. He was distinguished for his gallantry and daring. After the war he moved to South Carolina, where he married Jane Innis Burns, daughter of John Burns, also a Revolutionary soldier, who moved to Greene County, Tenn., about 1795. Our subject was reared on a farm, which he assisted in cultivating during the summer and going to school during the winter. He lived within one mile of Greeneville College, and his early educational advantages were good. In 1838 he went to Tusculum College, where he passed three years. He then spent three more years at Washington College, then in a flourishing condition under the presidency of the brilliant young teacher and pulpit orator, A. Alexander Doak. Here he graduated in 1844. He was immediately offered a professorship in the college, which he declined. Soon after this he commenced reading law, and obtained license as a lawyer in 1846, and settled in Greeneville, Tenn. In 1847, one month before the election, he became a candidate for Congress against Andrew Johnson, in a district Democratic by about 2,000 majority; a hot canvass followed, resulting in reducing the majority of Johnson so low that it was regarded at the time as a defeat for him although he was elected. This race gave

Temple a notoriety throughout the State. In 1848 he moved to Knoxville, where he has ever since resided, following his profession until the last six years. In 1851 he married Miss S. C. Hume, of Blount County, a beautiful young lady of great attractions. Their only child, Miss Mary B., is a young lady of finished education. In 1860 Mr. Temple was the Bell and Everett elector for the Knoxville district, and as such was very active, making speeches, etc. In 1861 he was earnest and outspoken in his opposition to secession, and glories in the fact to this day that he was a Union man. After the war he returned to his profession, and in 1866, without the slightest knowledge or solicitation, was appointed chancellor, which position, after three weeks' hesitation, he finally accepted and held for twelve years, having in that time been twice elected by overwhelming majorities. In 1878 he voluntarily declined becoming a candidate for re-election, and returned to the bar. About 1867, when Judge Milligan left the supreme bench of Tennessee for a position in the court of claims at Washington, the vacant position was tendered to Mr. Temple, which he promptly declined, preferring to remain as chancellor. In 1874 he was appointed by President Grant a member of the board of visitors to West Point. In 1881 he was appointed postmaster at Knoxville, which position he accepted as a convenient way of retiring from his profession. He held this office for four years, and discharged its duties in a faithful and efficient manner. Since retiring from that position he has devoted his time to his own private affairs and to certain public trusts, among these the most important is, his connection with the University of Tennessee as a trustee. He is at this time president of the board of trustees, and chairman of the farm and experimental station committee. He has for many years been an active and leading member of the board, and many of the reforms introduced in the university originated with him. He is thoroughly alive with the spirit of progress and development, especially in the direction of scientific and industrial education and training. He is a descendant from Scotch-Irish ancestors, and is a member of the Presbyterian Church.

Jerome Templeton, of the law firm of Washburn & Templeton, was born in Bradley County, Tenn, but reared in Chattanooga. He graduated at Cumberland University in 1871, after which he taught the Loudon High School at Loudon, Tenn., three years, and in the meantime read law. He was admitted to the bar at Loudon, and soon began practicing at Sevierville where he remained until 1881, when he located at Knoxville, the present firm being formed in May, 1882. The firm is counsel for the Knoxville Insurance Company, Mechanics' National Bank, Knoxville Car Wheel Company, Knoxville Gas Company, and also, for five years,

has represented the Rugby colony. Mr. Templeton married Miss Belle Mabry, eldest daughter of Col. G. W. Mabry, of Knox County, in 1873. Mr. Templeton is a Master Mason, and a successful, enterprising citizen. He is the second of five children born to Allison and Mahala (Cunningham) Templeton, all living with the exception of one son, who was killed in the Peach Tree Creek fight near Atlanta. The father of our subject was a native of Rhea County and devoted his entire life to the ministry in the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. He never missed preaching a single Sunday during the war. His death occurred in Texas in June, 1882. The mother of our subject was a native of Monroe County, Tenn., and died February 22, 1861.

The firm of Cone, Shields & Co., wholesale grocers and manufacturers of tobacco, of Knoxville, was organized in 1885, and is composed of H. Cone & Sons, of Baltimore, Md., and J. T., Jr., and J. S. Shields, of Knoxville. J. T. Shields, Jr., is a native of Grainger County, Tenn., was born in 1860, and was reared in that county and educated at the University of Tennessee. After leaving college he became a member of the firm of Coffin, Shields & Co., and in 1885 of the present firm. J. S. Shields was born in Grainger County in 1863, and like his brother was educated at the University of Tennessee. Upon leaving college he traveled for two years for the firm of Coffin, Shields & Co., and then became a member of the present firm. Judge J. T. Shields, father of our subjects, was born in Grainger County in 1825, and is one of the leading lawyers of East Tennessee, practicing only before the supreme bench. In 18— he was appointed by Gov. Porter to a place on the supreme bench, and later was appointed a member of the court of referees of the supreme court. He is now a resident of Bean's Station. The mother of our subjects was Elizabeth Simpson, who was born at Rogersville, Tenn., in 1827.

James W. Trent, manufacturer and dealer in tobacco, was born in Henry County, Va., October 15, 1834, and is the son of William B. and Sallie W. (Garrett) Trent, natives of Virginia and North Carolina, and of Welsh and French descent respectively. Our subject received his education in the common schools, and his first pursuit in life was that of a tobacconist. In 1854 he married Miss Mary E. Mitchell, a native of Virginia, born April 5, 1837, of Irish-French descent, and a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, to which she has belonged since twelve years of age. To the marriage of our subject were born seven children: William L., whose sketch is found below; C. F., who is a merchant of Knoxville; Mollie T., wife of John F. Davis, of Knoxville; J. R., who is traveling salesman for his father's business in tobacco; Bettie Lee; Flora B., and Samuel, who died when only two years of age.



In 1858 our subject removed from Virginia to Alabama, where he manufactured and dealt largely in tobacco until the fall of 1866, when he removed from Alabama to Tennessee, and settled on his present farm, which is located a few miles below Strawberry Plains, Jefferson County, Tenn. Here he established a factory, and engaged in his present business. In January, 1885, his son, William L., became a partner in the business, and ever since the firm has been J. W. Trent & Son. Early in life Mr. Trent became a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and for the last twenty-six or twenty-seven years has been a steward of the same. He is a Royal Arch Mason, and a Democrat in politics. His son, William L., was born in Franklin County, Va., January, 21, 1855, received his primary education in the common schools, and subsequently attended Hiwassee College, where he graduated in May, 1876. He taught school for two years, and in September, 1878, entered the Cumberland University Law School, and graduated in June, 1879. The following September he located at Knoxville, and practiced law for two years, after which he was for one year business manager of the *Knoxville Republican*, and after the consolidation of the *Republican* and *Chronicle* he was the business manager of the *Daily and Weekly Chronicle*, whose editor was Henry R. Gibson. At the end of one year he abandoned journalistic pursuits on account of ill health, and removed from Knoxville to his father's home near Strawberry Plains, Tenn. In 1880 he married Miss Sallie E. Thompson, of Jefferson County, Tenn., daughter of William and Martha M. Thompson, and niece of James L. Thompson, of the United States Army. To this marriage has been born one child, a son, named James. William L. Trent is a Republican in politics, and he and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

Dr. W. W. Tydeman, a prominent practitioner of Knoxville, Tenn., and one of the pioneers of the homœopathic school of medicine of that city, is a native of England, born in 1824. He immigrated to America in 1869, and located in Knoxville in 1872, where he began practicing his profession, and although almost unknown in the city at that time, the school he represented has since grown into knowledge and standing. Our subject has succeeded in building up a good practice, and established a good name in the profession. He is at present senior member of the firm of Tydeman & Caulkins, the junior member being Douglas Caulkins, who is a native of Dutchess County, N. Y., and who was born December 15, 1857. He received his education at Athens, Tenn., where he began the study of medicine in 1879. He then attended Rush Medical College, of Chicago, in 1882-83, and later graduated from

Hahnemann College, Philadelphia. He then married Miss Lucie Tydeman, daughter of his partner, in 1886. To this union a daughter, Edith, was born January 5, 1887. Mrs. Caulkins was born on Jamaica Island, West Indies, and is of English parentage.

Maj. J. H. Wagner, United States pension agent for the Southern States, at Knoxville, Tenn., was born at Mountain City, Johnson County, Tenn., January 14, 1841, and is the son of M. M. and Mary S. (Fyffe) Wagner. The father was born in Tennessee, February 15, 1801, is a farmer and merchant, and a resident of Mountain City. The mother was a native of North Carolina, born February 16, 1807, and is still living. Both parents are members of the Baptist Church. Our subject was reared in Mountain City, where he acquired his early education, later attending school at Boon's Creek Academy, Washington County, Tenn. At the breaking out of the war he had not finished school. In August, 1862, he went through the lines to the Federal Army at Cumberland Gap, but did not immediately enlist, but joined his uncle in Missouri, where he remained until the following spring. He then went to Nashville and made an ineffectual attempt to join the Fourth Regiment of Tennessee Volunteer Infantry, then being organized. He applied to Gov. Johnson for a permit to reach the camp of the regiment, but it was refused on account of the stringent orders existing in regard to parties going nearer to the front. He then went North to await developments, and here learned of the organization of the Thirteenth Regiment of Tennessee Cavalry, at Camp Nelson, Ky., and in December, 1863, joined Company E, of that regiment. A little later he was promoted to major of the same. In 1865 he was elected from the regiment to the State Legislature, and after serving the first session resigned, and returned to his home in East Tennessee, where he engaged in mercantile pursuits, continuing the same until about 1883. October 2, 1886, he was appointed to his present position. June 18, 1874, he was united in marriage to Sallie K. White, of Live Oak, Fla., who was born in Tennessee, February 4, 1852, and who is the daughter of Col. John F. White. To this union have been born six children, only four of whom are living: Mary, born May 18, 1875; Mathias M., born December 23, 1879; Joseph Cleveland and George Hendricks (twins), born July 8, 1884, the day the Democratic Convention met in Chicago and nominated Cleveland and Hendricks for President and Vice-President. Our subject is a member of the Masonic fraternity, and his wife of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

W. P. Washburn, attorney, of the firm of Washburn & Templeton, was born in Massachusetts in 1830. He was reared in that State, and

graduated at Amherst College in 1851. In 1856 he came to Knoxville, and was admitted to the bar in 1857, since which time he has resided and practiced his profession here. The firm of which he is a member was formed in May, 1882. In 1864 he married Mrs. Minnie Leonard, *nee* Brown, whose death occurred in 1877. He afterward married Mrs. Edward Maynard, *nee* Harper, to whom two children have been born, one of whom is still living. Mr. Washburn is vice-president of the Knoxville Gas Light Company; secretary of the Knoxville Car Wheel Company, and director in the Mechanics' National Bank and Knoxville Fire Insurance Company. Our subject and a brother, John H., constituted the family born to Rev. Royal and Harriet (Parsons) Washburn, natives of Vermont and Massachusetts. The father was a minister in the First Congregational Church of Amherst, and died there in 1833. The mother afterward married Hon. David Mack, who died about 1859; she died in 1876. His brother, John H., is vice-president and secretary of the Home Fire Insurance Company, of New York City.

J. W. Weatherford, of the firm of Middleton & Weatherford, brick-makers and contractors, is a son of William and Charity Weatherford, natives of Virginia and North Carolina respectively. On coming to Tennessee they settled in Sullivan County, where the father followed the shoemaker's trade. Their family consisted of twelve children—eight sons and four daughters. The father afterward moved to Knoxville, and here he sickened and died. In 1848 his widow and younger children also came to Knoxville. Of the children, two served in the Mexican war, two in the Federal and one in the Confederate Army. Our subject was born in Sullivan County in 1835, and at an early age began in a brickyard as an off-bearer. During the war he was in the railroad service, and at its close he returned to Knoxville. In 1865 Mr. Weatherford married Miss Lizzie Vincon, of Knoxville, and both he and his wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. In 1866 our subject and Mr. Middleton started a brickyard, without a dollar. Their outfit was a horse and a mud-mill for which they were in debt. Now they make their bricks by steam power, turning out a daily product of 30,000 bricks. For twenty-one years Mr. Weatherford has been in that business, and though he started with nothing, has succeeded in accumulating a nice property.

David H. Weaver, proprietor of the Knoxville Pottery & Pipe Works, was born in Boyd County, Ky., June 29, 1839, and is the son of George C. and Eliza M. (Hogan) Weaver. The father is a native of Pennsylvania, where he married and became the father of two children, both



deceased. After the death of his first wife he moved to Kentucky, and here met and married Miss Hogan, who presented him with seven children—five sons and two daughters. Both parents are living in Knoxville, and although seventy-three years of age the father still works at the potter's trade. Our subject learned the trade of his father in early life, and followed this until 1862, when he volunteered in Company F, One Hundred and Fortieth Pennsylvania Infantry, Federal Army. At the battle of Chancellorsville a ball cut off his right forefinger and wounded his left hand severely. As soon as able for duty he was appointed assistant postmaster at Point Lookout, holding that position until the close of the war. In 1865 he married Miss Mary E. Emery, a native of Ohio, and to them were born six children—one son and five daughters. In 1869 Mr. Weaver came to Knoxville, and the following year purchased his factory, which he has operated successfully ever since. He is a Republican in politics, and he and his wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He is a Mason and for ten years has been secretary of the lodge.

William M. Weber, druggist of Broad and Crozier Streets, was born in western New York April 19, 1840. His parents, P. S. and Maria (Norton) Weber, were natives of New York. Both parents are now deceased. When only thirteen our subject began working for himself. He had received his education at South Bend, Ind., and soon afterward took an apprenticeship in a drug house, where he continued until 1861. He then volunteered in Company G, Fifteenth Indiana Infantry, and was in the Western Virginia campaign, coming South with Gen. Buell's army, and afterward under Rosecranz. At Shiloh he became first lieutenant and subsequently quartermaster of his regiment, holding that position until the close of his service. He was offered the position of post quartermaster at Loudon, Tenn., but declined on account of the expiration of his time. He was mustered out at Indianapolis in 1864. He was superintendent of the military post at Paducah, Ky., until its disorganization, after which he engaged in the drug business at Louisville, Ky. In 1884 he came to Knoxville, and has been dealing in drugs ever since. In 1869 he married Miss Sarah Carpenter, of Kentucky, and four children were the result of this union—one son and three daughters. Both he and wife are members of the Christian Church. He is a Mason and a member of the G. A. R.

T. A. West, M. D., city physician of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Knox County of that State, near Graveston, in 1841, and is the son of Edward and Arminda (Roberts) West, both natives of Tennessee. The father was born in the year 1818, and the mother in 1821. They are

now residing in Knox County, and the mother is a member of the Presbyterian Church. Our subject was reared in Knox County until fifteen years of age, when he went to Jefferson County, Tenn., and in 1859 began the study of medicine under Drs. Rodefer and Blackburn at New Market, Tenn. He attended medical college in New York City, and in 1862 began the practice of his profession near Gravelton, Tenn., with Dr. L. M. Mynatt. He next removed to Dandridge, Jefferson County, where he practiced his profession for three years. He then went to Georgia and remained here ten years, after which he returned to Knox County. In 1884 he came to Knoxville, and in January, 1886, was elected city physician, and re-elected in 1887. He was married June 22, 1862, to Miss Sallie B. Mitchell, a native of Dandridge, Tenn., born in 1840, and the daughter of Maj. Berry Mitchell. Four children were the result of this union—three sons and one daughter. The eldest and youngest sons are engaged in the drug business in Knoxville. Dr. and Mrs. West are members of the Third Presbyterian Church of Knoxville.

Hon. W. O. White, of the firm of Chapman, White, Lyons & Co., wholesale and manufacturing druggists of Knoxville, Tenn., was born in Cleveland, Bradley Co., Tenn., March 14, 1843, and is the son of William H. and Caroline (Townsend) White. The father was born in Tennessee in 1808, was a merchant, and died in 1848. The mother was born in 1825 in Vermont, and is residing in Cleveland. Our subject was reared on a farm near Cleveland, and acquired his education at the schools of that place. In December, 1862, he went to Louisville, Ky., where he enlisted in the Federal Army, joining Company E, Fourth Regiment of Tennessee Union Cavalry, Capt. C. D. Champion. He served as private for nine months, and was then promoted first lieutenant and regimental quartermaster. In May, 1864, he was promoted captain of Company I, Fourth Tennessee Regiment Cavalry, and commanded the same until the close of the war. In the charge at the battle of Franklin, Tenn., in the Hood campaign, he was wounded by a blow from a musket. After the war he engaged in business in Cleveland. In 1867-68 he represented Bradley County in the State Legislature, and in 1869 removed to Knoxville, where, for a year, he was in the service of the United States revenue department. He next became a member of the firm of Hawkins, Butt & Co., stove and tin-ware dealers, and in 1880 became a member of the present firm. He is a member of Coeur de Leon Commandary, No. 9, K. of T. of Knoxville. He was married in 1871 to Lute Lynn, who was born in Sullivan County, Tenn., March 14, 1843, and is the daughter of Joseph Lynn. To them have been born three boys. Both our subject and wife are members of the Fourth Presbyterian Church of Knoxville.

John Wieland, farmer and fruit-grower of the Twelfth District, was born July 15, 1817, in Frederick County, Md., and immigrated to Montgomery County, Ohio, in 1837. In the spring of 1869 he came to Knox County, Tenn., where he has since resided. He is the second of eight children (five of whom lived to be grown) born to Barnherd and Elizabeth (Bechtol) Wieland, natives of Virginia and Maryland, respectively. Mr. Wieland was a life-long farmer, and he and wife were of German descent. John Wieland's grandfather, Barnherd Wieland, was born and reared in Wurtenburg, Germany. He came to America shortly after the Revolutionary war and settled in Frederick County, Md. Our subject received his education in the subscription schools of Maryland, and at the age of twenty-two began working for himself. He inherited \$1,500 but the balance of what he is now worth was accumulated by his own exertions. He owns a fine farm of 410 acres, all well improved, and located four miles northwest of Knoxville. Besides the land above mentioned he has given considerable to his children. September 15, 1844, he married Miss Margaret Fudge, a daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth (Potter) Fudge, and to them were born eight children. Mrs. Wieland was a member of the Lutheran Church, and died January 1, 1865. Mr. Wieland is a member of the same church and is a Republican in politics, casting his first presidential vote for William Henry Harrison. Since the death of his wife Mr. Wieland has made his home with his children.

J. C. J. Williams, United States district attorney, is a native of Knox County, Tenn., born September 8, 1847, and reared on a farm until sixteen years of age, securing the rudiments of an education by attending the country schools in the winter season. He then attended school at Princeton, N. J., two years, after which he studied under a private tutor at home one year. At the age of twenty he began to study law in Knoxville, where he was admitted to the bar in October, 1868. In November, 1873, he married Miss Anna Hazen, a native of Knox County, Tenn., to whom five children have been born—four daughters and one son. The mother of these children died February 3, 1885. In 1873 Mr. Williams was appointed district attorney for the district of Knox, then, in August, 1874, he was elected to the same position, holding the office until March 2, 1878, when he resigned. Previous to this, in 1872, he was defeated for the office by twenty-four votes, and his competitor afterward resigning gave him his appointment in 1873. He was the Democratic candidate for criminal judge in 1878, for the State Senate in 1882, and Knox County representative in 1884. July 3, 1885, he was appointed United State district attorney, which appointment was conferred July 26, 1886, against the bitter opposition of the Republicans in East Ten-



nessee. Mr. Williams still continues the practice of law in connection with his official duties. The Williams' family, ancestors of our subject, came to America from Wales and settled in Halifax previous to the Revolutionary war, in which the great-grandfather was a colonel. The grandfather was a colonel under Gen. Jackson at the battle of Horseshoe in the war of 1812. He came to Knox County, Tenn., at the beginning of the present century, and married a daughter of Gen. James White, who was of Scotch-Irish descent. The grandfather was eight years in the United States Senate, and then was defeated in 1823 by Gen. Jackson. The parents of our subject, John and Rhoda (Morgan) Williams, were natives of Knox County, and resided here until their deaths. The father represented Knox County several times in the Legislature, and was the Democratic candidate for Congress in 1867, being defeated by Horace Maynard. His death occurred April 21, 1881, and the mother died March 2, 1867.

C. M. Woodbury, secretary and treasurer of the Standard Handle Company, of Knoxville, was born in Alexandria, Va., April 15, 1853. His father, Gen. Daniel P. Woodbury, was a native of New Hampshire. He was a man of fine mathematical attainments. He is the author of a work entitled, "Theory of the Arch," and other mathematical works used in the leading colleges. He constructed Fort Jefferson, on Tortugas Island, and opened Cape Fear and James Rivers. During the war he rendered excellent service as chief engineer in the pontoon department of the Army of the Potomac; he died in 1864. The mother of our subject was born on Governor's Island, N. Y., and was the daughter of Col. Thomas Childs, of Mexican war fame. Of the six children born to this union, four are now living—two sons and two daughters. The other son, Thomas Childs Woodbury, is a lieutenant in the United States Army. Our subject was educated on Long Island and at Adelphia Academy, of Brooklyn. At the age of seventeen he engaged as clerk in a New York house, and remained there thirteen years, rising in the meantime from the lowest to the highest position in the house. In 1879 he married Miss Mary S. Nicoll, of Long Island, by whom he has three sons. He and his wife are members of the Protestant Episcopal Church. In 1881 he moved to Knoxville, and organized and started the Standard Handle Company, an establishment which sends its products directly to foreign countries, as well as all over the United States, and enjoys a reputation second to none in this line of manufacture.

W. W. Woodruff, of the wholesale hardware firm of W. W. Woodruff & Co., is a native of Kentucky, born in 1840, and was reared and educated in his native State. At the breaking out of the late war he

enlisted as captain of Company D, Thirteenth Kentucky Infantry, United States Volunteers, with which he served throughout the war. He then located at Knoxville, and established the wholesale hardware firm of which he is senior member. In 1865 he was united in marriage to Ella T. Connelly, a native of Frankfort, Ky., to whom eight children have been born, six still living. Mr. Woodruff is one of the board of trustees for the deaf and dumb asylum, and president of the Standard Coal and Coke Company, vice-president of the Knoxville and the Protection Fire Insurance Companies. He is a director of the East Tennessee National Bank, and also a director of the Knoxville Car Wheel Company.

Nathan S. Woodward, business manager for James O'Conner & Co., was born in Knoxville, July 19, 1844, and in that city received his education. At the age of seventeen he entered the express service as a messenger, and step by step he rose to agent, and finally to assistant superintendent of the office from Lynchburg, Va., to Selma, Ala., and Atlanta, Ga. In 1882 he assumed the duties of his present position. His father, Alexander Woodward, was a native of Virginia. He was a man of good literary attainments, although acquired without the assistance of school or teachers, and was a physician by profession. About 1842 he came to Knoxville and took for his second wife Miss Mary, sister of David Sul-lins, D. D. Of this marriage our subject is the only son. He has a family of three children—one son and two daughters—born to his union with Miss Annie Peed. Mrs. Woodward is a native of Knoxville, and an earnest worker in all the movements that tend to elevate the social and moral standing of the community. She has been treasurer of the Woman's Missionary Society in Holston conference since its organization, and is also an active worker in the Methodist Episcopal Church South. Mr. Woodward is a Knight Templar; is a member of the Masonic order, and has held the position of Senior Warden, Deputy Grand Master, Grand Master of the State, and is now Grand Captain General Knights Templar Tennessee.

John D. Wrinkle was born in Knox County, February 15, 1845, and is the son of John and Sophia (Wrinkle) Wrinkle. The father was born in Knox County, Tenn., in 1806, and died at his home in Knox County in 1881. The mother was born in Knox County in 1812, and at present is living with her sister in Missouri. The father was of Dutch extraction, and the mother of Scotch-Irish. They both became members of the Baptist Church early in life. The father was ever a zealous Democrat. Our subject received a limited education in the common schools, but by observation and study has become a well informed man.

He is a Democrat, but takes no part in politics more than to cast his vote in favor of his party. He has always been a farmer and has been quite successful in that occupation. He has also followed stock raising on his fine farm of 500 acres. To his marriage to Miss Margaret A. I. Bowman in 1870 were born five children, the eldest is deceased. Those living are two girls, Maggie and Burton, and two boys, Samuel and W. Grover Cleveland. Mrs. Wrinkle was born in Knox County, Tenn., November 14, 1849.

Thomas E. Wrinkle, a successful farmer, was born in Knox County, Tenn., December 9, 1854, and is the son of John and Sophia (Wrinkle) Wrinkle. (For further particulars of parents see sketch of John D. Wrinkle.) Our subject received his education in the common country schools, and while yet quite youthful turned his attention to agricultural pursuits. Miss Evaline Hines became his wife in 1879, and to this union were born three children, one dying when quite young. The two living are Virgie May and Hattie Evaline. The mother died May 26, 1885. In 1886 Mr. Wrinkle married Miss Kate Slatery, a native of Knox County, born February 6, 1862. One child, Allen A., was born to this union November 27, 1886. Our subject is a young and energetic farmer and owns a farm of 125 acres of land well improved and very productive. He is and always has been an uncompromising Republican.

Col. Isham Young, chairman of the board of public works for Knoxville, was born in Roane County, Tenn., in 1838, and was reared in that county until the commencement of the war, when he enlisted in the First Tennessee Infantry, United States Army, and at the organization was elected orderly sergeant, from which he was promoted in a few months to first lieutenant of the same company (I), and February, 1862, assumed the duties of captain until April 15, 1863, when he was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the Eighth Tennessee Infantry. August 16, 1863, he was commissioned with two others, to organize the Eleventh Tennessee Cavalry, and October 21 of the same year he was mustered in as colonel of the same. Previous to the war, in 1858, he wedded Miss Margaret C. Atkinson, a native of Roane County, to whom three children have been born. December, 1864, Mr. Young located at Knoxville, and was connected with the East Tennessee, Virginia & Georgia Railroad, from July, 1865, until April, 1882, and in January, 1886, was elected to his present position. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity. His father, Freemoton Young, is a native of Roane County, Tenn., born in 1813, and still resides there. He was at one time trustee of that county. Lucinda (Evans) Young, mother of our subject, was also a native of Roane



County, and died there October 27, 1885. Of their family of eight children, six are now living.

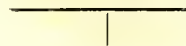
A. Ziegler, of the firm of Metler & Ziegler, was born in Germany in 1844, and came to America in 1866, locating soon after at Knoxville, where he has since been successfully engaged in the meat trade. He followed the butcher's trade with Ignaz Fanz one year, and then became a member of the firm of Schneider & Ziegler, where he continued until 1872, when the present firm was formed. The same year he took for his life companion Miss Eliza Metler, daughter of the senior member of the firm. The result of this union was the birth of six children, two of whom are deceased. The parents of our subject were born in Germany, where the mother still resides, and where the father died about 1863.











2

57

6

976.8 H675B

301038





Duke University Libraries

D02465277X